



00042641

Processed at  
The Preservation & conservation  
Laboratory of  
The Asiatic Society of Bombay  
Date JULY-06



# HAKLUYT'S

12058

COLLECTION OF THE EARLY

VOYAGES, TRAVELS, AND DISCOVERIES,

OF THE

ENGLISH NATION.

42641

A NEW EDITION, WITH ADDITIONS.

v. l. I

~~7-6-15~~

THE FIFTH AND LAST VOLUME.



LONDON:

PRINTED FOR R. H. EVANS, 26, PALL MALL; AND R. PRIESTLEY,  
HOLBORN.

1812.

U. Y. 2. 16

✓  
910-8  
Hak / col  
42641

OF THIS EDITION THERE ARE ONLY 50 COPIES PRINTED ON ROYAL PAPER AND . . .



# A CATALOGUE

OF THE

## VOYAGES, &c. OF THIS FIFTH VOLUME.

	Page
A Voyage made by certaine Ships of Holland into the East Indies, who set forth on the 2d of April, 1593, and returned on the 14th of April, 1597.	1
The Prosperous and Speedy Voyage to Iana in the East Indies, performed by a fleet of 8. Ships of Amsterdam: which set forth from Texell in Holland, the First of Maie 1598, whereof 4. returned againe the 19 of Iuly 1599, the 6th of 4. went forward from Iana for the Molaccas.	33
News from the East Indies: or a Voyage to Bengalla, one of the greatest Kingdomes under the high and mighty Prince Pedesha Shassallern, usually called the Great Mogull, with their detestable religion, and unchristian rites, wicked sacrifices and impious Customes	45
The World of Factions, containing the Antient Manners, Customes and Lawes of the Peoples Enhabiting the two partes of the Earth, called Affricks and Asie.	61
The Conquest of the Grand Canaries, made this last Summer by threescore and thirteene saile of Shippes, sent forth at the Command of the States Generall to the Coast of Spaine and the Canarie Isles.	141
The Historie of the West Indies, containing the Actes and Adventures of the Spaniards, which have conspired and peopled those Countries, published in Latin by Hakluyt and translated by Lok.	155
Virginia richly valued, by the description of the Maine Land of Florida, her next Neighbour: out of the foure yeeres continuall trauell and discoerie of Don Ferdinando de Soto and sixe hundred able men in his companie, translated out of the Portuguese by Hakluyt.	477
A Discovery of the Bargadas, otherwise called the Ile of Devils: by Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Sommers, and Captayne Newport, set forth by Sil. Iordan.	551
A True Copie of a Discourse written by a Gentleman, employed in the late Voyage of Spaine and Portingale: sent to his particular friend, and by him published for the better satisfaction of all such as having been seduced by particular report, have entred into conceits tending to the discredit of the Enterprise, and Actes of the same, 1589.	559
The Omissions of Cales Voyage, stated and discussed by the Earl of Essex, from a Manuscript in the possession of the Marquis of Stafford.	591



THE  
DESCRIPTION OF A VOYAGE

MADE BY

CERTAIN SHIPS OF HOLLAND

INTO THE

EAST INDIES,

WITH THEIR ADVENTURES AND SUCCESSE:

TOGETHER

WITH THE DESCRIPTION OF THE COUNTRIES, TOWNES, AND INHABITANTES OF  
THE SAME:

WHO SET FORTH ON THE SECOND OF APRILL, 1595, AND RETURNED ON THE 14 OF  
AUGUST, 1597.

TRANSLATED OUT OF DUTCH INTO ENGLISH BY W. P.

LONDON:

PRINTED BY JOHN WOLFE.

1598.



TO THE

RIGHT WORSHIPFULL

*SIR IAMES SCUDAMORE, KNIGHT.*

Right worshipfull, this small treatie (written in Dutch, shewing a late voyage performed by certain Hollanders to the Islandes of Iava, part of the East Indies) falling into my handes, and in my iudgement deserving no lesse commendation then those of our Countrey-men, (as Captaine Raimonde in the Penelope, M<sup>r</sup>ister Foxcroft in the Marchant Royall, and M. Iames Lancaster in the Edward Bonaventure, vnto the said East Indies, by the Cape de Bona Sperance, in Anno 1591, as also M. Iohn Newbery, and Raphael Fich ouer land through Siria from Aleppo vnto Ormus and Goa, and by the said Raphael Fich himselfe to Bengala, Malocca, Pegu, and other places in Anno 1683. as at large appeareth in a booke written by M. RICHARD HAGLUTZ a Gentleman very studious therein, and entituled the English voyages) I thought it not vnconuenient to translate the same into our mother tongue, thereby to procure more light and encouragement to such as are desirous to trauell these Countries, for the common wealth and commoditie of this Realme and themselves. And knowing that all men are not like affected, I was so bold to shrowd it vnder your worshipps protection, as being assured of your good disposition to the fauoring of trauell and trauellers, (and whereby it hath pleased God to aduance you to that honourable title, which at this present you beare) and so not sitter for the protection of any then your selfe: and as a poore friend wishing all happines and prosperity in all your valiant actions. Which if it please your worships to like and accept, it may procure the proceeding in a more large and ample discourse of an East Indian voyage, lately performed and set forth by one Iohn Hugheu of Linschoten, to your further delight. Wherewith crauing your fauor, and beseeching God to blesse your worship, with my good Ladie your wife, I most humbly take my leaue:

This 16. of Ianuarie.

1597.

Your Worshipps to commaunde  
W. PHILLIP.



## BAYLIFES, BURGHEMAISTERS, AND COUNSELL

OF THE TOWN OF MIDDELBORGH IN ZEELANDE

---

It may well bee thought (Right worshipfull) as many learned men are of opinion, that the actions and adventures of the ancients long since done & performed, haue beene set forth with more show of wonder and strangenesse then they in truth deserved: the reason as I think was, because that in those daies there were many learned and wise men, who in their writings sought by all meanes they could to excell each other, touching the description of Countries & nations: And againe to the contrarie, for want of good Historiographers and writers, many famous actes and trauels of diuers nations and Countries lie hidden, and in a manner buried vnder ground, as wholly forgotten and vnkowne, vnesle it were such as the Grecians and Romanes for their owne glories and aduantages thought good to declare. But to come to the matter of voyages by sea, it is euident to all the world, what voyage lason with certaine yong Grecian Princes made to Colchos in the Oriental Countries to winne the golden Fleece, as also the trauels by Hercules performed into Libia in the West partes, to winne the Aurea Mala or golden apples of Hesperides, which notwithstanding neither for length, daunger, nor profite, are any thing comparable to the navigations and voyages, that of late within the space of one hundreth years haue beene performed & made into the East & West Indies, whereby in a manner there is not one hausen on the sea coast, nor any point of land in the whole world, but hath in time beene sought and founde out. I will not at this present dispute or make an argument, whether the Countries and nations of late yeares found out and discovered, were knowne to the ancients, but this is most certaine, that not any strange worke or aduenture was, or euer shall be performed, but by the speciall grace, fauour and mightie hand of God, and that such are worthy perpetual memory, as with noble minds haue sought to effect, and be the first enterprisers thereof, and with most valiant courages and wisdomes, haue performed such long and dangerous voyages into the East and West Indies, as also such Kinges and Princes, as with their Princely liberalities haue employed their treasures, shippes, men and munitions to the furtherance and performance of so warthy actes, which notwithstanding in the end turned to their great aduancements and enriching with great treasures, which by those meanes they haue drawn, & caired in great abundance to be brought from thence, in such manner, that the King of Spaine nowe liuing, (hauing both the Indies in his possession, & reaping the abundant treasures which yearly are brought out of those countries) hath not only (although couertly) sought all the means he could to bring all Christendome vnder his dominion, but also (that which no King or country whatsoever although of greater might then he hath euer done) hee is not ashamed to vse this posse, Nec spe, nec metu. And although the first founders and discoverers of those Countries haue alwayes sought to hinder and intercept other nations from hauing any part of their glorie, yet hereby all nations, & indifferent persons may well know and perceiue the speciall policie, and valour of these vnitd Prouinces, in traueiling into both the Indies,

## THE EPISTLE.

Indies, in the faces, and to the great griefe of their many and mighty enemies. Wherby it is to be hoped, that if they continue in their enterprises begun, they will not onely draw the most part of the Indian treasures into these Countries, but thereby disinherit & spoyle the Countrie of Spayne of her principall revenues, and treasures of marchandises and traffiques, which she continually vseth and receyvethe out of these countries, and out of Spayne are sent into the Indies, and so put the King of Spaine himselfe in minde of his foolish deuise which hee vseth for a posie touching the new world, which is, Non sufficit orbis, like a second Alexander magnus, desiring to rule ouer all the world, as it is manifestly knowne. And because this description is fallen into my handes, wherein is contayned the first voyage of the Low-country men into the East Indies, with the aduentures happened vnto them, set downe and iustified by such as were present in the voyage, I thought it good to put it in print, with many pictures and cantes, whereby the reader may the easilier perceyue and discern, the natures, appaerls, and fashions of those Countries and people, as also the manner of their shippes, together with the fruitfulnessse and great abundance of the same, hoping that this my labour will not onely be acceptable vnto all Marchants and Saylers, which hereafter meane to traffique into those Countries, but also pleasant and profitable to all such as are desirous to looke into so newe and strange things, which neuer heretofore were knowne vnto our nation. And againe for that all histories haue their particular commoditie, (specially such as are collected and gathered together) not by common report, from the first, seconde, or thirde man, but by such as haue scened and beene present in the actions, and that are liuing to iustifie and verifie the same: And although eloquence and words well placed in shewing a history, are great ornamentes and beautifynges to the same, yet such reports & declarations are much more worthy credite, & commendabler for the benefit of the commonwealth, which are not set down or disiphered by subtill eloquence, but showne and performed by simple plaine men, such as by copiousnesse of wordes, or subtiltie do not alter or change the matter from the truth thereof, which at this day is a common and notorious fault in many Historiographers: And thinking with my selfe to whome I were best to dedicate the same, I found it not fitter for any then for the right worshipfull Gouveraours of this famous Towne of Middelborgh, wherein for the space of 19 yeares I haue peaceably continued, specially because your worships do not onely deale with great store of shipping, and matter belonging to navigation, but are also well pleased to heare, and great furtherers to aduance both shipping and traffiques, wherein consisteth not onely the welfare of all marchants, inhabitants, and citizens of this famous City, but also of all the commonwealth of the vnited Prouinces, hoping your worships will not onely accept this my labour, but protect & warrantise the same against all men: Wherwith I beseech God to blesse you with wisdom, and godly policie, to gouerne the Commonwealt: Middleborgh this 19 of October. 1597.

Your worships seruant to command

BERNARDT LANGHEENZ.

## BRIEFE DISCRPTION

OF A

## VOYAGE

PERFORMED BY CERTAINE HOLLANDERS, TO AND FROM THE EAST INDIES,

WITH

THEIR ADVENTURES AND SUCCESSE.

The ancient Historiographers and discscribers of the world haue much commended, and at large with great prayse set downe the diuers and scuerall voyages of many noble & valiant Captains (as of Alexander Magnus, Seleucus, Antiochus, Patrocles, Onesecritus) into the East Indies, which notwithstanding haue not set downe a great part of those countries, as not being as then discovered, whereby it is thought and iudged by some men, that India is the full third part of all the world, because of the great Prouinces, mighty citties and famous Islands (full of costly marchandise, and treasures from thence brought into all partes of the worlde) that are therein: Wherein the auncient writers were very curious, and yet not so much as men in our age: They had some knowledge thereof, but altogether vncertaine, but we at this day are fully certified therein, both touching the countries, townes, streames and hauens, with the trafiques therein vsed and frequented, whereby all the world, so farre distant and seperated from those strange nations, are by trade of marchandise vnited therunto, & thereby commonly knowne vnto them: The Portugallies first began to enterprise the voyage, who by art of nauigation (in our time much more experienced & greater then in times past, and therefore easilier performed) discovered those wild Countries of India, therein procuring great honour to their King, making his name famous and bringing a speciall and great profite of all kindes of spices into their Countrie, which thereby is spread throughout all the worlde, yet that sufficed not, for that the Englishmen (not inferiour to any nation in the world for arte of nauigation) haue likewise vnderaken the Indian voyage, and by their said voyages into those Countries, made the same commonly knowne vnto their Country, wherein Sir Frances Drake, and M. Candish are chiefly to bee commended, who not onely sayled into the East Indies, but also rounde about the world, with most prosperous voyages, by which their voyages, ours haue bene furthered and set forwarde, for that the condition of the Indies is, that the more it is sayled into, the more it is discovered, by such as sayle the same, so strange a Countrey it is: So that besides the famous voyages of the Countries aforesaid, in the ende certain people came into Holland (a nation wel known) certifying them, that they might easily prepare certaine shippes to sayle into the East Indies, there to trafique & buy spyces etc. By sayling straight from Hollande, and also from other countries bordering about it,

with

with desire to see strange and rich wares of other Countries, & that should not be brought vnto them by strangers, but by their owne countrey men, which some men would esteeme to be impossible, considering the long voyage and the daungers thereof, together with the vnaccustomed saylages and little knowledge thereof by such as neuer sayled that way, and rather esteeme it madnesse, then any point of wiselome, and folly rather then good consideration. But notwithstanding wee haue scene foure ships make that voyage, who after many dangers hating performed their voyage, returned againe and haue brought with them those wares, that would neuer haue bene thought coule haue bene brought into these countries by any Holland ships; but what shoulde I here in most comende eyther the wil-lingnesse and good performance of the parties, or the happinesse of their voyage? whereof that I may giue the reader some knowledge, I will shew what I haue heard and bene informed of, concerning the description of the Godtries, customes, and manners of the nations, by them in this voyage scene & discovered, which is as followeth.

Where not low  
the Diogenes.

In the yeare of our Lord 1595. vpon the 10. day of the month of March, there departed from Amsterdam three ships and a Pinnaque to sayle into the East Indies, set forth by diuers rich Marchantes: The first called Mauritius, of the burthen of 400. tunnes, having in her sixe demic canon, fouteene Calberins, and other peeces, & 4. peeces to shoot stones, and 84. men: the Mayster Iohn Moluare, the Factor Cornelius Houtman: The second named Hollandia, of the burthen of 400. tunnes, having 85. men, seuen brasse peeces, twelue peeces for stones, and 13. iron peeces, the Mayster Iohn Dignums, the Factor Gerrit van Buiningen, the thirde called Amsterdam, of the burthen of 200. tuns, wherein were 59. men, sixe brasse peeces, ten iron peeces, and sixe peeces for stones, the Mayster Iohn Iacobson Schellinger, the Factor Reginer van Hel: The fourth being a Pinnaque called the Doue, of the burthen of 50. tunnes, with twenty men, the Mayster Simon Lambertson: Which 4. ships vpon the 21. of the same month came vnto the Tassel, where they stayed for the space of 12. daies to take in their lading, and the seconde of Aprill following, they set saile with a North east winde & following on their course the fourth of the same month they passed the heades; The sixt they 33. Heystant, the 10. of Aprill they passed by the Barles of Diabon: With an East and North East wind, the 17. of Aprill they discovered two of the Islands of Canaries: The 19. Palos, and Pic, Los Romeroes, and Fero: The 25. of Aprill they saw Bona visita, the 16. they ankered vnder Isole de May: The 27. they set saile againe and held their course South South east, The 4. of May, we espied two of the King of Spaines ships, that came from Lisbon, and went for the East Indies, about 1000. or 1200. tunnes each ship, with whom we spake, and told them that we were bound for the straights of Magellanes, but being better of sayle then they wee got presently out of their sight. The 12. of May being vnder nine degrees on this side the Equinoctiall line, we espied fve ships laden with Sugar, coming from the Island of S. Thomas, and sayled for Lisbon, to whome we gaue certaine letters, which wee safely deliuered in Holland. Departing from them and keeping on our course, vpon the fourth of Iune we passed the Equinoctiall line, where the extreame heat of the ayre spoyled all our victualles: Our flesh and fish stanke, our Bisket molded, our Beere soured, our water stonke, and our Butter became as thino as Oyle, whereby diuers of our men fell sicke, and many of them dyed; but after this we learned what meat and drinke we should carrie with vs that would keepe good. The 29. of Iune wee passed the sandes of Brasil, by the Portugalles called Abrolhos, which are certaine places which men must looke warily vnto, otherwise they are very dangerous.

Their victualles  
waske 12d  
spoyled.

They passed the  
sandies of Bra-  
sil.

These sandes lie vnder 18. degrees, and you must passe betweene the coast of Guine, and the sandes aforesaid, not going too neer eyther of them, otherwise close by the Coast there are great calmes, thunders, raines & lightnings, with great stormes, harde by the sandes men are in danger to be cast away: and so sayling on their course, first East South East, then East and East and by North. Vpon the seconde of Iuly wee passed Tropics Caneri, vnder 23. degrees, and 4. The 13. of the same Month, we espied many blacke birdes. The 19. great numbers of white birdes, and the 20. a bird as bigge as a Swan, whereof foure or fve together

together is a good signe of being neere the Cape de bona Sperance. These birdes are alwaies about the said Cape, and are good signes of being before it.

Tokens of the  
Cape de bona  
Sperance.

The second of August we saw the land of the Cape de bona Sperance, and the fourth of the same Month we entered into a haven called Agne Sambras, where wee ankered, and found good depth at 8. or 9. fadome water, sandy ground.

They called  
this Agne Sam-  
bras.

The 5. day we went on shore to gather fruite, therewith to refresh our sicke men, that were thirty or 33 in one shippe. In this bay lyeth a small Islande, wherein are many bintles called Pyneus and sea Wolues that are taken with mens handes: we went into the countrey and spake with the inhabitants, who brought divers fresh victualles aborde our shippes, for a knife or small peece of Iron, etc. giuing vs an Oxe, or a sheepe etc. The sheepe in those Countries haue great tayles, and are fat and delicate. Their Oxen are indifferent good, hauing lumps of flesh vpon their backs, that are as fat as any of our good brisket beefe: the inhabitants are of small stature, well ioynted and boned, they goe naked, couering their members with Foxes and other beastes tayles: they seeme cruell, yet with vs they vsed all kind of friendship, but are very beastly and stinking, in such sort, that you may smell them in the wind at the least a fadome from you: They are apparelled with beastes skinnes made fast about their neckes: some of them, being of the better sort, had their mantles cut & rayzed checkewise, which is a great ornament with them: They eat raw flesh, as it is new killed, and the entrailles of beastes without washing or making cleane, gnawing it like dogs, vnder their feet they tye peeces of beastes skinnes, in steed of shooes, that they may trauel in the hard wayes: We could not see their habitations, for wee saw no houses they had, neither could wee vnderstande them, for they speake very strangely, much like the children in our Countrey with their pipes, and clocking like Turkey Cokes: At the first wee saw about thirtie of them, with weapons like pikes, with broad heads of Iron, about their armes they ware rings of Elpen bones: There wee coulde finde neyther Oringes nor Lemons, which we purposely sought for.

The 11. of August we hoysed anker, sayling towards the Island of S. Laurence, and the 22. of the same month we had a contrary wind that blew North East: The 25. a West wind, and so held our course East North East: The 28. there blew a South East wind, & the 30. a South West wind, and our course lay North North East to sayle to the Isle of S. Laurence. The first of September wee discovered the point of the Islande of S. Laurence, vnder 16. degrees, and the third day we saw the Island being very desirous to go on land, for that many of our men were sicke, whereby wee coulde hardly rule our shippes, or bring them farther without healing, or refreshing of our men. The 9. of September Iohn Schellinger sent out his boate to rowe to lande, where they founde three Fishermen, of whome for two or three kniues they had great store of fishes. The 13. we entered into a small Bay, but because wee founde no good anker ground, as also being very foule we sayled out againe. The 14. we sayled vnder a small Island about a mile or 2. great, by the Hollanders called their Church yarde, or the dead Island, because many saylers dying in that place, were buried in the African earth, and the 29. of the same Month died Iohn Dignamsz Mayster of the Lyon of Holland, and was buried the next day after.

With what  
wind they sailed  
to S. Laurence.

They had great  
store of fish for  
2 or 3 kniues.

There Iohn Peters of Delft Sayler of the Hollandia, & Koelken van Maidenbhek of the Amsterdam were set on shore vpon the Island of S. Laurence, where they were left, because they had committed certaine notorious crimes.

Meane time the Pinnace was sent out to looke for fresh water, which hauing found, the boat returned to bring vs newes, and therewith the fleet sayled thither, and the 10. of October the shippes ankered before the Riuer, and went on shore, where we found good provision of all necessities, the inhabitants being very willing thereunto, bringing vs of all things that we needed, where for a Pewter Spooone wee had an Oxe, or three sheepe. The 11. of October we went on shore with a boat full of sicke men, and the next day we were assailed by a company of wild men, against whom our weapons little preuayled, for they hurt one of our men and tooke all that we had from vs, whereby vpon the thirteenth of the same Month, wee were forced to insonce our selues with peeces of wood, and branches of trees, making Cabins within our Sconce, for that the 15. of October they came againe, but then we tooke

How the wild  
men assailed  
vs, and forced  
them to insonce  
themselves.

one, and slew another, of them. The 19. of Nouember our Pilot Claes Ianson was trapped and murdered by the wild people, although we used all the means we could to helpe him, but they feared no weapons, about ten or twelue dayes after we tooke one of them that paid for his death. The first of December our men hauing for the most part recovered their healthes, were all carryed aboard the ships: in that parte of Madagascar the people are of good condition, and goe naked, onely with a Cotton cloth before their priue members, and some from their breasts downward: Their ornaments are Copper ringes about their armes, but Tin ringes are more esteemed with them, and therefore tinn with them is good marchandise. Their Oxen haue great lumps of fat vpon their backs: Their sheepe tayles way at the least twelue pound, being of an elle long, & two and twentie inches thick. They gaue vs six of those sheepe for a tinn Spooone: They dwell in cottages and liue very poorly: they feare the noyse of a peece, for with one Caliuer you shall make an hundred of them runne away: Wee could not perceyue any religion they had, but after wee were informed that they helde the law of Mahomet, for the two boyes that wee tooke from of the land, shewed vs their circumcision: There we found no fruit of Tambaxiumes, but great numbers of Parrats, Medicats, and Turtle Doues, whereof we killed and eat many. The second of December we burned our scone, and fourteenth of our men going further into the Islande brought certaine of the countrymen prisoners, and being aboard our ships taught them what they shoulde doe. The thirteenth of December wee hoysed anker, minding to holde on our course for the Islands of Iaua, & for that by reason of the pleasantnesse of the ayre we had in a manner all recovered our healthes, we set our course East and by North, and East Northeast. The nineteenth of the same Month wee were seperated by foule weather, & the 22. with great ioy we met againe. The tenth of Ianuarie Vechter Willemson dyed, being a verie honest man, and Pilot in Molenaers shippe, for whome we were much grieued, and the same day we determined to put back againe for the Islande of S. Laurence, for as then we began againe to haue a great scouring among our men, and many of them fell sicke: But presently therevpon we espied the Islande of Saint Mary, and the next day being arriued there, some of the inhabitants came aboard our shippes with a basket of Ryce, Sugar canes, Citrons, Lemons, & Hens, whereof we were very glad, as being phisicke for vs.

The manner he  
cuttome of the  
wild people.

The wilde men  
brought things  
which we esteem  
them.

The 13. 14. 15. 16. and 17. dayes we were on land, where we bought Ryce, Hens, Sugar-canes, Citrons and Lemons in great abundance, and other kinde of fruites, so vs vnknowne, also good fish, and greene Ginger: There we tooke a Fish, which thirteen men could hardly pull into our shippe, and because the Island was little, and we had many men, wee entred into the Bay of the firme land with our Pinnace, where for a string of Beades of small value we had a tunne of Ryce: The King came aboard our Pinnace to see it, & was as blacke as a Deuill, with two hornes made fast vpon his heade, and all his body naked like the rest of the country people.

The description  
of one of their  
kinge.

This Island lyeth about a small mile from Madagascar, about 19. degrees Southward from the Equinoctiall line (Madagascar or S. Laurence is an Islande belonging to the Country of Africa, and lyeth Southwarde vnder 26 degrees, ending Northwarde vnder 11. degrees by the inhabitants it is called Madagascar, & by the Portugals the Islande of S. Laurence, because it was discovered on S. Laurence day: The riches of this Island is great, it aboundeth in Ryce, Honnie, Waxe, Cotton, Lemons, Cloues etc. The inhabitants are blacke and go naked, but the haire vpon their heades is not so much outled as those of the Mosamblique, & they are not ful so blacke.)

The 23. of Ianuarie we ankered before a Riuer where likewise we had all kinde of necessaries, and after that we went to lie vnder a small Islande within the same Bay.

The wilde peo-  
ple were on  
booke their ships  
and seemed very  
friendly.

The 25. of Ianuarie there came some of the wild people aboard our ships, making signes to haue vs go on land, which we did, and there we had good Ryce & other fruits in great abundance. On the left side of the entry of the Riuer lyeth one of their Townes, and on the right hand two townes, where we had most of our traffique.

The 26. of Ianuarie wee had interpreters, whom we made to drink wine, wherewith they were as drunke as beastes.

The

The manner & condition of the people inhabiting in the great Bay of Antogil, on this side the Equinoctiall line vnder 16 degrees, on the South side of the Island Madagascar.

IT is a very great Bay, about ten mile broad, behind it lyeth a high Island, and three small Islands: there is good harbour against all windes. The Island is inhabited, and therein groweth all kinds of fruites, it hath a great fall of water that cometh down out of the hills, where we laded all our water, and halfe a mile from thence within the land, there runneth a great Riuer, wherein likewise there is much water to be had, when you enter into the Riuer about a quarter of a mile inward on the left hand, ther is a small towne or village, not closed nor fortified, in it there is about 200. houses, & on the right hand where the Riuer diuideth it selfe, there is two other such Townes: They were all compassed with pales, and the houses were placed about two foote aboue the ground, vpon foure or fite pales or stakes of wood, and all the vpper partes of reede and strawe. The cause why their houses are made so high from the ground is to auoide the danger of venomous beastes that are there in great abundance, as Serpents, Snakes, Camelhons, and other kindes of beastes. The people are very blacke, but their hayre and bearded are not so much curled as the right Mores, nor their noses nor lippes so great nor flat. They are subtill and strong people, much addicted to drinking, for they will bee as drunke as Swine, with a kind of drinke made of Honie & Ryce. They go naked, onely that about their middles they weare a cloth made of the barke of a tree, drawne in small thredes: they make and vse very fine Mats to sitte vpon: They haue no great store of weapons, for that halfe of them are vnsoulded, and that they vse is a speare of nine or ten foote long, with a great wooden Target: They are very fearefull of our Calimers, for 5. or sixe men with Calimers will cause great numbers of them to flie away: We taught them what our peeces ment, for wee perceyued that they knew them not, before they had proved them: at the first they thought they could carry no further then their owne lengths, for they knew not what they were: Their Kinges ornâmentes were ten or twelue Copper Rings about his armes: if we had had such Ringes with vs, wee might haue sold them at what prices wee woulde. They likewise vse beades of Glasse, which they weare about their armes and neckes, by them esteemed for great ornâmentes: for a boxe of beades of small valler, we had an Oxe, or three or foure Sheepe: rounde about this Bay are townes and villages, where you may haue of all things to refresh your selues, Lemons and Citrons are there greater and better then in Portingall: Likewise Oringes, Ryce, Hennes, Goats, Honie, and many other sortes of fruites, and to conclude it is the best Bay in all the world to refresh ships: Being on land we were well entertayned, and must of force drinke with them of their drinke made of Hony and Ryce: There we traffiqued with them; and had sufficient of euery thing, but euery night we went aborde our shippes.

Why their houses stand so high about the earth.

The matter of the wild men in that country.

The third of February we had so great a storme, that most of our ankens were lost, and we ran vpon the land in great danger to cast our ships away, but God holpe vs, for the storme ceased, and then we went to hoise vp our lost ankens, and so againe went to anker vnder the Island, glid that we had so well escaped that danger. The fift of February we went to seeke for our boats, but the wild men had smitten them in peeces, & taken out the nailes, thinking likewise that our shippes woulde haue bene cast away vpon the shore, which they still expected: and when we came thither, they stood vpon the shore with their weapons in hand and threw stones at vs, and we perceyuing them in that minde, made towards our shippes, for we desired not to reuenge our selues, nor ouce to fight with them without commission from our Generall, whom we certified thereof. The cyght of February we rowed into the Riuer to buy cattle, and other things, but they were become our enemies, threatning and casting stones at vs, wherevpon we put out two shalops to run a shore close to the land, and made our Calimers and other weapons ready.

Wherewith we shot at them, but they feared not our shot, for they knew not what they ment, they thought likewise that the peeces could carry no further then they were long:

but when they sawe eight or nine of their fellowes dead, they fled into the woodes, and wee entering vpon the lande set fire on their houses, whereof we burnt about twentie or thirtie. The 9. of Februarie we sailed on the other side to buy cattle, and other necessaries, but they seemed vnwilling to deale with vs, but we threatning to burne their houses, they brought vs Cattle and fruites inough, with all things else to our desires.

The 12. of Februarie wee hoised anker, and set sayle out of the great Bay of Antongill, being well provided of all necessaries, we put out with a North wind, the Bay stretching Northeast and Southwest: The 2. of March we had a West winde, our course being East and East & by North towards Iaua. In March and Aprill about the Islande of Brondawe, we found that our Compasses helde two Strikes to farre Northwarde, and we coulde not perceiue the sands that are set downe in the Portingalles sea Cards, but we saw many turnings of streames, and we were much troubled with ealmes, but with the new Moone we had winde enough out of the West & North West. The 27. of May we found the water aboard our shippes to bee much lessened, and therefore euery mans portion was but halfe as much as he was wont to haue: so that each man was allowed but foure draughts euery day, which was but a small quantitie. Whereby through the extreame heat we endured great thirst, so that at that time a draught of water aboard our ship was worth a Riiall of 8. The first of Iuly we saw the Islande of Emgano, wherewith we much reioyced, because of the great thirst we endured in our shippe, and when wee made neerer to it, we perceyued it to be an Islande lying before the straights of Sonda, vnder 9. degrees on the South side of the line.

The sixt of Iuly we put somewhat nearer to the land, and there we saw sixe or seuen canoes lying vnder the shore, but farre off, and durst not make toward vs: in the end we manned out a shalop & rowed to land, but they made from vs, & when our men were hard by the shore, there we saw about 40. or 50. of them standing vpon the shore with their bowes: wherewith our men durst not land, for they seemed to be a cruell kind of people, and altogether wild, for they went all naked, not hauing any thing before their priuy members. They were of a reddish colour, but when our men saw no aduantage they turned again vnto their shippes.

The seuenth of Iuly we saw the point of the land of Sumatra, which is a verie high land descending downwarde with a long end.

The 11. of the same Month we were close vnder the land, where there lay an Island, and there we ankered.

The 12. of Iuly in the morning we saw certaine ships, whereof one came vnto vs, yea rowed vnto it with a shalop, and spake with it, but we could not vnderstand them, but they shewed vs where we should haue water, which made vs glad, that we might once againe haue our bellies full of water: it being almost foure Monthes that wee had not seene any land, nor taken in any fresh victualles. We sent our Pinace to the firme land of Sumatra, there to seeke for some reliefe: for that where we lay there dwelt not any man. The 13. of Iuly the Captain or principall ruler of Sumatra came aboard our ships to see them, which was done with great solemnitie, hee being appparelled after the Turkish manner, with a wreath about his heede, and a fearefull countenance, small eyes, great eye browes, and little beard, for a man might tell all the haire vpon his chinne: he brought vs a present of Beetele, which are leaues which they continually chew, and eat it with chalker.

This Island of Sumatra or Taprobana (as it is saide) is the greatest of all the Orientall Islandes, it is diuided from the firme land of Malacca by a straight and dangerous sea, by reason of many Islandes and cliffes that are within it: Out of this Island as some men are of opinion, Salomon had his Gold wherewith he beautified the Temple, and his owne pallace, and then in the Bible it should be named Orphair, for certainly Sumatra is rich of mynes of Golde, Siluer, and Metall, and the inhabitants thereof are very expert in melting of brasie peeces: Therein is a fountaine of pure Balsame, the Portingalles haue no fortresse therein, yet they traffique in certaine hauens, specially in Pedir and Campar: There is also in this Island a place called Manacabo, where they make poinyardes and daggers, by them cald

*The manner of  
the Governor of  
Sumatra coming  
on board.*

cryses,

tryses, which are much esteemed in those Countries, and those of Malacca and Iaua, hold them for their best weapons, and with them are very bold.

The same day our Pinnace returned againe vnto vs, bringing vs good newes, that wee were welcome vnto the Countrey people, and brought vs certaine Indian Nuttes or Cocus, Melons, Cocumbers, Onions, Garlicke, and a sample of Peper and other spices, which liked vs well.

The fourteenth of Iune we laded in some fresh water.

Right ouer against Sumatra, on the South side of the Equinoctiall lyeth the Islande of Iaua Maior, or great Iaua, and these two Islandes are decuded by a straight commonly called the straight of Sunda, which lyeth between these two Islands, bearing the name of the principall haueu of Iaua called Sunda: In this channel there runneth a great streame, and course of narrow waters, through this straight M. Candish an Englishman passed with his ship, comming out of the South sea from new Spaine. Iaua beginneth vnder seuen degrees on the South side, and so stretcheth East and South 150. miles long, it is very fruitfull, specially of Ryece, Cattle, Hogges, Sheepe, Hennes, Onions, Garlike, Indian Nuttes, and all kinde of spices, as Cloues, Nutmegges, Mace, etc. Which they carrie to Malacca. The chiefe haueu in the Islande is Sunda Calapa, there you haue much Pepper, better then that of India, or of Malabar, & there you may yearely lade 4. or 5000. Quintales of Pepper Portingall waight, there likewise you haue great store of frankencense, Camphora, & some Diamants: but they haue no other kinde of money but a certaine peece called Caixa, as bigge as a Hollands Doibt, but not so thicke, with a hole in the middle to hang it vpon a string, in which manner they commonly hange hundrethes or thousandes together, and with them they know how to make their accountes, which is two hundred Caixas make a Sata, and five Satas make a thousand Caixas, which is as much as one Crusado of Portingall, or three Carolus Gilderns, Flemish money: Pepper is solde by the sacke, each sacke waying 46. Catten waight of China, each Catte as much as 20. ounces Portingall waight, and each sacke is worth in that Countrey at the least 5000. Caixas, and when it is highest at 6. or 7000. Caixas: Mace, Cloues, Nutmegs, white and blacke Benjamin, Camphora, are sold by the Bhar, each barre waying 330. Catten of China: Mace that is faire & good is commonly worth from 100. to 120. thousande Caixas: Good Cloues accordingly, and foure Cloues called Bantan are worth 70. & 80. thousand Caixas the Bhar: Nutmegs are alwaies worth 20. & 25. thousand Caixas the Bhar: White and blacke Benjamin is worth 150. and 180. thousand Caixas, and sometimes 200. thousand. The wares that are there desired and exchanged for spices, are diuers sortes and colours of Cotton Linnen, which come out of severall Provinces; and if our Cambricke or fine Hollande were carryed thither, it would peradventure bee more esteemed then the Cotton linnen of India.

The 15. of Iune there rowed a scute called a Prawen hande vnder the lande by vs, wee called him, but not against his will, and shewed him silver, and other wares that liked him well, he bad vs make towards the strand, and told vs of Bantam, saying that there we should haue at kinde of Marchandise. Then we made signs vnto him that if he wold bring vs to Bantam, we wold pay him for his labor, he asked vs 5. rialles of 8. and a red cap, which we graunted vnto, and so one of the men in the scute came on bord the Manritius, and was our Pilot to Bantam, where we passed by many Islandes.

The nineteenth of Iuly as wee sailed by a towne, many Portingalles borded vs, and brought vs certaine Cocus and Hens to sell, which wee bought for other wares.

The 22. of the same Month wee came before the towne of Bantam, within three miles of it, and there ankered vnder an Island. The same day about euening a scute of Portingals borded vs that were sent by the Governour to see what ships we were, & when we shewed them that wee came thither to traficke with them, they told vs, that there was the right Pepper country, & that there we might haue our lading, that new Pepper was readie to be gathered, and would be ripe within two Monthes after, which pleased vs well, for wee had already beene fifteene Monthes and twelue daies vpon our voyage, hauing endured great daungers, miseries and thirst, many of our men by sickness being dead.

The

The 23. of Iune wee hoysed our ankers, and went close to the towne of Bantam, and ankered hard by 4. small Islands, that lie right North from the Towne: the same day the Sabander (who is there one of the greatest officers next the King) came aboard our shippes, asking vs what we would haue, we said we were come to buy Pepper and other spyces, and that wee had readie money, and certaine wares, whereof we shewed him some parte, which hee liked well, saying that there wee might haue lading enough, shewing vs great countenance.

The same day likewise there came a great number of scutes vnto our ships, bringing all kinds of victualles to sell, as Hennes, Egges, Cocus, Bonanas, sugar canes, Cakes of Rycé baked, and many other things. The 24. of Iune there came many men aboard our ships, bringing diuers wares to sell, shewing vs great friendship, and as it seemed were very glad of our arrival there, telling vs that there we might haue Pepper enough, and new Pepper within two Months after, and that Pepper was then as good cheap as it had bene any time within ten yeares before, that wee might buy 5. or 6. sackes for one Catti, (being about 20. Guilders) which was ordinarily sold but one sacke for that price: euery sacke wayeth 54. pounde-Hollandes waight, so that a pounde would be worth about a brasse penie Hollandes money.

The same day about noone the Sabander boarded vs once againe, willing Cornelis Houtman to go on land to speake with the Gouverneur, for as then there was no King, for about a Month before our arrival there, the King was gone with a great armie before the towne of Palimbam, which hee thought to take, and had almost gotten it, but there he was striken with a great Peccie by a Renigado of the Portingalles, and so was slaine. His death was much lamented by the strangers that dwelt at Bantam, for he was a good king, being about 25. yeares of age: he left behind him foure wiues, whereof the eldest was not about 15. yeares of age, and a yong sonne of three Monthes olde, that was to succeed him in his Kingdome, and they had chosen a Protector or Governour to rule in his minoritie, whom they call Kipate, and when the Kipate by the Sabander sent to our Sargeant Maior to come vnto him into the towne, he made him answer that he had no such commission, but he desired the Governour first to come aboard his ship, and then he would go on shore, he likewise desired vs to go neerer to the towne with our shippes.

And therevpon wee sayled somewhat neerer to the Island that lay next vnto the towne, within halfe a mile from it, & there we ankered at 4 fadome clay grounde, the towne lying South from vs, where wee had a good roade: The next morning the Governour sent aboard, and the men that came spake not onely good Portingall, but other languages: he let our Sargeant Maior vnderstand that he would come aboard, and desired that hee-would with a shalop meet him halfe the way, which was done about noone, and the Governour came aboard with a great company of men, where we shewed him all our wares, which liked him well, desiring vs to come on land, saying that we should be welcome, promising vs much fauour, wherewith he returned to the land with certaine rich presents that we gaue him. The 26. Barent Heijn Factor of the ship called the Mauritius, died very sodainly.

The 27. and 28. great numbers of people boarded our shippes bringing all sortes of necessaries & victuals to sell.

The 29. there came an Emperour aboard our shippe, whose father in time past had bene Emperour of all Iaua, and commanded all the Kingdomes of Iaua, but this man because of his badde life was not much accounted of: he spake good Portingall, for his mother was a Portingall woman borne in Malacca: This Emperour had conspired against vs with the Portingalles, but as then we knew it not.

The 30. of Iune Cornelis Houtman tooke a boate and went into the towne, and there spake with the Gouverneur about certaine affaires, touching a contract to be made with him.

The first of Iuly Houtman went again into the towne, and when he returned he brought with him a certaine contract made & signed by the Governour himself, who most willingly consented therevnto, & saide vnto him, Go now and buy what you will, you haue free liberty;

The Governour  
of Bantam  
came aboard  
their ships.

The Emperour  
came aboard  
and secretly con-  
spired with the  
Portingalles  
against them.

A contract to  
buy R. is in the  
text.

liberty: which done, the said Houtman with his men went to see the towne, apparelled in the best manner they coule, in veluet, Satin, and silkes, with rapiers by their sides: The Capitaine had a thing borne over his head to keep him from the Sun, with a Trumpet before him, which certaine times he caused to bee sounded: There the Emperour had them to a banquet after the Indian manner: From thence they went to the Portingalles, that made much account of Houtman, and made him a banquet, saying that they had seene him in Lisbon. The 2 of Iuly many Marchants came aboard, profering vs Pepper verie good cheape, but because we were vnskillfull in the waight and other things wee tooke respite to answere them.

The 3. of Iuly the Sabander came aboard, and he was our great friend, for that after we found it so, hee tolde vs what waight the sackets of Pepper were, and what prizes they bare, counselling vs to buy.

The 7. of Iuly the Gouvernour sent vs a man secretly by night willing vs to looke vnto the selues, and not to trust the Emperour, with whom all the Marchants conspired, and went to invade our ships, and that hee ment to rob vs, as being very licentious and euill minded.

The 8. of Iuly the Emperour sent vnto our ships, & offered to make them a banquet, bidding all the Captaines, maisters, Pilots, Gentlemen, Officers, Trumpets, and Gunners to come into the towne to him, and there he woulde make merrie with them: This was done by the Portingalles aduise, thereby to haue all the chiefe and principall men out of our ships, but we perceived their intent.

The Emperour  
meant to kill  
vpon the ships  
to rob them.

The 11. of Iuly the Emperour perceyuing that his deuise would not take place, hee went from Bantam to Iacatra.

The 12. of Iuly wee had a house offered vs within the towne.

The 13. of the same month Reyner van Hel with cyght Gentlemen went into the towne, taking certaine wares with him, of euery thing a little, and laid it in the house appointed for the purpose: there to kepp a ware house and to sel our marchandise, and presently both Gentlemen and Marchants came thither to buy and to sell vs Pepper.

The 15. and 16. many Gentlemen, Marchants, Chinars, and Arabians came to our ware-house & into our ships, offering vs Pepper, but our Factor offered them to little a price.

The 25. of Iuly the Gouvernour came againe aborde our shippes, and there looked vpon certaine of our wares, whercof hee bought some, and counselled vs to buy Pepper: About the same time the Portingalles made great sute vnto the Gouvernour, promising him many gifts to deny vs traffike, and to constraîne vs to depart from thence, saying we were no marchantes, but that we came to spie the countrie, for they said that they had seene many Flemings in Lisbon, but some like vs. Among the Portingalles there was one that was borne in Malacca, of the Portingalles race, his name was Pedro Truide, a man well seene in traouayling, and one that had bene in all places of the world: He was our good friend, & euery day came to taske with our Captaines, saying, you do not well that you make so more haste to take in your lading, you shall haue no better cheape wares, & withall shewed vs many other things: wherevpon the Portingalles hated him, and not long after he was murdered in his bed.

The hatred of  
the Portingalles  
against vs.

In August we did little, and tooke no great store of lading in seeking to haue Pepper better cheape, which the Portingalles liked not well of, and saide vnto the Gouvernour, that we desired not to buy; which the Gouvernour began to hearken vnto, for they offered him great summes of money that hee shoulde not permit vs traffique, so that in the end hee commanded that no man shoulde carrie any Ryce aborde our shippes, whereby we were abashed, and therevpon we sent vnto the Gouvernour for our money which hee ought for the wares hee had bought, which moued him.

The 26. of Iuly hee sent one of our Gentlemen with some of his men and nine slaues aboard our ships.

The situation of the Towne of Bantam, the principall towne of traffique in the Island of Iava, their strength & manner of building, with their traffique,

what

what people come thither, what wares are there most desired, what nations bring them thither, or come to fetch them, together with their religion, customes, & manner of house keeping.

BANTAM lyeth in the Isle of Iava maior, about 25. miles to sea ward within the Isle, between Sumatra and Iava: On both sides of the Towne there runneth a River, about 3 foot and a half deep, so that no shippes can enter into them; The Towne is compassed about with a River: The towne is almost as great in compasse as the old towne of Amsterdam: The walls are made with flankers: They have great numbers of Peeeces therein, but they knowe not how to use them, for they feare them much: all their Peeeces are of brasse, & they have many brazen bases. Their walles are not above two foote thicke made of bricke: every flanker hath diuers mases and peeeces of wood, which they use when they are besieged by their enemies. The houses are made of straw and reedes, standing vpon 4. wooden postes. The rich haue their chambers all hanged with silken Curtins, or els with cotton linnen: Their houses are most placed vnder Cocus trees, whereof the townie is full: Without the walles are many houses, wherein strangers for the most part haue their dwellings. The townie hath three great market places, wherein dayly there is markets holden, where you may buy all kindes of wares, and where there cometh a great number of people, very strange to beholde: Within the townie there is a great church or muske of wood, wherein they obserue the law of Mahomet: Gentlemen & men of any qualitie haue their owne muskes in their houses. The townie is not built with streetes, nor the houses placed in order, but very foule lying full of filthy water, which men must passe through, or leape ouer, for they haue no bridges: In the townie there is great resort of diuers Countries and nations, as of Malacca, Bengala, Malabar, Guieretters of Pegu, Sani Malicas, Banda, China and of many Kingdomes that haue great traffique for Pepper, that groweth rounde about Bantam, which in August and September is ripe, they you haue Nutmegs, out of the Island of Banda, and Cloues from Moluca, which the Portingalles doe most buy vp: Wee bought Nutmegs there for a blank a pound: All victuailles and necessaries are there in great abundance to be had, as Hennes, Hartes, Fish, and Ryce, and diuers kindes of fruites, as Auanas, Cocus, Bonanas, Manges, Doroyens, Iacca, Pruna, Grapes, Oranges, Lemons, Pomegranets, Cocombers, Melons, Onions, Garlicke; but breade they haue none, but in steade of it they eate Ryce: Beefe is there the dearest victuaille, for an Oxe in that place is worth 7. 8. or 9. Rialles of 8. The Chinars haue the greatest and most traffique in that townie. They come thither in the Month of Ianuarie, with 8. or 9. great shippes, bringing all sorts of Porceline, silks, Damaske, gold thread, Iron panes, and Iauas money called Caixas, whereof 12000. make a Ryall of eyght: They are hanged vpon strings by two hundred together, for the which they both buy & sel all kindes of marchandises, and there they lade Pepper which they carrie into China: Without the townie they haue a great place wherein they commonly vse to sell their wares, and there they dwell, and haue greater and better houses then any are within the townie, all made of reedes, onely that in euery house they haue a square place made of stone, wherein they put their wares to keepe them from burning, as some riche men in the townie likewise haue: The Chinars are very subtil and industrious people, and will refuse no labour nor paynes to yeerne money, there they make much Aqua vite of Ryce and Cocus, and trafficke much therewith, which the Iauars by night come to buy, and drinke it secretly, for by Mahomets law it is forbidden them. The Chinars liue there with free libertie: When they come to remaine there for a yeare or more as they thinke good, they buy themselues a wife or two, or more as they thinke good, and liue together like man and wife, and when they meane to depart, they sell their wiues again, but if they haue children they take them with them & so returne to China: They haue no special religion, but pray vnto the Deuill, that he would not hurt them, for they know that the Deuill is wicked, and that God is good, and hurteth no man, therefore they thinke it needlesse to pray to God. They acknowledge not the resurrection of the dead, but when a man dyeth they thinke he neuer riseth again: In their houses they haue great painted Deuils, before the which they place wax candles, and sing vnto them, praying them not

to hurt them, and the more monstrous that their shapes be, the more they honour them. These people live very hardly and poorly within Bantam, for there is not any work or labour how filthy soever it be, but they will do it to get money, and when they have gotten something they returne againe to China. They are verie like Iewes in our country, for they neuer goe without a paire of ballances, and all things is good waies with them, and are ready to do any service. When we came first before Bantam, they came euery day in great companies into our shippes, and there set out their wares to sel, as silkes, sowing silkes, and porcelines, so that our vpper deckes were full of pedlers, that wee could hardly walke vpon the hatches.

The manner, condition, custome, going, standing, apparell, housekeeping, wares, and behaviour of the Iauars in Bantam.

The Iauars and inhabitants of Bantam, are proude and obstinate, with a very stately pace, they hold the law of Mahomet, which they haue not had about 35. yeares, for as yet there are many heathens among them that neuer were made Mores: it is a very lying and theuish kind of people, not in any sort to be trusted. Their apparell both of rich and poore is a cotton cloth, and some of silke about their middles, which they tie about them with a girdle, the vpper parte and from the knees downewarde all naked: most of them goe bareheaded, but the principallest of them haue a wreath or Turkish roule about their heades, and some little cappes: Their priests come out of Meca in Arabia, and are yellowe of colour: Their weapon is a poinyard, which they call Crisis: it is made with hilt, and the handle is a Deuil <sup>what weapons they were.</sup> cut out of wood or bone: the sheathes are of wood: with them they are very bolde, and it is accounted for a great shame with them if they haue not such a Dagger, both yong, old, rich & poore, and yong children of five or sixe yeares olde, and when they go to the warres they haue targets, and some long speares, but most of them such poinyardes: They vse neyther great shotte nor caliuers when they go against their enemies: for a small matter oue King will make ward against another. When we came first before Bantam, we offered to make a contract with the Governour and the counsell of the towne, that they should deliuer vs a certaine quantitie of Pepper, and wee would goe with our shippes before Palimbam, and helpe them to reuenge the death of their Kings vpon their enemies, for (as they said) we might goe within a bowe shot of the towne with our shippes, and the Towne is but of wood without walles, so that we would presently haue beaten it downe to the ground. They offered vs some of their principall Governours to be left for pledges in our shippes, and their men would sayle in their fustes, such as should go on land, and we should doe nothing els but shoote out of our shippes, but our Capitaines would not do it, considering our small number of men. The Iauars take as many wiues as they will, and are able to maintaine: <sup>How many wifes they haue.</sup> but the common people haue but one, & some two married wiues, and some 10. 20. and 30. concubines: For a small matter they will sende their married wiues home agayne vnto their fathers, when they haue layne five or sixe dayes with them, saying they like them not, and so their marriage is vndone, when they desire it.

The manner, custome, housholding, childbearing, sporting & cleanlinesse of the women in Bantam.

The women of the towne are well kept from such as are circumsised, whercof the rich men haue many, and from other men or their friends, for their owne sonnes may not come into the house where the women are. They lie all naked and chaw Betelle, and haue a slauish woman that continually scratcheth their bodies, that is, such as are married women, but such as are concubines are as waiting Gentlewomen to the married women, when they goe out to giue them more maestic, and these that haue the greatest number are of most estimation: The Concubines haue but fewe children, for the married women poison their children, and these concubines are bought and sold: by their apparell a man can hardly discerne the riche from the poore, for they goe all with a Cotton cloth about their bodies vp to their breastes, and bounde about their middles with an other cloth, bare footed and their heads vacouered,

their hayre bound right vpon the top of their heads in a heape, but when they are in their pride, they weare crownes vpon their heads, whereof some of them are of pure golde, and rings of golde, and some of silver about their armes, every one according to their abilitie: They are very curious about their bodies, for they waich themselves at the least five or six times every day: they neuer ease themselves nor hate the company of their husbands, but they presently leape into the water and wash their bodies, and therefore the water that runneth through Bantam is very wholesome: for every one washeth themselves in it, as well pockie as other people, whereby wee lost some of our men that drunke of the water: The women are verie idle, for they do nothing all the day but lie downe; the poore slaues must doe all the drudgerie, and the men sit all day vpon a mat, & chaw Betete, having ten or twentie women about them, and when they make water, presently one of the women washeth their member, and so they sit playing all the day with their women: Many of them haue slaues that play vpon instrumentes much like our Shakebois, they haue likewise great bazons whereon they strike, & therewith know how to make good musicke, wherewith the women dance, not leaping much, but winding and drawing their bodies, armes and shouldeers, which they vse all night long, so that in the night time they make a great noyse with bazons and other instrumentes, and the man he sitteth and looketh vpon them, currie one of the women strining to doe her best that she may get her husbands fauour and her secret pleasure. The Gentlemen, Citizens, and marchantes haue their Gardens, and fields without the towne, and slaues for the purpose to labour in them, and bring their maisters all kindes of fruit, Rice and Hennes in the towne, as also the Pepper that groweth there, which runneth vp by an other tree, as Hoppes with vs; and groweth in long bunches like Grapes, so that there is at the least 200. graines in one bunch: it is first greene, and after it becommeth blacke, and is there in great abundance, so that it is the right Pepper countrey; for when we came thither they said vnto vs, *Aqui ai tanta Pimienta, como terra*, that is, here is as much Pepper as earth; and so we found it, and yet we departed from thence by our owne follies, without our lading of Pepper: Wee staid for new Pepper, meane time the Portingalles sent their letters into every place seeking to hinder our trade: At the first we might haue sufficient, for there we founde enough both to buy for money or to barter. We likewise had money and wares sufficient: we might easily haue had sixe or eight hundred tunnes, as we were advertised by some of the countrey, that we should presently buy, for that the Portingalles sought all the means they could to hinder vs, as after it appeared; and therefore he that thinketh to come soone enough, cometh oftentimes too late, and we used not our time so well as it fell out.

How Pepper  
groweth in that  
country.

A letter sent by  
one man in the  
towne that were  
best prisoners.

The 29. of August we had a letter sent vs by night from our men that were in the towne, that lay in a manner as prisoners, to will vs to let our pledge go a shore, otherwise they feared they should hardly escape with their liues, and great danger might fall vpon them: this pledge came aboard with the 9. slaues.

The 30. of August we sent the pledge, and the rest of our lauers to land, with promise that he would do the best he might to get our men leaue to come aboard: about euening of the same day wee had newes from our men by foure of our saylers that as then they were better used, saying they thought they should come aboard when two shippes were gone that ment to saile for Malacca, being laden with Nutmegs and other things.

The first of September, and the 2. 3. and 4. wee sent many letters to the Governour and hee to vs, and likewise to our men that were in the towne, being nine in number, all our best marchants and captains, hauing with them about 6. or 7000. Guildernes in merchandise, and they againe to vs.

They went  
aboard to the  
towne.

The 5. of September when wee perceyued that delayes were dangerous, wee went close to the towne with all our 4. shippes, and so neere that we had but two sadome muddie grounde, and presently with two of our boates for our securitie wee set vpon three Iauan shippes, whereof two were laden with fish and Cocus, wherein wee founde a man of China, being of some account. The third ship was laden with 20. tunnes of Cloues, 6 tunnes of Pepper, and some Benions, and Pimenta da Bado, wherein we founde five Malabares slaues to the Portingalles, whom

wee

were likewise took. & they were very willing, to goe with vs, thereby to bee eased of the slavery wherunto the Portingalls put them, and perceyuing that the Portingalles went often to and from another shippe that lay not farre from vs, we took our Pinace and made towards it, and being hard by it, the Portingalls left it & set it on fire: This ship had the richest wares in it as the Portingalles slaues tolde vs, for it was laden with fiftie tonnes of Cloues, which were burnt in it.

The sixt and seventh of September we hearde no newes, so that we went close to the Towne agayne, shooting with our great Peeeces into it, slaying diuers of the people (as after we were informed :) They likewise shot with their Peeeces agaynst vs, which the Portingalls did, for that the Iauas haue little or no skill at all therein, and are very fearefull of them, and although they had many peeeces in the towne, yet they did vs no other hurt then onely shot one of Molenares halfe masts in peeeces.

The seuenth of September we had a skirmish, which was in this manner, we perceyuing a Iauan ship vnder sayle, sent our Pinace with sixe and twentie men in her to fetch it in, which the Iauan shippe perceyuing fledde behinde an Islande, where our Pinace followed him so fast that shee fell a grounde, which the townes men perceyuing, made them readie with foure and twentie boates full of men, all armed after their manner, and set forwarde in good order, being diuided in two companies, seuen on starre bord; & 17. on lardde bord of the Pinace, in order like a halfe Moone, threatening vs with their speares, they thought by reason of their great number of men, that they had already taken it; but it fell out otherwise; for they in the Pinace, perceyuing them comming, shotte among them, and they were so neare vnto her that we could not shoot at them: and when they were hard by the Pinace, shee gotte a flote, as they thought to take her, hauing cast out an anker in good time, and thereby wounde themselves off the grounde, but for haste they were forced to cutte their Cable; because they had not time enough to winde it vppe, and with all they shotte one of their boates vnder water. The Pinace drawing her boate after her, the Iauans presently leapt into it, and cutte a sander the rope that holde it, which they immediately stole from vs, thrusting with their Speares in at the loope holes. Seuen of their Boates being round about vs were so sharply payde with the iron peeeces, stone peeeces, and Calliers, that the 17. others durst not come so neere vs: I thinke there were at the least 100. of them that neuer carried newes how they sped in that skirmish, for euery boate had at the least 60. men in it, and they were so thicke in them, that they could not help themselves, nor did any thing els but shake their speares, and they shot but one base: their arrowes hurt vs not, and so the Pinace returned agayne vnto our shippe, sayling close before the towne, and shooting into it with her ordinance: They shot out of the towne, but it hit her not, because they shot with stone pellets, wherewith you cannot shoot so certainly as with iron bullets.

The 8. 9. and 10. of September we had letters from our men out of Bantam, by the which they willed vs not to shoot any more, for that the Gouvernour threatened in set them vpon stakes: Houtman wrote they were in good hope that they shoulde bee put to ransome, which we counselled them to doe as well as they might.

The 11. of September we had a letter from Houtman, and one from the Gouvernour, wherein hee wrote that he would set our men at libertie, so we would be quiet, but if we desired warre, he would once againe come and visite vs in another sort: we answered him that there he should find vs, that wordes were but wind, & that he should set our men at a reasonable ransom, and thereof send vs an answer the next day.

The 12. and 13. of September we had no answer out of the towne, and we had want of water, and could get none thereabouts but that which came out of the towne, for that the Gouvernour had taken order that we should get no water about the towne, so that we hoised ankers to goe seeke some.

The 17. of September we came before 3. or 4. Islands which Molenare and Shellenger sayled betweene, and for that the streame ranne so strong there, they were forced to goe so nigh the shore, that they might almost leape on lande, whereby they escaped great danger, but the other shippe and the Pinace sayled about the Islands, and so met with the other two, and

A skirmish betweene the Pinace and 24. boats.

The orders of the Gouvernour here.

casting forth their ankers went on shore, where wee spake with men that saide they would shew vs where wee should haue water, so we would giue them two Calicurs.

The 18. 19. 20. 23. and 24. we stayed to lade water, for it was hard to get, and we were forced to keep good watch, which done hoysing ankers againe, wee sayled towardes Bantam, holding our course Eastward.

The 27. we sayled Northeast towardes the lande of Iaua maior.

The 28. setting sayle agayne, we kept East Northeast along by the coast of Iaua, & about noone because of the great streame that runneth in the straight, wee were forced to anker, and the 30. day wee set sayle againe.

The first of October in the euening wee came to a great Islande, being three miles from the towne, and there we ankered finding good exact ground.

The 2. of October wee had a letter from our men, how they were separated one from the other, and kept by the Gentlemen of the towne, and their wares parted among them.

The 3. 4. and 5. when wee were againe before the towne, we had other letters, that by our comming they were better vsed, and hoped to bee set at a reasonable ransom, and that they promised that one of our men should come aborde, so he would returne againe into towne, that should be by word of mouth certifiè vs what hope they were in, and the cause thereof, that we might the better belient it.

The 6. of October in the night one of our men came aborde, and shewed vs what had past, when we shotte into the towne, how they were separated and kept close prisoners, and cruelty threatened by the laurers, whereby they still expected when they should bee put to death, and howe they sought all the meanes they could to make them to deny their faith, and become Morcs, but they remayned constant, and saide they would rather die, and that they had by force shanten three of our men after the Morish manner, and how the Portugals had sought all the meanes they could to buy them for slaves, offering money for them that they might sende them to Malacca, how they were set at libertie againe, & might goe where they would within the towne, and so they hoped all would be well, and that they should bee set at libertie for some small ransom, and that the Governour asked them 3000. Rialles of 8. but they hoped to bring him to 2000. wherat we much reioyced.

The 8. 9. and 10. of October we passed ouer to make some agreement with them that we might be quiet.

The 11. of October they agreede vpon a ransom of 2000. Ryalles of eyght, and were content, that what goodes soeuer we had taken from them, wee should keepe as our owne, and for our goodes that they had stolen, and forcibly taken from our men within the towne, they would keepe them, and so exchange one for the other; they likewise were content to quit vs of all our debts, that we ought within the towne eyther to the Governour or to any other man, and that from thence forwarde we should be free, and traffique in the towne, both to buy and sell when it pleased vs, & with their good willes as we had done, and before we paide our money, the towne was to sende two men aborde our ships, which done, we were to pay the halfe of our ransom, and vpon the payment thereof, they should set halfe of our men at libertie, and that halfe of our men being come aborde, we were to pay the other halfe of our ransom, which was 1000. Ryalles of eyght; which being performed, their two men, and their other halfe of our men were on both sides to bee deliuered and sette free, and without contradiction it was performed.

The 12. and 13. this agreement being ended, diuers victuallers came aborde our shippes to sell vs Hennes, Egges, and all other kind of victualles.

The 14. we gaue certaine presentes in signe of good will, to such as had shewed vs fauour when we were in contention with them.

The 15. 16. 17. and 18. some of our Factors went into the towne, where they bought certaine Pepper, & brought it abord our ships.

The 19. they went againe into the towne, & bought a greater quantitie at 5. sackes for one Cati, minding in that sorte euery day to take in our lading, but it fell not out as wee desired, for the Portugalles that could not brooke our company, made such means to the Governour, that

How the Ioues  
used our men  
being prisoners.

The manner of  
their ransom.

that he gave commandement that we should buy no more Pepper, before we had paid 1400. Rialles of 8. which he challenged of vs because we had cast anchor within his streame, wherevpon our Marchantes went and agreed with him, which done wee thinking to buy Pepper as we did before, the Governour againe commanded to the contrarie, whereby we perceyued their deceipt, in that he wold not hold his word. The countrymen would gladly haue solde their Pepper, as also the Chinars, Arabians, Mahometitians, and secretly some Portugallies, but when we saw we could not get it out but with great daunger, wee thought it not conuenient to buy: and when we spake vnto the Governour, touching the holding of his worde, he made vs answere, that he had no bones in his tongue, and that therefore he coulde speake that which he ment not to doe: and to say the truth most part of the Iauars are a kind of deceitfull people, for whatsoever they say and presently performe, that shall you be sure of and no more.

Why the Governour forbade vs traffick.

The 25. of October there came an Ambassador into Bantam sent from Malacca to the Governour with a present of 10000. Rials of 8. desiring him to forbid vs both his towne and streame, that wee might not traffique there. Whereof wee were aduertised by the Sabandar and other of our friends counselling our men to get them out of the towne, and not to returne againe, otherwise they would be in daunger to be stayed againe, and we hauing sent a man into the towne to saue him from being holden prisoner, our host where we lay being on shore was forced to bring him out covered with certaine mattes; so that vpon the 26. of the same month all our trafficke and friendship with them ceased: but our host being our friende, came secretly aboarde our ships, and shewed vs that he and his company had two ships lying before the towne, laden with Nutmegges and Mace that came from Banda, for the which hee agreed with vs at a price, vpon condition that we should seeme to take them by force, that thereby he might colour his dealing with vs: wherevpon the first of Nouember we sailed close to the towne with all our ships, and set vpon the two Iauan shippes, wherein we found to the number of 30. slaues, that knew nothing of their maisters bargaine made with vs, so that they began to resist vs, wherewith we shot among them, and presently slew 4. or 5. of them, the rest leapt ouer borde, and swamme to land, which done we tooke the two ships, and put their lading into ours: The Portugallies shippe that brought their Ambassadour, lay close vnder the shore, wherevnto we sent two of our boats, but the Portugals that were in her shot so thicke with their peeces vpon our men, that our boates were forced to leaue them with losse of one of our men, but our shippes shot in such sorte with their ordinance vpon the Portugall shippe, that they spoyled and brake it in peeces, wherein their Captaine was slaine, and the victualiers that still brought vs victualles to sell, tolde vs that with our peeces we had slain three or foure men within the towne, & that the townes men began to make an armie of ships to set vpon vs.

How they tooke two Iauan ships.

They fought with a Portugall shippe.

The 2. of Nouember we espyed a shippe that came toward Bantam, which we ioyned vnto with our boats, and being nere vnto it, they spread their sights, which were of thicke mattes, and began to defend themselves; our men shot among them with stone peeces and Caliuers, and they defended themselves with great courage, hauing halfe pikes wherewith they thrust at vs, & that scrued likewise to blow arrowes out of them, for they were like trunks, out of the which trunks they shot so great numbers of arrowes, that they fell as thicke as hayle, and shotte so certainly, that therewith they hurt at the least eyght or nine, of our men, but the arrowes are thinne and light, so that their blaste coulde not make them enter into the flesh about the thickness of two fingers, onely the head of the arrowe (which is made of reede, and loose stayeth in the flesh) when we shot with our Caliuers they ranne behind their sightes, but wher they perceiued that their matted sightes could not defende them, and that they were killed through them, they entered into their boate, and by strength of oares rowed from vs, leauing their shippe, wherein we founde two dead men, and we slew three more of them as we rowed after their boat, so that in all they lost five men, as we after heard, and that they were to the number of 40. which done, wee brought their shippe to ours, wherein we found good store of Ryce and dried fish.

They fought with a Iauan shippe.

The 6. of Nouember, perceyuing not any hope of more trafficke for vs with those of Bantam, wee hoisted anker and set sayle, setting our course towards the straight of Sunda.

The marchants followe they with wares.

The seuenth of Nouember wee came and ankered before a Riuier of freshe water, about sixe miles from Bantam, where wee tooke in our provision of water: thither certaine Merchants followed vs with Porcelaine, telling vs that they were sory for our departure, & that they longed for our returne againe.

The thirteenth of Nouember wee set sayle, and about euening wee came before Iacatra, in time past called Sunda Calapa, which hath beene a rich Towne of marchandise, but vpon some occasions and by reason of their hard vsage the Marchants had withdrawn themselves from thence, therefore at this present there is little or nothing to doe. Iohn Hughes in his booke saith this to be the principal towne of trafficke, but that is long sithedee, for now there is not any trade of marchandise.

The fourteenth of Nouember wee sent two of our men into the towne, hauing some of theirs in payne, who tolde vs that many of the inhabitants were gone out of the towne with all their goodes, being in great feare of our peeces, and there wee had great store of victualles, and much more then wee required brought aboard our ships.

The 18. wee set saile from Iacatra, and being about two miles from the towne, our shippe called Amsterdam fell vpon a cliffe, but it got off againe without any hurt, and therewith wee presently made towards the straight.

The 2. of December we passed by 3. townes which we might easily perceiue, we likewise passed by Tuban, and ankered vnder Sidaya. The 3. of December there came men out of the towne, and desired vs to stay, saying that there we might haue Cloues & Nutmegs as many as we would, bringing certaine banquetting stufte (as a present from their King) vnto Schelengers ship, because it lay nearest to the land, and they came most aboard it.

The 4. of December they came again into Schelengers ship, bringing certaine presentes with them, and among the rest a certayne bird that coulde swallowe fyre, which is a very strange fowle, and was brought aliuie to Amsterdam, which after was giuen to the states of Holland lying in the Hage, and some good fruities, willing vs to sende a man on shore, to see their spices, whereof they said they had great store: wherevpon we sent a man out of the Amsterdam, and with him an interpreter, one of the Portugallish slaues, they leauing three or foure of their men aboard our shippes, for pawns till his returne: when our man came to lande hee was well vsed, and there they shewed him fortie or fiftie bales of Cloues; which done they brought him before the King, that promised him great fauor, and told him that the next day he wold himselfe come aboard our ships, and deale with our Captaines, and with that he let our man depart.

The 5. of December we expected the Kinges comming aboard, putting out all our flagges and streamers, and about noone there came 8. or 9. indifferent great shippes full of men from off the shore, wherein wee thought the King to be, but when they were almost at vs they diuided themselves, three of them rowing to Shellengers ship, and when they boarded him, they thinking the King had been there, Reymers van Hel as Factor and the Maister came forth to receiue him, but the lancers entering all at once, Reymers van Hel said, What will all these people do aboard the shippe, for there was at the least two hundred men, who all at one time drewe out their poynters, and stabbed our men that neuer suspected them, so that presently they had slaine twelue of the shippe, and two sore wounded, that boldly withstoode them: the rest of our men being vnder hatches presently tooke their pikes, and thrust so fast out at the grates, that the lancers would haue forced the middle part of the ship, wherein was two entries, but our men standing at them with their swordes in hande draue them out, not ceasing still to thrust vp with their pikes, meane time they kindled fier, lighted their matches, and shot off their stone peeces that lay about the hatches; wherwith they began presently to fire, most of them leaping ouer bord, and swam to their two boates, that lay hard by our shippes, whereof one with a great peece was presently striken in peeces: The rest of our ships hearing vs shoote in that manner, entered into their boats, and made towards them,

How the lancers destroyed them.

them, rowing harde to the three Indian fustes, wherein were at the least 100. men, and shotte among them with their peeeces, wherewith they leapt into the water, every man swimming to shore, and we with two boates after them, hewing and killing them as our deadly enemies, who vnder pretence of friendshippe sought to murder vs. and wee handled them in such sort, that of two hundred men there got not above thirty of them to lande, the rest of their fustes lay farre off and beheld the sight: Three of their fustes thought to rowe to the Pinace to take her, which they might easily haue done, as hauing not about 7. or 8. men in her, being busie to set vpe a newe mast, but when they perceyued their men to bee so handleed in the Amsterlan, and that they leapt ouer borde, they turned backe againe, and in great haste rowed to land, so that at that time they got not much by the bargaine, and no small grieue to vs, for there wee lost 12. men, that were all stabbed with poinyards, their names were Iohn Iacobson Schelleniger, master of the ship, Reymers van Hel Factor, Gielis Gielson Gentleman, Barent Bonteboter, Arent Cornedrager, Cornelis van Alcmuer, Simon Ianson, Wilschut loos the Carpenter, Adrian de Metselar, one of the Portingalles slaues, and two boyes, whereof one was but twelue yeares olde, whereby wee perceyued them to be a kinde of cruell people, for they had giuen the little boy and all the rest of our men at the least 12. stabbes a peece after they were dead.

The names of  
the men that  
were stabbed.

The same day about euening we hoysed ankers, and set saile, hauing manned the Amsterdam with men out of our other shippes, and so helde our course Eastward.

The 6. of December we came to a great Island called Madura, where we ankered, and in the euening two of their men came aborde our shippes, with message from their Governour, saying that we were welcome, desiring vs to stay there, for he would trafficke with vs, and sell vs some Pepper, as they saide, but wee believed them not.

The 7. of December there came another boat abord, bringing certaine fruites, saying that the next day their Governour would come to see our shippes.

The 8. there came a great fuste and three smal boats, from off the land all full of men, saying their Governour was among them: we willed them not to goe to the Amsterdam, but to the Maurittis, but they woulde not, but made to the Amsterdam, thinking because there had bene so many murdered in her, there was not many men aborde her at that time, and when they were within a pykes length of her, (although they were directed to the other shippes) they remembering their late mischance, shotte off three or foure stone Peeeces full laden, wherewith they slew and hurt many of the Indians, wherevpon they presently leapt ouer bord, & wee with our boates followed after and slew diuers of them, taking ten or twelue, thinking by them to know what their intent was to doe, but they could not certifie vs, and therefore we let them go againe onely keeping two boyes, who long after stole out of the shippe, and swamme to lande: They tolde vs that the Governour being a Bishoppe, or chiefe instructor of the country, was within the boate and slaine among the rest, hee had therein likewise a little boy one of his sonnes who wee likewise tooke, and sent to lande: The Bishoppe was of Mecca, and much esteemed of among them, a great Clarke, and Governour ouer all the rest of the Countrey: There was a Jewell found about him, which as yet is kept.

About euening we hoysed ankers, & set sayle, & the 11. of December we came to two small Islands, where wee ankered, there wee founde none but poore people and fishermen, that brought vs fish, Hens, and other fruit to sell.

The 13. wee set sayle, and the 14. wee had a West winde, which they call the passage winde, that would haue serued vs well to saile to Moluccas, from whence wee were not distant above two hundred miles, and as then it was a good yeare for Cloues, which happeneth every three yeares: It was told vs that we might there haue a Calhinn laden full of Cloues, wherevpon wee determined to sayle thither, but because wee had already indured a long and troublesome voyage, and but ill manned, wee woulde not, longing to bee at home: This contrary wind holding vpon the foure and twentie of December wee came to an Islande where wee had bene before.

How farre they  
were from Mo-  
luccas.

The 25. of December John Molenaer maister of the Mauritius, dyed sodainely, for an hower before hee was well, and in good health.

The 28. 29. 30. and 31. of December wee were busied to take all the wares, sayles; and other things out of the Amsterdam, her victuailes and furnitures seruing for our voyage homewarde, & lying vnder that Island, we had victuailes brought vs euery day as much as wee needed, both fish, Hens, venison and fruite; and at reasonable price, but there we could get no water.

*The Anker  
lay on the*

The 11. of Ianuary when we had vnloaden the Amsterdam we set her on fier, letting her burne; taking her men into our shippes.

The 12. of Ianuarie we set sayle againe, some desiring to sayle Eastward, others Westward, but in fine we set Westward to sayle once againe to Bantam, wherewith the Mauritius sayled Southeastwarde, to gette about the Island of Iaua, and we followed her. The 14. of Ianuary we once againe perceyued the East point of the Island of Madura, and held our course Southward: on that side of Madura there lieth many small Islandes, through which we sayled.

*The Point  
of Bantam*

The 16. in the morning our Pinace fell on grounde vpon the coast of Iaua, not far from Pantorocan, where she shotte off three peeces, at the which warning wee made thither with our boates, and by the help of God got her off againe: There we saw a high hill that burnt, vnder and aboue the fire hauing a great smoake, most strange to behold.

The 18. of Ianuary we entered into the straight that runneth betweene Iaua and Baly, and by reason of the hard & contrary streame that ran therein, we were forced to anker vpon the coast of Iaua, where wee found good anker ground.

The 19. we set set sayle; and when wee came neere to the coast of Baly, we entered into a rough streame, and our shippes draue backward, as swiftly as an arrow out of a bow, and there we found no anker ground, nor any anker could haue holden vs, but Molenaer got the coast of Iaua and ankered, which in the ende wee likewise did, and ankered at the least three miles from him, and so much we had driven backe in the space of halfe an hower.

The 20. of Ianuarie wee went and lay by our other ships.

The 21. of Ianuarie there came two barkes to the Mauritius, wherein there was one that coulde speake good Portugall, who tolde vs that the towne of Ballaboosin was besieged by a strange King, that had married the King of Ballaboosins daughter, and after he had liue with her he caused her to bee slaine, and then came to besedge her father. This towne of Ballaboosin lieth on the East end of the Island of Iaua, and is the same towne where M. Candish was when hee passed that way, and the old King wherof he writeth was as then yet liuing, being at the least 160. years of age. There we saw great numbers of Battes, that flew ouer our shippes, and were as bigge as Crows, which in that Countrey they vse to eat, as they say: About noone we came before the towne of Ballaboosin, so neare vnto it, that we might easily see it, and there we lay behind a high point of lande, thinking to take in water.

The 22. of Ianuarie we tooke our Pinace, and sayled about the shore as neere the land as possible we might, to seeke for fresh water, but we found none, for the Riuer that ran through the towne was paled vp (by them that lay before it) so that no man might passe either out or in, but onely on the lande side, and that with great danger: The same day there came 2. or 3. men aboard our shippe, that stole out of the towne by night, and came from the King, to desire our help with our great shot, which wee coulde not doe; because that thereabouts it was very shallow, and we might not go neere it with our shippes; they tolde vs they had great want of victuailes within the towne, whereby many of them were already deade for hunger, and much desired our aide, but it was not in vs to doe. Those that besieged the towne were Moors, but they in the towne were heathens, and as yet had not receyued Mahometts lawe, and that (as wee heard after) was the cause of their warre: There wee sawe many Storkes flying and sitting in the felds: with vs we cannot imagine where the Storkes remaine in winter time, but here wee sawe them in the winter time.

The 24. of Ianuarie we sayled from thence, perceyving nothing for vs to get, and tooke our course right ouer to the Island of Bally.

The 25. we came to Bally, where some of their barks boarded vs, telling vs that there we should find a River of fresh water, and of all things els sufficient to serue our necessities, wherevpon wee ankered.

The 26. of Ianuarie our Pinace sent her boat to land, to see the River, and there one of our men was sent on shore, but when he was on land he found nothing, but an armie of ten thousand men, that ment to relieue the towne of Ballaboan, and the River was nothing worth to lade water, wherevpon our men came on borde againe: Their Generall thought to haue gotten some great pray out of our shippes.

The 27. of Ianuarie we set sayle to finde a conuenient place to refresh vs with water and other provision, for wee were informed by a man of Bengala, that of his owne will sayled with vs, and that had boene in Bally, that there we should finde water and other things to serue our necessities, so that by night wee ankered vnder a high pointe of lande on the South West ende of Bally.

The 28. of Ianuary one of their boates boarded vs with sixe or seuen men, saying that their King was desirous to deale with vs for such wares as hee had, and sent to know from whence we came, and we said wee came out of Holland.

The 29. and 30. there came more men aborde our shippes, but as wee suspected that was not the right haue, for the people came rowing in great haste a far off, and the man of Bengala could not tell what to say, but the King was thereabout, and euery day sent vs some fruit.

The first of February wee had two hogges brought aborde our shippes, that wee bought for two Ryalles of eyght, and we ate them very sauerly.

The 2. of Februarie, we set saile that wee might get aboute the point, where wee thought to finde a better place for freshe water, but by reason the winde was contrary, wee could not doe it; but were forced to anker againe.

The 3. of February we set saile againe, and then wee had a storme, so that our saile blew euery way, and because of the contrarie winde we could not reach aboute the point, but were constrained to anker, but the Mauritius and the Pinace got past it, although thereby the Mauritius was in no little danger, but because the Pilot had laid a wager of 6. Rialles of 8. that hee would get aboute it, hee would passe, what danger soeuer it might be, and sayled close along by the cliffes, whereby wee lay at anker without companie.

The 4. and 5. wee set saile once againe to get aboute the point but could not reach it.

The 6. we had a letter from Rodenburgh, that certified vs how the Mauritius lay at anker at the least 7. or 8. miles beyond the point, and he that brought the letter came with it ouer land; and at the same time there was a man sent on lande with a small present for the King, that we might winne his fauour.

The 7. our man came on borde againe, and brought vs newes how Rodenburgh with one of the Portingalles slaues, being on lande were against their willes led before the King, but the saylors of the Mauritius had gotten men for pledges.

The 8. of Ianuarie, the same man went on land out of our shippe with more presentes of veluet and a caliner, the better to get the Kinges fauour, which liked him well, and desired vs to bring the ship nearer to the towne, saying he would send vs water, and other things sufficient to supply our wants.

The 9. we sayled into the cheeke with our shippe, & ankered about a small halfe mile from the land, & being ankered there came at the least 70. boates of the Countrey to see our ship, and the King sent vs word that hee was desirous to heare vs shoote off 5. or 6. of our great peeces, wherevpon wee shot fise of our greatest peeces, and the King stode vpon the shore to see them.

The 10. we had a letter from Cornelis Houtman, to wil vs to come to them, for that there they had founde a good place for water, and of all other necessaries, so that about euening wee set sayle, leauing two of our men and a Portingall slaue among the Indians, whome the

King promised should come vnto vs ouer land, yet that night wee could not reach about the point, meane time we perceyued our Pinace that came to helpe vs.

The 16. we got by the Mauritius, that had already laden in her water, and hooped her vessels, wherevpon we began presently to do the like, and to visite our vessels that were almost spoyled.

The 17. our men whome wee left with the King came ouer land vnto our shippes, and then we bought great store of cattle and fruit.

The 18. 19. 20. and 21. wee employed our time to lade water, which wee had verie easily, and refreshed our selues with Cattle, Hogges, fruit, and Lemons sufficient. There came one of the Kinges principall officers with our men ouer land, to pleasure vs in all things we desired, he was very desirous to haue some present of vs.

The 22. of Ianuarie two of our men that sayled in the Mauritius stayed on lande, but wee knewe not the cause: it should seeme some great promises had beene made vnto them, for as we vnderstoode, the King was very desirous to haue all sortes of strange nations about him, but our people were therein much ouerseene, for there they liued among heathens, that neyther knewe God nor his commandementes, it appeared that their youtthes and wilde-headed did not remember it, one of their names was Emanuel Rodenburgh of Amsterdam, the other Iacob Cuyper of Delft: within a day or two they sent vnto vs for their clothes, but wee sent them not.

The 23. 24. and 25. we made a voyage on land, and fetcht as many Hogges aboard our shippes as we could cate.

The 25. of Februarie we hoysed ankers, minding to set saile & so go homeward, leauing our 2. men aforesaid on land, but because it was calme weather we ankered, and went once againe on lande, and the 26. of the same Month wee set saile and helde our course West South West, but we had a calme.

#### The situation of the Island of Baly.

The Island of Baly lying at the East end of Iana, is a verie fruitfull Islande of Ryce, Hennes, Hogges, that are verie good, and great store of cattle: but they are very drie and leane beastes. They haue many horses: the inhabitantes are heathens, and haue no religion, for some pray to Kine, others to the Sunne, and euerie man as hee thinketh good. When a man dyeth his wife burneth her selfe with him: there were some of their men aborde our shippes, that told vs, that when some man dyeth in that Countrey, that sometimes there are at the least fifty women that will burne themselves with him, and she that doth not so is accounted for a dishonest woman: so that it is a common thing with them: The apparel both of men and women is for the most part like those of Bantam, nothing but a cloth about their middles: Their weapons is, each man a poinyarde at their backs, and a tranke with an iron point like a spear, about a fadom and a halfe long, out of the which they blowe certaine arrowes, whereof they haue a case full; it is an euil weapon for naked men: they are enemies to the Mores and Portingalles. This Island yeeldeth no spice, nor any other costly ware, onely victualles and clothes which they weare about their bodies, and slaues that are there to be sold. The King went with more state then the King of Bantam: all his garde had pikes with heades of fine gold, and he sate in a wagon that was drawn by two white Buffles.

The first of March we had a calme.

The third we got a good wind that blew Southeast, holding our course West South West.

The fourteenth the wind blew stil South East, sometimes more Southwarde, and sometimes Eastward, being vnder 14. degrees, and a good sharpe gale, holding our course West South West: There we found that Iana is not so broad, nor stretcheth it selfe not so much Southwarde, as it is set downe in the Carde: for if it were, we should haue passed clean through the middle of the land.

The 22. of March the winde helde as it did, being vnder 19. degrees, holding our course West South West.

Two of our men stayed with the Indians.

How so women burne themselves with their husbands.

The situation of Iana.

The 19. of April our ship had no more bread left, but for our last portion every man had seven pound, both good and badde breade, and from that time forward our meate was Rice sodden in water, and every man had a canne of water every day; with three romers of wine, and weekly each man three romers or glasses of oyle and that very strong, and nothing els.

The 20. we had a calme, the 21. a calme with a Northerne air.

The 22. a good wind that blew Southwest.

The 23. we saw the firme lande of *Aethiopia*, being vnder 38. degrees, and as wee gessed, wee were then about an hundred miles from the Cape de bona Sperance, yet we thought we had been at the least three hundred miles from it, so that wee may say, that God wrought wonderfully for vs: for that if wee had fallen by night vpon the land, we had surely runne vpon it: wee had a good winde out of the West, and West Southwest.

The 25. of Aprill in the morning wee had a calme, with a very hollow water, & at euening we had a good winde, that came North and Northeast, and although wee had so good a wind yet our shippe bare but little sayle, although the other two shippes of our company were at the least two mile before vs, for most part of the night wee rayled with our schouer saile, holding our course Southwest & by West.

The 26. of Aprill in the morning we could not see our shippes, which pleased not our men, besides that our shippe was very weake, whereby her ribs shoke, and her ioynts with the force of the water opened and shut, so that as then our shippe was very leake, hauing the winde Northwest, holding our course as neere as wee could West Southwest, and then we put out our maine sayles, at noone the winde came West, with a great storme, so that most of our sayles blew in peeces, and so wee drave forward with out sayles.

The 27. of Aprill still driuing without sayle with a West winde, wee were vnder thirty sixe degrees, so that we found that the streame drave vs South & South West.

The 28. of Aprill still driuing without sailes, we had the height of 36. degrees and 20. minutes, and about euening we hoised saile againe, the winde being West Southwest, & we held our course Northwest with very hollow water.

The 29. of Aprill we could not as yet see our shippes, the wind being West.

The 30. of Aprill we had fayre weather with a West and West South West wind, and then we saw many great birdes with white billes, which is a signe not to bee far from the Cape de bona Sperance, we likewise saw certain small birdes, speckled on their backs, and white vpon their breasts.

The first of May wee had a South winde with fayre weather, hauing 34 degrees and a halfe, holding our course West Southwest.

The seconde of May wee were vnder 35. degrees, and  $\frac{1}{2}$ . holding our course West and West and by North.

The fourth of May we found our selues to be vnder 37. degrees South South East winde, our course being West and by North, and West North West.

The 5. and 6. of May we had all one winde at noone being vnder 35. degrees, wee thought wee had past the Cape, and held our course Northwest, towards Saint Helena, still without sight of our ships.

The 8. of May with a South wind wee helde North West and by West.

The 9. we had a calme with a gray sky, and were vnder 31. degrees and twentie minutes, and then our portion of oyle was increased a glasse more every weeke, so that every man had foure glasses.

The 10. we had stil South winds, and were vnder 29. deg.

The 14. of May twice or thrice we saw reedes, called *Trombos* drauing on the water, being such as drine about the Cape de bona Speranza, which wee thought verie strange, for that the *Portingals* write, that they are seene but thirtie myles from the Cape, and wee gess our selues to be at the least 200. beyond it.

The 15. we still had a South East wind, & helde our course Northwest.

The 16. of May in the morning we saw two ships, wherat we much reioyced, thinking they had

Signes of the  
Cape de bona  
Speranza.

had bene our companie, we made to leeward of them, and the smallest of them coming somewhat neere vs, about the length of the shotte of a great peece, shee made presently toward her fellow, whereby we perceiued them to bee Frenchmen, yet wee kept to leeward, thinking they would haue come & spoken with vs, but it should seeme they feared vs, and durst not come, but held their course Northeast; at noone we had the height of 22. degrees, and 50. minutes with a Southeast-wind, holding our course Northwest.

The 17. of May wee were vnder 21. degrees and a halfe: the 18. the wind being Southerly, we were vnder 19. degrees and a halfe.

The 19. and 20. we had a calme with a Southern arc.

The 21. the ayre coming Southwest, we held our course Northwest: and were vnder 17. degrees and 3. partes: There we found the compasse to decline three-quarters of a strike or line North eastward, after noone we had a Southeast-wind, and our course West Northwest.

The 22. of May we had still a Southeast winde, and were vnder the height of 16. degrees and 40. minutes, holding our course West-Northwest.

The 23. of May, by reason of the cloudy sky, about noone we could not take the height of the Sunne, but as we went we had the height of the Island of S. Helena, and held our course West and by South to keepe vnder that height, for there the compasses decline a whole strike or line: in the evening we found that we were vnder 16. degrees.

The 24. of May in the morning wee discovered a Portingall ship, that stayed for vs, and put out a flagge of truce; and because our flagge of truce was not so readie as theirs, and we hauing the wind of him, therefore he shot two shooets at vs, and put forth a flagge out of his maine-top, and we shot 5. or 6. times at him, and so held on our course without speaking to him, hauing a South East winde; holding our course West and by South to find the Island of S. Helena, which the Portingall likewise sought.

The 25. of May we discovered the Island of S. Helena, but we could not see the Portingall ship, still sayling with a stille Southeast wind, & about evening we were vnder the Island, which is very high land, and may be seene at the least 14. or 15. miles off, and as we sayled about the North point, there lay three other great Portingall ships, we being not above half a mile from them, wherevpon wee helde in the weather and to seawarde Northeast as much as we might. The Portingalles perceyning vs, the Admiral of their fleet shot off a peece to call their men: that were on land to come aborde, and then wee saw foure of their shippes together, that were worth a great summe of money, at the least 300. tunnes of gold, for they were all laden with spices, precious stones, and other rich wares, and therefore wee durst not anker vnder the Island, but lay all night Northeastwarde, staying for our companie.

The 26. of May in the morning we made towards the Island againe, with a good Southeast winde, and about noone or somewhat past we discried two shippes, and about evening as we made towards them, we knew them to be our companie, which made vs to reioice, for we had been asunder the space of a whole Month, & so we helde together and sayled homeward, holding our course Northwest: for as yet our men were well and in good health, and we found a good Southeast winde, and had water enough for foure or five monthes.

The 27. 28. 29. and 30. of May wee had a Southeast winde, with faire weather; and the 27. day we were vnder 14. degrees. The first of Iune we were vnder 6. degrees, with a Southeast wind, holding our course North West, but by means of the Compasse that yecked North eastward, we kept about Northwest & by North. The 6. of Iune we were vnder one degree on the South side of the line, there we founde that the streame drue vs fast into the West; and therefore wee helde our course more Northernly and sayled Northwest and by North, with an East and South East wind. The 7. of Iune wee past the Equinoctiall line, with an East winde, holding our course North Northwest.

The 10. of Iune in the evening we were vnder 5. degrees and a halfe on the North side of the line; and then we began againe to see the North star, which for the space of 2. years we had not seene, holding our course North Northwest, there we began to haue small blasts, & some times calmes, but the aire all South and Southeast.

The 11. of Iune we had a calme, and yet a darke sky, that came Southeastwarde.

The

These Portingall  
ships richly  
laden.

They passed  
Equinoctiall.

The 12. of Iune wee had a close sky with raine, and the same day about evening our fore top maste fell downe.

The 13. we strake all our sailes and mended our ship.

The 14. we had the wind Northward, holding our course West North-west as neare as we coulde, but by reason of the thicke sky wee could not take height of the Sun. The 15. of Iune we had the wind North, & North North-west.

The 16. of Iune wee had the height of 9. degrees & 10. minutes, the winde being North-east and North North-east. The 17. the winde was North-east with faire weather, & we held North-west, & North-west & by North till after noone. The 18. we tooke a great fish called an Alucroor, which serued vs all for 2. meals, which wee had not tasted of long time before. They took a great fish.

The 26. we had still a Northeast winde, and sometimes larger, holding our course North Northwest with large saile, and were vnder 17. degrees and  $\frac{1}{2}$ .

The same day there came much dust flying into our shippe, as if we had past hard by some sandie downe, & we gest the nearest land to vs might be the Island of S. Anthony, and we were as then at the least 40. or 50. miles from it: The same day likewise there came a flying fish into our shippe, which we eat.

The 28. of Iune wee had the height of 20. degrees, with a East Northeast wind & East and by West, with full saile, there we saw much Sargosse, druing on the water. The last of Iune we had the Sun right ouer our heades, and yet we felt no heat, for that by reason of the cold ayre we had a fine coole weather. The same day we passed Tropicus Caneri; still hauing the winde East Northeast; and in the evening we were vnder 24. degr.

The second of Iuly we still saw Sargosse druing vpon the water, & had the wind somewhat lower North Northeast with a calme. The thirde of Iuly the winde came againe East Northeast, and we helde our course North and by West. The 5. of Iuly wee were vnder 38. degrees &  $\frac{1}{2}$ . with an East wind, holding our course North and by East, and yet we saw much Sargosse druing, but not so thicke as it did before.

The 10. of Iuly we had a good wind that blew south and South and by East; and hoysted vp our maine tops, that for the space of 26. daies were neuer touched, and held our course North Northeast, there we were in no little feare to fall among the Spanish fleet, which at that time of the yeare keepeth about the Flemmish Islands.

The same day, one of our boyes fell ouer bord, and was carried away with a swift streame before the wind, but to his great good fortune, the Pinace saued him, that was at the least a quarter of a mile from vs: this evening we found the height of 36. degrees.

The 12. of Iuly we had a Southwest wind, holding our course Northeast and by North: Our Pilot and the Pilot of the Pinace differed a degree in the height of the Sunne; for ours had 38. degrees, and theirs but 37. We gest to be about the Islands of Corbo & Flores, but the one held more easterly, and the other more Westerly. The 13. of Iuly wee had still a Southwest winde, and after noone wee thought wee had seene land, but we were not assured thereof, for it was somewhat close. The 14. of Iuly we had a calme, and saw no land, and then our men began to be sicke.

The 17. of Iuly we had a South Southeast winde, with faire weather, and were vnder 41. degrees, holding our course East Northeast.

The 18. 19. 20. and 21. it was calme. The 22. of Iuly the winde came North, and wee helde our course East Southeast. The 23. of Iuly the wind was North North East and North-east, and we held as neare as we could East & East Southeast, the same day our steward found a barrill of stockfish in the roming, which if we had beene at home we would haue cast it on the dunghil, it stunke so filthy, & yet we eat it as sauerly as the best meat in the world.

The 24. we had a West wind, & that with so strong a gale, that wee were forced to set two men at helme, which pleased vs well.

The 25. of Iuly we had a storme that blew West and West Northwest, so that we bare but two sailes, holding our course Northeast and by East.

The first of August we were vnder 45. degrees with a North West wind, holding our course Northeast and by East.

The second of August one of our men called Gerrit Cornelison of Spijckenes died, being the first man that dyed in our voyage homeward.

The 4. of August we had a Northwest wind.

The 5. of August in the morning the winde came Southwest, and we were vnder 47. degrees, holding our course Northeast and the North Northeast, and wee gest that wee were not farre from the channell, those dayes aforesaid we had so great colde in our shippes, as if it had bene in the middle of winter: We could not be warme with all the clothes wee had. The same day we saw Sargosse drine vpon the water.

They see a  
shippe with the  
Prince of  
Oranges flagg.

The 6. of August we had a West wind, in the morning we cast out our lead and found grounde at 80. fadome, and about noone we saw a shippe that bare the Princes flagge, yet durst not come neare vs, although we made signes vnto him, and after noone wee saw the land of Heissani, whereto we all reioyced.

The 7. of August in the morning we saw the land of Fraunce, and held our course North Northeast, and likewise we saw a small shippe, but spake not with it.

The 8. of August in the morning we saw the Kiskas, and had a South wind and somewhat West, holding our course East Northeast.

They see a  
man of war.

The 9. of August we entered the heades, and past them with a Southwest wind, sayling Northeast: After noone we past by a man of warre being a Hollander, that lay at anker, and hee hoysed anker to follow vs, about euening wee spake with him, but because of the wind wee could hardly heare what hee said, yet hee sailed on with vs.

The man of war  
cast them vice  
Amster.

The 10. of August the man of warre-banded vs with his boat, and brought vs a barrell of Beere, some bread and cheese; shewing vs what news he could touching the state of Holland, and presently wee sawe the land of Holland, & because it blew very stiffe & a great storme, after noone wee ankered about Pettes to stay for better weather, and some new Pilots, & that was the first-time we had cast anker for the space of 5. monethes together, about euening it became to blow so stiffe, that wee lost both an anker and a cable.

They cut down  
their main mast.

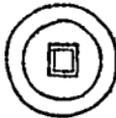
The 11. of August we had still a Southerly winde, & therefore about noone the Mauritius set saile, and wee thought likewise to saile, but our men were so weake that we could not hoysse vp our anker, so that we were constrained to lie still till men came out to helpe vs, about euening the winde came Southwest, and with so great a storme, that we thought to haue run vpon the strand, and were forced to cut downe our maine mast.

The 12. and 13. we had a hard South West wind, & sometimes West, so that no Pilots came aboard our ship, but the 13. day about euening it began to be faire weather.

The 14. of August about breake of day in the morning, there came two boats with Pilots and men aboard our ship, that were sent out by our owners, & brought vs some fresh victualles, which done they hoysed vp our ankers, and about noone we sayled into the Tessel, and ankered in the channell, where we had fresh victualles enough, for we were all very weake.

This was a great noueltie to all the Marchantes and inhabitants of Hollandé, for that wee went out from thence the second of April 1595. and returned home again vpon the 14. of August 1597. there you might haue bought of the Pepper, Nutmegs, Cloues, and Mace, which wee brought with vs. Our saylors were most part sicke, being but 80. men in all, two third partes of their company being dead, & lost by diuers accidents, and among those foreseore such as were sicke, as soone as they were on land and at their ease presently recovered their healths.

#### The Copper money of Iava.



This Copper money commeth also out of China, & is almost as thicke, great and heavy, as a quarter of a Doller, and somewhat thicker, in the middle hauing a square hole, 2000. of them are worth a Riall of 8. but of these there are not ouer many, they vse to hang them vpon stringes, and pay them without telling, they stand not so narrowly vpon the number, for if they want but 25. or 50. it is nothing.

The leaden money of Iaua.



This peece of money (being of bad Leade is very rough) hath in the middle a foure square hole, they are hangd by two hundred vppon a string, they are commonly 10. 11. and 12. thousand to a Riall of 8. as there commeth great quantitie out of China, where they are made, and so as there is plentie or scarcitie they rise and fal.

FINIS.



A

# TRUE REPORT

OF THE

GAINFULL, PROSPEROUS AND SPEEDY VOIAGE

TO

*I A U A*

IN THE

## EAST INDIES,

PERFORMED BY A FLEETE OF EIGHT SHIPS OF AMSTERDAM:

WHICH

SET FORTH FROM TEXELL IN HOLLAND,

THE FIRST OF MAIE 1598. STIJD NOUG.

WHEREOF FOURE RETURNED AGAINE THE 19. OF IULY ANNO. 1599. IN LESSE  
THEN 15. MONETHS, THE OTHER FOURE WENT FORWARD FROM IAUA  
FOR THE MOLUCCAS.

At London:

PRINTED BY P. S. FOR W. ASPLEY, AND ARE TO BE SOLD AT THE SIGNE OF THE TYGRS  
HEAD IN PAULES CHURCH-YARD.



A

## TRUE REPORT

OF

THE GAINFULL, PROSPEROUS, AND SPEEDY VOIAGE TO

IAUA IN THE EAST INDIES,

PERFORMED BY A FLEET OF 8. SHIPS OF AMSTERDAM :

WHICH

SET FORTH FROM TEXELL IN HOLLAND THE FIRST OF MAIE 1598.

SEILO NOVO.

WHEREOF FOURE RETURNED AGAINE THE 19. OF JULY ANNO 1599. IN LESSE THEN 15. MONETHES;  
THE OTHER FOURE WENT FORWARD FROM IAUA FOR THE MOLUCCAS.

---

Whereas in the yeare of our Lord 1595. a certaine company of substantial merchants of Amsterdam in Holland did build and set forth for the East Indies four well appointed shippes, whereof three came home An. 1597. with small profit (as already in sundry languages is declared) Yet neuertheless the aforesaid company, in hope of better successe, made out the last yeare 1598. for a second voiage, a flecte of eight gallant ships, to wit, The shippe called the Mauritius, lately returned from that former voyage, being of burden two hundredth and thirty last, or foure hundredth and sixty tunnes, or thereabouts. This shippe was Admirall of the flecte. The Master whereof was Godevert Iohnson, the Commissarie or factor Cornelius Heemskerck, and the Pilot Kees Collen.

The second ship called the Amsterdam, was of the burden of four hundredth & sixty tuns. The Master's name was Claes Iohnson Melcknap; The factor or commissarie Iacob Heemskerck.

The third was named Hollandia, about the burden of sixe hundredth tuns: which had likewise been in the former voiage. The Master was Symon Lambertson or Mawc, the Factor Mast. Witte Nijn, who died in the voyage before Bantam, and in his roome succeeded Iohn Iohnson Smith.

The name of the fourth ship was Gelderland, of burden about foure hundredth tuns. The Master whereof was Iohn Browne, factor or commissarie, Hans Hendrickson.

The fift was called Zeelandia, of the the burden of three hundredth & sixtie tuns. The Master was Iohn Cornelison, the Commissary or factor N. Brewer.

The sixt ship named Utrecht of the burden of two hundredth & sixtie tuns. The Master was Iohn Marten, the Factor or commissary Adrian Veen.

The seuenth a pinnas called Frisland, of burden about sequenty tuns. The Master Iacob Cornelison, the Factor Walter Willekens.

1. Overijssel.

The eighth a pinnas that had been in the former voiage called the Pidgeon; now  $\frac{1}{2}$  Ouerijssel, of the burden of fifty tuns. The Master Symon Iohnson. The Factor Arent Hermanson.

Of this flecte was General and Admirall Master Iacob Neck. Viceadmirall Wybrand van Warwick: and Rercedmirall Iacob Heemskereck.

With this flect of eight shippes we made saile from Texell the first of May 1598. Stilo Nouo, being the 21. of April, after the account of England, and sailed with good speed vnto the Cabo de bona Speranza: as further shal appeare by a Iournal annexed vnto the end of this discourse.

Being past the Cape, the 7. and 8. of August, by a storme of weather sixe shippes were separated from the Admirall, who afterwarde came together againe before Bantam.

The waye  
with a ship of  
Zeeland.

The 26. of August with three shippes wee came within the view of Madagascar, and the 29. wee met with a ship of Zeeland, called the Long-barke, which had put to sea before vs, and now kept aloofe from us, supposing we were enemies: but at length perceiuing by our flagges what we were, they sent their Pinnas aboard vs, reioycing greatly to haue met with vs, because that diuers of their men were sicke, and ten were already dead: and they had in all but seuen men aboard the shippe that were meat-whole, and cleuen mariners to guide the shippe. Wee agreed to relieue them with some supplie of men: but through darkenesse and great winde wee lost them againe.

The Isle of  
Fansa black.

After this, we the Admirall Mauritius, the Hollandia, & the pinnas Ouerijssel keeping together, came to the Island of Santa Maria, before the great bay of Antogit in Madagascar: where wee got a small quantity of Rice. We tooke the King prisoner, who paid for his ransom a Cow and a fat calfe.

In this Island we found no great commodity: for being the month of September, the season was not for any fruits: the Oranges had but flowers: Lemons were scant: of Sugar-canes and Hens there was some store, but the Inhabitants were not very forward in bringing them out.

Killing of the  
Whale.

Heree wee sawe the hunting of the Whale, (a strange pastime) certaine Indians in a Canoe, or boate following a great Whale, and with a harping Iron, which they cast forth, piercing the whals body, which yron was fastned to a long rope made of the barkes of trees, and so tied fast to their Canoe. All this while pricking and wounding the Whale so much as they could, they made him furiously to striue too and fro, swiftly swimming in the sea, plucking the canoe after him: sometimes tossing it vp and downe, as lightly as if it had been a strawe. The Indians in the meane time being cunning swimmers taking small care though they were cast overboard, tooke fast hold by the boat stiel, and so after some continuance of this sport, the whale wearied and waxing faint, and staining the sea red with his blood, they haled him toward the shore, and when they had gotten him so neare shore on the shallowe that the most part of him appeared aboue water, they drew him aland: and heved him in pieces, euery one taking thereof what pleased them, which was to vs a strange sight. It is reported that the Indians of Terra Florida vse the like fishing for the Whale. Our men might haue taken some part thereof, but refused it: the pieces thereof were so like larde or fat bacon.

The Bay of  
Antogit.

From thence we made toward the great Bay of Antogit and anchored vnder the Island, where wee tooke in fresh water.

Our Indians that were brought from thence by them of the former voiage (the names of whome were Madagascar the one, and the other Laurence) wee offered to set there on land, but they refused, chusing rather to tarry with vs and to be apparelled, then to go naked in their owne country: working and moyling for a miserable lining, opposing their bare skins to the vehemeny of the sunne and weather: and their excuse was, that in that place they were strangers and had none acquaintance.

How long their  
beere continued  
good.

Our beere continued good vntill we were passed the Cape de bona speranza: from thence wee began to mingle it with water hauing a portion of wine allowed vs twice a day, and this allowance continued vntill our returne into Holland.

We went with our boates vp the riuer seeking refreshing: but the Inhabitants gaue vs to vnderstand by signes that wee might returne, for there was nothing to be had. Wee rowed into the riuer about three leagues, and found their report to bee true. The cause was, that the Kings made warre there one against an other, and so all the victuals were in manner destroyed, insomuch that the Inhabitants themselues many of them perished for hunger, and in one of these battailes one of their Kings was lately slaine. Wherefore after six daies abode and no longer, we departed, & in Gods name made to sea again, directing our course the sixteenth of September for Iaua. About the nineteenth of Nouember we came within sight of Sumatra, and the 26. of the same month 1598. wee in the three shippes aforesaid, to wit, the Mauritius, our Admirall, the Hollandia, and the Ourcressel, arrived before the city of Bantam in Iaua. Presently vpon this our arriual, our Admirall and Generall Master Iacob van Neck, sought with all friendship to traffique with the people of the saide towne of Bantam, sending Master Cornelis Heemskereck on land to shew them what we were; for they thought vs to be the very same men that had been there the year before, and at that while guarded the sea coast, as being assuredly persuaded that we were pirates and sea rourers. But we, to make them vnderstand the contrary, sent on lande one Abdoll of China, a captiue of theirs, whom we brought from them in our first voyage; by whose meanes we got audience and credite: and so we presented our gifts and presents to the King, which was but a child: and the chiefe gouernour called Cephat, hauing the kingly authority, most thankfully received the same in the name of his King. The said presents were a faire covered cup of silver and gilt, certaine veluets and clothes of silke, with very fine drinking glasses and excellent looking-glasses, and such other gifts more. Likewise we presented our letters sealed very costly with the great seale of the noble & mighty lords the Estates, generall of the vnited Prouinces, and of Prince Mauritz, whome they termed their Prince. Which letters were by them receiued with great reuerence, creeping vpon their knees: and (the same being well perused, read and examined) they found thereby our honest intent and determination for traffike: insomuch that a mutual league of friendship and alliance was concluded, and we were freely licensed to trade and traffike in such wise, that euen the fourth day of our arriual we began to lade; and within foure or six weekes all our foure ships hauing taken in their full freight, were ready to depart.

When our three shippes aforesaid had remained there weeligh a month, about Newyears-tide arriued the other six shippes of our company before mentioned in very good manner, and well conditioned. And so our whole flecte of eight ships joyfully met together, and had none or very fewe sicke persons among them, hauing lost by death in the whole flecte but 35. men in all, of which number some perished through their owne negligence. Vpon this happy meeting wee displaced our flags, streamers and ensignes after the braucst manner, honouring and greting one another with vollicies of shot, making good cheere, and (which was no small matter) growing more deeply in fauour with the townsmen of Bantam. Vnto vs were daily brought aboard in Prauues or Indian boats great quantity of hens, eggs, Cocos, bonanos, sugar-canes, cakes, made of rice, and a certaine kinde of good drinke which is there made by the men of China. Thus the people daily bartered with vs for pewter and other wares, giuing so much victuals for a pewter spoone, as might well suffice one man for an whole weeke: Wee trucked likewise for diuers other things, as for porcellan dishes and such like. Howbeit, that which our Indian Abdoll declared (namely, that more ships were coming besides the three aforesaid, and that others beside them also were sent out of Zeland) little tended to our commoditie: for thereupon the Iuans tooke occasion to inhance the price of their pepper, insomuch that we were forced to pay for 55. pounds of pepper first three, and afterward four Reals of eight: neither did they demand or call for any thing so much as for the said Reals of eight. Mercery or haberdashers wares were in no such request as money. Also we much marvelled, how the Iauans should tell vs of more shippes to come, making signes with their foure fingers and thumb, that foure Lyra (which word in their language signifyeth shippes) were coming.

And here you are to vnderstand, that our Generall Master Van Neck, together with the commis-

They arrive at  
Bantam.

They present  
their letters and  
gifts.

Trade licensed.

The whole  
fleet meet before  
Bantam.

The price of  
pepper increased.

Four ships laden.

Their departure from Java the 13. of January 1599.

Sumatlands a notable merchant of Bantam.

The four other ships went to the Moluccas.

commissaries or factors, thought good, besides the three forsaid ships that came first, to lade one other, to wit, the greater pinnasse called Frisland, whereof was Master Jacob Cornelison, and factor Walter Willekens. These foure ships having received their ful freight, and giuen notice on land of their departure (to the end that none of their creditours might be unpaid) and also hauing well provided themselves of rice and water, departed the thirteenth of January 1599. and sayled to Sumatra, where they tooke in fresh water; for that the water of Bantam first waxeth white, and afterward crawleth full of magots.

Vpon the land of Sumatra he bartered knives, spoones, looking-glasses, bells, needles and such like, for sundry fruits; to wit, melons, cucumbers, onions, garlike, and pepper though little in quantity, yet exceeding good.

We had to deale with a notable Merchant of Bantam, named Szemolonke, whose father was a Castilian, which sold vs not much lesse then an hundreth last of pepper. He was most desirous to haue trauced with vs into Holland: but misdoubting the displeasure and euil will of the king, and fearing least his goods might haue bin confiscated, he durst not aduenture vpon the voiage.

Certaine daies before our departure from Bantam were the other foure shippes dispatched to go for the Moluccas, and ouer them was appointed as Admirall and Generall Master Wybrant van Warwicke in the shippe called Amsterdam, & Iacob Heemskereck Viceadmirall in the shippe Gelderland, the other two shippes in consoet with them being Zeland and Vtrecht before mentioned.

These foure made saile towards the Moluccas, and parted from vs the 8. of January in the night, and in taking of our leaues both of vs together, made such a terrible thundering noise with our ordinance, that the townsmen were vp in alarme, vntill they knewe the reason thereof. The people were glad of their departure, hauing some mistrust of vs, remaining there so strong with 8. ships. And they asked daily when we should depart, making great speed to help vs vnto our lading, and shewing themselves most seruiceable vnto vs.

The 11. of January 1599. we in the foure shippes laden with pepper departed from Bantam homeward. The 13. we arriued at Sumatra. The 19. we shaped our course directly for Holland. The 3. of April we had sight of Capo de buona speranza. The 8. of Aprill we doubled the said Cape, proceeding on for the Isle of Saint Helena, whither we came the twenty sixt of the same month, and there refreshed our selues for the space of eight daies.

In this Island we found a church with certaiue boothes or tents in it, and the image of Saint Helena, as likewise a holy water fat, and a sprinkle to cast or sprinkle  $\frac{1}{2}$  holy water: but we left all things in as good order as we found them.

Moreouer here we left behinde vs some remembrances in writing, in token of our being there. At this place died of the bloody fluxe, the Pilot of our Admirall Kees Collen of Munickendam, a worthy man, to our great griefe.

This Island (as Iohn Huijghen van Linschotten describeth it) is replenished with manifold commodities, as namely with goates, wilde swine, Turkie, partridges, pigeons, &c. But by reason that those which arriue there vse to discharge their ordinance; and to hunt and pursue the saide beastes and fowles, they are now grown exceeding wilde and hard to be come by. Certaine goates whereat we shotte fled vp to the high cliffes, so that it was impossible to get them. Likewise fishes wee could not catch so many as wee needed; but wee tooke in fresh water enough to serue vs till our arriual in Holland.

Here we left on land as a man banished out of our society, one Peter Gisbrecht the masters mate of the great pinnasse, because hee had stroken the Master.

Very penitent hee was and sorie for his misdemeanour, and all of vs did our best endeour to obtain his pardon: but (the orders and ordinances whereunto our whole company was sworne being read before vs) we were constrained to successe our importunate suit, and he for the example of others to vndergo the seuerer doome that was allotted him.

There was deliuered vnto him a certaine quantity of bread, oile, and rice, with hookes and instruments to fish withall, as also a hand gan and gunpowder.

Hereupon we bad him generally farewell, beseeching God to keepe and preserue him from

A man left on land at Saint Helena.

from misfortunes, and hoping that at some one time or other he should finde deliuerance; for that all shippes sailing to the West Indies must there of necessity refresh themselves.

Not far from this place we descried a saile which wee iudged to be some Frenchman, by whom peraduenture the saide banished party might bee deliuered.

The fourth of May we set saile from Saint Helena, and the tenth of the same moneth wee passed by the Isle of Ascension. The 17. day wee passed the line. The 21. we sawe the Pole-starre. The 10. and 11. of Iune we had sight of the Canaries. About the Azores wee stood in feare to meete with some Spanish Armada, because our men were growen faint and feeble by reason of their long voyage. The 27. of Iune we entered the Spanish sea. The 29. we found our selues to be in fortie foure degrees of northerly latitude. The 6. of Iuly our Admirall y<sup>e</sup> Mauritius had two of his mastes blowne ouerboard; for which cause we were constrained to towc him along. The 11. of Iuly wee passed the Sorlings. The 13. we sayled by Falmouth, Dartmouth, and the Quasquets. The 17. we passed by Douer. The 19. meeting with some stormes and rainy weather we arrived at Texell in our owne native countrey, without any great misfortune, saue that the Mauritius once stroke on ground.

Thus having attained to our wished home, we gaue God thanks for this our so happy and prosperous voyage: because there neuer arrived in Holland any shippes so richly laden.

Of pepper we brought eight hundred tunnes, of Cloues two hundred, besides great quantity of Mace, Nutmegs, Cinamom, and other principall commodities. To conclude this voyage was performed in one yeare, two monethes, and nineteene daies.

We were sailing outward from Texell to Bantam seuen monethes, we remained there six weekes to take in our lading, and in six monethes we returned from Bantam in Iaua to Holland.

The performance of this long and dangerous voyage in so short time we ascribed to Gods deuine & wonderful prouidence, having sailed at the least 8000. leagues, that is to say, twenty four thousand English miles.

The ioye of the safe arriuall of these shippes in Holland was exceeding great: and postes were dispatched to euery principall towne and city to publish these acceptable newes.

The merchants that were owners of these ships went straight toward Texell for the refreshing of their men, and for other necessary considerations. The Commissary or Factor master Cornelis Heemskerck together with Cornelis Knick, hied them with all speed towardes the Estates generall and prince Mauritz his excellency, not onely to carry the saide good newes, but withal to present the letters of the King of Iaua importing mutuall alliance, friendship, and free intercourse of traffike in consideration of their honourable, liberal, and iust dealings: they brought gifts also from the said King of great price and value.

The 27. of Iuly the Mauritius our Admirall together with the Hollandia came before Amsterdam: where they were joyfully saluted with the sound of eight trumpettes, with banqueting, with ringing of bells, and with peales of ordinance, the Generall and other men of command being honourably receiued and welcomed by the city.

The merchants that adventured in these voyages being in number sixteene or seauenteene (notwithstanding the foure shippes gone from Iaua to the Moluccas, as is before mentioned) haue sent this last spring 1599. foure ships more to continue this their traffique so happily begun: intending moreover the next spring to send a newe supply of other ships. And diuers other Marchants are likewise determined to enter into the same action.

Of them that departed from Zeland these bring us newes, otherwise then is aforesaide. Neither doe they report any thing of the two flectes or companies, that went from Rotterdam the last sommer 1598. shaping their course for the straites of Magellan.

Wee haue before made mention of an Indian called Abdoll, which was brought from Bantam in the first voyage, and had continued an whole winter or some eight monethes at Amsterdam in Holland.

Where during that space (being a man of good obseruation and experience; and borne about China) hee was well entreated, cherished; and much made of.

This Abdoll upon his returne to Iaua being demanded concerning the state of the Netherlands, The relation of Abdoll on Iaua.

The Isle of Ascension.

The particulars of their rich trade.

Friendly letters and presents from the King of Iaua.

A new supply of four Hollandish ships was this last spring 1599 sent to the East Indies.

An intent of the merchants of Amsterdam to send more ships the next spring 1600.

ians, concerning  
the Netherlands.

therlands, made vnto the principall men of Bantam a full declaration thereof, with all the rarities and singularities which he had there seene and obserued.

Which albeit to the greatest part of readers, who haue trauielled those countries may seeme nothing strange, and scarce worthy the relation: yet because the report was made by so meere a stranger, & with the Iauans that heard it wrought so good effect, I thought it not altogether impertinent here in this place to make rehearsall thereof.

First therefore he tolde them (to their great admiration in that heat climate) That hee had seene about a thousand sleds drawn, and great numbers of horsemen riding vpon the frozen water in winter time, and that he had beheld more then two hundred thousand people traailing on foote and on horseback vpon the yce, as likewise that the said sleds were by horses drawn so swiftly, that they made more way in three houres than any man could go on foote in tennes. And also that himselfe for pleasure had bene so drawn, the horses being brauely adorned with bells and cymbals.

Howbeit they would hardly be induced to beleuee that those countries should be so extreemely colde, and the waters so mightly frozen, as to beare such an huge weight.

Hee tolde them moreouer, that Holland was a free country, and that euery man there was his owne Master, and that there was not one slaue or captiue in the whole land.

Moreouer, that the houses, in regarde of their beautifull and lofty building, resembled stately pallaces, their inward rich furniture being altogether answerable to their outward glorious shew.

Also, that the Churches (which he called Mesquitas) were of such bignesse and capacity, as they might receiue the people of any pretie towne.

He affirmed likewise, that the Hollanders with the assistance of their confederates and friendes, maintained warres against the King of Spaine, whose mighty puissance is feared and redoubted of all the potentates of Europa.

And albeit the said warres had continued about thirty yeares, yet that during all that time the saide Hollanders increased both in might & wealth.

In like sort he informed them of the strange situation of Holland, as being a country driuing vpon the water, the earth or ground whereof, they vse instead of fewell, and that he had oft times warned himselfe, and had seene meat dressed with fires made of the same earth.

In briefe, that it was a waterish and fenny country, and full of riuers, chanelles, and ditches, and that therein was an innumerable multitude of boates and small shippes, as likewise great store of tall and seruiceable ships, wherwith they sailed vnto all quarters of the world, etc.

This man Abdoll wee found to bee a captiue or slaue, and sawe there his wife and children in very poore estate dwelling in a little cottage not so bigge as an hogsty: but by our meanes he was made free and well rewarded.

Notwithstanding he did but euill recompence vs: for he was charged to be the cause why pepper was sold dearer then ordinary vnto vs by a penny in the pounce: for hee tolde them that certaine shippes of Zeland and of other places were comming thitherwardes.

And here the reader is to vnderstand, that some four moneths before the said three shippes arrived at Bantam, the Portugales came with an Armada of gallies and fustes, being set fourth by the Viceroy of Goa and the gouernour of Molucca, to intercept the traffique of the Hollanders vnto those parties, and to make them loose all their expenses, labour, and time which they had bestowed: and also that their great and rich presentes which they gaue vnto the Iauans the yeare before, to bring them into vtter detestation of the Hollanders, might not be altogether in vaine.

The Generall of them that came from Goa was Don Luis, and of those that came from Molucca Don Emanuel: who brought their Armada before Bantam, intending to surprize the city, vnder pretence that the same preparation was made to resist certaine pirates that came thither out of Holland the last yeare, and were determined this yeare also to come againe. Vnder these colours they sought to take the towne and to fortifie the same, & they

The Portugals  
go about to hinder  
the trade of  
the Hollanders.

they built certaine sconces in the country, committing great outrages, ravishing the Women, with many other villanies. Hereupon the townsmen of Bantam very secretly provided certaine gallies and fustes in great hast, and sodainly assailed the Portugales before they were well aware of them: for which cause finding but small resistance, they tooke 3. Portugale gallies with certaine shippes, and slewe about 300. of them, taking 150 Portugale prisoners, of which we daily saw some going vp & downe the streetes of Bantam like slaves and captives. Besides these they tooke about 900. galli-slaves prisoners.

The Portugals  
travpued.

Vpon this hard successe the rest of the Portugals betooke themselves to flight: but whether they bee arrived at Gioa or Molucca, or what is become of them since, we are not able to asouch. The foresaid attempt and ouerthrowe, bred greater enmity betwene the Portugales and them of Bantam, and gave anespeciall occasion for the advancement, of our traffique.

The sixe ships (whereof we haue before signified) that foure were dispatched by the whole companie for the Moluccas being scoured beyonde the Cape of Buona Speranza from the other three of their companie, and hauing quite lost them, came all of them shortly after vnder an Island called (as it is thought) by the Portugals Isola de Don Galopes: but they named it the Island of Mauritius. Here they entered into an haven, calling the same Warwick, after the name of their Viceadmirall, wherein they found very good harborow in twenty degrees of southerly latitude.

The course  
which the four  
ships took after  
they were separ-  
ated from their  
three companie  
about the Cape  
of Buona sper-  
anza.

This Island being situate to the East of Madagascar, and containing as much in compasse as all Holland, is a very high, goodly and pleasant land, full of green & fruitfull tallies, and replenished with Palmito-trees, from the which droppeth wholesome wine. Likewise here are very many trees of right Ebenwood as black as iet, and as smooth & hard as the very Iuory: and the quantity of this wood is so exceeding, that many ships may be laden here-with.

The Isle of  
Mauritius de-  
scribed.

Great store of  
Ebenwood.

For to saile into this haven you must bring the two highest mountains one ouer the other, leaving sixe small Islands on your right hand, and so you may enter in vpon 30. fadomes of water. Lying win the bay, they had 10. 12. & 14. fadoms. On their left hand was a litle Island which they named Hemskerk Island, and the bay it selfe they called Warwick bay, as is before mentioned. Here they taried 12. daies to refresh themselves, finding in this place great quantity of fowles twice as bigge as swans, which they called Walghstocks or Wallowhirdes being very good meat. But finding also abundance of pigeons & popiniayes, they disdaind any more to eat of those great fowles, calling them (as before) Wallowbirds, that is to say, lothsome or fulsome birds.

Of the said Pidgeons and Popiniayes they found great plenty being very fat and good meate, which they could easily take, and kill euen with litle stickes: so tame they are by reason the Isle is not inhabited, neither be the liuing creatures therein accustomed to the sight of men.

Here they found rauens also, and such abundance of fish, that two men were able to catch enough for all sixe ships.

Tortoises they founde so huge, that tenne men might sit and dine in one of their shells; and one of them would creepe away while two men stood vpon the backe thereof.

Large Tortoises.

Here was founde waxe also whiter then any of ours, lying about the strand, bleached (as it is like) by the sunne: and in some of this waxe there were Arabian letters or characters printed: whereby it is probable, that some Arabian ship might bee cast away thereabout, out of which the said waxe might be drizen on land.

They found likewise Corall on this land, and many trees which we call Palmitos, whereout droppeth wine as out of the Coco-tree: which wine being kept hath his operation as our new prest wine, but after some time it commeth vnto the full vertue and perfection.

Corall.  
Palmitos.

The said Palmitos they esteemed to bee a kinde of wilde date-trees, which wine  
We sought all the Island ouer for men, but could find none, for that it was wholly destitute of inhabitants.

Vpon this Island we built an house with a pulpit therein, and left behind vs certaine  
v. v. G writings

writings as a token and remembrance of our being there, and vpon the pulpit we left a Bible and a psalter lying.

A good watering  
place

Thus after 12. daies aboad at this Island, being well refreshed, they tooke in excellent fresh water being easie to get, and very sweet and sauiory to drinke, and then set saile, meeting the three other ships their consorts at the time and place before mentioned.

A briefe description of the voiage before handled, in manner of a Iournall.

#### MAIE.

The first of Maie 1598. with the eight shippes before mentioned, we set saile in the name of God from Texcell in Holland.

The third of May we passed along the coast of England, descryng some of her Maiesties ships, and they vs, whom we honoured with discharge of our artillery.

The fourteenth, we had sight of the Isle of Porto Santo lying in thirty two degrees.

The sixteenth, wee came within sight of the Canaries.

The twenty two, we first saw flying fishes.

The twenty three, we passed by the Isle Dell Sall.

The thirty one, we had a great storme, so that we lost sight one of another: but by night we came together againe.

#### IVNE.

The eighth of Iune wee crossed the Equinoctiall line.

The twenty foure wee sayled by the sholdes of Brasile lying vnder eighteene degrees of Southerly Latitude.

#### IULIE.

The twenty one of Iuly we got to the height of the Cape of buona esperanza.

From the thirtieth of Iuly till the second of August, we continually sayled in sight of the land of the foresaid Cape.

#### AVGUST.

The seventh and eighth of August wee had such foule and stormy weather, that five ships of our company were separated from vs, whom we saw no more: vtill they came to vs before Bantam.

The twenty sixt we descryed the Island of Madagascar.

The twenty nine came by vs the ship called the Long bark of Zeland, hauiug in her but nine sound men, tenne dead, and the rest all sicke: but the same night we lost the sight of her againe:

#### SEPTEMBER.

The seauenth of September, we came before the Island of Santa Maria, and afterward wee put into the great bay of Antogill.

The sixteenth of September, wee set saile from thence, directing our course for Iana.

#### OCTOBER.

The first of October, wee got to the height of Bantam.

The fifteenth, died the first man in our Admirall.

#### NOVEMBER.

The nineteenth of November, we came within sight of Sumatra.

The twenty ninth, wee road before the city of Bantam: And the thirtieth, we payed our toll to the gouernour.

## IANVARIE.

ANd vpon Newyeres daie 1599. Stilo Nouo, we began to take in our lading.

Then came vnto vs before Bantam, with great ioye and triumph, our five separated shippes, all the people standing vpon the shore gazing, and suspecting some harme intended against them.

The eighth of Ianuary, foure of the said 5. newcome shippes (God send them a prosperous voyage) set saile toward the Moluccas.

Moreouer our foure shippes being well and richly laden at Bantam made saile homewarde the eleuenth of Ianuary, and the thirteenth, wee were shot as farre as the Isles of Sumatra.

The nineteenths, we proceeded thence on our voiage, and the same day, to the great griefe of vs all died the Pilot of our Admirall.

## APRILL.

The third of April, we descried the land of Capo de buona esperanza.

The eighth, we doubled the same Cape, thence shaping our course for the Island of Saint Helena, where the twenty sixt we happily arriued, and departed from thence vpon the fourth of Maie.

## MAIE.

The tenth of Maie, we sailed by the Isle of Ascension.

The seauenteenths, we passed the Equinoctiall line.

The twenty one, we saw the North starre.

## IUNE.

The ninth and tenth of Iune, we had sight of the Canaries.

The twenty seauen, we sayled vpon the Spanish Sea.

The twenty nine, we were in fortie four degrees.

## IULIE.

The fourth of Iuly, we saw behind vs two sailes, one before the other, which were the first that we had seene of a long time.

The sixt of Iuly our Admirall had both his foremast and maine-mast blowne ouer board.

The eleuenths, we passed the Sorlings, the thirteenth, Falmouth, Plimmouth and the Quasquets.

The seauenteenths, we came before Douer.

The nineteenths, we had foule and stormy weather, at what time by Gods good blessing we arriued in our native country at Texell in Holland, hauing performed in the short space of one yeare, two moneths and nineteene daies, almost as long a voiage, as if we should haue compassed the globe of the earth, and bringing home with vs our full freight of rich and gainfull Marchandize.

## FINIS.



NEWES

FROM THE

EAST INDIES:

OR A

VOYAGE TO BENGALLA,

ONE OF THE GREATEST KINGDOMES UNDER THE HIGH AND MIGHTY PRINCE  
PEDESHA SHASSALLEN,

USUALLY CALLED

*THE GREAT MOGULL.*

WITH THE

STATE AND MAGNIFICENCE OF THE COURT OF MALCANDY, KEPT BY THE NABOB  
VICEROY, OR VICE-KING UNDER THE AFORESAYD MONARCH:

ALSO THERE

DETESTABLE RELIGION, MAD AND FOIPPISH RITES, AND CEREMONIES, AND WICKED  
SACRIFICES AND IMPIOUS CUSTOMES USED IN THOSE PARTS.

WRITTEN BY WILLIAM BRUTON

NOW RESIDENT IN THE PARISH OF S. SAVIOURS SOUTHWARK,

WHO WAS AN EYE AND EARE WITNESSE OF THESE FOLLOWING DESCRIPTIONS; AND  
PUBLISHED AS HE COLLECTED THEM BEING RESIDENT THERE DIVERS YEARES:

AND

NOW LATELY COME HOME IN THE GOOD SHIP CALLED THE HOPEWEL OF LONDON:

WITH

DIVERS MERCHANTS OF GOOD ACCOUNT

WHICH

ARE ABLE TO TESTIFYE THE SAME FOR TRUTH.

IMPRINTED AT LONDON BY I. OKES,

AND ARE TO BE SOLD BY HUMPHREY BLUNDEN AT HIS SHOP IN CORNE-HILL AT TH. SIGNE OF THE  
CASTLE NEERE THE ROYALL EXCHANGE 1628.



A

RARE AND MOST STRANGE RELATION

FROM

BENGALLA IN THE EAST INDIES,

BRING

ONE OF THE GREATEST KINGDOMES UNDER THE GREAT MOGULL,

AND

OF THEIR LAWES, MANNERS, AND CUSTOMES &c.

---

Although diuers learned, painefull, and skillfull Mathematicians and Geographers haue with great industry spent much profitable Time, in finding out the circumference of the Terrestrial Globe, in describing Empires, Kingdomes, Principalities, Lordships, Regions, Prouinces, Territories, Variations of Climates & Scituations, with the diuersities of Dispositions, of Tongues, Religions, Habits, Manners, Lawes, and Customes of sundry Nations: Though much labour, perill, and Cost hath bene worthily employ'd by Pliny the Second, Ortelius, Iodoco Hondius; or (to come nearer) to our English Worthies, such as are described in the Booke of Hacklewicks Voyages, namely, Windham, Chancelour, Grinwill Willouby, Drake, Cauendish, Gilbert, Chidly, Frobusher, Clifford, Sidney, Deuoreux, Wingfield; as also the exceeding paines taken by Mr. Samuel Purchase, and the Learned and Renowned Knight Sir Walter Rawleigh in their descriptions of the whole World, not forgetting the perills that Mr. Sands passed in his tedious Trauels, with his exact Relations and Descriptions: With Atlas new Imprinted (a rare Worke) and lastly, William Lithgow deserues a kind Remembrance of his nineteene yeeres sore and dangerous Trauels of his feete & pen, worthy your obseruation and Reading.

But all these Authors and Actors both of History and Trauell, did neuer discouer all, but still (out of their plentifull Harvests of Observations) they left some Gleanings for those that came after them to gather. For the manifestation whereof in this following discourse, I haue tyed and bound myselfe to speake onely Truth, though it seeme incredulous or Hyperbolicall; and if I should any way sway or stray from the Truth, there are liuing men of good Fame; Worth and Estimation, who are able & ready to disproue me.

Therefore briefly the matter in hand; I William Bruton was shipp'd as a Quartermaster, from the Port of London, to serue in the good Ship called the Hope-well, of the Burthen of 240 Tunnes. To relate our long & tedious passage by Sea, and our arrivall at euery Port  
and

and Haueu were but little to the purpose, & would more tire than delight my Reader: Therefore to begin, that after my Arriuall in those parts, & in my seruices and passages there fore the space of 7 yeeres, I obserued many things, and put them in writing; but afterwards I came to know that the same things had bene discover'd and described formerly by more sufficient & able men of Capacity than my selfe, I thought good to keep them to my selfe, and discover nothing but that which before was not so fully or scarce knowne as I shall now deuyper them.

The 22. of March, 1632. I being in the Countrey of Cormandell with sixe Englishmen more at a place called Massalupatam, (a great Towne of Merchandize) Master Iohn Noris, the Agent there, was resolu'd to send two Merchants into Bengalla, for the settling of a Factory there, and these sixe Englishmen (of the which I was. one) were to goe with the Merchants, and withall to carry a present from the Agent to the Nabob, (or King) of that Countrey, to obtaine the Promises that formerly hee had granted to the English for Traffick, & to be Custome free in those of his Dominions and Ports. Wherefore a Iunke was hired at Massalupatam to be our Conuoy; the said Iunke did belong vnto those parts & the Names of the Englishmen that were appointed for that Voyage, were Mr. Ralph Cartwright Merchant, Mr. Thomas Colley second, William Bruton, Iohn Dobson, Edward Peteford, Iohn Bantley, Iohn Ward, & William Withall.

Though we hired the aforesaid Iunke, March 22. yet it was the 6. of Aprill following before we could be fitted to depart from Massalupatam, and in much various Weather with many difficulties and dangers, (which to relate here, would be tedious & impertinent to my intended discourse) the 21. of Aprill, being then Easter-day, we were at Anchor in a Bay before a Towne called Harssapooe: It is a place of good strength, with whom our Merchants doe hold commerce with correspondency. This 21. day in the morning, Mr. Ralph Cartwright sent the Moneys a shore to the Governour of Harssapooe, to take it into his safe keeping & protection till such time as he came a shore himselfe. So presently there came a Portugall Frigate fiercely in hostility towards vs, but we made ready for their entertainment, & fitted ourselues & the Vessel for our best defences: but at last they steered off from us, & vpon our command shee came to an Anchor somewhat neare vs, & the Master of her came aboard of vs, who being examined whence he came, & whether he was bound to which demands he answer'd nothing worthy of beleefe, as the sequel sheweth; for hee seem'd a friendly Trader, but was indeed a false Inuailer, (where opportunity and power might helpe and preuaile) for on the 22. day Mr. Cartwright went a shore to the Governour of Harssapooe, & on the 24. day the said Master of the Frigate (with the Assistance of some of the ribble rabble Rascalls of the Towne) did set vpon Mr. Cartwright and Mr. Colley, where our men (being oprest by multitudes) had like to haue bene all chaine or spoyld; but that (Lucklip) the Rogger, (or Vice King there) rescued them with 200. men.

In this fray Mr. Colley was sore hurt in one of his hands, and one of our men much wounded in the legge and head; their Nockado or Indir Pifor was stab'd in the Groyne twice, and much mischief was done, & more pretended, but by Gods helpe all was pacified.

The 27. of April we three tooke leaue of the Governour, and Towne of Harssapooe, (I meane three of vs;) namely, Mr. Cartwright, William Bruton, and Iohn Dobson; leaving Mr. Colley & the other foure men with him, till newes could be sent backe to them from the Nabobs Court, at Cutteke or Malcander, of our successe and proceedings there with our other goods, for he is no wise Merchant, that ventures too much in one, bottome, or that is too credulous to trust Mahometanes or Infidels.

And having laden our small Boats with the goods (which were Gold, Silver, Cloth and Spices, of which Spices those parts of Indis, are wanting, and they almost are as deare there as in England) we passed some two Leagues and halfe by Water, & after that the said goods was carried by land in Carts, till wee came to a great Towne called Balckaid, but it was more than three houres after Sunne-setting, or late before we came thither.

The 28. of April in the morning, the Governour of this Towne came & saluted our Merchant, & promised him that whatsoever was in his power to doe him any friendly courtesie,

he should command it; and indeed he was every way as good as his word; for hee lent vs Horses to ride on, and Cowlers (which are Porters) to carry our goods, for at this Towne the Carts did leaue vs, & our goods were carried on Mens shoulders: then we set forwards, being accompanied by the Governour, with his Musicke, which were Shalmes, & Pipes of sundry formes, much after the formes of Waits or Hoboyes, on which they play most delicately out of Tune, Time & Measure. In this manner the Governour, with a great number of People did bring vs about halfe an English Mile out of the Towne, where he courteously tooke his leaue of vs, but yet he sent his seruants with vs as guides, & that they might bring his Horses back to him that he lent vnto vs.

This towne of Balkkada, is a strong & spacious thing, very populous: There are many Weauers in it, & it yeeldeth much of that Country fashion Cloath. This day, about the houres of betwene eleuen & twelue of the Clocke it was so extreame hot that we could not trauell, & the winde did blow with such a soultering scalding heat, as if it had come forth of an Oven or Furnace, such a suffocating fume, did I neuer feele before or since; and here we were forced to stay neare three houres, till the Sunne was declined, we hauing happily got vnder the shadow of the branches of a great Tree all that time. Then we set forward for the Towne of Harharapooore: which in the space of two houres, or a little more, wee drew neare vnto: so we stay'd awhile till our carriages were come vp together vnto vs; which done, there met vs a man, who told vs that his Master staid our coming, then we speedily prepared ourselves for the meeting of so high esteem'd a person: & when we came to the Townes end, there did meet vs at a great Pogodo or Pagod, which is a famous & sumptuous Temple (or Church) for their idolatrous seruice & worship there vsed, & iust against that stately & magnificent building, we were entertained & welcomed by one of the Kings greatest Noblemen, & his most deare and chiefeat fauourite, who had a Letter from the King his Master, & was sent from him to meete vs & conduct vs to his Court. The Noble mans name was Mersymomeine. He did receiue vs very kindly, & made vs a very great feast or costly colation before supper, which being done we departed for our Siray, (or Inne) where we lay all night with our goods: but Mersymomeine staid with his followers & seruants in his & their tents at the Pagod.

The 29. day of April we staid at Harharapooore, & visited this great man, but the greatest cause of our staying, was by reason that the Nockador (or Pilot) of the Frigget, whose men did affront & hurt some of our men at Harharapooore, for which cause the Frigget was staid there, & the Pilot of her came to this great man, thinking by gifts to cleare his Vessell, (the which he thought to make prise of) but he would not be allured by such rewards or promises: but told him that he must appeare before the Nabob, & seeke to cleare himselfe there.

The 30. of April we set forward in the Morning for the City of Coteke (it is a City of seven miles in compass, & it standeth a mile from Malcandy, where the Court is kept) but Master Cartwright staid behinde, & came after vs, accompanied with the said Noble man: We went all the day on our journey till the Sun went downe, & then we staid for our Merchant, being eight English Miles from Coteke, & about twelue or one of clocke at night they came where wee were: so we hasted & suddainly got all our things in readinesse, & went along with them, & about the time of three or foure of clocke in the Morning we came to the house of this Mersymomeine at Coteke, being May day.

Here we were very well entertained & had great variety of sundry sorts of meates, drinks, & fruits, such as the Country yeelds, euen what we could or would desire fitting for our vse. About eight of the Clocke Mersymomeine went to the Court, & made knowne to the King, that the English Merchant was come to his house, then the King caused a great banquet to be speedily prepared, & to bee sent to the house of Mersymomeine, which banquet was very good & costly. Then, about three or foure of the clocke in the afternoone, wee were sent for to the Court of Malcandy, which is not halfe a mile from Coteke. The magnificence of which Court, with the stately structure & situation of the place, as well as my weake Apprehension can enable, I describe as followeth.

## The Court of Malcandi in Bengalla.

GOING from the house of Mersymoineid, we passed ouer a long stone Cawstey, of some two foote in breadth, & at the end thereof we entred in at a great gate, & being conducted along further, we came into a Bussar, or very faire Market place, where was sold a great number of all sorts of Fruits, Hearbes, Flesh, Fish, Fowle, Rice, & such like needfull commodities & necessaries as the Countrey yeeked, (which is very fertile.) Having passed this place, we did enter in at a second gate, where was a guard of some fifty armed men, & so we came into a place all paved with great stones, or as it may fitter be called, a faire & spacious streete, where Merchants seated on both sides the way, were buying & selling all kind of their own and forraigne wares & merchandizes that was very rich and costly.

Passing this place we entred in at a third Gate, where was another Guard of one hundred men armed: By this gate was a great Pogodo or Pagod, which ioynd to the Southermost part of the King's house. In this streete there were houses but one side of the way, for on that side that the King's house was on, there was no other House but that. Then we came to a fourth Gate, which was very spacious & high, & had two lofty stories one above the other, & upheld by mighty Pillars of gray Marble, most curiously car'd & polish'd: At this Gate was a great guard of 150. Men or more, all armed.

Going through this Gate, we entred into a very great broad place of streete, (much of the breadth of the streete betwene Charing Crosse & White-Hall or broader, & no dwelling in it; here we passed the wall of the King's House, or Pallace, till we came to the Court Gate.

In this broad streete are euery day 1000. Horses in readinesse for the Kings use; (for he hath alwaies 3000. at an houres warning, in the two Townes of Coteke & Malcandi; whereof 1000. alwaies waiteth at the King's Gate, & so by turnes doe all the rest attend at their places & seruices require.

Ouer against the Gate of the House is a very great house of Timber, whose Chambers are made with Galleries, built & supported with great Arches to uphold the Rooffe: In these Galleries there were men that played on all kind of loud Instruments, euery morning they beganne to play at foure of the Clocke, & gaue ouer at eight.

On the North side of the Gate is a small Tower, builded with two hollow Arches, wherein are placed two mighty Images of stone, with great Pipes of Iron placed in their breasts & by deuices in the lower roomes, they doe make fire & water to flash & spout out of those Pipes on Festival dayes. On the South side of the Gate there standeth a great Elephant, artificially wrought of gray Marble, but for what use I know not.

At the entrance into the Pallace Gate, we passed through a Guard of 150. men armed, the Pillars within were all of gray Marble, carued three stories one above the other. The outward Court was paved all with rough hewne Marble. On the South side of the Pallace were houses wherein were men, cunning workers in rich workes, employed onely for the King's use and seruice.

On the North side (in the Pallace) a faire fabric builded, wherein was erected two stately Tombes, who were founded by one Backraume, — he was Nabob, & predecessor to this Nabob now governing: & at the East end of the Pallace there was a faire place made and paved with broad gray Marble, & curiously railed about, the Rayles being fourt foote & halfe high from the ground, & a very faire Tanke, which is a square pit paved with gray Marble, with a Pipe in the Midst of it, whose water descended betwene two Walls, with the formes of Fishes of sundry sorts, carued in stone very artificially, as if they had bene swimming or gliding up the Wall against the streame.

At this East end there was also a second Gate, where was a guard of 100. men armed; here stood also men that did keepe the time of the day by observations of measures of Water, in this manner following: First they take a great Pot of Water of the quantity of three Gallons, & putting therein a little pot of somewhat more than halfe a pinte (this lesser pot having a small

small hole in the bottome of it) the water issuing into it, hauing filled it, then they strike on a great plate of brass, or very fine metal, which stroak maketh a very great sound, this stroak or parcell of time they call a Goomo, the small being full they call a Gree, 8 Grees make a Par, which Par is three houres by our accompt.

They likewise do begin the day at the houre of sixe in the morning, & it is ended with them at sixe at night: here we entred into the second Pallace, which had in the midst thereof a faire & sumptuous Theatre built & about it was made small bancks, whereon were planted great varieties of fruits & flowers, very sweete to the sent, & pleasing to the sight; this place was also curiously-railed in round; Then we entred into a narrow passage betwene two high stone Walls, where there was another Guard of 250. men armed: This passage brought vs to a third Gate, wherein wee entred into a third Pallace or pleasant prospect, far in the midst of it there was a very faire pavement of Marble, square, of the largenesse of ——— yards euery way, & raised some three foot & a halfe higher then the ground, that was on the out-sides of it: it was likewise delicately rayled about, & in the midst of it there was an ascent of foure steps high, & all the roomes in it were spread or ouer-laid on the floore with rich Carpets exceeding costly.

The space betwene the outward Railes & these Roomes was about 30. footo, & the length 80. foote on the one side, but on the other side was a faire Tanke of water.

This place they called the Derbar (or place of Councell, where Law & Iustice was admistrated according to the custome of the Countrey, & it was likewise adorned & beautified with very pleasant Trees and Flowers, & Bankes about them with Gutters betwene the Bankes, in which Gutters water passed for the cooling & watering of them; & the water proceeded from the Tanke afore-mentioned. Here we stay'd the space of some two houres (or thereabouts) looking vp & downe, & being looked vpon by Souldiers, & such-fashioned Gentlemen as the Court yeelded, (for there were more than 100. men armed, which were of the Nabobs, or Kings Prjue Guard). At last the word came forth that the King was comming: then they hastied and ouer-laid the great large pavement with rich Carpets, & placed in the midst against the Railes, one fairer & richer Carpet than the rest, wrought in Bengalla-worke: They likewise placed a great round pillow of red veluet on this Carpet; they placed also sixe small Pillars of Gold on the ends & sides of the rich Carpet, to hold it fast, or presse it to the ground, lest it should be raised with the Winde. They also placed vpon the Railes a Panuel of Veluet to leane on: At the last his Maiestie came accompanied with the number of 40. or 50. of his Courtiers, the most part of them were very graue men to see to: Also the Nabobs owne brother (a comely Personage) did beare the Sword before him. Then the Noble-man (Mensimomein) presented our Merchant (Mr. Ralph Cartwright) to the King, who did obediently to him, & the King very affably bended forward (in manner of a Curtise or respect) and withall leaned his Armes on two mens shoulders, & slipped off his Sandall from his fote (for he was bare-legged) and presented his fote to our Merchant to kisse, which hee twice did refuse to doe, but at the last hee was faine to doe it: then the King sate downe, & caused our Merchant to be placed by his Brother: His Counsell sate all along by the foot-space of the Roomes before mentioned, his brother & his Favorites sate thwart the place or pavement, euery one sitting in the fashion of a Taylor crosse-legg'd.

The Assembly being set, our Present was presented to the King, which was some twenty poundns of Cloues, twenty poundns of Mace, twenty poundns of Nutmegs, two Bolts of Damasco, halfe a Bale, or fourteens yards of Stammell-cloth, one faire Looking glasse, whose frame was gilded, one fowling piece with two locks, & one double Pistoll; this was the present which the King recei'd with much acceptation & content, & withall demanded the cause of our comming; & our request: To whom our Merchant answered, that he was come to desiro his Maiesties fauour & Licencc for free Trade in his Countrey, & not to pay any Iunkan (or Custome). At this request he seem'd to make a stand (and pausing a little) he conferr'd privately with his Councell, but gaue vs no answer.

Our Merchant likewise requested that the English Merchants Trading for the East Indies might haue free Licencc to come with their shipping small or great, into the Roads & Har-

hours of his Sea-port Townes or to any Hauens or navigable Rivers or any such place or places as shall be found fitting for the safeguard, building or repairing of the said Vessels belonging to the honourable company. And likewise to transport their goods either off or on the shoare without the let or hinderance of the Natives of the Countrey: Likewise to haue his Licencc to quoyne Moneys, Gold or Silver, Countrey-money, & such as is currant with the Merchant.

By this Time that our Merchant had ended the relation of his Suits & cause of his coming, the Kings Minister with a loud voyce called to Prayer. Then the King speedily arose from his Seate, & all his Company went with him, & wee were dismiss till prayer was ended. When the Minister came there was a large covering spread over the rich Carpets; the covering was of black & white cloaths, on this they all stood; & when they kneeled, they did kneele with their faces towards the going downe of the Sun, (which is to, the West.) Prayer being ended, the Assembly sate again concerning our Propositions, all other businesses were laid aside; being now the shutting in of the Evening, there came a very braue shew of lights in before the King. The foremost that came were sixe Silver Lanthornes, vshe'd in by a very graue man, hauing in his hand a Staffe ouer-laid with Silver, & when he came to the steps of the Paucement, he put off his shoes, & came to the Carpets, making obedience: so likewise did those that bore the sixe lanthornes; but all the other lightes, being one hundred & thirty stood round about the Railes. Then the vsheer took the lanthorne that had two lights in it, & (making obedience) lifted his armes aloft, & made an ample Oration, which being ended, they gaue all a great Salame, or kind of Reuerence with a loud voyce, & departed euery one, & placed the lights according as the severall offices & places did require. Here we stay'd till it was betwixt eight & nine of the Clocke at Night, but nothing accomplished; onely wee had some faire promises of furtherance by some of the Courtiers: Thus wee were dismiss for that time & wee returned for our Lodging at Mersimomeins house at Coteke, accompanied with a great multitude of people, & many Lights, who much admired our kind of habit and fashion.

The second day, wee came in the After-noonc againe to the court before the Nabob, which being set, there mette vs at the Derbar (or Councell-house) our old enemy the Nockado of the Frigget, who made a great complaint against vs, that wee had sought to make prize of his Vessell, & to take his goods by force, hee had likewise giuen a great gift to a Nobleman to stand his friend & speake in his behalfe.

Our Merchant pleaded likewise, that all such Vessells as did trade on the coast, & had not a Passe either from the English, Danes, or Dutch, was lawfull Prize. Hee answered that he had a Passe; our Merchant bid him produce the same before the Nabob & hee would cleare him: to which the Nabob & the whole Councell agreed: but he could shew no Passe from any of the afore-named 3. Nations, but he shew'd two Passes from (or of) the Portugals, which they call by the name of Fringes, & thus was he cast, & we had the better of him before the King and Councell.

But then stood vp the Nobleman to whom hee had giuen a reward, (who had also a little knowledge or insight in Sea-affaires) & said, what Stranger seeking a free trade, could make prize of any Vessell within any of the Sounds, Seas, Roads or Harbours of his Majesties Dominions? This he spake not so much for the good of the King, but thinking and hoping that the Vessell by his meanes should haue bene clear'd with all her goods & the Nockado (or Pilot) acquitted, that so by those meanes hee might haue gained the more & greater rewards; but hee was quite deceiv'd in his vaine expectation. For the Nabob perceiuing that shee belouged to Pyplyc, a Port-Towne of the Portugals, whom the Nabob affects not, where the Portugals were resident, & that shee was not bound for any of his Ports, hee made short worke with the matter, & put vs all out of strife presently, for hee confiscated both vessell & goods all to himselfe. Whereby the Nobleman was put by his hopes, who was indeed a Governour of a great Sea-towne, whereto much Shipping did belong, & many ships & other Vessels were builded. Our Merchant seeing that hee could not make prize of the Vessell or the goods, nor haue any satisfaction for the wrongs which he & our men had receiued,

ceased; he rose vp in great anger & departed, saying, that if hee could not haue right here, he would haue it in another place, & so went his way, not taking his leaue of the Nabob, nor of any other, at which abrupt departure they all admired.

The third day in the Morning the King sent for our Merchant by the Lord Comptroller of his Court, who went with him accompanied with Mersimomein & others to the Derbar, where there was a very graue Assembly set: Then came the King, who being set, he smiled vpon our Merchant, & (by an Interpreter) demanded the cause why hee went the last evening (or ouer-night) in such an anger? To whom he answer'd boldly, & with a sterne vndanted countenance, that he had done his Masters of the Honourable Company wrong, & (by his might & power) had taken their rights from them which would not be so endured or put vp. The King hearing this demanded of the Assembly, which were as well Merchants as Nobles, (in the Pernan Tongue) of what strength & force our shipping were, their number, burthen & force, where our chief place of residence was for Trading: Hee likewise sent for Persian Merchants, & did diligently enquire of them the same demands & questions: who answer'd that we had great trading on the coast of Cormadell, India and Persia; & likewise in the South-Seas, as Bantam, Iaparo, Iaubee & Macosor: They further told the Nabob, that our Shipping were great, and of great force withall, & likewise if his pleasure was such as to be at ods with vs, there neither could, would or should any Vessel, great or small, that did belong to these parts, stirre out of any Hauens, Ports or Harbours of his Maiesties Dominions, but they would take them & make prize of them, for they were not able to withstand their force: At these words the King said but little, but what he thought is beyond my knowledge to tell you.

Then the King turn'd to our Merchant, & told him in Moores language (the which hee could very well vnderstand) that he would grant the English free Trade vpon these Conditions following.

That if the English Ship or Ships should at any time see any ship or ships, lünke or lünks, or any other Vessel of the Nabobs, or any of his subiects in distresse either by foute weather, or in danger of Enemies, or in any other extremity, that we (the English) should helpe, aide; & assist them to our powers, or if it happened they were in want of Cables, Anchors, Water, Victualls, or any other necessaries whatsoever that did belong to them, that we the said English should helpe them as we were able. Likewise that we the said English should not make prize of any Vessel belonging to any of the Dominions of the said Nabob, & that we the said English should not make prize of any ship, Vessel or Vessels within the Ports, Riuers, Roads, or Hauens of the Nabob, though they were our enemies; but at the Sea we might make prize of them if we could; to this all our Merchants agreed. Then the King caused Articles on his part to be drawne, & published in this manner following.

Here I the said Nabob, Vice King & Governour of the Countrey of Woodia, vnder the great & mighty Prince Pe De-ha Shasalleem, doe giue & grant free licence to the aforesaid Ralph Cartwright Merchant to trade, buy, sell, export & transport by Shipping, either off or vpon the shore, not paying any lünkeon or Custome, nor any vnder me to cause them to pay any: Likewise, that if they doe conuay Goods by shore betwene Factory & Factory or any other place for their better advantage of gaine within these his Dominions, I straitly charge & command that no Governour, Custome-gatherer, or other Officer whatsoever, shall make or cause them to pay any lünken or Customes; but shall suffer them to passe free, without let, hinderance, molestation, or interruption of stayage, but shall (I say) helpe & further them in any thing that shall be the furtherance of their business. Moreover, I doe grant to the English Merchants to take ground, & to build houses fitting for their employments, & where they shall see conuenient for their best vility & profits, without let or hinderance of any of my louing Subiects.

And further I doe giue & grant to the English Merchants free Licence to build Shipping, small or great, or any other Vessel which they shall thinke best & fittest for their occasions & vses; they paying no more than the Custome of the Countrey to the Workmen; & likewise to repaire shipping if any occasion be to require it.

Likewise

Likewise I the Nabob doe command that no Governour or Officer whatsoever vnder me shall doe the English any wrong, or cause any to be done vnto them, as they shall answer it at their perills, wheresocuer they are resident: Neither shall any wrong be done to any seruant of theirs, that doth belong vnto them.

And againe, if any Controuersie should be betwixt the English, & the people of the Countrey, if the matter be of any moment, then the said cause shall be brought before me the Nabob at the Court at Malcandy, & at the Darbar I will decide the matter, because the English may haue no wrong, (behauing themselves as Merchants ought to do.)

This Licence formed & given at the Royall Court of Malcandy, the third day of May 1633, but not sealed till the 8th day of May following at night.

The fourth day of May the King sent a great banquet to the House of Mersymoine, to our Merchant, & there came to this feast the great man that did speake on the Nockado's side against vs, at the Darbar, about the friggot aforesaid: He brought with him to our Merchant for a present a bale of Sugar, a Bottle of Wine, & some sweet meates; saying, he was sorry for the things before done & past, but if any thing lay in him to doe the Company & him any good, he & they should be sure of it. This man was Governour of a Towne called Boffasarye, a Sea Towne where shipping was built; (as is afore said) his name was Mercossona, & vnderstanding that the Merchant was minded to traualle that way, hee promised him to doe him all the courtesies that could be.

The fifth day of May in the afternoon we were before the King againe at the Darbar, at our coming he called for our Perwan, (which was our warrant or licence) & then he added to it the free lease of coyning of Monies & sealed it with his owne signet. himselfe, & so all things were strongly confirm'd & ratified for our free trade in his territories & Dominions.

The sixth day of May the King made a great Feast at the Court where were assembled the most & chiefest of all his Nobles & Governours that were vnder his command, & being set, he sent the Lord Comptroller of his house for the English Merchant Master Ralph Cartwright to come vnto him, who came with all speede, & when he was in the presence of the King, he caused him to set downe by him, & take part of the Feast (for the King was exceeding merry & pleasant) then the King caused a Vest or Robe to be brought, & with his owne hands did put it vpon our Merchant; & thus was he inuested & entertained in the presence of this Royall, Noble & great assembly.

This day the King was in magnificent state & Maiesty, on rich Persian Carpets: (as is before mentioned) but ouer this great Company was a large Canopy of branched Veluet of foure colours, & in the seames betweene the ioynings of it was yellow Tassats, which hang downe like vnto the Valence of a bed, it was 80. foote in length, & 40. foote in bredth, & it was upheld with foure small Pillars, overlaid with siluer, whose height was twelue foote, & in thicknesse one foote. Here we staid till about the houre of five in the afternoon, & then we tooke our leaues of the King & the rest, & departed to Coteke to the house of Mersymoine.

Thus haue I plainly & truly related the occurrences that hapned at the Court of Malcandy, but although the Palace of the Nabob be so large in extent, & so magnificent in structure, yet he himselfe will not lodge in it, but every night he lodgeth in Tents with his most trusty Seruants & Guards about him, for it is an abomination to the Moguls (which are white men) to rest or sleepe vnder the rooffe of a house that another man hath builded for his owne honour. And therefore hee was building a Palace which he purpos'd should be a Fabricke of a Rest, & future Remembrance of his renowne: He likewise keepeth three hundred Women, who are all of them the daughters of the best & ablest subjects that he hath.

The seventh day of May we went vp & downe in the Towne of Coteke; it is very populous of people, & hath daily a great Market in it of all sorts of necessaries which the Country affordeth, it is seuen miles in compasse, & hath but two great Gates belonging to it, it is three Miles betweene the one Gate & the other.

Vpon the eighth day of May we went to the Court at Malsandj, againe to desire of the King a Warrant, or free Passe, for a safe conuoy of Letters, or any other such occasion through his Countreies.

Here we found his Maiesty sitting in the outward Palace of the Court on the Paument by the Tanke before named, with a very faire Canopy ouer him, made of Damaske, & upheld by foure small Pillars overlaid with Siluer, with his Nobles by him for this effect & purpose following.

He was by the great Mogul commanded to wage warre with all expedition against the King of Culcandouch (a great Prince neighbouring vpon his confines) which had wrongfully with hostility entred on the Southwest part of his Countrey, & had made some spoyle & hanock on the same. The King, I say, had here called all his Commanders, Leaders & Captaines together giuing them a great charge concerning the good vsage of his men, & their best endeauours in the management & performance of their seruices in those Warren. Hee likewise gaue gifts to the Leaders, & moncy to the Souldiers to encourage them. The Army consisted of 30000. men, which was 1000. Horse & 2000. foote, armed for the most part with Bowes & Arrows; & some againe with Darts, like our Iauelins, but farre more sharpe; & some againe with a kind of Falchon, Semiter, or like a bended Sword by their side; some of which weapon haue cut in sunder two malesfactors, which haue been condemned to dye, being bound backe to backe, at one blow giuen backwards by the Executioner. But our Commission being granted, & our businesse ended finally, our Merchant (reuerently) tooke his leaue of the King; & the King (with his Nobles) did the same to him, wishing him all good successe in his affaires in his Countrey; & so we departed.

The ninth of May we gathered together all our things; & at night wee departed from Coteke.

The tenth, at the hour of two in the Afternoone we came to the Towne of Harharra-poor, & hosted in the house of our Interpreter.

The eleuenth day wee went to the Governour of the Towne, & shewed him our Ferman or Commission from the King; the Governour made a great Salame, or courisie in reuerence vnto it, & promised his best assistance & helpe in any thing that he could doe, & there the said Governour had a small Present giuen to him.

The twelfth day of May Master Thomas Colley came to vs at Harharra-poor, & the rest of the Englishmen with him, with all the goods; then wee hired a house for the present, till such time as ours might be builded, for our further occasions to the Companies vs.

This Towne of Harharra-poor is very full of people, & it is in bounds sixe or seuen Miles in compasse; there are many Merchants in it, & great plenty of all things, here is also cloth of all sorts great store, for there doth belong to this Towne at the least 3000. Weauers that are house keepers, besides all other that doe worke, being bound or hired.

The fourteenth day the two Merchants went abroad, & found out a plat of ground siting to build vpon; then they layd the Kings Derooy on it, & seaz'd vpon it for the Companies vs, & there was no man that did, or durst gaine say them for doing the same.

The fifteenth day they hired workmen & labourers to measure the Ground, & to square out the foundation of the House, & likewise for the Wall, which was one hundred Conets square, which is fifty yards, every Conet being halfe a yard, or a foote & a halfe: & it be-houed vs to make haste, for the time of the great Raines was at hand.

The sixteenth day they laid the foundation of the Walls, being nine foote thicke, much haste was made, & many workmen about it; but this our first worke was but Labour lost & cast away, for it came to nothing.

For on the eighteenth day the Raines began with such force & violence, that it beate downe all our work to the ground, & wash'd it away, as if there had not bene any thing done, this Storme continued without ceasing, (day and night) more or lesse three weekes complet.

The sixteenth day of Iune Master Ralph Cartwright tooke his journey for Ballazary, & two

two English men with him, who were Edward Reterford & William Withal, & from thence he was minded to traueile further into the country of Bengalla; & the eighth of Iuly following wee received a letter from Master Cartwright, concerning his proceedings & troublesome passage; for he found not the Countrey according as was reported, by reason of the time of the great mines that fell, yet he was safely arrived in Pipely.

The three & twentieth day of Iuly in the Morning, we had news that there was an English Ship arrived at Hassarpoore, & had shot of three pieces of Ordnance, & stayed all night, she having not a boat to come from her, she weighed Anchor, & set saile for Ballazary.

The 25. of August in the morning Master Thomas Colley dyed: of a violent Feuer at Harharapoore.

The seventh day of September I received Letters from Master Cartwright from Ballazary, & withall he sent me the name of the Ship, to wit, the good Ship Swan, & Master Edward Austin (or Ostin) commander.

The nineteenth day of September there came two Merchants from Ballazary to Harharapoore, the one of them his name was Master Robert Littler, the other Master Iohn Powlle, Purser of the Ship Swan.

The fourth day of October our Merchant Master Robert Littler, tooke a iourney for Iaggamat, & he returned the sixteenth day to the Factory at Harharapoore.

#### A bricfe Relation of the great City of Iaggamat.

The fifth day of Nouember I was sent about the Companies businesse to the great city of Iaggamat, & I traueiled this day to a Towne called Madew, & I lodged all night in a Pagod, or Pogoda.

The sixth day I William Bruton traueiled eight course, which is thirty two Miles English, & came to a Towne named Amudpoore, where I found met together, of men, women & children, more than 3000.; & all of them were Trauellers & Raungers of the Countrey, having no residence, but are called Ashmen; (because they doe cast Ashes vpon themselves) also they are called Fuckeires, which are religious names given to them for their supposed holinesse, but indeed they are very Rogues, such as our Gipsies be here in England, when they see their time & opportunity to put Roguery & Villany, in practice: at this Towne I made no great stay, for I had a good charge about me of the Companies.

The seventh day of Nouember in the Morning about two of the Clocke, I hasted from Amudpoore, ouer a passage, & so for Iaggamat, which was tenne course betweene, that is forty Miles English, so about the houre of foure in the afternoone, I drew neare to this great City of Iaggamat, to which I passed ouer a great stone Causey, on either side whereof was a very goodly Tanke to wash in, this Causey was about halfe a mile in length; then as I came to the West end of this City, I entred into a very faire place for Situation, furnished with exceeding store of pleasant Trees & Groves & on either side of the way Tankes of water & Pagodoes in the midst of them. From thence I passed vp into the High-streete, where I was entertained by a Bramming, (which is one of their Religious Men or Idolatrous Priests) but let his Religion be what it would, into his House I went, & there I lodged all the time of my stay there.

The eighth day of Nouember in the morning after I had gone about the affaires that I was sent to doe, I went to view the City in some part, but especially that mighty Pagodo or Pagod, the mirrow of all wickednesse & Idolatry: vnto this Pagod, or house of Sathan (as it may rightly be called) doe belong 9000. Brammines or Bricses, which doe dayly offer Sacrifices vnto their great God Iaggamat, from which Idoll the City is so called; & when he is but named, then all the people in the Towne & Countrey doe bow & bend their knees to the ground; as the Moabites did to their Idoll Baal-Pear. Here they doe also offer their Children to this Idoll, & make them to passe through the Fire; & also they haue an abominable custome to cause or make them passe through the water as Sacrifices vnto the said vngodly God.

This Idoll is in shape like a great Serpent, with seven Heads, & on the cheekes of each Head it hath the forme of a Wing upon each cheeke, which wings doe open & shut, & flappe, as it is carried in a stately Chariot, & the Idoll in the midd<sup>t</sup> of it: and one of the Moguls sitting behinde it in the Chariot vpon a convenient place with a Canopy to keepe the Sunne from mising of it.

When I (with horror) beheld these strange things I talked to mind the 13. Chap. of the Revel. & 1. Verse, & likewise the 16. & 17. Verses of the said Chapter, in which places there is a beast, & such Idolatrous worship mentioned, & those sayings in that Text are herein truly accomplished in the 16th. Verse: for the Brammines are all marked in the fore-head, & likewise all that come to worship the Idoll, are marked also in their fore-heads; but those that doe buy & sell, are all marked in the left shoulder; & all such as doe dare or presume to buy & sell, (not being marked) are most severely & grievously punished.

They have builded a great Chariot that goeth on 16. Wheeles of a side, & every wheele is sixe foote in height, & the Chariot itself is about thirty foot high. In this Chariot (on their great Festivall dayes at night) they doe place their wicked God Jaggarnat, & all the Brammines (being in number 9000.) doe then attend this great Idoll, besides of Ashmen & Puckeis some thousands, (or more than a good many). The Chariot is most richly adorned with most rich & costly Ornaments, & the aforesaid wheeles are placed very compact in a round circuite so artificially, that every wheele doth doe his proper office without any impediment: For the Chariot is aloft, & in the Center betwixt the Wheeles; they have also more than 2000. lights with them: And this Chariot with the Idoll is also drawne with the greatest & best men of the Towne; & they are so eager & greedily to draw it, that whosoever by shouldering, crowding, shoving, heaving, thrusting, or any violent way can but come to lay a hand vpon the Ropes, they thinke themselves blessed & happy. And when it is going along the City, there are many that will offer themselves a Sacrifice to this Idoll, & desperately lye downe on the ground, that the Chariot-wheeles may runne over them, whereby they are killed outright; some get broken armes, some broken legges, so that many of them are so destroyed, & by this meanes they thinke to merit Heaven.

There is also another Chariot which hath but 12. wheeles, & that is for an Idoll or a Deuill of an inferior ranke or lower degree: & hee doth not goe abroad or in-progress, but when the Brammines doe please. This Pagodo is situated by the sea-side, & is to be seen into the Sea at the least 10. or 12. leagues; (for the Ayre & Skye is clear & pure in those parts, that it may be scene farre). It is inclosed with a wall of Stone, much about 22. foot in height, & the inclosure is square, & every square is 150. Geometricall paces; so the foure squares in the total are 600. paces or yards about; it standeth due East, West, North & South; & every square hath a great gate for the entrance into it, but the South & West-gates are barr'd vp till the Festivall times, & none commonly vsed but the North & East-gates, but especially the North-gate; for it hath all its prospect into the high or chiefe street of this City.

Now in some other parts of this Countrey the people doe adore & worship other creatures for their Gods: some worship the Celestiall, as the Sunne, Moone & Starres: some againe Terrestriall, & they of the Mountains, Vallies & Woods: some Aquaticall, & those of the Seas, Rivers, & Fountaines: some running after a beast like an Oxe, the Dog, & the Cat, some after the Hawke, some after the sheepe, & some so foolish, that they doted vpon the very hearbs & flowers in their Gardens. For indeed they haue very rare flowers for colour, such as I neuer saw in England, or else-where. Some of this Nation haue erected to themselves a God, in the likenesse of Iupiter, & doe chaine him by the legges in their Pagod, to the intent that hee might not leaue them, nor forsake them; & keepe continually watch & Guard night & day, lest any of their Enemies should come & intice him away by bribery, & so to preuaile with him to come forth of it, & by that meanes their City come to ruine & destruction: so much for their Idolatry.

This City of Bengalla is very great & populous, it hath many Merchants in it, & yeeldeth very rich commodities, as good Cloath in abundance, Sugars, Silkes, Taffates, Stuffs, Waxe,

Gamlacko, Bister, Oyle, Rice & Wheate, with many other good commodities vendable. It is likewise famous for its multitude of Rhinoceroes, it hath a beast much like vnto a Vair corne, &c. because it hath but one Horne, some doe beleue & take it for the Vaircorned horne for the vertue it hath in it. This City was once free from Taxations, till Ehebar the great Mogull caused it to be vnitod to his Empire. The chiefest Cities, which ioynne nearest to it, are Catigan, & Satagan on the banks of Ganges Eastward: It was once the Seat of the great Bengallian King Malchiram, as Mr. Purchase relates in his Pilgrimage. This City lyes Westward toward Pega, & nere to Cosmin & Aracam, two famous Cities for Traffick & Scituation; lying vpon the Riuer, & within some few Leagues of the Gulfe, call'd the Bengallian gulfe, which is a very dangerous one; for at some certaine times of the yeere it is very hazardable for vessels to passe without shipwrack: There be many other Lakes & Riuers which I could mention, but for breuity sake I omit them. But there is no strong drinke suffered to be dranke within the City, except a Stranger doe bring it in priuately, & so it is not knowne: & thus much shall suffice for the impious Religion of Iaggarnat & the stately Court of Malcandy.

The most of these people haue no Learning, but doe all things by memory: They weare commonly long haire, & are very strict in their time of Fasting; but afterwards, when the Ceremony is ouer, then they freely commit all kind of wickednesse againe. In some places they haue their Edicts or Lawes written, & in other places vnrwritten: They know what belongs to Bonds or bills & they lend without Witnesses; or any sealing of Writings, euen vpon their owne Words: & hee that is found to deny his promise, hath the tops of his fingers cut off. Their habit is various & different, some of them doe goe in linnen or woollen, some are clothed with beasts skins, or Birds feathers, others goe naked, & doe couer only their secret parts: Their bodies are for the most part blacke, which is not accidentall, but naturally arising from the quality of the seed they are begotten: Most of them are of a large stature; they haue many wines which they purchase & buy of their Parents: some they keepe to be their Vassals to doe their drudgery; others, which are handsomer, for issue sake & pleasure.

Here are greater store of Beasts than in any other part of the Indies; as Oxen, Camells, Lyons, Dogges, Elephants: they haue Dogges which are as fierce as Lyons, with which they usually hunt & pursue those wild beasts as we doe our bucks, for their delight & pleasure. They ride on goodly horses booted & spur'd; so likewise doe their Women.

These people are notable ingenious men; let it be in what Art or Science soeuer, & will imitate any workmanship that shall be brought before them: for the most part of them hate idleness, & those that doe not study in some Art or other, are counted drowmes, & stand for Cyphers, & dead men amongst the best & chiefest sort of people: They haue a custome, that alwayes before dinner they do call their children & young people in their houses together, & doe examine how they had spent their time from the sunno-rising, & if they could not giue a good account of it, they were not to be admitted to the Table; & so euery day, & if they did not the next time improve themselves in some knowledge of laudable things, they are most severely punished and chastised.

These barbarous & idolatrous people, although they be so ignorant in the true worship of God cannot endure a perjured person, nor a common swearer, nor a common drunkard, but will punish them very severely by stripes, or else by forfeiture of their Commodities: A perjured person, say they, is an arch enemy to their God & them: & it is so hatefull that if it be committed by their Father, Brother or kindred, they doe presently condemn him, according to the nature of the offence: for though they loue the perjury, by reason of the benefit that commeth vnto them by it, yet they hate the person euen vnto death: for, say they, hee which was sometimes periured in their behalfe, may vndoe what he hath done, & speake the truth when time serues: They instance a story of Soleman the great Turke, who loathed & abhorred the Traitor that betrayed Rhodes vnto him, & in stead of his daughter, whom he expected, to be giuen him in marriage for a reward, he caused him to be slayed and salted, & told him in derision, that it was not fit for a Christian to marry with a Turk, unless he put off his old skin: likewise they instance Charles the fourth, who rewarded the souldiers

diers (that betrayed their Lord & Master Krantius) with counterfeit Coyne; and being desired to deliuer them current money, answered, that counterfeit coyne was the proper wages for counterfeit seruice: Thus a lyar or periured person amongst these Idolatrous people they will not belceue, though he had spoken or sworne the truth: for he that hath been once false; is cuer to be suspected in the same kinde of falshood: wherefore iust & vpright dealing is aptly compared to a glasse, which being once broken, can neuer be repaired; or to opportunity, which once omitted, can neuer be recovered. And so I conclude this relation, wishing all men to preferre knowledge & honesty before wealth & riches; the one soone fadeth, the other abideth for cuer: for amongst all the goods of this life, onely wisdome is immortal.

FINIS.



THE  
FARDLE OF FACIONS  
CONTAINING  
THE AUNCIENTE MANERS, CUSTOMES AND LAWES,  
OF THE  
PEOPLES ENHABITING THE TWO PARTES OF THE EARTH,  
CALLED  
AFFRICKE AND ASIE.

Printed at London;

BY HON KINGSTONE, AND HENRY SUTTON.

1555.



TO THE  
RIGHTE HONOURABLE  
THE ERLE OF ARUNDEL,  
KNIGHT OF THE ORDRE.

AND

LORDE STEWARDE OF THE QUIENES MAIESTIES MOST  
HONOURABLE HOUSEHOLDE.

AFTER what time the barrein trauciles of longe service, had driuē me to thinke libertie the best rewarde of my simple life, right honorable Erle and that I had determined to leaue wrastling with fortune, and to giue my self wholly to liue vpon my studie, and the labours of my hand: I thought it moste fitting with the dutie that I owe to God and manne, to bestowe my time (if I could) as well to the profite of other, as of myself. Not coueting to make of my floude, a nother mānes ebbe (the Canere of all commune wealthes) but rather to sette other a flote, where I my self strake on ground. Tourning me therefore, to the searche of wisdome and vertue, for whose sake either we tosse, or oughte to tosse so many papers and tongues: although I founde aboute myself, verie litle of that Threasure, yet remembered I that a fewe yeres paste, at the instaunce of a good Citezein, (who might at those daies, by aauthoritie commaunde me) I had begonne to translate, a litle booke named in the Latine, *Omnium gentium mores*, gathered longe sence by one Iohannes Boemus, a manne as it appereth, of good iudgemente and diligence. But so corrupted in the Printing, that after I had wrasted a space, with sondric Printes, I rather determined to lose my labour of the quartre translation, then to be shamed with the haulf. And throwing it a side, entended no further to wearie my self therewithall, at the leaste vntill I mighte finde a booke of a better impressiō. In searching whereof at this my retourne to my studie, although I found not at the full that, that I sought for: yet vnderstanding among the booke sellers (as one talke brings in another) that men of good learning and eloquence, bothe in the Frenche and Italian tonge, had not thought skorne to bestowe their time aboute the translation therof, and that the Emperours Maiestic that now is, vouchedsaulfe to receive the presentation therof, at the Frenche translators hande, as well appereth in his booke: it kuddled me againe, vpon regard of mine owne profite, and other mennes moe, to bring that to some good pointe, that earst I had begonne. For (thought I) seeing the booke hath in it, much plesasant varietie of thinges, and yet more profite in the pittche: if it faile to bee otherwise rewarded, yet shal it thankfully of the good be regarded. Wherefore setting vpon it a fresche, where the booke is deuiced according to thaucientie deuision of the earth into three parties, Affrique, Asie, and Europe: hauing brought to an ende the two firste partes, I found no persone in mine opiniō so fitte as your honour, to present them vnto. For seeing the whole processe rometh vpon gouernance and Lawes, for thadministration of commune wealthes, in peace and in warre, of aunciente times tofore our greate grandfatheres daies: to whom mighte I better presente it, then to a Lorde of verie nobilitie and wisdome, that hath bene high Mareshalle

## THE LETTRE DEDICATORIE.

in the fielde abroad, depntic of the locke and keie of this realme, and a counsaillour at home, of thre worthe princes. Exercised so many waies in the waues of a fickle Commune wealtie: troubled sometime, but neuer disappointed of honourable successes. To your good Lordshippe then I yelde & committe, the firste fructes of my libertie, the firste croppe of my labours, this firste daie of the Newe yere: beseeching the same in as good parte to receive it, as I humbly offer it, and at your pleasure to vnfolde the Fardle, and consider the stuffe. Whiche euer the farder in, shall seeme I truste the more pleasaunte and fraictefull. And to conclude, if I shall vnderstande, that your honour delighteth in this, it shal be a cause sufficiente; to make me go in hande with Europe, that yet remaineth untouched. Almighty God giue vnto your Lordshippe prosperous fortune, in sounde honour and health.

Your Lordshippes-moste humbly at commaundement,

WILLIAM WATREMAN.

THE  
P R E F A C E  
OF THE AUTHOR.

---

I HAVE sought out at times, as leisure hath served me, Good reader, the manners and fa-  
ciōs the Lawes, Customes and Rites, of all suche peoples, as seemed notable, and worthy to  
be put in remembrance, together with the situatiō & descriptiō of their habitatiōs: which  
the father of Stories Herodotus the Greke, Diodorus the Sicilliane, Herosus, Strabo, Sokinus,  
Trognus Pompeius, Ptolomēus, Plinius, Cornelius the sill, Dionysius the Afriane, Pōponius,  
Mela, Cesar, Iosephus, and certēin of the later writers, as Vincentius, and Aeneas Siluius  
(whiche afterward made Pope, had to name Pius the seconde) Amthonic Sabellius; Ihou  
Nauclerus, Ambrose Calepine, Nicholas Peroite, in his cornu copiae, and many other famous  
writers eche one for their parte, as it were skatered, & by piece meale, set furthe to  
posteritie. Those I saie haue I sought out, gathered together, and accordyng to the ordre of  
the storie and tyme, digested into this little packe. Not for the boogre of gaine, or the  
ticklyng desire of the peoples vaine brate, and vnskillfulle commendacion: but partly moed,  
with the oportunitie of my leisure, & the wondrefull profite and pleasure, that I conceiued in  
this kinde of studie my self, and partly that other also delightyng in stories, might with little  
labour, finde easely when they would, the somme of thynges compiled in one Booke, that  
they were wroite with tediousnes to sieke in many. And I haue shocked them vp together,  
as well those of aunciente tyme, as of later yeres, as well as the virtuous in-  
differentie, that vsing the as present examples, and paterens of life, thou maiest with all  
this endeuour folowe the vertuous and godlie, & with asmuche warenes eschewe the vic-  
cious & vngodly. Yea, that thou maiest further, my (reader) learne to discernē, how men  
hanc in these daies amended the rude simplicitie of the first worlde, frō Adam to the floud,  
and many yeres after, when men liued skateryng on the earthe, without knowlege of Money,  
or what cogne ment, or Merchantes trade: no maner of exchange, but one good tourne for  
another. When no man claimed ought for his seruise, but laude and water were as  
cōmune to al, as Ayer and Skie. Whe they gaped not for honour, ne hunted after richesse,  
but eche man contented with a litle, passed his daies in the wilde fields, vnder the  
open heauen, the conerte of some shadowie Tree, or slendre houelle, with suche com-  
panion or companiōs as seemed them good, their diere babes and children aboute them.  
Spande without careke and in rest full quietnesse, eatyng the fruietes of the fildes, and the  
milke of the cattle, and drinking the waters of the christalline springes. Firat clad with  
the softe barkē of trees, or the faire broade leaues, & in proceesse with raye felle and bide  
full ynworkemanly patched together. Not then enuironed with walles, ne pentē vp with  
rampers, and ditches of despithe, but walking at free skope inōg the wanderyng beastes of  
the fildes, and where the night came vpon them, there takyng their lodgyng without feare  
of

of murder or thief. Mery at the fülle, as without knowledge of the euilles y<sup>e</sup> afre ensued as y<sup>e</sup> worlde waxed elder, through diuers desires, and contrarie endeuours of menne. Who in processe for the insufficiencie of the fruictes of the earthe, (whiche she tho gaue vntilled) and for default of other thynges, ganne falle at disquiete and debate among themselves, and to auoid the inuasion of beastes, and menne of straunge borders, (whom by themselves they could not repell) gathered into companies, with commune aide to withstande suche incursions and violence of wrong. And so ioyning in confederacie, planted themselves together in a plote, assigned their boundes, framed vp cotages, one by anothers chieque, diked in themselves, chace officers and gouernours, and deuised lawes, that they also among themselves might liue in quiete. So beginning a rough paterne of townes and of Cities, that afre were laboured to more curious finesse.

AND now were they not contented, with the commodities of the fields and cattle alone, but by diuers inuencions of handicraftes and sciences, and by sondrie labours of this life, they sought how to winne. Now gan they attempte the sease with many deuices, to transplant their progenie and offspring into places vnahabited, and to enioyce the commodities of eche others countrie, by mutual traffique. Now came the Ox to the yoke, the Horse to the draught, the Metalle to the stäpe, the Apparell to handsomnes, the Speache to more finesse, the Behaviour of menne to a more calmnesse, the Fare more deintie, the Building more gorgeous, then habitours ouer all became milder and wittier, shaking of (euen of their owne accord) the brutische outrages and stearne dealings, y<sup>e</sup> shamefully mought be spoken of. Nowe restrained they from slaying one of a nother, fro eating of ech others flesh, from rape and open defiling of mother, sister, and daughter indifferently, and from many like abhominacions to nature and honestie. They now marieng reason, with strength: and policie; with might: where the earthe was before forgrowen with bushes and wooddes, stuffed with many noisome beastes, drowned with meares, and with marshes, vnfitte to be inhabited, wast and vnhandsome in euery condition: by wittie diligence, and labour, ridde it from encombrance, planed the roughes, digged vp trees by the rootes, dried away the superfluous waters, brought all into leauelle, banished barrennesse, and reuouered the face of the earth, that it might fully be sene, converted the champaine to tillage, the plaines to pasture, the valley to meadow, the hills they shadowed with wooddes and with Vines. Then thruse they in cultre and share, and with wide woundes of the earthe, wan wine and corne plentifully of the grounde, that afore scarcely gaue them Akornes and Crabbes. Then inhabited they more thicke, and spred themselves ouer all, and buylde euery where. Of Townes, they made cities, and of villages, Townes, Castles vpon the rockes, and in the valleys made they the temples of the goddesses. The golde graued springs, they encurbed with Marble, & with trees right pleasantlie shadowed them aboute. From them they deriued into cities and Townes, the pure freshe waters, a great distaunce of, by conducte of pipes and troughes, and suche other conuiciaunce. Where nature had hidden the waters, out of sighte, they sancke welles of greate depth, to supplie their lackes. Rivers, and maine floudes, whiche afore with vnhiddeled violence, oftymes ouerflowed the neighboured aboute, to the destruction of their cattle, their houses, and themselves: they restrained with banques, and kept them in a course. And to the ende they might not onely be vadable, but passed also with drie foote, they deuised meanes with piles of Timbre, and arches of stone, to mitigate the rage of their violent streames, to grounde bridges vpon them. Yes, the rockes of the sea whiche for the dangier of the access, thought themselves exempte from the dinie of their hande, when they perceived by experience, they were noyous to sailors, with vspeakeable labour did they ouerthrowe & breake into gobettes: Hewed out haues on eery strand, enlarged creekes, opened rodes, and digged out herborowes, where their shippes mighte ride sauffe fro the storme: Finally they so laboured, beautified, and perfected the earthe, that at this daie compared with the former naturalle forgrowen wastenesse, it might well seeme not to be that, but rather the Paradise of pleasure, out of the whiche, the first paternes of mankind (Adam and Eue) for the transgression of Goddes precept, were driuen.

MEN also inuented and founde many wittie sciences, and artes, many wondrefull workes, whiche

which when by practice of letters, they had committed to bookes, and laid vp for posteritie, their successors so wondered at their wisdomes, and so reuerenced their loue and endeouours (whiche they spied to be meant toward them, and the wealth of those that should follow of the) that they thought the not blessed enough, with the estate of men mortalle, but so aduanced their fame, and wondered at their worthinesse, that they wane them the honour and name of Goddes immortall.

THO gan the Prince of the worlde, when men so gan to delight in shadowyng of the worlde, to sove vpon the good side, the pestilente Dernelle, that as they multiplied in number, so iniquitie might encrease, to disturbe and confounde this blessed state.

FIRST, therefore when he had with all kinde of wickednes belimed y world, he put into their heades, a curious searche of the highest knowledge, and suche as dependeth vpon destenie of thynges. And so practised his pageauntes, by obscure and doubtfully attempted Respōcions, and voices of spirites, that after he had fettered the worlde in the trauers of his totes, and launced into their hartes a blinde superstition, and feare: he trained it whole to a wicked worship of many goddes and Goddesses, that when he ones had wiped cleane out of mynde the knowledge and honour of one God euerlastyng, he might practise vpon manne, some notable mischief. Then sette he vp pilgrimages to deuilles, foresheuers of thynges, that gaue aduertisement and answer to demaundes in sondrie wise. In the Isle of Delphos one, in Euboea another, at Nasamone a third, and among the Dodonians, the famous oaks, whose bowes by the blastes of the winde resounded to the care, a manner of aduertisement of deuillish delusion. To the whiche Idolles and Images of deuilles he stirred vp men to do the honour (Helus) due onely to God. As to Saturne in Italie, to Iupiter in Candie, to Iuno in Samos, to Bacchus in India, & at Thebes: to Iris, and Osiris in Egypte: in old Troie to Vesta: aboute Tritona in Aphrique to Pallas, in Germanie and Fraunce to Mercurie, vnder the name of Theuthe: to Minerua at Athenes and Himetto, to Apollo in Delphos, Rhodes, Chio, Patara, Troade and Tymbra. To Diane in Delos and in Scythia, to Venus in Paphos, Cyprus, Gnydon, and Cithera. To Mars in Thracia, to Priapus in Jampscho of Hellespontus, to Vulcane in Lypara and Lēnos, and in diuers other places to sondrie other, whose remembrance was then moste freshe in the memorie of their people, for the beneficiaetes and merucilous inuencions bestowed among them.

AFTERWARD, also when Iesus Christe the verie sonne of the almightie father, shewing hymself in the flesh of our mortalitie, was conuerstant in the worlde, pointing to the same, as with his finger, the waie to immortallitie, & endlesse blessednesse, and bothe with woorde and example, exhorted and allured them to vprightnes of life, to the glorie of his father, sending his disciples and scollers into the vniuersall worlde, to condemne Superstition and all error of wickednes, with the moste healthsome woorde: to plante true Religion, and geue newe preceptes, and directions of the life, and had now set the matier in suche forwardnesse and pointe, that the Gospell beyng generally of all nacions recieued, there lacked but continuance to perfectie felicitie: The deuill ctesones retourning to his naturall malice, desirous to repossesse that, that constrainedly he forsooke, betraying again the curious conceipt of man, some he reuersed into their former abuses and errors, and some with newe Heresies he so corrupted, snarled, and blynded, that it had bene muche better for them, neuer almoste to haue knownen the waie of truth, then after their entrance, so rashely and maliciously to haue forsaken it.

AT this daie in Asia the lease, the Armenians, Arabians, Persians, Sirians, Assirians and Medes: in Aphrique, the Egipcians, Numidians, Libiens, and Moores. In Europe, the whole coūtrie of Grecia, Misia, Thracia, & all Turquie throwyng awaie Christe, are become the folowers and worshippers of Mahomet and his erroneous doctrine. The people of Scythia, whom we now cal Tartares (a greate people and wide spread) parte of them worshippeth the Idolle of their Emperour Kamme, parte the Sonne, the Moone, and other Starres, and part according to the Apostles doctrine, one onely God. The people of Iude, & Bhiopie, vnder the gouernance of Presbiter Ihs persouer in Christiane godlinesse, howbeit after a sort, muche different fro ours.

The sincere and true faith of Christ, wherewith in time it pleased God to illumine the worlde, remaineth in Germanie, Italy, France, Spaine, Englande, Scotland, Ireland, Denmarke, Liuron, Pruse, Polé, Hungorie, and the Isles of Rhodes, Sicilie, Cortica, Sardiniis, with a fewe other. This bytter enemie of mankinde hauyng thus with his subtilties, inuencied our mindes, and disuocured the christiaun, by diuersitie of manners and facions of belief, hath brought to passe thorough this damnable wyckednes of Sacrifices, and Rites: that whilst every people (vndoubtedly with religious entent) endeuour theim selues to the worshippe of God, and echone taketh vpõ him to be the true and best worshipper of hish, and whilst echone thinke theim selues to treade the straight path of euerslasyng blessednes, and contédeth with eigre mode and bitter dispute; that all other erre and be ledde farye a wric: and whilst every man struggleth: and striedeth to spread and enlarge his owne secte, and to ouerthrowe others, thei doe so hate and emie; so persecute and hannyõ echone an other, that at this daie a man cannot safely trauaill from one countie to another: yea, thei that would aduenture safely or vnsafely, be almost every where holdt out. Wherof me thinkes I see it is like to come to passe, that whilst one people can knoweth the name of another, (and yet almost neighbours) all that shall this daie be written or reported of theim, shall be counted and refused as lyes. And yea this manner of knowledge and experiance, is of it self so pleasant, so profitable & so praiseworthy, that sundrie (as it is well known) for the onely loue and desire thereof, leauyng their natie countie, their father, their mother, their wifes and their children; yea, throwyng at their heles their sauile and welfare, haue with greato troubles, vexations, and turmoilynges taken vpon theim for experiance sake, to cutte through the wallowing seas, and many thousande miles, to estrange theim selues fro their home; yea, and these men not in this age alone; but euery from the firste hatchyng of the worlde haue been reputed and founde of moste wisdomes, authoritie, and good facion, somet chosyn with all mennes consent, bothe in peace & warre, to administre the comune wealth as maisters and counsaillours, Iudges and Capitaines. Suche ware thancicall ages of Greece and of Italy, Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, Antisthenes, Aristippus, Zeno, & Pythagoras, who through their wisdomes and estimation for trauailes wath them greato nombres of folowers, and brought furthe in order the sectes named Socratici, Academici, Peripateci, Cynici, Cyrenaici, Stoici; and Pythagorici, echone chosyng name to glorie in his maister. Suche ware the prudente lawemakers of famous memorie, Minois and Rhadamanshus emög the Cretenses, Orpheus among the Thracians, Draco and Solon emög the Athenienses, Licurgus among the Lacedemoniis, Moses emög the Iewes, and Zamolxis among the Scythians; & many other in other stedes whiche dreamed not their knowledge in the benches at home, but learned of the men in the worlde moste wise, the Chaldees, the Brachmanni, the Gymnosophites & the priestes of Egipte, with whõ thei had for a space bene couersate. Like glorie, by like trauaill happened to the worthies of the worlde, as to Iupiter of Crete (reported fise times to haue suruicid the whole worlde) and to his two sonnes Dionisius (otherwise called Bacchus) and Hercules the mightie. Likewise to Theseus and Iason; and the rest of that voiage. To the valucky sailer Vlisses, and sothe banished Eneas, to Cyrus, Xerxes, and Alexander the Greate; to Hanniballe and Mithridate, kyng of Pontus, reported able to speake fiftie södrie languages, to Antiochus, the greate and innumerable Princes of Roome, bothe of the Scipioes, Marii, and Lentuli. To Pompeius the greate, to Iulius Cesar, Octavian, and Augustus; to the Constantines, Charles, Coarades, Herickes, and Frederickes. Whiche all by their exploitcs vpon strange nations, haue gotten their immortal and euerslasyng renowme. Wherefore, seyng there is in the knowledge of peoples, & of their manners and facions, so greate pleasure and profite, and euery man cannot, yea, fewe men will, go trauel the countiees theim selues; me thinkes gentill reader, thou oughtest with muche thanke to receyue at my hande these bookes of the manners and facions of peoples most notable and famous, together with the places whiche thei inhabit: And with no lesse cheifnes to embrace theim, then if beyng ledde on my hande from countrey to countrey, I should poynt the at eye, how euery people liueth, and where they haue dyrelte, and at this daye doe. Let it not moie the,

let it not withdrawe thee, if any cankered reprehendour of other mens doynages shall saie vnto thee: It is a thyng hath bene written of, many yeares agoe, and that by a thousand sondry menne, and yet he but borowynge their woordes, bryngeth it forth for a mayden booke, and nameth it his owne. For if thou well consider my trade, thou shalt fynd, that I haue not only brought thee other mennes olde store, but opened thee also the treasury of myne owne witte and bokes, not euery where to be found, and like a liberall feaster haue set before thee much of myne owne, and many thynges newe. Farewell and thankfully take that, that with labour is brought thee.



THE  
FARDLE OF FACIONS  
CONTAINING  
THE AUNCIENTE MANERS, CUSTOMES AND LAWES,  
OF THE  
PEOPLES ENHABITING THE TWO PARTES OF THE EARTH,  
CALLED  
AFFRICKE AND ASIE.

---

---

AFFRIKE.

¶ The first Chapter.

¶ The true opinion of the deuine, concerning the beginning of man.

When God had in .V. daies made perfecte the heauens and the earth, and the furniture of  
bosse: whiche the Latines for the goodlinesse and beautie thereof, call Mundus, and we (I  
knowe not for what reason) haue named the worlde: the sixth daie, to the entent there  
might be one to enioye, and be Lorde ouer all, he made the mooste notable creature Man.  
One that of all earthly creatures alone, is endowed with a myndé, and spirit from aboue. And  
he gaue him to name, Adam: accordyng to the colour of the molde he was made of. Then  
drawing out of his side the woman, whilst he slept, to thende he should not be alone, knitte  
her vnto hym, as an vnseparable compaignion, and therwith placed them in the mooste plea-  
sant plot of the earth, fostered to flourish with the moisture of floudes on euery partie.  
The place for the freshe grienesse and merie shéwe, the Greques name Paradisos. There  
lyued they a whyle a mooste blessed life without blemishe of wo, the earth of the *own* ac-  
corde bringyng forth all thing. But when they ones had transgressed the precepte, they were  
banysht that enhabitance of pleasure and drinen to shift the world. And fro thenceforth  
the graciousnes of the earth was also abated; & the francke fertilitie therof so withdrawn,  
that labour and swette, now was lesse a greate deale, then ydle loking on before tyme had  
done. Shortly crepte in sickenes, and diseases, and the broylyng heate and the nipping cold  
began to assaile their bodies. Their first sonne was Cayn, and the seconde Abel, and then  
many other. And as the world grewe into yeares, and the earth began to waxe thicke peo-  
pled, loke as the nombre did encrease, so vices grew on, and their lyuing decayed euer into  
woore.

woors. For gilltesse dealyng, wrong came in place, for deuoutnesse; cōtempt of the Goddess, and so farre outraged their wickednes, that God skarcely syndyng one iuste Noha on the earth (whom he saued, with his household, to repayre the losse of mankind and repleynte the worlde) sent a floude vniuersall, whiche couering all vnder water, killed all fleshe that bare life vpon earth, excepte a fewe beastes, birdes, and wormes that were preserued in the mistickal arke. In the ende of fise Monethes afre the floude began, the Arque touched on the mounteynes of Armenia. And within foure Monethes afre, Nox and all his beyng restored to the earth, with Goddes furtheraunce in shorte space re-peopled the worlde. And to thende the same myghte euery where again be inhabited, he dispersed his yssue and kyndredes into sondrie coastes. After Berosus opinion he sent Cham otherwyse, named Cameses and Chamesemus with his offspring, into Egipte. Into Lybia and Cirene, Triton. And into the whole residewe of Affrike the ancient Iapetus called Attabus Priscus, Ganges he sent into Easte Asia with certeyne of the sonnes of Comerus Gallus. And into Arabia he fertile, one Sabus, surnamed Thukifer. Ouer Arabia the Wasste he made Arabus gouernour, and Petreus ouer Petrea. He gaue vnto Canaan, all that lyeth frō Damasco to the outemost bordre of Palestyne. In Ewrope he made Tuisco king of Sarmatia, from the floude of Tanais vnto the Rhene. And there were ioyned vnto him all the sonnes of Istrus, and Mesa, with their brethren, fro the mounteyne of Adula to Mesemberia pontica. Archadius and Emathius gouerned the Tirantes, Comerus Gallus, had Italie and Francke, Samosthes, Britteigne and Normandie, and Iubal, Spayge. These spiridie and vniuersal putting forth of the children from their progenitors, before they had thoroughly learned and caused them selues with their factions and manners, was the cause of all the diuersitie that after ensued. For Cham, by the reason of his nauyghty demeanour towards his father, beyng constrained to departe with his wyfe and hys chyldren, planted him selfe in that parte of Arabia, that after was called by his name. And lefte no trade of religion to his posteritie, because he none had learned of his father. Wherof it came to passe, that when in processe of tyme they were increased to many for that londe: beyng sent out as it were, swarme afre swarme into other habitations and skatered at length into sondry partes of the worlde (for this banysshed progeny grewe aboute measure) some fell into errors wherout they could neuer vniuersal themselves. The tongue gan to alre & the knowledge of the true God and all godlie worshippe vanished out of mind. Inso muche that some lived so wildely (as afre thou shalt here) that it ware harde to discern a difference betwixte them and the beastes of the felde. They that stieted into Egipt; wondering at the beaustie and course of the Sonne, & the Mooone, as though there had been in them a power deumie, began to worship them as Goddess; calling the lesse, Isis and the bigger Osiris. To Iupiter also they sacrificed, & did honour as to y principall of life. To Vulcan for fire, to Pallas, at Eady of the skie, to Ceres as gouerneresse of the earth, and to sondry other for oster sondry considerations. Neyther staid that darkenesse of iniquitie in Egipte alone, but where so euer the progeny of Cham stiepe in from the begynnyng, there fell true godlines, all oute of minde and obdage to the deuill entred his place. And there neuer was countrie, mother of moe swarmed of people, then that part of Arabia, that he, and his; chose to be theirs. So greate a mischiel did the vntymely banishmente of one manne, bring to the whole, Cōtrarily the progēic of Iapeth, and Sem, brought vp to full yeres vnder their elders, and rightly instructed; contentyng the selues with a litle circuit, strated not so wyde as this brother had doen. Wherely it chaunced that the zeale of the truth, (I meane of good luyng and true worshippe of one onely God) remained as hidden in one onely people, vntill the tyme of Messias.

#### ¶ The seconde Chapitre.

¶ The false opinion of the Philosophers concerning the begynnyng of man.

But the auicente Philosophers, whiche without knowledge of God, and his truth, many yeres ago, wrote vpon the natures of things, and histories of times had another opinion of the originall of man. For certayn of them, believed the worlde euer to haue been, and that euer

euere it should be, and man together with it to haue had no beginning. Certaine did holde that it had a beginning, and an ende it should haue, and a time to haue been, when man was not. For saie thei, the begynner of thynges visible, wrapped vp bothe heauen and earth at one instant, together in one paterae, and so a distinction growyng on betwixte these meyne bodies, the worlde to haue begon in suche orde as we see. The aire by nature to be continually mouyng, and the moste fire parte of thesame, for the lightenesse thereof, moste highe to haue climbed. So that sonne and Moone, and the planetes all, participatyng of the nature of that lighter substance: moue so muche the faster, in how muche thei are of the more subtille parte. But that which was mixed with waterie moisture, to haue rested in the place, for the heavynesse thereof, and of the watery partes, the sea to haue comen: and the matter more compacte to haue passed into a clamminesse firste, and so into earth. This earth then brought by the heate of the sonne into a more fastenesse. And after by the same power puffd and swollen in the vppermoste parte, there gathered manye humours in sondry places, which drawing to ripenesse enclosed them selues in slymes and in filmes, as in the marcesses of Egyppt, and other stonyng waters we often se happen. And seynge the heate of thair skynge warmth the cold ground and heate meint with moisture is apt to engendre: it came to passe by the gentle moisture of the night aire, and the comforting heate of the daie sonne, that those humours so riped, drawing vp to the rinde of sheath, as though their tyme of childbirthe ware come, brake out of their filmes, and deliuered vpon the earth all manner of liuyng thinges. Emög which those that had in the moste heate, became foules into the aire: those that ware of nature more earthie, became wormes and beastes of sondrie kindes: and where waters surmounted, thei drew to the elemente of their kinde, and had to name fishes. But afterwarde the earth beyng more parched by the heate of the Sonne, and the drouthe of the windes, ceased to bring furthe any mo greate beastes: and those that ware already brought furtie, (saie thei) maintained, and increased by mutuall enghdrure, the varietie and nombre. And they are of opinion that in the same wise, men ware engendred in the beginning. And as nature putte them forth among other beastes, so liued they at the first an vnknownen lyfe wyldely among them, vpon the fructes, and the herbes of the felde. But the beastes afire a while waxing noysome vnto them, they ware forced in commune for echeothers scautie to drawe into companies to resist their annoyaunce, one helping another, and to sicke places to make their abiding in. And where at the firste their speache was confuse, by litle and litle they sayed it drewe to a distinctenesse, and perfeight difference: in sorte that they ware able to gyue name to all thinges. But for that they ware diuersely sparkled in diuers partes of the worlde, they holde also that their speache was as diuers and different. And herof to haue afeward risen the diuersitie of letters. And as they firste assembled into bandes, so euery bande to haue broughte forth his nacion. But these men at the firste voide of all helpe and experience of liuyng, ware bitterly pinched with hongre and colde, before thei could learne to reserue the superfluous plenty of the Somer, to supply the lacke of Winters barcynesse, whose bitter blastes, and hörgie pinynges, consumed many of them. Whiche thing whē by experience dere bought, thei had learned: thei soughte bothe for Caves to defende them fro colde, and began to houre fructes. Then happe foud-out fire, and reason gaue rule of profite, and disprofite, and necessitie toke in hand to sette witte to schoole. Who gatheryng knowledge, and perceiuyng hymself to haue a helpe of his senses, more skillfull then he thought, set hande a worke, and practised conyng, to supplie all defaultes, whichē tōgue and letters did enlarge and distribute abroad.

THEI that had this opinion of the originall of manne, and ascribed not the same to the providence of God, affirmed the Ethiopiens to haue bene the firste of all manne. For thei coniectured that the ground of that countrie lyng nicest the heates of the Sonne muste nedes first of all other waxe warme. And the earth at that tyme beyng but clammye and softe, through the attempturaunce of that moysture and heate, man there first to haue bene soured, and there to haue gladdier enhabited (as nature and naturall vnto him) then in any other place, whē all places ware as yet strange, and vnknownen, whichē afire men soughte.

Beginnyng therefore at them, after I haue shewed how the worlde is deuided into three partes (as also this treatise of myne) and haue spoken a litle of Aſſyrie, I wyll shewe the situation of Aethiophe, and the maners of that people, and so forth of al other regions and peoples, with suche diligence as we can.

¶ The thirde Chapitre.

¶ The deuision and limites of the Earthe.

Those that haue bene before our doies, (as Orosius writeth) are of opinion, that the circuite of the earth, bordered about with the Ocean Sea: disroundyng hym self, shooteth out thre corner wise, and is also deuided into thre seuerall partes, Afrike, Asie, and Europe. Afrike is parted from Asie with the floude of Nilus, whiche comyng fro the South, ronneth through Ethiophe into Egipte, where gently sheadyng hymself oter his bouques, he leaueth in the countrie a merueilous fertilitie, and passeth into the middle earth sea, with seuen armes. From Europe it is separte with the middle earth sea, whiche beginnyng fro the Ocean aforesaid: at the Islande of Gades, and the pilsens of Hercules, passeth not tenne miles ouer. But further entryng in, semeth to haue shooed of the maigne lande on bothe sides, & so to haue won a more largenesse. Asie is deuided from Europe, with Tanais the floude, whiche comyng fro the North, ronneth into the marshes of Meotis almoste midwaie, and there sinkyng himself, leaueth the marshes and Pontus Euxinus, for the rest of the bounde. And to retourne to Afrike again, the same havyng Nilus as I. said on the Easte, and on all other partes, bounded with the sea, is shorter then Europe, but broader towarde the Ocean, where it riseth into mountaigne. And shoryng towarde the Weste, by litle and litle waxeth more straighte, and cometh at thende to a narrowe pointe. As muche as is inhabited therof, is a plentifulous soile, but the great parte of it lieth waste, void of inhabitants, either to whote for menne to abide, or full of noisome and venemous vermine, and beastes, or elles so whelmed in sande & gravel, that there is nothing but mere barrennesse. The sea that lieth on the North parte, is called Libicum, that on the Southo Aethiopicum, and the other on the West Atlanticum.

At the first the whole was possess of fewer sondrie peoples. Of the whiche, twaine (as Herodotus writeth) were founde there, tyme out of minde, and the other twaine were aliens and incommes. The two of continuance, were the Peces, and Ethiopes, whiche dwelte the one at the Northe of the lande, the other at the South. The Alienes, the Phoenices, the Grekes, the old Ethiopians, and the Aegyptians, if it be true that thei report of themselves: At the beginning they were sterne, and vnruly, and brutishly liued, with herbes and with fleshe of wilde beastes, without lawe or rule, or facio of life, royllyng and rowmyng vpon heade, heather and thether without place of abode, where night came vpon them, there layyng their bodies to resto. Afterwarde (as thei saie) Hercules passyng the seas out of Spaine, into Libie (a countrie on the Northe shore of Afrike) and bringyng an oxepulus of people thence with hym, somewhat better facioned and manered then thei, trained them to muche more humanitic. And of y trouges they came ouer in, made themselves cotages, and began to plante in plompes one by another. But of these things we shall speake here afire more at large.

Afrike is not in every place a like inhabited. For toward the South it lieth for the moste part waste, and vnpeopled, for the broilyng heate of that quare. But the part that lieth ouer against Europe, is verie well inhabited. The frutefulnessse of the soile is excedyng, and to muche merueilous: as in some places bringyng the sicke with a hundred folde increase. It is straunge to beleue, that is said of the goodness of the soile of the Moores. The stocke of their vines to be more then two menns can selome, and their clousters of Grapes to be a cubite long. The coronettes of their Panepes, and Gardain Thistles (whiche we calle Hortichokes) as also of their Fenelle, to be twelue Cubites compass. Thei haue Canes like vnto those of India, whiche may contain in the copasso of the knot, or iointe, the measure of ij. bushelles. Ther be sent also Sparagi, of no lesse notable biggnesse. Toward the

the mounte Atlas trees bee founde of a wondrefull heighth, smothe, and without knagge or knotte, vp to the hard toppe, hauyng leaues like the Cypres, but of all other the moste noble Citrus, wherof the Romaines made great deintie. Affrike hath also many sondrie beastes, and Dragonnes that lye in awaite for the beastes, and when thei see time, so be wrappe and wreathen them aboute, that takyng fro them the vse of their ioyntes, thei wearie them and kille them. There are Elephantes, Lyons, Bugles, Pardales, Roes, and Apes, in some places beyonde nombre. There are also Chamelopardales and Rhizes, like vnto Bulles. Herodote writeth, that there be founde Asses with hornes, Hienas Porpétines, wilde Rambes, a beast engendered of the Hiene and the Woulfe named Thoa, Pantheres, Storckes, Oistruthes, and many kindes of serpentes, as Cerastes, and Aspides, against whom nature hath matched the Ichneumon (a verie little beast) as a mortal enemy.

¶ The. iiii. Chapitre.

¶ Of Ethiops, and the auncient maners of that nation. Cap. iiii.

Two countreies there ware of that name Ouerlanders, and Netherlanders. The one per-  
taining to Aphrique, the other to Asie. The one whiche at this daie is called Inde, hath  
on the east the redde sea, and the sea named Barbaricum, on the northe it toucheth vpon  
Egypte, and vpon that Libie that standeth on the vtter border of Affrike toward the sea. On  
the west it is bounded with the other Libie that stüdeeth more into the mayne londe. The  
residue that runneth toward the south, ioyneth vpon the netherland Ethiops, whiche lyeth  
more southerly, and is muche greater. It is thought that these Ethiopses toke name of  
Ethiopus Vulcanes sonne, that (as Plinie saie) was gouernour there. Or els of the Greke  
wordes aythoo and ops, wherof the former signifieth to broyle, or to bourne vp with heate,  
and the other, in the eye or sight. Whiche sheweth in effecte, that the countreie lyeng in the eye  
of the Sonne, it must needs be of heate almost importable. As in diede it lyeth in the full course  
of the sonne, and is in continuall heate. Toward the west it is hilly, in the middes grauell  
and sande, and on the east waste and deserte. There be in it dyuers peoples of sondry  
phisonomy and shape, monstrous and of hugly shewe. They are thought (as I saied) to  
haue bene the fyrst of all men, and those whiche of all other maye truelest be called an  
homeborne people. Neuer vnder the bondage of any; but euer a free nacion. The first  
waie of worshippyng God (say thei) was deuised and taught emonge them: with the maners  
and ceremonies there to appertinent. They had two kyndes of letters, one, whiche ware  
knowne onely to their priestes for matters of Religion, whiche they called mysticall, and  
another for the vse of the people hidden fro none. Yeat ware not their Letters facioned  
to ioyne together in sillables like ours, but Ziphres, and shapes of men and of beastes, of  
heades, and of armes, and artificers tooles, whiche signified in sondrie wise echone accordyng  
to his proprietie. As by the picture of an hauke swiftenes and spiede, by the shape of a cro-  
codile displeasure or misfortune, by the figure of an eye, good watche or regard, and so  
forthe of other. Among their priestes, loke whome they sawe startle aboute as haulfe wood,  
him did they iudge of all other mooste holy, and making him their king, they fall downe  
and worship him, as though there ware in him a Godhead, or as though at the feast he  
ware by goddes prouidence giuen them. This king for al that, must be gouerned by the  
lawe, and is bounde to all thinges after thordre of the contry. He his selfe maye neither  
punishe or guerdon any manne. But loke vpon whome he wyl haue execucion done, he  
sendeth the minister appointed for the purpose, to the person with a token of deathe: whiche  
when he hath shewed, the officier retourneth, and the persone what soeuer he be, incontinent  
fordoeth him self. So greatly ware they giuen to the honour of their kynges, suche a fer-  
uencie had they towarde them, that if it fortuneth the king through any mishap, to be mayned  
or hurte in any parte of his bodye, as many as ware towarde him, namely of householdes,  
voluntarily woulde giue them selues the lyke hurt, thynking it an vsnitting thing the kyng  
to lacke an eye or the vse of a legge, and his frindes neither to halt, ne yet to lacke parte of

their sight. They say it is the maner also, that when the king dieth, his friends should willfully dispatche them selues and die with hym, for this compe they glorious and a testimony of very friendship. The moste part of them, for that they lye so vnder the Sonne, go naked: couering their priuities with shiepes tayles. But a fewe of them are clad with the rawe felles of beastes. Some make them briches of the heares of their heades vp to the waeste. They are comonly brieders and grasers in commune together. Their sheepe be of very small body, and of a harde & rough coate. Their dogges also are neuer a white bigger, but they are fierce and hardie. They haue good store of gromel and barley, wherof they vse to make drinke. All other graine and fructies they lacke, excepte it be dates whiche also are very skante. Some of them lye with herbes and the tender rootes of cannes or Riedes. Other eat fleshe, milke, and chese. Meroc, was in time past the heade citie of the kyngdome, whiche stondeth in an Isle of the same name facioned like a shield, stretching it selfe thre thousand furlong alongest by Nilus. Aboute that Islande do the cattie masters dwelle, and are muche giuen to hunting, and those that be occupied with tillie of the goodde haue also mines of gold. Herodotus writeth that thethiopiens named Macrobij, do more estieme litten then they do golde whiche they put to nothyng that they copt of any price. In so muche that the Ambassadors of Cambises, when they came thether, found the prisoners in the gaole fettered and tied with Chaines of golde. Some of them sowe a kinde of graine called Sesames, and other the delicate Lothū. They haue greate plenty of Hebenum, a yoodde muche like Guaiacum, and of Siquastrum. They haunte Elephanes and kyll them to eate. There be Lions, Rhinocerotes, Basiliskes, Pardals, and Dragones, whiche I said enuurple thelephanies, and sucke them to death, for their bloude. There be found the precious stones called the Iacinte, and the Prasne. There is also cinamome gathered. They occupie bowes of woode seasoned in the fire, of foure cubites lōg. Women be also trayned to the warres, and haue for the moste parte a ring of taton hauging throughe their lippe. Certaine of them worshippe the Sonne at his vpriste, and curse him moste bitterly at his doune gate. Diuers of the throwe their dead into Riuers, other cofer them vp in earthen cofes, some enclose them in glasse, and kepe them in their houses a yeare, and in the meane season worship them deuoutly, and offere vnto them the first of all their encrease. In the naming of a newe king, they giue ther voice chiefly to him that is moste goodly of stature, moste conning in brieding of cattle, and of strengthe and substaunce passing the rest. The lawe hath bene, that the priestes of Memphis shoulde haue the auctoritie to sende the Kinge the token of death, & to set vp another in the place of the deade, whome they thoughte good. They haue an opinion that ther are two Goddes, one immortall, by whome all things haue their beginning, and continuance vnder his gouernement, and another mortall, and he is vncerteine. Their king, and him that best deserueth of the city next vnto him, they honour as Goddes. This was the state of Ethiope from the beginning, and many yeares sence.

BVT at this daye as myne Authour Sabellicus saieth ſ he learned of those that are inhabitants in ſ contrey: The king of Ethiope (whome we commonly calle Pretioines or Presbiter Ihon) is a man of suche power, that he is reported to haue vnder him thre skore and two other kinges. If the heade Bysshoppes of the Realme desire to do, or to haue aughte done, it is referred vnto him. Of him be giuen al benefices, and spiritual promotions, which prerogative the Pope hath giuen, to the maiestie of kinges. Yet is he him selfe no priest, ne hath any maner of ordres. There is of Archebissoppes (that is to say of superiour and head bisshoppes) a great nombre, whiche haue euery one vnder them at the least twenty other. The Princes, Dukes, Earles, and head Bisshoppes, and suche other of like dignitie, when they come abrode, haue a crosse, & a basine of golde filled full of earthe caried before them: that thome maye put them in remembrance that earth into earth must againe be resolued, and ſ other renewe the memory of Christs suffering. Their priestes to haue ysaie, maye one wyfe, but she ones beyng dead, it is vnlawfull to marry another. The temples & churches ther, are muche larger, much richer, and more gorgeous then ours, for the moste part vaulted fro the floore to the toppes. They haue many ordres of deuout men, moche

like

like to our ordres of Religiour: as the ordre of S. Anthony, Dominique, Calaguritan, Augustines, and Macharenes, whiche are bound to no colour but weare some suchlike one as Tharcebyssshoppe shall allowe. Next vnto the supreme and soveraigne GOD, and Mary the virgin his mother, they haue moste in honour Thomas surnamed Didimus. This King, of all other the worthiest, whome they call Gias (a name giuen him of his mightinesse and power) is of the blood of Dauid, continued from one generation to another (as they are persuaded) by so many yeres of successiō. And he is not as the moste of the Ethiopians are, blacke, but white. Garama the chiefe Citie, and as we terme it the chābre of the king, standeth not by building of masonrie, & carpentrie works, but stricted with tentes and pavilions placed in good ordre, of velvet and satin; embraued with silkes and purples of many diuers sortes. By an auncient ordre of the realme, the king lieth ouer in presence and sighte of his people, and neuer sojourneth within the walles about two daies. Either for that they iudge it an vncomely thing, and a token of delicate sloughfulness, or elles for that some lawe doth forbid it. His army in the warres is ten hundred thousande men, five hundred Elephanes, and horses, and Cameles, a wonderfull number, and this is but a meane preparation. They are throughout the whole nacion certeine houses and stookes, that are p̄cionaries at armes, whose issue is as it were branded with the marcke of the crosse, & skinne beyng pretely slitte. They vse in the warres, Bowe, Pique, Habregoon; and helmette. Their highest dignitie is priesthode, & next, thordre of the Sages, whiche they call Babamates, and Tiquates. They attribute moche also to the gillelesse and vprighte dealing man, whiche vertue they esteeme as the firste staire to climbe to & dignitie of the sages. The nobilitie hath the thirde place of dignitie, and the p̄cionaries aforesaid, the fourth. Whē the iudges haue giuen sentence of life, or of death, the sentence is brought to the headborough of the Citie (whom we call the Mayour) and they Licomegia: he supplicth the place of the King. Lawes writen they occupy none, but iudge accordyng to reason and cōscience. If any man be convict of adulterie he forfeiteth the fourth part of his goodes, but thadulteresse is punished at home, according to the discretion of the partie offended. The men giue dowrie to those whom they marry withal, but not to those & they purchase besides. Their womens attire is of Golde, (whereof that country hath plentie) of pearle, and of Sarsenette. Bothe men and women are apparelled in long garmettes downe to the foote, sliced, and close rounde about of all maner of colours, saue only blacke for that in that contry is proper for morning. They bewaile their dead. xl. daies space. In banquettes of honour, in the place of our fruite (which the latine calleth the seconde boorde) they serue in rawe fleshe very finely minced and spiced, wherwō the gestes fede very licourically. They haue no maner of wollen webbe, but are eyther cladde in sarsenettes, or in linnen. One maner of speache serueth not throughtout the whole contry, but sondry & diuerse, aswel in phrase as in name of things. They haue twice in the yere harvest, and twice in the yere sower. These Ethiopians or Indianes excepted, all the reste of the people of Libia Westward, are worshippers of Mahomet, and liue after the same sorte in maner, that & Barbarians do in Egip̄te at this present, and are called Maures, or Moores, as I thincke of their outkapes and wilde rowming. For that people was no lesse noysome to Lybie in those cursed tymes (when so greate mutacion of things happened, when peoples were so chaunged, suche alteration of seruice, and religion brought in, and so many newe names giuen vnto countries) then the Sarasens were.

### ¶ The. v. Chapter.

#### ¶ Of Egip̄te, and the auncient maners of that people.

Egip̄te is a Countrey lying in Affrike, or as some hold opinio, bordering therwō, so named of Aegiptus, Danaus brother, where afore it was called Acris. This Egip̄te as P̄nic reckoneth in his sixth booke toucheth on the East, vpon the redde Sea, and the land of Palestine. On the West fronteth vpon Cirene, and the residue of Affrike. On the South it stretcheth to Aethiope: And on the North is ended with the sea, to whom it giueth name:

The

The notable Cities of that Countrey, were in tyme past, Thebes, Abydos, Alexandria, Babilon, and Memphis, at this date called Damiate, alias Chairos or Alkair, and the seate of the Soldā, a citie of notable largeness. In Aegypt as Plato affirmeth, it was neuer sene spin. But Nilus supplying that default, yerely aboute sainte Barnabies tide, with his overflowinges maketh the soile fertile. It is nombred of the moste parte of writers, among the Isles: For that Nilus so parteth hymself aboute it, that he facioneth it triangle wise.

The Aegyptians firste of all other, devised the names of the twelue Goddess, beate vpon Altars, and Images, erected Chappelles, and Temples, and graved in stone the similitude of many sondrie beastes. All whiche their doynge, dooe manifestly make, that they came of the Aethiopes, who (as Diodore the Sicilian saith) were the firste inventours of all these. Their women in old tyme, had all the trade of occupieng, and brokage abroad, and rowelled at the Tauerne, and kepte lustie chiere: And the men satte at home spinning, and woorkyng of Lace, and suche other thynges as women are wonte. The men bare their burleins on the heade, the women on the shulder. In the easement of wine, the men rowked doune, the women stooode vprighte. The easement of ordure they vsed at home, but commonly feasted abroad in the stretes. No woman tooke ordres, either of God, or Goddesses. Their maner of ordres, is not to make senerally for euery Goddess and God, a seuerall priest, but al at a shuffle, in generall for all. Emong the whiche, one is an heade, whose some enheriteth his roume by succession. The men children, ouen of a custome of that people, did with good wil kepe their fathers and mothers, but the women children (yf they refused it) were compelled. The moste part of men in solempne buriales, shawe their heades and let their beardes growe, but The giptians shawed their beardes and let their heades grow. They wrought their doughe with their sete, and their claye with their handes. As the Greciens do belesse, this people, and their ospring, are they that vsed circumcision. They ordre their writyng fro their right hande towards their left, contrary to vs. It was the maner emong them, that the meene should weare two garmentes at ones, the women but one. As the Aethiopes had, so learned, they of them, two maner of letters: the one generall to the priestes thother vsed in commune. Their priestes, euery thirde daye shawed their bodies, that there might be none occasiō, of filthinesse whē they shold ministrate, or sacrifice. They did weare garmentes of linnen, euer cleane washed, and white: and shoes of a certeine kinde of risshe, named Papyrus, whiche as tyme became stuffe, to geue name to our paper. They neither sette beane their solmes, ne ease them where soeuer they growe: ne the priest may not lye vpon a beare, for that it is iudged an vnclene puls: They are washed euery daye in colde water thise, and euery nighte twice. The heades of their sacrifices (for that they vsed to curse them with many terrible wordes) did they not cate, but either the priestes solde them to such strangiers as had trade emong them, or if there ware no suche ready in time, they threwe them in to Nilus.

All the Egiptians offer in sacrifice, neither cowe, ne ewe calfe, because they are hallowd to Isis their goddesses, but bulles, and bulle calves, or oxen, and stieres. For their meate they vse, moche a kinde of ponicake made of rye meale. For lacke of grapes they vse wyne made of Barly. They liue also with fishe, either dried in the Sonne and so eaten rawe, or elles kept in pickle. They feede also vpon birdes, and foules, firste salted, and then eaten rawe. Quails, and mallard, are not but for the richer sort. At all solempne suppers, when a number is gathered; and the tables withdrawen, some one of the company carieth aboute in an open case, the image of death, caruen out of wodde, or drawē with the pencille as nere to the vine as is possible, of a cubite; or two cubites long at the moste. Who shewing it aboute to euery of the gastes, saith, loke here: drinke, and be mery, for afte thy death, suche shalt thou be. The yonger yf they mieth their ancients, or better, vpon the waye, giue them place, going somewhat aside: or yf the aunciente fortune to come in place where they are sitting; they arise out of their seate, wherein they agre with the Laedemonies. Whē they mieth in the waye, they do reuerence to eche other, bowing their bodies, and letting fal their handes on their knees. They weare longe garmentes of linnen, beamed about the skirtes beneth, whiche they call Casiras: ouer the which they threwe on another white

white garmentt also. Wollen apperle thei neither wear, w<sup>ch</sup> the church, né bewry any man in:

Nowe for asmoche as they afore time that euer excelled in aye kinde of learning, or durste take vpon them to prescribe lawe, and rule of life vnto other, as Othepus, Homere, Muscus, Melampode, Dedalus, Licurgus, Solon, Plato, Pithagoras, Samolxis, Eudoxus, Democritus, Inopides, and Moses the Hebrue, with manye other, whose names the Egyptians glorie to be cronickled with them: trauelled first to the Egyptians, to learne embiges them bothe wisdomé, and politiq<sup>ue</sup> ordre (whercin at those daies they passed all other) me thinketh is pleasant and necessarie also, to stande somewhat vpon their maners, ceremonies and Lawes, that it may be knowen what they, & sondry moe haue borrowed of the, and translated vnto other. For (as Philip Beroalde writeth in his commentary vpon Apuleius booke, entituled the Goldē Assé) the moste parte of the deuices that we see in our Christian religion, were borrowed out of the maner of the Egyptians; As surplus and rochet, and such liuac garments: shauen crownes, touninges at the altare, our masse solemnities, our organes, our kneelings, crouchinges, praies, and other of that kinde. The kinges of Egipte (saith Diodore the Sicilian in his seconde booke) liued not at zonen as other kinges doe, as though me lusteth war lawe: but bothe in their monie collections, and dailly fare and apperell, folowed the bridle of the lawe. They had neither slaué that was homeborne, ne slaué that was forein bought, appointed to attende or awaite vpon them. But the sonnes of those that were priestes of honour, bothe about thage of twenty yeres, & also singularly learned. That the king hauing these attendant for the body both by daie and by night, restrained by the reuerence of the company about hym might commit nothing that was vicious, or dishonourable. For men of power are seldome euil, where they lacke ministres for their vniuersall lustes. There were appointed houres, bothe of the daie and the night, in the whiche the king mighte lawfully doe, what the Lawe did permit. In the morning, as soone as he was ready, it behoued him to peruse al letters, supplications, and bills: that knowing what was to be done, he might giue answer in tyme: that all thinges mighte rightlie, and ordere be done. These being dispatched, whé he had washed his bodie emög the Pieres of y<sup>e</sup> Realme: he put on some robe of estate, and Sacrificed to the goddesses. The maner was, that the Primat; or head of the spirituality (the beastes appointed for the sacrifices being brought harte to the altare, and the Kyng standing by) should with a loude voyce, in the hearing of the people, wysste to the king (that bare him selfe iustlye towardé his subiectes) prosperous healthie, and good fortune in all. And should further particularly recite the vertues of the king, his deuoutnes and reuerence towardé God, and clemency towardé men. Commende him as chaste, iuste, and vpright: of noble and gréat courage, sofaste, liberal, and one that well brided al his desires. Punishing thoffendour vnder his disertes, and rewarding the well doer about his meries. Making a processe of these, and such other like: in the ende with the rehersalle of the contrary vices, he cursed the wicked & euil. Then absolving the King of his offenses, he laied all the faulte vpon the ministres, and attendautes, y<sup>e</sup> should at any time moue the king to any thing vnright, or vniuersall. These thinges beinge done, he preached vnto the King the blessednes of the life, led according to the pleasure of the goddess, and exhorted him therunto: as also to frame his maners: & doinges vnto vertue, & not to giue care to that, that leude mē should counsaile him; but to followe those thinges that led vnto honour and vertue. In thende, when the King had sacrificed a bulle, the priest declared certain preceptes and exampls of excellent, & moste worthy men: written in their holy scripture. To thende that the Kynge admonished by the example of them, might orde his gouernance iustlye, and godly, and not geue hym selfe to couctous cloynng, and hoarding of treasure: He neither sette to iudge, ne toke his vacacion, né walked abroad, ne washed at home, né laye with his Quene, né finally did any maner of thing, but vpo the prescrip<sup>t</sup> of the lawe.

Their fare was but simple, nothing but veale, and goose, and their wine by measure appointed. So that those should nether ouerlade the bealy, ne the other the heade. To conclude, their whole life so bounde vpon temperance, that it might be thoughte rather

to haue bene prescribed them by a discrete Phisicen to preserue helthe, then by a politique Lawyer. It seemeth wondrousfall that the Egiptians mighte not rule their owne priuate life, but by the Lawes. But it seemeth more wondrousfall that their King had no liberty of him selfe, either to sitte in iudgement, to make collections of money, or to punish any man, vpon wilfulness, stoute stomacke, angr, displeasure, or anye vniuste cause: But to be holden vnder lawe as a commune subiecte, and yet not to be agreed therwith, but to thincke them selues moste blessed in obcyeng & folowyn the lawe, and other in folowyn their lustes most vnhappy. As being led by them into many daungiers, and damages. For suche oftentimes; euen when they know them selues to do euill, either ouercome with malice, and hatred, or some other mischiefe of the minde, are not able to withholde them selues from the euill. But they which by wisdom and discrecion, gouerne their liues, offende in fewe things: The kinges vsing suche an equitie, and vprightnes towardes their subdittes, are so tendred againe of them, that not onely the priestes, but all the Egiptians in generall, haue more care for the health and the welfare of the King, then for their wiues, their childrens, or any other princes.

He that to his death continueth in this goodnesse, him being dead, do they in general lamente. They teare their clothes, they shut vp y<sup>e</sup> churche doores, they haunte no place of wouite. comunc. course, they omytte all solemne holy daies: and girding them selues vnder the pappes with brode libbond of Sarsenet, two or thre hundred on a company, men and women together, renewe euery daye twice, thre skore & .xii. daies together, the buriall heaving, casting dirt on their heades, and singing in rithme the vertue of the Kinge: They abstaine from all fleshe of beastes, all meates y<sup>e</sup> touche fire, all wine and all preparation of seruice at the table. They bathe not, thei smel of no awities, they goe to no beddes, they pleasure not in women: but as folkes that had buried their beste beloued childe, all that continuance of time they lamente. During these seuentie and two daies (hauyng prepared all things necessarie for the funerall pompe: the laste daye of all, the bodie beyng embalmed and cofred, is sette before the entrie of the Toombe. Thercaftre the custome, one redeth an abridgemente of all the thinges done by the king in his life. And if there be any man disposed to accuse the deade, libertie is giuen him. The priestes are present, & euer giue praise to his well doinges, as they be recited. Ther stoneth also rounde about the Toombe a multitude of the communes, which with their voices allowe asmuche as is trow, and criе ont vpon that, that is false, with vehemēt gainsaienges. Wherby it hath happened, that sondry kynges by the repugnynge of the people haue lien vntoombed: and haue lacked the honour of bewrialle, that the good are wante to haue. That feare, hath driuen the kynges of Acgypte, to liue iustly, and vprightly, lesse the people aftre their deaths, might shewe them suche dishonour, and beare them perpetuall hatred. This was the maner specially, of the ancient kynges there.

The whole realme of Egipte was diuided into Shieres: and to euery Shiere was appointed a Presidente, whiche had the gouernaunce of the whole Shiere. The reuenewes of the realme were diuided into .iii. partes: whereof the companie of the priestes had the first parte; whiche were in greate estimation among them, bothe for the administracion of Goddes Seruice, and also for the good learnyn, wherin thei brought vp many. And this porcion was giuen them, partely for the administracion of the Sacrifices, & partely for the vse and commoditie of their priuate life. For thei neither thincke it mete, that any parte of the honour of the Goddes should be omitted, or that thei, whiche are Ministres of the commune counsaill and profecte, should be destitute of necessary commodities of the life. For these menne are alwaie in matters of weighte, called vpon by the nobles, for their wisdom and counsaill: And to shewe (as they can by their conyng in the Planettes, and Starres, and by the maner of their Sacrifices) the happe of thinges to come. Thei also declare vnto the, the stories of men of olde tyme, regested in their holy Scripture, to the ende that accordyn to the kynges maie learne what shall profighte, or disprofighte. For the maner is not among them, as it is among the Grecians, that one manne, or one woman, shoulde attende vpon the sacrifices and Ceremonies alone: but thei are many at ones aboute the honour of the Goddes.

Goddess, and teache the same ordre to their children. This sorte of menne is privileged, and exempt from all maner of charges, and hath next vnto the kyng, the second place of dignitie and honour.

The second porcion cometh to the kyng to maintein his owne state, and the charges of the warres: and to shewe liberallitie to men of prowesse according to their worthinesse. So that the Communes are neither burdoned with taxes nor tributes.

The thirde parte do the pensionaries of the warres receiue, and suche other as vpo occasions are mustered to the warres: that vpon the regard of the stipende, thei maie haue the better good wille and courage, to hazarde their bodies in battaile. Their communalitie is deuided into three sortes of people. Husbandle men, Brieders of cattle, and men of occupaciõ, The Husbandlemen buyeng for a litle money a piece of grounde of the Priestes, the king, or the warrior: at daies of their life, euen from their childhode, continually applie that care. Whereby it cometh to passe, that bothe for the skoolyng that thei haue therin at their fathers handes, and the continuall practisyng fro their youthe, that thei passe all other in Husbandrie.

The Brieders, astre like maner, learning the trade of their fathers, occupie their whole life therabout. We see also that all maner of Sciences haue bene muche bettred, yea, brought to the toppe of perfection, among the Egyptians. For the craftes men there, not medlyng with any commune matters that mighte hindre them, employe them selues onely to suche sciences as the lawe doeth permit them, or their father hath taught thẽ. So that thei neither disdaine to be taughte, nor the hatred of eche other, ne any thing elles withdraweth them fro their craftes.

Their Iudgements and Sentences of lawe, are not giuen there at aduẽture, but vpon reason: for thei surely thought that all thinges well done, muste needes be profitable to mannes life. To punishe the offendours, and to helpe the oppressed, thoughte thei the best waie to auoide mischiefs. But to buye of the punishmente for money or fauour, that thoughte thei to be the very confuson of the commune welfare. Wherefore thei chase out of the chief cities (as Heliopole, Memphis, and Thebes) the worstest men, to be as Lordes chief iustice, or Presidents of Iudgemẽtes, so that their iustice benche did sieme to giue place, neither to the Arcopogites of the Athenienses, ne yet to the Senate of the Lacedemonians that many a daie after them ware instituted. Astre what tyme these chief Iustices ware assembled (thirtie in nõbre) thei chase out one that was Chauncellour of the whole: and when he failed, the citie appointed another in his place. All these had their liuynges of the kyng: but the Chauncellour more honorably then the rest. He bare alwaie about his necke a tablette, hangyng on a chaine of golde, and sette full of sundrie precions stones, whiche thei called Veritie and Truthe. The courte beyng set and begunne, and the tablet of Truthe by the Chauncellour laied furthe, & theight bookes of their lawes (for so many had thei) brought furth into the middes among them: it was the maner for the plainife to putte into writyng the whole circumstance of his case, and the maner of the wrong doone vnto him, or how muche he esteemed himself to be endamaged thereby. And a time was giuen to the defendant to write answere again to euery point, and either to deny that he did it, or elles to alledge that he rightfully did it, or elles to abate the estimate of the damage or wrõg. Then had thei another daie appointed, to saie finally for the selues. At the whiche daie whẽ the parties on bothe sides ware herd, and the iudges had conferred their opinions, the Chauncellour of the Iudges gaue sentence by pointyng with the tablet of Veritie, toward the parte yf seemed to be true. This was yf maner of their iudgemẽtes.

And forasmuche as we are fallen into mencion of their iudgements, it shall not be vnsyttyng with myne enterprise, to write also the aunciente Lawes of the Egyptians, that it maie be knowne how muche they passe, bothe in ordre of thynges, and profite.

Fyrst to be periaured was headyng: for they thought it a double offence. One in regarde of cõscience not kept toward God, and an other in gyuyng occasion to destroy credite among men, whiche is the chiefest bonde of their fellowship. If any wayfaryng man shuld espy a man sette vpon with thieues, or otherwise to be wronged, and dyd not to his power succour & ayde hym, he was gyltie of death. If he ware not able to succour and to reskeue

hym, then was he bounde to vtter the thienes, and to prosecute the matter to enditement. And he that so dyd not, was punished with a certayne nombre of stripes, and was kept three days without meate. He that should accuse any mā wrongfully, if he fortun'd afterward to be brought into iudgement, he suffered the punishment ordeyned for false accusers. All the Egyptians were compelled to brynge every man their names to the chiefe Iustices, and the facultie or science wherby they liued. In the which behalfe if any man lyed, or lyued with valaullfull meanes, he felle into penaltie of death. If any man willingly had slaine any man free or bond, the lawes condemned hym to die, not regardynge the state of the man, but the malicious purpose of the diede. Wherby they made men afrayd to doe mischief, and death beyng executed for the death of a bondman, the free myght goe in more sauntie. For the fathers that slewe their chyldren, there was no punishment of death appointed, but an injunction that they shoulde stande three daies and thre nyghtes together at the grave of the deade, accompanied with a common warde of the people to see the thying done. Neyther dyd it seeme them iuste, that he that gaue life to the childe, should lose his life for the childes death, but rather be put to continual sorowe, and to be pnyed with the repentance of the diede, that other myght ther by be withdrawn from the like wyckednes. But for the chylde that kylled either father or mother, they deuised this kynd of synguler torment. They thruste hym through with riedes sharpened for the noses, in every ioynt all ouer his body, and caused hym quicke to be thrown vpon a heape of Thornes, and so to be burned. Iudgyng that there could not be a greater wyckednes among men, then to take awaie the life, from one that had giuen life vnto hym. If any woman with child were condemned to dye, thei abode the tyme of her deliuerance notwithstanding: for that thei iudged it farre from all equitie, that the giltes should dye together with the gilte. Or that it should be punished, where but one had offended. Who so had in bataille or warre, withdrawn hymself from his bande, forsaken his place in the arraie, or not obeyed his capitaine: was not condemned to dye, but suffred for his punishment a notable reproche among the whole armie. As esteemed but a villaine, vntill with his forwardnes and wel doying, he could weare into estimation again, & at length be restored to his former estate. And that lawe so grewe into mennes stomacques that thei thought suche kind of reproche, of all punishments the worste, & more greuous then death. Who so had disclosed any secreete to the ennemie, the Lawe commaunded his tongue to be cutte out of his heade. And who so clipped the coigne or countrefacted it, or changed the stipe or diminished the weight: or in lettres and writinges, shoulde adde any thying, by entrellinyng, or otherwise: or should guelde out any thying, or bryng a forged euidence, Obligacion or Bille, bothe his handes were cutte of. That suche parte of the bodie as had offended, mighte for euer beare the punishment therof: and the residue taking warnyng by his ensample, might shonne the like.

There were also sharpe punishments constitute, in offences concernyng women. For he that had deflowred a free woman, had his membres cutte of, because in one offence, he had comitted thre no small wyckednesses. That is to saie, wrong, made the woman an whore, and brought in a doubt the lawfulness of her issue. But thei that were taken in adulterie, bothe partes byeng agreed, the mā was whipped with a thousande stripes by tale: and the woman had her nose cut of, wherwith beside y shame she had, the whole beautie of her face was disgraced, and disfigured.

The Lawes that apperteyned to the trade and occupieng of men, one with another: were made (as thei saie) by one Bocchorides. It is commaunded in them, that if money haue bene lent any manne without writing, vppon credite of his woorde: if the borrowe deny it, he should be put to his othe, to the which the creditour muste stande. For thei so muche esteemed an othe, that thei thoughte no man so wicked, as wilfully to abuse it. And again, because he that was noted to sweare very oftē, lost vitterly his credite, and name: many menne affirme, that for the regard of their honesties, it happened very seldome, that any man came to his othe. Their Lawe maker also, iudgyng that vertue was the engēder of credite, thoughte it good by good ordres to accustome men to good luyng and honestie,

upon feare to sieme vnworthie of all reputaciō. He thought it also to be against conscience, that he that without an othe had borrowed, should not nowe for his own, be beleued with an othe. The forsect for non paiement of the lone, mought not bee aboute the double of the somme that was borrowed. And paiement was made onely of the goodes of the borrowr, the body was not arrestable. For the Lawemaker thought it conueniente, that onely the gooddes should bee subdite to the debite, and the bodies (whose seruice was required bothe in peace and in warre) subiecte to the citie. It was not thoughte to bee iustice, that the manne of warre, whiche hasardeth his bodie for the sautie of his countrie, should, for an enterest of lone, bee throwen into prison. The whiche lawe, Solon siemeth to haue translated to the Athenienses, vndre the name of the lawe Sisacra, decreyng that the body of no citeizin, should for any maner of enterest be emprisoned.

Thegiptians also for thieues, had this lawe alone, and no people els. The lawe commanded that as many as would steale, should entre their names with the chief Priest: and what so euer was stollen, incontinente to cry the same vnto hym. Likewise, he that was robbed was bounde to entre with the said Chief Priest, the daie, time and houre, when he was robbed. By this meanes the theffe being easily founde out, he that was robbed, loste the fourth parte and receiued the residue, the whiche fourth was giuen to the thiefe. For the Lawemaker (seing it was impossible vterly to be withoute thieues) thought it moche better by this meanes that men bare the losse of a peece then to be spoiled of the whole.

The ordre of Marriage among the Egipitians is not vniforme, for the priest might marry but one openly wife. All other haue as many as they will, according to their substance. There is no child among them, though it be borne of a bought woman slau, that is compted illegitimate. For they onely compte the father to be the author of his kynde, and the mother onely but to geue place and nourishment to the child. When their childre be borne they bring them vp with so lytle coate, as a man would skantly believe. They feede them with the rootes of mererushes, and other rootes, rosted in the embries, and with marshie Canbous, and colewories which partly they seate, and partly they roste, and parte geue them rawe. They go for the moste parte withoute hoson or shoes, all naked, the country is so temperate. All the coate that the Parientes bestowe on their children til they be of age to shift for themselves, surmounteth not the somme of a noble.

The priestes bring vp the childre, both in the doctrine of their holye scriptures, and also in the other kindes of learning necessary for the common life, and chiefly in Geometry and Arithmetique. As for the rough exercises of wrasteling, running, daunsing, playeng at weapons, throwyng y barre or suche like, thei train not their youth in, supposing that the daily exercise of suche, should be so rough, and dangerous for them, and that they should be an empiering of strength. Musique they doe not onely compte vnprofitable, but also hurtful: as making mens courages altogether womanlyke. When they are sicke, they heale themselves, eyther with fasting or vomiting: & that eyther euery eche other daye, or euery third daye, or fourth. For they are of opinion that all diseases growe of superfluite of meate, and that kinde of cure therefore to be beste, that riddeth the grounde of the griefe. Men goyng to the warres, or traueillyng the countrie, are heald of free cost. For the Physicians & Chirurgiens, haue a stipende allowed them of ordenary at the charge of the commones.

In curyng, they are bounde to folowe the preceptes of the auncient and allowed writers, registered in their holy scripture. Yf a man folowing the prescripce of the scriptures can not so heale y sicke, he is not blamed for that: But yf he fortune to heale him by any other meanes then is in the scripture appointed, he dieth for it. For the lawe giuer thoughte that yf was harde to finde a better waye of curyng, then that y which of suche antiquitie was by longe practise founde oute and allowed, and deliuered vnto them by suche a continuance. The Egipitians do worship aboute measure certein beastes, not onely whilset they be onliue, but also when they are dead. As the Cattie, the lencunon the dogge, the hauke, the woulfe, the Cocodrille, and many other like. They are not onely not ashamed to professe the worship of these openly, but setting them selues out in the honouring of them to

the vltimostē: they compute it asmuch praise and glory to them selues, as yf they bestowed the like on the Goddess. And they go about on procesiō with the propre images of them, from citie, to citie, and from place, to place; holding them vp and shewing them a farre of vnto other, which fall on their knees, and euery one worship them. When any one of them dieth, they cote it with Sarcenet, and howling, and crieng, and beating of their breastes they all so bestrawe the carkecase with asste. And after they haue embalmed it with the licour of the Cedre and other fragraunt oymentes, and oyles, to preserue it the longer: they bewrye it in holy sepulture. If a man haue slayne any of these beastes willingly: he is condemned to death. But yf he haue slaine a catte or a snyte, willingly or vnwillingly: the people ronneth vpon him vpon heapes, and withoute all ordre of Iustice or lawe, in moste miserable wise torment him to death, Vpon feare of the which daungier who soeuer espieth one of those hyeng dead: standing a farre, he howleth and crieth professing that he is not gilltie of  $\text{ḡ}$  death. These beastes with great attendaunce and charge are kept vp aboute the cloistres of the Temple, by men of no meane reputation: whiche siede them with floure and otemeale, and diuers deinties, topped and stieped in milke. And they set euery daie before them goose, bothe sodde and roasted. And before those that delight at in raw meate they sette birdes and rawe fowles. Finally as I said they keepe them all with great diligence and coste. They lament their death asmoche as the death of their owne childreñ, & bury them more sumptuously then their substance doth stretch. In so moche that Ptolomeus Lagus reigning in Egypt, when there chanced a cowe to die in Memphis, for very age: he that had taken charge of the keepyng of her, bestowed vpon the buriall of her (beside a greatesome of mōny that was giuen him for the keepyng) fiftie talentes of siluer, that he borrowed of Ptolome. Peraduerture these thynges will seme vnto some men to wondrous: but he wil wondre asmoche yf he cōsidre what communely is done emonge euery of the Egypicians in the funeralls of their deade.

When any man is departed his lyfe, all his niere friendes and kindesfolke, throwing dirte vpo their heades; go weeping and wailing rounde aboute the citie vntil the Corps be buried. And in the meane season they neyther bathe, ne drinke wine, or eate any meate, but that that is most base & vile, ne weare any apparell that is gorgeous or faire. They haue thre sortes of Sepulchres, Sumptuous, meane, and basse. In the firste sorte they bestowe a talent of siluer. Aboute the seconde, twenty Markes, and aboute the thirde litle or nothing. There be certaine Pheretters, whose facultie it is to sette forth the buriales, whiche learne it of their fithers and teache it their childre. These when a funeral happeneth, make vnto him that is doer for the deade, an estimate of the exequies in writing, whiche the doer may at his pleasure enlarge or make lesse. When thei are ones fallen at appoynte; the bodye is deliuered to the Pheretter to be entered accordyng to the rate that they agreed vpon. Then the bodie beyng laied soorth, commeth the Pheretters chiefe cutter, and he appointeth his vndercutter a place on the side hauffe of the paunche, wher to make incision, and how large. Then he with a sharpe stone (whiche of the country fro whence it cometh, they call Ethiopicus) openeth the left side as farre as the lawe permitteth. And streight with all speede ronneth his waye fro the company standing by, which curse him and reuile him and throwe many stones atre him. For they thincke there yet remaineth a certeine hatred due vnto him that woddeth the body of their frinde. Those that are the seasons and embalmers of the body (whome they calle poulderers) they haue in greate honour and estimation, for that they haue familiarite with the priestes, and entre the temples together with them. The bodye nowe commen to their handes, one emong all (the reste standing by) vnlaeth the entrailles, and draweth them out at the foresaid incision, all washing the kidneis, and the harte. These entrailles are taken by another at his hande, and washed in wine of the country Phenicea, wherein are enfused many soote odours and drugges. Then enointe they the whole bodye ouer, firste with Cedre, and then with other oymentes. xxx. daies & aboue. Then do thei ceare it ouer with Mirthe & Cinamome and sicke other things as wil not onely preserue it to cōinuaunce, but also make it soote smelling. The Corps thus being trimmed, is deliuered to  $\text{ḡ}$  kindesfolke of  $\text{ḡ}$  deade; euery parte



of it kepte so whole (not an heare of his browes or eye liddes being hurie) y<sup>e</sup> it rather lieth like one being in shepe then like a dead corpse. Before y<sup>e</sup> body be enterred, y<sup>e</sup> kindestfolke of the deade signifie to the iudges, and the friendes of this passed, y<sup>e</sup> day of y<sup>e</sup> buriall. Whiche (according to the maner then vsed) they ferme the deades passage ouer the merc. The maner wherof is this.

The iudges, aboue. xl. in number, sittinge on the farther side of the mere, on a cōpassed benche wheeling haulfe rōude and y<sup>e</sup> people standing about them: The body is put into a litle boate made for the mones, and drawn ouer to the iudges by a chorde. The body then standing before the iudges in the sight of the people, before it be cofred, if ther be any manne that haue ought to saye against the dead, he is permitted by the lawe. Yf any be proued to haue liurd cuyll; the iudges geue sentence that the bodye shall not be buried. And who so is founde vniustelye to haue accused, suffreth greate pnyshemente therfore. When no manne wyll accuse, or he that accused is knowen to haue slanderously done it, the kinsfolke endyng their mourning: tourne them selues now to the prayse of y<sup>e</sup> dead, nothinge afire the maner of the Grecians, for that the Egiptians thinke themselves all to be gentlemen alike. But beginnyng at his childehode, in the whiche they reherse his bringyng vp, nourtering and scholyng, they passe to his mannes age, their commending his godlines, his iustice, his temperance, & the residue of his vertues. And calling vpon the vndre earthe, goddies, they beseeche them to place him amonge the godlye and good. To the which wordes all the whole multitude crieth Amen: showtyng out, and magnifyng the glorye of the dead, as though they should be with the vnder earth goddes, among y<sup>e</sup> blessed for euer. This done euery man burieth his dead, some in Sepulchres made for the purpose, and other that haue no suche preparation, in their strongest wall at home in their house, setting vp y<sup>e</sup> cofre ther tabernacle wyse. But they that for some offence, or debte of interest, or suche like, are denied their bewriall, are sette vp at home without any cofre, vntill their successours growyng to abilitie canne discharge their debtes and offices, and honourably bewrie them.

There is a maner among them, sometyme to borawe money vpon their parces corpses, deliuryng the bodies to the creditours in pledge. And who so redemeth them not, runneth into viter infamie, and is at his death, denied his bewriall. A manne (not altogether causeles) mighte merueille, that they could not be contente to constitute lawes for the framing of the maners of those that are onliue, but also put ordre for the exequies, and Hearses of the dead. But the cause why they bent them selues so muche hereto, was for that they thought ther was no better waie possible, to driue men to honestie of life. The Grekes, which haue set furthe so many thynges in fained tales, and fables of Poeses (farre aboue credite) concerning the rewarde of the good, and punishment of the euill: could not with all their deuices, drawe men to vertue, and withdrawe them from vices. But rather cōtrariwise, haue with them that be leudely disposed: broughte all together in contempte and derision. But among the Egiptians, the pnyshemente due vnto the wicked and leude, and the praise of the godlye and good, not heard by tales of a tubbe, but sene daiely at the eye: putteth both partes in remembrance what behoueth in this life, & what fame and opinion they shall leaue of them selues, to their posteritie. And heruypon it riseth, that euery man gladly among the, ensueth good ordre of life. And to make an ende of Thegipitijs, me semeth those Lawes are of very righte to be compted the beste, whiche regarde not so muche to make the people riche, as to aduauice them to honestie and wisdom, where riches of necessitie must folowe.

#### ¶ The. vj. Chapitre.

##### ¶ Of the Poeni, and thother peoples of Aphrique.

OF the Penois there are many and sondrie naciōs. Adrimachidie lieng toward Egipte, are like of maners to Thegipitijs, but their apparell is like to the other Penois. Their wiuces haue vpon eche legge, a koupe of Latton. They delight in long heare; and looke what lyce

it fortuneth any of them to take aboute them: thei bite them, and throwe them awaie, the which propertie, thei onely of all the Poeni haue. As also to present their maidens that are vpon marriage, to the kyng, which choosyng among them the maiden that liketh hym beste, sticketh in her lappe, that asire can neuer bee founde. The Nasamonies (a greate and a terrible nacion, spoilers of suche Shippes as fortune to bee thrown vpon the Sandes in the streights) towards Sommer, leauyng their cattle vpon the Sea coaste, goe doune into the plaine countrie to gather Dates, which are there very faire, and in greate plenty. Thei gather the boughes with the fruite, not yet perfectly ripe, and laie them a Sonnyng to ripen. Afterward thei steepe them in Milke, and make souppes and potages of them. It is the maner among them, for euery man to haue many wyues: and the fellowship of their wyues, that other vse in secrete: thei vse in open sighte, in maner afire the facion that the Massagetes vse. It is also the maner of the Nasamonies, when any mā marieth his first wife, to sende her about to euery one of the ghestes, to offer hym her body. And as many as receiue her into armes, and shewe her the curtesie she comes for, must giue her some gifte, which she hath borne with her, home to her house. Their maner of takyng an othe, & foreshewyng of thinges to come, is thus.

Thei sweare by the meane that ware (by reporte) the best and moste iustemen among the, layyng their hands on their Graues, or Tumbers. But for the fore knowledge of thynges, thei come to the Graues of their kyndred, and there when thei haue praised their stinte, laye them doune vpon them to slepe: and loke what thei dreame, that doe thei followe. Where in cofirmyng of our promise, we vse to strike hādes (as we calle it) thei vse to drinke one to another: or elles if thei lacke liquour, to take duste from the earth, and one to lick part of that to another. The Garamantes shonne the fellowship and the sighte of all other peoples: and neither vse any kinde of weapon, or armour, ne yet dare defende them selues against other that vse them. They dwell somewhat aboute the Nasamonies, more vp londe. Aboute the sea coaste towarde the weste, ther bordereth vpon them the Maces: which shawe their heades in the crowne, and clyppe them rounde by the sides. The Gindanes (nexte neighbours to the Maces) when they giue battayle to the ostruths, their bridling vnder the grounde, are armed with rawe felles of beastes. Their women ware pretie weales of leathir, euery one a greate manye which (as it is sayde) they begge of suche meene as haue lien with them. So that the moe she hath, the more she is esteemed, as a deinty derling beloued of many. The Machites dwelling aboute the mershe of Tritonides, vse to shawe their foreparte of their heade, and the Anses their hindre parte. The maydens of the Anses, at the yerely feastes of Minerva, in the honour of the goddesse their country womā: deuiding them selues into two companies, vse to giue battaile, one parte to another with stauces, and with stones: sayyng that thei obserue the maner of their countrie in the honour of her that we calle Minerva. And the maiden that departeth the battayle without wounde, thei holde her for no maide. But before ther battayle be fought, they determine that what maydē so euer beareth her selfe mooste vltimane in the fildes, all the other maydens with commune consente shall garnishe her, and arme her, both with the armour of Grecia, and the helmet of Corinth. And shal sette her in a chariot, & carye her rounde about the mershe. The same meane vsen their women as indifferently commune, as kyen to the bulle. The children remaine with the women vntil they be of some strengthe. Ones in a quartre the men do assemble wholly together, & then looke with whome the childē fastistieth mooste to abide, him do they compute for his father.

There is a people named Atlantes, of the mounto Athlas, by the which they dwell. These giue no names one to another as other peoples do, but echeman is namelesse. When the some passeth ouer their heades, they curse him, and reayle him with all wordes of mischief: for that he is so broiling hote, that he destroyeth bothe them and ther countrie.

They eate of no kinde of beaste, neither dreame in their shepe. The Aphres (which are all breeders of cattelle) liue with fleshe and milke, and yet abstaine they fro cowes milke, and all cowe fleshe, according to the maner of the Egyptians, and therefore kepe they none vp. The women of Cyrene thincke it not lawfull to strike a cowe, for Isis sake that is

honoured

honoured in Egypt, to whome also they appoinete fasting, and feastfull daies, and obserue them solemnly. But the womē of Barcea abstaine bothe frō ewe fleshe and sowe flesh. When their children are iiii. yeare olde they vse to cauterise them on the coron vaine (and some on the temples also) with a medecine for that purpose, made of woulle as it is plucked fro the sheepe: because thei should not at any time be troubled with rheumes or poses, and by that meanes they say they liue in very good health. Thei sacrifice after this maner. When in the name of their first frutes they haue cutte of the eare of the beaste, they throwe it ouer the house. That done, they wring the necke on the one side. Of all the goddesses they offre sacrifice to no more but Sonne & Mone. All the Aphres burye their dead as the Grecians doe, sauing the Nasamones, which bury them as though they ware sitting: wayting well when any man lieth in drawing on, to set him on his taile, leaste he should giue vp the ghoste lying vpright. Their houses are made of wickers, and withes, wrought aboute trees, much like vnto those that we calle frūkenēce trees, and in suche sorte that they may tourne them rounde euery waye. The Maries, shane the left side of their heade, and lette the heare growe on the right. They die their bodie in redde, and vaunte that they come of the Troians. The women of the Zabiques (which are the next-neighbors to the Maries) drine the cates in the warres, in the which the men fight. There are a people called Zigantes, wher beside the great plentye of honey that they gather from the Bies, they haue also certaine men that are makers of hoay. They all die them selues with red, and eate apes fleshe, wherof thei that dwel in the mounteines haue great plentye. These al being of the part called Libye, liue for the moste parte a wilde lyfe, abroad in the fieldes like beastes, making no household prouision of meate, ne wearing any maner of apparell but gotes felles. The gentlemē, and men of honour among the, haue neither cities nor townes, but Turrettes built vpon the waters side, in the which they laye vp the ouerplus of that that they occupy. They sweare their people euery yere to obeye their Prince, and that they that obey in diede, shoulde loue together as felows and companions: but that the disobediente shoulde be pursued like felons and traitours. Their armour and weapon, are bothe according to the nature of the country and contrin: for wher thei of themselves are very quicke, and delure of bodye, and the country champaine, and playne, they neither vse swerde, dagger, ne harnais, but onely cary thre fauelines in their hande, and a nombre of piked and chisen stones, in a case of stiffe leather hūging aboute them. With these they vse bothe to fight and to skirmish. In his coming towards the ennemy, he throweth his stone, fetching his ronne, and maketh lightlye a narrow mysse, though it be a good waye of: suche continuall practise they haue of it. They kieve neither lawe ne faith.

The Troglodites (whiche are also named of the Grecians pastours, for their siedoing and breeding of cattelle) a people of Ethiope, do lyue in companies, & haue their heade ouer them, whome they call Tirante. But not meaninge in him so much tirry in orde, as some time some of our gouernours vnder a fayer name do execute. None of them hathe any seuerall wife, and therefore no seuerall children, but bothe those in commune, the tirante expected: Who hathe but one wyfe onely. To the which yf any manne do but approche or drawe nigh: he is condemned in a certaine nombre of cattaille to be paid to the Tirante. From y beginning of iuly vntil about midde August (at y which time thei haue great plenty of raine) thei nourishe them selues with milke, and bloude, sodden a litle together. The pasture vplod being, dried away with the heate of the Sonne: They sick downe to the marishe, & lowe groundes, for the whiche onely they be often at debate. When their cattel waxeth olde or sicke, they kyll them, and eate them, & altogether liue vpon such. They do not giue the childe the name of the father, but name him after a bull, a rambe or an ewe. And those call thei father (the beastes I meane of the masle kinde) and (thoether of the femel kynde, they call mother, because ther daily fode is giuen by them. The people called Idiote, vse for their drinke the iuyce of a whinne named Paliurus. But the men of worship and gentlemen vse the iuce of a certaine flour they haue amonge them, whiche maketh drinke moche like the worste of y Renishe muste. And because thei cary great

droues

droues of cattelle with them, they change their soile often. Their bodies are all naked, sauing their priuities, which they hide with felles of beares. All the Troglodites are circūcised after the maner of the Egyptians, sauing only the Claudians: which they so terme of claudication or limping. They onely, dwelling from their childehode within the country of the Hesternes, are not touched with rasour or knife. The Troglodites that are called Magaueres, carye for their armour and weapon, a rounde buckler of a rawe oxse hide, and a clubbe shodde with yron. Other haue bowes, & lauelines. As for graues or places of buriall, they passe not. For they binde the heade, and the fete of the dead together with wittles of Paliurus, & then setting it vp vpon some hilly place, haue a good sporte to all to bethwacke it with stones, vntle they lie heaped ouer the corps. The laye they a gootes horne on the toppe and departe, biddinge sorrowe go plaie him. They warre one with another, not as the Griekes vpon rancour, and Ambicion, but onely for foode sake. In their skirmishes, firste they go to it with stones, as afore ye haue hearde, vntle it fortune some nombre to be hurte. Then occupying the bowe (wherin they are very sure handed) thei kille one another vpon hepes. Those battayles are attoned by the women of mooste auncient age. For when they be ones comen into the middle emouge them (as they maye do withoute harme, for that is comted abhominacion in any wise to hurte one of them) the battaille sodenly ceaseth. They that are nowe so fabled with age, that they can no longer folowe the heard: winding the tayle of an oxse aboute their throte choke vp & die. But he that differeth to rydde him-selfe in this sorte: It is lawfull for another (afte a warninge) to doe it. And it is there comted a friendly benefaictie. Men also diseased of leueses, or anye other incurable malady, they doe in lyke maner dispatche: iudginge it of all griefes the worst, for that manne to liue, that canne noue nothinge doe, why he shoulde desyre to lyue. Herodote writeth, that the Troglodites myne them selues caues in the grounde, wherin to dwell. Men not troubled with anye desire of riches, but rather giuing them selues to willfull pouertie. They glory in nothing but in one little stone, wherin appere three skore sondry colours: which we therefore calle Exacostalius. They eate sondry kindes of venemous vermyne. And speake any distincte worde they can not, but sieme rather to busse or thurre betwene the teth, then to speake.

There is another people dwelling in that Ethiopie that lyeth aboute Egipte, called Ryzophagi, which bestowe muche time in digging vp of the rootes of Riedes growing nere aboute them, and in washing and clensing of the same, which afterward they bruse betwixt stones till they become clamie, & so make swiete cakes of the, muche fashioned like a brick a hande broad. Those hake thei by the Sonne, and so eate them. And this kinde of meate onely, serueth them all their life tyme plentifully and enough, and neuer waxeth falsome vnto them. Thei neuer haue warre one with another, but with Lions, which comyng out of the deserte there, partly for shadowe, and partly for to praze vpon smaller beastes, doe oftymes wourie diuers of the Aethiopes, comyng out of the Fennes. In so muche that that nation had long sences bene vtirely destroyed by the Lions, excepte nature of purpose, had shewed the her aide. For toward the dogge daies, there come into that coaste, infinite swarmes of Gnattes, without any drifte of winde to enforce them. The men then fleeing to the fennes, are not harmed by the. But thei driue the Lions with their stingyng and terrible buszyng, cleane out of that quartre. Next vpon these, bordre the Hophagi and Spermatophagi, the one huyng by suche fruite as falleth from the trees, in Sommer, and the residew of the yere by suche herbes as thei picke vp in the shadowed groundes. The other, the Hophagi, sickynge to the plaines with their wines and their children, climbe trees, and gather, eate, and cary home: the tendre croppes and buddes of the boughes. And thei haue by continuall practise, suche a nimblenes in climbing, that (a wonderfull thyng to be spoken) thei wille leape from bough to bough, and tree to tree like Cattes or Squirrelles, and by reason of their slendrenes and lightenes, wille mounte vp on braunches and twigges, without daunger or hurte. For though thei thei slippe, yet hange theifaste by the handes: and if thei bothe fail e them, yet fallc thei so light, that thei be harmelesse.

These folkes go naked, and hold their wines and childrē in commune. Among them selues they fight for their places without weapon: but against foreiners with staves. And wheare they overcome, there challenge thei Lordshippe. Thei communiely dye for hongre, when their sight faileth them: whiche was their onely instrumente to finde their fooode. The residue of the countrie there aboute, do those Aethiopiens holdt, which are named Cyneey, not very many in nombre, but muche differing in life from the rest. For their Countrie beyng wooddie, and wilde, full of thiequettes, and skante of watre, they are forced by night, for feare of wilde beastes, to slepe in trees: and toward the mornnyng, all weaponed together, to drawe doune to the waters, wher thei shroude them selues into court, and so abide close till the heate of the daie. At the whiche tyme the Bugles, Pardales, and other greate beastes, what for the heate, and what for thriste, flocke together to the watres. Assone as thei haue druncke, and haue well laden their beallies with watre, the Ethiopas startynge out vpo them with stakes, sharpened and hardened in the morn, and with stones, and with arrowes, and suche like weapon, at this aduantage, slea them vpon heapes, and deuide the carckeses by compaignies to be eaten. And sometime it happeneth that thei them selues are slaine by some beast of force, howbeit very seildome. For thei euer by their pollicies and traines, doe more damage to the beastes, then the beastes can doe vnto them. If at any time thei lacke the bodies of the beastes, then take thei the rawe hides of suche as thei latest before had slaine, and clensyng them cleane fro the beare, thei sokynglie laie them to a soft fire, and when thei be thoroughly hette, deuide them among the compaignie, whiche very griedely fille them selues of them.

Thei exercise their children whilst thei be boies, to throw the darte at a sette marke, and he that hitteth not the marke receiveth no meate. By the whiche maner of trainyng, hōgre so worketh in the boies, that thei become excellent darters.

The Acridophagie (a people borderyng vpon the deaserte) are somewhat lower of stature then the residewe, leane, & exceeding blacke. In the Spring time, the Weste, and South-west winde, bringeth vnto them out of the Deaserte, an houghe nombre of Locustes, whiche are of verie greate bodie, and of wynges very filthily coloured. The Ethiopians well accustomed with their maner of flighte & trade, gather together into a lōg slade betwixte two hilles, a great deale of rubbeshe and mullocke, from places nigh hande, apte for fyring, and all the grasse and wieses there aboute. And laeing it ready in heapes aforehande, a long the slade, whē thei see the Locustes come with the winde like cloudes in the aire, thei set al on fire, and so swelte them in the passing ouer, that thei bec skante full out of the slade, but thei fall to the grounde in suche plentie, that thei be to all the Acridophagi, a sufficient victuallyng. For thei pouder them with salte (wherof the countrie hath plētie) and so continually from yere to yere, liue by none other fooode. For thei neither haue any kinde of cattelle, ne fishe can haue, beyng so farre fro the sea. And this maner of meate siemeth to them, verie pleasaunte and fine.

Of bodie thei are very lighte, swift of foote, and shorte liued, as not passyng xl. yeres, he that liueth longest. Their ende is not more incredible, then it is miserable. For whē thei drawe into age, their briedeth a kinde of winghed lice in their bodies, of diuers colours, and very horrible, and filthie to beholde: whiche firste eate out their bealies, and thē their breast, and so the whole body in a litle space. He that hath this disease, first as thoughte he had on hym some tickelyng ytehe, all to beskratche his bodie with suche pleasure, as is also mingled with some smart. And within a litle while aftr, when the lyce beginne to craule, and the bodie beginneth to matre, enraged with the bitrennes and grief of the disease, he teareth and manglith his whole bodie with his nailles, putting furth in the meane while many a greuous grone. Then gusheth there out of hym, suche abundance of lice, that a manne would thinke they had bene bared in his body: & that the bare-noon broken, the swarme plomped out. And by this meanes, whether through the infectious aire, or the corruption of their bedding, thei make a miserable ende.

Vpon the Southe border of Affrike, dwell there menne called of the Grekes Cynnamic, & of their neighbours Sauiliages: Bearded, and that with abundance of heare. Thei keepe for the

saufegarde of their liues, greate compaignies of wilde Mastiues: for that from midde Iune, till midde Winter, there entreth into their countrie, an innumerable sorte of Kine of Ind: Whether thei sic thether to saue them selues from other beastes, or come to sicke pasture, or by some instincte of nature vnknewen to manne, it is vncertaine. Against these, when the menne of their owne force, are not able to resist: thei defende themselves by the helpe of their dogges, and take many of them. Whereof thei cate parte whilst thei are freshe, and parte reserve thei in pouldre, for their affre niede. Thei cate also many other kindes of beastes, whiche thei hunt with their dogges.

The laste of all the Affriens Southward, are the Ichthiophagi. A people bordering vpon the Troglodites, in the Gouffe called Siam Arabicus: whiche vnder the shape of man, liue the life of beastes. Thei goe naked all their life time, and make coöpte of their wiues and their children in commune. Thei knowe none other kindes of pleasure, or displeasure, but like vnto beastes, suche as thei siele: neither haue thei any respecte to vertue, or vice, or any discernyng betwixte goode or badde. Thei haue like Cabanes not farre from the Sea, vpon the cliues sides: where nature hath made greate carres, deepe into the grounde, and hollowe Guttur, and Cricques into the maigne lande, bowing and compassing in and out, to & fro, many sondric waies. Whose entringes then habitantes vse to stoppe vp with greate heapes of calion and stones, whereby the crieques serue them now in the steade of nettes. For when the sea floweth (which happeneth there twice in the daye, aboute the houres of thre, and of nyne) the water swelleth so highe, that it ouerfloweth into the maygne shore, and filleth those crieques with the sea. And the fishe following the tide, and dispersing them selues abroad in y maigne londe to seeke their foodde: at the ebbe when the water withdraweth, retiring together with it alway to the deeper places, and at laste remaining in these gutters & crieques, they are stopped in with the stone heapes, and at the lowe water lye drie. Then come the inhabitants with wyfe and children, take them, and laye them oute vpon the rocques against the midday sonne, wher, with y broiling heate of the same, they be within a while scorched and parched. Then do they remoue them, and with a litte beating separate the fysshe fro the bones. Then put they the fishe into the hollowes of the rocques, and beate it to pomois, minglinge therewith the side of the whyne Palurus. And so facion it into lumpes muche like a bricke, but somewhat longer. And when they haue taken them againe a litte by the sonne, they sitte them downe together, and cate by the bealy.

Of this haue thei alway in store, accordinge to the plenty that Neptune gyueth them. But when by the reasõ of tempest the sea ouerfloweth these places aboue his naturall course, and tarieth longer then his wonte, so that they can not haue this benefisht of fishing, and their store is all spent: they gather a kynde of great shelle fysshe, whose shelles they grate open with stones, and cate the fishe rawe, in taste muche like to an oyster. If it fortune this ouerflowing by the reason of the winde, to continue longe, and their shelle fysshe to fayle them: then haue they recours to the fyssh bones (which they do of purpose reserue together in heapes) and when thei haue gnaeled of the softest and gristly partes with their tieth, of those that are newest and beste, they beate the harder with stones into pieces, and cate the. Thei cate as I haue said in the wilde field together abroad, reioicing with a semblante of merinesse, & a maner of singyng fall vtuned. That done they falle vpon their women, even as they come to haude withoute any choise: vtterly voide of care, by reason they are alwaye sure of meate in good plentye.

Thus foure daies euer continual, busied with this bealy bownsing chiere, the v. daie thei flocke together to go drincke, al on a droue, not vnlike to a heard of kiewe to the waters, shouting as they go with an Yrishe whobub. And when they haue dronke till their bealies stonde a strutte, so that they are skat able to retourne: eerye bodie layes him downe dronckardelike to reate his water bolne bealy, and that daye eateth nothing. The next daye agayne they fall to their fyshing: And so passe they their lyfe continually.

Thei seldome falle into any diseases, for that they are alway of so vniforme diete. Neuertheless they are shorter lyued then we are. Their nature not corrupted by any perswasion  
taken

taken of other, competeth the satisfieng of hūgre, the greatest pleasure in the world. As for other extraordinary pleasures, they seeke them not. This is the maner of lining proper vnto them that lye withiu the bosome of the sayde Arabique sea. But the maner of them that dwell without the bosome, is moche more mercuriellous. For thei neuer drinke nie neuer are moued with any passion of the mynde. These luyngs as it ware by fortune throwen ouite into the deserttes, farr from the partes miete to be enhabited, giue them selues altogether to fushing, which they eate haulle rawe. Not for to auoyde thirste (for they desire no moyste thynges) but rather of a nature sauuaige and wilde, contented with such victuall as commeth to hande. They cōpte it a principal blessednes to be withoute those things what so euer they be, that bringe sorowe or grieft to their hauers. Thei are reported to be of such patience, that though a manne strike them with a naked sword, thei wil not shoue him, or flye from him. Beate them, or do them wronge, and they onely will looke vpon you, neither shewing token of wrath, nor countenance of pitie. Thei haue no maner of speache among them: But onely shewe by signes of the hande, and nodding with the heade, what they lacke, and what they would haue. These people with a whole consent, are mayntayners of peace towards all men, straunger and other. The which maner although it be wondrefull, they haue kept time oute of mynde. Whether thoughte longe continuance of custome, or drinen by necessitie, or effect of nature: I cannot saye. They dwell not as the other lethiophagi doe, all in one maner of cabanes, but sondry in diuers. Some haue their dennes, and their cabanes in them opening to the North: to the ende they might by that meane be the better shadowed from the sonne, and haue the colder ayre. For those that are open toward the South, by the reason of the great heate of the sonne, caste forthe suche a breathe, fornaie like, that a manne can not come nere them. They that open towards the North, builde them preaty Cabanes of the ribbes of whales (whiche in those seas they plentifully find) compassing them aboute by the sides, accordyng to their naturall bendinge, and fasteninge them together at bothe endes with some maner of tyenge. Those do they couer with the woose and the wicdes of the sea tempered together. And in these they shroude them selues from the soane: nature by necessitie deuising a way how to helpe and defende her selfe.

Thus haue ye heard the lyfe of the lethiophagi, and now remaineth there for Aprique onely the Amazones to be spoken of, which meane saye in the olde tyme dwelte in Libye. A kinde of warlike women, of great force, and hardinesse, nothing lyke in lyfe vnto our women. The maner amonge them was to appointe to their maidens a certein space of yeres to be trayned, and exerysed in the feictes of warre. Those beyng expired, they were ioyned to metine for yssues sake. The women bare all the rule of the commune wealth. The women ware princes, lordes, and officers, capitaines, and chiefeines of the warres. The menne had nought to doe, but the drudgery at home, and as the women would appointe them. The children assonne as thei ware borne, ware deliuered to the men to nourshe vp with milke, and suche other thinges as their tendrenes required. If it ware a boye, they cyther brake the right arme assonne as it was borne, that it might neuer be fytt for the warres, or slue it, or sente it oute of the countrie. If a wenche, they streighte eared y pappes, that thei might not growe to hindre them in the warres. Therefore the Grecians called theim Amazones, as ye would saie, pappesse. The opinion is, that thei dwell in the flonde named Hespera, which lieth in the mapste, named (of a riuer that runneth into it) Tritonis, inuoyng vpon Ethiope, and the mounte Atlas, the greatest of all that flonde. This flonde is very large and grate, hauyng plentie of diuers sortes of fruites, whereby the enhabitauntes liue. Thei haue many flockes of shiepe, and goates, and other smalle cattelle, whose milke and fleshe they eate. They haue no maner of graine, ne knowe what to doe therewith.



# OF ASIE,

## THE SECONDE PARTI.

### ¶ The first Chapter.

#### ¶ Of Asia and the peoples moste famous therein.

ASIE, the seconde part of the thre wherin to we haue said that the whole erth is diuided: tooke name at some hold opinion, of the daughter of Oceanus, and Tethis, named Asia, the wife of Iaphetus, and the mother of Prometheus. Or as other affirme, of Asius, the sonne of Mancey the Lidian. And it stretcheth it self from the South, bowtyng by the Easte into the North: hauyng on the West parte the two floudes, Nilus and Tanais, and the whole Sea Euxinum, and parte of the middle earth sea. Vpon the other thre quarters, it is lysted in wth the Ocean, whiche where he cometh by Easte Asia, is called Eous (as ye would saie toward the dawnyng) by the South, Indicus (of the countrie named India) and afre the name of the stoure Scythiane, vpon the North Scythicus. The greate mounteine Taurus ronnyng East and West, and in a maner equally partying the lande in twaine: leaueth one parte on the North side, called by the Grekes the outer Asia: and another on the South, named the inner Asia. This mounteine in many places is foude thre hundred lxxv. miles broade: and of length equalle with the whole countrie. About a five hundred thre skore and thre miles. From the coast of the Rhodes, vnto the farthest part of Inde, and Scithia Eastwarde. And it is deuided into many sondrie partes, in sondrie wise named, whercof some are larger, some lesse. This Asia is of suche a size, as aucthoris holde opinion, that Affrike and Europe ioyned together: are scante able to matche it in greatnes. It is of a temperate heate and a fertile soile, and therefore full of all kindes of beaste, foule, and worme, & it hath in it many countries and Seignouries.

On the other side of the redde Sea, ouer against Egipte in Affrike: lieth the tripartite region, named Arabia, whose partes are, Petra: boundyng West and North vpon Siria: and right at fronte before hym Eastwarde, Deserta: and Arabia Felix by South. Certain writers also adioyne to Arabia: Panchia, and Sabea. It is iudged to haue the name of Arabus, the sonne of Apollo & Bahiloue.

The Arabiens beyng a greate people, and dwelling very wide and brode: are in their liuyng very diuers, and as sondrie in religion. Thei vse to go with long heare vnrounded & forked cappes, somewhat mitre like, all afre one sorte, and their beardes partie shauē. Thei vse not as we doc, to learne faculties and sciences one of another by appreticheode, but looke what trade the father occupied, the same doeth the sonne generally applie himself to, and continue in. The mooste aunciente and eldest father that can be founde in the whole Countrie, is made their Lorde and Kyng. Looke what possessions any one kindrede hath, the same be commune to all those of that bloude: Yea one wife serueth them all. Wherefore he that cometh firste into the house, lieth doune his sachel before the dore, as a token that the place is occupied. The senour of the stocke enioieth her almight. Thus be thei all brethren and sisten one to another, throughout the whole people. Thei absteyne fro the embrasinger neither of sister ne mother, but all degrees are in that point as indifferent to them, as to bestes of the feldes. Yet is adulteric death among them. And this is adulteric there: to abandon the body to one of another kindred. And who so is by suche an ouerthwarte begotten: is iudged a bastard, and otherwise not. Thei banquet not lightly together, vndre the nombre of thirtie persones. Alwaie foresent that, two of the same nombre at the leaste, be Musicians. Waiters haue thei none, but one kinsman to minister to another, and one to helpe another: Their townes and cities are wallese, for

for thei live quietly & in peace one with another. Thei haue no kinde of oyle, but that whiche is made of *Sesams*, but for all other thynges, thei are most blessed with plentie. Thei haue *Sheepe* greater than *Kien*, and verie white of woull. *Horses* haue thei none, ne none desire, for that thei *Chamelles* in *alnicdes* serue the as well. Thei haue siluer and golde plentie, and diuerse kinde of spices, whiche other cuntries haue not. *Laton*, *Brasse*, *Iron*, *Purple*, *Safron*, the precious rote *costus*, and all coruen woorkes, are brought into thei by other. Thei bewric their kyng in a donghille, for other thei wilke skante take so much labour. There is no people that better kiepe thei promise and couenaunt, then thei doe, & thus thei be light it.

When thei will make any solemne promise, couenaunte, or league, the two parties comyng together, bryng with them a thirde, who standyng in the middes betwixte thei bothe, draweth bloud of eche of them, in the palme of the hande, along vnder the rote of the fingres, with a sharpe stone: and then pluckyng from eche of their garments a litle iagge, he enoynteth with that bloude seuen other stones, lieng ready betwixte thei for that purpose. And whilste he so doeth, he calleth vpon the name of *Dionisius* and *Vrania*, whom thei accompte among the nombre of goddesses, reuengers of faithlesse faithes. This done, he that was the sequester of the couenaunte, becometh suretie for the parties. And this maner of contracte, he that standeth most at libertie, thinketh miete to be kepte.

Thei haue no firyng but broken endes & chippes of *Myrrhe*, whose smoke is so vnhol-some, that excepte thei withstode the malice thereof with the perfume of *Styrax*, it would brede in them vncurable diseases. The *Cinamome* whiche groweth among them, none gather but the priests. And not thei neither, before thei haue sacrificed vnto the goddesses. And yet further thei obserue, that the gathering neither beginne before the Sonne risyng, ne continue afre the goyng doun. He that is lorde and gouernour among them, when the whole gather is brought together, deuideth out vnto euery man his heape with a lauelines ende, whiche thei haue ordinarily consecrate for that purpose. And amongst other, the Sonne also hath a heape deuided out for hym, whiche (if the deuision be iuste) he kindeleth immediatly with his owne beames, and brenneth into ashes. Some of the Arabians that are pinched with perurie, without all regard of body, life, or helth, doe eate *Snakes*, and *Adres*, and suche like vermine, and therefore are called of the Grekes *Ophyophagi*.

The Arabians named *Nomades*, occupie much *Chamelles*, bothe in warre and burden, and all maner cariage, farre and nigh. The floude that runneth alonge their borders, hathe in it as it were limall of golde in great plentie. Whiche they neuertheltes for lacke of knowledge don't neuer fine into masse.

Another people of Arabia named *Deboe*, are for the great parte shepemaisters, and brieders. Parte of the notwithstanding, occupie husbandrie, & tilke. These haue suche plentie of gold, that oftentimes among the cloddes in the fieldes thei finde litle peables of gold as bigge as *alcorates*, whiche thei vse to set finely with stones, and weare for owerches aboute their necke & armes, with a very good grace. They sell their golde vnto their borderers for the thirde parte of *Laton*, or for the halfe parte of siluer. Partly for that they nothing esteeme it, and specially for the desire of the thinges that foreiners haue. Nexte vnto them lie the *Sabeis*, whose riches chiefly consistoth in enence, *Myrrhe* and *Cinamome*, howbeit some holde opinion also that *Baulme* groweth in some places of their borders. Thei haue also many date trees very redolente of smelle, and the roote called *Calamus*.

There is in that contry a kinde of serpentes lurking in the rootes of trees, of haulfe a foote lengthe, whose biting is for the moste parte death. The plenty of swiete odours, and saours in those quarters, doeth verely stuffe y smelling. And to avoyde that incommoditie, they oftentimes vse the fume of a stincking gome, and gotes heare chopped together. Ther is no man that hath to do to giue senecce vpon any case but the king. The mooste parte of the *Sabeis* apply husbandrie. The residue gatheringe of spices and drugges. They sayle into *Ethiope* for trade of marchandise, in barkes couered with leather. The refuse of their *cinamome* and *Cassian* they occupy for firyng. Their chiefe citie is called *Saba*,

Saba, and stoneth vpon a hyll. Their kynges succeed by discente of bloude, not any one of the kindred certeyne, but suche as the people haue in mooste honour, be he good be he badde. The king neuer dare be sene oute of his Palace, for that there goeth an olde prophetic among them of a king that shoulde be stoned to death of the people. And euery one feareth it shoulde lighte on him selfe. They that are about the king of the Sabeis: haue plate bothe of siluer and golde of all sortes, curiously wrought and entailed. Tables, fourmes, trestles of siluer, and all furniture of household sumptuous aboue measure. They haue also Galeries buylde vpon great pillours, whose coronettes are of golde and of siluer. Cielinges, voutinges, dores and gates covered with siluer and golde, and set with precious stones: garnishings of yuorie, and other rare thinges whiche among men are of price. And in this bounteous magnificēce haue thei continued many yeres. For why the gredy compass how to atteyne honour with the ynuiste rapine of other mennes goodes, that hath tumbled downe headlesse so many commune wealthes, neuer had place among them. In richesse equal vnto them, are the Garrei, whose implementes of household are all of golde and siluer, and of those and yuorie together, are their portalles, their cielinges, and ropes, made. The Nabatheens of all other Arabiens are the beste husbandes, and thristiest sparsers. Their caste is wittye in winning of substaunce, but greater in keepinge it. He that appeareth the substaunce that was left him, is by a commune laye punished: and contrariwise he that encreaseth it, moche prayed and honoured.

The Arabiens vse in their warres sward, bowe, launce, slinge, and battle ax. The rable of heliondes (whom we calle Sarasines) that pestilent murricine of mankind, came of this people. And as it is to be thought, at this daye the great parte of Arabia is degenerate into that name. But thei that dwell towarde Egipte, kepe yet their olde name, & lyue by buyn, like prickers of y bowde, wherin, the swiftenes of their camelles doeth them good seruice.

### ¶ The seconde Chapitre.

#### ¶ Of Panchais, and the maners of the Panqueis.

Panchaia (a countrie of Arabia) is iudged of Diodore, the Sicilian to be an islande of xxv. miles brode. It hath in it three noble cities Dalida, Hyracida, & Oceanida. The whole contrie (excepte a litle vaine of sandie grauelle) is fertile and plenteous: chiefly of wine and ciuce. Whiche groweth ther in suche aboundaunce, that it sufficeth the whole worlde for the francke summe offeringe. There groweth also good store of Myrrhe, and diuers other redolent thinges, whiche the Panqueis gather, and selle to the merchants of Arabia. At whose bande other buyenge them againe, transporte them into Egipte, and Sirie. And so thence they are spred abroad to al other peoples. The Pāqueis in their warres vse wagons: after the maner of meeme in olde time.

Their commune wealth is diuided into thre sondry degrees. The firste place haue the priestes, to whome are inoynd the artificers. The seconde the househād men. And the thirde the meeme of warre: with whom the cattelle maisters or brieders be compled. The priestes are y headed, and chiefe of all the residewe, and haue auctoritie aswell in sentence of lawe, as to put ordre in al ciuile affaires: the sentence of death onely excepted.

The housebandemen, till the gronde, and attende vpon the fruictes, and bring all into the commune store. And thei that shalbe founde mooste diligent in that labour and occupation: are chosen by the priestes (but not aboue the nombre of ten at one time) to be iudges ouer the distributiō of the fruictes. Vpon consideration that other by their aduancement might be stirred to like diligence. The cattelle maisters, yf ther be any thing either appertaining to the sacrifices, or commune affaires, touching nombre, or weight, do it with all diligence.

No man amonge the Panchais hath any thinge that he can call properly his owne: his house, and his garden excepted. For bothe the customes, & reuenues, and all other profectes, are deliuered in to the priestes hands. Who accordinge: as they finde necessarie  
and

and expediente, iustely distribute them. But they themselves are graunted double share. Their garments by the reason of the swesse of the walle of their shiepe, especially about other, are verie softe and gentle clothe. Bothe menne and women vse ther, to sette oute them selues with luclles of golde, as cheines, bracelettes, earerings, tablettes, owches, ringes, Annulettes, buttons, broches, and shoes embawdered, and spangled with golde, of diuers colours. The mennt of warre serue onely for the defence of their country.

The priests about all other, giue them selues vnto plesante life, sine, nette and sumptuous. Their garments are rochettes of fine linnen, and sometime of the deintiest wollen. Vpon their heades thei wear mitres embawdred, and garnished with golde. They vse a kinde of voided shoes (whiche afterwarde the Griecques toke vp, and called sandalium) very finely made, and of sondry colours. And as the women weare, so do they, all maner of luclles sauing earinges. Their chiefe occupatiō is to attende vpon goddes service, settinge forthe the worthie diedes of the goddes, with himpses, and many kindes of commendation. Yf thei be founde withoute the halowed grounde, it is lawfull for any manne to slea them. They saye that they came of the blonde of Iupiter Manasses, at suche time as he came firste into Panchaia, hauinge the whole worlde vndre his domiūon. This countrie is full of golde, siluer, laton, tinne, and yron, of the whiche it is not laweful to carie any one out of y realme. The giftes both of siluer & golde, whiche in greate nombre of longe time, haue bene offred to their goddes, are kepte in the temple: whose dores are by excellent workmanship garnished with golde, siluer and yuorie. The couche of their God is vi. cubites longe, and foure cubites brode, all of golde, gorgeous of worcke, and goodly to beholde. And by that, is there sette a table of like sorte in curie pointe: for sise, stuffe, and gorgeousnes. They haue but one temple, all of white stone, builte vpon pilowes, graunc, and embossed, thre hundred and xxxvii. taylours yardes square, that is to saye, euen of lengthe and bredthe, eury waye so muche. And somewhat accordinge to the syse of the temple, it is sette full of highe ymages very precious: coruen and graūen. Rounde about the temple haue the priestes their habitation. And all the grounde aboute them xxv. myle compasse: is halowed to their goddes. The yerely rente of that grounde is bestowed vpon sacrifice.

#### ¶ The iii. Chapitre.

##### ¶ Of Assiria and Babilonia, and the manners of those peoples.

AS saiech saint Augustine, the countrie called Assiria, was so named of Assur, the sōne of Sem. And at this daie, to the ende that time might be founde an appairer of al things, with the losse of a sillabe is becomen Siria: Hanng for his bounde, on the East, the countrie called Inde, and part of Media. On the West the floude Tygris, on the Southe Susiana, and on the Northe the maigne mountaigne Caucasus. It is a deintie to haue in Assiria a showre of raine: and therefore are thei constrained for the due moistyng of their lande, to tolle in the riuers by pollicie of trenching and damming: wherwith thei so plentifully their grounde, that thei comunely receiue two hundred busselles for a bussell, and in some speciall vaine, three hundred for one. Their blades of their Wheate and Barlie are foure fingers brode. Their Sesamum, and Milium (Somer cornes) are in groweth like vnto trees. All the whiche thinges Herodotus the historien, thoughte he knoweth the (as he writeth) to be vndoubtedly true, yet would he that men toke admiracon in the reportyng of them: for that thei mighte seme vnto suche as neuer sawe the like, incredible. Thei haue a tree called Palma, that beareth a kinde of small Dates. This fruite thei feede muche vpon, and out of the bodie of the tree, thei draw at one time of the yere a liquor of rappe, wherof thei make bodie wine and hony. In their fresh waters thei vse boates facioned round like a buckler, which the Armenians that dwelle about them, do make of sallowe wickers wrought one within another, and covered with rawe leather. The apparell of the Assyrians is a sberic downe to the foote, and ober that a short garment of wollen, and last of al a faire white plected cassaque down to the foote agayne. Their shoes are not fastened

fastened on with lachettes, but lyke a pompe close about the foote. Which also the Thebans dydde vse, and but they twayne, no moe. They suffre theyr heares to growe and couer them with prety forked cappes somewhat mytrelyke. And when they goe abroade, they besprinkle them selues with fragrant oyles, to be swete at the smell. They haue euery man a rynge with a signet, and also a sceptre finely wrought: vpon whose toppe they vse to sticke either an apple, or a rose, or a lillye, or some lyke thyng. For it is a dishonour to beare it bare.

Amongst all the lawes of that people I note this chiefly as worthie memorie. Whē their maidens came to be marriageable, they ware frō yere to yere, brought forth into the Marquette, for suche as would buye them to be their wiues. And because there ware some so hard faoured, that menne would not onely be loth to giue money for them, but some menne also for a litle money to take them: the fairest ware first solde, and with the prices of them brought into the commune Tresourie, ware the fowler bestowed. Herodote writeth that he heard by reaporte, that the Heneti (a people on the borde of Italie towarde Illiria) ware wonte to vse this maner. Wherupon Sabellicus takyng an occasion, writeth in this maner. Whether there ware suche a maner vsed among that people (saith he) or not, I haue litle more certaintie to laie for my self then Herodote had. But thus muche am I able to saie: that in Venice (a citie of famous worthines, and whose power is well knowne at this daie, to be greate, lothe by Sea and by lande) suche maner as I shall saie, was sometyme vsed. There was in the Citie of Venice, a place dedicate, as ye would saie to our Ladie of Pietie. Before whose doores it happened a child or twaine, begotten by a skape (whiche either for shame or necessitie could finde no mother, or for the nombre of parteners, no one propre father) to bee laide. And when by the good Citezeins such tendrenes had been shewed to two; or thre, as the mothers loked for, and manhode (to saie the truthe) doth require: the dore of pitie became so fructifull a mother, that she had not now one or twoo in a yere, but three or fower in a quarter. Whiche thyng when the gouernours of the citie perceiued, they toke ordre by commune consente, that frō thens forth suche women children onely, as should fortune so to bee offred to Pietie; should bee nourished at the commune charge of the citie, & none other. And for those accordingly, they ordained a place wher they ware brought vp, hardly kepte in, and diuersly enstructed accordyng to their giftes of witte and capacitie, vntill they ware marriageable. At the whiche tyme, she that had beautie and good qualities bothe, found those a sufficient dowrie to purchase her choyse of husbandes. And she that hadde but beautie alone, thoughte her qualities ware not so excellēte; yet for her honestie that beside forth was singular in thein all, founde that beautie and honestie could not be vnamied. These therefore ware not permitted to euery mannes choise, but graunted to suche as ware thoughte menne worthe of suche women. If there ware any that lacked the grace of beautie, yet if she ware wittie, and endewed with qualities (together with her honestie) a small dowrie purchaseth her a husband in good time. But if there ware any in whō there happened neither commendacion of beautie nor wit, but onely bare honestie: for her bestowyng was there a meane found, by waie of deuocion, as we terme it whē we signifie a respecte of holines in the deede.

Menne vnamied beyng in danngier vpon Sea or on Lande, or beyng sore distressed with sickenes, makyng a vowe for the recouerie of healtie, where vnto they holde thein selues bounden in conscience (if it fortuneth them at that tyme to be deliuered) for satisfactiō of their vowe in that case not vprightly performed, vse to take for their wiues, suche of the simplest as other had left. So that in processe they alwaie founde husbandes, and the commune wealtie a diminishing of charge.

Another Lawe of the Babilonians there was, more worthie of memorie a greate deale, for that it imparted more weight. And that was this. They had frō their beginnyng no Phisiciens among them, but it was enacted by the consente of the Realme, that who so was diseased of any malady, should comon with other that had bene healed of the like afore. And accordyng to their counsaile, practise vpon himself. But he that vsed or attempted any other waie, to be punished for it. Other write that the sicke ware brought out into the Marquet place,

where suche as had bene defistered of the like grief afore; ware bounde by the lawe; to go fro persone to persone, and shewe them by what meanes they had bene remedied. They bewrie their dead in Hoarie, and obserue the same maner of mourning that the Egyptians do. If any man haue meddled with his wife in the nighte, neither of them bothe toucheth any thing the next morning, before they be washed:

There was in Babilon a Temple dedicate to Venus, & it hath bene the maner in tyme paste, that when their came any stranger to visite this Temple, all the women of Babilon should come vnto him or them, with greatesolempnitie and freshly appareild, euery one hauing a garlande on her heade, with some seuerall knowledge of distinction one fro another, and offre their seruice to the straungier. And looke whom he liked, he must laie downe in her lappe, suche some of money as pleased him. That done they bothe withdrew themselves from the temple a greates distance, and laie together. That money was consecrate to Venus.

There were certein kindredes among them, that liued with none other thing but fishe dried against the Sonne, and brused in a Mortare, and so laied vp all nicke ware. And then did they mingle it, and kneado it with water into a manner of paste, and so baked it, & eat it. There were three sortes of menne that bare rule and office among them: The king, the nobles with the Seniors, and those that had serued in the warres and ware now exempte. They had also menne skillfull in the secretes of nature, whiche they calle Magi, and Chaldei, suche as ware the priestes of Egypte, institute to attende vpon the seruice of their Goddesses. These men all their life daies, liued in the lose of wisdomes, & were connyng in the course of the Starres. And sometyme by foretokenyng of birdes flight, and somtyme by power of holy verses and nombres, toured awaie the cuilles fro menne; and benefited the with thinges that ware good. They could expounde Dreames, and declite the significacions of vncouth wordes. So that men ware certein of suche successes, as they had foresheued. They wente not into straunge scholes to learne their knowledge, as the Grecians doe, but learned the science of these thinges at their fathers hūdes, as heritage from one generation to another, euen from their childhode at home in their houses. Whereby it came to passe that beyng sokingly learned, it was bothe the more groundedly learned, and also without tediousnes. They had one vniforme and constant waie of teaching, and one constantnes of doctrine, not waueryng and almoste contrary to it self, as the doctrine of the Greekes; where eche Philosopher almoste had his waie, and iudgemente, of the principles and causes of thinges. But these meane agre al in one, that the worlde is eternall and enerlastyng, with out begynnyng and without ende. And that the ordre of the whole, was disposed by the providence of the highest. The bodies aboue to haue their course, not at all aduentures and without rule, but by an inuincible lawe of God, acording to his ordenance and will moste certein. They haue learned by long marking and notyng of thinges tyme out of mynde, one afte another: how by the course of the Starres, to prognostique, that is to foresheue vnto men, many thinges to come. They holde that of all other Starres, the planetes are strongest of Influence, namely Saturnus. To the sonne they attribute brightness and vertue of life. Mars, Iupiter, Mercurie, and Venus, they obserue moste (for that they haue a course propre by themselves) as interpreters of the raiudex of the goddess to foresigne thinges vnto men. Which opinion is so grounded in them, that they haue called all those foure planetes, by the one name of Mercurius. as ye youlde saye commune courours or messengers. They also do warne menne of many thinges, bothe hurtfull and available: by the marking, and knowledge of winde and weather, of raine and droughte, of blissing starres, of the eclipses of the Sonne and Mone, of earthquakes, and manye suche like.

Furthermore: they ymagine in the firmament other starres, subiecte in influence vnto these former, wherof some are in the haulfe heauen continually in our sighte, and some in the other haulfe continually oute of our sighte. And as the Egyptians haue feigned them selues xii. goddesses, so likewise haue they. To euerie of the whiche they referre one month, and one signe of the Zodiaque. They haue prophesied vnto kinges, many aduentures. As vnto Alexandre victory, when he made his exploitie toward Darius. Likewise to Hircanour

now and Seleucus, and other the successors of Alexandre, prophesied thei many things: As also to the Romaines, which had most sure successe. Thei make compte also of .xxiiij. other starres: without, and beside the waie of the zodiaque, xii. towards the North, and the residue towards the South. Of the whiche, so many as appere in sight, they iudge to apperteyne to the quicke, and the other to the dead: These troublesome mates have thei broughte into the worlde more then enoughe, beside the accompte that thei make of their obseruations, and demaitions from their beginninge to Alexandres tyme: nombringe them three thousande and fourty yeres (a shamefull lie) excepte thei will entreprete their yeres by the Mone, as the Egyptians doe, countinge every moneth for a yere.

### ¶ The iiii. Chapter.

#### ¶ Of Iewry, and of the life, manners, and Lawes of the Iewes.

PALESTINA, whiche also is named Iudæa, beinge a severall province of Siria, lieth betwixt Arabia Petrea, and the countrie Carlosiria. So bordering vpon the Egyptian sea on the West, and vpon the floud Iordan on the East, that the one with his wates washeth his cliues, and the other sometime with his streamc ouerfloweth his banckes.

The Bible, and Iosephus by ensample therof calleth this londe Cananea: a countrie renowned for manifolde substance. Fertile of soyle, well watered with riuers, and springes, and rich with precious balme. Lienge in the nauelle of the world, that it neither might be broyled with heate, ne frozen with colde. By the reason of the which mildenes of aier, it was iudged by the Israelites or Hebrewes; (and rightly so iudged) to be the country that God promised vnto Abraham, Isaac, and Iacob, flowinge in abundance of milke and hony. Vpon the hope of enjoyng of this londe, folowed they Moses oute of Egipte fortye yeres wandering in Campe. And before thei were broughte into Cananea by Iosua, his substitute, ouercame with stronge hande, one and thirty kinges.

This is the people that onely of all other may challenge the honour of auncientie. This is the people alone y mighte haue glorified in the wisdom, and vancilled puritie of Language, as beinge of all other the firste. This is the people that was mother of letters, and sciences. Amonge these remained the knowledge of the onely and euermouing God, and the certaintie of the religion that was pleasaunt in his eyes. Amonge these was the knowledge, and foreknowledge of al thinge that Helas, they knewe not the visitour of their wealth, and the ende of their wo, Iesus the sauoure of all that wolde knowe him, and sick life in his death. But him whome thei knew not, which by reason thei should: him shal thei yet ones knowe in tyme when the father wolde.

The Israelites, the Hebrewes or the Iewes (for all in effecte soundeth one people) liue a strie the rule of the lawes, whiche Moses their worthy duke, and deuint chiefeine, declared vnto them. Without the whiche also or anye other written, thei liued holly, hundred of yeaeres before: atteing to the trathes hidden from other, by a singuler gifte aboue othar. That Philosophie of Philosophers, and deuine of deuines, Moses the mercifulous, waiteing in his insight, y no multitude assembled, coulde be gouerned to conuincance without ordres of equite, and lawes: when with rewardes to the good, and reuenge vpon the euill, he had sufficiently exhorted, and trained his people to the desire of vertue, and y hate of the contrarye: as the last beside the two tables receiued in the mounte Sinai, added ordres of discipline, and ciuile gouernance, full of all goodlines and equitie. Whiche Iosephus, the Iewe, (a manne of greate knowledge, and eloquence, aswel in the Hebrew, his natural tongue, as in the Grieke, amonge whome he liued in notable fame not a fewe yeres) hath gathered, and framed into one severall treatise. Out of the whiche, because I rather fiasie, if I maye with like commoditie, to folowe the fountaines of the first Authours, then the brokes of abredgers, which often bring with them much puddle: I haue here translated, and annexed to the ende of this booke, those ordres of the Iewes commune welthe, sedyng for the reste to the Bible. And yet notwithstanding, Ioke what I foud in this Abredger, neither mencioned in the bible, nor in that treatise, the same thus ordrely foloweth.

The heathen writers, and the Christianes, do muche differ concerninge the Lewes; and Moyses their chiefeine. For Cornelius the styll, in his firste booke of his yerely explectes, called in Latine Annales, dothe not ascribe their departure oute of Egypte to the power and commaundement of God: but vago necessitie, & cōstrainte, with these wordes:

A great skurines, and an yche saiethe he, beinge risen throughe oure Egypte, Boechoris, the king sekyng remedye in the Temple of Iupiter Hammon, was willed by respoecion to cleanse his kingdome: And to sende awaye that kinde of people whom the goddess hated (he meaneth the Lewes) into some other cōtre. The whiche when he had done, and they (as the poeme of al skurines, not knowing wher to become) laye cōwing vndre hedges, and bushes, in places desert, and many of them dropped away for sorowe and disease: Moyses (whiche also was one of the oustcastes saiethe he) counseiled them not to sūte ther, awaytlinge afire the helpe of God or of man, whiche they were not like to haue: but to folowe him as their capteine, and lodesman, and committe them selues vnto his gouernaunce. And that hervnto they all agreeinge, at wilde adventures, withoute knowing what they did, tooke their iourney. In the which they ware sore troubled, and hande bestadde, for lacke of water: In this distresse, whē they ware now ready to lye them downe, & die for thirst, Moyses espieinge a great heerd of wilde Chameilles comming fro their siedinge, and going into woddie place ther beside, folowed them. And iudginge the place not to be without water, for that he sawe it freshe and grene, digged and founde plenty of watre. Wherwith when they had releued the selues, they passed on. vi. daies iourney: and so exployted that the seventh daye they had beaten out all the inhabitants of the contry, where they builte their Citie, & their temple: Moyses then to the content he might satte the peoples hartes towards him for euer: deuised them newe ordres, and ceremonies cleane contrary to all other nations. For (saieith Cornelius) Lookē what so euer is holy amonge vs, the same is amonge them the contrary. And what so euer to vs is valawfull, that same is compted lawefull amonge them. The ymage of the beaste that shewed them the waye to the waters, and the ende of their wanderinge: did they set vp in their chambres, and offre vnto it a rambe, in the despyght of Iupiter Hammon, whom we worship in the soume of a Rambe. And because the Egyptians worshippie their goddesse Apis in the soume of a cowe, therefore they vse to kyle also in sacrifice a cowe. Swines fleshe they eate none, for that they holde opinion that this kynde of beaste, of it selfe beinge disposed to be skorie, mighte be occasion againe to infecte them of newe. The seventh daye they make holy day. That is to say spende awaie in ydleness and rest: for that on the seventh daye, they founde reste of theyr wandering, and misery. And when they had caughte a sauour in this holye daye loytering: it came to passe in process of tyme, that they made a longe hollyday also of the whole seventh yere: But other holde opinion that they do obserue suche manner of holye daies, in the honour of Saturne the god of fasting and famine: with whose whippe they are lothe againe to be punished. Their becade is vnleuened. These ceremonies and deuities, by what meanes so euer they ware brought in amonge them, they do stiffely defende. As they are naturally giuen, to be stiff in beliefs, and depe in loue with their owne although towards al other they be most hatefull enemies. So that they neither will eate ne drinke with them: no nor lye in the chambre that a stranger of a nother nacion lyeth in. A people altogether giuen vnto leachery, and yet absteyning from the embrassings of the stranger. Amonge them selues they iudge nothinge vnlawfull. They deuised to rotte of the foreskine of their yarde (whiche we call circumcision) because they would haue a notable knowledge betwene the, and other nations. And the firste lesson they teache vnto their children, is to despise the goddess. The soles of those that die in tormentes, or in warre, they iudge to be immortall. A continuall feare haue they, & regard of heauen and helte. And where the Egyptians honour many similitudes and Images of beastes, and other creatures, whiche they make them selues: the Lewes onely doe honour with their spirite and minde, and conceiue in their vnderstanding, but one onely Godhead. Iudging all other that worshippie the Image of creatures, or of manne: to bee vagoelic and wicked. These and many other thinges doth Cornelius write, and Trogus also in his. xxxvi. booke.

There ware amonge the Lewes thre seueralle sectes, differing in life from the rest of the people.

people. The Phariseis, the Sadduceis, and the Esseis. The Phariseis used a certaine rough solemnnesse of appareille, and a very skante fare: determining the Tradicions of Moyseis; by certain ordinaunces and decrees, whiche thei themselves sette vp. Thei caried vpon their foreheades, and on their leste armes, pretie billetes of Paper, facioned for the place, wherein ware written the tenne precepts of 5 two Tables. And this did thei for that the Lorde saith: And these shall thou haue (meanyng the commaundementes) as a remembrance hanging before thine eyes, and alwaie ready at thine hande. These were called their Philacteries, of these two wordes Phylaxi and Thorax, wherof the former signifieth to Kiepe, and the other, the Lawe. There menne also hauyng vpon their skirtes muche broder gardes then other, stacke them full of Thornes, whiche beating and prickyng them on the hieles as thei wente; might putte them in remembrance of the commaundementes of God. Thei attributed all thynges vnto God, and destenie, whiche thei call Emarmani. Neuertheles thei granted; that it laie muche in the free choise of manne: either to doe, or not to doe the thinges that are iust and godlic, but yet destenie to helpe in al cases. Whiche destenie thei thought to depende of the influence of the bodies aboue. Looke what their superiours and Elders had said, or answered to any demaunde, thei neuer woulde contrarie it. Thei believed that GOD should come to iudge the worlde, and that all soules ware euerlastyng. And as for the soules of the good, thei helde opinion, that thei passed from one bodie to another, vntill the daie of the generall resurrection. But the soules of the wicked, to be plonged into euerlastyng prison & dūgeō. The name of Pharisei was giue vnto them for that thei ware disguised for 5 cōmūnemaner of other, as ye would saie, Sequestered.

The Sadduceis denied that there was any destenie, but that God was the beholder of all, and that it laie in the choise of manne, to doe well or euill. And as for ioye or sorowe that the soule should suffre aftr this life, thei denied. Neither belieued thei any resurrection: because thei thoughte the soule died with the bodie. Thei would not belieue that there ware any spirites, good or bad. Neither would thei receive more of the Bible, then the fūe bookes of Moyse, Thei ware sterne men, and vncōmpaignable: not so muche as ones keepyng felowshippe one with another. For the whiche sternesse, thei named them selues Sadduceis, that is to saie iuste menne.

The Esseis ware in all pointes verie like vnto our cloisterers, abhorryng marriage and the companie of women. Not for that thei condemned Mariage, or the procreation of issue; but for that thei iudged a manne ought to be ware of the intempurauncie of women. And that no woman kept herself true to her husbande. Oh shameful opinion, and muche better to be reported by the dead, then to be credited of the quicke, bee it wener so true. Thei possessed all thinges in commune. As for checkes or reuillings, was to the muske and honie, and slouely vndastinesse, a greate comeliness. So that thei ware alwaie in a white surcote; all was well. Thei had no certein abiding in any one citie: but Celles ouer all, where so euer thei became. Before the rising of the Sonne, thei spake nothyng that touched any worldly affaire: but praised the soune to rise. After whose vpriste thei laboured vntill eleuen of the clocke. And then, washyng firste their whole bodie in water: thei sette doune together to meate, in solempne silence eury manne. Swearing they compted forswear- yng. Thei admitted no manne to their secte, vnder a yere of probation. And aftr what time thei had receiued him: yet had thei two yeres more to proue his maners and con- ditions. Suche as thei tooke with a faulte, thei draue fro their cōpaignie. Enjoyed by the waie of penance, to go a grasing like a beest, vntill his dieng daie. When tenne were sette in a companie together, no one of them spake without the consente of the other nyne. Thei would not spitte within the precincte of the cōpaignie among theim, ne yeat on their righte side. They kept the Sabbath with suche a precisenesse, that thei would not that daie, ease nature of the belie burden. And whē vpon other daies, nature forced them to that ease- mēte, thei caried with theim a litle spade of woode, wherewith in place moste secrete, thei used to digge a litle pit, to laie their bealie in. And in the time of doying, thei also used a very great circumspection, that their clothes laie close to the grounde rounde aboute theim; for offending (said thei) of the Maiestie of God. Vpon whiche respecte, thei also cōtoured

covered and bewried it, as soon as they had done that nature required. They were of verie long life, by the reason of the vsuforme diete that they vsed, alwaie aftr one rate of fare: whiche was onely the fruite of their countrie Balme. They occupied no money. If any manne suffered for we: doying, or as wroughfully condemned, that thoughte they the beste kinde of death. They helde opinion that all soules were made in the beginnyng, and put in to bodies from tyme to tyme, as bodies did niede them. And for the good soules beyng ridde of their bodies againe, they saied there was a place appointed beynd the West Ocean, where they take repose. But for the euill, they appointed places toward the East, as more stormie colde & vnpleasant. There were amonge them that prophesied things. Some of them gaue themselves to wedlocke: least if they should be of the opinion that men oughte to abstaine vtterly from women, mankind should fade, and in processe be extincte, yea vsed they the compaignie of their wines nothing at riote.

The lande of Siria (whereof we haue named Iewrie a parte) is at this daie inhabited of the Grekes, called Griphoues, of the Iacobites, Nestorians, Sarraçenes, and of two Christian nations, the Sirians and Marouines. The Sirians vse to saie Masse, aftr the maner of the Grekes: and for a space were subiecte to the church of Rome.

The Marouines agre in opinion with the Iacobites. Their letters and tongue are al one with the Arabique. These Christians dwelle at the Mounte Libanus. The Sarraçenes, whiche dwelle aboute Ierusalé (a people valeant in warre) delighte muche in husbandrie and tillbe. But contrary wise, they that inhabite Siria, in that poicte are nothing worth! The Marouines are leaue in nombre, but of all other they are the hardieste.

#### ¶ The. v. Chapitre.

##### ¶ Of Media, and the maners of the Medes.

Media: (a countrie of Asia) as Solinus writeth, toke the name of one Medus, the sonne of Medea & Egeus; kyng of Athenes. Of whō the people were also called Medes. But Iosephus affirmeth that it was so named of Medius, the sōne of Iapheth. This countrie, as it is seene in Ptolome, hath on the Northe, the sea named Hircanum, on the West Armenia, and Assiria, on the Southe Persie, and on the East Hircania and Parthia. Sauling that betwixte Parthia and it, there runneth a mountaigne, that separateth their frontiers. The feaces that they mooste exercise, are shooting and ridyng. Wherein they be righte experte, & almoste (for those quartres) without matche or felow. It hathe bene there a longe continued and aunciente custome, to honour their kynges like goddes. The rounde cappe, whiche they call Tiara: and their long sleeued garmentes, passed from them to the Persians, together with drawing bloud vpo some parte of the arme aboute the shoulde, one of another, whiche they vse to lick eche of others body. All that parte of the cōtrei that lieth towarde the Northe, is barren and vsfructefulle. Wherefore they vse to make store of their fruite, and to drie them, and so to worke them into a masse or lump for their foode. Of roasted Almondes they make their breade: and their wine of the rootes of certein herbes. They caue great plentie of the fleshe of wilde beastes.

#### ¶ The. vi. Chapitre.

##### ¶ Of Parthia, and the maner of the Parthians.

A Certaine nombre of Outlawes and Banished menne, called Partlic, gaue name to this Countrie: Aftr suche time as by train, and stealth they had gotten it. On the Southe it hath Carmania, on the North Hircanum, on the West the Meades, and on the East the  
country

country of Arabia. The countrie is hilly, and full of woddcs, and of a barreine soyle. And a people which in the time of the Assiriens, and Medes, warc scante knowne; and little esteemed. In so moche that when y<sup>e</sup> highe gouernaunce of the whole (whiche the Grekes call the Monarchie) was yelded into the handes of the Persians: thei warc made a butin, as a nombre of raskalles without name. Laste of all thei warc slaues to the Macedonies. But afterward in proccesse of time, suche was the valeaütenes of this people, and such successe had thei: that thei became lordes, not ouer their neighbours onely rounde aboute them, but also helde the Romaines (the conquerours of the worlde) suche tacks, that in sondrie warres they gaue them great ouerthrowes, and notably endamaged their power. Plinie reherseth. xiiii. kingdomes of the Parthians. Trogus calleth them Emperours of the East part of the worlde. Asthoughc they, and the Romaines holding the Weste, had decuded the whole betwixte them.

Aftre the decaye of the Monarchie of the Macedonians, this people was ruled by kinges. Whome generally by the name of the first king, thei termed Arsaces. Nexte vnto the kinges maiestic, the commualtie bare the swaye. Oute of whome they chase bothe their Capteignes for the warres, & their gouernours for the peace time. Their language is a speache mixte of the Scithians, & Medes. Their apparill at the firste, was aftre their facion vnlike to all other. But when thei grewe vnto power, louse and large, & so thimne: that a man mighte see thoroughc it, aftre the facion of the Medes. Their maner of weapon, & armour, was the same that the Scithians vsed. But their armies warc altogether almoste of slaues and bondemen, contrary to the maner of other peoples. And for that no manne hath authoritic amonge them to giue fredome vnto anye of this bonde ofspring: The nombre of them by continuance, came vnto a greate multitude. These do thei bringe vp, and make of as deercly, as thei do of their owne children: teachinge them to ride, to sbote, to throwe the darre, and suche like featcs, with great diligence, and handsonenes. Eche communerther, according to his substance, findeth a greate nombre of these to serue the kinge on horsebacke, in all warres. So that at what time Antonius the Romaine made warre vpon the Parthians, wher thei mette him with fyfytie thousande horsemen: there warc of the whole nombre but eyghte hundred fre borne. They are not skylfull to fighte it oute at hande stripes, ne yeat in the maner of besieging or assantling: but all together aftre the maner of skirmishe, as thei spic their aduantage. Thei vse no trompet for their warninges or onsettes but a dromme: neither are thei able to endure longe in their fighte. For yf they warc so good in continuance, as thei be violente at a brunte: ther warc no multitude able to susteine their force. For the mooste parte thei breake of, when the skirmishe is euen at the whottest. And within a while aftre thei feigne a flight, wher with thei beginne: againe a newe onsette. So when thou thinkest thy selfe mooste sure of the honour of the fieldc, the aris thou at the point of the hardest hasarde. Their horsmen vse armour of mayle entrelaced with fethers: bothe for their owne defence, & the defence also of their horses. In times passed thei occupied no golde ne siluer, but only in their armour. Vpon regarde of change in their luste, thei mary echeone many wifes, and yet punishc thei none offence so greuously as adultery. For the auoyding whereof, thei doe not onely forbidde their women by generall restraints from all feastes, and banquettinges of men: but also from the sighte of them. Some neuerthelesse do wrighie, amonge the whiche Strabo is onc, that thei vse to giue their wifes sometime to their friendes, as in y<sup>e</sup> waye of marriage, that thei maye so haue issue. Thei eate none other fleshe but suche as thei kyllc at the chace. Thei be euer on horsebacke, whether thei go to the fieldc or the banquet, to bye, to selle, to cõmune of anyghte with their friende, or to do any thing that is to be done. Yea thei dispatche at communc and priuate affaires, sittinge on horsebacke. And this is to be vnderstonden of the fre borne: for the slaues are alwaies on foote. Their buriall for all mcnne (sauinge the kinge) is the dogges bealy, and the kytes. But when thei or suche like haue eaten of the fleshe, thei couer thei the bare bones with earth. Thei haue great regarde vnto their goddes, & the worship due vnto them. Thei are men of a proude nature, busie medlers, and sedicious, craftie, deceptifull, malsparte, and vshamefaced: for thei holde opinion that it becometh the

the man aswell to be sterne, as the woman to be milde. Thei be euer in some stirre, either with their neighbours, or elles amonge them selues: Men of fewe wordes, and readier to doe, then to saye. And therefore whether it go with them or against the, thei lappe it vp in scilence. Thei obey not their superiours for any reuerence, but for feare. Altogether giuen to lechery, and yet skante in fidinge. No farther trewe of worde or promesse, then semeth them expediente for their owne behoue.

¶ The. vii. Chapter.

¶ Of Persia, and the maners and ordinaunces of the Persians.

Persia (a countrie of the Easte) was so called of Persius the Sonne of Jupiter and Danae. Of whome the chiefe citie of the kingdome also, was named Persepolis, whiche in English is souldeth Perseborough (or as we corruptly terme it) Perseburic, and the whole naciō Persiens. This countrie as Ptolemie writeth in his sueth booke, hath on the North, Media: on the West, Susiana: on the Easte, the two Carmanians: and on the Southe, an inshot of the Sea, called the Bosome of Parthia. The famous cities thereof, were Axiama Persepolis and Diopolis. By the name of Iupiter thei vnderstode the whole heauen. Thei chiefly honour the Sonne, whom thei calle Mitra. Thei worship also the Mone, the planet Venus, the fyre, the earth, the water, and the windes. Thei neither haue altare nor temple, nor ymage, but celebrate their deuine seruice vnder the open heauen vpon some highe place for that purpose appointed. In doinge sacrifice thei haue no farther respecte, but to take awaye the life from the beaste. As hauing opinion, that forasmuche as the goddess be spirites, thei delighte in nothinge but the spiritual parte, the soule. Before they slea it, thei set it aparte by them, with a corow vpon the heade, and heape vpon it many bittre bannings and curses. Some of the naciō notwithstandinge, when thei haue slaine the beaste: vse to lay parte of the offalle in the fyre.

When thei sacrifice vnto the fyre, they tymbre vp drie stickes together, cleane without pille or barcke. And after what time thei haue powred on neates tallowe, and oyle, thei kinde it. Not blowing with blaste of blowes: or mouthe: but makinge winde as it were with a ventile, or trenchour, or suche like thinge. For yf any maane either blowe into it, or caste in any deade thing, or any durt, or puddle, it is death to the doer. The Persians beare suche reuerence to their floudes, that thei neither washe, pyss, nor throwe deade carcase into them. No not so moche as spitte into the: But very reuerentlye honour their water after this maner. Comminge to lake, mere, floude, ponde, or springe: thei trenche out a litle diche, and ther cut thei the throte of the sacrifice. Being well ware, that no droppe of blode sprinckle into the water by. As though all water were polluted and vnholow ouer all: yf that should happen. That done their Magi (that is to say men skilful in y secretes of nature) layeng the flesh vpon a heape of Myrtis, or Laurelle, and tymbryng smalle wandes about, sette fyre thereon & brenne yt. And pronouncing certain curses, they myngle oyle, mayke, and hony together, and sprinckle into the fyre. But these cursinges make they not against the fyre ne water. But against the earth, a greate whyle together: holding in their hande a boudele of smalle myrte wandes. Their kinges reigne by successiō of one kindred or stocke. To whom who so obeyeth not, hath his heade & armes striken of: and so without buriall is throwe out for karreine. Policritus sheweth that euery king of the Persians, buyldeth his howse vpo a greate hille: and ther houndeth vp all the threasoure, tribute, & taxe that he receyueth of the people: to be a recorde after his deathe how good a husbonde he hath bene for y cōmune wealth. Suche of the subiectes as dwelle vpon the sea coast, are taxed to paie money. But those that inhabite toward the mydde lande: suche comodities as the quartre beareth or hath wher they dwelle. As apothecary drugges, woolle, coulours, & suche like and catelle accordingly. He is not permitted any one cause, to putte any man to death. Neither is it lawfull for any other of the Persians to execute any thyng against any of his house or stock, that maie seme in any wyse cruelle. Euery one of them marie many wiues: & holde many cōcubines also beside, for the encrease of issue.

The king Proclaimeth reward vnto him, that within one yere begetteih most children. Five yere afire thei are begotten, thei come not in the fathers sight, by a certain ordonnance vned among them: but are brought vp continually among the women. To the ende that if the childe fortune to dye in the time of his infancie, their fathers grief maie be the lesse. Thei vse not to marie but in one tyme of the yere: toward midde Marche. The bridegrome eateth to his supper, an apple of that countrey, or a litle of the maribone of a Chamel: and so without any farther banquetting goeth to bedde. From siue yeres olde, to twentic and fowre, thei learne to ride, to throwe the Dart, to shoote, and chiefly to haue a tongue void of all vntruth. For their nourituryn and trainyn in good maners, thei haue appointed them Masters of greates sobrenes and vertue, that teache them dieties, and pretie songes, conteynyn either the praises of their Goddes, or of some worthy Princes. Whiche sometime thei sing, and sometyme recite without note: that so thei mighte learne to confourme their liues vnto theirs, whose praises thei sieme themselues to allowe. To this lesson assemble thei alwaie together, at the calle of a Trompette. And as thei growe into yeres, an accompt is required of thā how well thei haue borne awaie the lessons of their childehode. Thei vse to ronne the race, & to course, bothe on horsebacke and on foote: at the leadyng of some noble mannes sonne, chosen for the nones. The field for the race, is at least thre mile and thre quarters longe. And to the ende that heate or colde should the lesse trouble them, thei vse to wade ouer brookes, and swimme ouer riuers, & so to rowme and to hunte the fieldes, and to eate & drinke in their armour, and wette clothes. The fruyes that thei eate are skecomes, wild Peares, and the fructe of the Terebinthine tree. But their dailely foode afire their ronnyng, and other exercises of the bodie: is hard Bisquette, or a like crustie breade, Hortechoques, Gromelle sede, a litle roste fleshe or sodden, whether thei lust: and faire water their drincke. Their maner of Humyng, is with the bowe, or the Dart on horsebacke. Thei are good also in the slyng. In the forenoone thei plante and graffe, digge vp settes, stubbe vp rootes, make their owne armour, or fishe and foule, with the Angle or nette. Their children are decked with garishynnes of golde. And their chief iuelle is the precious stone Piropus, whiche thei haue in suche price, that it maie come vpon no decade corps. And that honour giue thei also to the fire, for the reuerence thei beare there vnto. From twentic, till fuetie: thei folowe the warres. As for byng and shellyng, or any kinde of Lawe prattle, thei vse not. Thei cary in their warres, a kinde of shieldes facioned like a losenge, a quire with shaftes, & a curtillace. On their heades a copintancke, embatled aboute like a turrette, and a brestplate embossed, of skaled worke. The princes and menne of honour did weare a treble Anaxirides, facioned muche like a coate armour, and a long coate doune to the knees, with hanging sleeves accordyn. The outside colour, but the lining white. In Somer thei weare purple, and in Wintre Medeis. The abillementes of their heades, are muche like the frontillettes that their Magj doe weare. The comune people are double coated doune to the middle Leggue, and haue about their heade a greate rolle of Sendalle. Their beddes and their drinking vessell, are garnished with gold. Whē thei haue matier of moste importance to common of, thei debate and cōclude in the middes of their cuppes: thinkyn it muche surer that is so determined, then afre any other sober sorte. Acquaintaunge meetyn of equal degre, griete one another with a kisse. But the inferiour meetyn with his better, enclineth his bodie forward with lowe reuerence. Thei bewrie their corpses in the grounde, caryng them all ouer with waxe. Their Magiciens thei leaue vnberwed, for the soules to disspetchte. The children there, by an ordonnance no where elles used: doe carnally knowe their mothers. Thus haue ye heard what the maners of the Persians were sometyme.

Herodotus reherseth certeine other, their facious not vitrely vnworthe the tellynge. That thei compted it vlianie to laughe, or to spitte before the kyng. Thei thought it fondenes in the Grekes, worthie to be laughed at, to imagine goddes to be sprong vp of menne. What so euer was dishoneste to be done, that thoughte thei not honest to be spokē. To be in debt was muche dishonour, but of all thinges moste vile for to lie. Thei vse not to bewrie their deade bodie, vntill thei haue bene torne with dogges, or with foules. And the

parentes brought to neednesse, vsr there to make cheuisaunce of their daughters bodies, whiche among no nation elles was euer allowed. Howbeit some holde opinion, that it was also the proprietie of the Babilonians. The Persians at this daie, brynge subdued of the Saracenes, and bewitched with Mahometes brainsicke wickednesse, are cleane out of memorie. A people in those daies, whiche through their greate hardnesse and force, ware of long tyme Lordes of the Easte parte of the worlde. But now tumbled cleane from their aunciente renowne, and bewiced in dishonour.

¶ The. viij. Chapitre.

¶ Of Ynde, and the vncouthe trades and maners of life of the people therein.

YNde, a Countrey also of the Easte, and the cloyng vp of Asia toward that quartre: is saied to be of suche a maigne syse, that it maie be copared with the thirde parte of the whole earth. Pomponius writeth, that alöge the shore, it is fowrtie daies sailing the nighte also comprised therein.

It tooke the name of the floude called Indus, whiche closeth vp the lande on the Weste side. Beginning at the Southe sea, it stretcheth to y Sonne risinge: And Northward to the mouit Caucasus: There are in it many greate peoples: and Townes and Cities so thicke, that some haue reported them in nombre five thousande. And to saie truth, it oughte not to sieme greatly straunge vnto folkes, though the coutrie be reported to haue suche a nombre of Townes, or to be so populous: considering that of all other, the Yndiens alone, neuer discharged them selues of any ouerplus of issue, as other haue done: but alwaie kepte their owne offspring at home in their owne countrey. Their principall floudes are Ganges, Indus, and Hypanis. But Ganges farre passeth in greatnes the other twaine. This lande by the benefite of the battling breathe of the getle West wind, reapeth some twise in the yere. And other Wintre hath it none, but the bittre blastes of Theasterly windes; called Etesiae. Thei lacke wine, and yet some men reporte, that in the quartre called Musica, there groweth a good wine grape. In the Southe parte thereof, groweth Nardus, Cinnamome, Peper and Calamus aromaticus: as doeth in Arabia and Aethiope. The woodde Ebenum (whiche some suppose to be our Guayacum) groweth there, and not elles where. Likewise of the Popiniaye and the Vnicorne. As for precious stones, Beralle, Prasnes, Diamantes, fire Carbuncles and Pearles of all sortes, be found there in greate pleatic. Thei haue two Sommers, softe pimplyng windes, a milde aier, a rancke soile, and abundaunce of watre. Diuerse of them therefore liue an hundred & thirtie yeres. Namely among the Musicanes. And among the Serites, yet somewhat longer.

All the Yndians generally, ware lög heare: died eüher aftr a bright asse coulour, or elles an Orange tawnie. Their chief ieuelles, are of Pearle and precious stones. Their appareille is verie diuers: and in fewe, one like another. Some go in Mantles of Wolle, some of Linnen some naked, some onely brieded to couser the priuities, and some wrapped aboute with pilles, and lithe barekes of trees. Thei are all by nature blacke of hewe: eüc so died in their mothers wöbe acording to the disposició of the fathers nature, whose siede also is blacke: as like wise in the Aethiopiens. Talle men and strongly made. Thei are very spare feeders, namely when thei are in Campe. Neither delighte thei in muche presse. Thei are as I saied, greate deckers and trimmers of them selues, haters of theft. Thei liue by lawe, but not writen. Thei haue no knowledge of lettres, but administer altogether without booke. And for y thei are void of guile, and of very sobre diete: all thing prospereth well with the. Thei driuke no wine, but when thei Sacrifie to their goddes. But their drinke is a bruage that thei make sometyme of Rize, sometyme of Barlie. Their meate for the mooste parte is soupynges made also of Rize.

In their lawes, bargaines, and couenauntes, their simplicitie and true weanyng well appeareth: for that thei neuer are muche contentious aboute the. Thei haue no Lawes concerning pledges or thynges committed to another mannes keepinge. No witnessynges, no handwritynges, no sealynges, ne suche like tokes of trecherie and vntrust: but without all these,

these, thei truste and be trusted, thei belieue and are belieued, yea, thei ostentymes leaue their houses wide open without keper. Whiche truly are all greates signes of a iuste and vprighte dealing among them. But this peraduenture can not seatle well with euery mannes fantasie: that thei should liue eche manne aparte by himself, and euery body to dine and to suppe when he lust, and not all at an howre determined. For in dede for the selowshippe and ciuillitie, the contrary is more allowable. Thei commede and occupie muche as a common exercise, to rubbe their bodies: specially with skrapers made for the noses. Aftr whiche, thei smothe them selues again with Ebenum, wherof I spake afore.

In their Toubes, and Bewrialles, very plaine and nothyng costlie: But in trimming and arraing of their bodies, to, to, gaude glorious. For there aboute thei neither spare gold, ne precious stone ne any kinde of silke that thei haue. Thei delighte muche in garmentes of white Sareenet. And for that thei sette muche by beautie, thei cary aboute with them phanelles to defende them fro the sonne, and leaue nothyng vdone, that maketh for the better grace of their faces. Thei sette asmuche by trathe alone, as by all other vertues together.

Age hath there no prerogatiue, except thei winne it with their wisdom, and knowledge. Thei haue many wiues, whiche thei vse to buye of their parentes for a yoke of Oxen. Some to serue them as their vndrelynges, and some for pleasure, and issue. Whiche maie neuertheless vse buttoke banquetyng abrede (for any lawe or custome there is to restraine them) excepte their housebandes by sine force, can compelle them to kepe close.

No one among the Yndians either sacrificeth coroned, ne offreth odours, ne liquours. Thei wounde not their Sacrifice in no maner of wise: but smore hym by stopping the breath. Least thei should offre any mangled thing vnto God, but that that ware in euery parte whole. He that is conuicte of false witnessyng, hath his fingers cutte of by the toppe iointes. He that hath taken a limme from any manne, suffreth not onely the like losse, but loseth also his hande. But if any mā haue taken from an artificer, his hande, or his eye, it lieth hym vpon his heade.

The kyng hath a garde of bought women: who take chardge of his bodie, and haue the trimmyng and orderyng thereof, the residue of the armie, remainyng without the gates. If the Kyng fortune to be droncken, it is not onely lawfull for any one of these women to slea hym: but she shall also as in the waie of rewarde, be coupled in mariage to the nexte kyng. Whiche (as is saied) is one of his sonnes, that afore enioied the Crowne. It is not lawfull for the kyng to slepe by daie time: and yet in the night tyme to auoide trecherie, he is forced euery howre to change his chambre. When he is not in campe, he ofte tymes cometh abroad: bothe to giue sentence, and to heare matiers dependyng in question. And if it be time of daie to trimme his bodie: he bothe heareth the pleaes, & is rubbed in the meane season with the skrapers afore mencioned, by thre of his women. He cometh furthe also to Sacrifices, and to hunting: Where he is accompanied with a rabbe of women, in as good ordre as ours were wonte to be vpon Hocke Mondaie. His waie is ranged with ropes, and his garde of menne abideth without. But if it fortune any to steale in, to the women (whiche is contrary to their ordre & daetic) he loseth his heade for it. There go afore hym Tabours and Belles. When he hunteth in places fenced aboute, two or thre armed women stande preste, for his aide, and defence. But when he hunteth in open place, he is caried vpon an Elephante: & euen so sitting on his backe shooteth, or throweth the darte at his game. Some of his women ride vpon Horses, some vpon Elephantes. As likewise in the warres, where thei fight with all kinde of weapons skillfully.

Suche menne also as haue gathered thinges into wrytynges, recorde: that the Yndians worshippe as their goddes the father of raine Iupiter: Ganges their floude, and the familiar spirites of their countrie. And when their kyng washest his heade, thei make solempne feast, and sende his highnes greate giftes, eche mā enuyenge other, who maye shewe hym self mooste riche, and magnificent.

The commune wealth of the Yndians, was sometyme deuided into seuen states or degrees. The Sages (whiche other calle Philosophers) ware of the first ordre, or state: the

whiche although they were in nombre fewer then any of the rest: yet were they in honour and dignitie aboute the kyng, farre above all other. These menne (priuiledged from all busines) neither be troubled with office, ne be at any mannes commaundemente: But receiue of the communes suche thinges as serue for the Sacrifices of their goddes; and are requisite for beuerialles. As though they were bothe well acquainted, and beloued in heart, and knewe muche of the trade in helle. For this cause haue they bothe giftes and honour largely giuen the. And in very diede they do muche good among the people. For in the beginning of y yere, assembling together, they foreshewe of raine, of drouthe, of winde and of sickenese: and of suche like thynges as maie to profiteight be foreknowen. For aswell the kyng as the people, ones vnderstanding their foresaies, and knowing the certeinie of their iudgements by former experience: shone the euilles, and are prate to attende vpon that, that is good. But if any of their said Sages shall fortune to erre in his foresight: other punishment hath he none, then for euer after to holde his peace.

The seconde ordre is of housebande menne, whiche beyng more in nombre then any of the other states, and exempte for the warres, and all other labour: bestowe their tyme onely in housebandrie. No enimie spoileth the, none troubleth them; but refraineth fro doing them any hurte or hinderance, vpon respect of the profigite that redoundeth to the whole, through their traualles. So that they, hauing libertie without all feare to followe their busines, are instrumēttes and meanes of a blessed plenteousnesse. They with their wiues and children, dwell alwaie in the countrie, without resorting to the townes or citie. They paie rente to the Kyng (for all the whole Countrie is subiecte to their kyng) neither is it lawefull for any of the communes to occupie and possesse any grounde, without payeing rente. And the housebande men beside this rente, yelde vnto the Kynges maiestie, a sixth of their fructes yerely.

The thirde ordre standeth all by brieders and feeders, of all sortes, whiche like wise neither enhaue tounes ne village: but with tentes, in the wilde fieldes. And these with hunting and fowling in sondrie wise, so keepe vndre the beastes and hartefull foules: that whear other wise the housebande menne should in siele tyme, and towarde harueste, be muche acloyed and hyndered by the fowles, and them selues alwaie by the beastes, the countrie is quiete fro al suche annoyace.

In the fourth ordre are Artificers, and handicraftsmen. Whiche are deuided, some into Smithes, some into Armourers, some for one purpose, some for another, as is expediente. These doe not onely liue rente free, but also haue a certaine of graine allowed them at the kinges allowaunce.

In the fiftth ordre are the menne of warre, a greate nombre daieily exercised in armes, bothe on Horsebacke, on Elephanthes, and on foote. And all their Elephanthes, and horses miete for their warres, are found of the kinges allowaunce.

The sixth ordre is of Suroiours or Maisters of reporte, whiche haue the ouersight of all thynges that are done in the realme, and the charge to bryng resporte vnto the kyng.

In the seventh place, are they that be Presidētes, and heades of the commune counsailes, very fewe in nombre, but worthy men for their nobilitie and wisdome. Out of these are chosen counsaillours for the kynges Courtes, and officers to administrate the commune wealth, and to determine cotrouersies: yes, capitaines for the warres, and Princes of the realme.

The whole state of Ynde beyng deuided into these ordres or degrees: it is also ordeined, that a man shall not marie out of the ordre, wherein his calling lieth, ne change his trade. For neither maie the souldiour occupie housebandrie though he woulde: ne the artificers entremedle with the doctrine of the Sages.

There are also amonge the Yndians, persons of honour appointed to be as it were Tutours of straungiers, to see that no wronge be done them, so put ordre for their keepyng, and Phisicke, if any fall sicke. As also (if it fortune any of the to die) for the beueryng of them, and to deliuer their goodes, and money to their nexte friends.

All causes are broughte afore the iudges, who heare the parties, and punyshe the offenders diligently. There is no slauiery amonge them. Yes, they haue a certaine ordinaunce, that

none shalbe slaue or bonde amonge them, but all free; and of equalle authoritie and honour. For thei holde opinion that who so accustometh his selfe neither to be Louer ouer other, ne to wröge any bodie: y man hath prepared him selfe saultie and ease what so euer shall happen hym by any aduenture. And a foudre thing ware it to make the lawes indifferente for all, and not to make the states of the men indifferente:

But because ther are in Inde manye sondrie contries, diuerse bothe in people and tongue (as in so large a thing muste nedes happen) ye shall vnderstonde that thei do not all alike vse suche trade as I haue described, but in some places somewhat worse.

Of those that lie toward the Easte, some occupie bridling, and some do not. Other dwelling in the mershe, and fennes vpon the riuers side: occupie fishing, and liue by the same all rawe. And the better to worcke their feate, thei make them selues boates, of suche canes as growe ther, of a wonderfull biggenes. So, that so muche of the cane as is betwixte ioynte and ioynte, is a iuste proportion of timbre for one of their boates.

These of all the other Indians, are appareilled in matte, made of a certayne softe kinde of mere rushes. Which when thei haue gathered out of the Houde, and sliced oute in maner of lace: they braude together muche like oure figge fraile, or suche like kinde of mattinge, & make them selues ierkins therof.

Those that lie yet by Easte of them, are bridlers of catsaille: and liue altogether with rawe fleshe, and haue to name Padians. Whose condicions are sayde to be suche.

As often as it fortuneth any of their citezeins to be sicke, yf it be a manne: his niereist friends, and those that are moste aboute him, kyll him by and by, leaste (saye thei) his fleshe shoulde waxe worse. Yea, though he woulde dissemble the matier; and denie him self to be sicke, it betoth not. For withoute pardon, they kille him, and make a feaste with him. If it be a woman, looke how the menne did by the manne, so do the women by a woman. Likewise do thei with bothe sortes, when thei waxe croked for age, or become impotent: where through, what by the one means and the other, none of them die for age.

Ther is another sorte of the Indians that kille no liuing thing, ne plauge, nor sove, nor builde house: but liue with herbes, and a certeine sode which groweth there of the owne accorde, muche like vnto gramelle, whiche thei gather with the cuppe or shelle that it groweth in, and so seeth it, and cate it. If any of these falle sicke, he wandereth forth into some deserte place, and ther lieth him downe: no manne taking hede either to his lieng or to his dieuge.

All these Yndians that I nowe haue spoken of, in quenching of natures heate, vse their women as secretly as beastes do their females.

These Yndians haue a kinde of rage, that the Griecke calle Gimnosophista, whiche as the worde Sophista soundeth now, might merily be interpreted briechelesse bablers. But as Sophista did signifie then, naked Sages: or to giue one Griecke worde for a nother, naked Philosophes. These (as Petrarche writeth) haunte the outmoste borders, and shadowie partes of that countrie, wädering asked, accordinge to their name, vp and downe, heather and theather, studieng, and searching the natures of thinges, the course of the heuens, and the secretes of knowledge. Thei continued sometime al the whole daye from the sonne rising, till his downe goinge: beholdinge the same with stedfaste eye, neuer turning away the heade (although it be ther moste feruently hote) searching and spiengre afre certaine secretes in the body therof:

At another time thei passe the day likewise, standing one while on one legge, another while on another in y bridlinge sands of that contrie. Froste nor snowe, nor fire heate greued not them.

Amonge these, is ther a people called Brachmanes, whiche (as Didimus their king wrote vnto Alexandre when heiwet aboute to subdue them) liue a pure and simple life, led with no likerous lustes of other mennes vauities. This people togeth for no more then nature requirereth naturally. Thei are content with suche foode as cometh to hande, desiring no suche as other menne tourne the worlde almost vpside downe to haue; leauing no elemēt vnassaked to gette, a gowbin for their glotinous gorge: but suche as the earth vnploughed,

or vndolue, yeldeth of her self. And because thei acquinte not their table with surfet, in dede thei know not so many kindes of sicknesses, ne so many names of diseases as we doe: but thei better knowe what sounde healtie meaneth, and staied continuance of the same then euer we stidlike.

Thei haue no neede to craue one anothers helpe and reliefe, wher no manne maketh claymelby (thine) and by (myne) but euery manne taketh what he lusteth and listeth no more: then he needeth. Enuie cannot dwell ther, no more of her impes, wher all be equalle, and none aboute other, and all alike poore; maketh all alike riche. Thei haue no officers of Justice among them, because thei do nothing that ought to be punished. Ther can no liue appide, because none offence appeareth.

The whole people hath one onely lawe, to do nothinge against lawe that nature prescribeth. To cherishe labour, to barrie out ydleness, and banishe colic couetise. That lechery licke not away the vigour of their spirites; and strength: nor lacke throwe menne in desperate doompes. That euery manne hath enoughe, wher no manne couettes more. That neuer content, is of all other the mooste cruell restles plague. For whome she catcheth, she throweth a foote beneath beggery; whilst thei canne finde none ende of their scattinge, but the more thei haue, the fellier gnaweth their longing.

Thei warde by the Sonne; the deawe is their moisture, f'rier is their drinke, the faire groude their bedde. Care breaketh not their sleape, Compassing of vanities wearieth not their minde. Pride hath no stroke ouer them, among whom ther is no diuersite. Neither is their any kinde of bonde knowne amonge them; but the bondage of the body to the minde, whiche thei onely allowe to be iuste.

For the building of their houses, they sende not ouer sea for stoue; thei burne no Calion to make lime to trompre their mortre, thei bake no bricke, nor digge no sande. But either make them, causes in the earthe, or take suche as thei finde ready made in the sides of the mounteines and hills. Thei dwel thei without feare of rage or ruine; of weaether or of winde. He thincketh him self saulzier fenced fro' showres with his caue, then with a fewe tiles: and yet hath by it a double commoditie. A house whiler he liueth, & a graue ready made when he dyeth. Ther is no glittering apparell, nor rattelinge in sylkes, no rustelinge in velvettes, but a litle bricche of braued russhes, or rather a cowering of honeste shamefacednesse.

The women are not sette oute to allure, ne pinched in to please, ne garnished to gaze at. No heare died, no lockes outlaid, no face painted, no skinnie slicked, no countrefeate countenance, nor mynsing of passe. No poutique practise, no ynekhorne termes, nor pithlesse prattling. Finally no colours of hipocrisis, no meanes to set oute more beautie then nature hath giue them. They ioyne not in engedrare for likerous luste, but for the loue of ystewe and succession. Thei kepe no warres; but mainteine peace: not with force, but with peaceable behauiour and manners. The father and the mother solowe not the child to be bewraile. Thei bulde no tombes for the deade: more like vnto churches then graues. Thei beury not vp their ashes in pottes dashed full of pearle and precious stone. For why they esteime in these, neither the honour of the quicke, ne the pleasure of the deade: but rather the trouble and paine of bothe. Pestilence or other diseases (as I haue sayd) the Abrahames are not annoyed with, for their infecte not the ayer with any filthy doings. But nature awaye with them, keepeth accorde with the season: and euery elemente his tourne, with oute stoppe or barre. Their Phisique is abstinence; whiche is able not only to cure the maladie already crepte in: but also to holde oute suche as otherwise mighte entre. Thei couette no sightes, nor shewes of misrule: no disguisinges nor entreludes. But when thei be disposed to haue the pleasure of the stage, thei entre into the registre of their stories, & what thei finde thermoste fit to be laughed at, that do thei lament & bewaile. Thei delighte not as many do, to heare olde wines tales, and fantasies of Robin Hood: but in studiouse consideration of the wondrous workmanship of the world; & the perfect disposing of things in suche ordre of course and degree. Thei crosse no sease for merchandise, we learne no colours of Rethorique. Thei haue one kinde of plaine eloquence commune to them

them all: tongue, & harte agreeing in truth. They have neither moote halles, ne vniversities, whose disagreeable doctrine more leaning to apishie arte, then natural reason and experience, neuer bringeth anye staye, or certainte of thinges. One part of this people iudgeth mānes perfecteste blessednes to stande in honestie. And another in pleasure. Not in the tickelings of the taile, or pamperings of the bealy, more bitter then pleasaunte as thou maye see them: but to lacke nothing that perfecte nature desireth, ne nothing to do that perfecte nature misliketh. They thincke it no honour to God, to slea for him an innocēt beast; yea they say he accepteth not the sacrifice of men polluted with blood, but rather loueth a worship void of all bloodshede. That is to saye, the humble entreatie of woordes, because that propriety only (to be entreated with woordes) is commune to God and to manne. With this therefore saye they he is pleased, because we somewhat resemble him self therein. And this was the life of § vnchristened Brahmanes, wher with we Christianes are so farre out of Ioue, that we are afraid leaste any man should beleue it to be true.

The Yndians called Cathes, haue eche man many wiues. And as soone as any one husbande fortuneth to die, his whole nūber of wiues assemble before the chiefest iudges of the citie, and there eche for her self, sheweth and alledgeth her welle deseruings toward her honeste husbande: how derely she loued him, howe manche she tendered, & honoured him. And she that is by them iudged to haue borne her self beste in that behaulle, and to haue bene diere- est to her husbande: she in the beste maner and moste gorgeous that she can deuise, triumphing and reioysinge, getteth her vp vpon the funerall pyle wher her husbandes corpa lieth ready to be burnt, and ther kissinge and embracing the deade body, is burned together with her honeste husbande. So gladd is she to haue the victorie in the consciencie of wiuely chastitie, and honeste behauiour toward her husbande. And the other that lyeue, thincke them selues dishonoured: and escape not without spotte of reproche as longe as thei liue. Their children in their infancie, are not nourished vp at the libertie and will of the parentes: but certeine ther are appointed to viewe the children: which yf thei spie vnwardnes in the infante; deformitie, or lacke of lymmes, commaunde it to be slayne.

Thei isoyne not mariages for nobilitie of birth, or abundance of substance, but for beautie, and rather vpo regarde of frute, then of luste.

Certaine also amonge the Yndians haue this custome, that yf thei be of suche pouertie that thei be not able to marye oute their daughters: euen in the floure of her age thei bringe her, or them, forth into the marcate with trompet & drōme, or suche other their noyses of warre: And ther, afire the multitude is comen together, the maiden first vncovereth her self wholie vp to the harde shoulders, on the backe haulfe, to be seene starke naked; and afire that likewise on the bealy. Yf the multitude finde no faulte, but allowe her as worthy to please for her bodye, then marieth she to some one ther, whom she beste liketh.

Megasthenes writeth that vpon diuerse mounteines in Ynde, are people with dogges heades, and lōge clayes, cladde in hydes of beastes, speakinge with no voyce like vnto manne, but barking onely, muche like vnto dogges, with mouthes rough like a grater.

Thei that dwelle aboute the heade of Ganges, haue no nede of anye kinde of meate: for thei liue by the sauour of their frutes. And yf thei fortune to iorney, so that thei thincke to fayle of the sauour when thei would haue it, they cary with them to smell to, at times as thei fainte. But if it fortune those to smelle any horrible stincke, it is as present deathe vnto them, as poyson to vs. It is recorded in writyng, that certaine of those were in Alexandres campe.

We rede also that there are in Inde mē, with one eye and no mo. And certein so notably eared that thei hange downe to their hieles, with suche a largenesse that thei may lye in either of them as vpon a pallet: and so harde, that thei maye reude vp trees with them. Some other also haue but one legge, but vpon the same such a foote, that when the sonne is hote, and he lacketh shadowe, lyenge downe vpon his backe, and holdinge vp his foote, he largely shadoweth his whole bodye.

It is redde that in Clesia certein women haue but ones childe in all their life time: and the children as soone as thei are borne, immediatly to become horcheded. Againe, that there is another

another nacion, much longer lined then we are, which in their youth are horcheared: and in their age, their heare waxeth blacke. They affirme also that ther is another sorte of women that conceiue at fyue yeres olde, and liue not aboue the age of. viii. yeres. Ther are also that lacke neckes, & haue their eyes in their shoulders. Ther are also beside these, certeine saluages with dogges heades, & shackle heared on their bodies, that make a very terrible charringe with their mouthes.

But in these and suche like tales of the Indians, and their countrie: for that a manne had neede of a redie beliefe that should take them for truthe, one had not neede to bee to large: considerynge specially that meane nowe a daies, will skante beleue the reporte of other mens writings, in the things that almost lye vndre their noses.

Ther is a place betwixt Gedrosia and the floude Yndus which is called Cathaius of the Cathaiens that enhabyte it. This people ware an offspring of y Scithias, muche altered from their naturall condicions, and wonted maners, if that that Aitone the Arminiane writeth of them in his storie, be true.

Thei passe (saith he) all other men in quicke smelling. And thei saye of them selues, that though all other menne haue two instrumentes of sight, yet do none se with both two in dede, but thei: all other men in cōparison either to haue no sight, or elles as it ware but with one eye. Their wittinesse is great, but their boasting greater. The whole nacion of the is perswaded, that thei muche passe all other men in knowledge, and the subtilties of sciences. Thei are all of colour shining white, small eied, beardedlesse by nature. Their letters are afre the faciō of the Romaine, all in squares. Thei are diuersely ledde with fonde supersticions, some afre one sorte, and some afre another. But thei are all voyde of the true knowledge which is in Iesus Christe. Some worship the sonne, some y moone. Other, ymages of yoten metalle, make of them an oxe. And thus to sondry suche other monsters, hath this people in sondry wyse deuicid it selfe in supersticion. Thei haue no maner of writen lawes, nor knowe not what we meane whē we speake of faithfulness or trustinesse. And wher (as I said afore) thei haue in al hādi workes a passing subtiltie of wit, yet in the knowledge of heavenly thinges, thei are altogether to learne: that is to saie, thei are vtterly ignorant. A cowardly people and very fearful of death. Yet exercise thei a maner of warre, but that thei handle rather by witte, and policie, then by strength and hardinesse. In their fighte thei vse a kinde of shaftes, and certaine other weapons of flight, vnknewen to other countries.

Their money is a piece of square paper, with their Kynges Image vpon it. And because it cannot be durable: ordre is taken, that when it is soiled or dusked muche, with passing from man to man, thei shall bring it to the coingynge house, and make exchange for newe. All their vtiensiles and necessaries of house, are of golde, siluer, and other metalles. Oile is so delectable emong them, that the kyng onely vseth it, as it ware for a precious ointement. Thus haue we treated of the Yndians, and now to their borderers, the Scithians:

#### ¶ The. ix. Chapitre.

##### ¶ Of Scithia and their sterne maners.

SCithia (a countrie lieng by North) is said of Herodotus, to take the name of Scitha Hercules sonne. Or as Berosus Iudgeth, of an other Scitha, borne of oure greate graundame Araxe, Nothes wife, that dwelt first in that countrie. This people in the beginnyng, pentē within narrow boundes, so in processe by litle and litle, through their valiaunties and force enlarged their limites: that thei became lordes of many countries aboute, and grewē into a great gouernaunce and renoame. Thei stesled first vpon the floude Araxis so fewe in nombre and so base: that no manne thought them worthie the troubling or talkyng of. But gettyng vnto them a certain king, hardie, of great courage, and notable experience in the warres: thei enlarged their land so, that thei made it stretchē on the one parte (whiche is altogether Hille, and Mounteygne) vnto Caucasus, and ouer al the plain vnto the Ocean, & vnto the greate marше of Meotis, and Tanais the floude. From whēce the countrie of Scithia now stretcheth

stretcheth all along toward the East. And because the mountaigne Imaus, running along as the countrie coasteth, devides it in the middes into two haules: the one haulle is called Scithia within Imaus, and the other without (as ye would saie) on this side the Mountie, and beyonde. There neuer medled any power with them, that was able to conquire them; or muche to endamage them. Thei forced Darius, the Kyng of the Persians, with greate dishonour to sike their countrie. Thei slue Cyrus with all his armie. Thei made an ende of Alexandre with all his power. The Romaines sente them thurates thati would warre with them, but thei proued in sine but wordes. Thei are a people not tameable with any toile, bittre warriours, and of greate strength of bodie. At the first very rawe, and with out any ordinarie trade of life: neither knowyng what tillage meant, ne yet hauyng any houses or cotages to dwell in. But wandryng vp and doune the wilde fieldes and dringyng their cattelle afore them, their wiues and their children ridyng in wagons by them. Thei obserued iustice, without constraint of lawe. Thei compted none offence more heinous, then theste. As folke that had nothyng vnder locke nor keye, barre, nor bolte; but altogether in the open fielde. Thei nether occupied golde ne silber. Their chief food was milke and Hony. Against colde and other stormes, thei wrapped their bodies in felles, and hides of beastes, and Mice skynnes. Thei knewe not what Wollen meant, ne any facion of garmente.

This maner of life was in many of the Scithians, but not in all. A greate nombre of them, as thei muche differed in distaunce of place frō other, so differed thei also from other in maners: and vsed a certeine trade of liuyng among them selues, wherof we afaireward will entreate, when we haue saied somewhat more of their facions in generall.

Many of the Scithians delight in murther. And the firste man that he taketh in fight, his blood drincketh he: and offreth vnto his Kyng the heades of all those y he ther sleath. For when he hath so done, he is admitted to be partaker of the butine what so euer it be, wherof he should be otherwise partles. He cutteth of the heade afire this sorte. Firste, with his knife he maketh in it a gashe rōuide aboute like a circle, vnder the eares: then taketh he it by the heare of the crowne, & striketh it of. That done, he sleath it, and twaith the skynne betwixte his handes, vntill it become very souple and soft and krepeth it for a hande kercher. This wille he hang vpo the reinde of his horse, and glorieth not a litle in it. And he that hath moste of suche hādkerchers, is compted the valeaunteste manne. There are many also that sowe together these skynnes of menne, as other doe the skynnes of beastes, and weare them for their clothyng. Some of them stea the right hand of their enemyes beyng slaine, so that the nailles also remain vpon the fingers, and make eouers of them for their quivers.

Many of the slea the whole bodie, and stretche out the skynne vpo certayne stickes fitted for the nones, and so sprede the vpon their Horse. Of the Skulles of the heades thus slaine, thei make measures to drinke in: coueryng them on the outside with rawe Neates leather, and gilding them on the inside, if he be of habilitie. And when any ghest of estimation cometh vnto them, thei offre the to drinke in asmany as thei haue, and declare for a greate bragge of their valeaunteste, that so many thei haue slaine with their owne hande.

Once every yere, all the chief heades of the Scithians, kepe a solempne drinkekyng. At the whiche the maner is, out of one of these Skulles, as out of a vassailling boule; to giue all those the wine that haue slaine an enemye. But he that hath done no suche notable acte, tasteth not therof, but sitteth aparte in a corner with out honour: which is iudged among the a greate reproche. But thei that haue achieved many slaughters, thei dranke of two Goblettes together, which thei haue for that purpose.

The goddess whom thei worshippe and doe sacrifice vnto, are these: Firste and chiefly vnto Vesta, then to Iupiter, and the goddesse of the grounde: for that thei take her to be Iupiters wife. Nexte vnto Apollo and Venus, Mars and Hercules. Yet erecte thei no Chapel, Altare, nor Image to any of these: but onely to Mars: to whom thei offre of euery hundred prisoners that thei take, one for a sacrifice. To the other thei offre bothe horses and other beastes, but specially horses. Swine thei so little esteeme, that thei neither offre

them to any of their goddes ne vouchesauf to keepe them in their Countrie. Looke whom the kyng punisheth with death, his children he also commaundeth to be slain, as many as be males, but the women are pardoned.

With whom the Scythians contentū or make League: after this maner thei doe it. Thei fille an earthen panne with wine, and of the parties that shall strike the League or contentaunte, thei drawe a quantitie of bloude; whiche thei mingle therewith. Then diepe thei into the panne their Cartilasse, their shaftes, their axe, and their darte. That done thei wishe vnto their schies many terrible curses and mischieses, if thei holde not the league or contentaunte. And then drincke thei the wine. And not thei onely that strike the contentautes, but also those that are moste honourable in their compaignie.

The bewriall of their kynges is afre this maner: where the Kyng dieth, those that are of his bloude, rounde his heare, cutte of one of his eares, slice his armes rounde aboute, all to begasse his foreheade & his nose, & shoote him through the liste hande, in thre or foure places. Then laie thei the corps in a Carte, and cary it to the Gerrites, where the Sepulchres of all their Kynges are. And thei dwell vpō the floude Boristhenes, about the place wher it becometh first sailleable. This people when thei haue reuelued it, trenche out a square plotte in the ground very wide and large. And then rippe the bealy of the corps, and bowelle it cleane: clensyng it and drying it from all filthe, and fille it vp with Siler Montanum, Franckeweeste, Smalliche siede, and Anise siede, beaten together in a Mortre. And when thei haue sowed it vp againe close, thei ceare the whole bodie, and conueighe the same in a Carte, to the nexte people vndre the gouernaunce of the Scythians, whiche with honour receiue it, and conueigh it vnto the nexte of their dominion: and so from one to another, vntile it haue passed rounde aboute; to as many peoples as are of their dominion, and be comen againe to the place of bewriall among the Gerrites, whether it is accompanied with a certajin of all the peoples, to whom it hath comen, as thei gathered enerease from place to place. Thei, afre what tyme thei haue laied the corps, cophine and all, vpon a bedde of state, amid the square afore mentioned: sticke doune their iacnettes and speares aboute him, and with stickes laied ouer from one to another, frame as it were a Ciclyng, whiche thei couer with a sumerlalle pale. Then in the reste of the void space, that yet remains in the Cophine made for the nones: thei bewrie one of his dearest lemmans, a waiting manne, a Cooke, a Horsekeeper, a Lacquie, a Buller, and a Horse. Whiche thei at first strangle, and thruste in, together with a portion of all sortes of plate, and of euery sucke thyng as appertained to his householde, or body. And when the yere comes about, then do thei this. Thei take of those that were nerest aboute the Kyng (now there are none aboute the kyng, but thei be Scythians free borne, and sucke at his self doth commaunde: for he maie be serued with no bought slave) of those take thei sennetic and as many of his best horses. And yhe thei haue strangled bothe the men and the horses, thei bowell thei thei horses, stuffe their beadies againe with Chaffe, and sowe theim vp close, and sette thei menne vpon their backes: Then make thei a vouse-ouer roid about thei thei bordie of the grate square, and so dispose these Horse menne enuiron thei some, that thei sieme a farre of, a troupe of linyng horsemen gardyng the kyng.

Thei communes haue also a maner of bewrialle afre a like sorte. When one of theim dieth, his nexte neighbours and kindsfolke laie hym in a Carte, and cary hym aboute to euery of his frindes: whiche at the receipte of hym make a feaste, aswell to the kindsmen, as to all the residue that accompanie thei thei corps. And when thei haue thus caried hym aboute by the space of fouretene daies, he is bewried. All the braine of his heade beyng first piked out, and the skulle rinsed with water cleane. Aboute thei bodie thei sette vp three sparres of woodde slopyng, and restyng one vpon another at the toppes. Rounde aboute these sparres, thei straine cappyng woollen, packyng them as close as thei can. And within betwixt thei sparres, as it were in the midst ouer thei deade, thei set a traie or shallowe trough, where in to thei caste a kinde of stones, that glistereth by fire light.

Thei menne among thei Scythians, do not vse to washe thei selues. But the women vse to poure water vpon their own bodies, and to rubbe themselves against some roughe stone: and

and then with a peece of a Cipresse, Cedre, or Eneence tree, to grate their whole bodie, vntill it be some what hollen or swollen. And then enoint thei bothe that and their face, with certaine medicines for the nones: whereby thei becomee the nexte daie of a very good smell, and (when the medicine is washed awaie) sliche and smothe.

Their commune othe, and the othe of charge in matiers of controuersie, or iudgemente, is by the kynges clothe of estate: by the whiche if a man shalbe tried to haue forsworne himself (as their enchauntours haue a maner to trie with salowe rodde whether thei haue or not) by and by without respighte, he loseth his heade, and all his goodes, whiche tourne to the vse of them that haue proued him periured.

The Massagetes, a people of Scithia in Asie, beyond the sea called Caspius mare in appa- reille and huyng, muche like to the Scithians, and therefore of some so called: vse to fighte bothe on horsebacke and on fote, with suche actiuitie and force, that thei are almoste inuincible in bothe. Their weapons are bowe and arrowes, Lances and Armynge swordes. Their beltes aboute their waste, the ornament of their heades, and their pollerone, are garnished with golde. Their Horses are barbed on the brest, with barbes of gold. Their reines, bridles, and trappour are all of golde. The heades of their Lances are of Brasse, and their Quinters armed with Brasse. As for Siluer and Iron thei occupie none. Eche manne marieth one wife, and yet are the wiues of them all, commune one to another, winche thyng is not vsed emong any of the other Scythians. When so euer any man lasteth for the compaignie of his woma, he hangeth vp his quinter vpon the cartc wherein his wife is caryed by him, and there openly without shame completh.

When any one of this people waxeth very aged, his friendes, acquaintance, and kindes- folke assembled together, make a bealy Sacrifice of hym: slaying as many sheepe besides, as will serue for the fulnesse of the nombre. And when thei haue dressed them, eate parte and parte like, the one with the other. And this kinde of departyng is compted emong them, of all other moste blessed. If any fortune to pine awaie of sicknesse, hym eate thei not: but put in a hole, and throwe earth vpo him. Sory for the losse, that he came not to the feast.

Thei neither sowe nor mowe, but liue by flesshe of suche beastes as thei haue, and suche fishe as Araxe the floude doeth plentifully minister vnto them: and with drinkeynge of Milke, wherof thei make no spare. Thei knowe no goddes but the Sonne: In whose honour thei offre vp Horses in Sacrifice, as beyng in swiftenesse moste like vnto the Sonne.

The Secretines are a debonaire people, and suche louers of quietnesse, that thei shone to entremedle with any other people. Merchantes passe their outmost floude toward them, but thei maie come no nigher. Along the banquetes there, thei sette oute suche thynges, as thei are disposed to selle. Not the Merchantes, but the indwellers of the Countrie. For thei selle to other, and buye of none. And thei sette them in ordre as thei iudge them in price. The buyer cometh, and as he iudgeth them by his eye, to be werthe, without further trade or felowshipp betwixe them, so lieth he downe. And if thei receive it, he de- parteth with y ware. Emong them is there neither whore nor thiefe, nor adulteresse broughte to iudgemente. Neither was it euer heard, that there was a manne slaine emong them. For the feare of their Liues woorketh more strongly with them, then the influ- ences of the Starres. Thei dwelle as it were in the beginning or entryng of the worlde. And for that thei liue afire a chaste sort: thei are neither skourged with Blastynge, ne Hail, ne Pestilence, ne suche other euilles. No manne toucheth a woman here, afire she hath conceived, ne yet in the tyme of her flowres. Thei eate none vncleane beastes, ne knowe what Sacrificyng meaneth. Euey man there is his owne iudge, accordyng to Justice. Therefore are thei not chastised with suche corrections as happen vnto other for synne, but bothe continue long in life, and die without grief.

The Tauruschilus (so called for that thei dwell aboute the mountaigne Taurus) offre as many as fortune to make Shipwracke vpon their shore: to the virginie, whose name ye shall afire heare. And if it fortune any Greke or Grekes, to be driuen theiher, him doe thei Sacrifice after this maner.

Asre what tyme thei haue made prayer after their manner, thei strike of his heade with an hatchet: And (as some saie) tomble doune the carkesse into the Sea, (for this Virgine hath a Chapelle vpon the toppes of a high clieue, hanging ouer the Sea, where this feate is doone), and nail vpon the heade vpon a Gibet. In this pointe of nailing vpon the heade, all the writers agree, but in tombling doune the body, not so, for some affirme that the body is bewriced. The Virgine Deuille, to whom thei Sacrifice: is saied to be Iphigenia Agaméons daughter. Their ceremonies as many as thei take, thus thei handle. Euery manne sueteth of his prisoners head, and carrieth it home: and fasteneth it vpon the ende of a long pole, & setteth it vp: some vpon their house toppes some vpon their chimneys as high as thei can. And no mercie though thei set the so that thei might well see. rounde about them: for thei saie: thei are the wardens and keepers, of all their whole house, Thei hug by spoile, and by warre.

The Agathians are menne verie neat & fine, & greate wearers of golde in their appareill. Thei occupie their women in commune, so that thei seme all of one kindred, and one householde: neuer stryving nor grudgyng one with another, muche like in body vnto the Thracians.

The Neartens vse the manners of the Scythians. This people thei somer before that Darius set furthe, were constrained for the greate multitude of Serpentes y were bredde in their quaitres, to change their dwelling place. Thei verily doe belieue, and wille sweate it: that euery yere ones for a certaine daies, thei become Woulues, and retourne againe into their former shape and state.

The Antropophagites (so called for that thei liue by mannes fleshe) of all manne, are the worste condicioned, without lawe, or officer, apparcelled like the Scythians: but in language like vnto no bodye but them selues.

The Melanchleni do all weage blacke, as their name dothe signifie. And of these also are eaters of mannes fleshe: so manie as folowe the trade of the Scythians.

The Budines are a great nation, and a populous, graye eyed, & redde headed al. Their head cite is Gelonc, wherof thei are also called-Gelonites. Thei kepe euery thiede yere a reuelle in the honour of Bacchus: wherat thei make reuelle in dede, yea, reuell route. Thei ware sometime Griekes, whiche put of fro their countrie, scatted them selues there, And by processe, lonng the proprietie of their owne tongue, became in language haufte Grekes, and haufte Scythians. Yet are the Gelonites both in language and liuinge, different from the Budines. For the Budines being native of the place, are breeders of Cattelie: The Gelonites, occupieng the same: liue by corne, and haue their frute yarden. Neyther lyke in colour ne countenance to the other. All their quartres are verye fall, and thicke of trees. It hath also many meres and greates. In and aboute the whiche thei take Otters, and Beuers, & many other beastes: of whose skinnes they make them pilches, and berkins.

The Lircis liue by woodmanshippe, and huntynge, and asre this manner. Their countrie beinge also very thicke of trees, thei vse to climbe suche as seemeth them beste: and there await their game. At the foote of euery mannes tree lieth a dogge, and a horse well taughte to couche flatte on the bealy, as lowe as can bee. When the beaste cometh within daungier, he shoteth. And yf he hitte, he streighte cometh downe, taketh his horse backe; & foloweth with his hoüde.

The Argippians dwell vnder the foote of the high mountains. Men whiche fro their birthe are bolde, bothe the males and the females. Their noyses tourne vp like a shoing horn, and their chinnes; be great out of measure. The sounde of their voice vnlike to all other: ther apperill asre the sorte of the Scythians. Thei haue small regard to bridling: by the reason wherof thei haue small store of cattail. Thei lie vnder trees, which in the winter thei couter ouer with a white kinde of felts, and in the somer take the same awaye, and lie vnder the open tree. Ther is no manne that wil harme them, for that: thei are compted holy halowed: neither haue thei anye kinde of armour, or weapen of warre. These men haue the arbitrement of their neighbours, controuersies rounde aboute. And as thei determine so are thei ended. Who so lieth vnto them, is saufe as in sanctuary.

The Iscedonnes haue this proprietie. When so euer any mannes father tier, dieth: all his kin-folke bringe euery man one beaſt or other to the houſe of ſonne that kepeth the funeral. Which whē they haue killed and miſed: they miſe alſo the body of the deade. And bothe the fleſhes beinge mingled together, they fall to the banket. Then take they the dead mannes heade, & pike the braine oute cleane, and all other moiſtures and ragges, and when they haue giuē it, they vse it for a representaciō of the partie departed. Solemniſing eury yere furthe, the memoriall, with newe ceremonies, and mo. This doeth the ſonne for the father, and the father for the ſonne, as the Grekes kepe their birthe daies.

Theſe are alſo ſayde to be verye iuste dealers, & their wiues to be as valeaunte and haſtie as the huſbādes. Suche haue the maners of the Scithians bene. But afterwarde beinge ſubdued by the Tartares, and wearing by proceſſe into their maners and ordinaunces: they nowe liue all after one ſorte, and vnder one name.

¶ The. x. Chapter.

¶ Of Tartarie, and the maners and power of the Tartarians.

Tartaria, otherwiſe called Mongal: As Vincentius wryteth, is in that parte of the earth where the Eaſte and the North ioyne together. It had vpon the Eaſte, the londe of the Katherines and Solangores, on the South, the Saracens: on the Weſte the Naymaniens, & on the North is encloued with the ocean. It hath the name of the floude Tartar that runneth by it. A country very hilly, and full of mountaines. And where it is champe in, myngled with ſāde and grāſſe. Barreine, except it be in places where it is moyſted with floudes, which are very fewe. And therefore it is muche waſte, and thinly inhabited. Ther is not in it one Citie, ne one village beſide Cracuris. And wood in the moſte parte of the country ſo ſcarke, that the inhabitants are ſaine to make their fyre, and dreſſe their meate with the ſtie, dong of neate and horses. The ſyer intemperate and wonderfull. Thondre, and lightning is ſomer ſo terrible, that ſondry do preſently die for very feare. Nowe is it boilinge hote, and by and by bittere colde, and plenty of ſnowe. Suche ſtronge windes ſometime, that it ſtatieth horse and man, and bloweth of the rider: tearchth vp trees by the rootes, and doeth muche harme. In wintre it neuer raineth ther, and in ſomer very often. But ſo ſlenderly, that the earth is ſcarke wette with al. And yet is ther great ſtore of Cattail: as Camelles, neate. &c. And horses and mares, in ſuche plenty, as I beleue no parte of the earth hath againe. It was firſt inhabited of ſoure peoples. Of the Ieccha Mongalles that is to ſaye, the greate Mongalles. The Sumongalles, that is to ſaye the watre Mongalles, whiche called them ſelues Tartares, of the floude Tartar whose neighbours they are.

The thirde people were called Merchates, and the fourth: Métrites. There was no difference betwixte them either in body or language; but al aſtre one ſorte and ſcicion. Their behauiour was in the beginning very brute, and farre oute of ordre, without lawe or diſcipline, or any good ſcicion. They liued amonge the Scithians, and kept herdes of cattail in very baſe ſtate and condition: and were tributaries to all their neighbours. But within a while aſtre, they diuided them ſelues as it were into wardes, to euery of the which was appointed a capitaine: in whose deuises and comentes conſiſted thourſe of the whole. Yet were they tributaries to the Naimānes (their next neighbours) vntill Canguſta by a certaine prophecie was choſen their kyng. He aſſone as he had receiued the gouernance, aboliſhed all worſhippe of deuilles, and commaunded by commune decree that all the whole nation ſhould honour the highe God euerlaſting: by whose providence he would ſeme to haue receiued the kingdome, it was further decreed that as manye as were of age to beare armour, ſhould be preſte, and ready with the king at a certeyne daye. The multitude that ſerued for their warres, was thus diſtributed. Their capitaines ouer ten (which by a terme borrowed of the French; we calle Diſceners, are at the cōmaundement of the Centurians. And the Centurians obied the Millenarie, that had charge of a thouſande. And he againe was ſubiecte

to the grande Coronelle that had charge ouer ten thousande: about the whicke nombre the mounted no degree of captaines.

This done, to proue the obedience of his subiectes, he commaunded seuen somes of the Princes or Dukes whicke before had governed the people: to be slaine by the hailes of their owne fathers, and mothers. Whiche thinge although it ware muche againste their hartes, and an horrible diede, yet did thei it. Partely vpon the feare of the residew of the people: and partly vpon conscience of their obediēce. For why, the people thought when thei sawe him begyn afre this sorte: thei had had a god amongst them. So that in disobeying of his commaundemente, thei thought thei should not haue disobeyed a king but God him selfe.

Canguista takinge stomacke with this power, firste subdued those Scythians that bordered vpon him, and made them tributaries. And where other afore had bene tributaries: also vnto them: now receiued he in that one peoples righte, tribute of many. Then settinge vpon those that ware further off, he had suche prosperous successe that from Scithia to the sonne risinge, and fro thence to the middle earthe sea, and beyonde: he broughte all together vnder his subjection. So that he moughte nowe worthely wryte him selfe highe Governour, and Emperour of the Este.

The Tartares are very deformed, litle of bodie for the moste parte; hauyng great stiepe eyes: and yet so heary on the eye liddes, that there sheweth but litle in open sight. Plaster faced and beardless, sauynge vpon the vpper lippe, and a litle about the pointe of the chinne: thei haue a fewe heares as it were pricked in with Bodkins. Thei be commonly all shendred in the waste. Thei shawe the hindre houlfe of the heade, rounde aboute by the croune, from one eare to another: compassyng towards the nape of the necke after suche a facion, that the pulle behind sheweth muche like the face of a bearded manne. On the other parte, thei suffre their heare to growe at lengthe like our women: whiche thei deuide into two tresses; or braudes, and bryng aboute to fasten behinde their eares. And this maner of shauyng, do thei vse also that dwelle among them, of what nacion so euer thei be. Thei them selues are very light and nimble: good on Horse, but naughte on foote. All from the moste to the leaste, as well the women as the menne: doe ride either vpon Geldynges, or Kien, where so euer thei become. For stoned Horses thei occupie none, ne yet Gelding that is a striker, and light of his heles. Their bridelles are trimmed with muche gold, siluer, and precious stones: And it is compted a ioly thyng among them: to haue a great sort of siluer sounded belles, gnynglyng aboute their horse neckes. Their speache is very chourlish and loude. Their singyng is like the bawlyng of Woulues. When thei drincke, thei shake the heade: and drincke thei do very often euen vnto dröckenesse, wherein thei glorie muche. Their dwelling is neither in townes ne Bouroughes. But in the fieldes abroad, afre the maner of the ancient Scythians in tentes. And the rather so, for that thei are all moste generally cattell mastrers. In the wintre tyme thei are wüt to drawe to the plaines; & in the Somer season, to the mountaignes & hillie places for the better pasture. Thei make them Teates, or elles rounde cotages of yrickes, or of Felte vnderette with smothre poles. In the middes thei make a round window that ginch the lighte, & letteth out the smoke. In the middes of the Tēt, is their fire, aboute the whiche their wife and their children doe sitte. Thei merne delight muche in dartyng, shooting, and wrastelyng. Thei are mercifull good hunters, to the whiche thei go armed at all pieces. And asson as thei espie the beaste, thei come costyng together rounde aboute and enclose her. And when every manne hath throwen his dart, or shotte his arrowe: whilst the beaste is troubled & amased with the stripes, thei steppe in to her & slea her. Thei weither vse breade ne bakynge: table clothe ne napkin.

Thei beleeue that there is one GOD that made all thynges, bodily & ghostly, sene or vn-sene, and hym thei honour: but not with any maner of Sacrifice or ceremonie. Thei make thei selues lile puppettes of silke or of felte, or of thrumme, like vnto menne: whiche thei sette vp vpon eche side of their Tentes, and do the muche reuerence, beseeching them to take heed to their cattelle. To these thei offre the first milke of all their milche cattell, of what kinde so euer thei be. And before thei begin either to eate or drinke aught, thei sette

sette a porcion thereof before them: Looke what beaste they kille to be eaten, they reserve the harte all nighte in some covered cuppe, and the nexte morninge seath it and eat it.

Thei worshipp also and Sacrifice to the Sonne, Moone, and elementes foure. To Cham also their Lorde and Kyng; thei do very deuoute honour and Sacrifice: supposing him to be the sonne of God, and to haue no pierce in the whole worlde: neither can they abide to heare any other manne name hym.

This people so despiseth al other men, and thincke them selues so farre to surmount them in wisdom and goodnes: that they abhorre to speake to them, or to compaignie with them. They call the Pope and all Christen meane, Dogges and Idolatres: because they honour stones and blocques. And they them selues (beyng giuen to deuilshe supersticions) are markers of dreames, & haue dreame readers among them: as well to enterprete their sweuens, as to aske knowledg of Idoles. In whom they are perswaded that God speaketh: and therefore acording to their answeres, frame them selues to do. They marke many seasons, and specially haue regarde to the chaunges of the Moone. Yet make they for no season, ne change, any singular holi daie or obseruance: but ilike for them all indifferently. They are of so greedie a concitosenesse, and desire, that if anyof them se saught, that he coucitteth to haue; and cannot obtiein with the good wille of the owner: if it appertaigne to no Tartarre, he will haue it by force. And they thincke (through a certain ordonnance that their Kyng made) they offende not therein. For suche a commaundement had they of Cangusta, and Cham, their firste Kynges: That if it fortune any Tartarre, or Tartares seraunt, to finde in his waie, horse, man, or womā, without the kinges lettres or his saulfoūite: he should take it, him, her, or them as his owne for cure.

To suche as lacke money they lende, but for shamefull gaines: that is to saie, two shillynges of the pounde for euery Moneth. And if it fortune ye to faile to make paiement at the daie: ye shall also be forced to paie the interest, acording to the rate of the Vsarie. That is to saie, of euery tenth penie, one.

They do so polle and oppresse their tributaries, with subsidies, taxes and tallages, as neuer did people but they, that euer manne redde of. It is beyonde belief to saie. They euer coucite, and as Lordes of all, do rape, and rende from other, and neuer recompence aught. No, the begger that liueth on almose, getteth not an aguellette of hym. Yet haue they this one praise worthie propertie, that if he fortune to finde them at meate: they neither shutt the doore against hym, ne thruste him out, if he be disposed to eate, but charitably bidde them, and parte with them suche as they haue. But they fiede the vncleliest in the worlde, as I haue saied, without tableclothe, napkinne, or towell to couer the borde, or to wipe at meate, or afire. For they neither washe hande, face, ne body, ne any garment that they weare. They neither eate bread, nor make bread, nor sallottes nor potage, nor any kinde of Pult. But no manner of fleshe cometh to them: amisse. Dogges, Cattes, Horses and rattes. Yea, sometime to shewe their crueltie, and to satisfie their vengeance, the bodies of suche their enemies, as they haue taken, they vse to roste by a greate fire: and when they bee assembled a good nombre together, they teare them of the spittes like Wolues, with their tieth, and deuoure the. And afterward drinke vp the bloude, whiche they reserve afore hande for the bones. Otherwise they vse to drinke Milke. They haue no wine of the coutrie it self, but suche as is brought into thei they drinke very greedie. They vse to Loue one another heade, and euer as they take a Loue to eate her, saieing: this wille I doe to our enemies. It is compted a greate offence among them to suffre drinke, or a piece of meate to be loste. They neuer therefore giue the bone to the Dogge, till they haue eaten out the marrowe. They neuer eate beaste (suche vile nigardes they are) as long as the same is soude & in good Wyng: but whē it fortuneth to be harte, sicke, or sebled by age, then bewrie they it in their beales. They are greate sparers, & contente with small change, and litle food. They drinke in the mornyng, a gublet full of Milke or twaine, whiche serueth them sometime for their whole daies food.

The men and the women moste communely are appareilled ylike. The men weare vpon their heades shallowe copin tacks, comyng out behinde with a taile of a handefull and a halfe long.

long, and as much in breadth: whiche they fasten vnder their chinnes, for falling or blowing of, with a couple of strynges of ribbande lace, as we doe our nighte cappes. Their married women wear on their heades, fine wicke Basquettes of a foote and a halfe long: rounde, and flatte on the topp like a barrell. Whiche are either garnished with changeable silkes, or the gayest parte of the Peockes feathers, and sette with golde and stowes of sondrie sortes. As for the residue of their bodie, they wear according to their abilitie, bothe men and women, Skarlet or Veluet, or other silkes. They weare coates of a strange facion, open on the left side, whiche they put on accordingly, and fasten with fowre or five Buttons. Their Somer wicdes are all commonly blacke: and those that they weare in Winter and foule weather, white: and nener lower then the knee. Wearing fures (wherein they muche delight) they weare not the furre inward, as we commonly doe: but contrariwise the heare outward, that they maie enioie the pleasure of the sheve.

It is harde to discern by the appareil the maide, fro the wife, or the woman fro the manne; so like armed do the menne and the womē go. They weare briechet, the one and the other. When they shal go to the skirmish, or to battaille, some couer their armes (whiche at all other tymes are naked) with plates of iron, buckeled together alonger, in many pieces, that they may the easelier sturte their armes. Some doe thesame with many foldes of Leather: wherwith they also arme their head. They cannot handle a target: nor but fewes of them a lance or a long sword. They haue curtlasses of. iiii. quarters longe: not double edged but backed. They fighte all with a quarter blowe, & neither right downe, ne foyning. They be very redy on horsebacke, and very skilful archers. He is counted moste valētute, that best obserueth the commaundement and the obedience dewe to his capitaine. They haue no wages for their souldie, yet are they prest and ready in all affaires, and all commaundementes. In battayle, and otherwise wher oughte is to be done, very politike and experte. The princes and capitaines entre not the battie, but standyng aloof, crye vnto their men, and harden them on: lookinge diligently aboute on euery side what is needefull to be done. Sometime to make the armye sieme the greater, and the more terrible to the enemye: they set vp on horsebacke their wiues and their children, yea and men made of cloutes. It is no vilany amonge them to flye: if any thinge maye eyther be sauēd or wonne by it. When they will shoote, they vname their righte arme, and then let they flye with suche violence, that it pearceth all kinde of armour. They giue the onset flockinge in plumpes, and likewise in plumpes they flye. And in the flighte they so shoote backe ward behind them, that they slea many of their enemies pursuinge the chase. And when they perceiue their enemies dispersed by pursuinge the chase, or not to fighte any thinge wholie together: soudainly retourninge, they beginne a neuwe onset with a hayle of shotte, neither sparing horse ne mā. So that oftentimes they ouercome when they are thoughte to be vāquished. When they come to enuade any quartre or countrie, they deuide their armie, and sette vpon it on euery porte: so that the inhabitours can neither haue laisure to assemble and resiste, ne waye to escape. Thus are they alwaye sure of the victory, whiche they knytte vp with moste proude crueltie. Neither springe manne woman ne childe, olde ne younge saving the artificer onely, whom they reserue for their own vses. And this slaughter make they afire this maner. When they haue all taken them, they distribute them to their Centurians: who committe them againe to the slaues: to euery one fewer or more accordinge to the multitude. And when the slaues haue all slayne them as bouchers kylle hogges: then for a terrour to al other ther about: of euery thousande of  $\text{ḡ}$  dead they take one, and hange him vp by the heles vpon a stake, amydde these deade bodies: and so ordre his heade as though it appiered by his facion or maner of hanginge, that he yet bothe harkened the complaine of his felowes, and lessened them againe. Many of the Tartarres when the bodies lie freshe bleding on the grounde, laye them downe alonge, and sucke of  $\text{ḡ}$  bloud a full gloute.

They kepe faith to no manne, howe depely so euer they binde them selues therevnto. They deale yet worse with those that they ouer come with force. The maidens and younge women they deflowre, and defile as they come to hande, neither do they iudge it any dishonour. The beautifuller sorte they lead away with thē: and in extreame misery, constraine them to be their slaues all their lyfe longe. Of all other they are moste vubrieded in bechery. For al-  
though

though thei marrye as many wiues as thei hute, and are able to kepe: no degre prohibited, but mother, daughter, and sister: yet are thei as ricke hougiers with mankind, and with beastes, as the Saracenes are, and no punishmente for it amonge them. The woman that thei marie, thei neuer take as wife, ne receiue any dowrie with her, vntill she haue borne a childe. So that if she be barren he maye cause her vp; and marry another.

This is a notable meruaile, that though amonge thei many women haue but one manne; yet thei neuer lightly falle out, ne brawle one with another for him. And yet are thei merue paticiale in thei loue: shewing muche more fauour to one then another, and goynge fro the bedde of the one, straighte to the bedde of an other. The women haue their scerrall tetes and householdes: And yet liue verye chastely, and true to their housebandes. For bothe the manne and the woman taken in adultery, suffre death by the lawe.

Those that are not occupied for y warres, driue the cattelle a ficelde, and there kepe them. Thei hunte, and exercise themselves in wrastlinge, other thinge doe thei not. The care of prouision for meate and drincke, appaile and household, they betake to the women. This people hath many superstitious toyes. It is a heinous matier with them, to touche y fier, or take fleshe out of a pottle with a knife. Thei hewe or choppe no manner of thing by the fire, leasse by any maner of meanes, thei might fortune to hurte the thing which alway they haue in reuerence, and iudge to be the cleser, and purifier of al thinges. To laye them downe to reate vpon the whippe that thei stirre they horse with (for spures they vse none) or to touche their shaftes therewith, in no wise thei wyll not. Thei neither kille younge birdes, ne take them in the neste or other waies. Thei beate not the horse with the bridle. Thei breake not one bone with another. Thei are ware, not to spill any sponc meate, or drincke, specially milke. No manne pisseth within the compass of their sojourning place. And if any one of self willed stubbornesse should do it, he ware sure withoute all mercy to die for it. But if necessitie constraine the to do it (as it often happeneth) then the tente of hym that did it, with all that is in it, muste be clenched and purified after this maner. They make two fires, three strides one from another. And by eche fire thei pitch downe a laueline. Vpon them is tied a lyne stretchyng fro the one to the other, and covered ouer with buckeraime. Betwene these ii. lauelins, as through a gate, muste all thinges passe that are to be purified. Two women (to whom this office belongeth) stande, on either side one, sprinckelinge on watre, and misblyng certaine verses. No straigier, of what dignitie so euer he be, or of howe great importance so euer the cause of his comynge be: is admitted to the kinges sighte before he be purified. He that treadeth vpon the thresholde of the tente wherein thei kinge, or anye of his chieftaines lyeth, dieth for it in the place. If any manne bite a gobet, greater than he is able to swallowe, so that he be constrained to put it out of his mouth againe: thei by and by make a hole vndre the tent, and ther draw him out, and cruelly slea him. Many other thinges ther are: which thei comyle for faultes beyonde all forgiuennesse. But to slea mā, to enuade a nother mannes country, cotrary to all righte and reason, to heruac them of their goodes and possessions, to breake the preceptes of God, thei esteime as nothinge. Thei haue a beleefe that afire this life thei shal liue for enter in another worlde (but what maner of worlde thei cannot telle) & ther receiue rewardes for their well doynings. When any of the falleth sieke, & lieth at the pointe of deathe, thei sticke vp a laueline with a peece of blacke clothe at the dore of the tēte wher he lieth, that none come in as they passe by. For no manne when he seeth this, dare entre thether vnalled.

Afere what time the sicke is dead, his whole house gather together, and priuily conuicight the corps into some place withoute the tente, chosen for y purpose. Ther cut they out a trenche, brood and deepe enoughe to sette vp another lytle tent in: so hat the toppe of the tent maye be well within the grounde. In that thei prepare a table with a banket: at the whiche thei sette the deade bodye in his bestie appaile. And so together, as it ware with one hāde, couer all with earth againe. Thei beury with him also some beaste of bourden, and a horse ready saddled and appointed to ride. The gentilemē by their life time, appointe out a staut (whome thei marke with their brande) to be specially beuryed with him when he dieth. And this do. thei vpon perswasion of a life in a nother worlde, wher thei

would be loth to lacke these necessaries. Then doe the deades friendes take another horse, and stea him. And when they haue eaten the fleshe, they stuffe the hide full of haye, and sowe it againe together and sette it vp ouer the graue vpon foure poles, in remembrance of the deade. The bones do the two ordenarie women burne, for the clensing and purifenge of the soule. But the gentlemen, and thei of higher degree, handle the hide afire another maner. They cut it out into very fine thonges, to asmuche lengthe as they can, and measure oute asmuche grounde about the Sepulchre as the thonge wille stretche vnto. For so muche ground thincke they shall the deade haue in a nother worlde. At the thirtieth daye they ende their mourning.

Certaine of the Tartarres, professing the name of Christe, yet farre from his righteousnes: when their parentes waxe aged, to haste their death, crame the with gobins of fatte. Whē thei die, thei burne them to pouldre, whiche thei reserue as a precious Jewelle, to strawe vpon their meate euery daie. But to declare with what solempnitie and ioyfulness thei sette vp their newe Kyng, afire the death of tholde: because it ware to longe a thyng, bothe for the reader & writer to set out at length, I will shewe you in brief theffecte.

Abrode in the fieldes, in a fire plaine ordinarie for the purpose: all the Dukes, Erles, Barons, Lordes, and the reste of the nobilitie, together with the people of the whole kyngdome, do assemble. Then take thei hym, to whō the crowne is due, either by succession, or by election. And when thei haue set hym vp in a throne of Golde: thei all fall doune on their knees, and together with one voice crie out a loude, afire this maner. We require the, yea, we will and commaunde the, to take the rule & gouernaunce of vs. He answereth, if ye will haue me doe so, then must ye of necessitie be redy to do whatsoeuer I commaunde ye. To come when I calle ye, to go whether so euer I sende ye, to slea whom so euer I commaunde ye, without staieng or stacking. And to put the whole kingdome and rule in my handes, when thei haue answered, we are content: Saieit he againe, from hencefurtho then the speache of my mouth, shalbe my swerde. To this the people yealde with greute shoutes, and reioisynge. In the meane while the princes and the nobles, taking the king out of his throne, spread abroad on the grounde a peece of felte: vpon the whiche, thei cause hym in simple sorte to sitte doune, and thus saie to hym. Looke vp, and remember GOD aboue the. And now looke doune also, and behold this felte vndre the. If thou gouerne welles, thou shalt haue all euen as thou wouldest wishe it. But if contrary wise, thou shalt so be brought doune againe, and so nighe be bereued of all: that thou shalt not haue so muche, as this poore felte left the, wherupon thou sittest. This ones saied, thei sette in to hym, of all his viues the diereſt derlyng. And lifyng vp the felte aboue, haile hym by the name of Emperour, & her by the name of Emperesse. Then come there preetes streight from al countries, and peoples of his dominion: and all the Treasoures that the kyng, his predecessour lefte, are brought him. Of the whiche he giueth giftes to al the princes and high estates: commaundyn the reste to be kepte for himself, and so dissoloth the Parliament as it ware.

In his hande and power is then altogether, no manne can: or though he can, he dare not saie this is myne, or this is his. No man maie dwelle in any parte of the lande, but in that wherovnto he is appointed. The Emperour hymself appointeth the Dukes: the Dukes, the Millenars: the Millenars, the Centurians: and thei the Disniers: and the Disniers the residewe. The seale that he useth hath this superscription. GOD in heauen, and Clutchuth Cham in earth, the force of God, and Emperour of all menne. He hath fise armies of greute multitude and force: and fise chieftines, by whom he subdueth all that stande against hym. He hymself neuer speaketh to any foreine ambassadours, nor admitteth the to his presence, as is aboue saied: excepte bothe thei and their giftes (without the whiche specially thei maie not come) bee purified by the ordenarie women. The Kyng answereth by another mannes mouth. And the persone by whom he answereth, be he neuer so honourable, for the tyme that he becometh the kynges mouth, kneleth on his knees and giueth so diligent care, that he swaruech not from the Kyng in one woorde. For it is not lawefull for any manne, to change the kynges wordes: ne for any man in any wise, to replie against suche sentēce

senſe as he giueth. He neuer drincketh in open preſence, but ſome body firſt ſing to hym, or plaie vpon ſome inſtruments of Muſicque.

The gentlemen and menne of honour when they ride, haue a plannell borne afore them, on a laurell ende, to kcepe awake the Sonne. And as it is ſaid, the womē likewise. Theſe were the maners and faſions of the Tartarres, for a two hundred yeres paſte.

The Georgians, whom the Tartarres aboute the ſame tyme did ſubdue: were Chriſtians, aſtre the fourme of the Greke Churche. Their ware neighbours to the Perſians. Their dominions ſtretched out a great length, from Paleſtine in-lewre to the mountignes called Caſpij. They had eighte Bithopries: and one Catholicke: that is to ſaie, one generall biſhoppe, whiche was to them, as our Metropolitan to vs. At the firſt they were ſubiect to the Patriarche of Antioche. Meane of greete crueltie and hardineſſe. They all ſhaued their crownes: the Laeticke ſquare, the Clercques rounde. Their women (certeine of them) had the ordre of Knighthode, and ware trained to the warres. The Georgians when they ware ſette, ordered, and raunged in the ſelle, and ware at point to ioyne the batteill: vsed to drincke of a gourdfull of ſtrong wine, aboute the biggenes of a mannes fiſt. And to ſette vpon their enemies: muche amended in courage.

Their Clercques, whiche we calle the Spirituallic, mighte vſe bothe Simonie and vsurie at their wille. There was continuall hatred betwixte Pharienians and them. For the Armenians ware, alſo Chriſtians, before the Tartarres had ſubdued the Georgians and the. But they differed in many thinges, from the helief and faſions of the true Church. They knewe no Chriſtemas daie, no ſigilles, nor the ſoure quartre faſtes, whiche we call Embryng daies. They faſted not on Eaſter eue, becauſe (ſaie they) that Chriſt roſe that daie aboute euen tide. Vpon euery Saturdaje, betwixte Eaſter and Whitsontide, they did eate fleſhe. They ware greete faſters, and beganne their Lent three wekes afore vs: and ſo ſtraightly faſted it, that vpon the Wedneſdaje and Fridaie, they neither eate any kinde of fiſhe, ne aughte wherin was wine, or oyle. Belieuing that by that draeke wiſe on theſe twoo daies: ſynned more then if he had bene at the ſewes with a whore. On the Monedaie they abſteined from all maner of meate. On Tewſdaje and Thurſdaje, they did eate but one meale. Wedneſdaje and Fridaie, nothyng at all. Saturdaje and Sondaje, they eate fleſhe and made luſtic chiere. Through the whole Lent, no manne ſaid Maſſe but on Saturdaies and Sondais. Nor yet on the Fridais throughout the whole yere: for they thought, then, that they brake their faſt. They admitted to the houſe, as well children of two monethes olde, as all other indifferently. When they went to Maſſe, they vsed to put no water in the wine. They abſteined from Hares fleſhe, Beany fleſhe, Crows, and ſuche other, as the Grekes did, and Iewes do. Their Chalices ware of Glaſſe, and of Tree. Some ſaid Maſſe without either albe or veſtemēt, or any mane ſuche ornamēt. Some onely with thornamēt of Deacon or Sābdacōn. They ware all haire vsurers, and Simonies: bothe ſpiritual and Temporal, as the Georgians ware. Their prieſtes ſtudied Sotheſaeng and Nigromancie. Their Spirituallic vsed lunckettyng oftener then the Laeticke.

They married, but aſtre the death of the wife, it was not lawefull for the houſebando to marie againe, nor for the wife, aſtre the death of the houſebando. If the wife ware a whore, the Biſhoppe gaue hym leaue to put her awaie, and marie another. As for the fire of Purgatorie they knewe nothing of it. They denied alſo verie ſtilly, that there ware two natures in Chriſte. The Georgians ſaid that they ſwarred from the truth of Chriſtes Religion, in thirte pointes of articles.

#### ¶ The. xi. Chapitre.

##### ¶ Of Turcque, and of the maners, Lawes, and Ordenaunces of the Turcques.

The lande whiche now is called Turcque: hath on Theaſt Armenia the more, & ſomewhat endlong to the Sea of the Cilicians: lauyng on the Northe, the Sea named Euxinus. There are in it many countres contained: As Lichaonia, whose heade cite is Iconium. Cappadocia with her heade cite, named Ceſarea. Iſauria, whiche hath for the chief cite Seleucia.

Licia, whiche now is called Briquix. Ionix: now called Quisquoun, in the whiche standeth Ephesus. Paphlagonia, and in it Germanopolis. And Leuech: that hath for the heade Citie Trapezus. All this countrie that now is called Turquie, is not inhabited by one seuerall nation, but there be in it Turques, Grekes, Armenians, Saracenes, Iacobites, Nestorians, Iewes and Christians. Whiche lue for the most parte, according to the Traditions and Ordenances, that Mahomet the countrefect Prophete, gaue vnto the Saracenes (a people of Arabia) the yere of our Lorde and Saviour Iesus Christe. vi. hundred and. xxix. A manne whom I can not telle whether I maye calle an Arablane or a Persiā. For ther be authorities of writers on either behalfe. His father was an idolastre afre the manner of the heathen. His mother an Iemalite leaning to the lawe of the Iewes. And whilset in his childehode, his mother taught him afre one sorte, & his father afre another: thei printed in hym suche a doubtfull belief, y when he came to age be cleaue to neither. But as a manne of subtyle and guilefull wytte, afre what time he had bene longe comming amonst menne of the Christian religion: he draue a drift, deuised one of both lawes (the olde and the newe) how he mighte notably enfeeble the worlde.

He said the Iewes did wickedly to denie Christe w<sup>ch</sup> be borne of the virgine Mary, seinge the prophetes (mē of great holinesse, & inspired with the holy ghost) had foreschewed the same, & warned mē of many yeres passed to looke for him: Contrariwyse he said to the Christians thei ware very fonde to beloue that Iesus, so dierly beloved of God, and borne of a virgine, would suffre those vilanies and tormentes of the Iewes.

Martinius Segonius Nonomotanus, in his booke of the Sepulchre of Christe our King, writeth that the Turkes, and Saracenes by an ancient opinion received from Machomet: do haughe Christian menne to skorne, that seke thether with so greake reuerence. Saying that Christ y prophot of all prophetes endowed with the spirite of God, and voyde of all earthly corruption: had ther no sepulchre in verye dyede, for that he being a spirituall body coeined by the breath of y holy ghost coulde not suffre, but should come againe to be iudge of the Gentiles. This saith Segonius, and many other thinges sounding to like effecte: which the Mahometeines are wile to throwe out against the Christians, both foolishly and wickedly. When this countrefect prophete had sanded his secte with these wicked opinions: he gaue them his lawe, and sorte of religion. Against the whiche leaue any man of righte judgemente should strewards write or dispute (as against a pestilent and filthie persuasion) he wrote a lawe in his Alcorane that it should be death to as many as should reason or disput vpon it. Whereby he euidently declared, that ther was nothing godly or goodly therein. For why should he elles haue so raked it vp in the ashes, and forbidden it to be examined: so that the people coulde neuer come to knowledg what manner of thinge it is that thei beleue in. In the gining of his lawe; he vsed muche the counsell & helpe of the wicke Sergius: of the wicked secte of the Nestorians. And to the ende it might please the more vniuersally: he patched it vp together with peeces of all manner of sectes: He thoughte it good to sette out Christ with the beste, affirminge that he was a manne (excelling in all holinesse and vertue. Yea he exalted him to a more heigth then was applicable to the nature of mā, calling him the worde, the spirite, the soule of GOD, borne out of a virgines wombe, whom he also with many wondrefull praises magnified. He confirmed with his consente, the miracles, and story of the gospel, as farre as it varieth not from his Alcorane.

The Goddesse said he ware corrupte by the disciples of the Apostles. And ther fore it behoued his Alcorane to be made, for to correcte and amende them. Thus fauning into fauour with the Christiāns, he would haue bene christened of Sergius. Then to procure, & moue other also to fauour his proceedings: he denied with the Sabellians the Trinitie. With y Manicheis he made two goddes. With Eunomius, he denied that the father and the sonne ware equal. With Macedonius he said that the holy ghoste was a creature, or substance treated. With the Nicholaites he allowed the hauinge of many wifes at ones. He allowed also the olde testament. Althoughe sayd he, it ware in certain places faultie. And these fondchesses did he beswete with a wondrefull lure of the thinges that menne in this lyfe moote desire. Lettinge louse to as many as helde of him, the bridle of alchery and

and luste. And for that cause doth this contagious euill sprede it self so wide into innumerable contries. So if a mā at this day compare the nombre of them that are by him seduced, with the other that remaine in the doctrine of faith: he shal easelie perceiue the great odde, warre it but herin. That wher Europe alone, (and not at that by a great deale) staideth in the belief of Christe: almoste all Asie, and Africke, yea and a greates peece of Europe standeth in the Turkishe belief of Mahomete.

The Saracenes that firste receiued the brainesicke wickednesse of this countrefeicte prophete, dwelle in that parte of Arabia, that is called Petrea: wher it entrecommuneth with lewy on the one side, and with Egypt on the other. So named of Sétractum, a place nere vnto the Nabatheis, or rather as they woulde haue it them selues, of Sara, Abrahams wife.

Wherupon they yet stickte faste in this opinion, y<sup>e</sup> thei onely of al mē are the lawfull heires of Goddes behest. Thei gaue them selues to tilthe, and cattle, and to the warres. But the greater parte so the warres. And therefore at what time they ware hired of Heraclius in the warres againste the Persians: when he had gotten the victory, and thei perceiued them selues to be defrauded by him: kindled with the angre of the villanye thei had done vnto them, by the counsell and perswasion of Mahomet (who tooke vpon him to be their capitaine) thei forsake Heraclius. Andgoing into Siria, enuaded Damasco. Wher when thei had increased them selues bothe in nombre, and purueiuanee necessary for them, thei entred into Egipte. And subdued firste that: then Persis, then Antiochie, & then Ierusalem. Thus their power and fame daily so encreased, and grewe: that men muche feared, that any thing afterwarde should be able to resiste them. In the meane season, the Turkes: a ferce and a cruell people, of the nation of the Scythians, driuen out by their neighbours fro the mountaines called Caspij, came downe by the passage of the moūte Caucasus, firste into Asia the lesse, then into Armenia, Media, and Persis. And by stronge hande wanne all as they came. Against these the Saracenes went forth as to defende the bordes of their gouernance. But forasmuch as this newcome power was to harde for them, the Saracenes within a while felle into such despair of their state: that vpon condition that the other would receiue Mahometes belief: thei ware content thei shold reigne fellowlike together with them, in Persis. Wherto when thei had agreed, it was harde to saye whether of the peoples had receiued the greater dammage. The Saracenes, in yielding to them the hault right of their kingdome: or the other, whiche for courteousnes therof yielded them selues to so rancke, and wicked a poizon of all vertue and goodlynes.

One honde of belief then so coupled and ioyned them: that for a space it made to them no matier whether ye called them all by one name, Saracenes, or Turkes. But now as ye se, the name of the Turkes hath gotten the better hande, & the other is out of remembrance. This people vseth moe kindes of horseme the one. Thei haue Thimarceni, that is to saye Pencioners, aboute a foure skore thousande. These haue giuen vnto them by the kinge, houses, villages, and Castles euery one as he deserueth, in the steade of his wages or pencion. And thei attende vpon the Sensachie, or capitaine of that quarter, wher their possessions lye. At this daye the Turkes are diuided into two armies: the one for Asie, and the other for Europe. And either hath a chiefeine, at whose leading they are. These chiefeines in their tongue be called Bassay. Ther are also another sorte muche lyke to our aduenturers, that serue withoute wages, called Acomizie. And these euer are spoilinge afore when the campe is yet beyonde. The fifteth parte of their butine is due vnto y<sup>e</sup> king. And these are aboute a fourey thousande. Their thirde sorte of horsemen is diuided into Charippos Spahiglanos, & Soluphtaros. The beste, and worthiest of these, are y<sup>e</sup> Charippie: of an honourable ordre of knighthode, as it ware for the kinges body. And those be euer about him, to the nombre of eyght hundred, all Scythians and Persians, and elles of none other kinde of meane. These, when neede is, being in the sighte of the kinge: fight notably, and do wondrousse feates on horsebacke. Spahy, and Soluphtary be those whiche haue bene at the kinges bringing vp fro their childehode, to serue his filthy abhominacion. And when thei are come to maines state, thei marye at the kynges pleasure: And be enriched bothe

bothe with the dowery of their wife, and a stipende. These for the moste parte serue for embassadours, deputies, lieutenantes and suche other dignities, and are nexte vnto the kinge on bothe sides of him, when he goeth any whether as a garde. They are in nombre a thousande and thre hūdrēd.

Among the footemen are three sortes, Ianizarie, these be chosen all the Empire ouer, of xii. yeres of age, or there aboute, by certain that haue Commission for the purpose : And are for a space enstructed in the feactes of warre, in commune schooles. And then afterwards are they chosen into souldie, and haue giuen them a shorter garmente, and a white cappe, with a tarfe tourned vpward. Their weapon is a Targette, a Curtillase, and a Bowe. Their office is to fortifie the Campe, and to assaulte cities. They are in nombre aboute twentie thousande.

The seconde sorte are called Asappi, and are all footemen of light harness, weaponed with swerde, target, and a kinde of long lauelines, wherwith they slea the horses of their enemies, in the skirmishe and bataille. These, to be knowen fro the Ianizaries, weare redde cappes. These are appointed in nombre, accordyng as the case shall require. But they are euer the leaste fouretie thousande. When the warres are finished, for the whiche they were hired: these are no longer in wages. Tharmie roialle hath about two hundred thousande armed menne, beside a greate rabble of footemen aduenturers, that take no wages, and suche other as be called out of Garrisons. And amonge these, Pioners and Cookes, Carpenters, Armourers, and suche other as they must needes haue to make the waye, wher the place is combresome : to dresse victualles, to amende harness, to make bredges ouer floudes, to trench aboute their enemies, to plante batteries, make Ladders, and suche other things necessary for the siege. Ther foloweth the armie also, sondrye sortes of money Masters: some for loie, some for exchange, some to buy things. And sondrie sortes of occupiers, such as be thought needefull in such cases.

But there is nothing in all that nacion more to be merueiled at, then their spiedinesse in doeing of things: their constancies in perilles, and their obedience and precise obseruinge of all commandemētes. For the least fault, of goeth the heade. They passe ouer raginge floudes, mountaignes and rockes : roughes and plaines, thicke and thinne, if they be commaunded. Not hauing respecte to their lyfe, but to their rulers. No men make awaie with more wathe, no men with more hongre. Among them is no mutinyng, no vproues, no sturres. In their fyght they vse no cries, nor shoutes, but a certaine fiercenes of braying. They kepe suche precise scilence in the night, through out their campe: that they wil rather suffre such as they haue taken prisoners, to run their waie, then to make any sturre. Of all the peoples at this daie, they onely doe warre, according to the ordre of armies. So that no manne needeth to meruaile how it cometh that no people this two hundred yeare and aboute, haue had like successe vnto them. Yea, it may truly be sayd, that excepte it be by some plague or murreyn, or discorde among them selues, they can not be subdued. The apparail that the souldiours doe vse, is most comely and honeste. In their saddles and bridles, there is neither curiositie, ne yet superfluitie. No man among them weareth his Armour, but when nicke is to fight. They carry their harness behynde them, at their backes. They vse neither banner, standerde, ne flaggoue : but certain lauelins that haue streamyng out fro the toppe, diuers coloured thriedes, by the whiche euery hande knoweth his capitaine. They vse a drôme and a sifpe, to assemble their Bannes, and to sturre them to the bataille. When the batteille is done, all the armie is presented to the Regestour (whiche is some one of the nobles) bothe that it maye bee knowen who is slain, and what nombre: and that newe may be entred in their places. In all assemblies and meetinges, feaste, or other : they praise for their souldiours, and menne of warre. But speciallye aboute all other, for those that haue suffred death for the commune quarelle of their countrie : calling them happie, fortunate, and blessed, that they yelded not vp their liues at home, amide the lamentacions and bewaillynges, of their wiues and children, but loste them abroad, amonge the shoutes of their enemies, & the rattling of the Harneis, and Launces. The victories of their forefathers and  
eldres,

eldres, thei put into Balade, and sing them with greate honour and praises: for that thei thinke the courages of the souldiours and menne of warre, be made quickened, and kindled thereby.

Their dwelling houses are communely of timber and claie, very fewe of stone: for of them are the noble mennes houses their temples, and Bathes. And yet are there amonge the communes, men able of them-selfe alone, to set furthe an whole armie; furnished at all pointes. But because thei are naturally giuen to sparing and to abhorre all sumptuousnesse; embracing a lowe and simple state: thei wel beare this voltairie ponertie; and rude homeliness. For this cause also, doe thei not set by any kinde of Painters Imagerie. As for the other imagerie of coruë graven; or molten worke, thei do so hate and abhorre: that thei call vs Christians for delighting so muche in them, verte Idolatours and Image worshippers. And do not onely so calle vs, but wil earnestly argue, that we are so ill dede. Thei vse no Seales to their Lettres, of what sortie so euer thei be, the Kyniges or other. But they erodite the matier, asson as thei haue red the superscription, or heard the name of the sender. Thei occupie no belles, nor suffre not the Christians that dwelle amog them to do. Thei game not for money, or any valewe elles. And if it fortune that any manne be founde to do, in many sidrie wise thei reuile him, and baite him with shames and reproche. - No man amonge them, of what degree or dignitie so euer he be: requireth forme chaire, stoole, or other kinde of seate to sitte vpon. But foldinge bothe him selfe and his clothes, afire a mooste comely sorte: rucketh downe vpon the grounde, not muche vnlike to the sitting of vs Gëllewomen ofte times here in Englande. The table wherupon thei eate, is for the mooste parte of a Bullockes hide, or a Hartes skinne. Not dressed, but in the heare; facioned rounde, beyng a foure or fise spanne ouer, and so set rounde about on the bordre, or verge, with ringlettes of iron: that putting a couple of stringes through the ringes, it maye be drawn together, and shutte and opened like a purse. House, or Church, or any other place wher they encade to sitte, no man entreth with his shoes on. For it is compted a very dishonest and vnmanerly facion, to sitte shoed. Wherefore they vse a maner of slippe shoes, that may lightly be putte of and on. The place wher thei sitte, either at home, or at Church, is in some place matted, and in some place ouerspred with course woollen Carpette. And some places also, either for the lowones, moistenes, or vn-cleaneinesse therof are planked with boorde.

The garmentes aswell of the manne, as the woman, are large and longe; and open afore: that thei may the more honestlie and covertly hide all, when nature craueth to be eased. And in doeing these niedes, thei take greate hiede, that their face be not into the Southe, as it is wher thei praye. As also that thei discover no priuie parte; that any man myghe fortune to see. The manne make water sitting, aswell as the woman. For if a man amonge them, ware sene to make water standing: he should be iudged of all, a foole, or an heretique.

From wine (as from a prouoker of al sinne and vnclennesse) thei absteyne by their lawe. And yet eate they the Grapes, & drinke muste. Thei also forbear to eate any thinge, that cometh of the Hogge: or any thinge elles that dieth of sicknesse, or by aduenture vnslain. But any other thinge, being mannes meate, thei refuse not to eate. Thei worshippe the Fridaie, laicng all labour and businesse aparte, with as greate solemnitie and deuotion, as we doe the Sondaie, or as the Iewes doe the Sabbath daie. In euery citie there is one principall or head Church. In the whiche vpon the Fridaie at afire Noone, thei all assemble together. And afire solenne prayers, heare a sermone. Thei acknowledge one God, to whom thei make no like, nor equalle: and Mahomet to be his trustie and well-beloued Prophete. All the Sarcenes are bound to praye fixe times on the daie, with their faces toward the South. And before thei so do, to the ende thei maie be cleane from all filthe of bodie: to washe them selues topp and taile, heade, eares, eyes, nose, mouth, armer, handes, bealy; colons, legges and fete. Specially, if he haue bene late at the soile with a woman or stouped on his taile to vnburden his bealie. Except he haue some lette of iourne, or sicknesse. But if he lacke waitre to doe this withall (as that seldome

or neuer can happen, for that thou haue in all cities, bathes ordenarie for the purpose) they supplie the default with the mould of freshe cleane earth, wherewith they rubbe ouer their whole bodies. Who so is polluted in any maner wise: suffreth no man before this cleansing, to speake with hym, or to see him, if it be possible. Euery yere for the space of five wickes continually together, they faste at daie as precisely as is possible, bothe frō meate, drinke and women. But afre the sonne is ones downe, till the next daie he riseth, they neither spare catyng ne drinckynge, ne pressing of pappes, In thende of their lenty, and againe the sixtieth daie afre: They kieve their passouer or Easter, in remembrance of the Rambe shewed vnto Abraham, to be Sacrificed in the steade of his sonne, and of a certaine nighte in the whiche they doe beleue that the Alcorane was giuen them from heauen.

Euery yere ones, the Saracenes also are bound of ductie to visite the house of God, in the cite of Mecha: both to acknowledge their homage, and to yelde vnto Mahomete his yerely honour at his Sepulchre there. The Saracenes compelle no man to forsake his opinion or belief: ne yet labour so to perswade any coutrie to do. Although their Alcorane commaunde them to treade doune and destroie all menne of the contrary beline yea them & their prophetes. But through this sufferance, they are to be founde inhabiting in Turkie, peoples of all opinions, and beleue: euery man vsynge suche kinde of worshippe to his God, as to his religion apperteineth. Their priestes do not muche disre from the commune people, nor yet their churches from their dwelling houses. Yf they knowe the Alcorane, and the praiours and ceremonies of their lawe, it suffieth. They are neither giuen to contēplation ne yet scholare study. For why they are not occupied with any church seruice or cure of soules. Sacramentes haue they none, nor reliques, nor halowinges of fontes, Aulters, and other necessaries. But prouidinge for their wines, their children, and householdes, they occupie their time in husbandrie, marchandise, huntinge, or some other meane to get the penie, and mainteyne their liuing, euen as the temporall men doe. Ther is nothing forbidden them, nothing is for them vnlawfull. They be neither burdened with tillage, ne bondage. They be muche honoured of al mē, for that they are skillfull in the ceremonies of the lawe, teache them to other, and be the gouernours of the churches.

They haue many schooles and large, In the which great nombres are taught the lawes there giuen by kinges, for the ciuile gouernaunce and defence of the Realme. Of the whiche some are afterwarde sette fourth to be men of the church, and some to be temporalle officers. Their spiritualetic is diuided into many and sondry sortes of religions. Of the whiche some liue in the wooddes & wyldernes shunning all companye. Some kieve open hospitalitie in cities, and yet liue by almose them selues. These if they lacke meate to refresh the niedy stranger and pelligrine, yet at the least waie they giue him herbour and lodgyng. Other, rounnyng the cities vp and downe, and carryng alway in bottles faire water and freshe, if any man be disposed to drinke, vnasked they willingly proffre it him, and refuse not to take, if he for their gentleness offse ought vnto them agayn. Otherwise they craue nothing, but in at their wordes, gesture, behauiour, & diedes: shewe them selues aungelles rather then monne. And euery one of these hath one knowledge or other, of differēce from the reaste. The Saracenes or Turkes are very precise executours of Justice. Who so committeth bloudshed: hath in like sorte his owne shedde againe. Taken in adultery, both parties are streight without mercy stoned to deaie. They haue also a punishment for fornicatio, whiche is to the manne taken with the dicke, foure score yerkes or lashes with a skourge. A thief for the first and the seconde time, escapeth with so many stripes. But at the thirde time, hath his hūde cut of, and at the fourth his foote: He that endamageth any manne: as the losse or hinderance shalbe valewed, so must he of force recompence. In claiming of goodes, or possessions, the claimer muste proue by witnesse that the thing claimed is his: and the denier shalbe tried by his othe. Witnesses they admitte none, but persons of known honestie, & such as mighte be believed withoute an othe. They haue also certaine spiefaltes ordinarily appointed (muche like to our Sompnours) that spie in euery shiere for suche as be negligent, and let slippe suche traizons, and seruice as they be holde to. Those if they fortune to finde them: do they

punish

punish after this manner. Thei haue a bonde about their neckes, with a great many of foxe tailed, and togging them vp and downe the stretes: all ouer the citie, thei neuer lette them go vnyll they haue compounded by the purse. And in this also nothing vnlike to our Sompnours. It is lawfull for no manne, beinge come to mannes state, to liue vnmarrid. It is compted amonge them as lawfull to haue. iiii. wiues, as it is amonge vs to haue one. Marie what soeuer is about this nombre (as thei may if thei liste, and be able to kepe them, no degree excepted, but mother and sister, marie a hundred) thei are not iudged so lawfull. The children that thei haue bothe by the one, and the other haue equalle portion in the fathers inheritance. Sauiug that if women children are compted in porciō but for one mans child. Thei haue not. ii. of their wiues together in one house, ne yet in one citie. For the busines, & disquietings that might happen therby, but euerie wise in a seuerall towne. The housebandes haue libertie to put the away thise, and thise to take them againe. But yet when he hath ones putte her away, if any manne haue taken her, and she lust to abide with hym, she maie.

Their women are moste honestlie appareild. And vpon their heades doe vse a certaine attire, not muche vnlike the velvet bonnets of oyle Englande: wherof the one lappe so hangeth vpon which side semeth her good: that when she is disposed to go out of the doores, or to come amongst menne within the house, she maie hide therwith by and by her whole face, sauiug her eyes.

The Saracenes woman, neuer dare shewe her self wher ther is a company of menne. To go to the marche to occupy byeng or selleng in any wise: is not sytting for their womē. In the head church they haue a place faire a part fro y men: so close that no manne canne looke into them. Into the which notwithstanding it is not lawfull for euerie mans wyfe to entre: but for the nobleite onely. Ne yet for them neyther, but on Friday, at the onely houre of noone prayer, whiche as I haue aforesayd, is kept amonge them high and holly.

To see a man and a woman talke together ther, in the open strete or abroad: is so stradge, and to vnuote a thing, that in a whole yere it shalte happeneth ones. For a man, to sitte with his wyfe in open sighte, or to ride with any womā behinde him: amonge them were a wonder. Married couples neuer dally together in the sighte of other, nor chide or falle out. But the menne beare alwayes towarde the women a manly discrete sobrenes, and the women, towarde them a demure womanlie reuerence. Greate meane, that cannot alwaie haue their wiues in their owne eye, appointe redgelings, or guelte menne to swaite vpon them. Whiche waite them in diede so narrowly, that it were impossible for any man beside the housebande to speake with the wyfe vsene: or the wyfe by any stealth to falshe her trowth and honestie. Finally the Saracenes do so full and whole beleeue their Mahomete & his faves: that thei doubt no whitte, but the keepers of them shall haue euerlasting blessednesse. That is to saye, after their opinion, a paradise of pleasure, a garden plotte of delighte, full of swiete rindles of Christalline waite. In whose botomes y grauelle, poppleth like glisteryng golde. The ayre alwaie so attempte and pure, that nothyng can be more swete, more pleasant nor healthsome. The grounde couered and garnished with naturas Tapescerie, neither lacking any colour that pleasaunte is to the eye, or sauour that maie delight the nose. Birdes synnyng with suchie armonie, as neuer mortalle eare heard. Briefly flowyng in all pleasure that any harte can after thincke. Dishes for the mouth, of all deinties. All maner of Silkes, Veluettes, Purples, Skarlettes, and other precious apparell. Godly younge damoselles, with graie rowyng eyes, and skynne as white as Whales bone, softe as the Silke, and breathed like the Rose, and all at their becke. Vesselles of siluer and golde. Augellies for their Butlers that shall bringe them Milke in Gobletes of golde, and redde wise in siluer. But contrarie wise, thei threaten vnto the breakers of them, helte, and euerlasting destruction. This thei also beleeue, that be a manne wrapped in neuer so many synnes, yet if at his death, he beleeue vpon God, and Machomete, he shalbe saued.

## ¶ The. xii. Chapitre.

¶ Of the Christians, of their firste comyng vp, their Ceremonies, and ordenaunces.

Christe Iesu, the eternalle and verie sonne of thalmyghtie father, the seconde persone in the holic inseparable, equalle, and euerlastyng Trinitie: Of a sette purpose, & spirituallie secreete, not reuealed from the beginnyng of tyme, & aboue mannes capacitie: was by the meane of the holy ghost, conceited and borne manne. In Iewrie, of a Virgine, of the stocke of Dauid, a thousande five hundred, and twentie yer<sup>e</sup>s gone To sette vs miserable, and vnhappie menne on foote againe, whiche ware in Adam and Eue, by the sinne of disobedience ouerthrowen. And to bryng vs againe, vnto our heauenlic natue countrie, from the whiche we haue by so many ages, for that presumption bene banished. Finally, to re- paire and supplie in heauen againe ones, the ruine and fal of those spirites, whiche a space afore our creation, ware thurste doune fro thence. For the whiche purpose, we chiefly ware made. This Iesus, from thirtie yer<sup>e</sup>s of age, vntill thirtie and sowe (in the whiche, through the maliciousnes of the Iewes, he suffred on the galowe tree) traucillyng all Iewrie ouer: first moued and exhorted the Iewes, and then other peoples, from the olde Lawe of Moses, and their wicked Image worshipp, to his newe ordenaunce and trade. And as many as would folowe, and doe afre hym, he called them his scholers or disciples. Out of the whiche, he gaue vnto. xij. that he had specially chosē, Cōmission afre his death (when he had appered to thē on liue again, as he had forewarned thē y<sup>e</sup> he would) to go as Legates, or Embassatours into y<sup>e</sup> whole world, & to preache vnto all creatures, what so euer thei had sene or learned of him. Simon Petre (to whom longe afore he had surrendered the gouernance and chiefesthippe of his Church, as in reuercion afre him) whē afre the comyng of the holy ghoste some wente into one coste, and some into another, euery manne his waie, as thei ware allotted and commaunded: came first vnto Antioche. And there setting vp the first and chief chaire of the Church, kepte a counsaile with the other Apostles, whiche often tymes came to hym. In this Counsaile among other thinges it was decreed, that asmany as should receiue, and cleaue vnto the doctrine, and righte perswasion of Christes godlines: shou'd fro thence furthe be called Christianes. This Seate of superioritie, beyng afterwarde translated to Rome: bothe he and his Successours, tooke it for their chief charge and businesse, to put the rude and rawe secte of their Christe, and the folowers of the same, in some good ordre and trade of gouernance. Bothe afre the maner of Moses Lawe (whiche Christe came not to breake, but to consummate and finishe) and the state of the Romain gouernance, the Greke, and Egipcian: and also by paterne of the Ceremonies, obseruances, lawes, and ordenaunces Ecclesiasticke and Temporalle, of many other peoples: But specially afre the doctrine, of Christe Iesu, and the workyng of the holy ghoste, to bryng them in to frame and facion. When thei ware entred in the mattier: As thei sawe that mē not emong the Hebrues alone, but emog other peoples also, ware deuided into Ecclesiasticke and Temporalle, Spirituallie and Laetic: and eche of them in moste goodly wise, into their dignities and degrees (The Romaine Emperour then being gouernour of the whole worlde alone, to haue Consulles, Fathers or Senatours: at whose becke all thinges ware deuided and doone: And in the residue of the earth to bee many Kynges, many Dukes, Erles, Presidents, and Deputies of countries, and their Lieutenantes: Mareshalles of the field, and high Conestables for the cōmunes, Pretours or Prouostes, Standerbearers roialle, Centurians, and Disners, Seriauntes, Conestables, Collectours, Surteours, Porters, Scribes, Listers, and many other persones without office, bothe menne and women. And in the Temples of their Goddes, a Sacrificer roialle, whiche is to saie in effecte, a high Prieste of the dignitie of a kyng. Archeflamines, Flamines of honour, and other Flamines inferiour and laste in degree their Priestes. And by like ordre emong the Hebrues: an high Bisshoppe, and inferiour Priestes, Leuites, Nazareis, candle quenchers, commaunders of Spirites, Church Wardeines, and Syngers, whiche wee calle Chantours afre the Frenche. And amog the Grekes: Capiteines, or heades ouer a thousande, ouer an hundred, ouer suetic,

It apperch by  
this place that  
this was written  
xxx. yer<sup>e</sup>s gone.

ouer ſene, and ouer ſue: And that there were yet beſide theſe, bothe among the Hebrewes, and the Romaines, many conuents, or compaignies of menne and women Religious. As Sadduceis, Eſeicis, and Phariſeic among the Hebrewes: Salios, Diales, and Veſtalles, among the Romaines: The moſte holy Apoſtles did all conſente, that Petre, and thei that ſhould folowe him in the ſeate of Rome; ſhould for evermore be called Papa. As who would ſaie, father of fathers, the vniuerſalle, Apoſtolicalle, moſte holy, and moſte highe biſſhoppe. And that he ſhould at Rome be Preſidentie ouer the vniuerſalle Church, as the Emperour there, was ruler of the vniuerſall worlde. And to matche the Conſulles (whiche were euer twaine) thei appointed foure head Fathers, in the Greke named Patriarches, one at Conſtantinople, another at Antioche, a thirde at Alexandrie, and the fourth at Hieruſalem. In the place of the Senatours, thei took the Cardinalles. To matche their kynges, whiche had thre Dukes at commaundement, thei deuised Primafes: To whom were ſubiect thre Archebiſhoppes. So that the Archebiſhoppe or Metropolitane, ſtandeth in the place of a Duke. For as the Duke had certein Erles or Barones at his commaundement: ſo haue the Archebiſhoppes, other inferior Biſhoppes at theirs, whiche alſo by reaſon muſt countreuaile an Erle. The Biſhoppes coadiutor or Suffragane, came into the Preſidentes place. Thordenarie into the Deputies, then did the Officiale marche with the Mareſhalle. And with the high conſtable for the cōmunes, the Biſhoppes Chancelour. And for the Pretour or Prouoſte, thei ſette vp an Arche-deaco. In ſtede of the Cōturane, was a Deane appointed. And for the Diſtiner, the Perſone or Vicare: For the Adſciates, except in the Pariſſhe Prieste, Soule Prieste, Chaunterie Prieste, Morowe Maſſe Prieste, and ſuche other. The Deacon ſtandeth for the Surueiour. The Subdeacon, for the Sericauite. For the two Conſtables, came in the two Cōmmanders of Spirites, called Exorciste in the Greke. The Collectours office, was matched with the Church wardens. The Porter became the Sexteine. The Chautour, Scribe, and Liſter, kieve ſtill their name. The Acholite, whiche we calle Bened and Cholet, occupieth the routme of Candlebearer.

All theſe by one commune name, thei called Clerg, of the Greke worde Cleros, that is to ſaie, a Lotte. For that thei were firſte from among the people, ſo allotted vnto God. Therof cometh our terme Clerique, and his coſine Clergie. Neuertheſſe, this name Clergie, was not ſo commune vnto all: but that it ſiemed moſte properly to reſte in the ſeuen degrees, that the Pope of Rome vsed for his Miniſters, when he ſaied Maſſe in perſone him ſelf. That is to ſaie, the Biſhoppe, the Prieste, the Deacon, & ſubdeacon, ſ Acholite, and the Chautour. Vnto euery of theſe gaue thei in ſ church their ſeueral dignities officers, & appareile.

To the Biſhoppe was giuen authoritie, to ordeine and make other Clerkes. To penneile That is to ſaie, to make Nones. virgines, & to hallow them. To conſecrate their ſikes, and their ſuperiours alſo. To lye handes vpon the. To confirme and Biſhoppe childre. To hallowe Churches. To put Priestes from their Priethode: and to degrade theim, when thei deſerue it. To kicpe Conuocaciōs and Sinedes. To make holy oile: to hallowe the ornaments and veſſells of the church. And to do alſo other things, that the inferior Priestes doe. To enſtrute thoſe that be newly come to the faith. To Chriſtiane, to make the Sacramente of the Altare, and to giue it to other. To abſolute the repētante of their ſinnes, and to fettre the ſubmerne more ſtraighte. To ſhewe furthe the Gospelle. To emoyne all Priestes to ſhaue their heades in the crowne, like a circle of. iij. fingers brode, after the maner of ſ Nazareis. To kepe their heare ſhorte, to weare no bearde. And to liue chaſte for euer.

Their liuyng onely to riſe of the firſte fructes, tenthes, and offerings: and vitrely to be void of all temporalle and Laicemenes cares and buſineſſe. To be honeſtly appareid, and accordingly to vte their paſſe and conuertiacion. Owey to ſerue God and the church. Diligently to vlye the reading of holy ſcripture, ſ they them ſelues mighte perfectly knowe all thinges pertaining to Chriſtian religio, wherein thei are bound to enſtrute other. The companies or conuētes of religious, aswel men as women: are Benedictines, Preachers, Franciscanes, Auguſtines, Barnardines, Auhomines, Iohānites, Cisternois, and innumerable other. Whiche al haue their habite, and maner of lining by them ſelfe: accordinge to the rule that

eachone privately prescribed to them selves. And lived for the moste parte: a solitary life, professing chastitie, pouertie, and perpetuall obedience. And for their solitarities the Grecke called them Monachi. Some of these haue for their heades Abbotes, some Priours: whiche are either subiecte to the Pope onely, or to the bishoppes. All these vsed coules, much afire one faciõ, but in colour diuers, & abstained fro fleshe. The bishoppes when they say masse, haue .xv. holy garments, afire § maner of Moyses lawe, for § perfectiõ of thõ: His boate-wes, his Amice, an Albe, a Girdle, a Stole, a Manipie, a Tunicke of violette, in graine fringed, his gloves, ringe, and chesible or vestimẽte, a Sudarie, a cope, a mitre and a croste staffe. And a chaire at the Altars ende, wherein he sitteth: Of the whiche .vi. are commune to every inferior prieste: the Amice, the Albe, the girdle, the stole, the Manipie, and the vestimẽt. But ouer, and aboue all these the Pope, by the gifte of Constantine the greate, hath libertie to weare all the ornamentes Imperiale. That is to saye a kirtle of skarlet, a robe of Purple, a sceptre, and a close corone. With the whiche afire he hath rauished him selfe in the vestrie, vppon solempne feastes, when he entedeth to do masse: he cometh forth to the aultare, hauing on the right side a prieste, on the lefte side a Deacon, a Subdeacon going before him with a booke, faste shatte, two candle bearers, and an encensour with the encensore in his hande smoking. When he is comẽ to the grissinges, the stayers, or loote of the aultare: putting of his mitre, he maketh open confession of his sinnes together with his company.

The Latine call  
it a change  
booke.

That is, he  
sateh condore.

That done he goeth vp to the aultare, openeth the booke, lienge vpon the lefte corner of the same, kysseth it, and so procedeth in the Solempnitiõ of § Masse. The subdeacon readeth the epistle, and the Deacon the godspelle. Priestes of all degrees, are charged to praye God seuen times a daie, and to praye with ordenarie oracions. Towarde the euening, cõsõnge: and compline more late. Matines in the morninge, and incontinent prime, and howres, in ordre of tyme, as they stande in ordre of name. And this humbly before the aultare, if he maye conueniently, with his face towards the Easto. The pater nostre and the Crede said thei, onely at the beginnyng of their seruice, as the commune people do nowe a daies also. Saincte Ierome, at the vrgent request of Pope Damasus, parted out the Psalmes according to the daies of the weeke. And appointed for every houre a porciõ of propre psalmes. For the nighte houres on the holy daie. ix. and on the working daie. xii. For laudes in the morning. y. for cõsõnge as many, and for eche other houre but thre. He also ordeined the Epistles, Godspelles, and other seruice, vsed to be read one of the olde or newe testament, in maner altogether, sauing § note. The Antemes (whiche Ambrose, Bysshoppe of Millayne wrate, and ended) Damasus put ordre that the quere should sing side afire side, & added to every psalmes ende. Gloria patri, &c. The lessons and Himpuces that before eche one of the howres did § coicelles of Thoulouse and Agathon anchorise. The orisons, the grailles, the tractes, the Alleluya, thofferorie, the Communion in the Masse, the Antemes, Versicles, repitiõs, and other thinges, either songe or recde by nyghte or by daie, to the beautifeng, and praying of God: did Gregory, Gelasius, Ambrose, and many other holy fathers, deuise, and put like the, not at one time but at sondry. The Masse (so terme they the sacrifice) was first vsed to be done in suche simple sorte, as yet is accustomed, vppon good Friday, & Easter euen, with certeine lesõs before it. But then Pope Cõstantinus put to the office of the Masse, Thetsaphorus, Gloria in excelsis. But Hilarius of Pictania made the Et in terra. Simachus ordeined it to be songe. The Salutaciõs, which by terme of Dominus vobiscum, be made seuen tymes in a Masse, were taken out of the booke of Rulhe, by Clemente and Anaete, and put in, in their places. Gelasius made vp all the reste to the Offertory, in the same ordre they be vsed. Excepte the Sequences and the Crede: wherof Nicolas put in the firste, & Damasus the nexte: according to the Sinode of Constantinople. The bidding of the beades, with the collation that was wonte to be made in the pulpito on Sondates, and halydaies: rather grew to a custome by the example of Nehemias, and Esdras, then was by any authorised. In this collation at the firste coming vp therof, when so many as were presẽte at the Masse did receiue the communion, according, as was ordeyned by a decree: thei that were at any discord were exhorted

Here yfme,  
seruic, lesõs,  
mass.

to con corde, & agremente. And that thei should receiue the sacrament of the auster cleane from the filthe of sinne, vpon the whiche consideration at this daye it endeth with confitor, or an open confession. There ware thei wonte to teache the instrumentes of the olde lawe, and the newe. The ten' cōmaundementes. The xii. articles of our beleue. The seuen sacramentes, holy folkes liues, and Martirdomes, holy dayes, doctrines, and disciplines: vertues, and vices, and what soeuer are necessary beside forthe, for a Christiane to knowe. Gregory linked on the offertorie. Leo the p'efaces. Gelasius the greate Canō, & the lesse. The Sanctus blessed Sixtus. And Gregory ſ Pater noster out of the Gospell of sainte Mathewe. Martiale the scholer of blessed Peter, deuised that Bysshoppes should giue their benediction at the Agnus. And as for other insecour priestes, Innocentius commaunded them to giue the paxē, that is to saye peace. Sergius tacked on the Agnus, and Gregory the poste communion. The closing vp of all with *Ite missa est. Benedicamus, Deo gratias*: was Leues inuencion.

The xii. articles of our beleue, whiche the blessed Apostles would euery manne not onely to confesse with mouth, but to beleue also in harte, are these.

Firste, that ther is one God in Trinitie, the father almighty maker of heauen. and earthe. The seconde, Iesus Christe his onely sonne our Lord. The thirde the same beinge concruied of the holyc ghoste, to haue bene borne of ſ Virgine Marie. The fourth, to haue suffred vnder Ponce Pilate, to haue bene crucified, deade, bewried, and to haue descended into to helle. The fift, to haue risen agayne the thirde daye from the deade. The sixteth; to haue ascended vp into the heauē, and to sitte on the right hande of God the father almighty. The seuenth, that he shall come fro thence like a triuñpher, to iudge the quicke and the deade. The eight, that ther is an holy ghoste. The ninth, ſ ther is an holy churchē vniuersalle, the communion of the godly and good. The tenth, forgiveness of sinnes. The eleuenth, the rising agayne of the fleshe. The tweluet, afre our departing. life in another worlde euerlasting.

The tenne commandementes, whiche God wote with his oure finge, and gaue vnto the Israēlites by Moses, whiche thapostles willed vs also to keepe. The firste, thou shalt haue none other Goddes but me. The seconde, thou shalt not make the any graue Image, or likenesse of any thing: that is in heauē aboue, in the earthe benethe, or in the water vnder, the earthe, thou shalt not bowe doune to them, nor worshippe them. The third, thou shalt not take the name of thy lord God in vaine. The fourthe, remember that thou keepe holie thy Sabbath daie. The fift, honour thy father & mother. The sixteth, thou shalt doe no murdre. The seuenth, thou shalt not commit adulterie. The eight, thou shalt not steale. The ninth, thou shalt beare no false witness against thy neighbour. The tenth, thou shalt not desire thy neighbours house, his wife, his seruante, his maide, his Ox, nor his Asse, nor any thing that is thy neighbours.

The seuen Sacramentes of the churchē, whiche are contained in the siue laste Articles of our beleue, and commaunded vs by the holie fathers to be beleued.

The firste, diepyng into the water, called Baptisyng; afre the Greke. This, by canonicall decree, in time paste was not wonte to be giuen (excepte greate necessitie soner required it) but to those that had bene scholers a space afore, to learne the thinges appertinent to Christendome. Yea, and that afre thei had bene exceedingly wellearned in the faith: and proufe taken of their profityng, by seuen examinations, whiche ware made vpon seuen seuerall daies in the Lente, and so ware thei Baptised vpon Easter euen, and Whitesondaie euen. Vpon whiche daies, thei ware accustomed to hallowe the christening water, in euery Paroche. But because this specially of all other, is chiefly necessarie vnto euerlasting saluation: lesse any bodie should die without it, thei decreed that assoon as the childe was borne, godfathers should be sought for it, as it ware for witnesses or sureties whiche should bring the childe vnto the Churchē doore, and there to stande without. And then the Priest should enquire, before the childe be dieped in the Fonte, whether it haue renounced Sathan and all his pompe and pride. If it beleue certainly and wholie, all the Articles of the Christiane faith. And the Godfathers answering, yea: for it, the Prieste breathing

breasyng thrise vpon his face, exorciseth it, and cathechiseth it. Afte that, doeth he seuen things to the childe in orde. Firsi, he putteth into the mouth hallowd salt. Secondly, he minglith carthe and his spatle together, and smereth the eyes, eares, & nostrilles of the childe. Thirdly, giuyng it suche name as it shall euer afte bee called by: he marketh it on the breast and backe with holie oyle, afte the facion of a crosse. Fourthly, he dipeeth it thrise in the Waire, or besprinkleth it with waire thrise, in manner of a crosse, in the name of the holie Trinitie, the father, the sonne, and holie ghost. In the which name also, all thother Sacramentes are ministred. Fiuetly, weting his thumbe in the holie ointement, he maketh therewith a Crosse on the childes foreheade. Sixthly, he putteth a white garment vpon it. Seuenthly, he taketh it in the haire of a Candle-brennyng. The Iewes before thei be Christened (by the determinacion of the countaile holden at Agathone, are cathechised, that is to saie, are scholers at the instruction of our beleeud nine monethes. And are bound to fast fourte daies: to dispossesse them selues of all that euer thei haue, and to make free their bonde wien. And booke which of their children thei haue Circumcised, according to Moses lawe: hym are thei bounde to banishe their companie. No mercie therefore if thei come so vnwillingly to christidome.

Bushopping, which the Latines calle Confirmation, a confirmating, establishing, ashthorisng, or allowing of that went before: is the second Sacramente. And is giuen of the Bishoppe onely, before the Aultare in the Churche, to suche as are of growe yeres, and fasting (if it maie be) afte this maner. As many as shalbe Confirmed, come all together with eury one a godfather. And the Bishoppe afte he hath said one oracion ouer the all, weting his thumbe in the holie oyle, maketh a crosse vpon eche of their foreheades: In the name of the father, sonne, and holie ghost. And giueth hym a blowe on the left cheeke, for a remembraunce of the Sacrament, that he come not for it againe. The godfathers, to the ende the enoiting should not droppe awaie, or by negligence bee wiped awaie, clappe on a faire flette on the foreheade, which thei iudge to be unlawfully takē awaie, before the seuenth daie. The holie fathers esteemed this Sacrament so highly, that if the name giuen to the childe at his Christendome, seemed not good: the Bishoppe at the grayng hereof mighte change it.

The thirde Sacramente is holie Ordre, which in the firste Churche, was giuen likewise of the Bishoppe, onely in the moneth of Decembre. But now at sixe seuerall tymes of the yere: that is to saie, the foure Satturdies in the embro weekes (which were purposely ordeined therefore) vpon the Satturdie, which the Churche menne calle Sinteres, because the office of the Masse for that daie appointed, beginneth with that worde; and vpon Easter euen. This Sacrament was giuen onely to menne: and but to those neither, whose demeanour and life, dispositiō of bodie, and qualitie of minde, were sufficiently tried and knowe. Afte the opinion of some, there were seuen ordres, or degrees, whereby the holy fathers would vs to beleue that there were seue speciall influences, as it were printed in the soule of the receiuer, wherby eche one for eche ordre, was to be compiēt in a hallowd manne. Afte the mindes of other there were nine: That is to saie, Musicians (which encludeth singing and plating) Doore keepers, Beders Exorcistes, Acholites, Subdeacon, Deacon, Prieste and Bishop. And for all this, it is coepted but one Sacramente, by the reason that all these tendre to one ende, that is to saie, to consecrate the Lordes bodie. To eury one of these did the Counsaile of Toledo in Spaine; appointe their seuerall lines, and offices in the Churche. The Doorekeepers had the office of our Common Sextiner, to open the church doores, to take hede to the church, and to shutte the doores. And had therefore a keye giuen vnto them, when thei were admitted to this ordre. The Reader, in signe and token of libertie to reade the Bible, and holie stories, had a greate booke giuen him. The Exorcistes, serued to commaunde euill spirits out of menne, and in token thereof, had a lesse booke giuen them: The Acholite, had the bearyng and the orderyng of the Tapers, Candelstickes, and Cruettes at the Altare: and therefore had a Candelstick, a Taper, and two empty Cruettes deliuered hym. The Subdeacon, mighte take the offering, and handle the Chalice, and the Patine, carie them to the Altare; and

and fro the Altare, and give the Deacon Wine and water, out of the Cruetie. And therefore the Bishoppe delivereth hym an empty Chalice with a Patine, and the Archdeacon one Craet full of wine, and another full of watre, and a Towelle. To the Deacons, is the preaching of Goddes Gospelle to the people committed, and to helpe the priest in al holy ministracion. He hath the Gospelle booke delivred hym, and a towell hanged vpon his one shoulde, like a yoke. The Prieste hath power to consecrate the Lordes bodie, to praie for sinners, and to reconcile the againe to God by Penauce enioined them. He hath delivred hym a Chalice with Wine, the Patine, with a singyng cake, a stole vpo bothe shoulde, and a Chesible. What Ornamentes the Bishoppe hath giuen vnto hym, ye haue heard afore. He maie not be made Bishoppe, but on the Sondae about the iii. houre afre Prime, betwene thofico of the Masse and the Gospelle: at the whiche tyme twoo Bishoppes, and a Metropolitan, laie their handes vpon his heade and a booke. The Bishoppes in the firste Church, did liue or nothyng diffe from other Priestes, and ware ruled by the commune Counsailes of the Church, before that dissencion and decision entred among the people, causing them in sondrie sortes, to cleaue vnto sondrie names, euery sorte as they fortun'd to be conuerted and Christened of a sondrie person. As whom Paule Baptised, they would be called Paulines. Whom Appollo, Appollonians. Whom Cephas, Cephites, and so of other: To auoide therefore these breaches of conorde, and for an vniformite, the holy fathers ware drinen to decree and stablish that asmany as should asteward, be baptised, should be called Christians of Christe. And that ouer euery Countie or Shiere, there should be sette one Prieste or moe, acording to the greatnesse of the same, suche as ware best tried. Whiche should haue to name, Ouersears in English: in Greke, Episcopj. Whom we call Bishoppes, by chaungyng of P. into B. and leauing out the E. for shortnes, acording to the nature of our tongue. These might not then gouerne their Clergie, and other their Diocesans, at their owne pleasure, as they did before: but acording to the decrees of the Church of Rome, and the holie Counsailes of the fathers assembled. Then began they firste (by the suffraunce and helpe of deuoute printes) to diuide all Christendome into Diocesa, and the Diocesa into Conuocacions or Chapitres, and these againe into Paroches, and to set that goodly ordre, that yet continueth, aswell among the clergie as the laetic. That the parische should obeye their lawfull Person, the Person the Deane: the Deane the Bishoppe: the Bishoppe, the Archebishoppe. The Archebishoppe, the Primate or Patriarche: the Primate or Patriarche, the Legate: the Legate, the Pope: the Pope the generalle Coimsaile: the generalle Coimsaile, God alone.

For the fourth Sacramente it is holden, that euery prieste rightly priested, acording to the keyes of the Church, hauing an entente to consecrate, and obseruynge the fourme of the wordes: hath power, of wheaten breade to make the very bodie of Christe, and of Wine to make his very bloude:

Christe our Lord hym selfe, the daye before he suffred, kepte it solemnly with his disciples, and consecrated, and ordeined it continually to be celebrated, and eaten in the remembrance of him selfe. And about this matter a man had neede of a great faythe: Firste to beleue the breade to be chaunged into the body, and the wine into the bloude of Christe. Againe though this be done euery daye, that yet Christ for all that should growe neuer a whitte the bigger for y making, nor the lesse for the eatinge. Thirdely that the Sacrament being deuoyded into many partes, Christ should yet remaine whole in euery croume. Fourthly that though the wicked eate it, yet should not it be defiled. Fimethly that it bringeth to as many euyl as receiue it, death: and so the good euerlasting life. Sixthly that it turneth not into the nature of the eater to his nourishment as other meate dothe: but turneth the eater contrariwise into the nature of it selfe. And yet being eaten, that it is rapte into heauen, vnburte or vnouched. Seuenthly that in so smalle a syse of breade and wine, the infinite, and incomprehensible Christe, God and manne should be comprehended. Then, that one, and the self same bodye of Christe, at one very instante, should be in many places, and of many menne receiued at ones, and in sondrye parcelles. Ninethly y thoughte the bread it selfe be chaunged into the very fleshe of Christe, and the wine into his bloude, that

that yet to all the senses they remaine breade and wine, and neither fleshe ne blood. Further that all these comodities cōteined in these venes following should happen vnto those that worthely eate it.

It putteth in mynde and kindeleth, encreaseth hope, and strengtheneth. Mainteineth, clenseth, restoreth, giues life, and vniteth. Stablišseth beliefe, abates the foode of sinne, and all vnclennes quengeth.

Finally, to be very profitabell for the saluaciō aswell of those liuyng as deade, for whō it is specially offred by the priest in the Messe. And therefore to haue to name Eucharistia cōmuniō.

In the beginning of the Christiane faithē (and yet amonge certeine schismatiques as they saye) one whole lofe was consecrated, of suche biggennesse, as whē the Priest had broken it in a platter into smalle pieces, it mighte suffice the whole multitude that ware at the masse to participate of. For in time pastē the Christianes came euery day to communicate by a speciall commaundement, and ordenaunce. Aftewarde but ones in a wicke and that on the Sunday. But whan it began to be skant well kepte vpon the Sunday, neither: then was it commaunded that euery manne should receiue it thrise in the yere, or ones at the leaste, at euery Easter. And that euery christian manne, when he stode in any daungier of death, beyng whole of minde, should receiue it as a waifaring viande, to staye him by the waye: with as good preparation of bodye and soule, as he possibly mighte.

Matrimonic (whichē is the lawfull couplng of the manne and the woman) broughte in by the lawe of nature, the lawe of God, the lawe of all peoples, and the lawe ciuile, is the fiftēth Sacrament. The holy fathers woulde haue but one mariage at ones, & that not in secrete but with open solemnitie eyther in y church, or in the church porch, and so that the priest be called to the matier. Who shold firste examine the man, and then the womanne, whether they bothe consent to be married together. Yf they be agreed (whiche is chiefly in this case requisite) he taking them bothe by the right handes: completh them together in the name of the holy and vnseperable trinitie, the father, the sonne, and the holy ghoste. And commaundeth, and exhortheth them that they alwaye remembering this their couplng of their owne free wille & consent: as longe as they liue, neuer forsake one another but loue & honour one another, be debonaire and buxome one to another, giuing them selues to procreacion, and not to lecherous luste. And that they honestly and diligently bringe vp, suche children as God sendeth them of theyr bodies. Afre that he affiaunceth thē both with one ringe. And sprinckling holy water vpon them, reacheth them a stole, and leadeth them into the church, where (yf they ware not blessed afore) he blessing them kneeling before the altare. The woman hath on a redde fillet or frontcette, and ouer that a white veile, withoute the whiche it is not lawfull for her fro that daye forewarde, to goe oute of doores abrode, or to sitte by any manne. Twelue thinges they be, whiche the holy fathers woulde haue to barre persons from contracting of matrimonic, and to disceuer them againe, yf they be contracted. Error of person, that is to saye, mistaking one for another. A betrowthing vpon a condicion, Cōsanguinitie or kindred, Antyē crime Diuersitie of secte, Force, or constraint. Holy ordres, a Bode or former contracte, Commune or open honestie, Affinitie, and Disabilitie of engēdrare.

The sixtēth Sacramente is penance or repentance, giuen of Christe as it ware for a wracke boorde, wherby men are preserued fro drowninge. Eche Christian oughte vndoubtedly to beleue that this consisteth in foure pointes. To saie, in Repētauce of our sinnes, Canonick confession, Absolution, and Satisfaction, or amendes. Firste let him sorowe, not with a lighte forthinckinge, but with a moste earnest and bittre repentance in the hōtome of his conscience: for the puritie and innocencie that he had gotten eyther by baptism or y benefite of former repentance, and nowe hathē elsoues loste, and forgone through sinne. And let him hope with this repentance, to be reconciled to the fauour of God againe. And let him humbly, and truly with his owne mouth, confesse to a wise prieste, in the steade of God: all those offences wherwith he knoweth him selfe to haue loste his innocencie and clenness, and to haue prouoked the wrathe of GOD againste him selfe. And let him assuredly belueo that the same prieste, hath power giuen him of Christe

(as beinge his vicare, or deputie on earth) to absolue him of all his sinnes. Finally for satisfaction or amendes making for the faulte: lette him not with grudginge, but chierfully, and gladly doe, what so euer he shalbe cōmaūded. Beleeue with vndoubted faith, that he is absolued, and quyte of all, asone as the priest in dewe formē of wordes, hath pronounced the absolucion.

The seuenth, and the laste Sacramēt is the laste enoynting, by an oyle that is made to this vse, by the bishoppe in euery diocesse, by an yerely custome vpō Maūdy Thursdaye, like as the christ-matory oyle is. And this by the precepte of sainte Iames the Apostle, and by the ordinance of Felix the fourth Pope after Sainte Peter: was giuen only to them that haie in dyeng, being of full age, and requyring it. Their vse to enoynte with a prescrip̄te fourme of wordes, and with often inuocation of saintes: those partes of the bodie, wher our flue wittes or senses: is the hearing, seyng, smelling, tasting and touching, beare moste stroke; & with whiche man is iudged chiefly to sinne. That is, the eares, the eyes, the notethrilles, the mouthe, the handes, and the fete. Wherby the holy fathers would vs to beleue, that there was not onely purchasēd cleane forgiuenesse of all smaller offences, or venialle sinnes: but also either presentē recouerie, or a ripper and gentler deathē. All the feastes and hollydaies, throughout the yere, whiche the churchē hath commaūded to be obserued & kept: beginne at the Aduente, or approche of Christe our Lorde. Whiche Peter the Apostle instituted to be obserued in Decembre, with fasting and prayer, thre weekes and a haulfe before Christmas, whē we close vp the last. viii. daies of that moneth, with great ioye and feaste. They decuded the yere into two & fuetie weekes, and. xii. seueral moonthes. The monethes cōmonly into. xxx. daies. The firste daye of Ianuary the churchē recordeth howe Christe was circumcised accordinge to Moyses lawe. The. iii. daye afre, howe he was worshipped of the thre Sages, with thre sondry presentes: and howe beinge baptised of Iohn in Iordaine the floude, he laide the foundation of the newe Lawe. The seconde of Februarie, how his mother vnspotted, obeyeng the maner of her cōtry: brought hym into the temple, and suffred her self to be purified or clenſed, whiche we calle churching of childē. In memorie wherof the churchē vseth that daye, solempne procession, and halowing of candles. The fute and twentieth of Marche, howe ſ angel brought wordes to the virgin Marie, that Christ shoulde be borne of her, beinge conceuyed in her wombe, by the ouershadowing of the holy ghoste. At the whiche time they wiffed vs to faste the fourtie daies that he fasted him selfe, being with vs vppon earth, and to renewe the remembrance of his passion, and deathē, whiche he willingly susteined to deliuer vs fro ſ yoke and bondage of the deuell. The laste day of that faste, which oftentimes falleth in Aprile, to celebrate the highest feaste in al the yere: in remembrance howe he ouercame deathē, descended into helle, vanquished the deuell, and returned againe on liue, and appeared in glorious wyse vnto his scholers, or disciples. In Maye, howe, all those his scholers loyng vpō him, he by his owne vertue and mighte, stied vp into the heauens. At the whiche time, by thordenance of sainte Mamerte, bishoppe of Vienne: there be made ganginges with the lease Letanies from one Churchē to another, all Christendome ouer. In Iune, and sometime in Maie, how the holy ghoste, promised to the disciples, giuen from aboue, appeared to them like glowing tongues: and gaue them to vnderstande, & to speake the tonges of al naciōs. Theight daie folowing, Trinitie Sondaie. The fuetth daie afre that, how Christe in his laste supper, for a continuall remembrance of himself, instituted the moste holosome Sacramēte of his bodie and bloud, vndre the fourme of breade and wine, leauyng it to be sene and eaten of his. The fuetentth of Iuly, how the blessed Apostles, accordinge as they were cōmaūded, the twelueh yere afre the Ascension of their Master into heauen: wente their waies into the vniuersalle worldē, to Preache vnto all people. The departing of Christes mother out of this life, the fuetentth daie of Auguste. And her Natiuitie, theight of Septembre. And thone and twentie of Nouembre, how she, from thre yeres of age (at the whiche tyme she was presented to the temple) vntill she was marriage able, remained there seruing God stil a peace. And theight of Decembre, how she was of

her parentes begotten, that longe afore had bene barrene. The second daie of Iulie; how Elisabeth passing the Mountaines, visited her kinseswoman.

There were also certeine hollie daies appointed to the. xii. Apostles: To certeine Martyres, Confessours, and Virgines. As the foure and twentieth of Februarie to sainte Marthe. To sainte Marke the Euangeliste, the. xxv. of Aprille. Vpon the whiche daie, Gregorie ordained the greates Letanies to be songe. The firste of Maie is hallowd for Phillipe and Iames the more. The. xxix. of Iune, for Petre and Paule: & the. xxxiii. of thesame; for the Natiuitie of. S. Ihon Baptiste. The. xxv. of Iuly, for Iames the lesse. For Bartholomewe the foure & twentie of August. For Mathewe, the one and twentie of Septembre. And the eight and twentie of Octobre, for Simo and Iude. The last of Nouembre, for. S. Andrewe. The one and twentie of Decembre, for sainte Thomas. And the. vii. and twentie of thesame moneth for Iho the Euangeliste. The daie before, for Stephin the first Martire. And the daie after for the Innocentes. The tenth of August for saint Laurence. And the thre & twentie of Aprille, for sainte George. Of all the Confessours, there are no moe that haue holidaires appointed, but S. Martine and sainte Nicholas. The firste, on the eleuenth of Nouembre: and the other the sixteth of Decembre. Katherine the virgine, the five and twentie of Nouembre, and Marie Magdalene the twentie and two of Iuly. There is also vndre the name of sainte Michael alone, the. xxix. of Septembre: a holy daie for all blessed Angelles. And one other in communt for all the saintes, and chosen of GOD, the firste of Nouembre.

Thei would also that euery seuenthe daie, should be hallowd of the Christianes, by the name of Sondaie, as the Iewes doe their Sabbath: restyng from all worldly worke, and beyng onely occupied with praising of GOD, and the deuine Seruice in the Church. To learne by the Priestes preaching, the Gospelle and the commaundementes of our faith. And by what means so euer we thinke in our conscience we haue prouoked the wrath of God against vs all the wicke afore: that, this daie to amende, to sette cleire, and aske pardon for. In time past euery Thursdaie also was kepte as the Sondaie. But because we mighte sieme therein, somewhat to gratifie the Heathen (whiche that daie kepte solempne hollie daie, to Iupiter their Idolle) it was laid doune againe. More ouer the clerkes and the people, vsed bothe Thursdaie and Sondaie before Masse, to go round aboute the Church a Procession, and the Prieste, to sprinckle the people with holy watre. Agapitus instituted the one, and the other. The Thursdaie, in remembrance of Christes Ascencion, and the Sondaie, of his glorious Resurrection: whiche we celebrate fro Sondaie to Sondaie continually, ones euery eight daies. The night afore euery ordenary holidaire or feastfull daie: the whole clergie, and the people, were bounde to kieve Vigile in euery church. That is to saie, to wake all night, in deuine seruice and praier. But vpon consideration of many slaunders crimes and offences, that were by diuers naughtie and malicious persones committed, by the oportunitie of the darke: this maner was taken awaie, and ordeined that the daie before the feaste, should be fasted, whiche yet kiepeth stille the name of Vigile. The fathers decreed that the church in the whole yere should renue the memorie of five thynges.

Fro the Sondaie called Septuagesima (because there are seuentie daies, betwene that and the octaues of Easter) thei would vs to renue the memorie of Christes Fasting, Passion, Death & Bewrialle. The miserable falle also of our first parentes, and those extreme errors of mankinde, by the whiche thei were ledde awaie fro the knowledge and worshipp of one verie GOD: to the wicked supersticion and honour of Idolles and demelles. And further, the greuous and intollerable bondage that the people of Israell suffred vndre the Pharao of Egipte. Vpon whiche consideration, the bookes of Genesis and Exodus be redde in the seruice of the church. Whiche sheweth then in all her demeanour, and apparciyng, heauinesse and sorowe.

From the octaues of Easter, to the octaues of Whitsontide, Christes Resurrection, and Ascencion, with the comyng of the holy Ghoste. And together with that, the redemption, reconciliacio, and atonement of mankinde with God the father, through Iesus Christe:

and

and the restoryng againe of the children of Israell, to the lande of beheste. Wherein was prefigured our reconciliacion and redempcion aforesaid. For that cause is all the seruice out of the newe Testamēt, and al thinges done with ioye & gladnes.

From the octaues of Whitsontide, till Aduente, xx. wickes' space, and more, thei would haue to bee celebrated the cōseruation of Christ here in the worlde, with his miracles and workes of wondre. And ouer and beside that, the louge pilgrimage, that mankinde, by Joue reuolucio maketh; from one generacion to another, from the tyme of our redempcion, saluacion and sawing, vntill the laste daie of time. Wherefore during this while, vpon consideracion of the diuerso happe and hasarde, wherwith the Church is tomed, like a Shippe in the troubled Seas, she neither greatly reioiceth, ne soroweth, but redeth greate change of booke, oute of the olde and newe Testamēte: to the ende she maie walke the warcher, and the better wijnde her self out of the stormes, that are ready to assaile her.

From Aduente to Christmas, to remember the tyme from Moses, to the comyng of Messias. In the whiche mankinde certesed of saluacion, bothe by the lawe and the Propheies, awaited with moste earnest desires for his comyng, and the kingdōe that he should haue. Wherefore thei ordeined that the Propheies should be redde, and fasting exercised. That the church the better structured, and abled by these, mighte the worthelie receive the Birthe daie of Christ her Lordo (whiche euer falleth the fowerth wicke afre) and from thens holde-on with feaste, and continuall gladnesse, vntill Septuagesima. Reioisng that he was now come: whiche should bee the saluour of the worlde. Their oratories Temples, or places of praier (whiche we calle Churches) might not be built without the good will of the Bishoppe of the Diocese. And when the Timbre was redy to be framed, and the foundacion digged: it behoued them to sende for the Bishoppe, to hallowe the firste corner stone of the foundacio, and to make the signe of the crosse therypon, and to laie it, and directe it iuste East and Weste. And then might the Masons sette vpon the reste, but not afore. This Church did thei vse to builde, afre the facion of a crosse, and not vnlike the shape of a manne. The Chauncelle (in the whiche is conteyned the highe Altare and the Quire) directe full into the East, representeth the heade. And therefore ought to be made somewhat rounde, and muche shorter then the body of the church. And yet vpon respecte that the head is the place for the eyes, it ought to be of more lighte, and to bee separate with a particion, in the steade of a necke, from the body of the Church. This particion the Latine calleth Cancelli: and out of that cometh our terme, Chauncelle. On eche side of this chauncelle peraduēture (for so fitteth it beste) should stand a Turret, as it ware for two eares. And in these the Belles to be hanged, to calle the people to Seruice, by daie and by night. Vndre one of these Turrettes, is there commonly a voutle, whose doore openeth into the quire. And in this are laid vp, the hallowed vessels and ornaments, and other vtesiles of the church. We calle it a vestrie. The other parte oughte so to be fitted, that hauing as it ware on eche side an arme, the reste maye resemble the bodye with the fete stretched in breadthe, and in lengthe. On eche side of the bodye the pillars to stonde. Vpon whose coronettes or heades the vaulte or rophe of the church, maye reste. And to the foote beneth, altars to be ioyned.

Those altars to be onely alway covered with two altar clothes, and garnished with the crosse of Christe, or some litle cofre of reliques. At eche ende a candelsticke: and a booke towards the myddes. The walles to be parieted without, and within, and diuersly painted. That thei also should haue in euery parisse a faire sōunde stone, made holow and fitte to hold water: in the whiche the water consecrate for baptisme, may be kept for the christening of children. Vpon the right hande of the highe altar, that thier should be an almorie, either cutte into the walle, or framed vpon it: in the whiche thier would haue the Sacrament of the Lordes bodye, the holy oyle for the sicke, and the Chrismatorie, alwaie to be locked. Furthermore thei woulde that thier should be a pulpite in the middes of the church, wherein the prieste maye stonde vpon Sondayes and holidayes, to teache the people those thinges that it behoueth them to knowe. The Chauncelle to serue onely for the priestes, and clerkes. The rest of the temporalle multitude to be in the body of the

church. Séperate notwithstanding, the men on the ryghte side, and the women, on the left. And eche of them to be sobre and honest in apparelle and behaour. Whatsoeuer is contrary to good facion or Christiane religion, with greate diligence to shonne it. It was the maner in the first church, both amonge men and women to lette their heare growe, to shewe out their naked skinne, and very litle or nothing to disire in apparelle. Saint Peter put first ordre, that women should couer their heades, and menne rounde, their heare, and either of them to go in seuerable and sondrye apparelle. Moreover that to euery church, should be laid out a churchyard, of the grounde adioyning, in the whiche all Christen mennes bodies mighte indifferently be bewried. The same to be consecrate, or halowed, by the bisshope, and to enioye all the priuilegies that the church may enioye.

The funeralle for the dead, they kepe not in euery place ylike. Some mourne and keepe dirige and Masse seuen daies continuall together, some ix. some xxx. or fortye some, sixetic, and a hundred, and other a whole yere, wrapped vp in blacke. The counseile of Toledo ordeined that the corps beinge firste washed, and then wrapped vp in a shiete, should be caried forthe with singing by menne of his owne condicion or sorte, clerkes by clerkes, and laye menne of laye menne. And afte what time the priest hath sensed the corps, throwen holy water vpon it, & said certein prayers, to laye it into the graue with the face vpward, and the heade into the Weaste. Then to throwe in the earth again, and in token that ther is a Christiã ther bewried, to sette vp a crosse of wodde, garnished with yvie, cipres, or laurelle. These be the ordres and facions of the Christiane religion.

FINIS.

Imprinted at London by Iohn Kyngston and Henric Sutton.

The xxii daye of December. Anno Domini MDLV.

THE CONQUEST  
OF THE  
GRAND CANARIES,

MADE

THIS LAST SUMMER BY THREESCORE AND THIRTEENE SAILE OF SHIPPES,

SENT FORTH AT THE

COMMAND AND DIRECTION OF THE STATES GENERALL OF THE VNITED PROVINCES

TO THE

COAST OF SPAINE

AND THE

CANARIE-ISLES :

WITH THE

TAKING OF A TOWNE IN THE ILE OF GOMERA,

AND THE

SUCESSE OF PART OF THE SAIDE FLEETE IN THEIR RETURNE HOMEWARD.

WHICH

SET SAILE FOR SPAINE THE 25 OF MAIE, AND RETURNED HOME

THE 10 OF SEPTEMB. 1599.

At London :

PRINTED BY P. S. FOR W. ASPLEY, DWELLING IN PAULES CHURCH-YARD AT THE SIGNE OF  
THE TYGER'S HEAD.

1599.



## TRUE REPORT

OF

A VOYAGE MADE THIS LAST SUMMER, BY A FLEETE OF 73. SHIPPES,

SENT FORTH AT THE

COMMANDE AND DIRECTION OF THE STATES GENERALL OF THE UNITED PROVINCES,

TO THE

COAST OF SPAINE AND THE CANARIE-ISLES.

Tuesday the 25. daie of Maie the wind being Northe and North-east, we in the fleete of Rotterdam, being 20. saile of ships, the sunne beeing South-west and by West, came before Flushing, and ankered neere vnto Cleiburch; our generall at his comming found the fleetes of North-Holland, and Zealand ready.

Wednesday, the 26. daie wee remained there at anchor.

Thursday the 27. day of Maie, we tooke into our ships (by the Generals commandement) two gentlemen and foure souldiours.

Friday the 28. of May, 1599, the wind being northerly, we waied our anchors, and sailed from the Weelings with 73. ships, hauing faire weather, setting our course West, Southwest. Wee had 3. Admirals in this fleete, wherof the chiefe Admirall was the ship of William Dierickson Cloper, wherein was embarked the honourable gentleman Peter Van Doest being generall of the fleete. This ship was called the Orange, carying in her top a flag of Orange colour, vnder whose squadron were certaine Zelanders, with some South and North Hollanders; Jan Geerbrantson carried the white flag, vnder whom the Zelanders and ships of the Maze were appointed. And Cornelius Gheleinsd of Vlyshing wore in his maine top the blew flag, vnder whom were appointed certaine ships of the Maze with some North Hollanders. Thus were wee deuided into sundry squadrons, but to what ende it was so done, it is to me, and many others vnknowne.

Saturday the 29. of Maie, hauing sight of Callis, 3 ships lay to the lee ward, and staied for the rereward. The Lord generall shot off a peece, and afterward hung out the princes flag, in signe that the captains shold come aboard him, presently al the captains entred into their boates, & rowed aboard the Generall, at which time were two pinnaces sent out of the fleet, wherof one was the Generals Pinnace, but vnto what place they sailed, wee were altogether ignorant. And when the boates rowed from the Generall, some of them went aboard the victualers, and tooke out of them certaine fire-workes. The sunne Southwest,

Generall

Generall discharged an other peece of ordinance, and put out the Princes flag, whereupon presently the captaines went aboard him, and when our captaine returned, he had in his hande a letter closed vp, which hee brought from the Generall, and wee imagined that euerie captaine had receiued the like, and then wee sailed altogether toward the high- of Blacknesse, where wee anchored, (which caused vs greatly to wonder, seeing we had so faire a wind,) but wee perceiued afterwards, that this was done, to the ende we should there abide the comming of the great new ship of Amsterdam; for the soldiours which were appointed for her, were all with vs in a ship of our company.

Sunday, the 30. of Maie, where lying at anchor all that night, the next morning we set saile altogether hauing the winde at North East, wee set our course West Northwest, the weather being faire. The same morning our captain read vnto vs those very articles which before had bin read vnto vs in the prince Mauritz his Court, and afterwards ye' altogether, and with one accord were sworne to the keeping of them: At noone wee were neere vnto Beuers having a fine gale out of the East Northeast, the evening was calme, the foremost shippes staked their sailes, attending the comming in of the hindermost.

Wednesday the ninth of Iune by the breake of daie we were hard vnder the coast of Spaine neere to Viucro, the winde being westerly, we sailed North West and by North, and North Northwest, the sunne Southwest and by West, we were over against the cape Ortegael, we sailed North West and by North, to fetch the wind: we were in 44. degrees 20. minutes, at twilight, we had the foresaid Cape of vs about 5. miles South West and by West.

Ortegael.

Thursday the 10. of Iune, the winde being at East South East, wee directed our course towards the shore, and might certainly discerne that it was the coast of Ortegael, we bore in West Southwest directly with the land, and ordered all thinges as if we presently should haue had battell, and about noone wee had sight of the Groine, namely the tower which standeth neere the Groine.

Friday, the 11. of Iune, at the breake of day the winde being at North East and by East, sixe of our ships sailed forward South Southwest, meaning to enter the Groine, and there to learne how all things stood. The sunne being Southeast, Cape Prior was East from vs, we bare South, presently after we spied two boates comming out of Veroll to learn what ships we were, the rather because that the day before they had seene our flecte at sea: we sailed by the wind, and lay in the wind to stay for their comming. The one doubting vs would not come neere vs, the other boat also durst not approach neere vs: wee called to one of the Spaniards, saying wee came from Hamborch laden with cordage & other goods, desiring and praying him to let vs haue a Pilot to bring vs into the Groine, wherewith the boate came aboard vs, so that by our great haste, and policie we got one Spaniard, the other which remained in the boate would not come into our ship, but presently threw off their boate, making all possible speede to get from vs. Hauing nowe gotten the Spaniard, hee was presently deliuered into the hands of the Generall, who confessed that there were about 4000. souldiours come into the towne, with certaiue horsemen; 36. waggons with money, and 300. pipes of wine, to furnish the Spanish flect, that he lay the night past in the Groine, and was the Kings seruant. The sun South South-West, we came with our whole flecte before the Groine, where wee found the great newe ship of Amsterdam vnder the Towne.

The whole flect cometh before the Groine.

At 12. 13. and 10. fadome we cast our anchor, so that wee might behold much people both on the shoare and vpon the walls of the town: from the castle & town both, they shot mightily with their great ordinance into our flect, so that there were about 200. cannois shot discharged, wherewith some of our ships were hit, but not one man lost, and little hurt done otherwise. There lay an other castle East ward from the towne, which shot also most terribly, but altogether vncertainly, for we know not that they touched any one ship more then Moy Lambert, which was greatly to bee wondered at, seeing our flecte lay so thicke together, and so neere vnder the castle. There lay hard vnder the castle 12. great Gallions, with some French ships, which also nowe and then shot among our flecte, but they lay so neere the walls that wee could do them no harme at all. The Lord Generall worthy of all praise,



praise, wisely be thinking himselfe, caused all his captaines and counsell to come aboard him; that they might together conferrē vpon this busines, and what means might best bee found, to inuade the towne and the enemy, but they concluded not to meddle with the land there: seeing the enemy was there, strong vpon his guard, and that 5. weekes past both from Amsterdam, & by a French man, they had knowledge of our cōming; by reason of the calme, wee were constrained to towne out our ships with the boates in despite of all their shot, thus we parted from the Groyne without profit, or effecting of any thing, leauing the Papists of Groyne as, wee founde them, from thence (the winde being at South-Southwest) wee bent our course towarde Cape Saint-Vincent, meaning to goe to Saint Lucars, hoping to fall vpon them at vnawares, and ere they looked for vs.

Saturday the 12. of Iune, hauing got a fine gale we ran along the coast of Galicia, at noone wee were before the land of Cesarian, and set our course towards Cape Finister.

Sunday the 13. of Iune, the lord Generall gaue sharpe commandement by his letters, forbidding all men aboarde the-ships to vse any play, with tables, cards, or dice, either for money, or for pastime, or vpon credit.

Munday the 14. of Iune, the wind blew so harde out of the North, that wee could not heare our topsaides with our forecourse which sailed South; the sunne was southward we had Port a Port of vs, being in 41. degrees and 20 minuts.

Tuesday the 15. of Iune, as soone as day appeared, we had sight of Cape Roxent, and then we sailed making small way, staying for the coming together of the flecte: the wind as before we sailed South Southwest, and were in 36 degrees.

Wednesday the 16. of Iune, towards the euening we had sight of two strange ships eastward of our flecte, certain of our ships made towards them and tooke them, the one was an English man of war; the other was a Spanish barke with three mizens: at his coming before the Generall, he said, he had already sent 2. prizes into Englande, and woulde now with this prize returne home: for his victuals were almost spent.

Thursday the 17. of Iune, it was very still and calme weather.

Friday the 18. of Iune, the wind being at North Northeast, we sailed South Southwest. The Lord Generall caused all the Captaines with the Pilots to come aboard him: demanding of them which of them was best acquainted in the Isles of Canaria: and further, by what means, they might conquer and force the said-Ilands, and land their people. And about noone the captaines were chosen and appointed which should commande on land. The Generall gaue out newe ensignes, to the number of 9. or 10. according to the number of the ships. The lord Generall appointed to each new captaine, an Ancient bearer, a Lieutenant; and other officers, with 130. souldiours and mariners, and instructions how euery one of them should governe himself on the land.

Saturday the 19. of Iune, the Generall commanded that the captaines should deliuer out victuals but twice a day, to wit, 6. and 6. to a messe: for 6. men, 5. eams of beere of Roterdams measure euery day, 5. pounde of breade and no more, a cheste of 6. l. euery weeke, one pound of butter weekly, likewise pease, beanes, or Otemeale twice a day, according to the order. Captaine Harman, and captaine Pijs, had each of them commission to commande on the land as captaines ouer two companies of saylers, each company containing 130. men. Harman-Thunesson was appointed Ancient to captaine Henricke Pijs, and de Blomme Ancient to captaine Hendricke Hertma. The ancients were deliuered the same day.

The 20. 21. 22. daies, we sailed South Southwest, the wind being northerly.

Wednesday the 23. of Iune, the wind was North Northeast. The Generall commanded all the captaines both for the sea and land to come aboard him, where it was ordained and determined how the battell should be ordered, after they were landed. According to the altitude, we found our selues to be 36. miles from great Canaria.

Thursday the 24. of Iune, we ranne our foresaid course. The sun being West Northwest, we sawe the land East and by South off vs: wee sailed East and by South, and with great labour and diligence bore all that might with the land.

Friday the 25. of Iune, we continued our course to the land for our assured knowledge

thereof, and perceiv'd it to be Lancerot; we saw also a small land (which lay between both) call'd Alegrania, and also  $\frac{1}{2}$  land Forteuçtura, which is 24. miles great, afterward we sail'd Southwest along the coast of Forteuçtura, which is a lande that hath very high hills. The sun Southwest, we were past the land Forteuçtura, and were sail'd out of sight thereof, running as yet Southweſt: about ii. a clocke in the afternoon we had sight of the land of great Canaria, for a while wee kept our way; but when the Generall was assured that it was the grand-Canaria, wee all tooke in our sailes, and lay to the lee ward, and so remained vntill it was past midnight, then wee set saile againe and made to the lande, our course westward.

The whole Northward part of the Island is call'd the town of Grand Canaria.

Saturday the 26. of Iune, in the morning the whole fleet sail'd West directly to the land the winde North and by East, and made all things ready to land; being now neere the shore, the whole fleet let fall their anchors hard by the great castle, which lieth North Northwest from the town, from whence they began to shoot mightily against the ships. The lord Generall and the vize Admirall with the other ships that had the greatest ordnance, anchored close vnder the castle, & for a certain time they plied each other with their great shot;  $\frac{1}{2}$  Generals main mast, and his misse mast were shot thorow, and his vize Admirall, narrowly the great new ship of Amsterdam was shot thorow 6. or 7. times; so that some of the souldiours and maryners also were slaine before they entered their long boates to rowe to the shore: But the ships for their parts, had so well bestowed their shot on the castle, that they of the castle began to faint, wherby they discharged not so thicke and often as before. Our men rowed to the land in the long boates, every one full of soldiours, & the ships which could not discharge their ordnance against the castle, bent them against the shore, (for the enemy had three brass peeces lying vpon the strand) and many people were there gathered together where our souldiours shoulde land. Nowe as soone as the Generall with the most parte of the long boates were come together, they all at one instant rowed toward the shore maintaining for a while the fight on both sides with their shot. But the Generall perceiving that the enemy would not abandon the place, with a valiant courage made to the shore, and altogether leaping into the water vp to the middle, maintained the fight with the enemy. Notwithstanding the enemy no lesse couragious, would not yet leaue the strand, so that some of our souldiours & maryners lost their liues before the enemy would retire: for the place was discommodious, and hard to lande, but most of the enemy were slaine, to the number of 30. or 36. and the Governour his right leg was shot off, sitting on his horse. The lord Generall Peter von der Doest leaping first on land, was thrust in his leg with a pike, and had in his body 4. wounds more, and was in great danger to haue los' his life but that one of the souldiours slew the Spaniarde which meant to haue don it; but his wounds were of small moment, and his ancient bearer was slain with a shot, the Lieutenant Generall was shot in his throat, captaine Kruey in the heade, 4. soldiours were slain, & 15. hurt in the generals pinnace before they could come to land: But when our people now with one courage all together rushed vpon the enemy, (leaving their ordnance behinde them,) they forsooke the strand, and ran together into the town, carying with them their Governour, whose leg was shot off, & he was a knight of the order of the erosse, and leaving behind them 36. dead carcasses on the strand, were presently by our people ransacked, and our dead people buried. Our men now hauing won the strand, put themselves presently in battell ray; the empty boates returned to the ships, but after our people had taken the strand, the castle did neuer shoot shot. After the boates were returned aboard, presently they rowed againe to the shore full of soldiours; our people being all landed, they which for the first time had comendement, set vs in 7. troupes, or battalions, being xxiii. companies strong, of soldiours and Maryners, with twentie foure Amunicates. At which time we marched a litle forward twenty one a brest, and standing altogether in battell; suddainly three maryners came running to the Generall, (which had bin at the castle) telling him that the Spaniards desired to deliuer him the castle, so their liues & goods might be saued: the generall with some of the captaines and souldiours went first thither, and presently the castle was deliuered into his possession, hoping on his pity and mercy, and leauing behind them all the great ordnance, namely 9. peeces of brass, & 6. Iron peeces, & also all their weapns. In the castle were

Twenty foure companies strong of the Mordobers. The first castle taken.

about 80. Spawards, some cannoniers, some soldiers, and some people of the country, for the defence thereof; beside powder, shot and match accordingly, for the artillery, and also thirty small peeces or callivers. Also wee founde 58. prisoners, the rest were slaine with shot in the fury, and some were run away. The prisoners (which our people had taken in the road with two Barks, and a ship sunke with our ordnance, as they lay all 31. hard before the castle) were sent altogether aboarde the ships except 3. of the principals which the lord Generall reserved by him, to the end he might the better knowe the state of all things. Presently 80. soldiors were sent into the castle, who tooke downe the kings flag, and set vp. the princes colours: At the same instant two Negroes were brought to § Generall, which were fettered out of the mountains, they said that they had lien there a sleepe, and knew nothing of any matter. But now when it began to wax dark, we marched altogether a great way towards the town, 4. companies of soldiors approached hard vnder the towne, and other 4. cōpanies had the rereward: those of the Maze, with the Amsterdammers remained a pretty way from the town, vnder the hills; and the Zelanders, with the North-Hollanders lay neere the waters side, so wee remained all that night in order of battell.

Sunday the 27. of Iune, after we had now stood all night in battell order, early in the morning we marched w<sup>th</sup> our 7. troupes hard vnder the town of Canarie, where we remained a while in that order: but because they of the castle (which lieth to the towne) shot so mightily among vs; 2. of the troupes retired vnder a hill, where we were a little freede from the castle: for while our people stood imbattailed before the town, the castle did vs great hurt, for sometimes they shot five or sixe men with one shot, ere we could entrench our selues before the castle: but after they perceived that our people had made a small trench against the shot of the castle, they placed on the hill five or sixe small peeces of brasse called falconets (which shoots about a pounce of powder) and sometimes they shot boules of wood; wherewith in the beginning they slew manie of our people: so aduantageouslie had they placed their ordnance to shoot among vs. Ten or twelue of our Soukious ranne vp the hill, wherof the enemy tooke one, and presently cut him in foure peeces. Our people seeing that they so tyrantiously dealt with them; about the evening tooke a Spaniarde prisoner, and used him after the same manner. The lord Generall perceiving that many men were slaine with the ordnance, caused five peeces of brasse to bee brought from the castle which we had taken the daie before, and toward the evening we beganne to make a battery, and the same evening brought into it three peeces, wherof two were placed presentlie to play vpon the Castle, and the hill; but that evening were but five or sixe shotte made. While that our men made the batterie, and planted or placed the ordnance, the enemy placed his ordnance in counter-battery: and before our battery could be finished, and the ordnance placed, many of our men were shot, among whō Peter vanden Rynde commissioner, had his leg shot off, wherof he died within three daies after. After that it was dark, all they which lay there before the towne were againe set in order of battell, 15. on a ranke, and so remained all that night.

The 28. of Iune, early in the morning every man retired to his quarter, and then were two peeces more brought to the batterie, which also were presently placed on the Rampire, and so wee began to shoot against the castle with 4. peeces, and with the fifth we played vpon the small ordnance which lay vpon the hill. The enemy in the castle bid manie sackes of wooll, and placed many tonnes or barrels filled with stones vpon the castle walles supposing thereby to make some little defence from our ordnance; but when an iron bullet chanced to hit the barrels so filled with stones, it did them mightie hurt, for the stones would scatter maniauslie abroad, whereby many of them that were in the castle were slaine. Our men hauing now with their shot almost abated the force of the castle, 4. companies marched vp the hills, intending to beat the enemy from thence, which lay there with the ordnance. But the enemy perceiving himselfe to bee assaulted on all partes, (for most of the ordnance of the castle were dismounted and made vnprouitable, the gate of the towne set one fire by the Generalls commandement) about noone they forsooke both the castle, hill, and town, and with all their wives, children, money and Jewels, and all other things that they coule carry

The second  
castle is towne  
of Grand Ca-  
naria taken.

with them, fled into the mountains. Which when our men perceived, they put themselves in order of battle xv. in a ranke. The lord Generall seeing the Spaniards shamefull to flee, caused 2. ladders belonging to the enemies, to be brought out of a church which stood without the towne, whereof the one was too shorte, notwithstanding himselfe with one of the ladders climed vp the walles, one man at once followed, and by this meanes entered the towne ower the wals. About noone some of our men ran into the castle without any rencouter: the enemy had undermined the gate, but as we approached the wall, it tooke fire, but not one of our people was therewith hurt. They had also skattered powder in sundrie places, but our men themselves did fire the same: and as soone as our people were entered the castle, the kinges colours were taken downe, and the prince of Orenge set vp, and we found five peeces of brass therein. When wee were all entered into the towne, we put our selves againe into order of battoll 15. in a ranke in a low ground within the towne: and the souldiours which entered the towne by the hills side, brought to the Generall a man of Flushing, which they had taken out of prison: as soone as the Generall sawe him, he went presently with him to the prison, accompanied with some of our captaines, where they found 36. prisoners, which presently were discharged. And further they declared, that the Spaniards had taken with them 2. prisoners into the mountains, which were condemned to be burnt, the one was an English man, the other a Dutchman, which had lien in the holy house. This with the helpe of God about noone, wee won the great Island of Canaria, and the towne of Allegouts, battered with their owne artillery, and scaled with their owne ladders. Towards the evening wee were quartered in the houses, those wherein the Generall was, were by writing freed, that no man might take out any goods, in the rest euery one might go, and take what pillage he could find: but the Spaniards had caried all the best things with them into the mountains, and in the evening all our people entered the towne. Euery captaine with his company were severallie lodged, but yet we appointed watch on the hills, as well as in the towne, for the enemy shewed himselfe often vpon the hills, whereby we were forced to keep very good watch.

The 29. of Iune, this morning some of the mariners climed vp the hills, but the enemy (to whom the passage were better known, then to our people) suddainly set vpon them, and killed 20. of them. Towards the evening some 300. of our Souldiours marched towards a small castle which lay halfe an houres iourney from the towne: but the enemy seeing our people to approach, forsooke the place and fled into the mountains, our men being ascended, they founde in the castle three brass peeces: and after they had appointed a Corporall with certaine souldiours to keepe the watch, the rest returned to the city. The same night the Spaniards tooke one of our souldiours appointed for a forlorne Sentinell, whom they presently put to the sword.

The last of Iune, as soone as day appeared, wee began to cary the pillage aboarde belonging to the General, and captaines, as wines and other goods. About noone 3. cheefe men of the Spaniards came to our people, which kept watch on the hills with a flag of truce in their hands, which were straight brought before the Generall, and within a while after, there were 2. more brought vnto him: but after they had bin a while with him they departed againe towards the mountains: and in the evening came other 7. Spaniards to our watch with a flag of truce, desired to speake with the Generall: but they were sente backe againe into the Mountaynes.

The first day of Iuly, 1599. in the morning (our people being on the hills) 2. friers with three other Spaniards came vnto vs, desiring to be brought to the Generall, which our men accomplished: but the General denied to talke with them, wherefore they were presently sent backe againe from whence they came, for we were then labouring to send the goods a shipboord. Also at that instant was a sermon in the great church of great Canaria, made by the preacher of Ysilmood with great deuotion, and giuing thanks vnto God for our great victory, desiring him that it would please him daily to increase the same, to the honour of his name: at which Sermon the Lorde Generall was present with foure hundred persons.

The second of Iuly 1599. wee were forbidden by sounde of the drum that no man should

go beyond the forlorne sentinell placed on the Mountaines: and to sende backe againe into the hills all such Spaniards which came with a flag of truce, to speake with the Generall, and to put all such to the sword as came with weapons. One of our Pinnaces tooke a fisherman fishing vnder the Ilande Fortcauentera, wherein were 7. Spaniards, which were brought before the General, and prently committed to prison.

The 3. of Iuly in the morning we began to sende aboard our ships all the bels, ordnance & munition which the enemies had left behinde them, at which time 2000. soldiers were appointed to march to the hills, to seeke the enemy, which lay hid there with their wiues, children & goods, as they were fled out of the towne: and as soone as they approached each other, they began the fight on both sides with great courage, but the enemy was forced to flie, becing better acquainted with the passages of the mountains then our people were. Our men returned with the losse of some 70. persons: among whom captain Iacques Dierickson with his boatson were slaine: the rest came into the towne againe into their appointed quarters.

The 4. of Iuly, in the morning we began to burn the towne, and with powder blew vpon the castle which lay by the towne, and we burned likewise all the cloisters and churches which were without the towne, lying neere the water side. The town burning, our people were set in battell, and in that order marched out of the towne, vntill they came to Graciosa, the castle, which we first tooke, lying about halfe an houres journey from the towne, where the long boates receiued our men, and caried them againe aboarde. Presently after wee were departed out of the towne, the enemy catered, endeuoring by all meanes possible to quench the fire. And while we were shipping our people, the enemy shewed him selfe sometimes 5. or 6. in a company, but they durst not approach vs. The reward of our men being shipped, we put fire to the castle which we tooke first, and blew it vp: This done, capitaine Quyt imbarked himselfe also with his soldiours and pillage, which he had taken in the roade, for his ship wherein he was before was ready to sincke.

The 5. of Iuly, lying in the roade, in the morning the Generall discharged two peeces of ordnance, and afterward put out 2. flags of the princes colours, thereby giuing to vnderstand, that all land captaines, and sea captaines also with one of their Pilots should resort to him, whereupon presentlie they all rowed aboarde the Generall; the Pilots which were best acquainted with the coast, were demanded by the Generall which were the weakest Ilands, and where they might most commodiously land: Towards the evening capitaine Quyt his ship was fired, and suffered to driue towards the strand. At which time a newe capitaine was appointed to capitaine Iacques Dirricksons ship aforesaide, who was slaine in the mountaines, namely capitaine Kloyers Lieutenant. And the Generall Clarke of the band was appointed Lieutenent to captain Kloyer.

The 6. of Iuly, by reason of the contrary winds, and other inconueniences which happened at this present, and also because such ships, which before were sent to sea, and could not returne by reason of the contrary windes: we remained in the roade, vnder the castle of Graciosa. About noone 4. Spaniards came out of the towne with a flag of truce to the strand, directly ouer against our ships, whereof 2. were brought aboarde the Generall in one of our long boates, (the other two with their flag of truce were left behinde on the stronde) which remained with the Generall vntill the evening, and then were set on shore, and so the 4. Spaniards returned to the towne.

The 7. day riding in the roade, in the morning 4. Spaniards with a flag of peace, came to the shore from the towne, directly ouer against our ships: the fleet seeing them, sent a long boate to the shore, and brought the said 4. Spaniards aboard the General, these men brought with them the ransome of certaine Spaniards, which had deliuered vp the castle of Graciosa at the Generals pleasure, which were set to ransome, euery one according to his habilitie & office: and thus all the Spaniards which were ransomed, together with the 4. Spaniards which brought the ransoms, were set on shore with a long boat, and departed to the towne.

The 8. day of Iuly, two howers after sun rising, the Generall with all the ships set saile, carying

carying with him all the Spaniards that were not ransomed) sailing along the coast of great Canaria; in which time Ian Cornelesson Zwartekes departed this world, whose leg was shot off at the taking of the Iland of great Canaria. Having nowe sailed from y<sup>e</sup> height of the said Iland, which lay southerly from vs, we had sight of capitaine Hertmans ship, and of 3. others which rode there at anchor: who, so soone as they perceived our fleet, waied their anchors, and sailed along the coast with vs, which were the ships that the Generall had sent to sea. Sailing thus together untill the sun was in the West, the wind began to rise more and more, so that we could not keep our direct course, but were forced to put to the Southwest of the great Iland of Canaria, where we anchored: wee had sight of the Iland Teneriffe, and of an other of the Ilands of Canaria, wherein is the hie mountaine called the Pyck. This hil was from vs 14. miles, but by the great hight thereof it seemed to bee within foure or five miles off vs, but in the daie time when the sun shined wee could not see it.

The 9. of Iuly, lying thus at anchor, in the morning most of the long boates went a shore to fetch fresh water, such as they could there find and caried with them the deade corps of Ian Cornelesson aforesaid, the Constables son of the Admiralty of Roterdam, called Zwertkies, which was there honorably buried on the high and drie land. This done; we set on fire the woodc which lay on the shore piled and heaped in the woods, but in this place we found not any Spaniards.

The tenth of Iuly, the boates being all returned to their ships with their people, every one wayed their anchors and hoised their sailes, the winde at Northwest: but being vnder saile together, the wind slackt & by reason of the great calme the ships lay a drift for want of wind.

The 11. of Iuly, in the morning it blew a stout gale in our topsailes out of the Northeast, but as we approached the Iland of Teneriffa, the winde altered often; sixe or seuen of our shippes, and the rest which were next vnto the shore, had sometimes a gale in their topsailes, and sometimes againe without wind: so that we lay a drift, and could keepe no reckoning either of the wind or course, and were forced to alter our course more than 12. times a day.

A declaration of the taking of Gomera one of the Ilands in Canaria, and how we afterwarde left it.

The 12. day of Iuly sailing thus with great variety of wind, vnder the great Iland Teneriffa, the day appearing, we had the wind more certain, filling our topsailes with a full gale from the Northwest: And when it was faire day light we saw our fleet scattered far one fro another, by means of the foresaid mutable windes. Some ships lay driuing by reason of the calme, and other some had a little gale, but the most part of our fleet were West of vs, towards whom with all speed, we with the rest of the ships made. Being al come together, we endeouored to reach the Iland Gomera, wherein is a little towne: towards the euening many of our ships were neere the Iland, but the most part were to y<sup>e</sup> lee ward; so that before it grew toward the euening none of vs could come neere the towne. Notwithstanding in the twilight and shutting vp of the euening: Ian Garbrantson Admirall of the white flag, his vize Admirall, and a Binnace following, were come neere the town. Thus the Admirall saying so neere to the Iland, they of Gomera discharged 2. pieces at him, but touched him not. The saide Admirall seeing this, passed on a little farther with the other ships which were neere him, & then tooke in their sailes, and cast their anchors. The other ships which were behinde, lioured all they might to come also vnder the Iland to them.

The 13. of Iuly, the Admirall of the white flag lying thus at anchor neere to Gomera, the greatest part of the fleet were yet in the morning betwene the Iland of Teneriffa and Gomera, so that parte of the ships were beyonde the towne, and must sometimes cast about to conducte the others in, which were in the lee of vs. When wee had nowe for the most part passed the height of the Iland, the Generall gaue a signe to all capitaines to come aboarde him, being vnder saile, directing his course to the Iland of Gomera, and the other ships did their endeouyr

endeavour to follow him, and anchored about the necke of the valley, lying North North East off the towne. The ships being all come to anchor, the capitaines entered presently into the long boates, and rowed aboarde the Generall to know his minde; and after they had bene a while in the Generalls ship, they returned to their ships, and 4. companies of souldiours were chosen out; and landed in the valley. Which done, al the ships waied their anchors, and sailed directly toward the towne, and then came to anchor againe: After that all our ships lay thus together in the road neere the valley, before the town: we discharged certaine peeces against the towne, but they made no shewe at all of resistance, for they had buried foure brass peeces as soon as they had sight of vs, which lay on the strand neere vnto a small castle; the other sixe companies were also set on land in the long boates, without any resistance: for the Spaniards with their wines, children, and all their goods which they could carry with them were fled into the mountains. The first 4. cōpanies that were landed, they marched along the hills side towards the towne, perceiuing that the enemy fled with all his goods towards the hills, sent out a certaine number of souldiours to intercept them, and to take from them the goods which they caried away. And to accomplish this enterprise, our souldiours descended the hill into the valley, meaning suddainly to set vpon the Spaniards; but the enemy perceiuing their intent, hid themselves in caues which were nere vnto them, vntill our souldiours were in the valley. The Spaniards perceiuing that they were strong enough to encounter with our people, suddainly leapt out of their dens, and beset our souldiours on both sides. Our people seeing themselves thus compassed with their enemies, behaued themselves most valiantly, so that many of the Spaniards lost their liues, and 80. of ours were slaine in this valley: among whom were 2. Lieutenants (the one was Meerbecks sonne, and the other was Lieutenant to capitaine Bynon) which had receiued aboue 50. wounds in their bodies, so pittifullie were they massacred; thus were these worthie champions intercepted. The rest of those 4. companies, which were not present at this fury of the Spaniards, towards the evening, descended the hills, and marched into the towne. Presently after this, watch was appointed in all places of y<sup>e</sup> towne, and some of the souldiours began to dig the ground, to seeke for such goods as the Spaniards had buried, but at that instant they founde nothing, except only certain pipes of wine.

The towne of  
Gouernador  
was  
taken  
by  
the  
Spaniards.

Eighty  
Musk-  
shooters  
and  
seuē  
Souldiours  
were  
slaine.

About the sunne setting was brought in a Spanish prisoner, which was deliuered to the Prouest marshal, by the Generalls commandment, to the end he might bring them to all such places in the llande, whereas the Spaniards had hidden their goods. But because nothing could then be effected by reason that the evening approached, and it began to bee too dark the Spaniard was committed to a keeper vntil the next morning for the purpose aforesaid. But the night being far spent, & the keeper taking small regard to his charge, the Spaniard secretly stole away and ran to the mountains.

The 14. of Iuly, in the morning the long boates rowed againe to the shore, and caried aboarde such goods as the enemy had left behind them, which for the most part were wines, for they had caried clean away all other things into the mountains, and had left almost nothing in the towne, but only the wines which they had buried in the earth: In the afternoone our people found 3. bets, which they had buried in the fields, where corne had growne.

The 15. of Iuly in the morning our people running vp to the hills 10. or 12. in a cōpany to hunt & seeke for pillage, were suddainly inuironed by the enemy, and 6. or 8. of them slaine: the rest saved themselves by flight. About noone there was a generall muster taken of all the souldiours, to see how many wee had lost: and such ships as were appointed to returne home, began to deliuer out the victuals. The same day were two copper peeces founde: whereof the one was 16. foot and halfe long, and the other about 14. foot.

The 16. day in the morning the Lonil Generall gaue notice to all capitaines to resort to him aboard his ship, because some of the capitaines had not sent victuals vnto the souldiours that were on land, whereby they suffered hunger, and sundry of the souldiours had complained to the General thereof: At afternoone, the enemy came to the hill which lieth ouer

the

the towne, crying and calling vnto our men to come and fetch againe their muskets, and towards the evening many marriners with their weapons lauded, and at that instant also all things were ordered to march very early the next morning vp the hills to fetch againe our muskets, caliuers, and other weapons, which the Spaniards before had in mockery, and gibbing wise willed vs to fetch from them. But now when all things were ordered for this seruice: the same night arose a strong gale of winde, encreasing more and more, that in the ende it grew to a mightie tempest, that notwithstanding our fleet did ride vnder the Iland Gomera in the road before the towne, some were forced to way their anchors and to put to sea, to prevent the mischiefe like to happen to the ships, by reason they lay so neere one another. And when those ships were a little way in the Sea, they cast their anchors, and there remained. By this occasion the generalls aforesaid enterprize was kept backe: we iudging it as a warning, that the Generall should spare and preserue his people from the bloud-thirsty Spaniards, which had their holes and dens in the hills, and perhaps might haue taken away many of our liues. And heere by the way; by the name of the Iland Canaria, the Spaniards may rightly bee called Canarians or Canes, for Canaria is by interpretation, dogs kinde, for they ran as swift as dogs, and were as tyrannicall and bloud-thirsty as the rauening Wolfe, or any other wild beast, which they sufficiently manifested, for as soon as they could lay hands on any of our people (like vnto mad curs, agreeing with their name Canarias) they would presently woary them.

The 17. this hurtfull night ended, and the tempest ouer passed, and alaid, the courageous soldiors were all in redines, desirous to execute this peece of seruice, expecting & desiring nothing more, then to march vp the hills, and to incounter their idolatrous enemies. But vpon good consideration, this enterprize was staied, and some 300. soldiors sent into the same valley, where 3. daies before our people had bene suddainly compassed, intrapped, and slaine by the Spaniards. Our soldiors being come to the valley aforesaid, found no resistance, neither could once see a Spaniard; but found a smal peece of brasse about a fadome long, and two barrells of gunpowder; and when our soldiors perceiued that there was no good to be done (forbearing to mount the hills, because they had no commission so to do) with such things as they had they returned into the towne. The evening now approaching, the Generall commanded to carry aboard the ships, such goods as they had there found, and digged out of the ground, which was accordingly done and accomplished, among which things were three brasse peeces, some belts and other goods.

Sunday the 18. of Iuly, we remained at anchor in the road of the Iland Gomera.

Munday the 19. of Iuly, remaining yet in the Iland Gomera, and seeing that the Spaniards continued in their secret holes, and dens of the mountaines, wee set fire on the towne, and as neere as we could burnt down all places, as Cloisters churches, hermitages and houses, remaining yet in the towne vntill it was noone. After that all this was accomplished; we the vnitid soldiors forsooke the towne, and presently the Lord Generall, with all his company, went aboard the ships. Thus we left the Iland Gomera burning, which which was neuer before done by any nation. The Spaniards seeing that the soldiors were departed out of the Iland, with all speed possible, in great heapes came running out of their secret caves and holes, to quench the fire, like as they of Allegona in the Iland of great Canaria before had done.

Wednesday the 20. of Iuly, we lay still in the road before Gomera, in this time 2. of our soldiors were put into captain Cloiers ship, and in lew of them, we receiued out of his ship 2. others, which were hurt, with two Spaniards.

The summary or briefe declaration of the Admiralls departing towards the West Indies.

After that the Generall had left the Ilands, he giueth order to the fleet, taketh his leaue of all the Captaines and officers in most honorable sort; he aduanceth the voyage to the West Indies with his Navy: the rest of the ships returne into the low Countries, euery one from whence he came.

After

After that the Island of great Canaria was by the united soldiers taken, and won by force of arms, and the Island of Gomera conquered, for sundry reasons they were forsake, after they had carried to their ships such things as they found, fired the townes, churches, cloisters, and houses, and razed their Castles. The Lord Generall commanded all Captaines and officers of the flecte to resort vnto him aboard his ship. The same principals being come accordingly, he welcomed them and shewed them al friendship he could, thinking them for their good and faithfull endeouours which they had shewed in this seruice, which he performed with a singular oration; praying Almighty God that he would vouchsafe to be his only lord and merciful defender, in all his enterprises, to the honor of his name, and happy successe of the united Netherlandish prouinces. After this, the lord Generall againe in most friendly sort, and kind speeches, perswaded & desired all the saide captaines and officers, (allegging many reasons and examples) to perseuer in their good beginning of true and faithfull seruice for God, and for their good Lords and principall magistrats, the honorable gentlemen and states of the united Netherland; & to the good liking of their valiant & high borne gentleman & gouernour General prince Mauritz, their principall lord, and commander: &c. with these and such like matters the daie was spent.

Wednesday the 21. of Iuly, the wind was northerly: The lord Generall commanded all the captaines and officers to resort vnto him: and in most courteous manner againe the second time, tooke his leaue of them all, ordaining and appointing in his place as Admirall Generall ouer all those shippes which were to returne home, the valiant captain Ian Gerbrantson, desiring and straightly charging them al ther present, to shew all obedience and duty vnto him, as to his owne person; and that they should make his minde knowne to all others which had not bene there present. After these speeches, and leaue taken, the Admirall Ian Gerbrantson put out the princes colours in the maine top: and the honorable gentleman Peter von der Doest presentlic caused the princes flag also to be spread; and as soone as the same was Southwest, all the ships at one instant vayed their anchors, and hoised their sailes, taking leaue nowe the third time one of another, in most braue and triumphant sort, and in this manner departed the one from the other. The lord General with his flect, set this course South Southwest, with 36. ships, and the Admirall Ian Gerbrantson ran East by the wind, with 36. ships with intent to returne home.

Wednesday the 18. of August, sixteen ships of our flect which were sent to returne home, being in company together in the latitude of 36. degrees and 10. minutes, the wind Southwest sailing Northeast, before it was noone, we perceived 2. strange ships vnder saile coming out of the Northwest, towards whom we made, and at afternoone we overtook them, and made them our prizes: they were both Spaniards, the one was a small Barke, and came from Cape de Blanco in 21. degrees, laden for Wohis in the Conditie where they dwelled. In the same ship was a marchant of Cyuill with 47. men, each of their ships hauing two cast peeces, and euery man his musket, but they made no shewe of defence, or offending. There was also found laden in the same ships, sixty thousand drie hides or skins, esteemed to bee worth 6000. duckets as they reported, there were also found two bags with money, in the one was 11. hundred single rials, and in the other 10. hundred & forty single rials, with two Bats of traine oile, and two barrels of gum Arabique.

Thursday the 19. day, we the abovesaid 16. ships were together, beside the two Spanish ships, 4 ships of war of North Holland, 4 ships of Warres of Zeland and one ship of war of the Maze: the captain wherof was Anony Leonardson, al the rest were victualers. The wind West Northwest, we sailed Northeast, and by North in 36. degrees and 45. minutes. The captaines had bene all aboard the Admirall in counsell advising what were best to bee done in this matter of the Spaniards prizes.

Saturday, Sunday, the 21. and 22. of August, our said flect of 18. ships kept yet together, we found our selues to bee in 39. degrees, 6. minutes. The sun shined by West, the wind blew vp at West Northwest, wee sailed North Northeast, and North and by East, Lysborne was East of vs.

The Netherlandish fleet divided themselves into two companies, wherof the one returned to Lysborne, and the other proceeded for the West Indies.

Two Spanish prizes taken.

Munday the sixt of September, the winde westerly, we ran East, at noone wee soundid, the depth was 50. fadome water, we found small white shels with needles therein, in the hight of 49. degrees 20. minuts, the sun Southwest, wee had sight of Vshant, we ran North-east and by North.

Tuesday the 7. of September, the sun East South East, wee saw England, a mighty blustering gale of winde from the South Southwest, wee sailed North Northeast. The sunne Southwest, came to lande at Gawstert. Afterwarde wee turned and sailed East Southeast. In the evening it blew so much winde, that wee were forced, to strike our maine top mast, and we raine the whole night with two courses by the wind.

Wednesday the 8. of September, the foule weather continued, the sunne East and by South, we had sight of the Ile of Wight North Northwest of vs, and ranne the whole day, East Northeast with the foresaile by the wind: as the evening approached we saw Beucroier, in the night and second quarter we passed by Douer.

Thursday the 9. of September, as soone as the daie began to appeare it was calme weather, and darke, the sun Southeast, we lay still before Newport all the cluck. The wind easterly, in the after noone the wind came Northwest, we set saile againe, running al night by the wind with our foresaile.

Friday the 10. of September 1599, by the break of day wee were before the Maze, the sun Southwest, we arrived by the helpe of Gods mercy and grace before the Brill.

Since then, there is arrived at Texell another ship of war, whereof one Cater of Amsterdam was captain, the wich was scured from the fleet in this voiage by tempest, and thought to be lost. The said captaine met with some prizes, and in company of two English shippes tooke a Caruell of Adriano, verie richly laden comming out of India, and having more men then the English, shared halfe of the goods with them, and so came home this present month of Octob.

FINIS.

THE HISTORIE  
OF THE  
WEST INDIES,  
CONTAINING THEM  
*ACTES AND ADVENTURES OF THE SPANIARDS,*  
WHICH  
HAVE CONQUERED AND PEOPLED THOSE COUNTRIES,  
ENRICHED  
WITH VARIETIE OF PLEASANT RELATION OF THE MANNERS, CEREMONIES, LAWES,  
GOVERNMENTS, AND WARRES OF THE INDIANS.

PUBLISHED IN LATIN BY MR. HAKLUYT,  
AND TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH BY M. LOK. GENT.

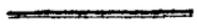
*In the hands of the Lord are all the corners of the earth. PSAL. XCV.*

London :

PRINTED FOR ANDREW HEEB, AND ARE TO BE SOLD AT THE SIGNE OF THE BELL IN  
PAULE CHURCH-YARD.



## TO THE READER.



Whoso committe themselves vnto the huge, and mayne Ocean, in a small vessell, may sooner expect to be swallowed in that vastity of waters, through the rage and furie of the Sea, then hope to gaine the desired, and intended haven. And seeing my selfe may well bee compared to that small vessell, being but a litle bonte, and no barke of any burthen, so sayle the tempestuous Seas, and spacious Ocean of this History: I will therefore (like the vnskillfull Navigators of former ages) rather coast it along the shoares, then spreade my sayles vnto the enuious windes in a daungerous Sea, through any arrogant presumption of mine owne strength, hoping thereby, to gaine the more securitie, when (still within the viewe of land) I may safely put into euery harbour, and so, auoide the innumerable perilles, which might otherwise insue. For this History comprehendeth a large, and copious discourse, full of all variety, extending it selfe in that exceeding length, that I might sooner weary, and loose my selfe in the narration, then giue full satisfaction to the Reader. Yet, that I may yeelde them due content, I purpose to giue some small tast of the contents of the whole, and for the rest, referre them to the body, and substance of the booke, whereof this small Epitomy, may iustly bee termed but the shaddowe. You shall therefore vnderstande, that this worke of the Decades (written by Peter Martyr a Millanoise of Angleria, intituled the History of the newe worlde) containeth the first discovery of the West Indies, together with the subiection, and conquest therof. Wherin, we are chiefly to consider, the industry, and trauailes of the Spanyarde, their exceeding charge in furnishing so many shippes, for this intended expedition, their continuall supplies to further their attemptes, and their actue and vndaunted spirities, in executing matters of that qualitie, and difficultie, and lastly, their constant resolution of Plantation. All whiche, may bee exemplary vnto vs, to performe the like in our Virginea, whiche beeing once thoroughly planted, and inhabited with our people, may returne as greate benefitte to our Nation in another kinde, as the Indies doe vnto the Spanyard: for although it yeeld not golde, yet, is it a fruitfull pleasant country, replenished with all good things, necessary for the life of man, if they be industrious, who inhabit it. But wee leaue this to them, who haue authoritie, and good purses, to further a matter of suche important consequence, and returne to our purpose. Besides the first discovery of this countrie of the West Indies, this historie likewise declareth the conquest, and subiection of the people, the manner howe, and what myriades of millions of poore naked Indians were slaughtered, and subdued through the conquering sword, and the number of the Spanyardes, that attempted, and performed the same. Wherein, the chiefe men of note, & principall Commanders, haue their particular names set down, as Christ. Columbus, Fern. Cortes, Fern. Magaglianus, and the rest, whome the Author hath expressly mentioned, to their aeternall commendation: and for the incitement, and prouocation of the liuing, to the like honourable, and high attemptes. Here also, are the people described, by their severall Nations, their particular rites, ceremonies, and customes, by their habite, and attyre, eyther in warre, or peace: also, by their religion, sacrifices, and other demeanure, & gestures whatsoever: so that to reade the particulars, discoursed there at large, which I briefly mention heere, will so allure the reader, that nothing may seeme more pleasing, or delightfull: for, as in fashions of apparell, and ordinary diet wee like extraordinary

extraordinary varietie, and change, though both transgresse the rules of modestie, and sobrietie, yet either of these please the appetite, and vntemperate desires: so doth varietie of historie yeelde more pleasure, and contentment, which (being a thing of more indifferencie, and as strong a motiue in another kinde) cannot but affect the senses, and intellectuall faculties, with farre greater delight. Hereunto he addeth the speciall description of the severall countries, with their particular situation, boundes, abutments, and qualitie of the soyle: together with their Mountaines, hills, rivers, meadowes, pastures, wooddes, forests, valleyes, playnes, and champions: and what goodly cities, and fortified townes are there erected, with the matter, and manner of their architecture, and building, with all the ornament, and elegancie thereof: their huge Pallaces, and houses of pleasure, farre exceeding many Christian Princes courtes: their orchardes, gardens, and other inclosures for wilde beastes and foules of diuers kinds, beautified with wonderful art, and curiositie: their mightie Lakes, (whereof some are little inferiour to the Euxine Sea) abounding with excellent fish, and whatsoever else the diuine bountie might bestowe vpon a blessed country, to enrich them with all earthly felicitie. And lastly hee largely describeth, what those Mountaynes, hills, valleyes, and champions, riuers, and Lakes ingender, and bring forth: what mineralles, as gold, and siluer, and what pearle, and precious stones: what wilde beastes, prodigious and strange, what foule, and fishes, fyes, and wormes of the earth, & other noysome things, are bredde there: and of the nature, and qualitie of althese. All which, this Historian most leacondly in a more large, and ample maner, discourseth, then this my short narration canne report, whiche least it exceede the just measure of due limites, and boundes, I willingly perswade the reader, to haue recourse vnto the Author himselfe, from whence he shall receive a more perfect satisfaction touching particulars then this generalitie doth include. Thus hoping the courteous, and discret, will mildly excuse, if not approve what I haue rudely done, I submit my selfe to euery humon, and expect differing censures according to the dissonant opinions, & variable inclination of euery Reader.

M. Lok.

CERTAINE

157

CERTAINE PREAMBLES HERE FOLLOWE,

GATHERED BY R. EDEN

TRACTORUS,

FOR THE BETTER VNDERSTANDING OF THE WHOLE WORK.

OF the first discovering of the West Indies.

A Certaine Caruell sayling in the West Ocean, aboue the coastes of Spayne, hadd a <sup>A hard begin-</sup> forcible and continuall winde from the East, whereby it was driuen to a land vnknowne, <sup>ing.</sup> and not described in any Map or Cande of the Sea, and was driuen still along by the coaste of the same for the space of many daies, vntill it came to a haven, where in a short time the most part of the mariners, being long before very weake and feeble by reason of hunger and trausyle, dyed: so that onely the Pilot, with three or foure other, remained alime. And not only they that dyed, did not enioy the Indies which they first discovered to their misfortune, but the residue also that liued had in manner as litle fruition of the same: not learning, or at the least not openly publishing any memory thereof, neyther of the place, or what it was called, or in what yeere it was founde: Albeit, the fault was not theirs, but rather the malice of others, or the enuie of that which we cal fortune. I do not therefore maruëlle, that the auncient histories affirme, that great things proceede and increase of small and obscure beginninges, sith we haue seene the same verified in this finding of the Indies, being so notable and newe a thing. We neede not be curious to seeke the name of the Pilot, sith death made a shorte ende of his doings. Some will, that he came from Andaluizia, and traded to the llandes of Canaria, and the lland of Madera, when this large and mortall nauigation chaunced vnto him. Other say that hee was a Byscannic and traded into Englande and France. Other also, that hee was a Portugall; & that either he went or came from Mina or India: whiche agreeth well with the name of these newe landes, as I haue sayd <sup>thus.</sup> before. Againe, some there be that say that he brought the Caruell to Portugall, or the llande of Madera, or to some other of the llandes called De los Azores. Yet doe none of them affirme any thing, although they all affirme that the Pilot dyed in the house of Christopher Colon, with whom remayned all suche writings and annotations as he had made of his voyage in the said Caruall, as well of such thinges as he obserued both by land and sea, as also of the eleuation of the pole in those lands which he had discovered.

What manner of man Christopher Colon (otherwise called Columbus) was, and how he came first to the knowledge of the Indies.

Christopher Colon was borne in Cugurco, or (as some say) in Nerus, a village in the territory of Genoua in Italie. Hee descended as some thinke, of the house of the Pelestretes of Placentia in Lombardie. Hee beganne of a chyld to bee a maryner: of whose arte they haue great exerceyse on the ryuer of Genoua. He traded many yeeres into Suria, and other parts of the East. After this, hee became a maister in making cartes for the sea, whereby hee hadde great vantage. Hee came to Portugall to know the reason and descrip-  
tion

tion of the South coasts of Africa, and the navigations of the Portugals, thereby to make his cardes more perfect to bee solde. Hee married in Portugalle, as some say: or as many say, in the Iland of Madera, where he dwelt at such time as the sayde Carauell arriued there, whose Pilot sojourned in his house, and dyed also there, bequeathing to Colon his card of the description of such newe landes as he had found, whereby Colon hadde the first knowledge of the Indies. Some haue thought that Colon was well learned in the Latine tongue and the science of Cosmographic: and that he was thereby first moued to seeke the landes of Antipodes, and the rich Iland of Cipango, wherof Marthus Paulus writeth. Also that he had reade what Plato in his dialogues of Timæus and Critias, writeth of the great Ilande of Atlantide, and of a great lande in the West Ocean vndiscovered, being bigger then Asia and Africa. Furthermore that he had knowledge what Aristotle and Theophrastus saye in their bookes of Marauyles, where they write that certayne merchautes of Carthage, sayling from the strayghtes of Gibraltar towards the West and South; founde after many daies a great Ilande not inhabited, yet replenished with all things requisite, and hauing many nauigable ryuers. In deede Colon was not greatly learned: yet of good vnderstanding. And when he had knowledge of the sayde newe-landes by the information of the deade Pilotte, made relation thereof to certayne learned menne, with whome he conferred as touching the lyke things mentioned of olde authors. Hee communicated this secreete and conferred chiefly with a Fryar, named Iohn Perez of Marchens, that dwelt in the Monastery of Rabida. So that I verily beleaue, that in manner all that hee declared, and manie things more that hee left vnspoken, were written by the sayde Spanysh Pilotte that dyed in his house. For I am perswaded, that if Colon by science attained to the knowledge of the Indies, hee woulde long before haue communicated this secreete to his owne country-menne the Genueues, (that traueyle all the worlde for gaynes, and not haue come into Spayne for this purpose. But doubtlesse hee neuer thought of any suche thing, before hee chaunced to bee acquainted with the sayde Pilotte, who founde those landes by fortune, according to the sayinge of Plinie, Quod ars docere non potuit, casus inuenit. That is, That arte coulde not teache; chaunce founde. Albeit, the more Christian opinion is, to thinke that GOD of his singular prouidence and infinite goodnesse, at the length with eyes of compassion as it were looking downe from heauen vpon the Sonnes of Adam, so long kept vnder Sathans captiuitie, intended euen then (for causes to him onelic vnknowne) to raise those wyndes of mercy whereby that Carauell (herein most lyke vnto the shippe of Noe, whereby the remnant of the whole worlde was saued, as by this Carauell this newe worlde receyued the first hope of their saluation) was driuen to these landes. But wee will nowe declare what great things followed of this small begynnyng, and howe Colon followed this matter, reuealed vnto him not without GODS prouidence.

What labour and traouyle Colon tooke in attempting his first voyage to the Indies.

After the death of the Pilot & marrynes of the Spanysh Carauell that discovered the Indies, Christopher Colon purposed to seeke the same. But in howe much more hee desired this, the lesse was his power to accomlishe his desire. For besides that of himselfe hee was not able to furnishe one shippe, he lacked also the fauour of a King, vnder whose protection he might so enjoy the riches hee hoped to finde, that none other myght take the same from him, or defeat him there of. And seeing the king of Portugal occupied in the conquest of Africa, and the Navigations of the East, which were then first attempted, the King of Castyle likewise no lesse buited in the warres of Granada, hee sent to his brother Bartholomewe Colon, (who was also priuit to this secreete) to practise with the King of Englande (Henry the seuenth) being verie rich and without warres, promising to bring him great riches in shorte time, if hee woulde shewe him fauour, and furnishe him with shippes to discover the newe Indies, wherof he had certayne knowledge. But neither here being able to bring his suite to passe, he caused the matter to be moued to the king of Portugal Don Alonso, the fifth of that name: at whose hands hee found neither fauour nor money, forasmuch as the Licentiat Calzadilla the bishop of Visgo, and one maister Rodrigo, men of

Colon was not much learned.

Colon conferred with learned men.

King Henry the seuenth.

Bartholomewe Colon did all things.

credit

credite in the science of Cosmographic, withstoode him, and contended that *tygge* neither was nor coulde any golde or other riches bee founde in the West, as Colon affirmed. By reason whereof he was very sad and pensive: but yet was not discouraged, or despaired of *y* hope of his good adventure, which hee afterwarde founde. This done, he tooke shipping at Lisburne, and came to Palos of Moguer, where hee communed with Martin Alonso Pinzon, an experte Pilotte, who offered himselfe vnto him. After this, disclosing the whole secretes of his minde to John Perez of Marchena (a fryar of thorder of saint Frances in Rallda, and wel learned in Cosmography) and declaring vnto him howe by following the course of the Sunne by a temperate voyage, rich and great landes might be founde: the Fryar greatly commended his enterpryse, and gaue him counsaile to breake the matter to the Duke of Medina Sidonia, Don Enrique of Guzman, a great Lorde, and very rich: also to Don Luis of Cerda, the Duke of Medina Celi, who at that time had great prouision of ships well furnished in his hauen of Santa Maria. But whereas both these Dukes tooke the matter for a dreame, and as a thing deuised of an Italian deceiuer, who (as they thought) had before with like pretence deluded the kinges of Englande and Portugall, the Fryar gaue him courage to goe to the courte of the Catholike Princes Don Fernando, and lady Isabell princes of Castile, affirming that they woulde bee ioyfull of suche newes: And for his better furtherance herein, wrote letters by him to Fryar Ferdinando of Talauera the Queenes confessor. Christopher Colon therefore, repayed to the Court of the Catholike princes, in the yeere 1486. and deliuered vnto their handes the petition of his request, as concerning the discovering of the new Iudies. But they being more carefull, and applying all their mynde howe they might dryue the Moores out of the kingdome of Grenada, whiche greate enterpryse they had already taken in hande, did little or nothing esteeme the matter. But Colon not thus discouraged, founde the meanes to declare his suite to such as had sometimes private communication with the King. Yet because hee was a stranger, and went but in simple apparell, nor otherwise credited then by the letter of a gray fryar they beleued him not, neyther gaue eare to his wordes, whereby he was greatly tormented in his imagination. Onely Alonso of Quintanilla, the Kinges chiefe Auditor, gaue him meate and drinke at his owne charges, and hearde gladly suche thynges as hee declared of the landes not then founde: desiring him in the meane tyme to bee content with that poore entertainment, and not to dispayre of his enterpryse: putting him also in good comforte that he shoulde, at one time or other, come to the speech of the Catholike princes. And thus shortly after, by the meanes of Alonso of Quintanilla, Colon was brought to the presence and audience of the Cardinall Don Pero Gonzales of Mendoza, archbishop of Toledo, a manne of great reuenues and authority with the King and Queene, who brought him before them, after that he well perceiued and examined his entent. And by this meanes was his suite hearde of the Catholike princes, who also reade the booke of his memorialls which he presented vnto them. And although at the first they tooke it for vaine & false that he promised, neuertheless they put him in good hope that he should bee wel dispatched whē they had finished the wars of Granada, which they had now in had. With which answer, Colon began to reuiue his spirits, with hope to be better esteemed, & more fauorably to be heard among the gentlemen & noblemen of the courte, who before tooke him onely for a crafty fellow & deceiuer: & was no thing dismaide or discouraged whensoever hee debated the matter with them, although many iudged him phantasticall, as is the maner of ignorant men, to call all such as attemp any thing beyōd their reach, & the compass of their knowledge, thinking the worlde to be no bigger then the cages wherin they are brought vp and hūc. But to returne to Colon. So hot & vrgēt was the siege of Granada, that they presently granted him his demande to seeke the new land, & to bring from thence gold, siluer, pearles, precioust stones, spices, and such other rich things. They gaue him also the 10. part of all the reuenues and customes due vnto the king, of all such landes as he shoulde discover, not doing prejudice in any thing to the king of Portugall. The particulars of this agreement were made in the towne called Sancta Fe: & the priuilege of the rewarde in Granada the xxx. day of Aprill, the same yeere that citie was won. And whereas the said Catholike princes had not money

The cooper  
of Granada.

The archbishop  
of Toledo.

presently dispatched Colon, Luis of S. Angel, the Kings Secretary of accounts, lent them G. Queenes of Marz, which in a grosse summe make 16. thousand Ducates.

In the scutcheon of armes given to Columbus by Don Ferdinando and queene Isabella, these verses were written.

Por Castella, y por Leon. Nuevo mundo hallo Colon.

For Castile and for Leon.

A newe worlde founde was by Colon.

Why they were called Indians.

The colour of  
the East In-  
dians.

Some thinke that the people of the new world were called Indians, because they are of the colour of the East Indians. And although (as it seemeth to me) they differ much in colour and fashions, yet it is true, that of India they were called Indians. India is properly called that great Prouince of Asia, in the which great Alexander kept his warres, and was so named of the ryuer Indus: & it is diuided into many kingdomes confining with the same. From this great India (called the East India) came great companies of men, as writeth Herodotus, & inhabited that great parte of Ethiopia that lyeth betwene the sea Bermeia (otherwise called the red sea, or the gulf of Arabia) and the riuer of Nilus: of which regions y great Christian prince Prester Iohn doth now possess. The said Indians prevailed so much, that they viterly changed the customes and name of that land, & called it India: by reason whereof, Ethiopia also hath of long tyme bin called India. And hereupon it came that Aristotle, Seneca, & certayne other old authors sayd, that India was not farre from Spaine. After this also, of later dayes our West India was so called, of the saide India of Prester Iohn where the Portugalles had their trade: For the Pilot of the Carauell that was first dryuen by forcible winde to an vnkowne land in the West Ocean, called the same India, because the Portugalles so called such landes as they had lately discovered Eastward. Christopher Colon also, after the said Pilot, called the West landes by the same name: Albeit some that take Colonus for an expert Cosmographer, thinke that he so named them of the East India, as to be the furthest & vnkowne end thereof, reaching into the West, vnder the other hemispheric or halfe globe of the earth beneath vs: affirming that when he first attempted to discover the Indies, he went chiefly to seeke the rich land of Cipango, which falleth on the part of great China or Cathay, as writeth Marcus Paulus Venetus, & other: and that he should sooner come thither by following the course of the Saune Westward, then against the same.

Of the colour of the Indians.

The colour of  
the West In-  
dians.

ONE of the marueylous things that God vseth in the composition of man, is colour: which doubtlesse cannot bee considered without great admiration, in holding one to be white, and another blacke, being colours viterly contrary: some likewise to be yellow, which is betwene blacke and white: and other of other colours, as it were of diuers hues. And as these colours are to be marueyled at, euen so it is to be considered, howe they differ one from another, as it were by degrees, forasmuch as some men are white after diuers sorts of whitenesse, yellow after diuers manners of yellow, & blacke after diuers sorts of blackenesse: & howe from white they goe to yellowe by discolouring to browne and redde, and so blacke by ashe colour, and marry, somewhat lighter then blacke, and tawny like vnto the West Indians, whiche are altogether in generall either purple or tawny, like vnto sodd Quincees, or of the colour of Chesnuttes or Olives, whiche colour is to them naturall: and not by their going naked, as manie haue thought: albeit their nakednesse haue somewhat helped therunto. Therefore in like manner, and with such diuersitie as menne are commonly white in Europe, and blacke in Affrike, euen with like varietie are they tawny in these Indies, with diuers degrees diuersly inclining more or lesse to blacke or white. No lesse marueyle is it to consider, that menne are white in Simile and blacke at the cape of Buena Speranza, & of Chesnutte colour at the ryuer of Plata; being all in equal degrees from the Equinoctiall lyne, Lykewise,

Lykewise, that the men of Affrike and Asia, that lyue vnder the burnt lynce (called Zona Torrida) are blacke: and not they that lyue beneath, or on this side the same lynce, as in Mexico, Iucatan, Quauhtema, Lian, Nicoragua, Panama, Santa Domingo, Paria, Capo Sainot Augustine, Lima, Quito, and other landes of Peru, which touch in the same Equinoctial. For in all the tracte of these coastes, certayne blacke men were founde onely in Quazreua, when Vaschus Nunnez of Balboa discovered the sea of Sur. By reason wherof it may seeme, that such variety of colours proceedeth of man, & not of the earth: which may well be, although we bee all borne of Adam and Eue, and knowe not the cause why God hath so ordeyued it, otherwise then to consider that his diuine maiesty hath don this, as infinite other, to declare his omnipotency and wisdom, in such diuersities of colours, as appeare not onely in the nature of manne; but the like also in beastes, byrdes, and floures, where diuers and contrary colours are scene in one litle feather, or the leaues growing out of one litle stalke. Another thing is also greatly to bee noted, as touching these Indians: and this is, that their hayre is not curld, as is the Moores and Ethiopians that inhabite the same climate: neyther are they balde, except very seldome, and that but litle. All which things may giue further occasions, to Philosophers to search the secrets of nature, and complexions of men, with the nouelties of the newe worlde.

Gods wisdom  
and power is  
euen in his  
works.

A most auncient testimonie of the West Indies, by the writing of the diuine Philosopher Plato.

PLATO in his famous and diuine Dialogue named Timeus where he stretteth of the vniuersal nature & frame of y<sup>e</sup> whole world, taketh for his principle the most auncient historie of an Iland, in tyme of great antiquitie, named Atlantides, making also mention of the king, people, & inhabitants of the same: & that they kept warre against the Atheniens, and were overcome of them. Plato also there inducing the said historie to be rehearsed by one named Critia, who affirmed that he had often heard it of his Vncle, who was in y<sup>e</sup> time of Solon, one of the xxiij sages of the Greekes. This Critia declared, that when Solon went into Egypt to a certayne city named Saim, situate vpon y<sup>e</sup> riuer of Nilus, where y<sup>e</sup> diuinitie & recurring of the riuer, maketh the Iland Delta, he there spake with certayne learned priestes, very skilfull in knowledge of antiquities of many worldes past. Insomuch y<sup>e</sup> they made mention of many things y<sup>e</sup> were before the flood of Noe, or Deucalion, & also before the vniuersal conflagration or burning of the world in y<sup>e</sup> time of Phaeton, forasmuch as the warre betwene the people of the sayd Iland of Atlantides & the Atheniens was long before the general flood, & the conflagration aforesayd. Plato induceth the priest, speaking to Solon in maner as followeth.

Things most maruelous & true (O Solon) remayne in auncient writyngs & memorie of our predecessours, & old ages long before our times. But about all things, one exceedeth al admiration for the greatnesse & singularitie thereof, which is this: It is in our records of most antiquities, that in times past your city of Athens hath oftentimes kept warre against an innumerable multitude of nationes which came fro the sea Atlantike, in maner into al Europe and Asia: whereas now appeareth no such nation, forasmuch as the sayde sea is now all ouer nauigable: And yet at that time had in the mouth, and as it were in the entrice (where you place the Columnes of Hercules) an Ilande which was sayd to be much greater then all Africa and Asia, and that from thence was passage to many other landes neere thereabout, and from the sayde landes to the continent or firme lande, which was right ouer against it neere vnto the sea: Yet, that within the mouth, there was a litle gulfe, with a port: the deepe sea without was the true sea, and the lande without was the true continent. This Ilande was named Atlantides, and in it was a Kinge of maruellous great power and might, who had the dominion of the sayde Ilande, and many other, and also a great part of the continent lande wherof we haue spoken, and much more towards our partes also, forasmuch as they were dominatours of the thyrde part of the worlde conteyning Africa, Egypt, and Europe, euen vnto the sea Tyrhenum. The power therefore of them being then so great; they came to inuade both your country and ours, and all other that are within the Columnes of Hercules. Then (O Solon) the vertue of your city shewed it selfe famous in magnanimitie and feates

of armes, with the assemblance of the other Grecians, in resistyng their great power, vntyl you had driuen them out of our lands, and restored vs to our libertie. But shortly after that this enterprise was achieved, besel a marueylous great earthquake, and exundation or overflowing of the sea, which continued for the space of one day and night: In the which the earth opened it selfe, and inglitted all those valiant and warlike men, and the sayde Ilande Atlantides sunke into the bottome of the sea, which was the occasion that neuer from that tyme forward, any shyp coulede sayle that way, by reason of the great muddle and slyme which remayned of the drowned Ilande.

This is the summe of those things which olde Critia sayde he had vnderstoode of Solon. And certainly these wordes of Plato of the sayd Iland, haue caused great contention among many great Philosophers, which haue written commentaries vpon the sayde Dialogue of Timeus composed by Plato: Insomuch that the same in those dayes being vnterly vnknown, many haue taken this narration of Solon, for an allegoricall fable, and haue interpreted the same in diuers senses and meauynges. But it may now well appeare the true meaning hereof to be this, that Plato intending to wryte of the vniuersal frame of the worlde, the which he knewe to be made an habitation for the diuine best man, and also beholdyng therein the great ornament and beauty of the heauen and starres, whereby man might knowe his God and creatour, it might seeme to him a thing to farre from reason; that onely two partes thereof should be inhabited, and the other part desolate and deprived of men: and that the Sunne & starres might seeme to shewe their light onely halfe their course without profite, shining only vpon the sea & desolate places, destitute of man & other liuing creatures. And therefore Plato had in great admiration the historye of the sayde Egyptian priest, making mention of another part of the world beside Asia, Europe, and Africa; and thought it worthy to be rehearsed in the beginning of his diuine Dialogue aforesayde. We ought therefore certainly to thinke our selues most bound vnto God, that in these our times it hath pleased him to reueale and discouer this secreete in the finding of this new worlde, whereby wee are certainly assured, that vnder our Pole starre, and vnder the Equinoctiall line, are most goodly and ample regions, as well and commodiously inhabited, as are other partes of the worlde best known vnto vs.

The testimonie of the Poet Seneca in his Tragedie De Medea, whereby the spirit of Poeticall furie, he sayth.

Veniens annis  
 Secula seris, quibus Oceanus  
 Vincula rerum laxet, et ingens  
 Patcat tellus, Typhisque nouus  
 Detegat Orbis,  
 Nec sit teris, vltima Thyle.

Which may be thus Englished.

In late yeeres new worldes shall be founde,  
 And newe laudes shall then appeare on the grounde,  
 When Tiphis Navigation new worldes shall finde out,  
 Then shall not Thyle for last be left out.  
 For then shall the Ocean dissolue his large bandes,  
 And shewe fourth newe worldes, regions, and landes.

To the most noble princke and catholike King, Charles, Peter Martyr of Angleria wisheth perpetuall felicitie.

The diuine providence, from the time that he first created this world, hath reserved vnto this day the knowledge of the great & large Ocean sea. In the which tyme he hath opened this same chiefly vnto you (most mighty Prince) by your good fortune & happy successe of your grandfather by your mother side. The same providence (I know not by what destinie) hath brought

The largest of the Ocean was knowne to this day.

The largest of the Ocean was knowne to this day.

brought me out of my native countrey of Millane, and out of the cittie of Rome (where I continued almost. x. yeeres) into Spaine that I might particularly collecte these marueilous and newe thiings, which shoulde otherwise perhappes haue lien drowned in the whirlepoole of obliuion, forasmuche as the Spanyardes (men worthy great commendation) had only care to the generall inuentions of these things. Notwithstanding, I do not challenge vnto me only, the thanks of the irauaile bestowed herein, whereas the chiefe rewarde thereof is due to Ascanius Vicont Cardinal, who perceyning that I was willing to depart out of the city to bee present at the warres of Granatum, dissuaded me from my purpose: But seeing that I was fully resolu'd to depart, exhorted and required me to write vnto him such newes as were famous in Spaine, & worthy to be noted. I tooke therefore my journey into Spaine chiefly for the desire I hadd to see the expedition which was prepared against the enemies of the faith, forasmuch as in Italye, by reason of the dissention amonge the Princes, I coulde finde nothing wherewith I might feede my witte, being a younge man desirous of knowledge and experience of thiings. I was therefore present at the warres, from whence I write to Cardinal Ascanius, and by sundry Epistles certified him of such things as I thought most worthy to bee put in memorie. But when I perceiued that his fortune, was turned from a naturall mother to a stepdame, I ceased from writing. Yet after I sawe, that by ouerthrowe of the enemies of our faith, Spaine was purged of the Moores, as of an euill weede plucked vpp by the rootes, least I should bestowe my slippery yeeres in vnprofitable idlennesse, I was minded to returne to Italic. But the singular benignitie of both the Catholike king and queene now departed: and their large promises toward me vpon my returne from my legacie of Babylon deteyned me from my purpose. Yet doth it not repent me that I drew backe my foot, aswell for that I see in no other place of the worlde at this time the like worthie things to bee done: as also that in manner throughout Italic, by reason of the discord of Christian Princes, I perceiued all things to runne headlong into ruine, the countrey to bee destroyed and made fatte with humane blood, the Citties sacked, virgins and matrones with their goods and possessions carryed away as Captiues, and miserable innocents without offence to bee slayne vnarmed within their owne houses. Of the which calamities, I did not onely heare the lamentable outeries, but did also feele the same: For euen the bloude of mine owne kinsfolkes and friendes, was not freed from that crueltie. As I was therefore musing with my selfe of these things, the Cardinall of Arragone, after that he had scene the two first bookes of my Decades written to Ascanius, required mee in the name of king Frederike his vncke, to put forth the other eyght epistle bookes. In the meane time also, while I was voyde of all cares as touching the matters of the Ocean, the Apostollicall messengers of the bishop of Rome, Leo the tenth (by whose holosome counsayle and authority we trust the calamities of Italic shall bee finished) raysed mee as it were from sleepe, and encouraged me to proceed as I had begun. To his holinesse I write two Decades, comprysed in short bookes, after the maner of epistles, and added them to the first, which was printed without mine aduice, as shall further appeare by the preface following. But nowe I returne to you (most noble Prince) from whom I haue somewhat digressed. Therefore wheras your grandfather by your mothers side, haue subdued all Spaine vnder your dominio, except only one corner of the same, and haue also left you the kingdome of Naples, with the fruitfull Ilandes of our seas, it is surely a great thing and worthy to bee noted in our Cronicles. But not offeuding the reuerence due to our predecessours, whatsoever from the beginning of the world hath bene done or written to this day, to my iudgement seemeth but little, if wee consider what new landes and countreys, what newe seas, what sundry nations and tongues, what golde mynes, what treasuries of pearles they haue left vnto your highnesse, beside other reuenues. The which, what they are, and howe great, these three Decades shall declare. Come therefore most noble Prince elected of God, and enioy that high estate of things not yet vnderstood to men. We offer vnto you the Equinoctiall lynne hitherto vnknowne, and burnt by the furious heate of the sunne, and inhabitable after the opinion of the olde writers, a few excepted: but nowe founde to bee most replenished with people, faire, fruitful, and most fortunate, with a thousand Ilandes crowned with golde and beautifull pearles, besides

Cardinal Asca-  
nius.  
The warres at  
Granatum  
against the  
Moores.

Italic completed  
with war.

The sequels of  
warre.

King Frederike.

Spaine subdued  
from the  
Moores.  
The kingdome of  
Naples.

The temperance  
of the Equinoctiall  
lynne was  
not taken up  
by the olde writers.

that

One word or  
two is said as  
to be in these  
F. pages.  
Which see the  
same message  
conspires.

that greate portion of earth supposed to be part of the firme lande, exceeding in quantitie three Europes. Come therefore and embrace this new world, and suffer vs no longer to consume in desire of your presence. From hence, from hence I say (most noble young Prince) shall instrumentes bee prepared you, whereby all the world shall be vnder your obeysance. And thus I bid your Maiestie farewell: to whose tast if I shall perceiue the frutes of this my tyllage to bee delectable, I will hereafter doe my endeour that ypu may receive the same more abundantly. From Madrid, the day before the Calends of October, In the yeere of Christ, 1516.

THE  
FYRST BOOKE  
OF THE  
DECADES OF THE OCEAN,

WRITTEN BY

PETER MARTYR OF ANGLERIA MILENOES,

COUNSAYLER TO THE KYNG OF SPAINE,

AND

PROTONOTARIE APOSTOLICALL TO ASCANIUS SPHORCIA, VICOUNT CARDINAL, &c.

**T**He reuerende and thankfull antiquitie was accustomed to esteeme those menne as Gods, The reward of vertue. by whose industrie and magnanimitie such landes and regions were discovered, as were vnknowne to their Predecessours. But vnto vs, hauing onely one God, whom wee honour in triplicitie of person, this resteth, that albeit we do not worship that kind of men with diuine honour, yet wee doe reuerence them, and worthily maruile at their noble actes and enterprises. Vnto kinges and princes wee giue due obeysance, by whose gouernance and furtherance they haue been ayded to performe their attempts: we commend both and for their iust desertes worthily extoll them. Wherefore, as concerning the Ilandes of the west Ocean, lately discovered, and of the authours of the same (which thing you desire by your letters to know) I will begin at the first author thereof least I bee iniurious to any man. Take it therefore as followeth.

Christophorus Colonus (otherwise called Columbus) a gentle man of Italie, borne in the citie of Genus, perswaded Fernando and Elizabeth, catholike princes, that he doubted not to find certaine Ilandes of India, neere vnto our Ocean sea, if they woulde furnish him with shippes and other thinges apperteyning: affirming that thereby not onely the Christian religion might be enlarged, but Spaine also enriched by the great plentie of gold, pearles, precious stones, and spices, which might be found thero. At the length three shippes were appoynted him at the kinges charges: of the which one was a great caracie with deckes, and the other two were light marchant shippes without deckes, which the Spanyardes call Carauelas. Thus hee departed from the coastes of Spaine about the calendes of September, in the yeere of Christe. 1492. and set forwarde on his voyage, being accompanied with CC.xx. Christophorus Colonus. The first voyage of Columbus. Spanyardes. The fortunate Ilandes (as manie thinke them to be which the Spanyardes call Canarie, found but of late dayes) are distant from the Ilands of Gades a thousande and two hundredth myles, according to their accomptes, for they say they are distant three hundred leagues: The Ilands of Canarie, Gades, or Cold mals.

A league, wher  
is contained by  
the fortunate  
Islands.

Capo Verde

The 7. Ilands of  
Canarie.  
Betanchor &  
Ferdinandus ruler  
of Canarie, etc.

Alphonso Lopez

Colonus men  
subjugation him

Faire words &  
promises

Hispaniola,  
Iohanna.

Nightingales sing  
in November.

The Iland of  
Ophir.

The Ilands of  
Antilla.

leagues; whereas such as are expert sea men, affirme that every league containeth foure myles, after their supputations. These Ilandes were called fortunate, for the temperate ayre which is in them. For neither the coldnesse of winter is sharpe vnto them, nor the heate of sommer intolerable. Yet some men are of opinion, that these were in old time called the fortunate Ilandes, which the Portugales call Capo Verde. Colonus therefore sayled first to the Ilandes of Canarie, to the intent there to refresh his shippes with fresh water and fuell, before he committed himselfe to this so laborous a voiage. And because I haue heare made mention of the Ilandes of Canarie, it shall not be much from my purpose, to declare howe of vnknowne they became knowne, and of sauage and wilde, better mannered: For by the long course of many yeeres they were forgotten, and remained as vnknowen.

These seuen Ilandes (therefore) called the Canaries, were found by chance by a French man called, Betanchor by the permission of queene Katharine, protectrix of king Iohn her son, while he was yet in his monage, about the yeere of Christ 1405. This Betanchor inuaded two of these Ilandes called Lanuelotus & Fortisuentura, which he inhabited and brought to better culture. He being dead, his soane and heire sold both the sayd Ilandes to certaine Spanyardes.

After this, Fernandus Peraria and his wife, innaded Ferrea and Gemera. The other three were subdued in our time. Grancanaria, by Petrus de Vera, citizen of the noble citie of Xericium, and Michael of Mexica. Palma and Tenerifen, by Alphonso Lugo, at the kinges charges. Gemera and Ferrea were easily subdued: But the matter went harde with Alphonso Lugo. For that naked and wilde nation, fighting onely with stones and clabbes, drowe his armie to flight at the first assault, and slue about foure hundred of his men: But at the length hee ouercame them. And thus all the Ilandes of Canarie were added to the dominion of Spaine. From these Ilandes Colonus directing his voyage toward the West, following the falling of the sunne, but declining somewhat toward the left hand, sayled on forward xxxiii. dayes continually, hauing onely the fruition of the heauen and the water. Then the Spanyardes which were accompanied with him, beganne first to murmure secretly among themselves, and shortly after with woordes of reproch spake cuill of Colonus their gouernour, and consulted with themselves, cyther to rydde him out of the way, or els to cast him into the sea: raging that they were deceiued of a stranger, an outlandish man, a Ligurian, a Genues, and brought into such dangerous places, that they might neuer returne againe.

And after xxxiii. dayes were past, they furiously cryed out against him, and threatened him that he should passe no farther. But hee euer with gentle wordes and large promises, appeased their fury; and prolonged day after day, sometime desiring them to beare with him yet a while, and sometime putting them in remembrance that if they shoulde attempt any thing against him, or otherwise disobey him, it would be reputed for treason. Thus after a few dayes, with cheerefull hearts they espied the lande long looked for. In this first nauigation, hee discovered vi. Ilandes, whereof two were exceeding great: Of which, the one he called Hispaniola, and the other Iohanna. But at that time hee knewe not perfectly that Iohanna (otherwise called Cuba) was an Ilande. As they coasted along by the shore of certaine of these Ilandes, they hearde Nightingales sing in the thicke woodes in the month of Nouember. They found also great riuers of freshe water, and naturall hauens, of capacitie to harbour great nauies of shippes. Saying by the coastes of Iohanna, from the North poynt to the West, hee rode little lesse then eight hundred miles (for they cal it a hundred & fourescore leagues) supposing that it had been the continent or firme land, because hee coulde neither find the landes end, nor any token of the end, as farre as he could iudge with his eye: therefore hee determined to turne backe againe, being partly thereto enforced by the roundnesse of the sea, for the sea Bankes of the Ilande of Iohanna, by sundry wyndibges and turnings, benche them selues so much toward the North, that the North North-east wind roughly tossed the shypa by reason of the winter. Turning therefore the stemmes of his shippes toward the East, hee affirmed that he had found the Iland of Ophir, whither Solomons shipp sayled for gold.

But the description of the Cosmographers well considered, it seemeth that both these, and the other Ilands adioyning, are the Ilands of Antilla. This

Iland

Iland he called Hispaniola, on whose North side as hee approached neere to the Iland, the keele or bottome of the biggest vessell ranne vpon a blind rocke couered with water, and cloue in sunder: but the plainnesse of the rocke was a helpe to them that they were not drowned. Making hast therefore with the other two ships, to helpe them, they brought away all the men without hurt. Heere comming first a land, they sawe certaine men of the Ilande, who perceiuing an vnknown nation comming toward them, flocked together, and ranne all into the thicke woodes, as it had bin hares coursed with greyhounds. Our men pursuing them, tooke onely one woman, whom they brought to the ships: where filling her with meate and wine, and apparelling her, they let her depart to her companie. Shortly after a great multitude of them came running to the shore to behold this new nation, whom they thought to haue descended from heauen. They cast themselves by heaps into the sea, & came swimming to the shippes, bringing gold with them, which they chaunged with our men for earthen pottes, drinking glasses, poyntes, pinnes, hawkes bells, looking glasses, & such other trifles. Thus growing to further familiaritie, our men were honorably entertained of the king of that part of the Iland, whose name was Guaccanarillus: for it hath many kings, as when Aeneas arriued in Italie, he found Latium diuided into many kingdōs and prouinces, as Latium, Mezantium, Turanum, and Tarchontem, which were separated with narrow bounds, as shall more largely appeare hereafter. At the euen tide about the falling of the Sun, when our men went to prayer, and kneeled on their knees after the maner of the Christians, they did the like also. And after what manner soeuer they sawe them pray to the crosse, they followed them in all poyntes as well as they coulde. They shewed much humanitie towards our men, and helpe them with their lighters or smal boats (which they call Canoas to vnlade their broken shippes, and that with such celeritie and cheerefulnessse, that no friende for friend, or kinsman for kinsman, in such case moued with pitie, coulde doe more. Their boates are made of one tree, made holow with a certaine sharpe stone (for they haue no yron) and are very long and narrow. Many affirme that they haue seene some of them with fortie ores. The wilde & mischieuous people called Canibales, or Caribes, which were accustomed to eate mans flesh (& called of the olde writers, Anthropophagi) molest them exceedingly, inuading their countrey, taking them captiue, killing & eating them. As our men sayed to the Handes of these meeke and humane people, they left the Ilands of the Canibales, in manner in the midst of their voyage towards the South. They complained that their Ilands were nolesse vexed with the incursons of these manhunting Canibales when they go forth a rousing to seeke their pray, then are other tame beasts, of Lyons and Tigers. Such children as they take, they geld to make them fat as we doe cocke chickings and young hogges, and eate them when they are wel fedde: of such as they eate, they first eate the intralles and extreme partes, as hands, feet, armes, necke, and head. The other most fleshy partes, they powder for store, as we do pestels of porke, and gammondes of bakon: yet doe they absteyne from eating of women, and count it vile. Therefore such young women as they take, they keepe for increase, as we do hens to leye egges: the olde womanne, they make their drudges. They of the Ilandes (which we may nowe call ours) both the men and the women, when they perceiue the Canibales cōming, haue none other shift but onely to flee: for although they vse very sharpe arrowes made of reedes, yet are they of small force to repress the fury of the Canibales: for euen they themselves confesse, that ten of the Canibales are able to overcome a hundred of them if they encounter with them. Their meate is a certaine roote, which they call Ages, much like a nauewe roote in forme and greatnesse, but of sweete tast, much like a greene chestnute. They haue also another kinde of rootes, which they call Iucea, whereof they make breade in like manner. They vse Ages more often roasted or sodden, then to make breade thereof. But they neuer eate Iucea, except it be first sliced and pressed (for it is full of lioure) and then baked or sodden. But this is to bee marueiled at, that the Iuyce of this roote is a poyson as strong as Aconitum, so that if it be drunke, it causeth present death, and yet the bread made of the masse thereof, is of good tast and wholesome, as they all haue prooued. They make also another kind of bread of a certaine pulse, called Panicum, much like vnto wheate, whereof is great plentie in the Dukedome of Milan.

A shipwrecke.

The people of the Iland.

Naked people.

Expere ornaments. Gold for cash and glasse.

Many kings.

Religious and humble people.

Canoas.

Monnyth. They haue no yron. Crabbles, or Caribes. Anthropophagi.

The cruelty of the Canibales.

Ages: Rootes in the head of meat. Iucea. Bread of Iucea.

An kinde of strange matter.

Mazion.

lane, Spaine, and Cinnamon. But that of this Country is longer by a spanne, somewhat sharpe towarde the ende, and as bigge as a mans arme in the brawne: the graines whereof are set in a marueylous order, and are in forme somewhat like a Pease. (While they be soure and vnripe, they are white, but when they are ripe they be very blacke, when they are broken they are whiter then snowe: this kinde of graine they call Maizum. Golde is of some estimation among them: for some of them haue certaine small peeces thereof at their cares and notherlyes. A little beyonde this place our men writ a lande for fresh water, where they chanced vpon a riuer, whose sande was myred with much golde. They found there no kinde of foure footed beastes, except three kinde of little comies. These Ilandes also nourish serpents, but such as are without hurt. Likewise wilde geese, turtle doues, and ducks, much greater then ours, and as white as swannes, with heads of purple colour. Also Popiniayes, of the which some are Greene, some yelow, & some like them of India, with yelow rings about their neckes, as Plinie describeth them. Of these they brought founte with them, of most liuely and delectable colours, hauing their feathers entermingled with Greene, yelow, and purple, which varietie delighteth the sense not a little. Thus much thought I good to speake of Popiniayes (right noble prince) specially to this intent, that albeit the opinion of Christopherus Colonus (who affirmeth these Ilandes to be part of India) doth not in all poyntes agree with the iudgement of auncient writers as touching the biggnesse of the Sphere and compass of the Globe, as concerning the nauigable portion of the same being vnder vs, yet the Popiniayes and many other things brought from thence, doe declare that these Ilandes containe somewhat of India, eather being neare vnto it, or else of the same nature: for asmuch as Aristotle also, about the ende of his booke de Cælo & Mundo, and likewise Seneca, with diuers other auncient writers in Cosmographie, do affirme that India is no long tracte by sea, distant from Spaine by the West Ocean, for the soyle of these Ilandes bringeth forth Maix, Aloes, and sundry other sweete gummes and spices, as doth India, Cotton also of the Gossampine tree, as in India in the country of the people called Seres.

The languages of all the nations of these Ilandes, may well be written with our Latine letters. For they call heauen Turei, A house, Boa: Golde, Cauni: A good man, Taino: Nothing, Maiani. All other words of their languages, they pronounce as plainly as we doe the Latine tongue. In these Ilandes they found no trees knowne vnto them, but Ping apple trees, and Date trees, and those of maruillous height, and exceeding harde, by reason of the great moystnesse and fatnesse of the ground, with continuall and temperate heate of the Sunne, which endureth so all the whole yeere. They plainly affirme the land of Hispaniola to be the most fruitefull lande that the heauen compasseth about, as shall most plainly appere hereafter in the particular description of the same, which wee intend to set forth when wee shall bee better instructed. Thus making a league of friendship with the King, and leaving with him xxxviii. men to search the Ilande, he departed to Spaine, taking with him tenne of the inhabitants to learne the Spanish tongue; to the intent to use them afterward for interpreters. Colonus therefore at his returne was honourably received of the King and Queene, who caused him to sit in their presence, which is a token of great loue and honour among the Spanyards. Hee was also made Admiral of the Ocean, and his brother gouernour of the Iland.

Toward the second voyage he was furnished with xvii. ships whereof three were great caracters of a thousand tunne, xii. were of that sort which the Spanyards call Carauels, without decks, and two other of the same sort somewhat bigger, and more apt to beare decks, by reason of the greatnesse of their masts. Hee had also a thousand and two hundred armed footemen well appointed; among which were many artificers, as smythes, Carpenters, myners, and such other, certaine horsemen also, well armed: Lykewyse mares, sheepe, heighfers, and such other of both kindes for increase: Likewise all kinde of pulse, or grayne and corne, as wheate, barley, rye, beanes, and pease, and such other, aswell for foode as to sowe: beside vines, plantes, and seedes, of such trees, frutes, and herbes, as those countreyes lacke, and (not to be forgotten), sundry kinde of artylerie and iron tooles, as bowes, arrowes,

Gold is called  
Gins.

Gold is the  
treasure of riuers.

Serpents without  
harm.  
Turtle doues,  
Ducks,  
Popiniayes,  
Maizi.

These Ilandes  
are part of India.  
The Indians are  
descended to  
the Spanyards.

Aristotle  
Seneca.

India not farre  
from Spaine.  
Maix.

Aloes,  
Gossampine  
tree, as in  
India.

Latine  
letters.  
The language of  
these Indians.

Three or foure  
kinde of trees  
knowne to vs.

Pin and maple  
trees,  
apple trees,  
and date trees.

The fruitefull  
nesse of Hispaniola.

The second voyage  
of Colonus.

Corn is made  
to sowe.

Artylerie and  
iron tooles.

arrowes,

arrows, crosbowes, billes, hargabusses, broad swordes, lbrgo targettes, pykes, mattookes, shouettes, hammers, nayles, sawes, axes, and such other. Thus being furnished accordingly, they set forward from the Ilandes of Gades (now called Cales) the seventh day before the Calendes of October, in the yeere of Christ. 1493. & arrived at the Ilandes of Canaria at the Calendes of October: Of These Ilandes, the last is called Ferrea, in which there is no other water that may be drunke, but onely that is gathered of the dewe, which continually distilleth from one onely tree, growing on the highest banke of the land, and falleth into a rounde trench made with mans hande; wee were enformed of these thinges within fewe dayes after his departure: What shall succede, we will certifie you hereafter. Thus fare ye well, from the coarte, at the Ides of November, 1493.

The seconde booke of the first Decade, to Ascanius Sphorcia, Vicount Cardinal, &c.

YOU repeate (right honourable prince) that you are desirous to knowe what newes wee have in Spaine from the newe worlde, and that those things have greatly delighted you which I wrote unto your highnesse of the first Navigation: You shall nowe therefore receive what hath succeeded. Methymna Campi, is a famous towne in high Spayne, in respect from you, and is in that parte of Spayne which is called Castella Vetus, being distant from Gades about xl. myles. Heere the court remained, when about the ix. of the Calendes of April; in this yeere of ninetie and foure, there were postes sent to the king and queene, certifying them that there were tweloe shippes come from the newe Ilands, and arrived at Gades: but the gouernour of the shippes sent word to the king and queene, that hee hadde none other matter to certifie them of by the postes, but onely, that the Admirall, with fiew shippes, and fourescore and ten. men remained still in Hispaniola to search the secretes of the Iland, and that as touching other matters, hee himselfe would shortly make relation in their presence by worde of mouth: therefore the day before the Nones of April, hee came to the court himselfe. What I learned of him, and other faithfull and credible men, which came with him from the Admirall, I will rehearse unto you, in such order as they declared the same to mee, when I demanded them: take it therefore as foloweth.

The third day of the Ides of October, departing from Ferrea, the last of the Ilandes of Canaria, and from the coastes of Spaine, with a Naue of seuentene shippes, they sayled xxi. daies before they came to any Ilande, inclining of purpose more towards the left hande then at the first voyage, following the North Northeast winde, & arrived first at the Ilandes of the Canibales or Caribes, of which onely the same was knowne to our men. Among these, they chaunced first vpon one, so beset with trees, that they could not see so much as an ebbe space of bare earth or stonie ground, this they called Dominica, because they found it on the Sunday. They taried here no time, because they saw it to be desert. In the space of these xxi. daies, they thinke that they sayled eight hundred, & xx. leagues, the North Northeast winde was so full with them, and so freshly followed the sterne of their ships. After they had sayled a litle further, they espied diuers Ilandes replenished with sundry kindes of trees, from the which came fragrant sauours of spices and sweete gummies: here they sawe neither manne nor beast, except certaine Lysartes of huge bignes, as they reported which went a land to view the country. This Iland they called Galana or Galanta: from the cape or poyns of this Iland, espying a mountaine farr off, they sayled thither. About. xxx. myles from this mountaine, they sawe a riuer descending, which seemed to be a token of some great and large flood. This is the first Ilande which they found inhabited from the Ilands of Canaria, and is an Ilande of the Canibales, as they learned by the interpretours which they tooke with them from Hispaniola into Spaine at their first voyage. Searching the Ilande, they found innumerable villages of xx. houses, or 30. at the most set round about in order, making the streete in compasse like a market place. And forasmuch as I haue made mention of their houses, it shal not be greatly from my purpose to describe in what manner they are builded: They are made round like bellies or round pavilions. Their frame is raysed of exceeding high trees, set close together, and fast rampained in the ground, so standing aslope, and bending inward, that the toppes of the trees ioyne together, and beare one against another,

As the dropping  
from a tree con-  
tinually.

Methymna  
Campi  
Castella Vetus  
Gades.

The Iland of  
Ferrea.

Ilands of the  
Canibales.

The Iland of  
Dominica.

Lysartes.  
The Iland of  
Galana.

The Iland of  
Canibales.

Villages of xx. or  
xxx. houses.

The building of  
their houses.

having also within the house certain strong and short proppes or posts which susteyne the trees from falling. They couer them with the leaues of date trees, and other trees strongly compact and hardened, wherwith they make them close from winde and weather. At the shorte posts or proppes within the house, they tie ropes of the cotton of gossampine trees or other ropes made of certaine long & rough roots, much like vnto the shrubbe called Shartum, wherof in old time they used to make bands for vines, and gables and ropes for shippes. These they tye ouerthwart the house from post to post, on these they lay, as it were certaine mattresses made of the cotton of gossampine trees, which growe plentifully in these llandes. This cotton the Spanyards call Algodon, and the Italians Bombasino: and thus they sleepe in hanging beddes. At the entrance of one of their houses, they sawe two Images of woode like vnto serpentes, which they thought had bene such idoles as they honour: but they learned afterwarde that they were set there onely for comelinesse, for they know none other God then the sunne & moone, although they make certaine images of gossampine cotton to the similitude of such phantasies as they say appeare to them in the night. Our men found in their houses, all kinds of earthen vessels, not much vnlke vnto ours. They found also in their kythens, mans flesh, duckes flesh, & goose flesh, all in one pot, and other on the spits ready to be layd to the fire. Entering into their inner lodgings, they founde faggottes of the bones of mens armes and legges, which they reserue to make beddes for their Arrowes, because they lacke iron, the other bones they cast away when they haue eaten the flesh. They found likewise the head of a young man fastened to a post, and yet bleeding. They haue in some villages, one great hall or pallas, about the which their common houses are placed. To this they resort, as often as they come together to play. When they perceiued the coming of our men, they fledde. In their houses they founde also about thirtie children captiues, which were reserued to bee eaten, but our men took them away to vse them for interpreters. Searching more diligently the inner parts of the llande, they found seuen other riuers, bigger then this which wee spake of before, running through the llande, with fruitfull and pleasant banks, delectable to behold. This llande they called Guadalupe, for the similitude that it hath to the mount Guadalupe in Spayne, where the image of the virgine Marie is religiously honoured, but the inhabitants call it Carcuera, or Queraquiara: It is the chiefe habitatio of the Canibales. They brought from this lland vii. Popiniayes, bigger then Phacates, much differing from other in colour, hauing their backs, breasts, and bellies of purple colour, and their winges of other variable colours: in all these llands is no lesse plentie of Popiniayes, then with vs of sparrows or starlings. As wee bring vp capons and hennes to fraike and make them fat, so do they these bigger kindes of Popiniayes for the same purpose. After that they had thus searched the lland, and driuen these Canibales to flight (which ran away at their first approche, as soon as they had espied them) they called their companie together, and as soon as they hadde broken the Canibales boates or lighters (which they call Canoas) they loosed their ankers the day before the Ides of Nouember, and departed from Guadalupe. Colonus the Admiral, for the desire he had to see his companions, which at his first voyage he left the yeere before in Hispaniola to search the countrie, let passe many llands both on his right hand, & left hande, and sayled directly thither. By the way there appeared from the North a great lland, which the captiues that were taken in Hispaniola, called Madamino, or Matinino, affirming it to be inhabited only with women, to whom the Canibales haue access at certaine times of the yeere, as in old time the Thracians hadde to the Amazonas in the llande of Lesbos: the men children they sende to their fathers, but the women they keep with themselves. They haue great and strong canes or downes in the grounde, to the which they flee for safeguard if any men resorte vnto them at any other time then is appointed, and there defende themselves with bowes and arrowes, against the violence of such as attempt to intude them. They coude not at this time approche to this llande by reason of the North Northeast winde, which blew so vehemently from the same, whereas they now followed the East Southeast. After they departed from Madamino, and sayled by the space of xl. myles, they passed not farre from an other llande which the captiues sayde to bee very populous,

Gossampine cotton.

Bombasino hanging beds.

Images.

Fine earthen.

Arrowes of bones.

The mount Guadalupe.

Carcuera.

Popiniayes.

The Canibales boates.

Madamino or Matinino.

and replenished with all things necessarie for the life of man. This they called Mons Serratus, because it was full of mountaines. The captives further declared, that the Canibales are wont at sometime to goe from their owne coastes about a thousand myles to hunt for men. The day following they sawe another llande, the which because it was rounde; they called Sancta Maria Rotunda. The next day, they found another, which they called S. Martini, which they let passe also, because they had no leasure to tarry. Likewise the third day they espied another, whose Diametral side, extending from the East to the West, they judged to be a hundred & fiftie myle. They affirme all these llandes to be marvellous faire and fruitfull: This last, they called Sancta Maria Antiqua. Saying forwarde, and leaving many other llandes. after they had sayled about fortie myles, they chanced vpon another, much bigger then any of the rest, which the inhabitants call Ay Ay, but they named it Insula crucis: Here they cast anchor to fetch fresh water. The Admirall also commanded xxx. men to goe a land out of his owne ship, and to search the llande: Here they found foure dogges on the shore. The inhabitants are Canibales, and marvellous expert in shooting; as well women as men, and use to infect their arrowes with poison. When they had taried there two dayes, they sawe a farr of a Canoa, in the which were eight men, and as many women, having with them bowes and arrowes. They fiercely assailed our menne without all feare, and hurt some of them with their venomous arrowes. Among these there was a certaine woman, to whom the other gave reverence, and obeyed as though she were their queene. Her soune wayted vpon her, beeing a young man, strongly made, of terrible and frowning countenance, and a Lions face. Our menne, least they should take the more hurt by beeing wounded a farr off, thought it best to ioyne with them. Therefore with all speed, setting forward with their ores the brigadino in which they were set a land; they overturned their Canoa; with a great violence, which being overwhelmed, they not withstanding, as well the women as the men, swimming, cast their darts at our men thicke and threefolde. At the length, gathering themselves vpon a rocke covered with the water, they fought manfully 'till they were overcome and taken, one beeing slayne, and the queenee some sore wounded. When they were brought into the Admirals shippes, they did no more put of their fiercenes and cruel countenances, then do the Lions of Lybia when they perceiue themselves to bee bound in chaynes. There is no man able to behold them, but he shall feele his bowels grate with a certayne horrour, nature hath endued them with so terrible menacing and cruel aspect. This coniecture I make of my selfe; & others which oftentimes went with me to see them at Methymna Campi: but nowe to returne to the voyage. Proceeding thus further and further, more then five hundred myles, first towards the West Southwest, then towards the Southwest, and at the length towards the West North west, they entred into a maine large sea, hauing in it innumerable llandes, marvellously differing one from another for some of them were very fruitfull, and full of herbes and trees, other some, very drie; barren and rough, with hie rocky mountaines of stone, whereof some were of bright blew, or asurine colour, and other glistering white: wherefore they supposed them, by good reason, to be the mynes of metallas & precious stone: but the roughnesse of the sea, and multitude of llandes standing so thicke together, hindered them so, that they could cast no anker, least the bigger vesselles should runne vpon the rockes; therefore they deferred the searching of these llandes vntill another time: they were so many, and stooode so thicke, that they coulde not number them, yet the smaller vesselles which drewe no great depth, entred among them, and numbered fourtie and sixe llandes, but the bigger vesselles kept aloofe in the maine sea, for feare of the rockes. They call the sea where this multitude of llandes are situate, Archipelagus. From this tract proceeding forward, in the middle way there lyeth an land which the inhabitants call Baruchina, or Rochena: but they named it Insula S. Iohannis. Divers of them whome we hadde deliuered from the Canibales, sayde that they were borne in this land, affirming it to be very populous and fruitfull, hauing also many faire woodes and hauens. There is deadly hatred and continuall bataille betwene them and the Canibales: They haue no boates to passe from their owne coasts to the Canibales: but if it bee their chance to overcome them when

The Trenches of Mons Serratus

Hunting for men.

Espies Maria Rotunda. Sancta Maria Antiqua.

Espies Maria Antiqua.

Insula crucis, as kind of the Canibales.

The Canibales are expert Archers.

Arrowes infect- ed with venime.

A Cattel with the Canibales.

The ferocious and terrible countenance of the Canibales.

Methymna Campi.

Innumerable llandes.

The Mines of metallas &amp; precious stones.

The sea called Archipelagus Insula S. Iohannis or Rochena.

they make incursion into their cuntry to seeke their pray (as it sometime happeneth, the fortune of warre being vncertaine) they serue them like sause, requiring death for death For one of them manglenth another in pieces, and rost them, and cate them euen before their eyes. They taryed not in this lande: Yet in the West angle thereof, a few of them went a lande for fresh water, and found a great and high house after the manner of their building, hauing .xii. other of their vulgare cotages placed about the same, but were all left desolate, whether it were that they resorted to the mountains by reason of the heate which was that time of the yeere, and to returne to the plaine when the ayre waxeth colder, or else for feare of the Canibales which make incursion into the lande at certaine seasons. In all this land is onely one king. The South side hereof extendeth about two hundred myles. Shortly after, they came to the lande of Hispaniola, beinge distant from the first lande of the Canibales, siue hundred leagues. Here they found all things out of order, and their fellowes slaine which they left here at their first voyage. In the beginning of Hispaniola, (hauing in it many regions and kingdomes as wee haue sayde) is the region of Xamana, whose king is named Guaccanarillus. This Guaccanarillus ioyned friendship with our men at the first voyage, and made a league with them: but in the absence of the Admirall, he rebelled, and was the cause of our mens destructiō, although he dissimuled the same, and pretended friendship at the Admiralls returne. As our men sayed on yet a little further they espied a long Canoa with many ores, in which was the brother of Guaccanarillus, with onely one man waiting on him. He brought with him two images of golde, which hee gaue the Admirall in the name of his brother, and tolde a tale in his language as concerning the death of our men, as they proued afterwarde, but at this time hadde no regard to his communication for lacke of interpretours, which were eyther all dead, or escaped and stolne away when they drew neare to the landes. But of the ten, seuen dyed by change of ayre and dyet. The inhabitantes of these landes haue beene euer so viced to liue at libertie, in play and pastime, that they canne hardly away with the yoke of sermitude, which they attempted to shake off by all meanes they may. And surely if they had receiued our religion I woulde thinke their life most happie of all menne, if they might therewith enioy their auncient libertie. A fewe things content them, hauing no delight in such superfluites, for the which in other places menne take infinite paynes, and commit manie vnlawfull actes, and yet are neuer satisfied, whereas manie haue too much, and none enough. But among these simple soules, a fewe clothes serue the naked: weightes and measures are not needfull to such as cannot skill of craft and deceite, and haue not the vse of pestiferous money, the seed of innumerable mischeiues: so that if we shall not bee ashamed to confesse the truth, they seeme to liue in that golden worlde of the which olde writers speake so much, wherein menne liued simply and innocently without enforcement of lawes, without quarrelling, iudges, and libelles, content onely to satisfie nature, without further vexation for knowledge of things to come. Yet these naked people also are tormētēd with ambition, for the desire they haue to enlarge their dominions: by reasō wherof, they keep war and destroy one another, from the which plague I suppose the golden world was not free. For euen then also, Cede non cedam, that is, giue place, and I will not giue place, had entred among men. But nowe to returne to the matter from which wee haue digressed. The Admirall desirous to know further of the death of his men, sent for Guaccanarillus to come to him to his ship, dissimuling that he knew any thing of the matter, after that he came aboard ship, saluting the Admirall and his company, giuing also certaine golde to the captaines and officers, turned him to the women captiues, which not long before our men had deliuered from the Canibales, and earnestly beholding one of them whom our men called Katherine, he spake gently vnto her. And thus when hee had scene and marueyled at the horses, and such other things as were in the shippe, vnknewne to them, and had with a good grace and merly asked leaue of the Admirall, he departed. Yet some there were which counselled the Admirall to keepe him still, that if they might by any meanes prouee that he was consenting to the death of our men, he might be punysshed accordingly. But the Admirall considering that it was yet no time to incense the inhabitantes mindes to wrath, dismissed him.

Death for death

The mountains are called thus by the playnes

From Dominica to Hispaniola are called leagues

The Spaniards left in the land are slaine

King Guaccanarillus rebelleth. Two Images of golde.

Libertie and idleness.

A happy kind of life. Superfluitie.

Many haue too much, &amp; none enough.

The golden worlde.

Naked men trouble not such as haue

Gorgeous.

The Admirall seeketh for the King.

No horses in the landes.

him. The next day following, the kinges brother resorting to the shippes, cyther in his owne name or in his brothers, seduced the women. For on the next night about midnight, this Katherine, aswell to recover her owne libertie, as also her fellows, being suborned thereto either by the king or his brothers promises, attempted a much more difficult and dangerous adventure then did Cloelia of Rome, which being in hostage with other maydes to the king Porcena, deceived her keepers, and rode ouer the riuier Tiber, with the other virgins which were pledges with her. For whereas they swamme ouer the riuier on horsebacke, this Katherine with seuen other women, trusting onely to the strength of their owne armes, swam about three long myles, and that also at such time as the sea was somewhat rough: for euen so farre from the shore lay the shippes at rode, as night as they coulde coniecture. But our men following them with the shipboates, by the same light scene on the shore, wherby the women were ledde, tooke three of them, supposing that Katherine with the other foure, went to Guaccanarillus: for in the spring of the morning, certaine messengers being sent vnto him by the Admirall, had intelligence that hee was fled with all his familie and snuffe, and the women also, which thing ministred further suspicion that hee was consenting to the death of our men. Wherefore the Admirall sent forth an armie of three hundred men, ouer the which he appointed one Melchior to be capitaine, willing him to make diligent search to finde out Guaccanarillus: Melchior therefore with the smallest vessels: entring into the countrey by the riuers, and scouring the shores, chanced into certaine crooked goulfes, defended with fine hils, & steepe hills, supposing that it hadde beene the mouth of some great riuier. He founde here also a very commodious and safe haven, & therefore named it *Portus Regalis*. They say that the entrance of this is so crooked and bending, that after the ships are once within the same, whether they turne them to the left hnd, or to the right they can not perceiue where they came in, vntill they returne to the mouth of the riuier, although it be there so broad that three of the biggest vessels may sayle together on a front. The sharpe and high hilles on the one side and on the other, so brake the winde, that they were vncertaine how to rule their sayles. In the middle gulfes of the riuier, there is a promontorie or point of the land with a pleasant groue, full of Popinaiyes and other hirdes, which breede therein & sing very sweetly: They perceiued also that two riuers of no small largenesse fell into the haven. While they thus searched the lande betwene both, Melchior espied a high house a farr off, where supposing that Guaccanarillus had liuen hid, hee made towarde it: and as he was going, there met him a man with a frowning countenance, and a grimme looke with a hundred men following him, armed with bowes and arrowes, and long and sharpe staues like iaculynnes, made harde at the endes with fire, who appoaching towards our men, spake out aloud with a terrible voyce, saying that they were *Taini* (that is) noble men, and not *Canibales*: but when our men had giuen them signes of peace, they left both their weapons and fiercenesse. Thus giuing each of them certaine hawkes beles, they tooke it for so great a reward, that they desired to enter bonds of neare friendship with vs, and feared not immediately to submit themselves vnder our power, and resorted to our shippes with their presents. They that measured the house (being made in round forme) found it to be from side to side xxxii. great paces, compassed about with xxx. other vnlugare houses, hauing in them many beames crosse ouer, & covered with reedes of sundry colour, wretched & as it were weaued with marcuritious art. When our men asked some of them where they might find Guaccanarillus? They answered, that that region, was none of his, but their kinges, being there present: Yet they sayde they supposed that Guaccanarillus was gone from the playne to the mountaynes. Making therefore a brotherly league with this *Cacicus* (that is to say a king) they returned to the Admirall, to make relation, what they hadde seene and heard: wherupon he sent forth diuers other Centurians with their hundreds, to search the countrey yet further: among which were *Hoideds* and *Garulamus*, noble young gentlemen, and of great courage. And as they went towards the mountaynes to seeke Guaccanarillus, diuiding the mountaynes betwene them, one of them found on the one side thereof, foure riuers falling from the same mountaynes, and the other founde three on the other side. In the sands of all these riuers is founde great

A viceroy of Alger.

A desperate &amp; gallant of a former. Cioelia of Rome.

Guaccanarillus sought. Melchior.

Popinaiyes and hirdes.

Taini.

Hawkes beles.

A large house.

Rough of sundry colours.

Cacicus.

Hoideds and Garulamus.

Gold is founde in these riuers.

The manner of gathering golde.  
Graines of golde.

plentie of golde, which the inhabitantes of the same Ilande which were with vs, gathered in this manner: making holes in the sande with their handes a Cubite deepe, and taking vp sande with their left handes from the bottome of the same, they picked out graines of golde with their right handes without any more art or cunning, and so deliuered it to our men, who affirme that many of them thus gathered, were as bigge as tares or fitches. And I my selfe sawe a

A masse of rude golde made weighing nine ounces.

masse of rude golde (that is to say, such as was neuer moulted) like vnto such stonpes as are founde in the bottomes of riuers, weighing nine ounces, which Hbieda himselfe founde. Being contented with these signes, they returned to the Admirall to certifie him hereof. For the Admirall had commaunded vnder payne of punishment, that they should meddle no further then their commission: which was onely, to search the places with their signes. For the same went that there was a certaine king of the mountaines from whence those riuers

Caunabo, king of the house of golde.  
Whosome water, and plenty of fish.

had their fall, whom they cal Caiciens.Caunaboa, that is, the Lord of the house of gold, for they call a house Buo, golde, Cauni, and a king or Lorde Caiciens, as we haue sayde before. They affirme that there can no where bee found better fish, nor of more pleasant tast, or more holosome then in these riuers: also the waters of the same to bee most holosome to drinke.

The day and night of equal length in December.  
Rises here in December.

Melchior himselfe tolde me, that in the month of December, the daies and nights be of equall length among the Canibales: But the sphere or circles of the heauen agreeth not thereunto, albeit that in the same moneth, some birdes make their nestes, and some haue already hatched their egges by reason of the heate, being rather continuall then extreame. He tolde me also when I questioned with him as concerning the eleuation of the pole from the horizontal line, that all the starres called Plaustrum or Charles wayne, are hid vnder the North pole to the Canibales. And surely there returned none from thence at this voyage, to whom there is more credit to be giuen, than to this man. But if he had bin skillfull in Astronomie, he shoulde haue sayde that the day was almost equal with the night: For in no place towards the stay of the sun (called Solsticium) can the night be equal with the day.

The Equinoctial line.

And as for them, they neuer came vnder the Equinoctial, forasmuch as they hadde euer the North pole their guide, and euer eleuate in sight aboute the Horizontal. Thus haue I briefly written vnto your honour, as much as I thought sufficient at this time, and shall shortly hereafter (by Gods fauour) write vnto you more largely of such matters as shall bee daily better knowne. For the Admirall himselfe (whom I vse familiarly as my verie friende) hath promised me by his letters, that he will giue me knowledge of all such thinges as shall chance.

A chappell and priouers.

He hath now chosen a strong place where he may build a city, neare vnto a comodious bauen, and hath already builded many houses, & a chapel, in the which (as in a newe worlde heretofore voyde of all religion) God is dayly serued with xiii. priestes, according to the maner of our churches. When the time nowe approached that hee promised to sende to the King and Queene, and hauing prosperous winde for that purpose, sent backe the xii. Carauelles, wherof we made mention before: which was no small hinderance and griefe vnto him, especially considering the death of his men whom hee left in the Ilande at the first voyage, whereby we are yet ignorant of many places and other secretes, whereof wee might otherwise haue had further knowledge: but as time shall reueale them againe, so will I aduertise you of the same. And that you may the better knowe by conference hadde with the Apothecaries and marchant strangers Siropheicians, what this Regions beare, & how hot their ground is, I haue sent you all kindes of graynes, with the barke and inner partes of that tree which they suppose to be the Cinamome tree. And if it bee your pleasure to tast either of the graines, or of the small seedes, the which you should perceiue to haue fallen from these graynes, or of the wood it selfe, touch them first softly, mouing them to your lippes, for although they be not hurtfull, yet for their excesse of heate, they are sharpe, and bite the tongue if they remaine any while thereon: but if the tongue be blistered by tasting of them, the same is taken away by drinking of water. Of the corne also wherof they make their bread, this bringer shall deliuer some graines to your Lordship, both white and blacke, and therewith also a sturke of the tree of Aloes, the which if you cut in peeces, you shall feele a sweete sauour to proceede from the same. Thus fare you hartily well, from the Court of Meihymna Campi, the third day before the Calendes of May. Anno Dom. 1494.

Marchants Siropheicians.

The Cinamome tree.

Xhurtes, or Lepros aloes.

The third booke of the first Decade, to Lodouike Cardinall of Aragonie, and Ne-  
uicwe to the King.

You desire that foolish Phaeton should againe rule the chariots of the Sunne, and con-  
tende to drawe sweete licours out of the harde-flint, whereas you require mee to describe  
vnto you the newe world, found in the West by the good fortune and gouernance of the  
Catholique Princes Ferdinandus and Elizabeth, your Vncle and Annte, shewing mee also the  
letters of King Frederike your Vncle, written to me in that behalfe: But sith you haue layde  
this burden on my backe, in whose power it is to commaunde mee to take vpon mee more  
then I am well able, yee both shall receiue this precious stone rudely closed in lead after my  
manner of workmanship. Wherefore, when you shall perceiue the learned sort friendly,  
the malicious enuiously, and the backbiters furiously, to bend their slanderous darts against  
our faire Nymphes of the Ocean, you shall freely protest in howe short time, and in the mid-  
dest of what troubles and calamities you haue enforced me to write of the same. Thus fare  
you well, from Granata the ninth day before the Calendes of May.

We haue declared in the booke here before, how the Admirall passed by the coasts of the  
Cannibals, to the Iland of Hispaniola with his whole nauie: But nowe wee entende further to  
shewe what hee found as concerning the nature of this Iland, after that he had better  
searched the secretes of the same: Likewise of the Iland of Cuba neare vnto it, which hee  
supposed to be the firme Ilande. Hispaniola therefore (which hee affirmeth to bee Ophir,  
whereof wee reade in the third booke of the kinges) is of latitude siue South degrees,  
hauing the North pole eleuate on the North side xxvii. degrees, and on the South side, (as  
they say) xxii. degrees, it reacheth in length from East to West, seuen hundred and foure-  
score myles, it is distant from the Ilands of Gades (called Calis) .xlix. degrees, and more,  
as some say: the forme of the Ilande resembleth the leafe of a Chesnutte tree. Vpon a  
high hill on the North side of the Ilande, hee builded a citie, because this place was most  
apt for that purpose, by reason of a myne of stones which was neare vnto the same, seruing  
well both to builde with, and also to make Lyme: at the botome of this hill, is there a great  
playne of threescore myles in length, and in breadth somewhere xiii. somewhere xx. myles  
where it is broadest, & sixe myles where it is narrowest: through this playne runne diuers  
fayre riuers of wholesome waters, but the greatest of them, which is nauigable, falleth into  
the haueu of the citie for the space of halfe a furlong: how fertile and fruitful this valley is,  
you shall vnderstande by these things which followe. On the shore of this riuier, they haue

Hispaniola.

Ophir, which  
Solomonus did  
sought for Gold.

Futuh.

limited and enclosed certaine ground, to make gardens and orchardes, in the which all  
kinde of bigger hearbes, as radishes, letuse, coleworts, borage, & such other, waxe ripe  
within xvi. daies after the seed is sowne, likewise Melones, Gourdes, Cucumers, and rupe  
other, within the space of xxxvi. dayes, these garden hearbes they haue fresh and Greene  
all the whole yeere. Also the roots of the canes or reedes of the licour whereof sugar is  
made, growe a cubite high within the space of xv. dayes, but the licour is not yet hardened.  
The like they affirme of plantes or shroudes of young vines, and that they haue the seconde  
yeere gathered ripe and sweete grapes of the same: but by reason of so much rankenesse  
they beare but fewe clusters. Furthermore, a man of the countrey sowed a little Wheate  
about the Calendes of Februarie, and brought with him to the citie an handfull of the ripe  
caries of the same the third day before the Calends of Aprill, which was that yeere the vigile  
of the Resurrection of our Lord: Also, all kindes of pulse, as beanes; peason, fitches, tares,  
& such other, are ripe twice in the yeere, as all they which come from thence affirme with  
one voyce, yet the ground is not vniuersally apt to beare wheate. In the meane time while  
these thinges were doing, the Admirall sent out a companie of xxx. men to search the Region  
of Cipanga, otherwise called Cibana. This Region is full of mountaynes and rockes, and in  
the middle backe of the whole Ilande is great plenty of Golde. When they that went to  
search the Region were returned, they reported maruelous things as touching the great riches  
of this Region. From these mountaynes, descend foure great riuers, which by the maruelous  
industry of nature, diuideth the whole Iland into foure partes, in maner equal, ouerspreading

A taken of ma-  
nyes threescor  
year.Heare growe  
all the whole  
yeere,  
Sugar reedes,  
Plantans and  
vines.Cane & graine  
ripe twice a  
yeere.The region of  
Cipanga, or Ci-  
bana,  
Golds.

& watering the whole land with their branches. Of these foure riuers, the one reacheth towards the East, this the inhabitants call Iaua: another towards the West, and is called Atibunicus: the thirde toward the North, named Iachen, the last reacheth into the South, and is called Naiba. The day before the Ides of March, the Admirall himselfe, with all his horsemen, and foure hundred. footemen, marched directly towards the Southside of the golden Region. Thus passing ouer the riuers, the playne, and the mountain which enuironed the other side of the playne, hee chaunced vpon another vale, with a riuier much bigger then the first, and many other meane riuers running through. When he had also conueighed his army ouer the riuers, and passed the seconde vale, which was in no part inferior to the first, he made away through the thirde mountain where was no passage before, and descended into another vale, which was nowe the beginning of Cibana. Through this also runne many foudes and riuers out of euery hill, and in the sides of them all is founde great plenty of golde. And when hee hadde nowe entred threescore and twelue myles into the golden Region from the cittie, he entended to builde a fortresse vpon the toppes of a hill, standing by the shore of a certaine great riuers, that hee might the better and more safely search the secretes of the inner partes of the Region: this hee called the fortresse of saint Thomas, the which in the meane time, while hee was building, the inhabitants being desirous of haukes belles, and other of our things, resorted daily thither, to whom the Admirall declared, that if they would bring golde, they should haue whatsoever they would take: Forthwith turning their backs, and turning to the shore of the next riuier, they returned in a shorte time, bringing with them their handes full of golde. Amongst all other, there came an old man, bringing with him two pybble stones of golde, weighing an ounce, desiring them to giue him a bell for the same: who when hee sawe our men moueyle at the bignesse thereof, he made signes that they were but small and of no value. In respect of some that he had seene, and taking in his hande foure stones, the least whereof was as bigge as a Walnut, and the biggest as bigge as an Orange, hee sayd that there was founde peeces of gold so bigge in his country, being but halfe a dayes journey from thence, and that they had no regard to the gathering thereof, whereby we perceived that they passe not much for golde, inasmuch as it is golde only, but so farre esteeme it, as the hande of the Artificer hath fashioned it in any comely forme. For, who doth greatly esteeme rough marble, or wrought Iuorie, but if they be wrought with the cunning hande of Phidias or Praxitelis, and shaped to the similitude of the faire Nymphes or Fairies, of the sea (called Nereides) or the Fayries of the woods (called Hamadriades) they shall neuer lacke buyers. Beside this old man, there came also diuers other, bringing with them pybble stones of golde, weighing x. or xii. drammes, & feared not to confesse, that in the place where they gathered that golde, there were found sometime stones of golde as bigge as the head of a child. When he had taried here a few. dayes, he sent one Luxanus, a noble yong gentleman, with a few armed men, to search all the partes of this region: who at his returne, reported that the inhabitants shewed him greater things then we haue spoken of heretofore, but he did openly declare nothing thereof, which they thought was done by the Admiralls commandement. They haue woods full of certaine spices, but not such as we commonly see: these they gather euery as they doe gold, that is, as much as will serue for their purpose: euery man for himselfe, to exchange the same with the inhabitants of other countreys adioyning to them, for such things as they lacke, as dyshes, pottes, shooles, and such other necessaries. As Luxanus returned to the Admirall (which was about the Ides of March) hee founde in the woods certaine wilde vines, ripe, and of pleasant tast, but the inhabitants passe not on them. This region, though it be full of stones & rockes (and is therefore called Cibana, which is as much to say as a stone) yet it is well replenished with trees and pastures, yea they constantly affirme, that if the grasse of these mountaines be cutte, it groweth againe within the space of foure daies higher then wheate. And forasmuch as many shoues of raine doe fall in this region, whereof the riuers and foudes haue their increase, in euery of the which golde is founde mixt with sande, in all places, they iudge that the golde is driuen from the mountaines, by the vehement course of the streames which fall from the same, and

The golden region of Cibana.

The vale of Cibana.

Golde for haukes belles.

Crypts and pybble stones of golde.

They passe not for golde, in that it is golde euery way, &c.

Stones of golde as big as the head of a child.

Spices.

Wilde vines of pleasant tast.

Wilde mountain pastures.

Golde is the sand of stones falling from the mountaines.

runne

runne into the rivers. The people of this region are given to idleness and play, for such as inhabit the mountains, sit quaking for colde in the Winter season, and had rather to wander up and downe idly, then take the paynes to make them apparell; whereas they have wooles full of Gossepine cotton: but such as dwell in the vallies or playnes feele no colde in Winter. When the Admirall hadde thus searched the beginning of the region of Cibiana, he repared to Isabella (for so hee named the citie) where, leaving the governance of the Islande with his Deputies, hee prepared himselfe to search further the limites of the Islande of Gaba or Iohanna, which hee yet doubted to bee the firme lande, and distant from Hispaniola onely lxx. myles. This did hee with more speedie expedition, calling to remembrance the Kinges commendement, who willed him first with all celeritie, to ouerrunne the coastes of the new Ilands, least any other Prince should in the meane time attempt to invade the same, for the King of Portugale affirmed that it pertained only to him to discover these vnknowne lands: but the bishop of Rome, Alexander the sixt, to avoyde the cause of this dissention, granted to the king of Spaine by the authoritie of his leaden bulles, that no other Prince should bee so bold, as to make any voyages to any of these vnknowne Regions, lying without the precinct of a direct linc drawn from the North to the South a hundred leagues Westward, without the parallels of the Ilandes called Capud Verde, or Cabouerde, which wee thinke to be those which in old tyme were called Hesperides: these pertaine to the King of Portugale; and from these his Pylotes, which doe yeerely search newe coastes and regions; direct their course to the East, sayling euer towarde the left hande by the backe of Aphrike, and the seas of the Ethiopians: neither to this day had the Portugales at any time sayled Southward or Westward from the Ilandes of Cabouerde. Preparing therefore three shippes, he made hast towarde the Islande of Iohanna or Cuba, whither he came in short space, and named the point thereof, where hee first arrived, Alpha and O, that is, the first and the last: for he supposed that there had bene the ende of our East, because the sunne falleth there, and of the West, because it riseth there. For it is apparant, that Westward; it is the beginning of India beyonde the river of Ganges, and Eastward; the furthest ende of the same: which thing is not contrary to reason; forasmuch as the Cosmographers have left the limites of India beyond Ganges vndertermined, whereas also some were of opinion, that India was not farre from the coastes of Spaine, as we have said before. Within the prospect of the beginning of Cuba, hee found a commodious haven in the extreme angle of the Islande of Hispaniola; for in this parte the Ilande receiveth a great goulfe: this haven hee named Saint Nicholas porte, being scarcely twentie leagues from Cuba. As he departed from hence; and sayled Westward by the Southside of Cuba, the further that he went, so much the more the sea seemed to be extended in breadth, and to bende towarde the South. On the South side of Cuba, hee founde an Islande which the inhabitants call Iamaica; this he affirmed to be longer & broder then the Iland of Sicilie, having in it onely one mountaine, which on every part beginning from the sea, ryseth by litle and litle into the middist of the Ilande; and that so playnely without roughesse, that such as goe vpp to the toppes of the same, can scarcely perceiue that they asccnde: This Ilaude hee affirmed to be very fruitful and full of people, aswell in the inner partes of the same, as by the shore, and that the inhabitants are of quicker witte then the other Ilandes, and more expert Artificers, and warlike men: For in many places where hee would haue arrived, they came armed against him, and forbode him with threatening wordes: but being overcome, they made a league of friendship with him. Thus departing from La Matica, he sayled toward the West, with a prosperous winde, for the space of threescore and tenne daies thinking that he had passed so far by the compass of the earth being vnderneath vs, that he had bin nere vnto Aurea Chersonesus (now called Malacca) in our East India, beyond the beginning of Perides: for hee plainly beleued that he had left only two of the twelve houres of the sunne, which were vnknowen to vs, for the old writers have left halfe the course of the sunne vntouched, wheras they haue but only discussed that superficial parte of the earth which lyeth betweene the Ilandes of Gades, and the river of Ganges, or at the vltremost, to Aurea Chersonesus. In this Navigation, he chanced on manie furious seas, running with a fall as if

Liberte and Liberty. The mountains are colde.

The Iland of Cuba.

Learn say other prices, &c.

Dissention betweene the Portugales and Spaniards.

The Ilandes of Cabouerde or Hesperides.

The Portuguese voyages.

The end of the East and West.

Now. India not farre from Spaine.

Saint Nicholas porte.

The Iland of Iamaica.

Quicker witte people.

The compassing of the earth.

Aurea Chersonesus, or Malacca.

A decrease of Astronomie.

The place of Gades.

had bene the streames of floudes; also many whirle-pooles, and shelles, with many other dangers, and strayghts, by reason of the multitude of landes which lay on euery side. But not regarding all these perilles, hee determined to proceed, vntil he had certaine knowledge whether Cuba were an Islande, or firme lande. Thus he sayled forward, coasting euer by the shore toward the West for the space of CC.xxii. leagues, that is, about a thousande and three hundred myles, and gaue names to seuen hundred Islandes by the way, leauing also on the left hande (as he feared not to report) three thousand here and there. But let vs nowe returne to such things as hee founde worthy to be noted in this Nauigation. Saying therefore by the side of Cuba, and searching the nature of the places, he espied not farre from Alpha and O a large haue; of capacity to harborowe many shippes, whose entrance is bending, being inclosed on both sides with capes or poyntes which receiue the water: this haue is large within, and of exceeding depth. Saying by the shore of this porte, hee sawe not farre from the same, two cottages, covered with reedes, and in many places fire kindled. Here he sent certaine armed men out of the shippes to the cottages, where they found neither man nor woman, but muscatoe enough, for they found certaine spittes of woode lying at the fire, hauing fishe on them about an hundred pounce weight, and two serpentes of cyght foote long a peece whereat marueiling, and looking about if they could espie any of the inhabitants, and that none appeared in sight (for they sterke all to the mountaines at the coming of our men) they fell to their meate, and to the fish taken with: other mens traunty. but they abstained from the serpents, which they affirme to differ nothing from the Crocodiles of Egypt, but only in bignesse: for (as Plinie sayth) Crocodiles haue sometimes bin found of xviii. cubits long, but of these the biggest were but of eight foote. Thus being well refreshed, they entred into the next wood where they found many of the same kinde of serpentes, hanging vpon boughes of trees, of the which, some had their mouthes tyed with stringes, and some their teeth taken out. And as they searched the places neere vnto the haue, they sawe about lxx. men in the top of a high rocke, which fled as soone as they had espied our menne: who by signes and tokens of peace calling them againe, there was one which came neere them; and stood on the toppe of a rocke, seeming as though he were yet fearefull: but the Admirall sent one Didacus to him, a man of the same countrey, whom he had at his first voyage taken in the Islande of Guanahani, being neere vnto Cuba; willing him to come neere, and not to be afraide. When he heard Didacus speake to him in his owne tongue, he came boldly to him, and shortly after resorted to his companie, persuading them to come without all feare. After this message was done, there descended from the rockes to the shippes, about threescore and ten of the inhabitants, profering friendship and gentleness to our men: which the Admirall accepted thankfully, and gaue them diuers rewards, & that the rather, for that he had intelligence by Didacus the interpreter, that they were the kinges fishers, sent of their Lorde to take fish against a solemne feast which hee prepared for another king. And whereas the Admiralles men had eaten the fish which they left at the fire, they were the gadder thereof, because they had left the serpentes: for there is nothing among their delicate dishes, that they esteeme so much as these serpentes, if so much that it is more lawfull for common people to eate of them, then Peacockes or Pheasantes among vs: as for the fishes, they doubted not to take as many more the same night. Being asked why they first roasted the fish which they entended to beare to the King? they answered, that they might be the fresher and vcorrupted. Thus ioyning handes for a token of further friendship, euery man resorted to his owne. The Admirall went forward as he had appointed, following the falling of the sunne from the beginning of Cuba, called Alpha and O: the shores or sea banks euen vnto this haue, albeit they be full of trees, yet are they rough with mountaines: of these trees, some were full of blossomes and flowes, and other laden with fruites. Beyond the haue, the lande is more fertile and populous, whose inhabitants are more gentle, and more desirous of our things: for as soone as they had espied our shippes, they flocked all to the shore; bringing with them such breade as they are accustomed to eate, and gourdies full of water; offering them vnto our men; and further, desiring them, to come alande. In all these landes is a certaine kinde of trees as bigge as

Elmes,

Dangerous  
strayghts by  
reason of many  
Islandes.

A large haue.

Roasted fish &  
serpents of vnto  
foote long.

Crocodiles of  
Egypt.

The kinges  
fishers.

Serpentes esteemed  
of for delicate  
meate.

Blossomes &  
fruites laden  
with.

Blmes, which beare gourdes in the steede of frutes, these they vse onely for drinking pottes, and to fetch water in, but not for meate, for the inner substance of them is sower then gail, and the barke as harde as any shell. At the Ides of May, the watchmon looking out of the top castle of the shippe, towards the South, sawe a multitude of llandes standing thicke together, being all well replenished with trees, grasse, and hearbes, and well inhabited: in the shore of the continent, hee chaunced into a navigable riuer, whose water was so hot, that no man might endure to abide his hand therein any tme. The day following, espying a farre of a Canoa of fishermen of the inhabitantes, fearing least they should flee at the sight of our men, he commanded certaine to assaile them priuily with the ship-boates: but they fearing nothing, taryed the comming of our men. Nowe shall you heare a newe kinde of fishing. Like as wee with Greyhoundes doe hunt Hares in the playne fieldes, so doo they, as it were with a hunting fishe, take other fishes: this fish was of shape or fourme vnknown to vs, but the body thereof not much vnlike a great yeete, hauing on the hinder parte of the head a very tough skinne, like vnto a great bagge or purse: this fish is tyed by the side of the boate with a corde, let downe so farre into the water that the fish may lie close hid by the keele or bottome of the same, for shée may in no case abide the sight of the ayre. Thus when they espie any great fish, Tortoyse (whereof there is great abundance, bigger then great targettes) they let the corde at length, but when she feeleth her selfe loosed, she inuadeth the fish or Tortoyse as swiftly as an arrowe, and where she hath once fastened her hold, she casteth the purse of skinne, whereof we spake before, and by drawing the same together, so graspeleth her pray, that no mans strength is sufficient to vnloose the same, except by little and litle drawing the lynce, shée bee lifted somewhat aboue the brimme of the water, for then, as soone as she seeth the brightnesse of the ayre, shée lotteth goe her holde. The pray therefore beeing nowe drawn neere to the brimme of the water, there leapeh sodenly out of the boate into the sea, so many fishers as may suffice to holde fast the pray, vntill the rest of the company haue taken it into the boate. Which thing done, they loose so much of the corde, that the hunting fish may againe returne to her place within the water, whereby another corde, they let downe to her a peece of the pray, as we vse to rewarde greyhoundes after they haue killed their game. This fish, they cal Guai-canum, but our men call it Reuersum. They gaue our men foure Tortoyces taken by this meanes, and those of such biggnesse, that they almost filled their fishing boate: for these fishes are esteemed among them for delicate meate. Our men recompenced them againe with other rewarde, and so let them depart. Being asked of the compasse of that lande, they answered that it had no ende Westwarde. Most instantly they desired the Admirall to come a lande, or in his name to send one with them to salute their Cazzicus, (that is) their king, affirming that hee would giue our men many presentes, if they would goe to him. But the Admirall, least he should be hindered of the voyage which he had begunne, refused to goe with them. Then they desired to knowe his name, and tolde our men likewise the name of their king. Thus sayling on yet further euer towardo the West, within fewe dayes he came neere vnto a certaine exceeding high mountaine, well inhabited by reason of the great fertilitie of the same. The inhabitantes of this mountaine, brought to our ship, bread, gossampine cotton, conies, & sundry kindes of wilde foule, demanding religiously of the interpretores, if this nation descended not from heauen. The king of this people, and diuers other sage men that stood by him, informed him that that land was no land. Shortly after, entering into one of the llandes being on the left hande of this land they found no bodie therein, for they fled all at the comming of our men: Yet founde they there foure dogges of maruelous deformed shape, & such as coule not barke. This kind of dogges, they eate as we doe goates. Here is great plenty of geese, duckes, and hearons. Betweene these llandes and the continent, he entered into so narrowe straightes, that hee coule scarcely turne backe the shippes, and these also so shalow, that the keele of the ships sometime rased on the sands. The water of these straightes, for the space of fourtie myles, was white and thicke, like vnto mylke, and as though meale had beeing sparkled throughout all that sea. And when they hadde at the length escaped

Trees which beare gourdes.

A multitude of llandes.

Hotte water.

A strange kinde of fishing.

Abundance of Tortoyces.

Fishers wege

The fish Guai-canum.

Humane people.

A Mountaine full of it & well inhabited.

Dogges of strange shape and colour.

White and thicke water.

escaped these straights, & were now come into a maine & large sea, and hadde stoyled thereon for the space of fourescore myles, they espied an other exceeding high mountaine, whether the Admirall resorted to store his shippes with fresh water and swell. Here among certaine woodes of Date trees, & pyno apple trees of exceeding height, hee founde two waier springes of fresh water. In the meane time, while the woode was cutting, and the barrells filling, one of our archers went into the woode to hunt, where he espied a certaine man with a white vesture, so like a fryer of the order of saynt Marie of Mercedis; that at the first sight he supposed it had bin the Admiralls priest, which he brought with him, being a man of the same order: but two other followed him immediately out of the same woodes. Shortly after, hee saue a far off a whole companie of men clothed in apparel, being about xxx. in number. Then turning his backe, and crying out to his fellowes, hee made hast to the shippes with all that he might drue. These apparell men made signes and tokens to him to tary, and not to be afraid, but that not withstanding he ceased not to flee. The Admirall being advertised hercof, and not a little reioycing that hee hadde founde a ciuile people, incontinently sent forth armed menne, with commandement that if neede shoulde so require, they should enter fourtie myles into the lande, vsntill they might finde eynher those apparell men, or other inhabitants of that countrey. When they had passed ouer the wood, they came into a great plaine full of grasse and hearbes, in which appeared no token of any pathway. Here attempting to goe through the grasse and hearbes, they were so entangled and bewrapped therein, that they were scarcely able to passe a myle, the grasse being there litle lower then our ripe corne: being therefore wearied, they were enforced to returne agayne, finding no pathway. The day following he sent forth xxx. armed men another way, commanding them to make diligent search and inquisition what maner of people inhabited the land: Who departing, when they had found, not farre from the sea side, certaine steps of wilde beastes, of the which they suspected some to be of Lions feete, being stricken with feare, returned backe agayne. As they came, they found a woode in the which were many natiu vines, here and there creeping about high trees, with many other trees bearing aromatical fruites and spices. Of these vines they brought with them into Spayne many clusters of grapes, very ponderous, and full of licour, but of the other fruites they brought none, because they putrifid by the way in the ship, & were cast into the sea. They say also that in the landes or meadowes of those woodes, they sawe flockes of great Cranes, twice as bigge as ours. As hee went forward, and turned his sayles towarde certaine other mountaines, hee espied two cottages on the shore, in the which he sawe owely one man, who being brought to the shippo, signified with head, fingers, and by all other signes that he coule devise, that the land which lay beyonde those mountaines was very full of people: and as the Admirall drew nere the shore of the same, there met him certaine Canoas, hauing in them many people of the countrey, who made signes and tokens of peace and friendship. But here Didacus the interpreter, which vnderstoode the language of the inhabitants of the beginning of Cuba, vnderstood not them one whit, whereby they considered that in sundry prouinces of Cuba, were sundry languages. Ho had also intelligence, that in the lande of this region was a king of great power, and accustomed to weare apparell: hee saide that all the tracte of this shore was drowned with water, and full of muddie, besette with many trees, after the manner of our marishes: Yet whereas in this place they went alande for freshe water; they found many of the shel fishes in the which pearles are gathered. But that coule not cause the Admirall to tracte the time there, entending at this voyage, only to proue how many lands & seas he coule discover according to the kings commandement. As they yet proceeded forward, they saue here and there all the way along by the shore, a great smoke rising, vsntill they came to another mountaine fourescore myles distant, there was no rocke or hill that coule be scene, but the same was all of a smoke. But whether the fires were made by the inhabitants for their necessarie businesse, or (as wee are wont to sette beacons on fire when we suspect the approach of our enemies) thereby to giue warning to their neighbours to bee in a readinesse, & gather together, if perhaps our men shoulde attempt any thing against them, or otherwise as (seemeth most vnkely) to cal them together, as to a wonder,

Woodes of date trees.

Men apparell like white fryers.

Apparell men.

Natiue vines. Trees bearing spices &amp; sweet fruites.

Diouers languages in the land of Cuba.

Pearles in shel fishes.

to beholde our shippes; they knowe yet no certainty. In this tracte, the shores bended sometime toward the South, and sometime toward the West; and West Southwest, and the sea was eury where entangled with landes, by reason whereof the keeles of the shippes oftentimes raised the sandes for shallownesse of the water: So that the shippes being very sore bruined and appayed, the sayles, cables, and other tacklings, in manner rotten, and the vitailles (especially the biskette breade) corrupted by taking water at the ryftes cuill closed, the Admirall was enforced to turne backe againe: This last poynte where hee touched of Cuba (not yet being known to be an Island) hee called Enangelista. (Thus turning his sayles swardes other landes lying not farre from the supposed continent, hee chanced into a mayne sea, where was such a multitude of great Torioyses, that sometime they stayed the shippes: Not long after, hee entred into a goulfe of white water, like unto that whereof wee spake before. At the length, fearing the shelles of the landes, hee returned to the shore of Cuba, by the same way which hee came. Here a multitude of the inhabitants, as well women as men, resorted to him with cheerful countenances, and with feare, bringing with them popingayes, bread, water, and conies, but especially stocke doves, much bigger then ours, which hee offered in assayre and taste, to bee much more pleasant then our partryches. Wherefore where, as in eating of them hee perceived a certaine savour of spice to proceede from them, hee commanded the crophe to bee opened of such as were newly killed, and founde the same full of sweete spices, which hee argued to bee the cause of their strange tast: For it standeth with good reason, that the flesh of beastes, shoulde drawe the nature and qualitie of their accustomed nourishment. As the Admirall hearde masse on the shore, there came toward him a certaine gournour, a man of foure score yeares of age, and of great grauntye, although hee were naked saving his privie parts. Hee had a great trayne of men wayting on him. All the while the prieste was at masse he shewed himselfe very humble, and gave reverent attendance, with grave and demure countenance. When the masse was ended, hee presented to the Admirall a basket of the fruites of his country, deducing the same with his owne handes. When the Admirall hadde gently entertained him, desiring leave to speake, hee made an oration in the presence of Didaous the interpreter to this effect: I have bin advertised (most mighty prince) that you have of late with great power subdued many lands and Regions, hitherto unknowne to you, and have brought no litle feare vpon all the people and inhabitants of the same: the which your good fortune, you shall beare with lesse insolvency, if you remember that the soules of men have two journeyes after they are departed from this bodie. The one, soule and dark, prepared for such as are inturious and cruell to mankinde: the other pleasant and delectable, ordeined for them which in their life time loved peace and quietnes. If therefore you acknowledge yourselfe to be mortal, and consider that eury man shall receive condigne rewarde, or punishment, for such thinges as hee hath done in this life, you will wrongfully hurt no man. When hee had said these wordes and other like, which were declared to the Admirall by the interpretation, hee kneeling at the judgment of the naked olde man, answered that he was gladd to beare his opinion as touching the sundry journeyes and rewards of soules departed from their bodies, supposing that neither he, or any other of the inhabitants of those Regions, had had any knowledge thereof: declaring further, that the chief cause of his coming thither, was to instruct them in such godly knowledge, and true religion: and that he was sent into those countreies by the Christian king of Spaine (his Lord and master) for the same purpose, and specially to subdue and punish the Canibales, and such other mischievous people, and to defend innocents against the violence of euill dooers, willing him, and all other such as imbrace vertue, in no case to bee afraid, but rather to open his minde vnto him, if either he, or any other such quietmen as he was, had sustained any wrong of their neighbours, and that he would see the same revenged. These comfortable wordes of the Admirall so pleased the olde man, that notwithstanding his extreme age, he would gladly have gone with the Admirall, as he had done indeede, if his wife and children had not hindered him of his purpose: but he marvelled not a litle, that the Admirall was vnder the dominion of another: and much more when the interpretour tolde him of the glorie, magnificence, pompe, great power,

The sea  
is  
filled  
with  
Islands.

A multitude  
of  
great  
Turioyses  
A goulfe  
of  
white  
water.

The humanity  
of  
a  
prostrate  
olde  
governour.

An  
oration  
of  
the  
naked  
governour.

Their  
opinion  
of  
the  
soule  
of  
man.

Drove  
of  
gold  
founde  
there  
which  
religion  
would  
not  
take  
Virtus  
perit  
cum  
pauca, &c.

power, and furnimentes of warre of our kinges, and of the multitudes of cities and townes, which were vnder their dominions. Intending therefore so haue gone with the Admirall, his wife and children fell prostrate at his feete, with teares desiring him not to forsake them and leaue them desolate at whose pittifull requestes, the worthy olde man being moued, remained at home to the comfort of his people and familie, satisfying rather then then himselfe: for not yet ceasing to wonder, and of heauie countenance because he might not depart, hee demanded oftentimes if that lande was not heauen, which brought forth such a kinde of men? For it is certaine that among them the lande is as common as sunne and water, and that Mine and Thime (the seedes of all mischief) haue no place with them. They are content with so little, that in so large a countrey they haue rather superfluite then scarcenesse: so that (as we haue sayde before) they seeme to liue in the golden worlde without toyle, living in open gardens, but intrenched with ditches, diuided with hedges, or defended with walles: they deale truely one with another without lawes, without booke, and without iudges: they take him for an euill and mischieuous man, which taketh pleasure in dooing hurt to other. And albeit that they delight not in superfluities, yet make they provision for the increase of such roots whereof they make their bread, as Maizium, luces, and Ages, contented with such simple dyet, whereby health is preserved, and diseases avoided. The Admirall therefore departing from thence, and minding to returne againe shortly after, chanced to come againe to the lande of Iamaica, being on the South side thereof, and coasted all along by the shore of the same from the West to the East, from whose least corner on the East side, when hee saue towards the North side on his left hande certaine high mountains, hee knewe at the length that it was the South side of the lande of Hispaniola, which hee hadd not passed by. Wherefore at the Calendes of September, entering into the haue of the same lande, called saint Nicholas haue, he repayed his shippes, to the intent that he might againe wast and spoyle the landes of the Canibales, and burne all their Canoas, that those rauening Wolves might no longer persecute and deuoure the innocet sheepe: but he was at this time hindered of his purpose, by reason of a disease which hee had gotten by too much watching. Thus beinge feeble, and weake, hee was ledde of the Mariners to the cittie of Isabella, where with his two brethren which were there, and other of his familiar, hee recouered his health in shorte space: yet coulde hee not at this time scyle the Canibales, by reason of sedition that was risen of late among the Spanyardes which he had left in Hispaniola, whereof we will speake more hereafter. Thus fare ye well.

The fourth booke of the first Decade, to Lodouike Cardinal of Aragonie.

Colonus the Admirall of the Ocean, returning (as hee supposed) from the continent or firme land of East India, hadde aduertisement that his brother Bollius, and one Peter Margarita, an olde familiar of the Kings, and a noble man, with diuers other of those to whom he had left the gouernēt of the land, were of corrupted mind against him departed into Spaine. Wherefore, as well to purge himselfe of such crimes, as they should lay to his charge, as also to make a supply of other men in the place of them which were returned, and especially to prouide for victuals, as wheat, wine, oyle, and such other, which the Spanyardes are accustomed to eate, because they coulde not yet well agree with such meate as they founde in the landes, determined shortly to take his voyage into Spaine: but what he did before his departure, I will briefly rehearse.

The kinges of the landes which had hitherto liued quietly, and content with their little which they thought abundant, whereas they now perceived that our men began to fasten foote within their regios, & so beare rule among them, they tooke the matter so grievously, that they thought nothing els but by what meanes they might utterly destroy them, and for euer abolish the memorie of their name, for that kinde of menne (the Spanyardes I meane, which followed the Admirall in the navigation) were for the most part vnruly, regarding nothing but idleness, play, and libertie, and would by no meanes abstaine from iniuries, railing of the women of the landes before the faces of their husbandes, fathers, and brethren: by which their abominable misdeameour, they disquieted the minds of all the inhabitants, insomuch

The lande is common to the male and weale.

Simple dyet.

Hesperides.

The Canibales.

Scenes of too much watching.

En. Ind.

The Spanyardes rebell in the Admirall's absence.

The kinges of the landes which had hitherto liued quietly, and content with their little which they thought abundant, whereas they now perceived that our men began to fasten foote within their regios, & so beare rule among them, they tooke the matter so grievously, that they thought nothing els but by what meanes they might utterly destroy them, and for euer abolish the memorie of their name, for that kinde of menne (the Spanyardes I meane, which followed the Admirall in the navigation) were for the most part vnruly, regarding nothing but idleness, play, and libertie, and would by no meanes abstaine from iniuries, railing of the women of the landes before the faces of their husbandes, fathers, and brethren: by which their abominable misdeameour, they disquieted the minds of all the inhabitants, insomuch

insomuch that wheresoever they found any of our men vnprepared, they slue them with such fiercenesse and gladnes as though they had offered sacrifice to God. Intending therefore to A last voyage. pacifie their troubled mindes, and to punish them that slue his men before he departed from thence, he sent for the king of that vale, which in the booke before we described to be at the foote of the mountayne of the region of Cibana, this kinges name was Guarionexius: who; the more straightly to concile vnto him the friendship of the Admirall; gaue his sister to wife to Didacus, a man from his childes age brought vp. with the Admirall, whom he vsed for his interpreter in the prouinces of Cuba. After this, he sent for Caunaboa, called the Lord of the house of golde, that is, of the mountaines of Cibana: For this Caunaboa he sent one captaine Hoieda, whom the ditionaries of Caunaboa had enforced to keepe his hold, besieging for Capezio Hoieda the space of thirty dayes the fortesse of saint Thomas, in the which Hoieda with his fiftie soldiers stode at their defence, vntil the coming of the Admirall: While Hoieda remained with Caunaboa, manye ambassadours of the Kinges of diuers regions were sent to Caunaboa, perswading him in no condition to permit the Christians to inhabit the lande, except he hadde rather serue then rule. On the other partie, Hoieda aduertised Caunaboa to goe to the Admirall, and to make a league of friendship with him: but the ambassadours on the contrary part, threatened him, that if he would so doe, the other kinges would inuade his region. But Hoieda answered them againe, that whereas they conspired to mainteine their libertie, they should by that meanes be brought to seruitude & destruction, if they intended to resist or keepe war against the Christians. Thus Caunaboa on the one side and the other being troubled, as it were a rocke in the sea, beaten with contrary floudes, and much more vexed with the stormes of his guiltie conscience, for that he had primily slaine xx. of our men vnder prettice of peace, feared to come to the Admirall: but at the length, hauing excoigitated his deceipt, to haue slaine the Admirall and his companie, vnder the colour of friendship, if opportunity would so haue serued, he repayed to the Admirall, with his whole family, and so manye other waiting on him, armed after their maner. Being demanded why hee brought so great a rout of men with him, he answered; that it was not decent for so great a Prince as hee was, to goe out of his house without such a bande of men: but the thing chaunced much otherwise then he looked for, for he fell into the snares which he had prepared for other, for whereas by the way he began to repent him that he came forth of his house, Hoieda with manye faire words and promises brought him to the Admirall; at whose commandement he was immediately taken and put in prizon, so that the soules of our men were not long from their bodies vnrecouged. Thus Caunaboa with all his familie being taken, the Admirall was determined to runne ouer the lande, but hee was certified that there was such famine among the Famine in the  
Islands of Hispaniola. inhabitants, that there was already fiftie thousande men dead thereof, and that they dyed yet daily, as it were rotten sheepe, the cause whereof, was well knowne to be their owne obstinacie and forwardnes: for whereas they saw that our men intended to choose them a dwelling place in the lande, supposing that they might haue dryuen them from thence if the victualles of the land should fail, they determined with themselves, not only to leaue sowing and planting, but also to destroy and plucke vp by the rootes etery man in this own region, that which they had already sowne, of both kindes of breade, whereof wee made mention in the first booke, but especially among the mountaines of Cibana, otherwise called Cipanga, forasmuch as they hadde knowledge that the golde which aboundeth in that region, was the chiefe cause that deteyned our men in the land. In the meane time, hee sent forth a Captayne with a bande of men, to search the South side of the lande, who at his returne, reported that throughout all the regions that hee traouyled, there was such scarcenesse of breadd, that for the space of xvi. dayes, he ate nothing but the rootes of herbes, and of young date trees, or the fruites of other wilde trees: but Guarionexius the king of the vale, lying beneath the mountaines of Cibana, whose kingdom was not so wasted as the other, gaue our menne certaine victualles. Within a fewe dayes after, both that the iourneyes might be the shorter, and also that our men might haue more safe places of refuge, if the inhabitants should hereafter rebell in like maner, hee builded another fortesse (which hee called the Towre of conception) The tower of  
conception. betwene the cite of Isabell, and Saint Thomas fortesse, in the marches of the kingdom of

this Guarionexius, within the precincte of Cibana, vpon the side of a hill, hauing a fayre riuer of wholesome water running hardy by the same. Thus when the inhabitants sawe newe buildinges to bee daily erected, and our shippes lying in the bauen rotten and halfe broken, they began to dispayre of any hope of liberty, and wandred vp and downe with heauie cheare. From the Towre of Conception, searching diligently the inner partes of the mountaynes of Cibana, there was a certaine king which gaue them a masse of rude golde as bigge as a mans fyst, weighing xx. ounces: this golde was not founde in the banks of that riuer, but in a heape of dry earth, and was like vnto the stone called Tophus, which is soone resolued into sande. This masse of golde I myselfe sawe in Castile, in the famous Citie of Methymna Campi, where the Court lay all that winter. I sawe also a great peece of pure Electrum, of the which beks, and Apothecaries morters, & many such other vesselles and instrumentes may bee made, as were in olde time of copper in the Citie of Corinthus. This peece of Electrum was of such weight, that I was not onely with both my handes vnable to lift it from the ground, but also not of strength to remoue it eyther one way or other: they affirmed that it weied more then three hundred pounde weight, after eight ounces to the pounde, it was founde in the house of a certaine Prince, and left him by his predecessours: and albeit that in the dayes of the inhabitantes yet liuing, Electrum was no where d'igged, yet knewe they where the myne thereof was, but our men with much adoo coulde hardly cause them to shewe them the place, they bore them such priuie hatred, yet at the length they brought them to the myne, being now ruinate and stopped with stones and rubbish: it is much easier to digge then is the yron myne, and might be restored againe, if myners and other workmen skillfull therein were appointed thereto. Not farre from the Towre of Conception, in the same mountaine, is founde great plentie of Amber, and out of certaine rockes of the same, disilleth a substance of the yelowe colour which the Paynters vse. Not farre from these mountaines are many great woodes, in the which are none other trees then Brasile, which the Italians call Verzino. But here perhaps (right noble Prince) you woulde aske, what should be the cause, that where as the Spanyards haue brought out of these llandes certaine shippes laden with Brasile, somewhat of Gossampine cotton, a quantitie of Amber, a little golde, & some spices, why haue they not brought such plentie of golde, and such other rich marchaundizes, as the fruitfulnessse of these Regions seeme to promise? To this I answer, that when Colonus the Admirall was likewise demaunded the cause hereof, hee made aunswere, that the Spanyards which hee tooke with him into these regions, were giuen rather to sleepe, play, and idleness, then to labour, and were more studious of sedition and newes, then desirous of peace and quietnesse: also, that being giuen to licentiousnesse, they rebelled & forsooke him, finding matter of false accusation against him, because hee went about to represser their outrageousnesse: by reason whereof, hee was not yet able to breake the power of the inhabitants, and freely to possess the full dominion of the llande, and these hinderances to bee the cause that hitherto the gaynes haue scarcely counteruayled the charges: albeit, euen this yere while I wrote these things at your request, they gathered in two monethes the summe of a thousande and two hundred poundes weight of golde. But because we entende to speake more largely of these things in their place, wee will nowe returne from whence we haue digressed. When the inhabitants perceived that they coulde by no meanes shake the yoke from their necks, they made humble supplicatiō to the Admirall, that they might stande to their tribute, and apply themselves to increase the fruites of their country, beeing now almost wasted. Hee granted them their request, and appoynted such order that eury Region shoulde pay their tribute, with the commodities of their countreies, according to their portion, and at such time as they were agreed vpon: but the violent famine did frustrate all these appoyntments, for all the trauailes of their bodies, were scarcely able to suffice to finde them meate in the woodes, whereby to susteyne their liues, beeing of long time contented with rootes and the fruites of wyld trees: yet many of the kinges with their people, euen in this extreame necessitie, brought parte of their tribute, most humbly desiring the Admirall to haue compassion of their calamities and to beare with them yet a while, vntil the llande were restored to the olde state, promising further, that that which was nowe wanting, shoulde then be

double

Electrum is a metall naturally most of one portion of gold, and an other of silver, being of propriety to be wray popper, and was therefore in olde time in greater estimation than gold.

The mine of Electrum. An other kinde of Amber is taken out of great white fishes.

Openers of oilder.

Woods of Brasile trees.

Licentiousnesse is to much libertie.

And this oaly gathered, and was digged out of the body of the mine.

double recompenced. But fewe of the inhabitantes of the mountaines of Cibana kept their promise, because they were sorer oppressed with famine then anie of the other. They say that the inhabitants of these mountaines differ no lesse in language and manners from them whiche dwell in the playnes, then among vs the rusticalles of the countrey, from the gentlemen of the court: whereas notwithstanding they liue as it were both vnder one portion of heauen, and in many things much after one fashion, as in nakednesse, and rude simplicitie.

The nature of the region doth the manner of the people.

But nowe let vs returne to Caunaboa the king of the house of golde, being in captiuitie. When hee perceiued him selfe to bee cast in pryson, fretting and grating his teeth, as it had bene a Lion of Libbia, and dayly and nightly deuising with himselfe howe hee might bee deliuered, beeganne to perswade the Admirall, that forasmuch as he hadde nowe taken vnto his dominion the region of Cipanga or Cibana (wherof he was king) it should be expedient to sende thither a garrison of Christian men, to defend the same from the incursions of his old enemies and borderers: for he sayde, that it was signified vnto him, that the countrey was wasted and spoyled with such incursions. By this craftie deuise, hee thought to haue brought to passe, that his brother which was in that region, and the other his kinsfolkes and friends with their adherentes, should haue taken, eyther by sleight or force, as many of our men as might haue redeemed him. But the Admirall vnderstanding his craftie meaning, sent Hoicla with suche a companie of men, as might vanquishe the Cibaniens, if they should moue warre againste them. Our menne had scarceelye entred into the region, but the brother of Caunaboa came against them with an armie of fyue thousande naked men, armed after their manner, with clubbes, arrowes tipt with bones, and speeres made harde at the endes with fire. He stole vpon our men being in one of their houses, and encamped rounde about the same on euery side. This Cibanian, as a man not ignorant in the discipline of warre, about the distaunce of a furlong from the house, diuided his armie into fye battayles, appoynting to euery one of them a circuite by equall deuision, and placed the ffront of his owne battayle directly against our men. When he had thus set his battayles in good aray, he gaue certaine signes that the whole army should marche forwarde in order with equall paces, and with a larme freshly assaile their onemies, in such sort that none might escape. But our men iudging it better to encounter with one of the battayles, then to abide the brunt of the whole armie, gaue oneset on the maine battayle aranged in the playnce, because that place was most commodious for the horsmen. When the horsmen therefore had giuen the charge, they ouerthrowe them with the brestes of their horses, and slue as many as aboue the end of the fight, the residue being stricken with feare, disparted, and fled to the mountaines and tookes: from whence they made a pitifull howling to our men, desiring them to spare them, protesting that they would neuer more rebell, but doe what so euer they would commaunde them, if they would suffer them to liue in their owne countrey. Thus the brother of Caunaboa being taken, the Admirall licenced the people to resort euery man to his owne: these things thus fortunately atchieued, this Region was pacified. Among these mountaines, the vale which Caunaboa inhabited, is called Magona, and is exceeding fruitfull, hauing in it many goodly springes and riuers, in the sande wherof is founde great plentie of golde. The same yeere in the moneth of Iune, they say there arose such a boystrous tempest of wind from the South-west, as hath not lightly been heard of, the violence wherof was such, that it plucked vp by the roots whatsoeuer great trees were within the reach of the force thereof. When this whirlewinde came to the haucn of the citie, it beste downe to the bottome of the sea three shippes, which lay at anker, and broke the cables in sunder, and that (which is the greater maruayle) without any storme or roughnesse of the sea, onely turning them three or foure times about. The inhabitantes also affirme, that the same yeere the sea extended it selfe further into the lande, and rose higher then euer it did beefore by the memorie of man, by the space of a cubite. The people therefore muttered among themselves, that our nation had troubled the elementes, & caused such portentous signes. These tempestes of the ayre (which the Grecians call Tiphones, that is, whirlewindes) they call Furcanes, which they say, doe often times chauce in this Ilande: but that neyther they, nor their great grand-fathers, euer sawe such violent and furious Furcanes, that plucked vp great trees by the rootes, nei-

King Caunaboa in captiuitie.

Caunaboa his brother rebeller.

A conflict betwene the Cibaniens in the Spanyards.

A great tempest in the mouth of Iune.

Whirlewinde, Furcanees.

ther yet such surges and vehement motions on the sea, that so wasted the land as in deede it may appeare, forasmuch as wheresoeuer the sea bankes are neere to any plaine, there are in a maner currie where flourishing meadowes reaching euen to the shore: but nowe let vs returne to Caunaboa. As king Caunaboa therefore and his brother should haue been brought into Spaine, they dyed by the way; for very pensiuenesse and anguish of minde. The Admirall whose shippes were drowned in the foresaide tempest, perceiving himselfe to be now enclosed, commanded forthwith two other shippes (which the Spaniards call Caracelas) to be made: for hee had with him all manner of Artificers pertyeyning thereunto. While these things were dooing, hee sent forth Bartholomeus Colonus his brother, being Lieutenant of the llande, with an armie of men to search the golde mynes, being distant threescore leagues from the citie of Isabella, which were founde by the conduct of certaine people of the lland, before the mines of Cipanga or Cibana were knowne. In these mynes they found certaine deepe pits, which had beene digged in old time, out of these pittes, the Admirall (who affirmeth this lland of Hispaniola to be Ophir, as we sayde before) supposeth that Solomon the king of Hierusalem had his great riches of gold, wherof we read in the olde Testament, and that his ships sayled to this Ophir by the gonle of Persia, called Sinus Persicus. But whether it be so or not, it lieth not in me to iudge, but in my opinion it is far of. As the myners digged the superficiall or vppermost part of the earth of the mynes, during for the space of sixe myles, and in diuers places sifted the same on the drie land, they found such plentie of golde, that euery hyred labourer could easily finde currie day the weight of three drammes: These mines being thus searched and found, the Lieutenant certified the Admirall hereof by his letters, the which when he had receiued, the fift day of the Ides of March, Anno. 1495. he entred into his new ships, and tooke his voyage directly to Spaine, to aduertise the King of all his affaires, leaving the whole regiment of the lland with his brother the Lieutenant.

The fift booke of the first Decade, to Lodouiké Cardinal of Aragonie.

After the Admirall departing into Spayne his brother the Lieutenant builded a fortesse in the golde mynes, as hee hadde commanded him: this hee called the golden towre, because the labourers founde golde in the earth, and stoné wherof they made the walles of the fortesse. Hee consumed three monethes in making the instrumentes witterwith the golde shoulder, hee gathered, washed, tryed, and moulten: yet was hee at this time, by reason of wante of victualles, enforced to leaue all things imperfecte, and to goe seeke for meate: Thus as he, with a bande of armed menne, hadde entred threescore myles further within the land, the people of the country here and there resorting to him, gaue him a certaine portion of their breade, in exchange for other of our thinges: but hee could not long tary here, because they lacked meate in the fortesse, whether hee hasted with such as he had now gotten. Leaving therefore in the fortesse a garrison of ten men, with that portion of the llande breade which yet remained, leaving also with them a Hounde to take those kindes of little beastes which they call Vsias, not much vnlike our Conies, hee returned to the fortesse of Conception. This also was the moneth wherein the king Guarionexius, and also Manicautexius borderer vnto him, should haue brought in their tributes. Remaining there the whole moneth of Iune, hee exacted the whole tribute of the two kinges, and victualles necessary for him and such as hee brought with him, which were aboute foure hundred in number. Shortly after, about the Calendes of Iuly, there came three Caracelas from Spayne, bringing with them sundry kindes of victualles, as wheate, oyle, wine, bakon, & Martelmas beefe, which were diuided to euery man according as neede required, some also was lost in the caryage for lack of good looking to. At the arrival of these shippes, the Lieutenant receiued commandement from the King and the Admirall his brother, that he with his men should remove their habitation to the South side of the llande, because it was neerer to the golde mynes: Also that hee should make diligent search for those Kinges which had slayne the Christian men, and to sende them with their confederates bound into Spaine. At the next voyage therefore he sent three hundred captiues, with three kinges, and when hee had diligently searched the coastes of the South side, he transported his habitation, and builded a fortesse there, vpon the

The death of King Coanaboa and his brother.

The golde mines of Isabella.

Golde in the superficiall parts of the earth.

The golden towre.

Lacke of victualles.

Victualles brought from Spaine.

the toppes of an hill, neare vnto a sure haven: this fortresse hee called *saint Dominickes* Saint Dominickes  
 tower. Into this haven runneth a riuer of wholesome water, replenished with sundry kinde of Saint Dominickes  
 good fishes: they affirme this riuer to haue many benefites of nature, for where so euer  
 it runneth, all things are exceeding pleasant and fruitefull, hauing on euery side  
 groues of Date trees, and diuers other of the lande frutes so plentifully, that as  
 they sayled along by the shore, oftentimes the branches thereof, laden with flowes  
 and frutes, hang so ouer their heades, that they might plucke them with their hands:  
 also that the fruitfulness of this ground, is eith' equall with the soyle of Isabella, or better. Isabella.  
 In Isabella hee left onely certaine sicke men, and shippe wrightes, whome hee had ap-  
 pointed to make certaine caravels, the residue of his men, hee conueighed to the South, to  
 faint *Dominickes* tower. After hee had builded this fortresse, leauing therein a garrison of  
 xx. men, hee with the remnant of his souldiers, prepared themselues to search the inner  
 partes of the West side of the lande, hitherto knowne onely by name. Therefore about  
 xxx. leagues, (that is) fourescore and tenne myles from the fortresse, hee chanced on the  
 ryuer *Naiba*, which wee sayde to descende from the mountaines of *Cibana*, right towarde  
 the South, by the middle of the lande. When he had ouerpassed this riuer with a com-  
 pany of armed menne diuided into xxx. decarions, that is, tenne in a company, with their  
 capitaines, he sent two decarions to the regions of those *Kinges* in whose landes were the  
 great woodes of *brasil* tree. The river of Naiba. Itching towarde the left hande, they founde the woodes,  
 entred into them, and felled the high and precious trees, which were to that day vnouched.  
 Each of the decarions filled certaine of the lande houses with the trunks of *brasil*, there  
 to be reserued vntill the shippes came which should cary them away. But the Lieutenant  
 directing his iourney towarde the right hande, not farre from the banks of the riuer of  
*Naiba*, found a certain king whose name was *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, encamped against the  
 inhabitants of the prouince of *Naiba*, to subdue them vnder his dominion, as he had don  
 many other kings of the land, borderers vnto him. The palace of this great king, is called  
*Xaragua*, and is situate towarde the West end of the lande, distant from the riuer of *Naiba*,  
 xxx. leagues. All the princes which dwell betweene the West end & his palace, are  
 dictionaryes vnto him. All that region from *Naiba*, to the furthest marches of the West, is  
 vterly without golde, although it be full of mountaines. When the king had espied our  
 men, laying apart his weapons, and giuing signes of peace, he spake gently to them (vn-  
 certaine whether it were of humilitie or feare) and demanded of them what they woulde  
 haue. The Lieutenant answered, That hee should pay tribute to the Admirall his brother, in  
 the name of the Christian King of Spayne. To whom he sayde, How can you require that  
 of me, whereas neuer a region vnder my dominion bringeth forth golde? For he had heard,  
 that there was a strange nation entred into the land, which made great search for gold: But  
 he supposed that they desired some other thing. The Lieutenant answered againe, God forbide  
 that wee should enioyne any manne to pay such tribute as he might not easily fore-  
 beare, or such as were not engendered or growing in the region but wee vnderstande that  
 your regions bring forth great plenty of *Gossampine* cotton, and hempe, with such other  
 whereof wee desire you to giue vs parte. When he heard these wordes, he promised with  
 chearefull countenance, to giue him as much of these things as hee woulde require. Thus  
 dismissing his army, and sending messengers before, he himselfe accompanied the Lieuten-  
 ant, and brought him to his palace, being distant (as we haue sayde) xxx. leagues. In all  
 this tracte, they passed through the iurisdiction of other princes, being vnder his dominion:  
 Of the which, some gaue them hempe, of no lesse goodnesse to make tuckelings for  
 shippes then our woodes: Other some brought breade, and some *Gossampine* cotton. And  
 so eery of them payde tribute with such commodities as their countries brought forth. At  
 the length they came to the *kinges* mansion place of *Xaragua*. Before they entred into the  
 palace, a great multitude of the *kinges* seruantes and subiectes resorted to the court, hono-  
 rably (after their maner) to receiue their king *Beuchius Anacauchoa*, with the strangers  
 which he brought with him to see the magnificence of his court. But now shall you heare  
 howe they were entertained. Among other triumphes & sightes, two are especially to be  
 noted:

The kinges  
wines

noted: First, there mette them a companie of xxx. women, beeing all the kinges wiues and concubines, bearing in their handes branches of date trees, singing and dauncing: they were all naked, sauing that their priue partes were covered with breeches of Gossampine cotton: but the virgins, hauing their haire hanging downe about their shoulders, tyed aboute the foreheads with a fillet, were vtterly naked. They affirme, that their faces, breasts, pappes, hands, and other parts of their bodie, were exceedinge smooth, and well proportioned, but somewhat inclining to a lovely broune. They supposed that they had seene those most beautifull Dryades, or the native nymphes or fayrics\* of the fountaines whereof the antiques spake so much. The branches of date trees which they bore in their right handes when they daunced, they deliuered to the Licutenant, with lowlie courtesie and smiling countenance. Thus entring into the kinges house, they founde a delicate supper prepared for them, after their manner. When they were well refreshed with meate, the nyght drawing on, they were brought by the kinges officers, euery man to his lodging, according to his degree, in certaine of their houses about the pallace, where they rested them in hanging beds, after the maner of the countrey, whereof we haue spoken more largely in another place.

W<sup>ch</sup>. treasured  
wines

Dryades

Aperle pastime

The day following, they brought our men to their common hall, into the which they come together as often as they make any notable games or triumphes, as we haue sayde before. Heere after many daunsynges, singinges, maskinges, runnings, wrestlings, and other trying of maistryes, sodainly there appeared in a large plaine neere vnto the hal, two great armies of men of warre, which the king for his pastime had caused to bee prepared, as the Spaniards vse the play with reedes, which they call Jaga de Canas. As the armies drew neere together, they assayed the one the other as fiercely, as if mortall enemies with their banners spicade, should fight for their goods, their landes, their liues, their libertie, their countrey, their wiues and their children, so that within the moment of an houre, foure men were alayne, and many wounded. The battayle also should haue continued longer, if the king had not, at the request of our men caused them to cease. The thirde day, the Licutenant counsaying the King to sowe more plentie of gossampine vpon the bankes neere vnto the waters side, that they might the better paye their tribute priuately, according to the multitude of their houses, hee prepared to Isabella, to visite the sicke menne which hee hadde left there, and also to see howe his woorkes went forwarde. In the time of his absence, xxx. of his menne were consumed with diuerse diseases. Wherefore being sore troubled in his minde, and in manner at his wittes ende, what he were best to doe, for as much as hee wanted all things necessarie, as well to restore them to health which were yet acersed, as also vitayles to maintaine the whole multitude, where as there was yet no shippe come from Spayne: at the length, hee determined to sende abroade the sicke men here and there to sundry Illegions of the Ilande, and to the castelles which they had crected in the same.

Feere men  
slays in sport

Provision for  
sickned men

For directly from the citie of Isabella to saint Dominickes towre, that is, from the North to the South, through the Ilande, they had builded thus many Castles. First xxxvi. myles distant from Isabella, they builded the Castell of Sperantia. From Sperantia xxv. myles, was the Castell of Saint Katharine. From Saint Katharines xx. myles, was Saint James tower. Other xx. myles from Saint James tower, was a stronger fortress: then any of the other, which they called the towre of Conceptio, which he made the stronger, because it was situate at the rootes of the golden mountaynes of Cibana, in the great and large playne, so fruitfull and well inhabited as we haue before described. Hee builded also another in the mydde way betwene the tower of Conception, & saint Dominickes tower, the which also was stronger then the tower of Conception, because it was within the lymittes of a great King, hauing vnder his dominion siue thousand men, whose chiefe citie and heade of the Realme, being called Bonaqua, he willed that the Castel should also be called after the same name. Therefore leauing the sicke men in these Castels, and other of the Iland houses neere vnto the same, hee himselfe repayred to Saint Dominickes, exacting trybutes of all the kinges which were in his way. When hee had taryed there a fewe dayes, there was a rumour spreade, that all the kinges about the borders of the towre of Conception, hadde conspired

The castles or  
towers of His  
pania

The golden  
mountaynes of  
Cibana

conspired

conspired with desperate myndes to rebell against the Spanyardes. When the Lieutenant was certified hereof, hee tooke his iourney towards them immediately, not being discouraged eyther by the length of the way, or feebleness of his souldiers, being in manner fore-wearied with traayle. As hee drewe nere vnto them, he hadde aduertisement that king Guarionexius was chosen by other Princes to beo the Capitayne of this rebellion, and that hee was enforced thereto halfe vnywilling, being seduced by persuasions and pronouca-tions: the which is more likely to be true, for that hee hadde before hadde experience of the power and policie of our men. They came to geather at a day appoynted, accompanied with xv. thousande men, armed after their manner, once againe to proue the fortune of warre. Here the Lieutenant, consulting with the Captaine of the fortresse and the other souldiers of whom he had the conduct, determined to sette vpon them vnywares in their owne houses, before they coulde prepare their armes. He sent forth therefore to euery king a Centurion, that is, a captayne of a hundred, which were commanded vpon a sudden to inuade their houses in the night, and to take them sleeping, before the people (being scattered here and there) might assemble together. Thus secretly entering into their villages, not fortified with walles, trenches, or bulwarkes, they broake in vpon them, tooke them, bound them, and led away euery man his prisoner according as they were commanded. The Lieutenant himselfe with his hundred men, assayed king Guarionexius as the worthier personage, whom he tooke prisoner, as did the other captaines their kings, and at the same houre appoynted. Fourteene of them were brought the same night to the tower of Conception. Shortly after, when he had put to death two of the Kings which were the chiefe authors of this new reuolte, and had suborned Guarionexius and the other kings to attempt the same, least the people for some of their kings shoulde neglect or forsake their country, which thing might haue bin great incommoditie to our men, who by the increase of their seedes and fruites were often times ayded, he freely pardoned and dismissed Guarionexius and the other kings, the people in the meane time flocking together about the tower, to the number of fise thousande without weapons, with pitifull hauling for the deliuerance of their kings. The ayre thundered, & the earth trembled through the vehemencie of their outcry. The Lieutenant warned Guarionexius and the other kings, with threatenings, with rewardes, and with promises, neuer hereafter to attempt any such thing: Then Guarionexius made an oration to the people, of the great power of our men, of their clemencie toward offenders, & liberalitie to suche as remaine faithfull, desiring them to quiet their myndes, and from thenceforth neither indeed nor thought to enterpryse any thing against the Christians, but to obey and serue them, except they would daily bring themselves into further calamities. When the oration was finished, they took him vpp, and set him on their shoulders, and so carryed him home to his owne pallace: and by this meanes, this Region was pacified for a while. But our menne, with heauie countenance wandered vp and downe, as desolate in a strange country, lacking victuals, and worne out of apparell, whereas xv. monethes were nowe passed since the Admiralls departure, daryng which time, they coulde heare nothing out of Spayne. The Lieutenant comforted them all that hee coulde with fayre words and promises. In the meane time, Beuchius Anacaucoa (the king of the West partes of the Region of Xaragua (of whome wee spake before) sent messengers to the Lieutenant, to signifie vnto him, that hee had in a readines the gossamper cotton, and such other things as he willed him to prepare for the payment of his tribute. Where-upon the Lieutenant tooke his iourney thither, and was honorably receiued of the king, and his sister, sometime the wife of Canaboa the king of Cibana, bearing no lesse rule in the gouernance of her brothers kingdome, then he himselfe: For they affirmed her to bee a wise woman, of good maners, & pleasant in companie. She earnestly perswaded her brother, by the example of her husband, to loue & obey the Christians. This woman was called Anacona. Hee soude in the palace of Beuchius Anacaucoa, xxxii. kings, which had brought their tributes with them, and abode his coming. They brought with them also, beside their tribute assigned them farther to demerite the fauour of our men, great plenty of vitails, as both kindes of bread, conies, and fishes, already dried, because they should

The king  
wasAs some of  
the thousand  
Barbarians.The kings are  
taken prisoners.King Guarionexius  
receives his  
share.Lacke of  
vittles.

xxxii. kings.

*Serpentes extra.* should not putrifie: Serpentes also of that kinde which wee sayde to be esteemed among them as most delicate meat, & like vnto Crocodiles sauing in bignesse. These Serpentes they eat Iuannas, which our men learned (somwhat too late) to haue bin engendered in the Ilande: For vnto that day, none of them durst aduenture to tast of them, by reason of their horrible deformity and lothsomnes. Yet the Lieutenant, being entised by the pleasantnes of the kinges sister, determined to tast of the Serpentes. But when hee felt the fleshe thereof to bee so delicate to his tongue, hee fel to amaine without all feare: the which thing his companions perceiuing, were not behinde him in greedynesse insomuch that they had now none other talke, then of the sweetnesse of these serpentes, which they affirme to be of more pleasaunte taste, then eyther our Phesantes or Parriches: but they loose their taste, except they be prepared after a certaine fashion, as doe Peacockes and Phesantes; except they be enterlarded before they be roasted. They prepare them therefore after this manner: First, taking out their bowelles, euen from the throte to the thyghes, they washe and rubbe their bodies verie cleaue both within & without, then rolling them together on a circle, inuolued after the manner of a sleeping snake, they thrust them into a pot, of no bigger capacitie then to hold them only this done, putting a little water vnto them, with a portion of the Ilande Pepper, they seethe them with a soft fire of sweete wood, and such as maketh no great smoake: Of the fat of them being thus sodde, is made an exceeding pleasant broth or pottage. They say also, that there is no meate to be compared to the egges of these serpentes, which they vse to seethe by themselves: they are good to bee eaten as soone as they are sodde, and may also be reserued many dayes after. But hauing sayde thus much of their entertainment and dayntie fare, let vs nowe speak of other matters. When the Lieutenant had filled one of the Ilande houses with the Gosampine cotton which he had receiued for tribute, the kinges promised furthermore to giue him as much of their bread as he would demaunde: he gaue them hartie thanks, & gently accepted their friendly proffer. In the meane time, whyle this bread was a gathering in sundry regions, to be brought to the palace of Beuchius Anacauchoa king of Xaragua, he sent messengers to Isabella, for one of the two Carauelles whiche were lately made there, intending to sende the same thither againe laden with bread. The Mariners glad of these tydings, sayled about the Ilande, and in shorte space brought the shippe to the coastes of Xaragua. The sister of king Beuchius Anacauchoa, that wise and pleasaunt woman Anacaona (the wife sometime of Caunaboa the king of the golden house of the mountaynes of Cibana, whose husband died in the way when he shoulde haue bene caryed into Spayne) when she heard say that our shyppe was arriued on the shore of her natie cuntry, perwaded the king her brother, that they both might goe together to see it; for the place where the shyppe lay was not paste. vi. myles distant from Xaragua. They rested all night in the midway, in a certaine village in the which was the treasure or iewel house of Anacaona. Her treasure was neither golde, silver, or pretious stones, but only thinges necessary to be vsed, as chayres, stools, settels, dishes, potingers, pottes, panes, basons, treyes, and such other household stuffe and instrumentes, workemanly made of a certaine blacke and harde shying wood, which that excellent learned phisition Iohn baptist Elisius, affirmeth to be Hebene. Whatsoever portion of wit nature hath giuen to the inhabitantes of these Ilandes the same doth moite appeare in these kinde of workes, in which they shewe great art and cunning, but those which this woman had were made in the Iland of Guanabba, situate in the mouth of the West side of Hispaniola: In these they graue the liuely images of such phantasies as they suppose they see walke by night, which the antiques called Lemures: Also the images of men, serpents, beastes & what so euer other thing they haue once seene. What would you thinke (moste noble prince) that they could do, if they had the vse of Iron and Steele? For they onely first make these soft in the fire, & afterwarde make them holowe and carue them with a certaine stone which they find in the riuers. Of stools and chayres, shee gaue the Lieutenaint fourteene, and of vesselles pertaining to the table and kitchen, shee gaue him threescore, some of wood, and some of earth, also gossampine cotton readie spunne foure great buttones of exceeding weight. The day following when they came to the

The dressing of Serpentes to be extra.

Serpentes eggs extra.

Gossampine cotton.

Queene Anacaona.

The treasure of Queene Anacaona.

Hebene wood.

The Ilande of Guanabba.

Cunning Artificers.

A stone in the streete of Iron.

the sea side where was an other village of the kinges; the Lieutenant commanded the shippes boat to be brought to the shore. The king also had prepared two Canoes, painted after their manner one for himselfe and certayne of his gentelmen; an other for his sister Anacozza and her waiting women; but Anacozza desired to be carried in the shippes boat with the Lieutenant. When they nowe approached neare unto the shippe, certein great peeces of ordinance were discharged of purpose; the sea was filled with thunder; and the ayre with smoke, they trembled and quaked for feare, supposing that the frame of the world had bene in danger of falling; but when they sawe the Lieutenant laugh, and jocke cheerefully on them, they called againe their spirits; and when they yet drew neare to the ship, and heard the noises of the kettles, shalmes; and drummes; they were wonderfully astonished at the sweete harmony thereof. Entying into the shippe; and beholding the fore-ship; and the sterne, the toppes castel, the mast, the hatches, the rabbins; the keele, and the ticklynges; the brother fixing his eyes on the sister, and the sister on the brother, they were both as it were dumme and amazed and wiste not what to say for too much wondering. While beholding these things, they wandered vp and downe the shippe, the Lieutenant commanded the ankens to be loosed, and the stales to be hoysed vp. Then were they further astonished; when they sawe so great a moule to moue as it were by it selfe, without ones; & without the force of man; for there arose from the earth such a tryde, as a man would have wished for of purpose: Yet furthermore, when they perceived the shippe; to moue sometime forward, and sometime backward, sometime toward the right hand, and sometime towards the left, and that with one wind and in manner at one instant, they were at their wittes end for too much admiration! These things finished; and the shippes laden with bread, and such other rewards, they being also recompensed with other of our things, he dismissed not onely the king Beuchon Anacozza and his sister, but likewise all their seruantes and women, replenished with ioy and wondering. After this, he himselfe tooke his iorney by foote with his souldiers to the citie of Sabella, where hee was advertised that one Roldanus Ximenez, a naughty fellow (whom before, being his seruant, he had preferred to be a captainne of the miners and labourers, and after made him a Iudice in causes of controversie) had vsed himselfe outrageously, and had maliciously mynded against him, and further, the cause of much mischief in his absence. For King Guzmanexius (who a while beefore was pardoned of his former rebellions, & perswaded the people to obey the Spaniards) was by his naughty vsage, and such other, as were confedered with him, so accessed to reuenge the iniuries whiche they susteyned at his handes, beside the abominable acts whiche they, following onely the law of nature, abhorred to admit, that he, with his family, families, and souldiers, of desperate mainde, fledde to the mountaynes, being distant from Sabella onely tenne leagues westwarde, towards the North side of the sea: These mountaynes, and also the inhabitants of the same, they call by one name, Ciguains. The great king of all the kinges and Regions of these mountaynes is called Maibonexius, and his court or palace is named Capromus: the mountaynes are rough, high, and such as no manne can passe to the toppes thereof, they are also bending, and haue their corners reaching downe to the sea. Betweene both the corners of the mountaynes, is there a great playne, by the which many rivers fall from the mountaynes into the sea, the people are very fierce and warlike men, hauing their originall of the Canibales: for when they descende from the mountaynes to the playnes, to keepe warre with their borderers, they eat all such as they kill: Guaronexius therefore, fleeing to the king of these mountaynes, gaue him many presentes of such thinges as are wanting in his country, therewith declaring how vilely, villainously, and violently hee had bene vsed of our men, with whom he could nothing preuaile, neither by faire meanes, nor by foule; neither by humilty, nor by stoutnes; and that to be the cause of his resorting to him at that time, most humbly desiring him to be his defence against the oppressions of such mischieuous people. Maibonexius hereupon, made him promise to ayde and helpe him against the Christians all that he might. The Lieutenant therefore made hast to the forresse of Conception, whither, as soon as hee was come, hee sent for Roldanus Ximenez, who with such as followed him,

A vessel intru-  
ness.Entrance  
through admira-  
tion.The language  
they use is  
of a world with  
out.

Ciguains.

lay in certaine of the land villages, xii. myles distant from the fortresse. At his coming, the Licutenant asked him what all these stirres and tumultes meant? Hee answered without abashment, Your brother the Admirall hath to do therewith, and shall aunswere for the same before the king, for we perceiue that the king hath so put him in trust, that he hath no regard to vs: here wee perish for hunger, while wee followe you, and are drynen to seeke our vnhappie food in the desertes: Your brother also assigned mee assistant with you in gouerning the lande. Wherefore sith you haue no more respect vnto vs, we are determined no longer to bee vnder your obedience. When Roldanus had spoken these wordes, and such other, the Licutenant woulde haue layde handes on him, but he escaped his fingers, and fledde to the West partes of the region of Xaragua, hauing with him a trayne of threescore and ten men, which were of his confederacie. Here this filthy sinke of rebelles thus conspired, playde their vages, and liued with loose bridles in all kinde of mischief, robbing the people, spoyling the countrey, and ramishing both wytes and virgins. Whyke these things were doing in the lande, the Admirall had eight shippes appoynted him by the king, of the which hee sent two laden with victualles, from Cales or Gates of Hercules pylers, directly to the Licutenant his brother. These shippes by chance arrived first on the side of the lande where Roldanus Ximenuus ranged with his companions. Roldanus in shorte time hadde seduced them, promising them in the steede of mattocks, wenches pappes: for labour, pleasure: for hunger, abundance: and for wearynesse and watching; sleepe & quietnesse. Guarionexius in the meane time assembled a power of his friends and confederates, & came oftentimes downe into the plaine, and slue as manie of the Christian men, as hee coulde meete conveniently, and also of the lande menne which were their friends, waisting their grounde, destroying their seedes, and spoyling their vylages. But Roldanus and his adherents, albeit they had knowledge that the Admirall woulde shortly come, yet feared they no thing, because they had seduced the newe men which came, in the first shippes. While the Licutenant was thus tossed in the myddest of these stormes, in the meane time his brother the Admirall set forwarde from the coastes of Spayne: but not directly to Hispaniola, for he turned more towards the South. In the which voyage, what he did, what coastes, both of the lande and sea he compassed, and what newe regions hee discovered, wee will first declare: for to what ende and conclusion the sayd tumultes and seditions came, we will expresse in the ende of the booke following. Thus fare ye well.

The sixth booke of the first Decade, to Lodouike Cardinal of Aragonie.

Colonus the Admirall, the thirde day of the Calendes of Iune, in the yere of Christe 1498. hoysed vp his sayles in the halen of the towne Barramedalis, not farr distant from Cales, & set forward on his voyage with eight ships laden with victualles and other necessaries. Hee diuered from his accustomed rote, which was by the landes of Canarie, by reason of certaine Frenchmen pyrates and roners on the sea, which lay in the right way to meete with him. In the way from Cales to the landes of Canarie, about fourescore and tenne myles toward the left hand, is the land of Madera, more southward then the city of Cimbe by foure degrees, for the pole Arctike is eleuate to Cimbe xxxvi. degrees, but to this lande (as the Mariners say) onely xxxii. He sayled therefore first to Madera, and sending from thence directly to Hispaniola the residue of the shippes laden with victualles and other necessaries, hee himselfe with one shippe with deckes, and two Marchant Caruelles, coasted toward the South to come to the Equinoctiall line, and so forth to followe the tracte of the same toward the West, to the intent to search the natures of such places as hee coulde finde vnder or near vnto the same, leaning Hispaniola on the North side on his right hande. In the middle of this race, Iye xiii. landes of the Portugales, which were in olde time called Hesperides, and are nowe called Caput Viride, or Caboerde, these are situate in the sea, right ower against the inuer partes of Ethiope, Westward to two dayes sayling. One of these the Portugales call Bonauista. With the Snalles, or rather the Tortoyes of this lande, many leprous men are healed and cleansed of their leprosie. Departing sodainly from hence, by reason of the contagiousnesse of the aire, he sayled. CCCCLxxx. myles toward the West Southwest,

Licutenant  
is Iberic.

Hercules pyl-  
lers.

A violent per-  
version.

The kin of  
Guarionexius.

The third voyage  
of Colonus the  
Admirall.

French men  
pyrates.

The Road of  
Madera.

The King of the  
Isopes.

Southwest, which is in the middelt betweene the West and the South. There was he so vexed with maladies and heate (for it was in the moneth of Iune) that his ships were almost set on fire: The hoopses of his barrels cracked and brake, and the fresh water ranne out: the men also complained that they were not able to abide that extremitie of heat. Here the North pole was eleuate onely .v. degrees from the Horizontall. For the space of viii. dayes, in the which he suffered these extremities, onely the first day was fayre, but all the other, cloudy and raynye, yet neuerthelesse feruent hotte: Wherefore it ofentimes repented him not a litle, that euer he tooke that way. Being tossed in these dangers and vexations eyght continuall dayes, at the length an Eastsoutheast wynde arose, and gaue a prosperous blaste to his sayles. Which wynde following directly towards the West, he founde the starres out that paralel placed in other order, and other kinde of ayre, as the Admirall himselfe tolde me. And they all affirme, that within three dayes sayling, they founde most temperate and pleasant ayre. The Admirall also affirmeth, that from the clime of the great heat & vnhol- some ayre, het euer ascended by the backe of the sea, as it were by a high mountayne to- wards heauen, yet in all this tyme, could he not once see any land: But at the length, the day before the Calendes of Iuly, the watchman looking forth of the top castell of the greatest ship, cried out aloude for ioy that he espied three exceeding high mountaines, exhorting his fellows to be of good cheare, & to put away all pensiuenes: for they were very heauie and sorrowfull, aswell for the griefe which they susteyned by reason of the intollerable heate, as also that their fresh water fayled them, which ranne out at the ryftes of the barrels, caused by extreame heate, as we haue said. Thus being well comforted, they drew to the land, but at their first approach they could not arryue by reasō of the shalownes of the sea neere the shore, yet seeing out of their shippes, they might well perceiue that the region was in- habited, and well cultured, for they sawe very faire gardenes, and pleasant meadowes: from the trees and herbes whereof, when the morning dewes beeganne to rise, there proceeded manie sweete sauours. Twentie myles distant from hence, they chaunced into a haven, very apte to harborowe shippes but it had no ryuer running into it. Sayling on yet somewhat further, he found at the length a commodious haven, wherein he might repayre his shippes, and make prouision of freshe water and fael. Arenalís calleth this land Puta. They found no houses neere vnto the haues, but innumerable steppes of certaine wild beastes feete, of the which they founde one deade, much like a goate. The day following, they sawe a Canoa coming a farr off, hauing in it foure and twenty young men of goodly corporature and high stature, all armed with targets, bowes and arrows: the hayre of their heades was long and playne, and cutte on the forehead much after the manner of the Spanyardes, their priuite partes were covered with fyllets of Gossampine cotton, of sundry colours entelaced, & were beside all ouer naked. Here the Admirall, considering with himselfe the corporature of this people, and nature of the land, he beleued the same to be so much the neerer heauen, then other regions of the same paralel, & further remoued from the grosse vapours of the vales, & marshes, howe much the highest toppes of the biggest mountaynes are distant from the deepe vales. For he earnestly affirmeth, that in all that nauigation, he neuer went out of the paralels of Ethiope: So great difference is there betweene the nature of the inhabitantes, and of the soyles of diuers regions, all vnder one clime or paralel, as is to see betweene the people and regions beeing in the firme lande of Ethiope, and them of the landes vnder the same clime, hauing the pole starre eleuate in the same degree. For the Ethiopians are all blacke, hauing their hayre curled, more like wool then haire: but these people of the lande of Puta (being as I haue sayde vnder the clime of Ethiope) are whyte, with long hayre, and of yelow colour. Wherefore it is apparant, the cause of this so great difference, to be rather by the dispositiō of the earth, then constitution of heauen. For wee knowe that yee falleth on the mountaynes of the Equinoctiall, or burnt lynes, and the same to endure there continually: wee knowe likewise, that the inhabitantes of the regions farr distant from that line toward the North, are molested with great heate. The Admirall, that he might assure the young men to him with gentleness, shewed them looking glasses, fayre and bright vessels of copper, haukes belles, and such other things vnknowne to them. But the more they were called, so

Conspicuous syre  
and extreme  
heate.

The land of  
Puta.

People of coold  
corporature and  
long haire were  
the Equinoctiall.

The higher, the  
colder.

much the more they suspected craft and deceyt, and fledde backward: Yet did they with their great admiration behold our menne and thoir things, but still hauing their ores in their hands ready to flee. When the Admirall sawe that he could by no meanes allure them by giftes, hee thought to proue what hee could doe with muscicall instrumentes, and therefore commaunded that they which were in the greatest ship, should play on their drummes and shawlnes. But the young man supposing this to be a token of battayle, left their ores, & in the twinkling of an eye hadde their arrowes in their bowes, and their targets on their armes: and thus directing their arrowes towardes our men, stoode in expectation to know what this noyse might meane. Our menne likewise preparing their bowes and arrowes, approached towardes them by litle and litle. But they departing from the Admirals shippe, and trusting to the dexteritie of their ores, came so neere one of the lesse shippes, that one of them plucked the cloke from the gouernour of the shippe, and as well as they could by signes required him to come alande, promising faith that they would commune with him of peace. But when they sawe him goe to the Admirals ship, whither hee went to aske leaue that he might commune with them, suspecting heereby some further deceit, they leapt immediately into the Canoes, and fledde as swift as the winde, so that to concludre, they could by no meanes be allured to familiarity: Wherefore the Admirall thought it not conuenient to bestow any long time there at this voyage. No great space from this lande, euer towarde the West, the Admirall saith he found so outrageous a fall of water, running with such a violence from the East to the West, that it was nothing inferior to a mightie streame falling from high mountaynes. Hee also confessed, that since the first day that euer hee knewe what the sea meant, hee was neuer in such feare. Proceeding yet somewhat further in this dangerous voyage, hee founde certaine goulfes of eight myles, as it had bin the entrance of some great haueu, into the which the sayde violent streames did fall. These goulfes or streyghtes hee called Os Draconis, that is, the Dragones mouth: and the land directly ouer against the same, hee called Margarita. Out of these strayghtes, issued no lesse force of frosh water, whiche encountering with the salt, dyd striue to passe soorth, so that betweene both the waters, was no small conflict: But entering into the goulfe, at the length hee founde the water thereof very fresh and good to drinke. The Admirall himselfe, and they which were his companions in this voyage, being men of good credite, and perceiuing my diligence in searching for these matters, tolde mee yet of a greater thing, that is, that for the space of xxvi. leagues, amountyng to a hundredth and foure myles, hee sayled euer by fresh water, insomuch that the further hee proceeded, especially towarde the West, hee affirmed the water to bee the fresher. After this, hee came to a high mountaine inhabited onely with Monkeyes or Marmasets, on that parte towarde the East: For that side was rough with rockie and stonie mountaynes, and therefore not inhabited with men. Yet they that went alande to searche the country, founde neere vnto the sea, manie fayre fieldes, well tilled and sowed, but no people, nor yet houses or cotages: Perhaps they were gone further into the country, to sowe their corne and applye their husbandrie, as we often see our husbandemen to leaue their stations and villages for the same purpose. In the West side of that mountaine, they espied a large playne, whither they made hast, and cast anker in the broad riuier. As soone as the inhabitants had knowledge that a strange nation was arryued in their coastes, they came flocking without all feare to see our men. Wee vnderstoode by their signes and poyntinges, that this Region was called Paria, and that it was very large: insomuch that the further it reacheth toward the West, to bee so much the better inhabited and replenished with people. The Admirall therefore, taking into his ship foure of the men of that lande, searched the West partes of the same. By the temperatenes of the aire, the pleasantnes of the ground, and the multitude of people which they sawe daily more & more as they sayled, they conjectured that these things portended some great matter: as indeede their opinion failed them not, as we will further declare in his place. The sunne not yet risen, but beginning euen now to rise, being one day allured by the pleasantnes of the place, and sweete sauitours which breathed from the lande to the shippes, they went alande: Here they found a greater multitude of people, then in any other place. As our men approached towardes them, there came

Muscicall instrumentes.

The violent course of the water from the East to the West.

The gulf called Os Draconis.

A sea of fresh water.

Marmasets, Monkeyes.

The fayre and large regions of Paria.

Humane people.

came certaine messengers from their Cacici, that is, the kings of the countrey, to desire the Admirall in the name of their Princes to come to their palaces without feare, and that they and all theirs should be at his commaundement. When the Admirall hadde thanked them, and made his excuse for that time, there came innumerable people with their boates to the shippes, hauyng for the most parte cheyues about their neckes, garlandes on their heades, and bracelettes on their armes of pearle of India, and that so commonly, that our women in playes and triumphes, haue not greater plenty of stones of glasse and crystal in their garlandes, crownes, girdels, and such other tyrements. Being asked where they gathered them, they pointed to the next shore by the sea banke. They signified also, by certayne scornfull gestures which they made with their mouthes and handes, that they nothing esteemed pearles. Taking also baskettes in their handes they made signes that the same might bee filled with them in shorte space. But because the corne wherewith his shippes were laden to be caryed into Hispaniola, had taken hurt by reason of the salt water, he determined to deferre this marte to a more conuenient time: Yet he sent to land two of the ship boates laden with men, to the intent to fetch some garlands of pearles for exchange of our things, and so somewhat to search the nature of the Region, and disposition of the people. They enterdayned our men gently, and came flocking to them by heapes, as it had bene to beholde some strange monsters. First there came to meete our men, two men of grauite, whome the multitude followed: One of these was well in age, and the other but young. They thinke it was the father, with his sonne which should succeed him. When the one had saluted and embraced the other, they brought our menne into a certaine round house, nere vnto the which was a great court. Hither were brought many chayres and stooles made of a certaine blacke wood, and very cunningly wrought. After that our men and their Princes were sette, their wayting men came in laden, some with sundry delicate dyshes, and some with wyne: But their meate, was onely fruites, and those of diuers kinds, and vterly vnknowen to vs. Their wyne was both white and redde, not made of grapes, but of the lycour of dyuers fruites, and very pleasaunte in drinking. After this banquette made in the olde mans house, the young man brought them to his tabernacle or mansion place, where was a great companie both of men and women, but they stood disceuered the one from the other. They are white, euen as our men are, sauing such as are much conuerted in the sunne. They are also very gentle, and full of humanitic toward strangers. They couer their priuie partes with Gosampine cotton, wrought with sundry colours, and are beside all naked. There was fewe, or none, that had not eyther a collar, a chayne, or a bracelet of golde and pearles, and many had all. Being asked where they had that golde, they poynted to certaine mountaines, seeming with their countenance to dissuade our menne from going thither: For putting their armes in their mouthes, and grynning as though they bytte the same, still poynting to the mountaines, they seemed to insinuate that menne were eate there: but whether they meant by the Canibales, or wilde beastes, our men coulde not well perceiue. They tooke it exceeding grieuously, that they coulde neither vnderstande our men, nor our men them. When they which were sent to land, were returned to the shippes about three of the cloeke at afternoone the same day, bringing with them certayne garlandes, and collers of pearles, they loosed their ankers to departe, minding to come againe shortly, when all things were sette in good order in Hispaniola: but hee was preuented by another, which defeated him of the rewarde of his trauaile. Hee was also hindered at this time by reason of the shalownesse of the sea, & violent course of the water, which with continuall toying, bruised the greatest shippe so often as any great gale of wind arose. To auoide the dangers of suche shalowe places and shelves, hee euer sent one of the smallest Carauelles before to try the way with sounding, and the biggest shippes followed behinde. The Regions being in the large prouince of Paria, for the space of CCxxx. myles, are called of the inhabitants, Cumana, & Manacapan: from these regions distant xl. leagues, is there an other region called Curiana. When he had thus passed ouer this long tract of sea, supposing still that it had bin an land, & doubting that he might passe by the West to the North directly to Hispaniola, he chanced into a ryuer of xxx. cubites depth, and of such breadth as hath not lightly bene heard of.

Chayres and  
stooles of the  
best.

White men  
were the  
Españoles.

Shalownesse of  
the sea.

The use of  
Caruells or  
Briscons.

A riuer of more  
very low depth  
had bene heard of.

For hee affirmeth it to bee xxviii. leagues. A little farther towards the West, yet some what more southward, as the bendyng of the shore required, he entered into a sea full of herbes or weeds. The seeds of the herbes which growe on the water, are much like the berries of the tree called Lentiscus, which beareth the sweete gumme called Mastix: they growe so thicke, that they sometimes in maner stayed the shippes. The Admirall reported, that here there is not one day throughout all the yeere much longer or shorter then an other, and that the North pole is here eleuate onely five degrees as at Paria, in whose tracte all these coastes lye. He also declared certayne thinges as concerning the varietie of the North pole: the which because they seeme contrary to th'opinions of all the Astronomers, I will touche them but with a drye foote, as sayth the proverbe. But it is well known (most noble prince) that which wee call the pole starre, or North starre (called of the Italians Tramontana) is not the very poynt of the pole Arctike, vpon the which the axes or extremities of heavens are turned about. The which thing may well be proved, if when the starres first appeare, you behold the pole starre through any narrow hole: For so, applying your instrument therto in the morning, somewhat before the day spring haue blemished their light, if then you looke through the same hole, you shall perceiue it to be moued from the place where you sawe it first. But how it cometh to passe, that at the beginning of the euenyng twilight, it is eleuate in that Region onely five degrees in the month of Iune, and in the morning twilight to be eleuate. xv. degrees by the same quadrans, I doe not vnderstand, nor yet doe the reasons which hee bryngeth, in any poynt satisfie me. For he sayeth that he hereby coniectured, that the earth is not perfectly round, but that when it was created, there was a certayne heape rayzed thereon, much higher then the other partes of the same. So that (as he sayth) it is not rounde after the forme of an apple or a bal (as other thinke) but rather like a pearre as it hangeth on the tree, and that Paria is the Region which possesseth the supermiuent or highest part thereof nearest vnto heauen: In so much that he earnestly contendeth the earthly Paradise to be situate in the toppes of those three hilles, which we sayde before, that the watchman saw out of the toppes castel of the shippe, and that the outrageous streames of the freshe waters which so violently issue out of the sayd gulfes, and striue so with the salt water, fall headlong from the tops of the said mountaines: But of this matter, it shall suffice to haue said this much. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the hyatorie from which wee haue digressed. When he perceiued himselfe to be thus inwrapped in so great a gulf beyond his expectation, so that he had now no hope to finde any passage toward the North, whereby he might sayle directly to Hispaniola, he was enforced to turne backe the same way by the which he came, and directed his voyage to Hispaniola by the North of that land lying toward the East. They which afterwaits searched this land more curiously, will it to be parte of the continent or firme land of India, and not of Cuba as the Admirall supposed: For there are many which affirme that they haue sayled round about Cuba. But whether it be so or not, or whether enuying the good fortune of this man, they seeke occasion of quarrelling against him, I can not iudge: But time shall speake, which is time appointed, reuealeth both truth & falsehood. But whether Paria be continent or not, the Admirall doth not much contend, but hee supposeth it to be continent: He also affirmeth that Paria is more southward then Hispaniola by eght hundred fiftiescore and two myles. At the length he came to Hispaniola (to see his soldiers which he left with his brethren) the third day of the calendes of September, in the yeare. 1493, but (as often times chaunceth in humane thinges) among his so many prosperous, pleasant, and luckie saylures, fortune mingled some seedes of wormewood, and corrupted his pure corne with the malicious weedes of cockle.

¶ The seauenth booke of the first decade, to the same Lodowike Cardinall, &c.

WHEN the Admirall was nowe come to the land of Hispaniola, hee founde all thinges confounded and out of order. For Roldanus (of whom we spake before) refused in his absence to obey his brother, trusting to the multitude of such as were confedered with him, and not onely behoued himselfe proudly against the Admiralls brother and Lieutenant, sometime his maister, but also sent letters to his reproch to the Kyng of Spayne therein accusyng

The Spaniards  
rebelles to the Ad-  
miralls absence.

The eleuation of  
the Pole at  
Paria.

How a secret  
is concerning  
the Pole starre.

An experiment.

A mysterious  
secret.

Time reuealeth  
all things.

both

both the brethren, laying haynoys matters to their charge. But the Admirall agayne sent messengers to the King, whiche might informe him of their rebellion, instantly desiring his grace to sende hym a newe supplye of menne, whereby he might suppress their licentiousnes, and punish them for their mischieuous actes. They accuse the Admirall and his brother to be vniust menne, cruell enemies, and shedders of the Spanyshe bloode, declaring that vpon every light occasion they would racke them, hang them, and head them, and that they tooke pleasure therein, and that they departed from them as from cruell tyrannates and wilde bestes reioycing in bloode, also the kinges enemies: affirming likewise, that they well perceived their intent to be none other then to vsurpe the empire of the Ilands, which thing (they sayde) they suspected by a thousande coniectures, and especially in that they would permit none to resorte to the golde mynes, but onely such as were their familiars. The Admirall on the contrary part, when hee desired ayde of the king to infringe their insolencie, anonched that all those his accusers, which had aduised such lyes against him, were noughtie fellows, abhominable knaues and vilands, theeses, and haules, ruffians, adulterers, & rauishers of women, false periured vagaboundes, and such as had bin eyther conuict in prysons, or fledde for feare of iudgement: so escaping punishment, but not leauing vice, wherein they still contynned, and brought the same with them to the Iland. liuing there in like maner as before, in theft, lechery, & all kindes of mischiefe, and so giuing to idleness and sleepe, that whereas they were brought thither for myners, labourers, & scullians, they would not now goe one furlong from their houses, except they were borne on mens backs, like vnto them which in olde tyme were called Ediles Curules: For, to this office they put the miserable Iland men whom they handled most cruelly. For least their hands shoulde discontinue from shedding of blood, and the better to try their strength and manhood, they used now & then for their pastime, to strue among themselies, & proue who could most cleanly with his sworde at one stroke strike of the heade of an innocent: So that hee which coulde with mooste agilitie make the head of one of those poore wretches to flee quite and cleane from the body to the grounde at one stroke, hee was the best man, and counted most honourable. These thinges, and many such other, the one of them laid to the others charge before the king. While these thinges were doing, the Admirall sent his brother the Lieutenant with an armie of fourscore and tenne footemen, and a fewe horsemen (with three thousande of the Iland men which were mortall enemies to the Ciguaniens) to meeete the people of Ciguana, with King Guariouexius their grande capitayne, who hadde doone much mischiefe to our menne, and such as fauoured them. Therefore when the Lieutenant had conducted his army to the banks of a certaine great ryuer running by the playne, which wee sayde before to lye betwene the corners of the mountaynes of Ciguana and the sea, he found two scoutes of his enemies lurking in certeyne bushes, whereof the one, casting himselfe headlong into the sea, escaped, and by the mouth of the ryuer swamme ouer to his companions: the other being taken, declared that in the woode on the other side the ryuer, there lay in campe sixe thousande Ciguaniens ready, vnwares to seeale our men passing by. Wherefore the Lieutenant finding a shalow place where he might passe ouer, he with his whole armie entred into the ryuer, the which thing when the Ciguaniens had espied, they came running out of the woodes with a terrible cry, and most horrible aspect, much like vnto the people called Agathyrsi, of whom the poet Virgil speaketh: For they were all paynted and spotted with sundry colours, and especially with blacke and red, which they make of certaine fruits nourished for the same purpose in their gardens, with the iuyce whereof they paynt themselves from the forehead, euen to the knees, hauing their hayre (which by art they make long and blacke, if nature denye it them) wreathed and rolled after a thousande fashions, a man would thinke them to be deuilles incarnate newly broke out of hell, they are so like vnto helibounds. As our men waded ouer the ryuer, they shote at them, and hurled dartes so thicke, that it almost tooke the sight of the sunne from our men: insomuch that if they hadde not borne of the force thereof with their targettes, the matter had gone wrong with them. Yet at the length, many being wounded, they passed ouer the ryuer: which thing when the enemies sawe, they fled whom

The Spaniards  
accuse the Ad-  
mirall.

The Admirall  
answereth.

These had the  
custodie of the  
temple.

A cruell &  
dreadfull pun-  
ishment.

Hayre made  
long & blacke by  
art.

whom our men pursuing, slue some in the chase, but not many, by reason of their swiftnesse of foote. Thus being in the wooddes, they shotte at our men more safely, for they being accustomed to the wooddes, and naked without any let passed through the bushes and shrubbes, as it had bin wild bores or Hartes, whereas our men were hindered by reason of their apparell, targets, long ianelins & ignorance of the place. Wherefore, when he had rested there all that night in vaine & the day folowing he sawe no stirring in the wooddes, he went (by the counsel and conduct of the other Flaide men which were in his army) immediately frō thience to the mountaines in the which king Maiobanexius had his cheefe mansion place, in the village called Capronum, by the which name also the Kings place was called, being in the same village. Thus marching forward with his armie, about twelue myles off, he encamped in the village of another king, which the inhabitants had forsaken for feare of our men: Yet making diligent search, they found two, by whom they had knowledge that there was teane kinges with Maiobanexius in his palace of Capronum; with an armie of eight thousand Ciguanians. At the Lieutenants first approach, he durst not gine them battayle, vntill he had somewhat better searched the regions: yet did he in the meane time skirmish with them twice. The next nyght about midnight, hee sent forth scoutes, and with them guides of the Flaide men which knew the countrey. Whome the Ciguanians espying frō the mountaines prepared themselves to the battayle, with a terrible cry or alarm after their maner, but yet durst not come out of the woods supposing that the Lieutenant with his mayne army had bin ceten at hand. The day folowing, when he brought his army to the place where they encamped, leaping out of the woodes they twice attempted the fortune of warre, fiercely assaying our men with a mayne force: and wounding many before they coulde couer them with their targettes: Yet our men put them to flight, slue many, tooke many, the residue fled to the wooddes, where they kept them still as in their most safe holde. Of them which were taken, he sent one, and with him another of the Flaide men, which was of his part, to Maiobanexius, with commandement in this effect, The Lieutenant brought not hither his army (O Maiobanexius) to keepe warre either against you, or your people, for he greatly desireth your friendship: but his intent is, that Guarionexius, who hath perswaded you to be his ayde against him, to the great destruction of your people, and vndoing of your country, may haue due correction, as wel for his disobedience towards him, as also for raising tumultes among the people: Wherefore he requireth you, and exhorteth you to deliuer Guarionexius into their hands the which thing if you shall performe, the Admirall his brother will not only gladly admit you to his friendship, but also enlarge and defend your dominion. And if herein you refuse to accomplysh his request, it will followe, that you shall shortly repente you thereof: For your kingdome shalbe wasted with swordes and fire, and shall abide the fortune of warre, whereof you haue had experience with snour, as you shall further know hereafter to your payne, if with stubbernesse you prouoke him to shewe the uttermost of his power. When the messenger had thus done his arant, Maiobanexius answered, that Guarionexius was a good man, indued with many vertues as al men knewe, and therefore he thought him worthy his ayde, especially in as much as he fled to him for succoure, and that he had made him such promise, whont also he had proued to be his faithfull friend: againe, that they were naughty men, violent, and cruell, desiring other mens goodes, and such as spared not to shed innocents blood: in fine, that hee would not haue to doe with such mischieuous men, nor yet enter into friendshippe with them. When these thinges came to the Lieutenants care, he commanded the village to be burnt where he himselfe encamped, with many other villages there about: and when he drewe nere to the place where Maiobanexius lay, he sent messengers to him againe, to commaund the matter with him, & to will him to send some one of his most faithfull friendes to entreate with him of peace. Wherevpon the king sent vnto him one of his cheefe gentlemen, and with him two other to wayte on him. When he came to the Lieutenants presence, he friendly required him to perswade his lord and maister in his name, and earnestly to admonishe him, not to suffer his flourishing kingdome to be spoyled, or himselfe to abide the harsarde of warre for Guarionexius sake: and further to exhort him to deliuer him, excepte he would

King Maiobanexius.

As an army of eight thousand Ciguanians.

King Guarionexius.

Narrative of 1791.

The Lieutenants order to the king Maiobanexius.

would procure the destruction both of himselfe, his people, and his country. When the messenger was returned, Maiobanexius assembled the people, declaring unto them what was done: but they cryed out on him to deliuer Guarionexius, and began to curse the day that euer they had receiued him, thus to disturbe their quietnesse. Maiobanexius answered them, that Guarionexius was a good man; & had well deserved of him, giuing him many princely presentes, and had also taught both his wife and him to sing and dance, which thing he did not little esteeme, and was therefore fully resolved in no case to forsake him, or agaynst all humanitie to betray his friend, which fled to him for succour, but rather to abide all extremities with him, then to minister occasion of obloquy to slauderers, to reporte that he had betrayed his ghest, whom he tooke into his house with warranties. Thus dismissing the people, sighing and with sorrowfull hart, he called Guarionexius before him, promising him agayne, that he would be partaker of his fortune, while life lasted: in so much that he thought it not best to send any further woorde to the Lieutenant, but appointed him whom before he sent to him, to keepe the way with a garrison of men, to the intent, that if any messengers should be sent from the Lieutenant to stay them by the way, & admit none to communication, or further entreatie of peace. In the meane time, the Lieutenant sent two, whereof the one was a captiue Ciguanius, and the other an Ilande man, of them which were friends to our men: and they were both taken and slayne. The Lieutenant followed them only with ten footmen & foure horsemen, finding his messengers dead in the way, hee was further prouoked to wrath, and determined more extremely to deale with Maiobanexius, & therefore went forward incontinently with his whole army to his chiefe pallace of Capronum, where he yet lay in campe. At his approach, all the kings fled, every man his way, & forooke their capitaine Maiobanexius, who also with all his family, fledde to the rough mountaynes. Some of the Ciguanius sought for Guarionexius to slay him, for that hee was the cause of all these troubles: but his feete saued his life, for he fledde in time to the mountayns, where he lurked in maner alone among the desolate rocks. Whereas now the Lieutenants souldiers were forewearyed with long warre, with watching, labour, and hunger (for it was nowe three moneths since the warres began) many desired leaue to depart to the towre of Conception, where they had granges, & exercised tillage. He gaue them their passeports with allowance of victayles, and so that only thirtie remained with him. These three moneths warre, they continued verie painefull and miserably: So that during all that time, they had none other meate but only Cazibi, that is, such roots whereof they make their bread, and that but seldome to their fill: also Vsias, that is, little beastes like Conies, if by chaunce nowe and then they tooke some with their hounds. Their drinke was none other then water, suche as they founde, sometime sweet and sometime muddy, savoring of the marysbes. Among these delicats, that little sleepe that they had, was euer for the most part abroad vnder the firmament, and that not without watchmen, and in continuall remoning as the nature of warre requireth. With these fewe therefore, the Lieutenant detemind to search the mountaynes, demes, and caues, if he could in any place finde the steppes of Maiobanexius or Guarionexius. In the meane time certaine of his men (whome hunger enforced to goe a hunting, to proue if they could take any conies) chanced vpon two of Maiobanexius familiars, which were sent to certaine villages of his, to make prouision of bread. These he enforced to declare where their lord lay hid, & vsed the same also for guides, to bring our men to the place. Twelue of our men tooke this catterpryse in hand, painting themselves after the manner of the Ciguanius: So that by this stratageme or policie, they came sodenly vpon Maiobanexius, and tooke him prysoner, with his wife, children and family, and conuighed them to the towre of Conception to the Lieutenant. Within a fewe dayes after, hunger compelled Guarionexius to come out of the denne, whome certaine of the people fearing the Lieutenant, bewrayed to our hunters. The Lieutenant being certified hereof, sent forth a bande of foote men, commanding them to lye in ambush vntill such time as Guarionexius went from the playnes to the mountaynes, and then sodenly to cuttrappe him. They went as they were commaunded, tooke him, and brought him away with them, and by this meanes were all the regions neare about pacified.

A fine field  
where is a  
barren king.

The Lieutenants  
souldiers  
were in a  
hurry.

The Spaniards  
are  
in the warre.

A desperate  
warre  
with  
the  
Indians.

A picture.

A beautiful  
woman.

and quieted. A certayne noble woman of neere kinred to Maior exius, and wife to another king, whose dominion was yet vntouched, followed him in these aduersities. They affirme this woman to bee the fayrest and most beautifull, that ever nature brought forth in the land: Whom, when the king her husbande, who loued her most ardently (as her beautie deserved) hearde say that she was taken prisoner, hee was led vp and downe the desertes like a man out of his wittie, not knowing what to doe or say. But at the length, he came to the Lieutenant, promising most faithfully, that hee woulde submit himselfe and all that he coulde make, vnder his power, so that hee woulde restore him his wife. The Lieutenant accepted the condition, & restored him his wife, with certein other rulers and gentlemen which he had taken prisoners before: charging them, and binding them with an othe, to be ready at his commaundement. Shortly after, this king of his owne free motion, came agayne to the Lieutenant, bringing with him sixe thousande men without weapons, sauing onely such instrumentes as they vse in tillage of their ground. He brought with him also seedes to sow, wherewith at his owne charge, hee caused such plentie of their come and frutes to grow in sundry places of the large vale, whereof we spake before, that shortly after were scene many fayre and frutifull fieldes that came thereof and for his gentleness being rewarded of the Lieutenant with certaine of our thinges, hee departed ioyfully. When the report hereof came to the Cignanius, it moued the minds of the kinges to hope of clemencie, wherupon they came together to the Lieutenant with humble submission and faithfull promise, euer after to bee vnder his obedience, desiring him to restore vnto them their king with his familie. At their request, the Kinges wife and his housholde was sette at libertie, but the king kept still as a prisoner. These thinges did the Lieutenant in the lande, not yet knowing what his aduersaries and accusers hadde layde to his charge before the king of Spayne: who being disquieted with their quarrellings and accusations, and especially for that by reason of their dissenation, of so great abundance of golde and other thinges, there was as yet but little brought into Spayne, appointed a newe gouernour, which shoulde see a redresse in these thinges: and eyther to punish such as were faultie, or else to sende them to him. What was founde against the Admirall and his brother, or against his aduersaries which accused him, I doe not well knowe. But this I am sure of, that both the brethren are taken, brought, & caste in pryson, with their goods confiscate. But as soone as the king vnderstood that they were brought bound to Cales, he sent messengers in post, with commaundement that they should be loosed and come freely to his presence: wherby he declared that hee toke their troubles grieuously. It is also said, that the new gouernour sent letters to the king, writen with the Admiralles hande in straunge and vnkowne sypheringes, to his brother the Lieutenant being absent, willing him to bee in a readines with a power of armed men to come and aid him, if the Gouernour shoulde proffer him any violence. Whereof the gouernour hauing knowledge (as hee sayth) being also aduertised that the Lieutenant was gone to his brother before the menue which hee had prepared there in a readines, apprehended them both vnwares, before the multitude came together. What will followe, tyme, the most true and prudent iudge will declare. Thus fare ye well.

The Kinges sub-  
mit themselves  
to the Lieuten-  
ant.

A new gou-  
ernour of the  
Ilande.

#### ¶ The eight booke of the first Decade, to Cardinal Lodouike.

The Ocean sea  
heretofore vn-  
knowne.

The great, rich, and plentifull Ocean sea, heretofore vnkowne, and now found by Christophorus Colonus the Admirall, by the authoritie & furtherance of the Catholike king, I haue presented vnto your honor (right noble prince) like a golden chaine vnworkmanly wrought: but you shal now receiue a precious iewel to be appendant thereto. Therefore among such as were pylots or gouernours vnder the Admirall, & had diligently marked the courses & differēces of the windes, many had lycences granted them of the king to seeke further at their own charges, vpon cōditio to pay him faithfully his portion, which is the fist part. But because amongst all other, one Petrus Alphonsus, called Nignus by his surname, sayled toward the South with more prosperous fortune then any of the other, I thinke it best first to speake somewhat of his voyage. He therefore with only one ship, wel furnished

The nauigation  
of Petrus Al-  
phonsus.

at his owne charges, after that he had his passeporte; with commaundement in no case to cast anchor: past fiftie leagues distant from any place where the Admirall had touched, sayled first to Paris, where the Admirall found both the men and women so laden with cheines garlandes, and bracelets of pearles, as we haue said before. Coasting therefore along by the same shore, according to the kings commaundement (yet leauing behind him the regions of Camama and Manacapano he came to the regions which the inhabitants therof call Curiana, where he found a hauent (as he saith) much like the porte of Gades or Cales: into the which entering he sawe a sharre of certayn houses on the shore, and perceiued, when hee drew neere; that it was a village of onely eight houses. Proceeding yet further for the space of three myles, he espied an other village well replenished with people, where there met him fiftie naked men on a company, hauing with them a certaine ruler, who desired Alphonsus to come to their coastes. He brought with him at this time, many haukes, belles, pynnes, needels, bracelets, cheynes, garlandes, and rynges, with counterfayt stones and glasses, and such other trifelles; the which within the moment of an houre; he had exchanged for fiftene ounces of their pearles, which they wore aboute their neckes and armes. Then they yet more earnestly desired him to sayle to their coastes, promising him that he should there haue as many pearles as he would desire. Hee condescended to their request; and the day following, came to the place where they appointed him: Lying there at anchor, a great multitude of people resorted to him, instantly requyring him to come a land: But when he considered the innumerable multitude of people which was there assembled, and he had only xxxiii. men in his company; he durst not commit him selfe to their handes, but gaue them to understand by signes and tokens, that they should come to the ship with their Canoes: for their boates (which the men of the Island call Canoes) are made only of one whole peece of wood as in the Islands, yet more rude; and not so artificially as theirs are: these they call Gallias. These swarmed therefore to the ship as fast as they might; bringing with them great plenty of pearles (which they call Tenoras) exchanging the same for our marchandises. He found this people to bee of gentle nature, simple, and innocent, being conversant with them in their houses, for the space of xx. dayes: Their houses are made of wood, covered with the leaues of dato trees. Their meate for the most parte, is the shell fishes in the which the pearles are engendered, wherof their sea coastes are full: They haue also great plenty of wild beastes, as harts, wild bores, and oonies like vnto hares, both in colour and bignes, stocke doves also, and turtle doves: likewise geese and ducks, which they norishe in their houses as we doe: Peacocks flie aboute in manner in cuetie wood and groue, but they are not distinct with sundry colours as ours are: for the cockes are like vnto the hennes. These people of Curiana are craftie hunters, & exceeding cunning archiers, so that they will not lightly misse any beaste or birde that they shooe at. Our men consumed certaine daies heere very pleasantly: during which time, whoeuer brought them a peacock, had for the same foure pinner: he that brought a pheasant, had two, and for a stocke doue, or turtle doue, one, and for a goose, a smale looking glasse, or a litle sbe of glasse. Thus they bought and sold with profering and bidding, denying and refusing, as it had bin in a great market. When pinner were profered them, they asked what they should doe with them, being naked: But our men satisfied them with a craftie answer, declaring by tokes that they were very necessary, to picke their teeth, and to pull thornes out of their fleshe. But above all things, haukes, belles were most esteemed among them for their sound & faire colour, & would therefore giue much for one of them. Our men, lodging in their houses, heard in the night season horrible noise & roringes of the wild beastes in the woodes which are full of exceeding great and high trees of sundrie kinds: but the beastes of these woodes, are not norseome to men, for the people of the country goe dayly a hunting naked, with their bowes and arrowes, yet hath not bene heard of, that any man hath becom slayne of any wild beest. As many harts and wild bores as our men would desire them to bring, they would kill in the woodes with their arrowes, and not fayle to bring them. They lacke kyme, geates and sheepe. Their bread is made of rootes, as is theirs of the Islands. This nation, hath blacke hayre, grosse and somewhat curid; yet long also. They

Printed by  
1774.

Great piece of  
pebble.

Shell fishes in  
which pearles  
are engendered.

This is most of  
bargaining.

The use of  
Hawks vnto  
great curians.  
Roringes of wild  
beastes.

Hartes and wild  
beares.

keepe their teeth very white, and for that purpose vse to cary a certaine hearbe betweene their lippes for the most part of the day, and to wash their mouthes when they cast it away. The women doe all their busines at home in their houses, and haue also the cure of tyllage of the ground: but the men apply themselves to the warres and hunting, to play, synging and daunsing. They haue sundry kinde of water pottes iugges, and drinking cuppes made of earth in other places about them, and brought thither for exchange of other things. For they vse fayres and markettes for the same purpose, and are greatly desirous of such things, as are not brought forth or made in their countrey, as nature hath giuen a disposition to all men; to desire and be delighted with new and strange things. Many of them had hanging at their pearles the images of certaine beastes and birdes, very artificially made of gold, but not pure: these also are brought them from other places for exchange of other things. The gold whereof they are made, is native and of much like finenes to that whereof the florens are coyned. The memo of this country, encluse their priue members in a gourd, cut after the fashiō of a codde peice, or els cover the same with the shell of a toyse, tyed about their loynes with laces of gossampine cotton: In other places of that tract, they thrust the sinew within the sheath thereof, and binde the skinne fast with a string. The great wild beastes whereof we spake before, and many other things which are not found in any of the Ilandes, testifye that this region is part of the continent or firme land. But the chiefest coniecture whereby they argue the same; is, that by the coastes of that lande, from Paria toward the West, they sayled about three M. myles, finding no signe or token of any end. These people of Curiana (which some call Curtana) being demanded where they had such plenty of golde, signified that it was brought them from a region called Canchieta, or Cauchieta; being distant from them sixe sunnes, that is, sixe dayes journey westward: and that their images of golde were made in the same region. Whereupon our men directed their voyage thither immediatly, and arriued there at the Calendes of Nouember, in the yeare of CHRIST a thousand and fite hundred. The people of the country resorted to them without feare, bringing with them of the golde which we sayd to bee native in that region. This people hadde also collers of pearles about their neckes, which were brought them from Curiana for exchange of their marchandises. None of them would exchange any of those things which they hadde out of other countreyes: as neyther the Curians golde, nor the Canchieta's pearles: yet among the Canchieta's they found but litle gold ready gathered: they tooke with them from thence certain very fayre Marmasets or Munkeyes, and many Poppingayes of sundry coloures. In the moneth of Nouember, the ayre was there most temperate, and nothing colde. The gardens of the North pole were out of sight to both these people, they are so neare the Equinoctial. Of the degrees of the pole, they can giue none other accompt. These people are well disposed men, of honest conditions, and nothing suspicious, for almost all the night long they resorted to the shippe with their boates, and went aboarde shippe without feare, as did the Curians. They call pearles, Coxixas. They are somewhat ialous, for when any strangers come among them, they euer place their women beehind them. In this region of Canchieta, the gossampine trees growe of themselves commonly in many places, as doe with vs Elmes, Willowes, and Sallows: and therefore they vse to make breeches of cotton, wherewith they cover their priue partes in many other Regions therabout. When they had yet sayled on forward by the same coastes, there came forth against them about two thousand men, armed after their manner, forbidding them to come a land. These people were so rude and savage, that our men could by no meanes allure them to familiaritie. Our men therefore, contented only with their pearles, returned backe the same way they came, where they remayned with the Curians continually for the space of xx. dayes, and filled their bellies wel with good meate. And here it semeth to me not farre from my purpose, to declare what chanced vnto them in their returne when they came now within the sight of the coast of Paria. They happened therefore in the way, at O. Draconis; and the gulfes of Paria (whereof we spake before) to meete with a nauy of xxviii. Canoes of Canibals, which went a roving to hunt for men who assoone as they had espied our men, assailed their ship fiercely, & without feare enclosed the same, disturbing

Cruciating scold  
trees  
Dove golde.

Taken of the  
concocted on  
firme lande.

The golden re-  
gion of Can-  
chieta.

The Equinoctiall  
line.

Gossampine  
trees.

Canibals in the  
gulfe of Paria.

disturbing our men on euey side with their arrowes: but our men so feared the with their gunnes, that they fled immediately, whom our men following with the shipp boate, tooke one of their Canoas, and in it only one Canibal (for the other had escaped) and with him another man bounde, who with teares running downe his cheekes, and with gesture of his handes, eyes, and head, signified that sixe of his companions had bin cruelly cut in peeces, and eat of that mischeuous nation, and that he should haue bin likewise handled the day following: wherefore they gaue him power ouer the Canibal, to do with him what he would. Then with the Canibals owne clubbes, he laide on him all that he might driue with hand and foot, grinning and fretting as it had ben a wild-bore, thinking that he had not yet sufficiently reuenged the death of his companions, when he had beaten out his braynes and guttes. When he was demanded after what sort the Canibales were wont to invade other countries, he answered, that they euer vsed to carye with them in their Canoas, a great multitude of clubbes, the which, wheresoeuer they doe land they pitch in the grounde, and encampe themselves within the compasse of the same, to lie the more safely in the night season. In Curiana they found the head of a captaine of the Canibales, nayled ouer the doore of a certaine gouernour for a token of victorie, as it had bin the standard or helmet taken from the enimic in bataille. In these costes of Paria is a region called Haria, in the which great plenty of salt is gathered after a strange sorte: for the sea being there tossed with the power of the wyndes, dyueth the salt-waters into a large plaine by the sea side, where, afterwarde when the sea waxeth calme, and the sunne becommeth to shine, the water is congealed into most pure and white salte, wherewith innumerable shippes might bee laden, if men did resort thether for the same before there fall any rayne: For the rayne melteth it, and causeth it to sinke into the sand, and so by the pores of the earth to returne to the place from whence it was dryuen. Other say, that the playne is not filled from the sea, but of certaine springs whose water is more sharpe and salt then the water of the sea. Thinkhabitanes doe greatly esteeme this bay of sault, which they vse, not onely for their owne commoditie, but also working the same into a square forme like vnto bricke, they sell it to strangers for exchange of other thinges which they lacke. In this Region, they stretch and drie the dead bodies of their kinges and noble men, laying the same vpon a certayne frame of wood much like vnto a hardle or gridiron, with a gentell fire vnder the same, by litle and litle consuming the flesh, and keeping the skème hole with the bones inclosed therein. These dried carcasses, they haue in great reuerence, and honor them for their household and familiar gods. They say that in this place they sawe a man, & in another place a woman, thus dried and reserved. When they departed from Curiana, the viii. day of the Ides of February, to retire to Spayne, they had threescore and. xvi. poundes weight (after viii. vncoes to the pound) of pearles, which they bought for exchange of our thinges, amounting to the value of five shillings. Departing therefore, they consumed threescore dayes in their iourney (although it were shorter then from Hispaniola) by reason of the continual course of the sea in the West, which did not only greatly stay the shippe, also but sometimes driue it backe. But at the length they came home so laden with pearles, that they were with euey mariner, in manner as common as chaffe. But the master of the shippe Petrus Alphonsus, being accused of his companions that he had stolen a great multitude of pretious pearles, and defrauded the king of his portion which was the fifth parte, was taken of Fernando de Vega a man of great learning and experience, & gouernour of Galliccia, where they aryued, and was there kept in prison a long time. But hee still denieth that euer he deteyned any part of the pearles. Many of these pearles were as bigge as hasell nuttes and as oriente (as we call it) as they be of the East partes: Yet not of so great price, by reason that the holes thereof are not so perfecte. When I my selfe was present with the right honorable duke of Methyna, and was biddē to dyner with him, in the cite of Cuile, they brought to him about a hundred and twentie ounces of pearles to bee sold, which surely dyd greatly delight me with their sairenes and brightnes. Some say, that Alphonsus had not these pearles in Curiana, being distant from Os Draconis more then a hundred & twentie leagues, but that they had them in the regions of Cumana and Manacapanā, nere

Druck for death.

How the Canibales fortifie their campe.

Haria.

Springs of salt water.

The lodges of the dead and reserved.

Orient pearles as they are called.

vnto

The Ilands of  
Margarita.

vnto Os Draconis and the Iland of Margarita: for they deny that there is any pearles founde in Curiana. But sith the matter is yet in controuersie, we will passe to other matters. Thus much you haue, whereby you may coniecture, what commoditie in time to come may bee looked for from these newe Ilandes of the West Ocean, whereas at the first discovering, they shewe such tokens of great riches. Thus fare ye well.

¶ The. ix. booke of the first Decade to Cardinall Lodouike.

The assignation  
of Viceroyes,  
and Arses Pin-  
zonas.

Vincençignes Pinzonus, and also Arses Pinzonus, his newieue by his brothers syde, which accompanied the Admirall Colonus in his first voyage, & were by him appoynted to bee maistrs of two of the small-shippes which the Spaniards call Carauelas, being moued by the great ryche & amplitude of the new landes, furnished of their owne charges foure Carauels: in the haueu of their owne cuntry, which the Spaniards call Palos, bordering on the West Ocean. Having therefore the kings licence & passeport to depart, they loosed fro the haueu, about the Calendes of December, in the yere. 1499. This haueu of Palos, is threescore & twelue myles distante from Gades, cōmonly called Cales, and lxiiiij. miles from Ciulle. All the inhabitants of this towne, not one excepted, are greatly giue to searching of the sea, and continually exercised in sayling. They also directed their viage first to the Iland of Canarie by the Ilands of Hesperides, now called Cabouerde, which some call Gorgodos Meducias. Sayling therefore directly toward the South from that Iland of Hesperides

The Ilands of  
Canarie,  
Cabouerde.

S. Iames Ilands.

which the Portugales (being possessors of the same) call Sancti Iacobi, and departing from thence at the Ides of Ianuary, they followed the Southwest winde, being in the midst betwene the South and the West. When they supposed that they had sayled about three hundred leagues by the same winde, they say, that they lost the sight of the North starre: and were shortly after tossed with exceeding tempestes both of wind, and sea, and vexed with intolerable heate: Yet sayled they on further (not without great danger) for the space of two hundred & fortie leagues following yet the same wind by the lost pole. Wherefore, whether habitable regions be vnder the Equinoctiall line or not, let these men and the oulde wryters, aswell Philosophers as poetes and cosmographers discusse: For these men affirme it to be habitable and meruelously replenished with people: and they, that it is vnhabitable by reason

The northpole  
out of sight.

of the runne beames depending perpendicularly or directly ouer the same. Yet were there many of the old wryters, which attempted to proue it habitable. These mayners being demanded, if they saw the South pole, they answered that they knew no star there like vnto this pole, that might be decreed about the poynt: but that they sawe an other order of starres; and a certeine thick myst rysing from the horizontal lyne, which greatly hindered their sight. They contende also, that there is a great heape or rising in the midst of the earth, which taketh away the sight of the South pole, vntill they haue vterly passed ouer the same: but they vterly beleeeve that they sawe other images of starres, much differing from the situation of the starres of our hemispherie, or halfe circle of heauen. How to enter the matter be, as they informe vs, we certifie you. At the length, the seuenth day of the Calendes of February, they espied lande a farr off, and seeing the water of the sea to be troublesome, sounding with their plummet, they founde it to be xvi. fathames deepe. Going aland, and tarying there for the space of two dayes, they departed, because they sawe no people stirring, although they found certeyne steppes of men by the sea side. Thus graining on the trees & the stones nere vnto the shore, the kings name and theirs, and the time of their coming thither, they departed. Not farre from this station, following the sters on the land by night, they founde a nation lying vnder the open firmament, after the manner of warre. Our men thought it not best to trouble them vntill the morning: Therefore, at the rysing of the sunne, fortie of our men well armed went towards them: against whom came forth. xxxiiij. of them with bowes, slanges and darts, euen ready to fight. The other company followed them, armed after the same maner. Our men affirme that they were of higher stature then either the Almaynes or Pannonians. They behelde our men with frowning and threatening countenance: but our men thought it not good to fall to bickering with them, vncertayne whether it wore for feare, or because they would not driue them to flight.

Habitable re-  
gions vnder the  
Equinoctiall  
lyne.

People of Isp  
cccc.

Wherefore

Wherefore they went about to allure them by faire meanes & rewardes but they refused all kinde of gentleness: and stood euer in a readinesse to fight, declaring the same by signes and tokens. Thus our men resorted to their shippes, and they to the place from whence they came, without any further busines. The same night about midnight, they fledde, & left the place voyde where they lay in the campe. Our men suppose them to be a vayne <sup>A neighbourly kinde of men.</sup> bound and wandering nation, like vnto the Scythians, without houses or certaine dwelling places, liuing onely with the fruites of the earth, hauing their wives and children following them. Suche as measured their footestepes in the sande, affirme with great othe, that one of their feete is almost as long as two feete of our men of the meane sorte. Saying on yet further, they found an other river, but not of depth sufficient to beare the Caruels: they sent therefore the foure shippe boates to lande, full of armed men to search the countrey. They espied vpon a high hill neere vnto the sea side, a great multitude of people, to whom our companie sent forth one man with certayne of our thinges to allure them to exchange. And when he had cast a hawkes be-towarde them, they cast downe a wedge of golde a cubit longe: the whiche as hee stouped to take vp, they sodenly inclosed him and <sup>Depressed boldnes.</sup> carryed him away. But hee was shortly after rescued by his companions, to some of their paines: for they slue eight of our men, & wounded many a farre of, with their arrowes, and dartes made of wood, hardened at the eudes with fire. After this they encompassed our shippe boates within the riuer, and came rashly within the reach of our meane, laying holde on the boates sides, where they were thrust through, and heuen in peeces as it had bin sheepe; by reason they were naked. Yet woulde they not for all this giue ouer, but tooke from our men one of their boats hauing no men in it: for the gouernour thereof beeing playne with an arrowe, the other fledde and escaped. And thus they left this fierce and warlike people, sayling towarde the Northwest, along by the same coastes, with sorrowfull hartes for the death of their companions. When they had sayled about xl. leagues, they chanced into a sea of freshe water, that they filled their barrells and hoggesheades therewith. <sup>A mass of fresh water.</sup> Searching the cause heereof, they vnderstoode that a vehement course of riuers descended with great violence from the toppes of certaine great hills. They say also that there lyeth within the sea, manie fortunate and fruitfull Ilandes, and well inhabited, and that the inhabitants of this tract are men of meeke nature, and such as doe not refuse strangers, yet little profitable to them, because they haue no marchandyes for their purpose, as golde, or precious stones: for lacke whereof, they brought from thence thirtie captiues to sell for slaues. The inhabitants call this region Mariatambal. The region of the East parte of that ryuer, is called Camomorus, and that of the West part Paricora, in the midlande whereof, the inhabitants signified that there is great plentie of golde: For, following this riuer directly toward the North (as the bending of the shore required) they reencouered againe the sight of the North pole. All the coaste of this tract, pertaineth to Paria, the which (as we said before) was first found by Columbus himselfe, and hath in manner in euery place <sup>Regions of Paria.</sup> great abundance of pearles. They say that these coastes are adioyning vnto, and all one with Os Draconis, and also bordering vpon the regions of Cumana, Manacapanas, Gariana, Cauchieta, and Cuchibachoa. Wherefore they thought it to be part of the same land of India beyond the riuer of Ganges. For the great & large compass thereof, doth not permit that it should be an Ilande, albeit the whole earth vncouered with water, largely taken, may be called an Ilande. From the poynt of that land where they lost the sight of the North pole, sayling by a continuall tracte about three hundred leagues towarde the West side of Paria they say that (almost in the midway) they chanced into a riuer called Maragnonus, which they affirme to bee of such exceeding breadth, that it might seeme incredible, if the antiquities did not make mention of the like. Being demanded of me if it were not salt water where it diuided the lande, they answered that the water thereof was very freshe and sweete, and that the further it ranne, to be so much the fresher: also full of Ilandes and whosome fish: they dare avouch the breadth thereof to be more then thirtie leagues. Yet if we well weigh and consider, the largenesse and widenesse of Boristomea and Spiritostomea, the mouthes of the famous riuer of Ester (now called Danubius) and howe farre they violate or corrupt

corrupt the salt water with their freshnesse, we shall cease to marueyle, although this other riuier be greater: for who can diminish the power of nature, but that it may make this bigger then the other, and another bygger then this? And I suppose this to bee the riuier whereof Colonus the Admirall made mention in the description of his voyage in these coastes. But we shall hereafter haue further knowledge hereof: let vs nowe therefore returne to the commodities of these regions. They found in many Ilands about Paria: great woodes of Brasile trees, and brought away with them, three thousande poundes weighte thereof. They say that the Brasile of Hispaniola, is much better then this to dye cloth with a more faire and durable colour. From hence, following the windes (which the Spaniards cal Northeast, and the Italians Græco) they passed by many Ilandes very fruitfull, yet left desolate and wasted by reason of the crueltie of the Canibales: for they went alande in many places, they found the ruines of many destroyed houses: yet in some places, they found men, but those exceeding fearefull, fleeing to the mountaines, rockes, and woodes at the sight of euery stranger or shippe, & wandering without house or certaine abiding places, for feare of the Canibales hying white and hunting after them. Here they found those great trees which of them selues in diuers places bring forth that fruite we spise, which the Apothecaries cal Cassia Pistula, and that of no lesse goodnesse, then that which the phisitions minister to such as be diseased with the agne, but it was not ripe at their being there. They affirme that there are trees of such bygnesse, that xvi. men ioyning handes together, and standing in compasse, can scarcely embrace some of them. Among these trees is found that monstrous beast with a snout like a foxe, a tayle like a marmosette, eares like a bat, handes like a man, and feete like an ape, bearing her whelpes aboute with her in an outward bellie much like vnto a greate bagge or purse. The dead carcaske of this beast, you sawe with mee, and turned it ouer and ouer with your owne handes, marueyling at that new belly, and wonderfull prodiosion of nature. They say it is knowne by experience, that shee neuer letteth her whelpes goe out of that purse, except it be either to play, or to sucke vntill such time that they be able to gette their liuing by themselves. They tooke this beast with her whelpes: But the whelpes died shortly after in the shippes. Yet the damme liued certaine monethes: but at the length, not being able to abide so great alteration of ayre, and change of meat, she died also in the way. But of this beast, we haue said enough. Let vs nowe therefore returne to the aucthoures of these thinges. These two Pinzoni, the vncke and the neeuie, sustained many greate troubles & horrible tempestes and perilles in this nauigation. For when they had now sailed by the coastes of Paria about sixe hundred leagues, & (as they supposed) beyond the citie of Cathay and the coastes of East India beyond the riuier of Ganges, there rose sodenly so fierce a tempest in the month of Iuly, that of the foure Carauels which they had with them, two were drowned euen before their eyes: and the third lying at anker, with like sodennes caried out of their sight through the violence of the tempest: the fourth also lying at anker, was so shaken and broosed, that all the seames thereof were almost loosed: Yet came they to land out of this last shyp, but vitterly despairing of the ship. Wherefore consulting with themselves what was best to be done in so extreme a case, and how to provide them a safe dwelling place in those Regions, being out of all hope how to depart from thence, they determined to stay all the inhabytauntes of the country nere about them, least they with the other should conspire together to kill them, but their fortune was better: For the Carauel which the tempest had caried away, was come to them againe. This had in it xviii. men: And the other that remained, was saued and repaired. With these two therefore, they tooke their voyage directly to Spayne and thus being tossed with tempestes, & vexed with aduersities they returned to their native countrey of Palos, to their wyues and children, the day before the Calendes of October, with the losse of many of their deere friends & neighbours. They brought with them Cinamome and ginger: but not very good, because they were not there fully seasoned with the heate of the sunne, before they brought them from thence. They brought also certayne precious stones, which Baptista Elysias that excellent philosopher, and your Lordshippes Phisition, affirmeth to be true Topases. After these mens returne, other of their neighbours being moued thereto by a certayne emulation, to promoe if their fortune would

The commodities of the regions & Ilands about Paria Brasile.

Canibales

Trees of Cassia Pistula.

A monstrous beast.

Extreme tempest in a desperate case.

Cinamome and Ginger.

Topases.

would be any better, like men of good courage, being no thing discomforted by the hard fortune of their neighbours, knowing that it oftentimes chaunceth, that that which is one mans vndoing, is another mans making, attempted a new voiage toward the South by the coastes of Paria, following the steps of Colonus the Admirall, who hadde first discovered the same. They also brought with them great plentie of Cassia fistula, and found that precious medicine callet of the Spaniards Anima album, whose perfume is of most excellent effect to heale the reumes, murrus, and heauines of the head. As touching this viage, as yet I know no other newes that I thought worthy to certifie you of, wherefore, I will now make an end of this booke, because you put me so often in remembrance of your departure: Yet to accomplithe the Decade, I will declare somewhat of the superstitions of Hispaniola. You shal now therfore vnderstand the illusions wherewith the people of the lande haue bene seduced after the errors of the old gentilitie, and wandered in the ignorance and blindness of humane nature, corrupted of the disobedience of our first parentes, which hath remaineyd in all nations vpo the face of the earth, except where it hath pleased God by the light of his spirite by his worde, to powre vpon his elect the grace of renouation; by the light wherof the naturall darknes receiueth some clearnesse as in a glasse, vntill imperfection shall be abolished. Our men therfore were long in the land of Hispaniola, before they knew that the people thereof honoured any other thing then the lightes of heauen, or hadde any other religion; but when they hadde bene longe conuersant with them, and by vnderstanding their language, drew to a further familiaritie, they had knowledge that they vsed diuers rites and superstitions: I haue therefore gathered these fewe things following, out of a booke written by one Ramonus an Heremite, whome Colonus hadde left with certayne kinges of the lande to instruct them in the Christian faith. And because in maner their whole religion is none other thing then idolatry, I will begin at their idoles. It is therefore apparant by the images which they honour openly and commonly, that there appeare vnto them in the night seasons, certayne phantasies and illusions of euil spirites, seducing them into many sonde and foolish errors for they make certayne images of Gossampine cotton, folded or wreathed after their manner, and hard stopped within. These images they make sitting, muche like vnto the pictures of spirits and deuilles which our paynters are accustomed to paynt vpon walles: but forasmuch as I my selfe sent you foure of these Images, you may better presently signifie vnto the king your vncl, what manner of things they are, and howe like vnto paynted deuilles, then I can expresse the same by writing. These images, the inhabitants call Zemes, wherof the leaste, made to the likenesse of young deuilles, they binde to their foreheades when they goe to the warres against their enemies, and for that purpose haue they those strings hanging at them which you see. Of these, they beleue to obteyne rayne, if raine bee lacking, likewise sayne weather: for they think that these Zemes are the mediatours and messengers of the great God, whom they acknowledge to be onely one, eternall, without end, omnipotent, and inuisible. Thus every king hath his particular Zemes, which he honoureth. They call the eternall god by these two names, Iocauna and Guamaonocon, as their predecessours taught them, affirming that hec hath a father called by these same names: that is, Attabeira, Mamona, Guacarapita, Liella, Guimazoa. Nowe shall you heare what they fable on the earth as touching the originall of man. There is in the lande, a region called Caunana, where they saie that mankind came first out of two caues of a mountaine: and that the biggest sorte of men came forth of the mouth of the biggest caue, and the leest sort out of the leest caue. The rocke in the which these caues are, they call Cauta. The greatest deme, they name Cazihaxagua, and the leesse Amaiana. They say, that before it was lawfull for men to come soorth of the caue, the mouth of the caue was kept and watched nightly by a man whose name was Machochochael: this Machochochael, departing somewhat farre from the caue, to the intent to see what things were abroad, was sodenly taken of the sunne; (whose sight he was forbidden) & was turned into a stone. They sayne the like of diuers other, that whereas they went forth in the night season a fishing so farre from the caue, that they could not returne before the rising of the sunne (the which it was not lawfull for them to behold) they were transformed

Men of noble  
courage,  
Assured  
voyage.

Anima album.

The supersti-  
tions of His-  
paniola.  
The errors of  
the old gen-  
tilitie.

Idolatry  
and Idoles.

Illusions of  
euil spirites.  
Images of  
Gossampine  
cotton.

Young de-  
uils.

Many muche  
of the Decade  
transformed  
into.

into Myrobalane trees, which of themselves grow plentifully in the land. They say further more, that a certayne ruler called Vagonions, sent one forth of the caue to goe a fishing, who by like chance was turned into a Nighthale, because the sunne was risen beefore hee came agayne to the caue: and that yeerely about the same time that he was turned into a bridge, he doth in the night, with a mourning song bewayle his misfortune, and call for the helpe of his maister Vagonions: And this they thinke to bee the cause why that bird singeth in the night season. But Vagonions, being sore troubled in his mind for the losse of his familiar friend whom hee loved so entirely, leaving the men in the caue, brought forth onely the women with their sucking children, leaving the women in one of the handes of that tract, called Mathinon, and carryed the children away with him: which poore wretches oppressed with famine, fainted and remayned on the banke of a certayne ryuer, where they were turned into frogges, and cryed to, to, that is, mamma, mamma, as children are wont to crye, for the mothers papper. And hereof they say it cometh that frogges vse to crye so pitifully in the spring time of the yeare: And that men were scattered abroad in the causes of Hispaniola without the companie of women. They say also, that whereas Vagonions himselfe was accustomed to wander in diuers places, and yet by a speciall grace neuer transformed, descended to a certayne faire woman whom he sawe in the bottom of the sea, & received of her certayne pibble stones of marble (which they called Cibas), and also certayne yellowe and bright plates of latten which they call Guainoes. These things to this day are had in great estimation among the kinges, as goodly jewelles, and most holy reliques. But nowe (most noble prince), you shall heare a more pleasant fable. There is a certayne caue called Louanaboiaz, in the territorie of a certayne king whose name is Machinnech: This caue they honour more religiously, then did the Greekes in time paste, Corinth, Cyrrha, or Nysa; and have adourned it with pictures of a thousand fashions. In the intricate of this caue they haue two greuen, Zehies, whereof the one is called Birtahatel, and the other Marohu. Being demanded why they had this caue in so great reuerence, they answered earnestly, because the sunne and the moone came first out of the same to giue light to the world: they haue religious concourse to these caues, as we are accustomed to goe on Pygimrage to Rome, or Valli-came, Compostella, or Hierusalem, as most holy & head places of our religion. They are also subiect to another kind of superstition: for they thinke that dead folks walke in the night, and eate the fruite called Guanaaba, yknawne vnto vs, & somewhat like vnto a Quince: affirming also that they are conuerant with liuing people: euen in their beddes, and to deceiue women in taking vpon them the shape of men; shewing themselves as though they would haue to doe with them: but when the matter cometh to actuall deed, sodainly they vanishe away. If any do suspect that a dead body lyeth by him, wch he feelth any strag thing in the bed, they say he shall bee out of doubt by feeling of the bellie thereof: affirming that the spirites of dead men may take vpon them all the members of mans body, sauing onely the nauel. If therefore by the lacke of the nauel he doe perceiue that a dead body lyeth by him, the feeling is immediately resolued: They belecue verily, that in the night, and oftentimes in ther iourneies, and especially in conuon and high wayes, dead men doe meeete with the liuing: Against whom, if any man bee stout and out of feare, the fantasie vanissheth incontinently: but if a man feare, the fantasie or vision dooth so assaulte him and strike him with further feare, that many are thereby astonysed, and haue the lymmes of their bodies taken. The inhabitants being demanded of whom they had those vaine superstitions, they answered, that they were left them of their forefathers, as by descent of inheritance, and that they haue had the same before the memorie of man, composed in certaine rimes and songes, which it was lawfull for none to learne, but onely the kinges sonnes, who committed the same to memorye because they had neuer any knowledge of letters. These they sing before the people on certaine solemne and festiuall dayes as most religious ceremonies: while in the meane time they play on a certayne instrument made of onewhole peece of wood somewhat hollow like a timbrel. Their priestes and dimmes (whom they call Botios) instructe them in these superstitions: These priestes are also phisitions, deuising a thousand craftes and subtilties howe to deceiue the simple people which haue them in great reuerence:

for they persuade them that the Zemes use to speak with them familiarly, and tel them of things to come. And if any have ben sicke, and are recovered they make the beleefe that they obtained their health of the Zemes. These Boitii bind themselves to much fasting, & outward cleanlinesse, and purginges, especially when they take upon them the cure of any prince, for then they drinke the powder of a certaine herbe by whose qualitie they are driven into a fury, at which time (as they say) they learne many things by revelation of the Zemes. Then putting secretly in their mouths, cyther a stone, or a bone, or a peece of flesh, they come to the sick persō commanding al to depart out of that place except one or two whom it shall please the sicke man to appoynt: this done, they goe about him three or foure times, greatly deforming their faces, lipps, and nostrils with sundry filthy gestures, blotting, breathing, and sucking the forehead, temples, and necke of the patient: whereby (they say) they drawe the evil ayre from him, and sucke the disease out of the veynes: then rubbing him, about the shoulders, thighes and legges, and drawing downe their handes close by his feete, holding them yet faste together, they runne to the doore being open, where they vncloase and shake their hands, affirming that they have driven away the disease; and that the patient shall shortly be perfectly restored to health. After this comming behinde him, hee conueigheth a peece of steale out of his owne mouth like a inggeler, and sheweth it to the sicke man, saying, Behold, you have taken to much, you shall nowe bee whole, because I have taken this from you. But if he entend yet further to deceite the patient, hee perswadeth him that his Zemes is angry, cyther because he hath not builded him a chappell, or not honoured him religiously, or not dedicated vnto him a groue or garden. And if it so chauce that the sicke person die, his kinsfolks, by witchcraft, enforce the dead to confesse whether he died by naturall deathey, or by the negligence of the Boitii, first that he had not fasted as he should haue done, or not ministred a cōuenient medicine for the disease: so that if this phisicion be found faultie, they take reuenge of him. Of these stones or bones which these Boitii carry in their mouths, if the women can come by them, they keepe them religiously, beleeuing them to be greatly effectfull to helpe women trauelling with childe, and therefore honour them as they do their Zemes. For diuers of the inhabitants honour Zemes of diuers fashions: some make them of wood, as they were admonished by certaine visions appearing vnto them in the woods: Other, which haue received answer of them among the rockes, make them of stone and marble. Some they make of rootes, to the similitude of such as appeare to them when they are gathering the rootes called Ages, whereof they make their bread, as we haue said before. These Zemes they beleue to send plentie & fruitfulness of those rootes, as the antiquitie beleued such fayries or spirits as they called Dryades, Hamadryades, Satyros, Panes, and Nereides, to haue the cure & prouidence of the sea, Woods, springs, and fontaines, assigning to euery thing their peculiar goddess: Euen so doe the inhabitants of this Island attribute a Zemes to euery thing, supposing the same to giue care to their inocuations. Wherefore, as often as the kings aske counsell of their Zemes as concerning their warres, increase of fruites or scarcenes, or health & sicknesse, they enter into the house dedicatē to their Zemes, where, snuffing vp into their nostryles the powder of the herbe called Cohobba (wherewith the Boitii are dryuen into a furie) they say that immediately they see the houses turned topsie turuie; and men to walke with their heeles vpward, of such force is this powder, vnto to take away al sense. As soone at this madnesse ceaseth, he embraceth his knees with his armes, holding downe his head. And when he hath remainyd thus awhile astonysht; hee lieth vp his head; as one that came newe out of sleepe; and thus looking vp toward heauen, first hee sunbleth certaine confounded wordes with himselfe; then certayne of the nobilitie or chiefe gentlemen that are about him (for none of the common people are admitted to these mysteries) with loude voyces giue tokens of reioicing that hee is returned to them from the speech of the Zemes, demanding of him what he hath seene. Then hee opening his mouth, deateth that the Zemes spake to him during the time of his trance, declaring that he had reuelations either concerning victorie or destruction, famine or plentie, health or sicknesse or whatsoever happeneth first on his tongue. Now (most noble Prince) what neede you

Spencer is  
servid with  
superstition

A powder of  
superstition  
is used

A strange man-  
ner of curing

Angry god

They make the  
dead to speak

Fayries or spi-  
rits of the gro-  
ves, march 231.  
in the papers.

The powder of  
the herbe Co-  
hobba

Secret mys-  
teries

Revelation

The spirit of  
Apollo.  
The Sibilles.

hereafter to maruyle of the spirite of Apollo so shaking his Sibilles with extreame furie: you hadde thought that the superstitious antiquite hadde perished: But nowe whereas I haue declared thus much of the Zemes in general, I thought it not good to let passe what is sayde of them in particular. They say, therefore that a certaine king called Guamaretus, had a Zemes whose name was Corochotum, who (they say) was oftentimes wont to descend from the highest place of the house where Guamaretus kept him close boild. They affirme that the cause of this his breaking of his bandes and departure, was eyther to hide himselfe, or to goe seeke for meate, or else for the acte of generation: and that sometimes being offended that the king Guamaretus had bin negligent and slacke in honouring him, he was wont to lie hid for certayne dayes. They say also, that in the kinges village there are sometime children borne hauing two crownes, which they suppose to be the children of Corochotum the Zemes.

Children with  
two crownes.

They saie likewise, that Guamaretus being overcome of his enemies in battayle, and his village with the palace consumed with fire, Corochotus brake his bandes, and was afterwards founde a furlong off, safe and without hurt. He hath also another Zemes called Epilegnanita, made of woode, in shape like a foure footed beast: who also is sayde oftentimes to haue gone from the place where hee is honoured, into the woods: As soone as they perceiue him to be gone, a great multitude of them gather together to seeke him with devout prayers: and when they haue founde him, bring him home religiously on their shoulders to the chappell dedicated vnto him. But they complain, that since the coming of the Christian men into the Ilande, he fled for altogether, and could neuer since be founde, whereby they diuined the destruction of their country. They honoured another Zemes in the likeness of a woman, on whom waited two other like men, as they were ministers to her. One of these, executed the office of a mediator to the other Zemes, which are vnder the power, and commandement of this woman, to raise wyndes, cloudes, and rayne. The other is also, at her commandement a messenger to the other Zemes, which are ioyned with her in gouernance, to gather together the waters which fall from the high hills to the valletes, that being loosed, they may with force burst out into great foudes, and ouerflowe the countrey, if the people do not giue due honour to her Image. There remaineth yet one thing worthy to be noted, wherewith we will make an end of this booke: It is a thing well knowne, and yet freshe in memorie among the inhabitants of the Iland, that there was sometime two kings (of the which one was the father of Guarrionexius, of whom wee made mention before) which were wont to abstaine sine dietes together continually from meate & drinke, to know somewhat of their Zemes of things to come, and that for this fasting being acceptable to their Zemes, they received answer of them, that within few yeres there should come to the Iland a nation of men couered with apparrell, which should destroy all the customes and ceremonies of the Iland, and either slay all their children, or bring them into seruitude. The common sort of the people vnderstoode this oracle to be ment of the Canibales, & therefore when they had any knowledge of their coming, they ever fled, and were fully determined neuer more to adventure the battayle with them. But when they sawe that the Spanyardes hadde entred into the Ilande, consulting among themselves of the matter, they concluded that this was the nation which was ment by the oracle. Wherein, their opinion deceiued them not, for they are nowe all subiect to the Christians, all such being slayne as stobernely resisted: Nor yet remaineth there any memorie of their Zemes, for they are all brought into Spayne, that wee might see certified of their illusions of euill spirites and Idolles, the which you your selfe (most noble Prince) haue seene and felt when I was present with you. I let passe many things because you put me in remembrance, that to morowe you take your Iornay towards your country, to bring home the queene your aunt, whom you accompanied hither, at the commandement of king Frederike your vncle. Wherefore I bid you farewell for this time, desiring you to remember your Martir, whom you haue compelled in the name of the king your vncle, to gather these few things out of a large field of histories.

Wandering  
image.

A woman Zemes  
of great power.  
Ministers.

A marvellous  
Iudice of the  
dreyk.

The Idoles  
abolished.

The tenth and last booke of the first Decade, as a conclusion of the former bookes written to Inacus Lopez Mendocius, Countie of Tendilla, & viceroi of Granada.

AT the first beginning and newe attempte, when Colonus had taken vpon him the enterpryse to searche the Ocean sea, I was earnestly moued and required by the letters of certaine of my frendes and noble men of Rome, to wryte those things as should happen. For they whispered with great admiration, that where as there were many newe landes founde, and nations which liued naked and after the lawe of nature, they could heare no certainty thereof, being greatly desirous of the same. In this meane time had fortune ouerthrowne Ascanius (his brother Lodouike beeing cast out of Millane by the Frenchmen) whose auctoritie would not suffer me to be idle, but to reuer to haue my pen in hand. To him I wrote the two first bookes of this decade, beside many other of my hid cōmentaries which you shall see shortly: but fortune did no lesse withdraw my mind from writing, then disturb Ascanius frō power. As he was tossed with contrary stormes, and ceased to perswade mee: euen so wacked my feruētnesse to enquire any further, vntill the yere of Christ 1500, when the Court remained at Granada where you are viceroi: At which time, Lodouike (the Cardinall of Aragonie, newiew to king Frederike by his brothers side (being at Granada with the queene) Partheopea the suster of our Catholique king) brought me king Frederikes letters; whereby he exported me to finish the other bookes which folowed the two epistel bookes; which I wryte to Ascanius: For they both acknowledged that they had the copie of all that I wryte to cardinall Ascanius: And albeit that euen then I was sicke (as you knowe) yet I tooke I the burden vpon me, and applied my selfe to wryting, I haue therefore chosen these fewe thinges, out of a great heape of such as seemed to me must worthy to be noted among the large wrytinges of the authours and searchers of the same. Wherefore, if so much as you haue enduored to wreat out of my hands the whole example of all my workes; to adde the same to the innumerable volumes of your librarie, I thought it good nowe to make a brieue rehearsall of those things which were done from that yere of a thousand and five hundred, euen vnto this yere which is the tenth from that: For I entend to write more largely of these things hereafter, if God graunt me life: I had written a whole booke by it selfe of the superstitions of the people of the Iland, supposing therewith to haue accomplished the whole Decade consisting of ten bookes. But I haue added this to the tenth as a perpendicular lyne, and as it were a backe guide or reterward to the other: So that you may knitte the first tenth to the nyth, & impute this to occupye the place of the tenth to fill vp the Decade. This order I haue appointed, lest I should be compelled often times to wryte ouer the whole worke, or send you the same defaced with blottes and interlining. But nowe let vs come to our purpose. The ship-maisters and mariners ran ouer many coastes during these ten yeres: But euer folowed such as were first found by Colonus: For rasing continually, alonge by the trace of Paria, which they beleewe to be part of the firme land or continent of East India, some of them chaunced vpon certaine new landes towards the East, and some toward the West, in which they found both gold and frankensence. For they brought from thence many iewels and ouches of gold, and great plentie of frankensence which they had of the people of those countreys, partly for exchanging of some of our thinges, and partly by force, ouer coming them by warre. Yet in some places, although they be naked, they ouercame our men, and slew whole armies. For they are exceeding fierce, and vse venomous arrowes, and long stanes like iauelens, made hard at the ende with fire. They found many beastes, both creepyng and foure footed much differing from ours, varyable and of sundrye shapcs innumerable: yet not hurtfull; except Lions, Tigers, and Crocodiles. This I meane in sundry regions of that great lande of Paria; but not in the Ilandes; no, not so much as one, for all the beastes of the Ilandes, are meeke and without hurt, except men, which (as wee haue sayde) are in many Ilandes denouters of mens flesh. There are also diuers kindes of soules. And in many places battes of such bignes, that they are equal withall turtle doues: These battes, haue oftentimes assaulted men in the night in their

Ascanius is the brother of the Frenchmen.

The Iland following, occupieth the space of ten yeres.

This part of the firme land of East India, called Paria.

The ferocious of the indyans.

their sleepe, and so biten them with their venemous teeth, that they have ben thereby almost drinen to madnes, in so much that they have ben compelled to flee from such places, from rauenous Harpies. In an other place, where certaine of them slept in the night season on the sands by the seaside a monster comming out of the sea, came vpon one of them secretlye, and caryed him away by the middel out of the sight of his fellows, to whom he cried in vaine for helpe, vntill the beast leapt into the sea with her pray. It was the kinges pleasure that they should remaine in these landes, and builde townes and fortresses: whereinto they were so well willing that diuers profered them selues to take vpon them the subding of the land, making great suite to the king that they might bee appointed thereto: The coast of this tracte is exceeding great and large, and the regions and landes thereof extende marueilous farre, so that they affirme the continent of these regions with the lands about the same, to be thrise as bigge as al Europe, beside those landes that the Portugales haue found southward, which are also exceeding large. Therefore doubtlesse Spayne hath deserued great praye in these our dayes, in that it hath made knowne vnto vs so many thousandes of Antipodes which lay hid before, and vnknowne to our forefathers: and hath thereby ministered so large matter to vryte of, to such learned wittes as are desirous to set forth knowledge to the commodities of men to whom I opened a way when I gathered these things rudely together as you see: the which, neuertheless I truste you will take in good part, as well for that I can not adorne my rudenesse with better vesture, as also that I neuer tooke pen in hand to write like an historiographer, but onely by epistles scribed in haste, to satisfie them, from whose commaundementes I might not drawe backe my foote. But nowe I haue digressed enough, let vs now therefore returne to Hispaniola. Our men haue found by experyence, that the bread of the land is of smal strength to such as haue bin vsed to our bread made of wheat, and that their strengthes were much decayed by vsing of the same: wherefore the king hath late commaunded that the wheate should be sowne there in indians places, & at sundry times of the yeere: It groweth into hollow reedes, with few eares, but there very bygge and fruitefull. They finde the like softnesse and delicatenesse to be in hearbes which growe there to the height of corne. Neat or cattel, become of bigger stature and exceeding fat, but their fleshe is more vsuorie; and their bones (as they say) either without marrow, or the same to be very waterish: but of hogges and swyne, they affirme the contrary that they are more wholesome, & of better taste, by reason of certaine wilde frutes which they eate, being of much better nourishment then waste. There is almost none other kind of fleshe commonly sold in the market. The multitude of hogges are exceedingly increased, and become wilde as soone as they are out of the swine herdes keeping. They haue such plentie of beettes and fowles, that they shall hereafter haue no neede to haue any brought from other places. The increase of all beastes growe bigger then the brood they came of; by reason of the ranknes of the pasture, although their feeding be only of grasse, with out either barley or other graine. But we haue said enough of Hispaniola: They haue now found that Cuba (which of long time they thought to haue bin firme land, for the greate length thereof) is an Iland: yet is it no maruaile that the inhabitants themselves told our men when they searched the length thereof, that it was without ende. For this nation being naked, and content with a little, and with the limittes of their owne countrey, is not greatly curious to knowe what their neighbours doe, or the largenesse of their dominion; nor yet knewe they if they were any other thing vnder heauen, beside that which they walked on with their feete, Cuba is from the East into the West, much longer then Hispaniola, and in breadth from the North to the South, much lesse then they supposed at the first: for it is very narrowe in respect of the length, and is for the most part verye fruitefull and pleasant. Eastwarde, not farre from Hispaniola, there lyeth an Iland lesse then Hispaniola more then by the halfe, which our men called Sancti Iohannis, breing in manner square, in this they founde exceeding riche golde mynes: but being nowe occupied with the golde mynes of Hispaniola, they haue not yet sent labourers into the Iland. But the plentie and reueneue of golde of all other regions, giue place to Hispaniola, where they giue themselves in manner to none other thing then to gather golde, of which worke

A man drowned  
of a monster  
of the sea

See the  
largeness of  
the new  
Ishlands

Antipodes

The nature of  
the plants  
whereof  
the Isthme  
and  
quaintes  
of  
Ishlands

Murder of  
beastes  
and  
fowles

Cuba an  
Ishland

The description  
of  
Cuba

The Ilands of  
Ishlands, of  
S. Iohannis,  
Golden mynes

this order is appointed. . . To every such wittie and skilful man as is put in trust to be a surveyour or overseer of these workes, there is assigned one or more kings of the land, with their subiectes. These kings according to their league, come with their people at certaine times of the yeere, and resort every of them to the gold mines to the which hee is assigned, where they haue all manner of digging or mining tooles deliuered them, and every king with his menne, haue a certaine rewardes allowed them for their labour. For when they departe from the mynes, to sowing of corne, and other tyllage (wherunto they are addit, at certaine other tymes, least their foode should faile them) they receive for their labour, one a-jekkin, or a doublet, another a shirt, another a cloke or a cap for they now take pleasure in these thinges, and goe no more naked as they were wont to doe. And thus they use the helpe and labour of the inhabitants, both for the tyllage of their ground and in their golde mynes, as though they were their seruantes or bondemen. They beare this yoke of seruitude with an euill will, but yet they beare it: they call these hired labourers, Anabotias: yet the king doth not suffer that they should bee used as bondemen, and onely at his pleasure, they are set at libertie, or appoynted to worke. At suche time as they are called together of their kinges to worke (as souldiers or pyoners are assembled of their centurions) many of them steale away to the mountaynes and woodes, where they lye lurking, beeing content for that time to liue with the wilde fruites, rather then take the paynes to labour. They are docible and apte to learne, and haue nowe vterly forgotten their old superstitions. They beleue godly, and beare well in memory such thinges as they haue learned of our faith. Their kinges children are brought vp with the chiefest of our men, and are instructed in letters and good maners. When they are grown to mans age, they sende them home to their countreyes to be example to other, and especially to gouerne the people, if their fathers be dead, that they may the better set forth the Christian Religion, and keepe their subiectes in loue and obedience. By reason whereof, they come now by faire means & gentle persuasions, to the mynes which lye in two regions of the lande, about thirtie myles distant from the citie of Dominica, wherof the one is called Sancti Christophori: and the other beeing distant aboute fourseore and ten myles, is called Cibana, not farre from the chiefe hauen called Portus Regalis. These regions are very large, in the whiche in many places here and there, are found sometime euen in the vpper crust of the earth, and sometime among the stones, certaine rounde pieces or plates of golde, sometime of small quantytie, and in some places of great weight: in so much that there hath beene founde round pieces of three hundred pounde weight and one of three thousande, three hundred and tenne pounde weight, the whiche (as you hearde) was sent whole to the King in that ship in the whiche the gouernour Rodericus was commyng home into Spaine, the ship with all the men beeing drowned by the way, by reason it was ouer laden with the weight of gold and multitude of men, albeit, there were mo then a thousand persons which saw and handled the piece of gold. And whereas here I speake of a pounde, I doe not meane the common pound, but the summe of the dutate of golde, with the coyue called Triens, which is the third part of a pound, which they call Pesus. The summe of the weight hereof, the Spanyardes call Penna Castelanum Aureum. All the gold that is digged in the mountaynes of Cibana and Port Regale, is caryed to the tower of Conception, where shoppes with all things appertaining are ready furnished to fine it, melt it, and cast it into wedges. That doone, they take the kinges portion thereof, which is the sifte part, and so restore to every man his owne whiche hee gotte with his labour. But the golde which is founde in saint Christophorus myne and the regions there about, is caryed to the shoppes which are in the village called Bonacuentura. In these two shops, is moulten yeerely about three hundred thousand pound weight of gold. If any man bee knowne deceitfully to keepe backe any portion of golde, wherof he hath not made the kinges officers priuie, he forfeiteth the same for fine. There chaunceth among them oftentimes many contentions & controuersies, the which vlesse the magistrates of the land doe finishe, the case is removed by appellation to the high counsel of the court, from whose sentence it is not lawfull to appeale in all the dominions of Castile. But let vs nowe returne to the newe landes, from whence wee haue digressed: They are innumerable, diuers, and

Tylo

They abhorre  
labour,  
They  
revellicke.The 1  
degrees  
drye.The two chief  
golde mines of  
Hispania.A ready ship  
wrecke.Penna  
The sifting  
and distributing  
of gold.Three hundred  
thousand weight  
of gold moulten  
yeerely in His-  
pania.

The newe landes.

and exceeding fortunate. Wherefore the Spanyardes in these our dayes, and their noble enterprises, doe not give place either to the fables of Saturnus, or Hercules, or any other of the ancient princes of famous memory, which were canonized among the goddes, called Heroes, for their searching of new landes and regions, and bringing the same to better culture and civillitie. O God, how large & faire shall our posteritie see the Christian region extended? how large a campe have they now to wander in, which by the true nobilitie that is in them, or moved by vertue, will attempt, eyether to deserve like praye among men or reputation of well doing before God? What I conceite in my minde of these things, I am not able to expresse with penne or tongue. I wil now therfore so make an end of this perpendicular conclusion of the whole Decade, as minding hereafter, to search and gather every thing particularly, that I may at further leasure write the same more at large. For Colonus the Admiral, with four ships, and a hundred, threescore, and ten men, appointed by the king, discovered in the yeere of Christ, 1520. the land ouer against the West corner of Cuba, distant from the same about a hundred and thirte leagues, in the midst of which tract, lieth an land called Guanassa. From hence hee directed his voiage backwarde toward the East, by the shore of that coast, supposing that he should have found the coastes of Paria, but it chanced otherwise. It is sayd also that Vincencius Agnes (of whom we have spoken before) and one Iohannes Daiz (with divers others, of whose voyages I have as yet no certaine knowledge) have overrunne those coastes: but if God graunt me life, I trust to knowe the truth hereof, and to aduertise you of the same. Thus fare ye well.

The ende of the first Decade.

The first Chapter of the seconde Decade, to Leo Bishop of Rome, the tenth of that name, of the supposed continent or firme lande.

Since the time that Galeatius Butrigarius of Bononie, and Iohannes Cursius of Florence (most holy father) came to the Catholique King of Spayne, the one of your holiness ambassador, and the other for the assayes of his common wealth, I was ever for the moste part in their company, and for their vertues and wisdom had them in great reuerence. And whereas they were greatly given to studie, and continuall reuolving of diuers actions, they chanced vpon certayne bookes negligently let slyppe out of my handes, entreating of the large landes, and regions hitherto lying hid, and almost West Antipodes, found of late by the Spanyardes. Yet being allured & delighted with the newnesse and straungenesse of the matter although rudely adourned, they commended the same, therewith earnestly desiring me in their owne names, and requiring me in the name of your holiness, to adde herunto al such things as were found after that time; and to give them a copie thereof, to send to your holiness, that you might thereby understand, both how great commodities is chanced to the progenie of mankind, as also increase of the militant congregation in these our dayes, by the fortunate enterpryses of the kings of Spayne. For like as rased and vained tables, are apte to receive what fourmes soever are first drawne thereon by the hande of the painter, even so these naked and simple people, doe soone receive the customes of our religion, and by conversation of our men, shake of their fierce and native barbarousnesse. I have thought it good therefore to satisfie the request of these wise men, especially vsing the authoritie of your name, whereunto not to haue obeyed, I should esteeme my selfe to haue committed a haynous offence. Wherefore I will nowe briefly, rehearse in order, what hid coastes the Spanyardes overrun, who were the authors thereof, where they rested, what further hope they brought, and finally what great things those tractes do promise in time to come. In the declaration of my decade of the Ocean, which is now printed and dispersed throughout Christendome vnwares to mee, I described howe Christophorus Colonus founde those landes whereof we haue spoken, and that turning from thence towards the left hand southward, he chanced into great regions of laudes, and large seas distant from the Equinoctiall lynce, onely from five degrees to tenne: where he founde broad riuers and exceeding high mountaynes

Entering of the Christian religion. The original of true nobility.

The Fables of Oasants.

The Voyages of Iohannes Daiz.

West Antipodes.

The increase of the Christian congregation.

Of the descent from the Episcopate, from

mountaines covered with snowe, and harde by the sea banks, where were many commodious and quiet haucns. But Colonus being nowe departed out of this life, the King beganne to take care, how those lauds might be inhabited with Christian men, to the increase of our faith: Whereupon hee gave lycence by his letters patentes to all such as would take the matter in hand, and especially to two, whereof Diego Nicuesa was one, & the other was Alphonsus Fogeda. Wherefore about the Ides of December, Alphonsus departing first with three hundred souldiers from the Ilande of Hispaniola (in the which wee said, the Spaniards had builded a city, & plantid their habitation) & sayling in manner full South he came to one of the hauens found before, which Colonus named Portus Carthaginiis, both because of the land stading against the course of the stream, and also that by reason of the largnes of the place and bending sides, it is much like to the haue of Spayne called Carthago. The inhabitants call the Ilande Codego, as the Spanyardes call the Ilande of their Ianen Scombria. This region is called of the inhabitants Curamairi, in the which they affirme both the menne and women to bee of goodly stature, but naked. The menne haue their hayre cutte rounde\* by their eares, but the women weare it long, both the men and women are very good archers. Our men found certayne trees in this prouince, which beare great plentie of sweete apples, but hurtfull, for they turne into woormes when they are eaten. Especially the shadowe of the tree is contagious, for such as sleepe vnder it any time, haue their heads swolme, and loose their sight: but if they sleepe but awhile, their sight commeth agayne after a fewe dayes. This port is distant foure hundred, fiftie & sixe myles from the porte of Hispaniola which the Spanyardes call Beata, in the which also they furnish themselves when they prepare any voyage to seeke other newe landes. When Fogeda had entred into the haue, hee enuaded, slue, and spoyled the people, whom hee founde naked and scattered: for they were giuen him for a pray by the Kinges letters patentes, because they had bin before tyme cruell against the Christians, and could neuer bee assured to permitte them quietly to come within their dominions. Here they found golde, but in no great quantitie, nor yet that pure: they make of it certaine breast plates and brooches which they weare for comelynesse. But Fogeda not content with these spoyles, vsing certayne captiues, which hee hadde taken before, for guides, entred into a village twelue myles distant from the sea side further into the lande, into the which they were fled when he first inuaded. Here he found a naked people, but apte to warre: for they were armed with targettes, shields, long swordes made of woode, and bowes with arrowes typt with bone, or hardened with fire. As soone as they had espied our men, they with their ghestes whō they had receiued, assailed them with desperate myndes, being therto more earnestly prouoked, because holding the calamitie of these which fled vnto them, by the violence done to their women and children in the spoyle and slaughter. In this conflict our men had the ouerthrowe: in the which, one Iohannes de Lacosa (being in authoritie next vnto Fogeda the captiayne, and also the first that gathered golde in the sandes of Veraba) was slaine with fiftie souldiers: for these people infecte their arrowes with the deadly poyson of a certayne herbe. The other with their captaine Fogeda, being discomforted, fledde to the shippes. While they remained thus in the haue of Carthago, sorrowfull and pensieue for the losse of their companions, the other captiayne Diego Nicuesa, (whom they left in Hispaniola, preparing himselfe towards the voyage in the haue Beata) came to them with fife shippes, and seuen hundred fourscore and fiftene men. For the greater number of souldiers followed Nicuesa, both because free libertie was giuen to them to choose which of the captiaynes they list, and also that by reason of his age, hee was of greater authoritie: But especially because the rnmouse was that Bergua being by the Kinges commission appointed to Nicuesa, was richer in golde then Veraba assigned to Alphonsus Fogeda. Therefore, at the arriual of Nicuesa, they consulted what was best to bee done: and determined first to reuenge the death of their fellows. Whereupon, setting their battayle in arraye, they marched in the night towards them which slue Cossa with his companions. Thus the Spanyards stealing on them vnwares in the laste watch of the night, and encompassing the village where they lay, consisting of a hundred houses and more, hauing also in it thrise as many of

from degrees to  
the South of  
Columbus.  
A general  
leace.

The navigation  
of Alphonsus  
Fogeda.

The region of  
Curamairi.

Apples which  
cause leues  
& woormes.  
A tree whose  
shadowe is  
hurtful.

Whylke peo-  
ple.

Arrows in-  
fectid with  
poyson.

The navigation  
of Diego  
Nicuesa.

The regions of  
Verba and  
Bergua.

The Spanyards  
stealing the  
watch of theyr  
companions.

their neighboures as of themselves, they set it on fire, with diligent watche that none might escape. And thus in short time they brought them and their houses to ashes, and made them paye the ransome of bloude with bloud: for of a great multitude of men and women, they spared onely sixe children, all other being destroyed with fire or swoorde, except fewe which escaped priuily, they learned by these reserved children, that Cosca and his fellows were cut in peeces, and eaten of them that slue them. By reason whereof, they suppose that these people of Camairi tooke their original of the Caribes, otherwise called Canibales. Here they founde some golde among the ashes. For the hunger of golde did no lesse incourage our men to adventure these perilles and labours, then did the possessing of the landes. These things thus finished, and the death of Cosca and his fellows reuenged, they returned to the haueu. After this, Fogeda which came first, first likewise departing with his armie to seeke Vraba, committed to his gouernance, sayled by an Ilande called Fortis, lying in the midway betweene Vraba and the haueu of Carthago: into the which descending, he found it to bee an Ilande of the Canibales, bringing with him, from thence two men and seven women, for the residue escaped. Here hee founde in the cottages of them, that stode, a hundred, fourescore, and tenne drammes of golde, caste and wrought in diuers formes. Saying forwaide from hence, hee came to the East coastes of Vraba, which the inhabitants call Caribana, from whence the Caribes or Canibales of the landes are sayd to haue their names and originall. Here he began to build a fortresse, and a village neere vnto the same, therein intending to place their first habitation. Shortly after, being instructed by certayne captiues, that there was about twelue myles further within the lande, a certaine village called Tirufi, hauing in it a riche golde myne, he determined to destroy the village, to the which when he came, he found the inhabitants ready to defend their right, and that so stoutly, that encountering with them, he was repulsed with shame and damage: for these people also vse bowes and venomous arrowes. Within a fewe dayes after, being enforced for lacke of victualles to invade another village, hee himselfe was strycken in the thygh with an arrowe. Some of his fellows say, that he was thus wounded of one of the inhabitants, whose wife he had ledde away captiue beefore. They say also that he had first friendly communed with Fogeda for redeeming of his wife, and had appoynted a day to bring a portiõ of golde for her ransome, and that hee came at the day assigned, not laden with golde, but armed with bowes and arrowes, with eight other confederate with him which had bene before partakers of the iniuries done to them first at the haueu of Carthago, and afterward at the burning of the village, in reuenge whereof, they had desperately consecrated themselves to death: But the matter being knowne, the captayne of this conspiracie was slayne of Fogeda his companions, and his wife detained in captiuitie. Fogeda also through the maliciousnesse of the venime, consumed and was dried vp by little and little. While these things chaunced thus, they espied Nicuesa the other captaine, to whom Beragua the region of the West side of Vraba was assigned to inhabit. He gaue wind to his sayles to take his voyage towarde Beragua, the day after that Fogeda departed out of the haueu of Carthago. He with his armie that he brought with him, coasted euer along by the shore, vntill he came to the gulfe Coiba, whose kinges name is Careta. Here hee founde their language to bee in manner nothing like vnto that of Hispaniola, or of the haueu of Carthago: whereby hee perceived that in this tracte, there are many languages differing from their owne borderers. Nicuesa departing from Coliba, went to the prouince or Licutenantsship of Fogeda his companion. Within a fewe dayes after, hee himselfe entring into one of those marchant shippes which the Spaniards call Carauelas, commaunded that the bigger vessels should folow farre behind. Hee tooke with him two smal shippes commonly called Bergandines or Brigandines. I haue thought it good in al the discourse of these bookes, to vse the common names of things, because I had rather bee plaine then curious, especially forasmuch as there doe daily arise many new things vnknown to the antiquitie, whereof they haue left no true names. After the departure of Nicuesa, there came a shippe from Hispaniola to Fogeda, the captaine whereof, was one Barnardino de Calauer, who had stolne the same from Hispaniola with threescore men, without leaue or aduice of the Admirall & the other gouernours. With the

A great  
Isla.Candiles.  
The haueu  
of golde.The Ilande  
Fortis.

Wroughte gold.

Nicuesa.

The gulfe  
Coiba.Barnardino de  
Calauer.

victualles

victualles which this shippe brought, they refreshed them selves, and somewhat recovered their strengthes, much weakened for lacke of meat. Fogeda his companions whispered and muttered against him daily more and more, that he scelde them forth with vaine hope: for he had told them that he left Anciscus in Hispaniola (whom hee chose by the kinges commission to be a iudge in causes, because hee was learned in the law) to come shortly after him with a ship laden with victualles, and that hee marueiled that hee was not come many dayes since. And herein he said nothing but truth for when he departed, he left Anciscus halfe ready to followe him. But his felowes supposing that all that he had saide of Anciscus had ben fained, some of them determined priuily to steale away the two Brigandines frō Fogeda, & to returne to Hispaniola. But Fogeda hauing knowledge thereof, preuented their deuice: for leauing the custody of the fortresse with a certaine noble gentleman called Francisco Pizarro, he himselfe thus wounded, with a fewe other in his company, entered into the shippe whereof we spake before, and sayed directly to Hispaniola, both to heale the wounde of his thigh, if any remedie might be found, and also to knowe what was the cause of Anciscus tarying: leauing hope with his felowes (which were now brought from three hundred to threescore, partly by famine, and partly by warre) that he would returne within the space of xv. dayes, prescribing also a condition to Pizarro & his companions, that it should not be imputed to them for treason, to depart from thence if hee came not agayne at the day appointed, with victualles, and a new supply of men. These xv. dayes beinge nowe past, whereas they could yet heare nothing of Fogeda, and were daily more and more oppressed with sharpe hunger, they entred into the two Brigandines which were left, and departed from that land. And as they were nowe sayling on the mayne sea toward Hispaniola, a tempest sodainly arising, swallowed one of the Brigandines with all that were therein. Some of their felowes affirme, that they plainly sawe a fish of huge greatnesse, swimming about the Brigandine (for those seas bring forth great monsters) and that with a stroke of her tayle, shee broke the rudder of the ship in peeces, which sayling, the Brigandine beinge driuen about by force of the tēpest, was drowned not farre from the land called Fortis, lying betwene the coastes of the haueu Carthago and Vraba. As they of the other Brigandine would haue landed in the Ilande, they were driuen backe with the bowes and arrowes of the ferce barbarians. Proceeding therefore on their voyage, they mette by chance with Anciscus, betwene the haueu of Carthago, and the region of Cuchibacoa in the mouth of the riner which the Spaniards called Boium gatti, that is, the house of the catte, because they sawe a catte first in that place Boium, in the tongue of Hispaniola, is a house. Anciscus came with a shippe laden with all things necessarye, both for meate, and drinke, and apparell, brynging also with him another Brigandine. This is hee for whose cominge the captaine Fogeda looked for so long. He loosed anker from Hispaniola in the Ides of September: & the fourth day after his departure, hee espied certaine high mountaynes the which for the abundance of snow which lieth there continually in the tops thereof the Spaniards called it Serra Neua, whic Colonus the first finder of those regions passed by the same. The first day he sayled by Os Dracopis. They which were in the Brigandine, tolde Anciscus that Fogeda was returned to Hispaniola: but Anciscus supposing that they had fained that tale, commanded them by the authority of his commission to turne backe agayne. The Brigandines obeyed & folowed him: yet made they humble suite vnto him that hee would graunt them that with his fauour they might eyther goe agayne to Hispaniola, or that he himselfe would bringe them to Nicuesa: and that they would for his gentleness declared towarde them in this behalfe, rewarde him with two thousand drammes of golde: for they were rich in golde, but poore in bread. But Anciscus assented to neither of their requestes, affirming that he might by no meanes goe any other way, then to Vraba the prouince assigned to Fogeda. Whereupon, by their conduct he tooke his voyage directly towarde Vraba. But nowe let it not seeme tedious to your holynesse, to heare of one thing worthy to be remembered, which chaunced to this Lieutenant Anciscus as he came thither: for he also cast anker in the coastes of the region of Carrauari which we sayde to be famous, by reason of the haueu of Carthago, and of the goodly stature, strength and beauty both of men and women beinge

Fogeda returned to Hispaniola.

Tanaka.

A Brigandine covered with the rudder of a ship.

The region of Cuchibacoa.

Serra Neua. Os Dracopis.

Rich in gold and poore in bread.

being in the same. Here he sent certaine to goe a land on the shore both to fetch fresh water and also to repaire the ship boate which was sore bruised. In this meane time, a great multitude of the people of the countrey, armed after their maner, came about our men, as they were occupied about their businesse, and stood in a readinesse to fight, for the space of three dayes continually, during which time, neither durst they set vpo our men, nor our men assault them. Thus both parties keeping their array, stooode still three whole dayes, the one gazing on the other. Yet all this time our men applied their worke, placing the ship-wrightes in the midst of their armie. As they stooode thus amazed; two of our company went to fill their water pottes at the mouth of the river, neere vnto them both, where suddenly there came forth against them a captayne of the barbarians with tenne armed men, which inclosed them, and with terrible countenance bent their arrowes against them, but shotte them not of. One of our men fledde, but the other remained, calling his fellowe againe, and rebuking him for his fearefulness. Then he spake to the barbarians in their owne language, which he had learned being conversant with the captiues that were caryed from thence along before. They marueyling to heare a stranger speake in their natiue tongue, put of their fiercenesse, and fell to friendly communication, demanding who were the captaynes of that company whiche were arrayed in their lande. Hee answered that they were strangers passing by, and that he marueiled why they would attempt to driue them from their coastes, and disturbe their ships arguing them of folly and crueltie, and further threatening their ruine and destruction, except they would vse themselves more friendly towards them. For hee aduertised them that there would shortly come into their lande armed men, in number like vnto the sands of the sea, and that doo their vtter destruction, not onely if they resisted them not, but also except they receiued them, and entertayned them honourably. In the meane time, Anciscas was enforment that his men were deteyned: wherefore suspecting some deccite, hee brought forth all his target men, for feare of their venomous arrowes, and setting them in battel array, hee marched forwarde towards them whiche stayed his men. But hee whiche communed with the barbarians, giuing him a signe with his hande to proceed no further, he stayed, and calling to him the other, he knewe that all was safe: for the barbarians profered him peace, because they were not they whom they suspected them to haue bin, meaning by Fogeda & Nicuesa, who had spoyled the village stauding there by the sea side, and caryed away many captiues, and also burnt another village farther within the lande. And therefore (as they sayde) the cause of their coming thither, was to reuenge those iniuries, if by any meanes they could, yet that they would not exercise their weapons against the innocent: for they sayde, it was vngodly to fight against any, not being prouoked. Laying a part therefore their bowes and arrowes, they entertained our men gently and gaue them great plenty of salted fishe, and bread of their countrey, and filled their vessels with Sider made of their countrey fruites and seedes, not inferior to wine in goodness. Thus Anciscas hauing entred into friendship, & made a league of peace with the inhabitants of Caramajeri, which were before sore prouoked by other captaynes, he lanched from that land, and directed his course to Vraba by the Hande of Fortis, hauing in his ship a hundred and fiftie fresh menne, which were substituted in the place of suche as were dead: also twelue Mares, and manie swine, and other beastes both males and females for increase. Lykewise, fyfthe peeces of ordinaunce, with great multitude of targettes, swordes, ianclins, and such other weapons for the warres, but all this with euil speede, and in an euill hour: for as they were euen now entering into the haue, the gouernour of the shippe which sate at the helme, stroke the shippe vpon the sandes, where it was so fast enclosed and beaten with the waues of the sea, that it opened in the midst, and all lost that was therein, a thing surely miserable to beholde: for of all the victualles that they had, they saued only twelue barrells of meale, with fewe cheeses, and a litle basket bread, for all the beastes were drowned, and they themselves escaped hardly and halfe naked, by helpe of the Brigandine and ship boate, carying with them onely a fewe weapons. Thus they fell from one calamitic into another, being nowe more carefull for their liues then for golde. Yet being brought aliue and in health to that land which they

The use of tar-  
gets against  
venomous  
arrowes.

The barbarians  
haue respect to  
justice.

Salted fishe,  
Wine of Eracia  
and seedes.

Artillery.

Anciscas ship  
wreckt.

so greatly desired, they could do no lesse then to provide for the sustenting of their bodies, because they could not live onely by ayre: and whereas their owne failed they must needs live by other mens. Yet among these so many adversities, one good chance offered itselfe vnto the: for they founde, not farre from the sea side, a groue of Date trees, among <sup>A groue of date trees</sup> the which, and also among the reeke or weedes of the marshes, they espied a multitude of wilde bores, with whose fleshe they fed themselves wel-certaine dayes. These they say to be <sup>wild bores</sup> lesse then ours, and with so short tayles that they thought they had ben cut of. They differ also from ours in their secte: for their hinder secte are whole vntiquid, and also without any hoofe. But they affirme that they haue prouided by experience, their fleshe to be of better taste and more wholesome then ours. During this time they fed also of Dates, & the rootes of young Date trees, which they ate likewise in Cisile and Granata, where they call the Palmitos, of the leaues whereof they make beewemes in Rome. Sometimes also they ate of the apples of that region, which haue the taste of prunes, and leaue also stones <sup>Apples of a strange kinde</sup> in them, and are but little and of redde colour: I suppose them to be of that kind whereof I ate in the citie of Alexandria in Egypt, in the month of Aprill, the trees whereof, the Iewes that dwelle there, being learned in the lawe of Moses, affirme to be the Cedars of Libanus, which beare old fruites and newe all the yeere, as doth the orange tree. These apples are good to be eaten, and haue a certaine sweetness mixte with gentill sharpnesse, as haue the fruites called Sorbes. The inhabitants plant these trees in their orchards and gardenes, and norishe them with greate diligence as we doe cherries, peaches, and quinces. This tree in leaues, height, and trunk, is very like vnto the tree that beareth the fruit called Zizipha, which the Apothecaries call Iuiuba. But whereas now the wilde bores began to faile them, they were againe enforced to consult and provide for the time to come: Wherevpon with their whole armye, they entered further into the land. The Canibales of this prouince, are most expert archers. Ascanius had in his company, a hundred men. They mette by the way with only three men of the inhabitants, naked, and armed with bowes & venomous arrowes, who without all feare, assayed our men fiercely, wounded manye, and slae manye, and when they emptyed their quinces, fledde, as swiftly as the winde: For (as we haue said) they are exceeding swifte of foote by reason of their loose going from their childes age, they affirme that they lette slip no arrowe out of their bowes in vaine. Our men therefore returned the same way that they came, much more vnfortunate then they were before, and consulted among themselves to leaue the lãd, especially because the inhabitants had ouerthrowne the fortesse which Fogeda builded, and had burnt thirtie houses of the village, as soone as Pizzarus and his company left of Fogeda, and forsaked the land. By this occasion therefore, being driven to seeke further, they had intelligence that the Westside of that gulf of Vraha, was more fruitful & better to inhabit. Wherefore, they sent the one halfe of their men thither with the brigandine, and left the other neere to the sea side on the East part. This gulf, is fourteene miles in breadth, and howe much the further it enterth into the firme land, it is so much the narrower. Into the gulf of Vraha, there fall many riuers, but one (as they say) more-fortunate then the riuier of Nilus in Egypt. This riuier is called Darien, vpon the bankes whereof, being very fruitfull of trees and grasse, they intended to plante their newe colonye or habitation. But the inhabitants maruelling at the brigandine being bigger then their canoas, and specially at the sayles thereof, first sent away their children and weakest sort of their people with their baggage and houshold stuffe, and assembled all such together both men and women, as were meete for the warres. Thus being armed with weapons and desperate mindes they stode in a readynesse to fight, and taryed the coming of our men vpon a little hill, as it were to take the advantage of the ground: our men iudged them to be about fye hundred in number. Then Anciscus the captayne of our men, and Lieutenaint in the steede of Fogeda, setting his men in order of battayle aray, and with his whole company kneeling on his knees, they all made humble prayers to GOD for the victorie, and a vowe to the image of the blessed virgin which is honoured in Cisile, by the name of Sancta Maria Antiqua, promising to sende her many golden gyftes, and a straunger of that country also, to name the

the village Sancta Maria Antiqua after her name: likewise to erecte a temple called by the same name, or at the least to dedicate the king of that prouince his pallace to that vse, if it should please her to assist them in this dangerous enterprise. This done, al the souldiers toke an oth, that no man should turne his backe to his enemies. The capitaine commanding them to be in readinesse with their targets and iaxelyns, and the trumpetter to blowe the battayle, they fiercely assailed their enemies with a larme: but the naked barbarians, not long able to abide the force of our men, were put to flight, with their king and captayne Cemacusc. Our men entred into the village, where they found plentie of meate, such as the people of the countrey vse, sufficient to asswage their present hunger, as bread made of rootes, with certayne fruites vnlike vnto ours, which they reserue for store, as we doe Chestnuttes. Of these people, the men are vtterly naked, but the women, from the nauel downward are couered with a fine cloth made of gossampine cotton. This region is vtterly without any sharpnesse of wynter for the mouth of this riuer of Darien, is onely eight degrees distant from the Equinoctiall line, so that the common sorte of our men, scarcely perceiue any difference in length betweene the day and night all the whole yeere: but because they are ignorant in astronomie, they can perceiue no small difference. Therefore wee neede not much passe if the degree differ somewhat from their opinion, forasmuch as the difference cannot bee great. The day after that they arriued at the lande, they sayled along by the riuer, where they found a great thicket of reedes, continuing for the space of a myle in length, supposing (as it chanced in deede) that the borderers thereabout which had fled, had either lien lurking there, or els to haue hid their stuffe among those reedes: Whereupon, arming themselves with their targets, for feare of the people lying in ambushe, they searched the thicket diligently, and found it without men, but replenished with householde stuffe and golde. They founde also a great multitude of shetes, made of the silke or cottõ of the gossampine tree: likewise diuers kindes of vessels and tooles made of wood, and many of earth: also many brest plates of gold, and ouches wrought after their manner, to the summe of a hundred & two pound weight: for they also take pleasure in the beautie of golde, and worke it very artificially, though it bee not the price of things among them as with vs. They haue it out of other regions, for exchange of such things as their country bringeth forth: for such regions as haue plentie of bread and gossampine lacke golde, and such as bring forth golde are for the most part rough with mountaines and rockes, and therefore barren: and thus they exercise marchandies without the vse of money. Reioycing therefore with double gladnesse, aswell in that they say great likeness of golde, as also that fortune had offered them so fayre and fruitfull a country, they sent for their felowes whom they had left before in the East side of the gulfe of Vraba. Yet some say, that the ayre is there vnwholsome because that part of the region lieth in alowe valley, enuironed with mountaynes and maryshes.

The second Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

I Haue described to your holynesse where Fogeda with his company (to whom the large trates of Vraba was assigned to inhabite) entended to fasten their foote. Let vs now therefore leaue them of Vraba for a while, and returne agayne to Nicuesa, to whom the gouernance and Lieutenantschip of the most large prouince of Beragua (being the West side of the gulfe of Vraba) was appoynted. Wee haue declared howe Nicuesa, departing with one Caruel and two Brigandines, from Vraba the iurisdiction of his friend & companion Fogeda, directed his course westwarde to Beragua, leauing the bigger shippes somewhat behinde him, to followe him a farre of, but hee tooke this deuice in an euill houre, for he both lost his fellows in the night, and went past the mouth of the ryuer Beragua, which hee chiefly sought. One Lupus Olanus a Cantabrian, and gouernour of one of the great shippes, had the conduct of one of the Brigandines: hee coming behinde, learned of the inhabitants, which was the way Eastwarde to the gulfe of Beragua, oucrpassed and left behinde Nicuesa. Olanus therefore directing his course towarde the East, met with the other Brigandine, which hadde also wandered out of the way by reason of the darknes of the night.

The souldiers make an othe.

The barbarians are diuina to syde.

The riuer of Darien, but vii degrees from the Equinoctiall line.

Golde founde in a thicket of reedes. These places of golde.

The golden regions are for the most part barren.

Lupus Olanus.

night. The gouernour of this Brigandine, was one Petrus de Umbria. Thus both being glad of their meeting, they consulted what was best to bee done, and which way they could coniecture their gouernour had taken his voyage. After deliberation, they iudged that Nicuesa could no more lacke some to put him in remembrance of Beragua, then they themselves were mindfull hereof, hoping also to finde him there. They sayled therefore towarde Beragua, where they found within xvi. myles distant a riuer whiche Colonus named Lagartos, because it nourisheth great Lysards, which in the Spanishe tongue are called Lagartos. These Lysards are hurtful both vnto man and beast, and in shape much like vnto the Crocodiles of the riuer Nilus in Egypt. In this ryuer they founde their companions and fellowes of their error, lying at anker: with the great shyppes, whiche followed behinde by the gouernours commandement. Here the whole assembly being carefull and disquieted by reason of the gouernours error after consultation, by the aduice of the captaynes of the Brigandines, who had raised neere vnto the coastes of Beragua, they sailed directly thither. Beragua, in the language of the inhabitants of the same prouince, is as much to say, as the golden ryuer. The Region it selfe is also called by the same name, takinge name of the ryuer. In the mouth of this ryuer, the greatest vessels cast anker, and conueighed all their victualles and other necessaries to lande with their ship boates, and elected Lupus Olanus to bee the gouernour in steede of Nicuesa whom they had loste. By that aduice therefore of Olanus and the other vnder captaynes that all hope of departure might bee taken from the souldiers which they had now brought thither, & to make them the more willing to inhabit the lande, they vtterly forsooke and caste of those shyppes being more rotten for age, and suffered them to be shaken and broosed of the surges of the sea. Yet of their soundest planks, with other newe, made of the trees of that Region (whiche they say to bee exceeding bigge and high) they framed a newe carauell shortly after, which they might vse to serue for their necessitie. But Beragua was founde by the vnfortunate destenye of Petrus de Umbria. For hee, being a man of prompt wit and apt forwardnesse to attempte things (in whiche sometime fortune will beare a stroke notwithstanding our prouidence) tooke vpon him that aduention to search the shore, to the intent to finde a way for his fellowes where they might best come a land. For this purpose, he choose him xii. maryners, and went aboarde the ship boate which serued the greatest shyppes. The flowing of the sea, ragged and roared there, with a horryble whirling, as we reade of the dangerous place of Scylla in the sea of Cicilie, by reason of the huge & ragged rockes reaching into the sea, from which the waves rebounding with violence, make a great noyse and roughnesse on the water, which roughnesse or resflowing, the Spanyardes call Resacca. In these dangers wretched Umbria wrestled a while, but in shorte space, a waue of the sea almost as bygge as a mountayne, rebounding from the rockes, ouerwhelmed the boate; & decouered the same with the men, euen in the sight of their fellowes: So that of them all, onely one escaped by reason he was expert in swimming. For getting holde of the corner of a rocke, and susteyning the rage of the sea vntill the next day when it waxed calme, and the shore was drye by the fall of the water, he escaped and resorted to his companie. But Umbria with the other eleuen, were vtterly cast away. The residue of the companie, durst not committe themselves to the shyppe boate, but went stande with their brygantines. Where remainyng a fewe dayes, and sayling along by the ryer, they found certayne villages of the inhabitantes, which they call Mumu. Here they began to build a fortresse, and to sowe seedes after the manner of their country, in a certaine vale of fruitfull ground, because in other places the region is barren. As these things were thus doing in Beragua, one of their company standing vpon the top of a high rocke of especiall, and lifting his eyes towarde the West, began to crye. Lynnen sayles, lynnea sayles. And the neerer it drewe towarde him, he perceiued it to be a ship boate, comming with a litle sayle: yet receiued they it with much reioycing, for it was the fisher boate of Nicuesa his Carauel, and of capacitie to cary only fife men, and had now but three in it, which had stolne it from Nicuesa, because he refused to giue credit to them that he had passed Beragua, and left it behid him Eastwarde. For they seeing Nicuesa and his fellowes

Petrus de Umbria.

The ryuer Lagartos.

The golden ryuer of Beragua.

The catastrophe and death of Petrus de Umbria.

The dangerous place of Scylla in the sea of Cicilie.

to continue daily by famine, thought that they would prove fortune with that boate if their chance might be to finde Beragus, as in dede it was. Debating therefore with their felowes of these matters, they declared how Nicuesa erred and lost the Carauel by tempest, & that hee was now wandering among the marshes of vnknown coastes, full of miserie and in extreme penurie of all things, hauing nowe liued for the space of threescore and tenne dayes, only with herbes & rootes, & seldome with fruites of the country, contented to drinke water, and yet that oftentimes failing, because he was instant to trauayle Westwarde by foote, supposing by that meane to come to Beragus. Colonus the first finder of this mayne land, had coasted along by this tracte, and named it Gracia Dei, but thinhabitanes call it Cerabaro. Through this region, there runneth a ryuer, which our men named Sancti Mathei, distant from the West side of Beragus about an hundred and thirtie myles. Here I let passe the name of this riner, and of many other places by the names which the inhabitants vse, because our men are ignorant thereof. Thus Lupus Olanus the conductor of one of the ships of Nicuesa and now also vice Lieutenant in his steede, after that he had receiued this information of the Maryners, sent thither a Brigandine vnder their guiding: These Mariners therefore, which came in the fisher boote, founde Nicuesa, and brought them to the place where Olanus lay, whome at his coming he cast in prison, & accused him of treason, because he vsurped the authority of the Lieutenantship, and that for the desire he had to beare rule and be in authoritie, he tooke no care of his errours: also that he behaued himselfe negligently, demanding furthermore of him, what was the cause of his long delay. Likewise hee spake to all the vnder officers sharply, & with a troubled mind, and within fewe dayes after, commanded them to trusse vp their pockes, and make ready to depart. They desired him to quiet himselfe, and to forbear them a while, until they had reaped the corn that they had sown, which would shortly bee ripe: for all kinde of corne waxeth ripe there euery fourth month after it is sown. But hee vttly denied to take any whyt: but that hee would fourthwith depart from that vnfortunate lande, and plucked vp by the rootes all that euer was brought into the gulfe of Beragus, and commanded them to direct their course towards the East. After they had sayled about the space of sixteene myles, a certaine young man, whose name was Gregorie, a Geniues borne, and of a child brought vp with Colonus, called to remembrance: that there was a haven not farre from thence: and to proue his sayings true, hee gaue his felowes these tokens; that is that they should finde vpon the shore, an anker of a lost shipp halfe covered with sand, and vnder a tree next vnto the haueu a spring of cleare water. They came to the lande, found the anker and the spring, and commended the witte and memorie of the young man, that he only among many of the Maryners which had searched those coastes with Colonus, bore the thing so well in minde. This haueu Colonus called Portus Bellus. Where as in this voyage for lacke of victuals, they were sometimes enforced to goe a land, they were euil entreated of thinhabitanes: by reason whereof, their strengthes were so weakened with hunger, that they were not able to keepe warre against naked men, or scarcely to beare their harness on their backs: and therefore our men lost twentie of their companions, which were slayne with venemous arrowes. They consulted to leaue the one halfe of their felowes in the haueu of Portus Bellus, & the other part Nicuesa toke with him toward the East, where about twentie and eight miles from Portus Bellus, he intended to builde a fortresse hard by the sea side, vpon the poynt or cape, which in time past Colonus named Marmor, but they were so feeble by reason of long hunger, that their strength serued them not to susteyne suche labour, yet he erected a litle towre, able to resist the first assaulte of the inhabitants: this towre he called Nomen Dei. From the time that he left Beragus, what in the iourney among the sandie playnes then also for hunger, while he builded the towre, of the few which remayned alyue, hee lost two hundred. And thus by litle and litle, the multitude of seuen hundred, fourscore, and fye men was brought nowe to scarcely one hundred. Whye Nicuesa lyed with these fewe miserable men, there arose a contention among them of Vraba, as concerning the Lieutenantship: for one Vaschus Nannez, by the iudgement of all men, trusting more to his strength then wit, stirred vp certayne light felowes agaynst Ancisus, saying that Ancisus had

The miserable case of Nicuesa

The riner of S. Mathei

The rigorousness of Nicuesa

Corn waxeth ripe euery fourth month

The commendation of a young man brought vp with Colonus. Portus Bellus

Weakened of hunger

Cape Marmor

Nomen Dei

not the kinges letters patentes for that office, and that it was not sufficient that hee was appoynted by Fogeda, and therefore forbode that he should execute the office of the Lieutenantshyp, and willed them to choose certayne of their owne company, by whose counsaile and authoritie they might be governed. Thus being diuided into factions, by reason that Fogeda their captaine came not agayne, whom they supposed to be nowe dead of his venomous wound, they contended whether it were best to substitute Nicuesa in his place. The wisest sorte, such as were familiar with Nicuesa, & could not beare the insolecie of Vaschus-Nunnez, thought it good that Nicuesa should be sought out throughout al those coastes: for they had knowledge that he departed from Beragua, because of the barrennesse of the ground, and that by the example of Ancisus, and such other as had made shippwracke, it were possible that hee might wander in some secreete place, and that they could not be quiet in their mindes, untill they knewe the certaintie whether hee with his fellowes were alieue or dead. But Vaschus Nunnez, fearing least at the coming of Nicuesa, hee should not be had in authoritie among his fellowes, sayde they were mad men to thinke that Nicuesa lyued, and although hee were alieue, yet that they hadde no neede of his helpe: for hee avouched that there was none of his fellowes, that were not as nicete to rize as Nicuesa: While they were thus reasoning to and fro, one Rodericus Colmenaris arryued in those coastes with two great shippes, hauing in them threescore freshe men, with great plentie of victualles and apparell. Of the nauigation of this Colmenaris, I intend to speake somewhat more. He therfore departed from the hauen of Hispaniola, called Beata. (where they prepare and furnishe themselves which make any voyge into these landes) about the Ides of October, in the year. 1510. and landed the 9. of Nouember in a region in the large province of Paria, founde by Colonus betwene the hauen Carthago, & the region of Cuchibachoa. In this voyage, what by the roughnesse of the sea, and fiercenesse of the barbarians, he suffered many incommodities; for when his freshe water failed, he steyed to the mouth of a certayn riuer which the inhabitants call Gaura, being apt to receiue shippes. This riuer had his course from the toppe of an exceeding high mountayne covered with snowe, higher then the which, all the companions of this captayne Rodericus say, that they neuer sawe: And that by good-reason, if it were covered with snowe in that region, which is not past ten degrees distant from the Equinoctial lynce. As they began to draw water out of their ship boate, a certaine king made toward them, apparelled with vestures of Gossampine cotton, hauing twentie noble men in his company apparelled also; which thing seemed strange to our men, and not seene before in those parties. The kinges apparell hong loose from his shoulders to his elbowes, and from the girdle downewarde, it was much lyke a womans kytte, reaching euen to his heeles. As hee drewe neere toward our men, he seemed friendly to admonysh them to take none of the water of that ryuer, affirming it to be ynwholesome for men, and shewed them that not farre from thence, there was a ryuer, of good water. They came to the ryuer, and endeuouring to come neere the shore, they were dryuen backe by tempest. Also the burhuling of the sand, declared the sea to be but shalow ther: They were therefore enforced to returne to the first ryuer where they might safely cast anker. This king layde wayte for our men: for as they were filling their barrells, hee sette on them with about seuen hundred meene (as our men iudged) aimed after their manner, although they were naked: for onely the king and his nobled men were apparelled. They tooke away the shyp boate, and broke it in manner to claps: so fiercely assayling our men with their venomous arrowes, that they siewe of them fourtie and seuen, before they could coter themselves with their targets. For that poyson is of such force, that albeit the wounds were not great, yet they dyed thereof immediately, for they yet knewe no remedie against this kinde of poyson, as they after learned of the Inhabitantes of Hispaniola: for this llande bringeth forth an hearbe which quencth & mortifieth the violent poyson of the hearbe, wherewith their arrowes are infected, so that it be ministred in time. Yet of our companie which went for water, seuen escaped that conlyete and hydde themselves in a hollowe tree, lurking there vntill night, yet escaped they not the hands of their enemies: for the shippe departed from thence in the night season, and left them there, supposing that they had bene slayne. Thus

The nauigation  
of Rodericus  
Colmenaris.

An exceeding  
high mountayne  
covered with  
snowe.

Apparelled men.

Spanysher  
darts with ve-  
nomous arrowes.

A remedie  
against veno-  
mous arrowes.

The boats of  
Vraba.

by manye such perilles and dangers (which I lightly overpasse, because I will not bee tedious to your holynesse) hee arryued at the haven of Vraba, and cast anchor at the East side thereof, from whence not long before our men departed to the West side, by reason of the barrennesse of that soyle. When he had continued a while in the haven, and saw no man stirring, marveyled at the silence of the places (for hee supposed there to have found his fellowes), he could not conjecture what this should meane: and thereupon began to suspect that eather they were dead, or that they had changed the place of their habitation. To knowe the certaintie hereof, he commaunded all the great ordinaunce, and other small gunnes which he hadde in his shyppes, to be charged, and fiers to be made in the night vpon the toppes of the rocks. Thus the fiers being kindled, hee commanded all the gunnes to be shot of at one instant, by the horrible noise whereof, the gulfes of Vraba was shaken, although it were xxxiii. myles distant, for so broad is the gulfe. This noyse was heard of their fellowes in Dariens, and they answered them agayne with mutuall fyers. Wherefore, by the following of these fiers, Colmanaris brought his shyppes to the West side. Here those wretched and miserable men of Dariens, which nowe through famyne and febleness, helde their wearie soules in their teeth, ready to depart from their bodies, by reason of the calamities which befell vnto them after Ancius shipwracke, lifting vp their handes to heauen, with the teares running downe their cheekes both for ioy and sorrow, embraced Rodericus & his fellowes with such kinde of reioicing, as their present necessitie seemed to require: for whereas they were before his comming, without victuals, and almost naked, he brought them abundance of meat, drinke and apparel. It resteth now (most holy father) to declare what came of the dissenion among them of Vraba, as concerning the gouernance after the losse of their captaynes.

The thirde Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

All the chiefe officers in Beragus, and such as were most politike in counsayle, determined that Nicuesa shoulde bee sought out, if by any meanes he could be found. Whereupon they tooke from Ancius the gouernour, refusing the comming of Nicuesa, a Brigandine which he made of his owne charges: and agreed, against both the will of Ancius, and the master of fence Vazelus Nunez, that Nicuesa shuld be sought forth to take away the strife as touching the gouernment. They elected therefore Colmanaris (of whom we spake before) to take this matter in hand, willing him to make diligent search for Nicuesa in those coasts where they supposed he erred: for they heard that he had forsaken Beragus, the region of an vnfruitfull ground. They gaue him therefore commaundement to bring Nicuesa with him, and further declare vnto him that hee should do right good seruice to come thither, in taking away the occasion of their seditions. Colmanaris tooke the thing vp to him the more gladly, because Nicuesa was his very friend, supposyng his comming with victualles shoulde bee no lesse thankfull to Nicuesa and his company, then it was to them of Vraba. Furnishyng therefore one of his owne shippes which he brought with him, and also the Brigandine taken from Ancius, he frayghted the same with part of the victuales & other necessaries which he brought with him before from Hispaniola to Vraba. Thus coursing along by at the coastes and gulfes neere thereabout, at the length, at the poynt called Marmor, he found Nicuesa, of a lying men most infortunate, in manner dreyd vp with extreme hunger, filthy and horrible to behold, with only threescore men in his company, left alone of seuen hundred. They al seemed to him so miserable, that he no lesse lamented their case, then if he had found them dead. But Colmanaris comforted his friend Nicuesa, and embracing him with teares and cheerefull words, releued his spirites, and farther encouraged him with great hope of better fortune, declaring also that his comming was looked for, and greatly desired of all the good men of Vraba, for that they hoped that by his authoritie, their discord, and contention should be finished. Nicuesa thanked his friend Colmanaris after such sort as his calamitie required. Thus they tooke ship together, and sailed directly to Vraba. But so variable and vncoustant is the nature of man, that he soone groweth out of vse, becommeth insolent and vniyndful of benefices after to much felicitie: for Nicuesa after thus many teares and weepings, after diuers bewailings of his infortunate destinie, after so many thanksgiuings,

Nicuesa is  
founde in a  
miserable case.

Inconscience of  
much felicitie.

thanksgivings, yea after that he had fallen downe to the ground, and kissed the feete of Colmenaris his saviour, he began to quarrel with him before he came yet at Vraba, reproofing him, & them al for the alteration of the state of things in Vraba, and for the gathering of gold, affirming that none of them ought to have haide band of any golde without the aduice of him or Fogeda: his companion. When these sayings and such like, came to the eares of them of Vraba, they so stirred vp the mindes of Anciscus Lieutenant for Fogeda, and also of Vaschus Nunnez of the contrary part, against Nicuesa, that shortly after his arrival with his threescore men, they commaunded him with threatening to depart from thence: but this pleased not the better sort: Yet fearing lest tumult should be among the people, whom Vaschus Nunnez had stirred to factions, the best part was faine to giue place to the greatest. This wretched man therefore Nicuesa thus-drowned in miseries, was thrust into the Brigandine which heo-himselfe brought, and with him onely seuentene men, of his threescore which remained-alyue. He tooke shippe in the Calendes of March, in the.yecere. 1511. intending to goe to Hispaniola to-complayne of the rashnesse of Vaschus Nunnez, and of the violence done to him by Anciscus: But he entred into the Brigandine in an vnsfortunate houre, for he was neuer scene after. They supposed that the Brigandine was drowned with all the men therein. And thus vnhappie Nicuesa falling headlong out-of one misery into another, ended his life more miserably the he liued. Nicuesa being thus vilely reiected, and their victuals consumed which-Colmenaris brought the, falling in manner mad for hunger, they were enforced like rauening woulues seeking their pray, to invade suche as dwelt about their confines. Vaschus Nunnez therefore, their new captaine of their owne election assembling together a hundred and thirtie men, and setting them in order of battayle after his sword-players fashion, puffed vp with pride, placed his souldiers as pleased him, in the foreward and rereuarde, and some, as partizans, about his owne person: Thus associating with him Colmenaris hee went to spoyle the kinges which were borderers thereabout, & came first to a region about that coast called Coiba (wherof we made mention before) imperiously and with cruell countenance, commaunding the kinge of the region whose name was Careta (of whom they were neuer troubled as often as they passed by his dominions) to giue them victualles. But Careta denyed that he could giue them any at that time, alcaying that he had oftentimes aided the Christians as they passed by those coastes, by reason wherof, his store was now consumed: also that by the meanes of the continuall warre which hee kept euer from his childes ages with a king whose name was Poncha, bordering vpon his dominion, he and his familie were in great scarcenesse of all things. But Vaschus would admit none of these excuses and thereupon tooke Careta prisoner, spoyled his village, and brought him bounde with his two wiues and children, and all his familie to Dariena. With this king Careta, they found three of the felowes of Nicuesa, the which whē Nicuesa passed by those coastes to seeke Beragua, fearing punishment for their euil desertes, stole away from the shippes lying at anker: And when the nauie departed, committed themselves to the mercie of Careta, who enterteyned them very friendly. They had now bin there eightene monethes, and were therefore as viterly naked as the people of the country. During this time, the meate of the inhabitantes seemed vnto them delicate dishes & princely fare, especially because they enioyed the same without any strife for mine and thine, which two things moued and enforce men to such harde shiftes and miseries, that in liuing they seeme not to lyue. Yet desired they to returne to their olde eares, of such force is education and naturall affection towards them with whom wee haue bin brought vp. The victuals which Vaschus brought from the village of Careta, to his fellowes left in Dariena, was rather somewhat to assuage their present hunger, then viterly to take away their necessitie. But as touching Anciscus, being Lieutenant for Fogeda, whether it were before these things, or after, I knowe not: but this I am sure of, that after the reiecting of Nicuesa, many occasions were sought against Anciscus by Vaschus and his factionaries. Howsoeuer it was, Anciscus was taken, and cast in prison; and his goodes confiscate: the cause hereof was (as Vaschus alledged) that Anciscus had his commission of the Lieutenantship of Fogeda onely, whom they said to be now dead, and not of the king, saying that hee would not obey any manne that was not put in office

The death of Nicuesa.

Fascius refused to go to spylog, Careta king of Coiba.

King Careta is taken and spoyled.

King said thus the words of al mynchete.

Anciscus, Lieutenant for Fogeda, is cast in prison.

by the king himselfe by his letters patentes. Yet at the request of the grauest sort, he was somewhat pacified, and dealt more gently with him, hauing some compassion on his calamities, and thereupon commanded him to be loosed. Anciscus being at libertie, tooke shipp to departe from thence to Hispaniola: but before he had hoysed vp his saile all the wisest sort resorted to him, humbly desiring him to returne againe, promising that they would doe their diligence, that Vaschus being reconciled, hee might be restored to his full authoritie of the Lieutenantschip: but Anciscus refused to consent to their request, and so departed. Yet some there were that murmured that God and his angels shewed this reuenge vpon Anciscus, because Nicuesa was reiected through his counsayle. Howe so euer it be, the searchers of the newe landes fall headlong into ruine by their owne follie, consuming themselves with ciuile discord, not weighing so great a matter, nor employing their best endeavour about the same, as the worthynesse of the thing requireth. In this meane time, they determined all with one agreement, to sende messengers into Hispaniola to the yong Admirall and viceroy, sonne and heyre to Christophorus Colonus the finder of these landes, and to the other gouernours of the lande (from whom the newe lands receiue their ayde and laws) to signifie vnto them what state they stood in, and in what necessitie they liued, also what they had found, and in what hope they were of greater things, if they were furnished with plenty of victualles and other necessaries. For this purpose they elected, at the assignement of Vaschus, one Valdiuia, being one of his faction, and instructed by him against Anciscus and to bee assistant with him. They appointed one Zamudius, a Cantabrian, so that commandement was giuen to Valdiuia to returne from Hispaniola with victuals, & Zamudius was appoynted to take his voyage into Spaine to the king. They tooke shipp both together with Anciscus, hauing in mind to certifie the king howe things were handled there, much otherwise then Zamudius information. I my selfe spake with both Anciscus & Zamudius at their coming to the court. While they were occupied about these matters; those wretched men of Dariena loosed Careta the king of Coiba, vpon condition that he should aide them in their warres against his enemie and theirs, king Poncha, bordering vpon his dominions. Careta made a league with them, promising that as they passed by his kingdome, hee would giue them all things necessarie, & meeete them with an army of men, to goe forward with them to the battaile against Poncha. Their weapons are neither bowes nor venomed arrowes, as we see the inhabitants to haue, which dwell eastward beyond the gulfe. They fight therefore at hande with long swordes (whiche they call Macanas) made of woode, because they haue no Iron. They vse also long staves lyke iavelyns, hardened at the endes with fire, or typt with bone, also certayne styniges and dartes. Thus after the league made with Careta, both he and our men had certayne dayes appoynted them to tyll their grounde and sowe their seedes. This done, by the ayde of Careta, and by his conductioun, they marched towards the palace of Poncha, who sleide at their coming. They spoyled his village, and mitigated their hunger with such victualles as they founde there: yet could they not helpe their fellowes therewith, by reason of the farre distyce of the place, although they had great plentie: for the village of Poncha, was more then a hundred miles distant from Dariena, whereas was also none other remedie, but that the same shoulde haue bin carryed on mens backs to the sea side, being farre off, where they left their shippes in the which they came to the village of Careta. Here they found certayne poundes weight of gold, grauen and wrought into sundry ouches. After the sacking of this village, they resorted toward the ships, intending to leaue the kinges of the inland vntouched at this time, and to invade only them which dwelt by the coastes. Not farre from Coiba, in the same tracte, there is a region named Comogrus, & the king thereof called Comogrus, after the same name. To this king they came first next after the subuertion of Poncha, and found his pallace situate in a fruitfull playne of .xii. leagues in breadth, at the rootes of the further side of the next mountains. Comogrus had in his court a certaine noble man of neere consanguinitie to king Careta, which had fled to Comogrus by reason of certayne discontion which was betweene Careta & him; these noblemen, they call Iura. This Iura therefore of Coiba, met our men by the way, and conciled Comogrus to them, because he

Anciscus taketh  
his Voyage to  
Hispaniola.

The reuenge of  
God.

The necessi-  
tates of the  
people.

King Poncha.

Swordes of wood.

King Careta ob-  
served with the  
Spaniards against  
king Poncha.

The region of  
Comogrus, 400  
leagues from the  
sea.

King Comogrus.

was well known to our men, from the time that Nicuesa passed first by those coastes. Our men therefore went quietly to the pallace of Comogrus, being distant from Dariena thirtie leagues by a plaine way about the mountaynes. The king Comogrus had seven sonnes, yong men, of comely founne & stature, which he had by sundry wyues. His pallace was framed of postes or proppes made of trees fastened together after a strange sort, and of so strong building, that it is of no lesse strength then walles of stone. They which measured the length of the floore, thereof, found it to be a hundred and fiftie paces, and in breadth, fourscore foote, being roofed and paved with maruelous arte. They founde his storehouse furnished with abundance of delicate victuals after the manner of their country, and his wine seller replenished with great vessels of earth and also of wood, filled with their kinde of wine and sider, for they have no grapes: but like as they make their bread of those three kinds of rootes called Iucca, Agis and Maizium (whereof we spake in the first Decade) so make they their wine of the fruites of Date-trees, and Sider of other fruites and seedes as do the Almaynes, Fleminges, English men, and our Spaniards which inhabite the mountaynes, as the Vascons and Asturians: likewise in the mountaynes of the Alpes, the Noricians, Sweuians, and Hellectians, make certayne drinkes of barley, wheate, hoppers, and apples. They say also that with Comogrus they drunke wines of sundry tastes, both white and black. But nowe you shall heare of a thing more monstrous to beholde. Entering therefore into the inner partes of the pallace, they were brought into a chamber hainged about with the carcasses of men, tyed with ropes of gossampine cotton. Being demanded what they meant by that superstition, they answered that those were the carcasses of the father, graund father, & great graundfather, with other the anpectours of their king Comogrus, declaring that they had the same in great reuerence, and that they tooke it for a godly thing to honour them religiously, and therefore apparelled every of the same sumptuously with gold and precious stones, according vnto their estate. After this sorte did the antiquitie honour their Penates, which they thought had the gouernance of their liues. How they drie these carcasses vpon certaine instrumentes made of wood, like vnto hurdells, with a soft fire vnder the same, so that onely the skinne remaineth to hold the bones together, we haue described in the former Decade. Of Comogrus his seven sonnes, the eldest had an excellent naturall wit. He therefore thought it good to flatter and please this wanderyng kinde of men (our men I meane) liuing only by shifts & spoyle, lest being offended, and seeking occasions against him & his familie, they should handle him as they did other which sought no meanes how to gratifie them: Wherefore he gaue Vaschus and Colmenaris foure thousande ounces of golde artificially wrought, and also fiftie sloues, which hee had taken in the warres: for such, either they sell for exchange of their things, or otherwise use them as their listeth, for they haue not the vse of money. This golde with as much more which they had in another place, our men weighed in the porch of Comogrus his palace, to separate the fift part thereof, which portion is due to the Kinges Exchequer for it is decreed, that the fift part of both golde, pearles, and pretions stones, should bee assigned to the kinges treasurers, and the residue to be diuided among themselves by composition. Here as bragging and contention arose among our men about the diuiding of gold, this eldest sonne of king Comogrus being present, whom we prayed for his wisdom, comming somewhat with an angry countenance toward him, which helde the ballaunces, he stroke them with his fist, and scattered all the gold that was therein about the porche, sharply rebuking them with wordes in this effect. What is the matter, you Christian men, that you so greatly esteeme so little portion of golde more then your owne quietnesse, which neuertheless you entend to deface from these fayre ouches, and to melt the same in a rude masse. If your hunger of gold, be so insatiable, that onely for the desire you haue thereto, you disquiet so many nations, and you your selues also susteyne so many calamities, and incommodities; liuing like banished men out of your owne countrey, I will shewe you a region, flowing with golde, where you may satisfie your rauening appetites: But you must attempt, the thing with a greater power, for it stideth in hand by force of armes to ouercome kings of great puissance, and rigorous defendours of their dominions: For beside other the great

The kinges pallace.

What is sider.

Blacke wine.

The carcasses of men dried.

The distribution of golde.

Young Comogrus his reason.

The hunger of golde.

A region flowing with golde.

King Tumanama.

Cannibales.

The golde mines  
of the mountaynes.  
Vnworought  
golde not co-  
rrected.Abundance of  
golde.Householde  
stuffe of golde.Naked people  
tormented with  
ambition.A retirement  
provision.

great king Tumanama will come foorth against you, whose kingdome is most riche with golde, and distant from hence only sixe sunnes, that is, sixe dayes: for they number the dayes by the sunne. Furthermore, or euer you can come thither, you muste passe ouer the mountaynes inhabited of the cruell Cannibales, a fierce kinde of men, detourers of mans fleshe, lying without lawes, wandering, and without Empire: for they also being desirous of golde, haue subdued them vnder their dominion, which before inhabited the golde mynes of the mountaynes, and vse them like bonde men, vsing their labour in digging and working their golde in plates and sundry images, like vnto these which you see here: for we doe no more esteeme rude gold vnworought, then wee doe cluddes of earth, before it be formed by the hande of the workemen to the similitude either of some vessel necessarie for our vse, or some ouche beautifull to be worne. These things doe wee receyue of them for exchange of other of our things, as of prisoners taken in warre, which they buy to eate, or for sheetes and other things pertaining to the furniture of householde, such as they lacke which inhabite the mountaynes, and especially for victuals, whereof they stand in great neede, by reason of the barrennes of the mountaynes. This iourney therefore must be made open by force of men; & when you are passing ouer these mountaynes (poynting with his finger towards the South mountaynes) you shall see another sea, where they sayle with shippes as bigge as yours (meaning the Caravels) vsing both sayles and oes as you doe, although the men be naked as wee are: all the way that the water runneth from the mountaynes, and all that side lying towards the South, bringeth forth golde abundantly. As hee said these wordes, he pointed to the vesselles in which they vse to serue their meate, affirming that king Tumanama, and all the other kings beyond the mountaynes, had such & al other their household stuffe of golde, and that there was no lesse plenty of gold among those people of the South, then of Iron with vs: for he knewe by relation of our men, whereof our swordes and other weapons were made. Our captaine marueiling at the oration of the naked yong man (for they had for interpreters those three men which had been before a yeere and a halfe conuersants in the courte of king Careta) pondered in their mindes and earnestly considered his sayings, so that his rashnesse in scattering the gold out of the ballaunces, they turned to mirth and vrbaneitic, commending his doing and saying therein. Then they asked him friendly, vpo what certaine knowledg he spake those things, or what he thought best herein to be done, if they should bring a greater supply of men? To this yong Comogrus staying a while with himselfe, as it were an Orator preparing himselfe to speake of some graue matter, and disposing his body to a gesture meete to perswade, spake thus in his mother tongue Giue care vnto me, O you Christians. Albeit that the greedie hunger of gold hath not yet vexed vs naked men, yet do we destroy one another by reason of ambition and desirc to rule. Hercof springeth mortal hatred among vs, & hercof cometh our destruction. Our predecessours kept warres, and so did Comogrus my father, with princes being borderers about him. In the which warres, as we haue overcome; so haue wee bene overcome, as doth appeare by the number of bondmen among vs, which we tooke by the ouerthrowe of our enemies, of the which I haue given you listie. Likewise at another time, our aduersaries hauing the vpper hand against vs, led away many of vs captiue, for such is the chance of war. Also, among our familiars (whereof a great number haue bene captiues with them) behold here is one which of long time led a painefull life in bondage vnder the yoke of that king beyonde the mountaynes, in whose kingdome is such abundance of gold. Of him, and such other innumerable, and likewise by the resort of free men on their side coming to vs, and againe of our men resorting to them by safe conduct, these things haue bene euer as well knowne vnto vs, as our own possessions: but that you may be the better assured here of, & be out of all suspicion that you shall not be deceiued, make me the guide of this voyage, binding me fast, and keeping me in safe custodie to bee hanged on the next tree, if you finde my sayings in any poynt vntue. Followe my counsaile therefore, and sende for a thousand Christian men apt for the warres, by whose power we may, with also the men of warre of Comogrus my father armed after our manner, invade the dominions of our enemies: where both you may be satisfied

with

with golde, and we for our conducting and ayding you in this enterprise, shall thinke our selves abundantly rewarded, in that you shall helpe to deliuer vs from the iniuries and perpetuall feare of our enemies. After these words, this prudent young Comogrus held his peace, and our men moued with great hope and hunger of golde, began agayne to swallowe downe their spittle. A token of hunger.

The fourth Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

After that they hadde taryed heere a fewe dayes, and baptised Comogrus, with all his familie, and named him by the name of Charles, after the King of Spayne, they returned to their fellows in Dariena, leauing with him the hope of the thousande souldiers, whiche his sonne required to passe ouer those mountaynes towarde the South sea. Thus entring into the village which they had chosen to inhabite, they had knowledge that Valdiuia was returned within sixe monethes after his departure, but with no great plentie of victualles, because hee brought but a small shippe: yet with hope that shortly after, there should be sent them abundance of victualles, and a newe supply of men. For young Colonus the Admirall, and viceroi of Hispaniola, and the other gouernours of the Ilande, acknowledged that hitherto they had no respect to them of Dariena, because they supposed that Anciscus the Lieutenant had safely arriued there with his ship laden with victualles: willing them from henceforth to be of good cheare, and that they should lacke nothing hereafter, but that at this present time they had no bigger ship whereby they might send them greater plentie of necessaries by Valdiuia. The victuals therefore which he brought, serued rather somewhat to mitigate their present necessitie, then to satisfie their lacke. Wherefore within a fewe dayes after Valdiuia his returne, they fell agayne into like scarcenesse: especially forasmuche as a great storme and tempest which came from the hygh mountaynes, with horrible thunder and lightning in the month of Nouember, brought with it suche a floude, that it partly caryed away, and partly drowned all the corne and seeds which they had sowed in the month of September, in a fruitfull grounde before they went to king Comogrus. The seeds whiche they of Hispaniola call Maizium, and they of Vraha call Hobba, whereof they make their bread, whiche also we sayde to be rype thrise euery yeere, because those regions are not bitten with the sharpnesse of winter by reason of their neerenesse to the Equinoctiall lynce. It is also agreeable to the principles of naturall philosophie, that this bread made of Maizus or Hobba, shoulde be more wholesome for the inhabitants of those countreys then breade made of wheate, by reason that it is of easier digestion: for whereas colde is wanting, the naturall heate is not driuen from the outwarde partes into the inwarde partes and precordiales, whereby digestion is muche strengthened. Being therefore thus frustrate of the increase of their seedes, and the kinges neere about them, spoyled of both victualles and golde, they were enforced to seeke their meate further of and therewith to signifie to the gouernours of Hispaniola with what great necessitie they were oppressed, and what they had learned of Comogrus as concerning the regions towarde the South, willing them in consideration thereof, to aduertise the king to sende them a thousande souldiers, by whose helpe they myght by force make way through the mountaynes, diuiding the sea on both sides, if they could not bring the same to passe quietly. The same Valdiuia was also sent on this message, carying with him to the kinges treasurers (hauing their office of receipt in Hispaniola) three hundred poundes weight of golde, after eyght ounces to the pounde, for the fift portion due to the kinges exchequer. This pound of eight ounces, the Spanyardes call Marcha, whiche in weight amounteth to fiftie peeces of golde called Castellani, but the Castilians call a pounde Pesum. Wee conclude therefore, that the summe hereof, was xv. thousand of those peeces of gold called Castellani. And thus is it apparent by this accompt, that they receiued of the barbarous kings a thousande and fyue hundred poundes, of eight ounces to the pounde: all the whiche they founde readie wrought in sundry kindes of ouches, as cheynes, bracelets, tabletes, and plates, both to hang before their brestes, and also at their eares, and nosethrils. Valdiuia therefore tooke shyping in the same Carnuell in the which he came last, and returned also before the third day of the Ides of Ianuary, in the yeere of CHRIST. 1411.

What

King Comogrus is baptised with his familie.

Horrible thunder and lightning in the month of Nouember.

What chanced to him in this voyage, we will declare in place convenient. But let vs now returne to them which remayned in Vraba. After the dismissing of Valdivia, being pricked forward with onstrigious hunger, they determined to searche the inner partes of that gulfe in sundry places. The extreme angle or poynt of the same gulfe is distant from the entrance thereof, about fourescore myles. This angle or corner, the Spanyards call *Costa*. Vascus himselfe came to this poynt with a hundred men, coasting along by the gulfe with one brigandine and certayne of the boates of those regions, which the Vrabians call *Vra*, like vnto them which the inhabitants of Hispaniola call *Canoas*. From this poynt, there falleth a ryuer from the East into the gulfe, ten times bigger then the ryuer of Dariena, which also falleth into the same. Saying along by the ryuer about the space of thirtie myles (for they call it nine leagues) and somewhat enclining towards the right hande Southward, they founde certayne villages of the inhabitants, the king whereof was called *Dabaiba*. Our men also were certified before, that *Cemacchus* the king of Dariena, whom they put to flight in the battayle, fledde to this *Dabaiba*, but at the coming of our men, *Dabaiba* also fledde. It is thought that he was admonished by *Cemacchus*, that he shoulde not abide the brunt of our men. He followed his counsaile, forsooke his villages, and left all things desolate: yet our men founde heapes of bowes and arrowes, also much household stuffe, and many fishing boates. But those manyshes growndes were neyther apt for sowing of seedes, or planting of trees, by reason whereof, they founde there fewe such things as they desired, that is, plenty of victualles: for the inhabitants of this region haue no breade, but such as they gette in other countryes were about them by exchanging for their fishe, onely to serue their owne necessitie: yet found they in the houses of those which fledde, golde wrought and grauen, amounting to the sum of seven thousande of those peeces, which wee sayde to be called *Castellans*: also certayne *Canoas*, of the which they brought away two with them, and great plenty of their household stuffe, with certayne bundels of bowes & arrowes. They say, that from the manyshes of that ryuer, there came certayne battes in the night season, as bigge as turtle doves, inslaying men, and biting them with a deadly wounde, as some of them testifie which haue bene bitten of the same. I say selfe comming with *Anciscus* the Lieutenant whom they rejected, and among other things asking him of the venomous biting of these battes, hee tolde me that he himselfe was bitten by one of them on the heele, his foot lying discovered in the night, by reason of the heate in Sommer season, but that it hurt him no more, then if he had bin bitten by any other beast not venomous. Other say, that the biting of some of them is venomous: yet that the same is healed incontinently, if it bee washed with water of the sea. *Anciscus* tolde mee also, that the venomous wounds made by the *Caribales* arrowes infected with poyson, are healed by washing with water of the sea, and also by cauterising with whet irons, and that he had experience thereof in the region of *Caribans*, where many of his men were so wounded. They departed therefore from the poynt of the gulfe of Vraba not well contented, because they were not laden with victualles.

In this their returne, there arose so great a tempest in that wide gulfe, that they were enforced to cast into the sea all the household stuffe, which they tooke from the poore wretches which lyued onely by fishing. The sea also swallowed vp the two boates that they tooke from them, wherewith the men were likewise drowned. The same time that *Vasclius Nunnez* attempted to search the poynt of the gulfe towards the South, excep then by agreement did *Rodericus Colminaris* take his voyage toward the mountains by the East, with threescore men, by the ryuer of the other gulfe. About fourtie myles distant from the mouth of the other ryuer, (for they call it twelue leagues) he founde certayne villages situate vpon the banks of the ryuer, whose *Chini* (that is) king, they call *Turui*. With this King did *Colminaris* yet remayne, when *Vaschus* after his returne to Dariena, saying by the same ryuer, came to him. Here refreshing their whole company with the victualles of this *Turui*, they departed from thence together. Other fourtie myles from hence, the ryuer encompasseth an land inhabited with fisher men. In this, because they sawe great plenty of trees which beare *Cassia fistula*, they named the lande *Cannastula*. They found in it xl. villages of ten cottages apiece. On the right side of the lande there runneth another ryuer, whose chanel is of depth sufficient

Many  
ground.Anciscus  
of a Reer.

A tempest.

King Turui.

The lande of  
Cannastula.

cient to beare Brigandines. This river they called *Rivum Nigrum*, from the mouth wherof, about xv. myles distant, they founde a towne of five C. houses scoured whose Chebi (that is) King, was called *Abenamachei*. They all forsooke their homes, as soone as they heard of our mens coming: but when they saw that our men pursued thit, they turned againe & ran upon them with desperate minds, as men drivē from their owne possessions. Their weapons are swords of wood, and long staves like iavelins, hardened at the end with fire: but they vse neither bowes nor arrowes, nor any other of the inhabitants of the West side of the gulfe. The poore naked wretches were easily dryuen to flight with our weapons. As our menne followed them in the chase, they tooke the king *Abenamachei*, and certayne of his noble men. A commō souldier of ours whom the king had wounded, comming to him when he was taken, cutte of his arme at one stroke with his swoorde: but this was doone unware to the captaynes. The number of the Christian men whiche were here, was about an hundred and fiftie: the one halfe whereof the captaynes left here, and they with the residue rowed vp the river agayne, with twelue of the boats of those regions, which they call *Vru*, as they of *Hispaniola* call them *Canoas* as we haue sayde. From the river of *Rivus Niger*, and the lande of *Cannastula*, for the space of threescore and ten miles leaving both on the right hand and on the left, many rivers falling into it bigger then it selfe, they entred into one, by the conducting of one of the naked inhabitants, being appointed a guide for that purpose. Vpon the banke of this river next unto the mouth of the same, there was a king called *Abibeiba*, who because the region was full of marshes, hadde his pallace builded in the toppe of a hygh tree, a new kind of building, and seldome-seene: but that laude King *Abibeiba* bringeth forth trees of such exceeding height, that among their branches a man may frame large houses: as wee reade the like in divers authors, howe in manie regions where the Ocean sea riseth and overfloweth the lande, the people were accustomed to lye in the hygh trees, and after the fall of the water, to take the fishe left on the land. This manner of building, is to lay beames crosse over the branches of the trees, fast bounde together, and thereupon to raise their framē strongly made agaynst winde and weather. Our menne suppose that they builde their houses in trees, by reason of the great floods and overflowing of rivers, whiche oftentimes chaunce in those regions. These trees are of suche heighth, that the strength of no mans arme, is able to hurle a stone to the houses builded therein. And therefore doe I give the better credit to *Plinie*, and other authors, whiche write that the trees in some places in *India* are so high by reason of the fruitfulness of the ground abundance of water, and heat of the region, that no man is able to shoote over them with an arrowe: and by iudgement of all men, it is thought that there is no fruitfuller grounde vnder the sunne, then it is whereof wee nowe intreate. Our menne measuring manie of these trees, found them to bee of suche bignesse, that seven men, yea sometime eight, holding hande in hande with their armes stretched forth, were scarcely able to fathame them about: yet haue they their cellers in the grounde, well replenished with such wines wherof wee haue spoken before. For albeit that the vehemencie of the winde is not of power to cast downe those houses, or breake the brānches of the trees, yet are they tossed therewith, and swaye somewhat from side to side, by reason whereof, the wine should be much troubled with mooving. All other necessarie things they haue with them in the trees. When the king or any other of the noble men, dine or suppe in these trees, their wyues are brought them from the cellers by their seruantes, whiche by means of exercise, are accustomed with no lesse celeritie to runne vp and downe the staires adherent to the tree, then do our wayting boyes vpon the playne grounde fetch vnto the tree call for from the colbarde beside our dyning table. Our men therefore came to the tree of king *Abibeiba*, and by the interpretores called him forth to communication, giuing him signes of peace, and thereupon willing him to come downe. But hee denyed that hee woulde come out of his house, desiring them to suffer him to lye after his fashion: but our men fell from fayre wordes to threatening, that except he woulde descende with all his familie, they woulde either overthrowe the tree, or else set it on fire. When he hadde denied them agayne, they fell to hewing the tree with

King *Abibeiba* buildeth in a tree.

The rising of the Ocean sea.

Trees of marvellous height.

Trunkes all grounde.

*Abibeiba*, the King of the tree, yetteth to *Yachou*.

their axes. Abebeiba seeing the chippes fall from the tree on euery side; ehaunged his purpose, and came downe with onely two of his soones. Thus after they had entreated of peace, they commenced of gathering of golde. Abebeiba answered that he had no golde, and that hee neuer had any neede thereof, nor yet regarded it any more then stones. But, when they were instant vpon him, hee sayde vnto them, if you so greatly desire golde, I will seeke for some in the next mountaynes, and bring it vnto you; for it is plentifully engendered in those mountaynes. Then he appoynted a day when he woulde bring this golde. But Abebeiba came neither at the day nor after the day appointed. They departed therefore from thence well refreshed with his victualles and wine, but not with golde as they hoped: yet were they enformed the like by Abebeiba and his ditionaries as concerning the gold mines, and the Canibals, as they heard before of king Comogrus. Saying yet further, about thirtie myles, they chanced vpon certayne cotages of the Canibales, but vtterly voyde without men or stuffe: for when they had knowledge that our men wandered in the prouinces nere about them, they resorted to the mountaines, carying all their goods and staffe with them.

Golde as more  
referred than  
stones.

Canibals.

The fift Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

IN the meane time while these thinges were done along by the shores or bankes of the river, a certaine Decurian, that is, a captaine ouer ten, of the company of those which Vachus and Cuhmaris had left for a garrison in Riua Negro, in the dominion of king Abinamachei, whether it were that he was compelled through hunger, or that his fatal day was now come, he attempted with his souldiers to search the countries thereabout, and entred into the village of a king called Abraiba. This captaynes name was Raio, whom Abraiba slue with two of his fellows, but the residue fled. Within a fewe dayes after, Abraiba having compassion on the calamitie of his kinsman and neighbour Abenamacheis, being driven from his owne possessions (whose arme also we sayd before that one of the souldiers cut of at the river of Riua Negro) and now remaining with Abraiba, to whom he fled by stealth after hee was taken, went to Abibeiba the inhabitour of the tree, who had now likewise forsaken his country for feare of our men, and wandered in the desolate mountaines and woodes. When he had therefore founde him, hee spake to him in this effect. What thing is this, oh ynfortunate Abibeiba; or what nation is this that so tormenteth vs, that we cannot enioy our quiet libertie; how long, how long I say, shall we suffer their crueltie; were it not much better for vs to die, then to abide such iniuries and oppressions as you, as Abinamacheis our kinsman, as Cemacchus, as Carets, as Poncha, as I and other princes of our order doe susteine? Canne any thing be more intollerable, then to see our wiues, our children, and our subiectes, to be ledde away captiues; and our goodes to be spoyled euen before our faces: I take the gods to witness, that I speake not so much for mine owne part as I do for you, whose case I lament: for albeit they haue not yet touched me; neuertheless by the example of other, I ought to thinke that my destruction is not far off. Let vs therefore (if we be men) trie our strength, & proue our fortune agaynst them which haue dealt thus cruelly with Abenamacheis, and driue him out of his country, let vs set on them with all our power, and vtterly destroy them. And if we can not slay them all, yet shal we make the afraid either to assayle vs againe, or at the least diminishe their power: for whatsocuer shal befall, nothing can chauce worse vnto vs then that which we now suffer. When Abibeiba heard these words & such other like, he condescended to do in all things as Abraiba woulde require: whereupon they appoynted day, to bring their conspiracie to passe, but the thing chanced not according to their desire: for of those which we saide to haue passed to the Canibals, there returned by chauce to Riua Niger the night before the day appointed to worke their feate, thirtie men, to the aide of them whiche were left there, if any sedition should rise as they suspected. Therefore at the dawning of the day the confederate Kings, with sixe hundredth of their ditionaries armed after their maner, besieged the village with a terrible alarome, knowing nothing of the new men whiche came thither the same night. Here our target men came forth against them, and first assailed them a farre of with their

How good or  
worse if they  
had been.

arrows,

arrows, then with their pykes and last with their swordes : but the naked seely soules, perceiuing a greater number of their aduersaries then they looked for, were soone driuen to flight, and slaine for the most parte like scattering sheepe. The kings escaped, they slue many, and tooke many captiues, whiche they sent to Dariena, where they vsed them for labourers to till and sowe their grounde. These things thus happily atchieued, and that prouince quieted, they returned by the riuer to Dariena, leauing their thirtie men for a garrison, vnder the gouernance of one Furatado a capitaine. This Furatado therefore, sent from Riou Nigro, where he was appointed gouernour. xx. of his felowes, and one woman, with xxxiii. captiues, to Vaschus and his companie, in one of the biggest Canoas of that prouince. As they rowed downe the ryuer, there came forth sodenly ouerthwart the ryuer against them foure great Canoas, which ouerthrew their boate, and slue as many of them as they could come by, because they were vnprepared, suspecting no such thing. Our men were all drowned and slaine, except two, which hid themselves among certaine fagottes that swamme on the water, in the which they lay lurking, and so escaped to their fellows in Dariena: who by them being advertised hereof, beganne to cast their wittes what this thing might meane, being no lesse sollicitate for them selues, then meditating in what danger their fellows had bin in Riou Nigro, except by good fortune, those thirtie newe men which were sent to them, hadde come to the village the night before the conspiracie should haue bene wrought. Consulting therefore what was best to bee doone herein, at the length with diligent searching, they had intelligence that five kings, that is to witte, Abebeiba the inhabitour of the tree, and Cemacchus dryuen from his village which our men nowc possessed, Abraiba also and Abenamacheius, kinsmen, with Dabaiba the king of the fisher men, inhabiting the corner of the gulfe whiche wee called Culata, where all assembled to conspire the Christian mens destruction at a day assigned: which thing had surely come to passe if it had not bene otherwise hindered by Gods prouidence. It is therefore ascribed to a miracle, and truly not vnworthily, if wee waye howe chaunce detected and bewrayed the counsaile of these kings. And because it is worthy to be hearde, I will declare it in fewe wordes. Vaschus Nunnez, therefore, who rather by power then by election, vsurped the gouernance in Dariena, being a maister of fence, and rather a rashe royster then a politike capitaine (although fortune sometime fauoreth foolles) among many women which in diuers of these regions he hadde taken captiue, had one, which in fauour and beauty excelled all other. To this woman her brother often times resorted, who was also driuen out of his country with king Cemacchus, with whome he was very familiar, and one of his chiefe gentlemen. Among other communication which he hadde with his sister whom hee loued entirely, he vttered these wordes, My deare and welbeloued sister, giue care to my sayings, and keepe most secretly that whiche I will declare vnto you, if you desire your owne wealth and mine, and the prosperitie of our country and kinsefolkes. Tho insolencie and crueltie of these men whiche haue dryuen vs out of our possessions, is so intollerable, that the princes of the lande are determined no longer to susteyne their oppressions. By the conducting therefore of fyue kings (whiche he named in order) they haue prepared a hundred great Canoas with fyue thousande men of warre by lande and by sea, with victuals also in the village of Tichiri, sufficient to maintayne such an armie: declaring further, that the kings by agreement, had diuided among them the goodes and healds of our menne, and therefore admonished her, at the day appointed by some occasion to conueigh her selfe out of the way, least she should be slayne in the confusion of the battayle: For the souldier victourer, is not wont to spare any that commeth in his race. And thus shewing his sister the day assigned to the slaughter, hee departed. But the young woman (for it is the sworde that women feare, and obserue more then the gratiuitie of Cato) whether it were for the loue or feare that she had to Vaschus, forgetting her parentes, her kinsfolkes, her country, and all her friendes, yea and all the kings into whose throates Vaschus had thruste his sworde, she opened all the matter vnto him and concealed none of those things which her vndiscret brother had declared to her. When Vaschus therefore had heard the matter, he caused Fulua, (for so had

Captiues.

A garrison of thirtie men.

Eightene Spaniards slaine and drowned.

The kings which conspired the death of the Christians.

A strange chaunce.

Women can keepe no counsell.

An armie of an hundred Canoas, and fyve M. men.

Triumph before victorie.

Affection concealeth true judgement.

(they named her) to sende for her brother, who came soldier immediately, was taken, & enforced to tel the whole circumstances of the matter: whereupon he plainly confessed, that king Cemacchus his Lord and maister, sent those foure Canoas to the destruction of our men, and that these new conspiracies were attempted by his counsayle: likewise that Cemacchus sought the destruction of Vaschus himselfe, when he sent him xl. men, vnder pretence of friendship, to till and sowe his groundes, after the manner of the country, giuing them in commandement to slay Vaschus at Martis, whither he resorted to comfort his labourers, as the manner is of all good husbandes, yet durst they at no time execute their Lordes commandement vpon him, because Vaschus came neuer among them a foote or vnrmed, but was accustomed to ryde to them in harness with a iavelin in his hand, and a sworde by his side. Wherefore Cemacchus being frustrate of his particular counsayle, tooke this last thing in hande, to his owne destruction and his neighbours: for the conspiracie being detected, Vaschus called threescore and tenne soldiers; commanding them to follow him, but declared nothing vnto them whither he went, or what he intended to doe. He went forward therefore first toward Cemacchus, which lay from him ouerly ten myles: but he had knowledge that he was fledde to Dabaiba, the king of the maryshes of Culata. Yet searching his village, hee founde a noble man, a ruler vnder him, and also his kinsman whom he tooke prisoner, with many other of his familiars and friendes both men and women. The same houre that he set forwarde to seeke for Cemacchus, Rodericus Colmarinus rowed vpon the ryuer with foure of their biggest Canoas, and threescore men, by the conduction of the maydes brother, who brought him to the village of Tichiri, in the which we said all their victuals to remain which were prepared for their armie. Colmarinus therefore sacked the village, and possessed all their victuals, and wine of sundry coloures, likewise tooke the gouernour thereof prisoner, and hanged him on the tree in which he dwelt himselfe, commanding him to bee shot through with arrows in the sight of the inhabitants, and with him foure other rulers to be hanged on gibbets to the example of other rebels. This punishment thus executed vpon the conspirators, stroke the hearts of all the inhabitants of the prouince with such feare, that there is not now a man that dare stirre his finger against the wrath of our men. They liue now therefore quietly, and the other kings by their example doe the gladdier liue in subiectiõ, with lesse offence bearing the yoke which they can by no means shake of.

The conspiracy of the Lynes is detected.

King Cemacchus receyved the death of Vaschus.

Vaschus perished with the king with threescore and ten men.

Colmarinus sacked the village of Tichiri.

Four ryuers passed it shot through with arrows.

#### The sixt Chapter of the second Decade, of the supposed continent.

These things thus finished, assembling all their company together, they determined with one consent, that a messenger shoulde forthwith bee sent to Hispaniola (from whence they haue their lawes and ayde) to declare the whole order of all these affaires, first to the Admiral and gouernour of the Iland; and afterward to the King of Spayne, and to perswade him to sende those thousande men which young Comogrus said to be expedient to passe ouer the mountains, lying betwene them and the golden regions toward the South. Vaschus hymselfe dyd greatly affect this embassage: but neither would the residue of his felowes electe him thereto; nor his factionaries suffer him to departe, as well for that they they thought they should be left desolate as also that they murmured, that if Vaschus should once go from them, he woulde neuer returne to suche turmoyle and calamities, by the example of Valdiuia and Zomudius, who had bin now absent since the month of Ianuary, in so much that they thought they would neuer come agayne: but the matter was otherwise then they took it, as I will shew in this place, for they were perished. At the length after many scrutinies, they elected one Iohn Quicodus, a graue man, well in yeeres) and treasurer of the kings Exchequer in those prouinces: they had conceiued a good opinion of this Quicodus, that all thinges should bee well brought to passe by his meanes, as well for his wisdom, as also that they were in good hope of his returne, because he hadde brought his wife with him to those regions, whom hee left with his fellows for a pledge of his coming agayne. When they had thus elected Quicodus, they were againe of diuers opinions whom they might ioyne with him for assistance, affirming that it were a dangerous thing to committe so weightie a matter

Iohn Quicodus is sent to Spayne.

matter to one mans hands, not that they mistrusted Quicedus but because the life of man is frail, & the change of the ayre perilous, especially to them, having now of long time bin accustomed to the temperature nere unto the Equinoctial, if they should be compelled to returne to the North, with alteration of ayre and diet. They thought it therfore good to appoynt a companion to Quicedus, that if by chance the one should faile, the other might remain, & that if they both escaped, the king should giue the better credite to the relatiō of both. After long cōsultation therfore, they chose Rodericus Colmenaris, a man of good experiēce, of whom we haue oftentimes made mention, for from his youth he had trauiell'd ouer all Europe by lande & by sea, & was present at the doings of al things in Italy against the Frēchmen, of whose return also, they had no small hope, because he had many farmes, and had tilled and sowne much grounde in Dariena, by the increase whereof, he might get much gold by selling the same to his felowes. He left therfore the charge of al his affayres in Dariena with his partner Alphonsus Nunnez, a iudge of the lawe, who also was like to haue ben chosen procurator of this voyage before Colmenaris if one had not put thē in remembrance that he had a wife at Matritis, fearing lest being ouercome with her teares, he would no more returne. Colmenaris therfore, a freeman & at libertie, being associate assistant with Quicedus; they tooke shipping together in a Brigandine, the fourth daye of the Calendes of Nouember in the year of Christ. 1512. In this voyage, being tossed with sundry tempestes, they were by the violence of the winde cast vp on the West coastes of that large land, which in the first Decade we call Cuba supposed to haue ben firme land. They were sore oppressed with hunger, for it was now three monethes since they departed from their felowes: by reason whereof, they were enforced to take land, to prouee what ayde they could get among the inhabitants. Their chance therfore was to arriue in that part of the land, where Valdiuia was driven aland by tempest. But oh you wretched men of Dariena, tary for Valdiuia, whom you sent to prouide to helpe your necessities, prouide for your selues rather, and trust not to them whose fortune yee know not. For when he arriued in Cuba the inhabitantes slue him with his felowes, and left the Carauel wherein they were caryed, torne in peeces, and halfe couered with sand on the shore, where Quicedus and Colmenaris finding the fragmentes thereof, bewayled their felowes misfortune: but they found none of their carcasses, supposing that they were either drowned, or deuoured of the Canibals, which oftentimes make incursion into the land to hunt for men. But at the length, by two of the land men which they had taken, they had knowledge of Valdiuia his destruction, and that the inhabitantes the more greedily attēpted the same, for that they had heard by the babbling of one of his felowes, that hee had great plentie of golde: for they also take pleasure in the beautie of golde, which they fowme artificially into sundry ouches. Thus our men stricken with penituesse for the cruell destinie of their felowes, and in vaine seeking reueng for their iniuries, determined to forsake that vnfortunate lande, departing from those conetous naked barbarians, with more sorowe and necessitie then they were in before. Or euer they had passed the South side of Cuba, they fel into a thousande misfortunes, and had intelligence that Fogeda arriued therabout, leading a miserable life, tossed and turmoiled with tempestes, and vexed with a thousande perplexities: so that departing from thence almost alone, his felowes being for the most part al consumed with maladies and famine he came with much difficultie to Hispaniola, where he died by force of the poison of his venomous wounde which he had receiued in Vraba as we haue saide before. But Anciscus elected Lieutenant, sailed by al those coastes with much better fortune: for as he him selfe tolde me, he founde prosperous windes in those parties, and was wel entertein'd of th inhabitants of Cuba, but this specially in the dominion of a certaine king whose name was Commendator: for whereas he desired of the Christian men which passed by, to be baptised, demanding the name of the gouernour of the land next unto Hispaniola, being a noble man, and a knight of the order of Calatraua, of whiche order, al are called Commendadores this kings desire was to be named after him. King Commendator therfore friendly receiued Anciscus, & gaue him great abundance of al things necessarie. But

A wife in a  
kinder lawe.

The death of  
Valdiuia.

Men of Louis  
esse of the  
magist.

The capture  
and death of  
Fogeda.

Melanes and  
Lance.

The prosperous  
sage of An-  
ciscus.

A king of  
Cuba baptised  
by the name of  
Commendator.

what

what Anciscus learned of their religion during the time of his remaying there, I haue thought good to advertise your holiness. You shal therefore vnderstande, that certaine of our men sailing by the coastes of Cuba, left with king Commendador a certaine poore Mariner being diseased, who in short space recouering his health, and hauing now somewhat learned their language, began to growe into great estimation with the king and his subiectes, insomuche that he was oftentimes the kings Licutenant in his warres against other princes his borderers. This mans fortune was so good, that all things prospered well that he tooke in hande: and albeit that he were not learned, yet was he a vertuous and well-meaning man, according to his knowledge, and did religiously honour the blessed virgin, bearing euer about with him her picture faire painted vpon paper, and sowed in his apparel nere vnto his breast, signifying vnto the king, that this holines was the cause of all his victories: perauading him to doe the like, and to cast away all his Zemes, which were none other then the similitudes of euill spirits most cruel enimies and denouers of our souldes, and to take vnto him the holy virgin and mother of God to be his patronesse, if he desired: all his affaires aswel in warre as in peace to succede prosperously: also that the blessed virgin woulde at no time faile him, but be euer readie to helpe him and his, if they woulde with deuout hartes call vpon her name. The mariner had soone perswaded the naked nation, and thereupon gaue the king (who demanded the same) his picture of the virgin, to whom he builded and dedicated a chapell and an alter, euer after contenting and reiecting his Zemes. Of these Zemes made of Gossampine cotton, to the similitudes of spirites walking in the night, which they oftentimes see, and speake with them familiarly, we haue spoken sufficiently in the ninth chapter of the first Decade. Furthermore, according to the institution of this mariner, when the sunne draweth toward the fall, this King Commendador with all his familie, both men and women, resort daillie to the saide chapell of the virgin Marie, where kneeling on their knees, and reverently bowing downe their heades, holding their handes ioined together, they make the image of the virgin with these wordes, Aue Marie Aue Marie, for feue of them can rehearse any more wordes of this praiser. At Anciscus his being there, they tooke him and his felowes by the handes, and ledde them to this chapell with reioicing, saying that they woulde shewe them maruailous thinges. When they were entred, they pointed with their fingers to the Image of the virgin, al to be set and hanged about with ouches and jewels, and many earthen pottes filled some with suadry meats, and some with water, rounde about all the tabernacle: for these thinges they offer to the image in the steede of sacrifice, according to their olde superstition towarde their Zemes. Being demaunded why they did thus, they answered, Lest the image should lacke meate, if perhaps it should be abridged: for they most certainly beleete that images may hunger, and that they do eate & drinke. But what aide and help they confesse, that they haue had of the godly power of this image, that is of the blessed virgin, it is a thing woorthy to bee hearde, and most assuredly to bee taken for a truth: for by the report of our men, there is such feruent godly loue & zeale in these simple men toward the holy virgin, that to them beeing in danger of warre against their enemies, they doe in manner (if I may so terme it) compell her to descend from heauen to helpe them in their necessities. For such is the goodness of God, that he hath left vnto men in maner a pryce whereby we might purchase him with his holy angels and saints that is to witte, burning loue, charitie, and zeale. Howe therefore can the blessed virgin at any time be absent from the which call for her helpe: with pure faith and feruent loue: Commendador himselfe, with all his noble men and gentlemen, do testifie with one voyce, that in a fought battayle in the which this mayner was capitaine, hearing with him this picture of the virgin Marie, the Zemes of their enemies turned their backe, and trembled in the presence of the virgins image, & in the sight of them all: for euery of them bring their Zemes to the battayle, hoping by their helpe to obtayne the victorie. Yet they say further that during the time of the battaile, they saw not only an Image, but a liuely woman clothed in fayre and white apparell, ayding them against their enemies: which thing also the enemies themselves acknowledged, confessing that on the contrary part, she appeared to them shaking a scepter in her hande with threatening countenance, which caused their hartes

A maruailous  
honour here  
God wrought  
wonder by the  
simple faith of  
a Mariner.

Be not rash in  
judgement.

A Chapell  
builded to the  
picture of the  
virgin Marie.

One supersti-  
tious religion  
turned into  
watches, holdeth  
for many  
thinges of the  
feyre.

Zeale without  
knowledge is  
never goodly.

Makes this  
Mans.

This ignorance  
is to be im-  
muted.

The diuill  
was able to  
keepe his in  
kindnes all.

A notable  
of a spiritual  
benefite.

to shake and faint for feare: but after that this maryner departed from them, being taken into a shyppe of certayne Christians passing by these coastes. Commendator declared that he with all his subiectes, constantly observed his institutions: insomuch that being at contention with another prince, whiche of their Zemes were most holy and of greatest power, the matter grew to such extremity that they tried it with hande strokes: and that in all these attempts, the blessed virgin neuer sayled him, but was euer present in the bruite of the battayle, and gaue him easie victorie with a small power of men, against a maine armie of his enemies. Being demanded with what wordes they cryed vpon the virgin Mary when they assailed their enemies, they answered that they had learned no other words of the Maryners doctrine but Sancta Maria adiuua nos. Sancta Maria adiuua nos. That is, holy Marie helpe vs, holy Marie helpe vs, and this also in the Spanishe tongue: for he had left these words in the mouthes of all men. While they murthered and destroyed themselves thus on both sides, they fell to enreatie of peace, and agreed in trye the matter, not hande to hande by combatte of certayne chosen for both parties, as the manner was among the Romanes and diuers other nations in the olde time, or by any sleight or policy but that two yong men should be chosen, for each partie one, with their handes bounde fast behinde them in the plaine felde, both parties beeing sworne to acknowledge that Zeme to be the better, which first loosed the bandes of the yong man which stode bounde for the triall of his religion. Thus diuiding themselves, and placing the sayd yong men before them in the sight of them all, with their handes fast bounde by their enemies, the contrary parte called first on their Zemes (that is the deuill, to whose similitude their Images are made) who immediately appeared in his likeness about the yong manne that stode bounde in the defence of Sathans kingdome. But as soone as Commendator with his companie cryed Sancta Maria adiuua nos, Sancta Maria adiuua nos, forthwith there appeared a fayre virgin clothed in white, at whose presence the deuill vanquished immediately. The virgin hauing a long rod in her hand, and putting the same on the bandes of the yong man that stood for Commendator, his handes were loosed immediatly in the sight of them all, and his bandes found about the handes of him that stood for the other party, insomuch that they themselves founde him double bounde. But for all this, were not the enemies satisfied, quarrelling that this thing was done by some sleight or deuise of man, & not by the power of the better Zemes. And thereupon required, for the auoyding of all suspection, that there might bee eight graue and sage men appoynted, for eche side foure, which should binde the men in the sight of them all, and also giue iudgement whether the thing were done without craft or guile. Oh pure simplicitie and constant fayth: oh golden and blessed confidence. Commendator & his familiars doubted not to graunt their enemies their request, with like fayth wherwith the diseased woman obteyneth health of the fluxe of her blood, and wherby Peter feared not to walke on the sea at the sight of his maister Christ. These yong men therefore were bounde in the presence of these eight graue men, and were placed within their listes in the sight of both parties. Thus vpon a signe giuen, when they called vpon their Zemes, there appeared in the sight of them all, a deuill with a long taile, a wide mouth, great teeth, and hornes, resembling the similitude of the image whiche the king beinge enemy to Commendator honored for his Zemes. As the deuill attempted to loose the bands of his client, the blessed virgin was immediatly present as before at the cal of Commendator & his subiectes, & with her rod loosed the bandes of her supplicant, whiche were agayne likewise founde fast tyed about the bandes of him that stode for the contrary part. The enemies therefore of Commendator, being stricken with great feare, and amazed by reason of this great miracle, confessed that the Zemes of the virgin was better then their Zemes: for the better prooffe whercof, these pagans being borderers to Commendator, which had euer before benee at continual warre & enmitie with him, when they had knowledge that Aucusus was arrayed in those coastes, they sent Ambassadors vnto him, to desire him to sende them priestes, of whom they might be baptised: wherupon hee sent them two which he had there with him at that present. They baptised in one day an hundred and thirty of the inhabitants, sometime enemies to Commendator, but now his friends, and ioyned with him in alliance. All such

One blasphemy  
vpon another.

The deuill  
appeareth in his  
likenesse.  
What likeness.

A strange mi-  
racle not to be  
creded.

Another my-  
racle.

What men.

Mich. 22.  
This is another  
miracle.

The deuill ap-  
peareth againe.

The virgin  
Mary is her  
owne person  
surmounting  
the deuill.

The priests  
reverte.  
Why name  
you Capost?

such as came to bee baptised, gaue the priestes of their owne liberalitie, eyther a cocke or a henne, but no capons, for they cannot yet skil howe to carue their cocke chickens to make them capons. Also certaine salted fishes, and newe fine cakes made of their bread: likewise certayne soules franked and made fatte. When the priestes resorted to the shippes, sixe of these newe baptised men accompanied them laden with victualles, wherwith they ledde a ioyfull Easter: for on the Sunday, two dayes before saint Lazarus day, they departed from Dariena, and touched at that tyme onely the cape or angle of Cuba, neere vnto the East side of Hispaniola. At the request of Commendator, Anciscus left with him one of his companie, to the intent to teach him and his subiectes, with other his borderers, the salutation of the angell, whiche we call the Ave Marie: for they thinke themselves to be so much the more beloued of the blessed virgin, as they can rehearse the more woodes of that prayer. Thus Anciscus taking his leaue of king Commendator, directed his course to Hispaniola, from whiche he was not farre. Shortly after, he tooke his voyage to Spayne, and came to Valladoletto to the king, to whom he made grieuous complaynt of the insolencie of Vaschus Nunez, insomuch that by his procurement the king gaue sentence agaynst him. Thus muche haue I thought good (most holy father) whereof to aduertise your holynesse, as concerning the religion of these nations, not onely as I haue bin instructed of Anciscus (with whom I was dayly conversant in the Court, and vsed him familiarly) but also as I was enformed of diuers other men of great authoritie, to the intent that your excellencie may vnderstande howe docible this kinde of men are, and with what facilitie they may be allured to embrace our religion: but this cannot be done sodenly, yet we haue great cause to hope that in short time they will be al drawne by little and little, to the Euangelicall law of Christ to the great increase of his flocke. But let vs now returne to the messengers or procuratours as concerning the affaires of Dariena.

Anciscus voyage  
to Spaine.

Anciscus com-  
playnt of  
Vaschus.

Make to wh  
this feyred top-  
parchous storie  
was written.

The seventh Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

From Dariena to Hispaniola, is eight dayes sailing, & somtimes leaue with a prosperous wind: yet Quicedus and Colmanaris the procuratours of Dariena, by reason of tempestes & contrary windes, could scarcely sayle it in a hundred dayes. When they had taried a fewe dayes in Hispaniola, & had declared the cause of the coming to the Admirall and the other gouernours, they tooke shipping in two marchant ships, being ready furnished, which were also accustomed to sayle to and fro betweene Spayne and the land of Hispaniola. They departed from Dariena (as we said before) the fourth day of the Calends of Nouber, in the yeere of Christ 1512. & came not to the court beefore the Calendes of May in the yeere following being the yeere of Christ, 1513. At their coming to the court, Iohannes Fonzeta (to whom at the beginning the charge of these affaires was committed; whome also for his faithfull seruice towards the king, your holiness created general Commissarie in the warres against the Moores) received them honourably, as men coming from the newe worlde, from naked nations, and landes vnknowne to other men. By the preferment therefore of the Bishop of Burges, Quicedus and Colmanaris were brought before the king; and declared their legacie in his presence. Suche newes and presentes as they brought, were delectable to the king and his noble men, for the newnes and strangenesse thereof. They all sojourned with me oftentimes. Their countenaunces do declare the intemperatenesse of the ale and region of Dariena, for they are yelowe, like vnto them that haue the yelowe jaundies, and also swolne: but they ascribe the cause hereof, to the hunger whiche they sustained in times past. I haue ben aduertised of the affaires of this newe worlde, not only by these procuratours of Dariena, and Anciscus, and Zamudius, but also by conference with Baccia the lawyer, who ran ouer a great part of those coastes: likewise by relation of Vincautius Annez, the patrone of the ships, and Alphonsus Nigaus, both being men of great experience, and wel trailed in those parties, besides many other, of whom we haue made mention in other places, for there came neuer any from thence to the court, but tooke great pleasure to certifie me of all things, either by word of mouth or by writing. Of many things therefore whiche I learned of them, I haue gathered such as to my iudgment seeme most

The procura-  
tours of Dariena  
are honourably  
received at the  
court.

most worthy to satisfie them that take delight in histories. But let vs now declare what followed after the coming of the procuratours of Dariena. Therefore, before their arrival, there was a rumor spred in the court, that the cheefe gouernours and Lieutenantes Nicuesa and Fogeda, also Iohannes de la Cosa, (a man of much reputation that by the kings letters patentes hee was named the great maister of the kinges shippes) were all perished by mischance: and that those fewe which yet remained aliue in Dariena, were at contention and discord among them selues, so that they neither endeouored their diligence to assure those simple nations to our faith, nor yet had regarde to searche the natures of those regions. In consideration whereof, the king was determined to send a newe captayne thither, which should restore and set all things in good order, and put them out of authoritie which had vsurped the Empire of those prouinces without the kinges speciall commaundement. To this office, was one Petrus Arias assigned, a man of great prowesse, and a citizen of Segouia, but when the procuratours of Dariena had published in the court the hope great a matter it was, and of what moment many laboured earnestly to the king, to take the office out of his handes: but the Bishop of Burges, being the kings cheife chaplayne, and one of the commissioners appointed by him in these matters, being advertised hereof, came immediately to the king and spake to him in this effect: May it please your highnesse to vnderstande (most catholique prince) that whereas Petrus Arias, a man of valiant courage and great seruice, hath offered himselfe to aduenture his life in your maiesties affaires, vnder vncertaine hope of gaine, and most certayne perils, yet that notwithstanding, some other haue ambitiously maliced his felicitie and preferment, labouring for the office wherto he is elected. I may please your grace, herein, so to shew him your fauour; and permit him to enjoy his sayde office, as your maiestie doe knowe him to be a worthy and meete man for the same, hauing in tyme past had great experience of his prowesse and valyantesse, as well in behauing himselfe, as ordering his souldiers, as your highnesse may the better consider, if it shall please you to call to remembrance his dooings in the warres of Aphryca, where he shewed himselfe both a wise captaine, and a valiant souldier. As concerning his manners and vsages otherwayes, they are not vnknowne to your maiestie, vnder whose wing he hath a childe bene brought vp in the Court, and euer founde faithfull towards your highnesse. Wherefore, to declare my opinion, vnder your graces fauour (whom it hath pleased to appoint me a Commissioner in these affaires) I thinke it were vngodly that he should be put from his office at the suite of any other, especially being thereto moued by ambition and couetousnesse, who perchance would proue themselves to be the same men in the office, if they should obtaine it, as they now shew themselves in the ambitious desiring of the same. When the Bishop had sayde these wordes, the king confirmed the election of Petrus Arias, in more ample manner then before, willing the bishop to appoint him a thousande and two hundred souldiers at his charges, making him a warrant to the officers of his Exchequer, to deliuer him money in prest for the same purpose. Petrus Arias therfore being thus put in office, and authorised by the kinges letters patentes vnder his broade seale, chose a great number of his souldiers in the court, and so departed from Valladoleta, about the Calends of October, in the yeere 1413. and sayled first to Ciuile, being a very rich citie, and well replenished with people, where by the kings magistrates, hee was furnished with menne and victualles, and other necessaries porteyning to so great a matter: for the king had in this citie erected a house, seruing onely for the affaires of the Ocean, to the which all they that goe or come from the newe landes and Ilandes, resort to giue accomptes, as well what they carry thither, as what they bring from thence that the king may bee truly answered of his custome of the fifth part, both of golde and other things, as we haue sayde, beefore. This house they call

The great  
maister of the  
kings shippes.

Petrus Arias is  
elected gouer-  
nour of Dariena.

The election of  
the Bishop of  
Burgess, in the  
office of Petrus  
Arias.

The warres of  
Aphryca.

A house in Ci-  
uile appointed  
to the accomptes  
of India.

Petrus Arias.

maruayle at Aloisius Cadamustus a Venetian, and writer of the Portugales voyages, that hee was not ashamed to wryte thus of the Spaynards nauigations: wee went, wee sawe, wee did: whereas he neuer went, nor any Venetian sawe, but he stole certayne annotations out of the three first chapters of my first Decade written to Cardinal Ascanius & Arcimbolus, supposing that I would neuer haue published the same. It might also happen that hee came by the copie thereof at the hand of some ambassador of Venice, for I haue granted the copie to many of them, & was not daungerous to forbid them to communicate the same to other. Howe so euer it bee, this honest man Aloisius Cadamustus feared not to challenge vnto him the fruit of another mans labour. Of the inuentions of the Portugales (whiche surely are wonderfull) whether he haue written that which he hath seene (as he saith) or likewise beneaued other men of the iust commendations of their traуayles, I will not iudge, but am content to let him liue after his manner. Among the company of these souldiers, there were none embarked but such as were licēced by the king, except a few Italians, Genoyes, who by friendship and suite were admitted for the Admirals sake young Colonis, some and heyre to Christophorus Colonis, the first sinder of those landes. Petrus Arias therefore tooke shipping in the ryuer Betis (now called Guadalqueuir) running by the cite of Ciuile, about the beginning of the yeere of Christ 1514. But he loosed anker in a euill houre, for such a tempest followed shortly after his departure, that it rēt in peeces two of his shipt, and so tossed the other, that they were enforced to heaue ouerboorde part of their victualles to lighten them: All suche as escaped, sayled backe againe to the coastes of Spayne, where, being newly furnished and refreshed by the kinges officers, they went forward on their voyage. The maister Pylotte of the gouernours shippe, was Iohannes Vesputius a Florentine, the newiue of Americas Vesputius, who left him as it were by descent of inheritance, the experience of the mariniers facultie and knowledge of the sea, card and compasse. But wee were aduertised of late by certayne whiche came from Hispaniola, that they had passed the Ocean with more prosperous wind: for this marchant shyppe coming from Hispaniola, founde them landing at certayne llands neere therabout. But in the meane time, while my importunate callers on, Galeaceus Butrigarius, and Iohannes Cursius, men studious by al meanes to gratifie your holynesse, ceased not to put me in remembrance that they had one in a readines to depart into Italy, & taried only to cary with him vnto your holines these, my faire Nereides, although rudely decked least I should bestow much time in vayne, I haue let passe many things, & wil rehoarse only such as seeme in my iudgement most worthy memory, although somewhat disordered; as occasio hath serued. So it is therefore, that this Petrus Arias hath a wife named Helisabetha Boadilla, being niece by the brother side to the marques of Boadilla, whiche rendred the cite of Segouia to Fernando and Helisabeth Princes of Spayne, at such time as the Portugales inuaded the kingdome of Castile, by reason wherof they were encouraged first to resist, and then with open warre to assayle and expulse the Portugales, for the great treasure whiche King Henry brother to Queene Elizabeth hadde gathered together there. This marquesse, while she liued, did euer shewe a manly and stout mynde, both in peace and warre, so that by her counsaile, many noble things were brought to good effect in Castile: vnto this noble woman the wife of Petrus Arias was niece by her brother side. She, following the magnanimitie of her aun, perceiving her husbande nowe furnishing himselfe to departe to the vnknowne coastes of the newe worlde, and those large tracts of lande and sea, spake these wordes vnto him: My most deare and welbeloued husbande, we ought not now to forget that from our young yeeres we haue bene ioyned together with the yoke of holy matrimonie, to the intent that we shoulde so liue together, and not a sunder, during the tyme of our naturall life: wherefore for my parte, to declare my affection herein, you shall vnderstande, that whither soeuer your fatall destinie shall driue you, eithr by the furios waues of the great Ocean, or by the manifold and horrible dangers of the lande, I will surely beare you companie: there canne not perill chance to me so terrible, nor any kinde of death so cruell, that shall not be much easier for mee to abide, then to lise so farre separate from you. It were much better for mee to die, and eithr to be cast into the sea, to be deuoured of the fishes, or on the land to the Canibales, then with continual mourning and bewaying,

The Portugales  
Inuention.

The nauigation  
of Petrus  
Arias.

A shypwracke.

Americus Ves-  
putius.

A noble ex-  
ample of a ve-  
rue woman.

The wife of Pe-  
trus Arias.

to live in death, and dye living, while I consume in looking rather for my husbandes letters, then for himselfe. This is my full determination, not rashly, nor presently excogitate, nor conceivd by the light phantasie of womans brayne, but with long deliberation and good advisement. Nowe therefore choose to whether of these two you will assent, eyther to thruste your sworde in my throat, or to graunt me my request. As for the children which God hath given vs as pledges of our inseparable loue (for they had foure sonnes, and as many daughters) shall not stay me a moment: let vs leaue vnto them such goodes and possessions as we haue beene left vs by our parentes and friends whereby they may live among the worshipfull of their order: for other things I take no care. When this noble matrone of many vertue had finished these woordes, her husbande seeing the constant mynde of his wife, and her in a readinesse to do according to her wordes, had no heart to denye her louing petition, but embracing her in his armes, commended her intent, and consented to her request. She followed him therefore, as did Ipsicratea her Mithridates, with her hayre hanging loose about her shoulders: for she loued her husbande, as did Halicarnassca of Caria here; being dead, as did Artemisia her Mausolus. Wee haue also had advertisement since their departure, that she (being brought vp as it were among soft fethers) hath with no les stout courage sustained the roarings and rages of the Ocean, then did eyther her husband, or any of the maryners brought vp euen among the sources of the sea. But to haue sayde thus much hercof, this shall suffice: let vs nowe speake of other things no lesse worthie memorie. Therefore, whereas in the first decade we haue made mention of Vincentius Annez Pinzonus, ye shal vnderstand that hee accompanied Christophorus Colonus the Admirall in his first voyage, and afterwards made an other voyage of his owne charges with onely one ship. Againe; the first yeere after the departing of the Captaynes Nicuesa and Fogeda; he ran ouer those coastes from Hispaniola, and searched the South side of Cuba, from the East to the West, and sayled round about that Iland, which to that day, for the great length thereof, was thought to haue bin part of the continent or firme lande, although some other say that they did the like. Vincentius Annez, therefore, knowing now by experience that Cuba was an Iland, sailed on further and founde other lands Westwarde from Cuba, but such as the Admirall had first touched. Wherefore, being in maner encompassed with this newe lande, turning his course towarde the left hande, and raising the coastes of that lande by the East, ouerpassing also the mouthes of the gulfes of Beragua Vraha, and Cuchibachos, he arryued at the region whiche in the first Decade wee called Paria and Os Draconis, and entred into the great gulfe of freshe water, which Colonus discovered, being replenished with great abundance of fishe, and famous by reason of the multitude of Ilandes lying in the same; being distant Eastwarde from Curiana about an hundred and thirtie myles, in the which tract are the regions of Cumana and Manacapaná, whiche also in the sixt chapter of the first Decade we said to be regions of the large prouince of Paria, where many affirme to be the greatest plentie of the best pearles, and not in Curiana. The kinges of these regions (whom they call Chiacones, as they of Hispaniola call them Cacic) being certified of the coming of our men, sent certayne spies to enquire what newe nation was arryued in their coastes, what they brought, and what they would haue, and in the meane time furnished a number of their Canoas (whiche they call Chichos) with men armed after their manner: for they were not a litle astonysed to beholde our shippes with the sayles spreade, whereas they vse no sayles, nor can vse but small ones if they woulde, by reason of the narrownesse of their Canoas. Swarming therefore about the shyppe with their Canoas (whiche we may well call Monoxyla, because they are made of one whole tree) they feared not to shoote at our men, being yet within their shippes, and keeping themselves vnder the hatches, as safely as if they had beene defended with stone walles. But when our men had shotte of certayne peeces of ordinaunce agaynst them, they were so discomfited with the noyse and slaughter thereof, that they droue themselves to flight. Being thus disparted, our men chased them with the ship boate, tooke many, & slae many. When the kinges heard the noyse of the gunnes, and were certified of the losse of their men, they sent ambassadours to Vincentius Annez to entreate of peace, fearing the spoyle of their goodes, and destruction of their people, if our men should come

Great abundance of gold and Silver in the Islands.

There is a colony in Arabia which bringeth forth Frankincense.

Rulers for the year.

The great gulfe of Paria.

The great Hand of Atlas.

Contention betweene the Castellans & Portugals for the newe landes.

Islands in their wrath and furie. They desired peace therefore as could be conjectured by their signes and poyntings: for our men vnderstoode not one word of their language. And for the better prooffe that they desired peace, they presented our men with three thousande of those weightes of golde that the Spanyardes call Castellanum Aureum, whiche they commonly call Pesum: Also a great barrel of wood full of most excellent masculine Frankencense, weighing about two thousande and six hundred poundes weight, after eight ounces to the pounde: whereby they knewe that that lande brought forth great plentie of Frankencense; for there is no entercourse of marchandys betwene the inhabitants of Paria and the Sabians, being so farre distant, whereas also they of Paria knewe nothing without their owne coastes. With the golde and Frankencense whiche they presented to our men, they gave them also a great multitude of their peacockes, both cookes and hennes, dead and alive, as well to satisfy their present necessitie, as also to carry with them into Spayne for increase, likewise certaine carpettes, coverlettes, table clothes, and hangings, made of Gossampine silke, finely wrought after a strange device, with pleasant and variable colours, having golden bellies, and such other spangles and pendants, as the Itallians call Songlios, and the Spanyardes Cascaules, hanging of the purses thereof. They gave them furthermore speaking poppyngayes of sundry colours, as many as they woulde take: for in Paria there is no lesse plentie of poppyngays, then with vs of doves or sparrows. The inhabitants of these regions, both men & women, are apparelled with vestures made of gossampine cotton, the men to the knees, and the women to the calf of the legge. The fashion of their apparell is simple & playne, much like unto the Turkes: but the mens is double, and quilted, like that which the Turkes use in the warres. The princes of Paria are rulers but for one yeere: but their authoritie is no lesse among the people both in peace and warre; then is the authoritie of other kings in those regions. Their villages are builded in compasses, along by the banks of a small that great rivier. Eyre of their princes came to our menne with their presentes, whose names I thought worthy to be put in this historie, in remembrance of so notable a thing; Chiauconus Chiauaccha (that is, the prince of Chiauaccha, for they call princes or kings Chiauconus) Chiauconus Pintangianus, Chiauconus Chamailabus, Chiauconus Polonus, and Chiauconus Porto. The gulfe being first found of the Admirall Colonus, they call Baia Natuuitatis, because he entred into the same in the day of the natuuitie of Christ, but at that time he only passed by it without any further searching, and Baia in the Spanishe tong, signifieth a gulfe. When Vincentius had thus made a league with these princes, following his appointed course, hee founde many regions towards the East, desolate by reason of diuerse floods and overflowings of waters: also many standing pooles in diuers places, and those of exceeding largesse. He ceased not to followe this tract, vntill he came to the poynt or cape of that most long land. This poynt seemeth as though it would iunke the mount Atlas in Africke: for it prospecteth towards that part of Africke, which the Portugales call Caput bone Speranzie. The poyntes or capes of the mount Atlas are rough & sauge, nere vnto the sea. The cape of Bone Speranza, gathereth thirtie and foure degrees of the South pole, called the pole Antarctike, but that poynt onely seven degrees. I suppose this land to be that which I finde in olde writers of Cosmographie to be called the great Hande Atlantike, without any further declaring eyther of the situation; or of the nature thereof.

The eight Chapter of the seconde Decade, of the supposed continent.

When John the king of Portugall liued, which was predecessor to him that now reigneth, there arose a great contention betweene the Castellians and the Portugales, as concerning the dominion of these newe found lande. The Portugales, because they were the first that durst attempt to search the Ocean sea since the memorie of man affirmed that all the nauigations of the Ocean, ought to pertaine to them onely. The Castellians argued on the contrary part, that whatsoever God by the ministration of nature hath created on the earth, was at the beginning common among men, & that it is therefore lawfull to euery man to possess such landes as are voyd of Christian inhabitants. While the matter was thus vncertainly debated, both parties agreed that the controversie should be decided by the byshop of Rome, and plighted

plighted faith to stande to his arbitrement. The Kingdome Castile was at that tyme gouerned by that great queene Helisabeth with her husband: for the Realme of Castile was her dowrie. She also and the King of Portugale, were cosyn germanes of two sisters, by reason whereof, the discention was more easily pacified. By the assent therefore of both parties, Alexander the bishop of Rome, the 6. of that name, by the authority of his leaden bull, drew a right line from the North to the South, an hundred leagues westwarde, without the paralels of those Ilandes which are called Caput Viride, or Cabonerde, within the compasse of this 'lyne' (although some denie it) falleth the poynt of this lande whereof wee haue spoken, which they call Caput Sancti Augustini, otherwise called Promontorium Sancti Augustini, that is, saint Augustines cape or poynt: and therefore it is not lawfull for the Castilians to fasten foote in the beginning of that land. Vincentius Annez therefore departed from thence, being advertised of the inhabitants, that on the other side of the hygh mountaynes toward the South, lying before his eyes, there was a region called Ciamba, which brought forth great plentie of gold. Of certaine captiues whiche hee tooke in the gulfes of Paria (whiche certainly pertaineth to the dominiou of Castile) he brought some with him to Hispaniola, and left them with the young Admirall to learne our language: but he himselfe repayed to the court, to make earnest suite to the king, that by his fauour he might be gouernour of the Iland of Sancti Iohannis (otherwise called Burichena, being distant from Hispaniola onely xxv. leagues) because he was the first finder of golde in that Ilande. Before Vincentius made suite for this office, one Don Christopher, a Portugale, the sonne of the countie of Camigna, was gouernour of the Iland, whom the Canibales of the other Ilands slue, with all the Christian men that were in the same, except the Bishop and his familiars, which fled and shifted for themselves, forsaking the church and all the ornaments therof: for your holynes hath consecrated sine bishops in these Ilands, at the request of the most catholique king. In Sancto Dominico the chiefe cite of Hispaniola, Garcia de Padilla, a regular Fryer of the order of saint Francis, is bysshop. In the towne of Concepcion, doctor Petrus Xuarez de Deza, and in the Ilande of saint Iohn or Burichena, Alphonsus Mansus a licenciate, being both oberuants of the institution of saint Peter. The fourth is Fryer Baruarde of Mesa, a man of noble parentage, borne in Toledo, a preacher, & Bishop of the Ilande of Cuba. The fift is Iohannes Cabedus, a Fryer preacher, whom your holynesse amyoynt minister of Christe, to teach the Christian faith among the inhabitantes of Dariena. The Canibales shall shortly repent them, and the bloude of our men shall be reuenged, and that the sooner, because that shortly after they hadde committed this abominable slaughter of our men, they came againe from their owne Ilande of Sancta Crux (otherwise called Ay Ay) to the Ilande of Sancti Iohannis, and slue a king whiche was a friende to our men, and ate him, and all his familie, vtterly subuerting his village, vpon this occasion, that violating the law of hostage, hee hadde slayne seuen Canibales whiche were left with him by composition to make certayne Canoas, because the Iland of Sancti Iohannis beareth greater trees, and after for that purpose, then doth the Iland of Sancti Crux, the chiefe habitatio of the Canibales. These Canibales yet remaining in the Iland, certayne of our men sayling from Hispaniola, chaunced vpon them. The thing being vnderstoode by the interpretours, our men quarrelling with them, & calling them to account for that mischeuous deede, they immediately directed their bowes and venomous arrowes against them, and with cruell countenances threatened them to be quiet, least it should repent them of their coming thither. Our men fearing their venomous arrowes (for they were not prepared to fyght) gaue them signes of peace. Being demanded why they destroyed the village, and where the king was with his familie: they answered, that they rased the village, and cut the king with his familie in peeces, and ate them in the reuenge of their seuen workemen: and that they had made faggottes of their bones, to cary them to the wiues and children of their slayne workemen, in witness that the bodies of their husbandes and parentes lay not vreuenged, and therewith shewed the faggottes of bones to our men, who being astonished at their fiercenesse and crueltie, were enforced to dissemble the matter, and holde their peace, quarrelling no further with them at that time. These and suche other things doe dayly chaunce, the which I doe let passe,

The Ilandes of  
Rome, called  
the Iland.

The golden re-  
gion of Ciamba.

The Ilande of  
S. Iohannis.

Three Bishops of  
the Iland made  
by the Bysshop of  
Rome.

The Canibales  
of the Iland of  
Sancta Crux.

least I should offend the eares of your holynesse with such blouddie narrations. Thus haue we sufficiently digressed from the regions of Beragua and Vraba, being the chiefest foundations of our purpose. We will now therefore entreate somewhat of the largenesse and depth of the ryuers of Vraba: also declare both what they and the lands which they runne through do bring forth: likewise of the greatnesse of the lands from the East to the West, and of the breadth thereof from the South to the North, and what their opinion and hope is of things yet unknowne in the same. We will therefore beginne at the newe names, wherewith the Spanyardes haue named these prouinces, since they were vnder the dominions of the Christians.

The ryuers of Vraba.

The ninth Chapter of the second Decade, of the supposed conijunct.

Beragua, therefore they called *Castella Aurea*, that is, *golde Castile*, & Vraba they named *Andalusia* nous, that is, *new Andalusia*. And like as of many llands which they subdued, they chose *Hispaniola* for the chief place of their habitation: so in the large tract of Paria, they appointed their colonie or biding place in the two regions of Vraba and Beragua, that all suche as attempt any voyages in those coastes, may resort to them, as to safe portes to be refreshed when they are wearie or driuen to necessitie. All our seedes and plants do now maruelously encrease in Vraba, likewise, blades, sets, slips, grafes, suger canes, and such other as are brought from other places to those regions, as also beastes and foules, as we haue sayd before: O marueilous fruitfulnessse. Twentie dayes after the seede is sowen, they gathered rype cucumbers, and such like: but *Colwoortez*, *Beetes*, *Lettuce*, *Borage*, are rype within the space of ten dayes. *Gourdes*, *Melones*, and *Pompions* within the space of xxviii. dayes. *Darien* hath many natie trees and frutes, of diuers kinds, with sundry tastes, & holsonne for the vse of men, of the which I haue thought it good to describe certain of the best. They haue a tree which they call *Guaiana*, that beareth a fruite much resembling the kinde of *Citromes* which are commonly called *Limonos*, of tast somewhat sharpe, myxt with sweetnesse. They haue also abundance of nuts of pine trees, and great plenty of *Date trees*, which beare frutes bigger then the *Dates* that are knowen to vs, but they are not apt to be eaten for their too much sowrenesse. *Wilde* & barren *Date trees* grow of themselves in sundry places, the branches wherof they vse to beesome, and eat also the buds of the same. *Guarauna*, being higher and bigger then the orange tree, bringeth forth a great fruite as bigge as some *Citrons*. There is another tree much like to a chestnut tree, whose fruite is like to the bigger sorte of figs, being holsonne and of pleasant taste. *Mameis*, is another tree that bringeth forth fruite as bigge as an orange, in taste nothing inferior to the best kinde of *Melones*. *Guananaja*, beareth a fruite lesse then any of the other, but of sweete savour like spice and of delectable tast. *Houos* is another tree, whose fruite both in shape and taste is much like to prunes, but some what bigger: they are surely perswaded that this is the *Myrobalane* tree. These growe so abundantly in *Hispaniola*, that the hogges are fedde with the fruite thereof, as with mast among vs. The hogges like this kinde of feeding so wel, that when these frutes waxe ripe the swine heards can by no meanes keepe them out of the woods of these trees, by reason wherof, a great multitude of them are become wilde. They also affirme, that in *Hispaniola* swines flesh is of much better taste and more wholesome then mutton: for it is not to be doubted, but that diuers kinde of meates doe engender sundry tastes and qualities in such as are nourished therewith. The most puissant prince *Berdinandus*, declared that he had eaten of another fruite brought from those landes, being full of scales, with keies, much like a pineapple in soume and colour, but in tendernes equal to melow pepons, and in taste exceeding all garden frutes: for it is no tree, but an herbe, much like vnto an artichoke, or *Acantho*: The king him selfe gave the chiefest commendation to this. I haue eaten none of these frutes: for of a great number which they brought from thence, only one remained vncorrupted, the other being putrified by reason of the long voyage. Al suche as haue eaten of them newly gathered in their natie soile, do maruelously commend their sweetnesse and pleasaunt taste. They digge also out of the grounde certain roots growing of them selues, which they call *Betatas*, much like vnto the

The fruitfulnessse of Vraba.

The fruitfulnessse of Darien.

Swines flesh of better taste & more holsonne then mutton.

Swines perswaded on the sea.

Betatas.

the naive rootes of Millaine, or the great puffes or mushrooms of the earth. Howsoever they be dressed, eyther fried or sodde, they giue place to no suche kinde of meate in pleasant tendrines. The skynne is somewhat tougher then either the nauies or mushrooms, of carthie colour, but the inner meate therof is very white: These are nourished in gardens, as we saide of lucca in the first Decade. They are also eaten rawe, and haue the taste of rawe chestnuts, but are somewhat sweeter. We haue spoken sufficiently of trees, herbes, and fruites, we will nowe therefore entreate of things sensitiue. The landes and desolate parts of these regions, are inhabited and denoured of wilde and terrible beastes, as Lions, Lions and Tigers. Tigers, and suche other monsters as weinowe knowe, and haue ben described of olde authors in time past. But there is specially one beast engendred here, in which nature hath endeuoured to shew her cunning: This beast is as bigge as an Ox, armed with a long snoute like an Elephant, and yet no Elephant, of the colour of an oxe, and yet no oxe, with the hoofe of a horse, & yet no horse, with eares also muche like vnto an Elephant, but not so open nor so much hanging downe, yet muche wider then the eares of any other beast. Of the beast which beareth her whelpes about with her in her second-belly as in a purse (being knowne to none of the olde writers) I haue spoken in the first Decade, which I doubt not to haue come to the hands of your illness. Let vs nowe therefore declare what resteth of the floodes and riuers of Vraba. The riuier of Dariena falleth into the gulfe of Vraba, The mouth of Vraba. with a narrow chanel, scarcely able to beare the Canoes or Lighters of that prouince, & runneth by the village where they chose their dwelling place, but the riuier in the corner of the gulfe which we saide that Vachus passed by, they founde to be: xxiiii. furlongs in breadth (which they call a league) and of exceeding depth, as of two hundred cubits, falling into the gulfe by diuers monthes. They say that this riuier falleth into the gulfe of Vraba, like as the riuier Ister (otherwise called Danubius, and Danowe) falleth into the sea Aleque is called furlongs. Doublin. Pontike: and Nilus into the sea of Egypt, wherefore they named it Grandis, that is, great: whiche also they affirme to nourishe many and great Crocodiles, as the old writers testifie of Nilus, and especially as I haue learned by experience, hauing sailed vp and downe the riuier of Nilus, when I was sent Ambassadour to the Souldane of Alcair, at the commandement of the most catholique king. What I may therefore gather out of the writings of so many learned authors as concerning the riuier of Nilus, I knowe not: for they say that nature hath giuen two riuers of that name to water the laude, whether they wil them to spring out of the mountainies of the moone or the sunne, or out of the tops of the rough mountainies of Ethiopie, affirming one of the same to fall into the gulfe of Egypt towards the North, and the other into the South Ocean sea. What shall wee say in this place; Of that Nilus in Egypt there is no doubt. The Portugales also which saie by the coastes of the Ethiopians called Nigritza, and by the kingdome of Melinda, passing vnder the Equinoctiall line, among their marueylous inuentions haue found another toward the South, and earnestly affirme the same to be also deriued from the mountainies of the moone, & that it is another chanel of Nilus, because it bringeth forth Crocodiles, whereas it hath not bin read before time, that any other riuier nourished Crocodiles sawing onely Nilus. This riuier the Portugales call Senega. It runneth through the region of the Nigritias, being very fruitfull toward the North shore, but on the South side sandie and rough. Crocodiles are also engendred herein. What shall we then say of this third; yea I may well say the fourth: for I suppose them also to be Crocodiles, which Columbus with his company founde, armed with scales as hard as shelles, in the riuier called Delagartos, whereof wee haue made mention before. Shall we say that these riuers of Dariena also & Vraba, haue their originall from the mountainies of the moone, whereas they spring out of the next mountain, & can by no means haue the same originall with Nilus in Egypt, or that in Nigritia, or els that in the kingdome of Melinda, from whence so euer they are deriued, whereas these other (as we haue said) spring out of the next mountainies, which diuide another South sea, with no great distance from the North Ocean. Wherefore, it appeareth by experience of such as haue traualled the world in our time, that other waters beside the riuier of Nilus in Egypt, may likewise bring forth Crocodiles. In the marshes also and fennes of the regions of Dariena, are founde The Portugales also. great

great plentie of Pheasants and Peacocks (but not of variable coloures) with many other kindes of birdes and foules vnyke vnto ours, aswel apt to be eaten, as also to delight the cares of menne with pleasant noyse. But our Spanyardes, because they are ignorant in fowling, take but fewe. Also innumerable poppingayes of sundry kindes are founde chattering in the grotes of those fennic places. Of these there are some equall to Capones in bignesse, and some as little as sparowes. But of the diuersitie of poppingayes, we haue spoken sufficiently in the first Decade: for in the case of this large lande, Colonius him selfe brought and sent to the courte a great number of euery kinde, the whiche it was lawfull for all the people to beholde, and are yet daily brought in like manner. There remained yet one thing mooste worthy to be put in historie, the whiche, I had rather to haue chaunced into the hands of Cicero or Lúie, then in to mine: for the thing is so marueilous in my estimation, that I finde my witte more entangled in the description hereof, then is saide of the henne when she seeth her young chicken inwrapped in towre or flaxe. The breadth of that lande from the North Ocean to the South sea, is only sixe daies journey, by relation of the inhabitants. The multitude ther fore and greatnesse of the riuers on the one side, and on the other side the narrownesse of the lande, bring me into suche doubt howe it can come to passe, that in so little a place of three daies journey, measuring from the high toppes of those mountaines, I doe not vnderstande howe so many and so greate riuers may haue recourse vnto this North sea: for it is to be thought, that as many doe flow toward thinhabitants of the South. These riuers of Vraha are but small, in comparison of many other in those coastes: for the Spanyards say, that in the time of Colonius, they found and passed by an other riuier after this, whose gulfe falling into the sea, they affirme to be little lesse then a hundred miles in the first coastes of Paria, as we haue saide else where: for they say, that it falleth from the toppes of high mountaines with so swift and furious a course, that by the violence and greatnesse thereof, it driueth backe the sea, although it be rough & enforced with a cōtrarie wind. They al affirme likewise, that in al the large tracte therof, they felt no soure or salt water, but that all the water was freshe, sweete and apt to be drunke. Thinhabitantes call this riuier Maragonum, and the regions adiacent to the same, Mariatambal, Camamorus, and Paricora: beside those riuers whiche I haue named before, as Darien, Grandius Dabaiba, Bergua, Sancti Mathei, Boius-gatti, Delagartos, & Gaira, they which of late haue searched those coastes, haue founde many other. Deliberating therefore with my selfe, from whence these mountaines, being so narrowe and neere vnto the sea on both sides, haue suche great holowe caues or dens of such capacite, and from whence they are filled, to cast forth such abundance of water: hereof also asking them the opinions of the inhabitants, they affirme them to be of diuers iudgements herein, alleading first the greatnes of the mountaines to be the cause, whiche they say to be very high, which thing also Colonius the first finder thereof affirmeth to bee true, adding therunto that the paradise of pleasure is in the tops of those mountaynes whiche appeare from the gulfe of Paria & Os Draconis, as he is fully perswaded. They agree therefore that there are great caues within these mountaynes, but it resteth to consider from whence they are fylled. If therefore al the riuers of freshe water, by the opinion of many, doe so flow out of the sea, as driuen & compelled through the passages or pores of the earth, by the ponderous weight of the sea it selfe, as wee see them breake forth of the springes, and direct their course to the sea agayne, then the thing it selfe to bee marueyled at here, then in other places: for wee haue not read that in any other place, two such seas haue enuironed any lande with so narrowe lymittes: for it hath on the right side the great Ocean, where the sunne goeth downe on the left hande, and another on the other side where the sunne riseth, nothing inferiour to the first in greatnesse, for they suppose it to bee myxtie and ioyned as all one with the sea of East India. This land therefore beeing burdened with so great a weyght on the one side, & on the other (if this opinion be of any value) is enforced to swallowe vp suche decaoured waters, and againe to cast forth the same in open springes and streames. But if wee shall denye that the earth draweth humours of the sea, and agree that all the fontaynes or springes are engendered of the contention or turning of ayre into water, distilling within the holow places of the mountaynes (as the most part thinke) we wil

A philosophical discourse is concerning the originall of springs and riuers.

The breadth of the lands at Vraha, from the North Ocean to the South sea.

The sea.

The land enuironed with two seas.

Conuersion of ayre into water in the caues of mountaynes.

give place rather to the authorities of them which stick to those reasons, then that our eence is satisfied of the full truth thereof. Yet do I not repugne, that in some cases of mountaynes, water is turned into ayre: for I my selfe haue scene, howe in the caues of manye mountaynes in Spayne, in manner showres of rayne doe fall continually and that the water gathered by this meanes, dooth send forth certayne rivers by the sides of the mountaynes, wherewith all suche trees as are planted on the steepe or foote of the mountaynes, as vines, oliue trees, and suche other, are watered, and this especially in one place: as the right honourable Lodouike the Cardinall of Aragonie, most obsequious to your holinesse, and two other bishops of Italy, wherof the one is Silius, Pandonus, and the other an Archbishop (whose name and title I do not remember) can beare me witness: for when wee were together at Granata, lately deliuered from the dominion of the Moores, & walked for our pastyme to certayne pleasant hilles (by the which there ranne a fayre ryuer) while Cardinall Lodouike occupied himselfe, in shooting at birdes which were in the bushes neere vnto the riuer, I, and the other two bishops determined to climbe the mountaynes, to search the originall and spring of the ryuer: for we were not farre from the tops thereof. Following therefore the course of the riuer, wee founde a great caue, in which was a continuall fall of water, as it had bene a showre of rayne, the water whereof, falling into a trench made with mans hande, encreasech to a ryuer, and runneth downe by the sides of the mountaynes. The like is also scene in this famous towne of Valladoleta (where we nowe sojourne) in a certayne greene close, not past a furlong distant from the walles of the towne. I graunt therefore, that in certayne places, by coaquering of the ayrie dewe into water, within the caues of suche mountaynes, many springes and riuers are engendered: but I suppose that nature was not sollicitate to bring forth such great floudes by this so small industrie. Two reasons therefore do sound best to my iudgement: wherof the one is, the often fall of rayne: the other, the continuall autumnne or spring time which is in those regions, being so neere vnto the Equinoctiall, that the common people can perceiue no difference betwene the length of the day, and the night through out all the yeere, whereas these two seasons are more apt to engender abundance of rayne, then either extreme winter, or feruent summer. An other reason in effect much like vnto the first is this: If the sea be full of pores, and that by the pores thereof, being opened by the South wyndes, we shall consent that vapours are lysed vp, wherof the watery cloudes are engendered, this lande must needs bee moysted with moe showres then anye other, if it bee as narrowe as they say, and enuironed with two mayne seas, collaterally beating on the same: how soeuer it bee, it cannot but giue credite to the reporte of such worthy men as haue recourse to those regions, and can no lesse then declare the same, albeit it may seeme incredible to some ignorant persons, not knowing the power of nature, to whome, Plinie was perswaded: that nothing was impossible. We haue therefore thought it good to make this discourse by the way of argument, least on the one side, menne of good learning and iudgement, and on the other side, such as are studious to finde occasions of quarrelling in other mens wrytinges, shoulde iudge vs to bee so vndiscrete, lightly to giue credite to every tale, not being consonant to reason: but of the force and great violence of those fresh waters, which repulsing the sea, make so great a gulfe (as wee haue sayde) I thinke I thinke the cause thereof to bee the great multitude of floudes and riuers, which being gathered together, make so great a poole, and not one ryuer as they suppose. And forasmuch as the mountaynes are exceeding high and steepe, I thinke the violence of the fall of the waters to be of such force, that this conflict betwene the waters, is caused by the impulsion of the poole, that the salt water cannot enter into the gulfe. But here perhaps some will marueyle at mee, why I should marueile so much hereat, speaking vnto me, scornefully, after this manner: Why doth bee so marueile at the great riuers of those regions? Hath not Italic his Eridanus, named the king of riuers of the olde wryters; Haue not other regions also the like; as wee reade of Tanais, Ganges, and Danubius; which are sayd so to overcome the sea, that fresh water may bee drawne fouentie myles within the same. These men I would satisfie with this answer. The famous ryuer of Padus in Italic (whiche they nowe call Po, and was of the Greekes called Eridanus) hath the great mountaynes called Alpes, diuiding Fraunce, Germanie, and Pannonie, from Italic, lying at the banke there, as it were bulwarkes agger,

The other fall  
of ryuer and  
spring close  
The Equinoctiall  
line

The pores of  
the sea, & the  
South wynd

The limits  
Eridanus

full of moyntaine, and with a long tracte receiuing (Ticinum) with innumerable other great ryuers, falleth into the sea Adriatique. The like is also to bee vnderstoode of the other. But these riuers (as our meane were enourmed by the kinges) fall into the Ocean sea with larger and fuller channels nere hande, and some there are which offraie this lande: to be very large in other places, although it be but narrow here. There cometh also to my remembrance another cause, the whiche although it be of no great force, yet doo I entende to write it. Perhaps therefore the length of the lande reaching farre from the East to the West; if it be narrow, may be a helpe hereunto: for as wee reade, that the ryuer Alphus passeth through the holowe places vnder the sea, from the cite of Elis in Beoponnes, and breaketh forth at the fountaine or spring Arcturus in the Iland of Sicilla so is it possible that these mountaines may haue such long caues pertyning vnto them, that they may bee the receptacles of the water passing through the landes heere farre distant, and that the same waters coming by so long a tracte, may in the way bee greatly increased, by the conuersion of ayre into water, as we haue sayde. Thus much haue I spoken freely, permitting both to them which do friendlyly interpret other mens dooings, and also the malicious scorers, to take the thing euen as thom lysteth, for hitherto I can make no further declaration hereof but when the truth shalbe better knowne, I will do my diligence to commit the same to writing. Nowe therefore, forasmuch as we haue spoken thus much of the breadth of this lande, we entende to describe the length and forme of the same.

The tenth Chapter of the second Decade, of the supposed continent.

THat land reacheth forth into the sea, euen as doth Italy, although not like the leg of a man, as it doth. But nowe I compare a Pigmean or a dwarf, to a Giant: for that part thereof which the Spaniards haue ouerrunn, from the said East-poynt whiche reacheth toward the sea Atlantike; (the end not being yet founde toward the West) is more then eight times longer then Italie. And by what reason I am moued to say eight times, your holinesse shall vnderstande. From the time therefore that I first determined to obey their requestes, who willed mee first in your name to write these thinges in the Latine tongue, I did my endeour that all thinges might come forth with due tryall and experience: whereupon I repayed to the Bishop of Burges, being the chiefe refuge of this nauigation. As we were therefore secretly together in one chamber, we had many instrumentes pertyning to these affaires, as globes, and many of those maps which are commonly called the shipmans cartes, or cartes of the sea. Of the which, one was drawne by the Portugales, whereunto Americus Vesputius is sayd to haue put to his hand, being a manne most expert in this facultie, and a Florentine borne, who also vnder the stipend of the Portugales, had sayled toward the South pole manie degrees beyonde the Equinoctiall. In this carte we found the first front of this lande to bee broader then the kinges of Vraba had perswaded our men of their mountaines. To another, Colonus the Admiral, while he yet liued, and searched those places, had giuen the beginning with his owne handes: whereunto Bartholomeus Colonus his brother and Licutenant had added his iudgement, for he also had sayled about those coastes. Of the Spanyards likewise, as many as thought themselves to haue anie knowledge what pertyned to measure the land and the sea, drew certayne cartes in parchment as concerning these nauigations. Of all other, they most esteeme them which Iohannes de la Cosa the companion of Fogeda (whom we sayde to be slayne of the people of Caramairi in the haue of Carthago) & another expert pylote called Andreas Moralis, had set forth. And this aswel for the great experiece which they both had (to whom these tractes were aswel knowne as the chambers of their owne houses) as also that they were thought to be cunninger in that part of Cosmographic, which teacheth the description & measuring of the sea. Conferring therefore al these cartes together, in euery of the which was drawne a lyne, expressing not the myles, but leagues, after the manner of the Spanyards, wee tooke our compasses, & began to measure the sea coastes after his order. From that poynt or front which we sayde to bee included within the lyne pertyning to the Portugales iurisdiction, being drawn by the paralleles of the Ilandes of Cabouerde, but a hundred leagues further toward the West (which they haue nowe also searched

The first  
Alphus.

Long caues in  
the mountain-  
tains.

The length  
and forme of  
the land.

Cartes of the  
sea.  
The carte of  
Americus  
Vesputius.

The carte of  
Colonus.

The carte of  
Iohannes de  
la Cosa.  
The Carte of  
Andreas Mo-  
ralis.

The manner of  
measuring the  
cartes.

searched on every side) wee founde three hundred leagues to the entrance of the river Maragnon: and from thence to Os Draconis, seven hundred leagues, but somewhat lesse by the description of some, for they doe not agree in all poyntes exquisitely. The Spanyards will that a league contayne foure myles by sea, and but three by land. From Os Draconis, to the cape or poynt of Cuchibacoo, which being passed, there is a gulfe on the left hande, we measured three hundred leagues in one Carde, & much therabouts in another. From this poynt of Cuchibacoo, to the region of Caramairi, in whiche is the haven Cartago (whiche some call Carthagena) we found about a hundred & seventy leagues. From Caramairi to the Iland Fortis, fyfte leagues. From thence to the gulfe of Vraba, among the whiche is the village called Suxeta Maria Antiqua, where the Spanyards have appointed their habitation, only xxxiii. leagues. From the ryuer of Vraba in the prouince of Dariens, to the ryuer of Beragua, where Nicuesa had intended to haue fastened his foote, if God had not otherwise decreed, we measured a hundred and thirtie leagues. From Beragua to that ryuer, which we sayd of Colonos to bee called Sancti Matthei, in the which also Nicuesa loosing his Caruell, wandered in great calamities, we found in our Cardes only a hundred & fourtie leagues: Yet many other which of late time haue come from these partes, haue described many more leagues in this tract from the ryuer of Sancti Matthei, in whiche also they place diuers riuers, as Aburama, with the Iland called Scatum Cateba, lying before it, whose kings name is Facies combusta. Likewise another riuer called Zobraba, after that, Vrida, and then Duraba, in the whiche golde is founde. Furthermore, many goodly hapens, as Cerabaro and Hiebra, so called of the inhabitants: And thus if your holynesse will conferre these numbers together, you shall finde in this accompt, a thousand, five hundred, twentie and six leagues, which amount to sixe thousand & seuen hundred miles from the poynt of Sancti Matthei, which they call Sinum perditorum, that is, the gulfe of the lost men. But we may not leave here: for after this, one Astur Onetensis otherwise named Iohannes Dias de Solis, borne in Nebrissa (which bringeth fourth many learned men) saying from this riuer towards the West, ouerran many coasts and leagues, but the middelt of that shore bendeth towards the North, and is not therefore directly placed in order with the other, yet may wee gather by a diameter of right lyne, about three hundred leagues. Hereby may you gather what is the length of this lande, but of the breadth, perhaps we shal here after haue further knowledge: Let vs nowe speake somewhat of the varietie of the degrees of the elevation of the pole starres. This lande therefore, although it reache south from the East into the West, yet it is crooked, and hath the poynt bending so towards the South, that it looseth the sight of the North pole, and extendeth beyond the Equinoctiall lyne seven degrees towards the South pole: but the poynt hereof, pertyneth to the iurisdiction of the Portugales, as wee haue sayde. Leaving this poynt, and sayling towards Paria, the North starre is scene againe, & is so much the more lifted vp, in how much the region enclimeth more towards the West. The Spanyards therefore haue diuers degrees of elevation, vntill they come to Dariena being their chiefe station and dwelling place in those landes: for they haue forsaken Beragua, where they founde the North pole eleuate viii. degrees, but from hence, the land doth so much bend towards the North, that it is there in manner equal with the degrees of the straghtes of Hercules pylles, especially if wee measure certaine lands founde by them towards the North side of Hispaniola, among the which there is an Ilande about three C. & xxv. leagues from Hispaniola, as they say which haue searched the same, named Boiua or Agnaneo, in the which is a continual spring of running water, of such maruelous vertue, that the water thereof being drunke, perhaps with some diet, maketh olde men young againe. And here must I make protestation to your holynesse, not to thinke this to bee sayde lightly or rashly, for they haue so spread this rumour for a truth throughout all the court, that not onely all the people, but also many of them whom wisdome or fortune hath diuided from the common sort, thinke it to be true: but if you shall aske my opinion herein, I will answer, that I will not attribute so great power to nature, but that God hath no lesse reserved this prerogative to himselfe, then to searche the heartes of menne, or to giue substance to priuation, (that is) being, to no being, except wee shall beleuee the fable of Colchis of Esou renouate, to bee as true as the writings

The navigation  
of Iohannes  
Dias.

The elevation  
of the pole.

The iurisdiction  
of the Portu-  
gales.

Hercules pyl-  
les.

The Ilande  
Boiua or  
Agnaneo.  
The restoration  
of it.  
A vessel of exor-  
table vertue.

of Sibylla Erythrea. Albeit perhappes the schoole of Phisitions and natural philosophers, will not muche sticke to affirme, that by the vse of certaine secreete medicines and diet, the accidentes of age (as they call them) may be long hidden & deferred, which they will to bee vnderstoode by the renouation of age. And to haue sayd thus much of the length and breadth of these regions, and of the rough and hugious mountaines, with their watery caues, also of the diuers degrees of that lande, I thinke it sufficient. But I thought it not good to let passe what chaunced to these miserable men among their generall calamities. I remember that when I was a childe, mee thought my bowelles grated, and that my spirites were maruclously troubled for very pittie, when I reade in the poet Virgil, howe Achemenides was leffy of Vlysses vpon the sea bankes among the gigantes called Cyclopes, where for the space of manie dayes from the departing of Vlysses, until the comming of Eneas, he ate none other meate but only berries and haues. But our vnfortunat Spanyards, which followed Nicuesa to inhabite Beragua, would haue esteemed haues and berries for great delicates. What should I heere speake of the head of an asse bought for a great price, & of such other extremities as meane haue suffered in townes besieged? After that Nicuesa had determined to leaue Beragua for the barrennesse of the soyle, he attempted to search Portum Bellum, and then the coastes of the poynt called Marsior, if he might there finde a place more fortunate to inhabite. In this meane tyme, so grieuous famine oppressed his souldiers, that they neither absteyned from eating of mangic dogges, which they had with the, aswell for their defence as for hunting (for in the warre agaynst the naked people, dogges stode them in great steade) nor yet somtyme from the slayne inhabitants: for they found not there any fruitfull trees, or plentie of fowles, as in Dariena, but a barren ground, and not meete to be inhabited. Here certayne of the souldiers made a bargaine with one of their fellows for the pryce of a leanne dogge, who also was almost dead for hunger: they gaue the owner of the dogge many of those peeces of gold which they call Besos, or golden Castellans. Thus agreeing of the pryce, they slayed the dogge to be eaten, and cast his mangic skinne with the bones of the heade hanging thereto, among the bushes. The day following, a certayne footeman of their companie, chaunced to finde the skinne beinge nowe full of maggottes and stynking. He brought it home with him, sodde it, and ate it. Many resorted to him with their dishes for the broth of the sod skinne proffering him for every dishfull a peece of golde. An other founde two toades, and sodde them, which a sicke man bought of him for two fine shaytes, curiously wrought of linnen intermyxed with golde. Certayne other wandering about to seeke for victualles, founde in a pathway in the myddest of a fildes, a dead man, of the inhabitants, which hadde beene slaine of his owne companie, and was nowe rotten and stynking. They drewe him aside, dismembred him secretly, roasted him, and ate him, therewith asswaging their hunger, as if they had beene fed with pheasantes. One also, whiche departing from his companions in the night season, went a fishing among the reedes of the maryshes, liued onely with slyme or muddle for the space of certayne dayes, vntill at the length creeping, and almost dead, he founde the waye to his felowes. And thus these miserable men of Beragua, vexed with these and such other afflictions, were brought from the number of seuen hundred; threescore and ten souldiers, scarcely to fourtie, beinge nowe also added to the companie of them in Dariena. Fewe were slayne of the inhabitants, but the residue consumed with famine, breathed out their very soules, opening a way to the newe laudes for such as shall come after them, appeasing the fury of the barbarous nations, with the pryce of their blood. Considering therefore, after these stormes, with what ease other men shall ouercome and inhabite these landes, in respect to the calamities that these men haue suffered, they shall seeme to goe to bride feastes, where all thinges are ready prepared against their comming. But where Petrus Arias aryued with the kinges nauie, and new supply of men, to this houre I knowe no certainty. What shall chaunce hereafter, I will make diligent inquisition, if I shall vnderstand this to be acceptable to your holinesse. Thus I bid you farewell: from the courte of the most catholyke king, the day before the noies of December, in the yeere of Christ: 1514.

The

The certidies  
of age may be  
hidde.Vntill  
Lugre.This was in  
the iage of the  
roaden.Many dogges  
eate.A mangic dog  
eate sode.Broth of a  
mangic dogge  
eaten.  
Toades eate.A dead man  
eaten.

Now.

Petrus Arias  
whome the Spa-  
nyards call  
Pedrian.

The first Chapter of the thirde Decade, is the Bishop of Rome Leo the tenth.

I Was determined (most holy father) to haue closed vp the gates to this newe worlde, supposing that I had wandered farre enough in the coastes thereof, while in the meane time newe letters were brought me from thence, which caused me againe to take my pen in hand: for I receiued letters not onely from certaine of mine acquaintance there, but also from Vaschus Nunnez, whom we sayde by the confidence of his owne power with his confederates, to haue vsurped the gouernance of Dariena, after the reiecting of Nicuesa & Ancisus, Licuetenuntes. By his letter, written after his warlike manner, we vnderstand that he hath passed ouer the mountaines diuiding the Ocean, knowne to vs, from the other mayne sea on the South side of this lande, hitherto vnknowne. His Epistle is greater then that called Capreensis de Seiano. But we haue gathered out of that and other, onely such things as we thought most worthy to bee noted. Vaschus so bechaue himselfe in these affaires, that he did not onely pacifie the kinges displeasure conceiued against him, but also made him so fauourable and gracious good lord towards him, that he rewarded him and his companions with many honourable gifts and priuiledges for their attempes. Wherefore: I desire your holynesse to encline your attentive eares, & to consider with a ioyfull mind what they haue brought to passe in these great enterprises: for this valiant nation (the Spanyardes I meane) haue not onely with great paines and innumerable dangers subdued, to the Christian empire, infinite hundreds and legions, but also myriades of men. Vaschus Nunnez therefore, whether it were that he was impatient of idleness, (for a valiant mind cannot rest in one place, or be vnoccupied) or least any other should preuent him in so great a matter (suspecting the newe gouernour Petrus Arias) or being moued by both these causes, and especially for that the king had taken displeasure with him for such things as he had done before, tooke the aduenture vpon him, with a fewe menne to bring that to passe, which the sonne of king Comogrus thought could hardly haue bin done with the ayde of a thousand men, whereof Petrus Arias was appointed captaine for the same purpose. Assembling therefore certaine of the olde souldiers of Dariena, and many of those which came lately from Hispaniola, allured by the fame of greater pleatie of golde, hee gathered an armie of a hundred fourescore and tenn men. Thus being furnished, and ready to take his voyage by sea, while the winde serued him, hee departed from Dariena with one Brigandine, and tenne of their boats which they call Comas, as we haue sayde. First therefore arriuing in the dominion of Careta king of Coiba, and friend to the Christians, and leaving his shyppe and boats there, hee made his deuoute prayers to almighty God, and therewith went forwarde on his journey by lande towards the mountaines. Here he first entred into the region of king Poncha, who fledde at his coming, as he had done before. But Vaschus sent messengers to him by the conduct of certayne of Careta his men, promising him friendship, & defence against his enemies, with many other benefites. Poncha thus entised with fayre speech and friendly profers, both of our men, & of the Caretans, came to our men glad and willingly, making a league of friendship with them. Vaschus enterteined him very friendly, and perswaded him neuer thereafter to stande in feare. Thus they ioyned handes, embraced, and gaue great giftes the one to the other, to knitte vp the knotte of continuall amitie. Poncha gaue Vaschus a hundred & ten poundes weight of golde, of that kind which the Spanyardes call Pesam. Hee hadde no greater plentie of golde at this time, by reason he was spoyled the yeare before, as we haue sayd. Vaschus to recompence one benefite with another, gaue him certayne of our things, as counterfayre rynges, Christall stones, copper chaynes, & bracelets, hawkes belles, looking glasses, and such other fine stuffe. These things they set much by, and greatly esteeme: for such things as are strange, are euer where counted precious. He gaue also to Poncha certayne axes to fell trees, which he accepted as a princely gift, because they lacke Iron, and all other metalls except golde: by reason whereof, they are enforced with great labour to cutte their trees to builde their houses, and specially to make their boates hollow, without instrumentes of Iron, with certayne sharpe stones, which they finde in the ryuers. Thus Vaschus, leauing all things in safetie behinde him, marched forward, with his armie toward

Vaschus Messengers, gouernour of Dariena.

The new South Ocean.

Commemoration of the Spanyardes.

A valiant mind cannot be idle.

Vaschus his voyage to seeke the golden mountaines.

Careta King of Coiba.

King Poncha.

Strange things are counted precious.

Lacke of Iron.

A stone is the best of Iron.

the

the mountaynes, by the conduct of certayne guides and labourers which Pomeha had given him, aswell to leade him the way, as also to cary his baggages, and open the strayghtes through the desolate places and craggie rocks full of the dennes of wilde beastes: for there is seldome any intercourse of buying and selling, betweene these naked people, because they stand in neede of fewe thinges, and haue not the vse of money: but if at any time they exercise any bartering, they doe it but neere hande, exchanging golde for household stuffe, with their cosines which somewhat esteeme the same for ornaments when it is wrought.

**Superfluous**  
**Under Liberty.** Other superfluites they vterly contemne, as hinderances of their sweete libertie, so much as they are: giuen onely to play and idlenesse. And for this cause the high wayes which lye betweene their regions, are not much worn with many journeyes, yet haue their scouts certaine priuie markes, whereby they know the way the one to invade the others dominions, and spoyle and infect themselves on both sides with mutuall incursions priuily in the night season.

**Carpenters.** By the helpe therefore of their guides and laborers, with our Carpenters he passed ouer the horrible mountaynes, and many great riuers lying in the way, ouer the which he made bridges, either with pylles or trunks of trees. And here doe I let passe many thinges which they suffered for lacke of necessaries, being also in maner ouercome with extreame labour, least I should bee tedious in rehearsing thinges of small value. But I haue thought it good not to omit suche dogges as hee had with the kinges by the way. Therefore or euer he came to the toppes of the high mountaynes, he entred into a region called Quarequa, and mette with the king thereof called, by the same name, with a great bande of menne armed after their manner, as with bowes and arrowes, long and broad two handed swordes made of wood, long stauces hardened at the endes with sirc, dartes also and slynges. Hee came proudly and equilly against our men, and sent messengers to them to hydde them stande, and proceede no further, demanding whyther they want, and what they hadde to doe: Here with hee came forth and shewed himselve, being appailelled with all his nobilitie, but the oither were all naked. Then approaching toward our men, he threatened the, with a Lions countenance, to depart from thence, except they would be slayne euery mothers sonne.

**King Quare-**  
**qua is Oryan**  
**to fight.**  
**His bowes.**  
**Crosse bowes.** When our men denyed that they would goe backe, he assailed them fiercely, but the battayle was soone finished, for assoone as they hearde the noyse of the bargabusies, they beleued that our men caryed thunder and lightning about with them. Many also being slayne and sore wounded with quarrels of crossebowes, they turned their backes and fledde. Our men following them in the chase, hewed them in peeces; as the Butchers doe fleshe in the shambles, from one an arme, from another a legge, from him a buttocke, from another a shoulder, and from some the necke from the bodie at one stroke. Thus, sixe hundred of them, with their king, were slayne like braiite beastes. Vaschus founde the houe of this king infected with most abominable and vnnaturall lechery: for he founde the kinges brother, and many other young men in womens apparell, smooth and effeminately decked, whiche by the report of such as dwelt about him, hee abused with preposterous Venus. Of these about the number of fourtie, he commanded to be giuen for a pray to his dogges: for (as we haue sayde) the Spanyades vse the helpe of dogges in their warres agaynst the naked people, whom they invade as fiercely and rauenyngly, as if they were wild bores or hartes: insomuch that our Spanyades haue founde their dogges no lesse faithfull to them in all dangers and enterpryses, then did the Colophonians or Castabalences, whiche instituted whole armies of dogges, so made to serue in the warres, that being accustomed to place them in the forefront of the battayles, they neuer shronke or gaue backe. When the people had hearde of the senere punishment whiche our menne had executed vpon that filthy kinde of men, they resorted to them, as it had bin to Hercules for refuge, by violence bringing with them all such as they knewe to be infected with that pestilence, spytting in their faces, and crying out to our men to take reuenge of them, and rydde them out of the world: from among men, as contagious beastes. This stinking abomination hadde not yet entred among the people, but was excised onely by the noble men and gentlemen. But the people lifting vp their hands & eyes toward heauen, gaue tokens that God was grieuouly offended with suche vyle doedes, affirming this to be the cause of their so many thunderinges, lyghtninges, & tempestes, wherewith they

they are so often troubled, and of their overflowing of waters which drowne their sets and fruites, whereof famine and diuers diseases ensue, as they simply and faithfully beleuee, although they know none other GOD then the sunne whom onely they honour, thinking that it doth both giue and take away, as it is pleased or offended: Yet they are very docible, and easie to be allured to our customes and religion, if they had any teacher. In their language there is nothing vnpleasaut to the eare, or harde to be pronounced, but that all their wordes may be written with Latine letters, as wee sayde of the inhabitants of Hispaniola. It is a warlyke nation, and hath benee euer hitherto molestous to their borders: but the region is not fortunate with fruitfull grounde, or plentie of gold. Yet it is full of great barren mountaynes, being somewhat colde by reason of their height and therefore the noble menne and gentlemen are apparelled, but the common people liue content onely with the benefites of nature. There is a region not past two dayes iourney distant from Quarequa, in which they found only blacke Moores, and those exceeding fierce and cruell. They suppose that in tyme past certayne blacke Moores sayed thither out of Ethiopia to robbe, and that by shippwracke or some other chance, they were dryuen to those mountaynes. The inhabitants of Quarequa liue in continuall warre and debate with these blacke men. Heere Vaschus leauing in Quarequa many of his souldiers (whiche by reason they were not yet accustomed to such trauales & hunger, fell into diuers diseases) tooke with him certayne guides of the Quarequatans, to conduct him to the toppes of the mountaynes. From the pallace of king Poncha, to the prospect of the other South sea, is only sixe daies iourney, the which neuertheless, by reason of many hinderances & chaunces, and especially for lacke of victualles, he could accomplish in no lesse then xxv. dayes. But at the length, the seuenth day of the Calendes of October, hee behelde with woonderyng eyes the toppes of the high mountaynes, shewed vnto him by the guides of Quarequa, from the which he might see the other sea so long looked for, and neuer seene before of any man comming out of our worlde. Approching therefore to the toppes of the mountaynes, he commanded his armie to stay, and went himselfe alone to the toppe, as it were to take the first possession thereof. Where, falling prostrate vpon the grounde, and raising himselfe againe vpon his knees, as the maner of the Christians is to pray, lyfing vp his eyes and handes towardes heauen, and directing his face towardes the newe founde South sea, he powred forth his humble and deuout prayers before almightie God, as a spirituall sacrifice with thanks giuing, that it pleased his diuine maiestie, to reserue vnto that day the victorie & prayse of so great a thing vnto him, being a man but of small wit and knowledge, of litle experience, and base parentage. When he had thus made his prayers after his warlyke maner, hee beckned with his hande to his companions, to come to him, shewing the great maine sea heretofore vnknowne to the inhabitants of Europe, Aphrike, and Asia. Here agayne hee fell to his prayers as before, desiring almighty God (and the blessed virgin) to fauour his beginninges, and to giue him good successe to subdue those landes, to the glory of his holy name, and encrease of his true religion. All his companions did likewise, and prayed God with loude voyces for ioy. Then Vaschus, with no lesse manly corage then Hanniball of Carthage shewed his souldiers Italy, and the promontories of the Alpes, exhorted his men to lyft vp their hearts, and to beholde the lande euen nowe vnder their feete, and the sea beefore their eyes, which should be vnto them a full and iust rewarde of their great laboures & traauyles nowe ouerpassed. When he had sayde these wordes, hee commanded them to raise certaine heapes of stones, in the steed of altars, for a token of possession. They descending from the toppes of the mountaynes, least such as might come after him should argue him of lying or faishood, hee wrote the king of Castels name here and there, on the barkes of the trees, both on the right hand and on the left, & raysed heapes of stones all the way that he went, vntill he came to the region of the next king towardes the South, whose name was Chiapes. This king came forth agaynst him with a great multitude of menne, threatning and forbydding him not onely to passe through his dominions, but also to goe no further. Hereupon Vaschus set his battayle in array, and exhorted his men (being nowe but fewe) fierly to assaile their enemies, and to esteeme them no better then dogges meate, as they should bee shortly. Placing therefore

The harness is  
strong, and the  
workmen  
but fewe.

Warlyke peo-  
ple.

The higher,  
the colder.

A region of  
black Moores.

Diseases of  
change of ayre  
and dyet.  
The South sea.

Prayer.

God rayseth  
the power from  
the downsill.

Hanniball of  
Carthage.

King Chiapes.  
A battayle.

Chiapes is dr-  
ven to flight.

Vaschus send-  
eth for king  
Chiapes.

Chiapes sub-  
mitteth him-  
selfe to Vas-  
chus.

the hargabusiens and masties in the forefront, they saluted king Chiapes and his men with suche alarme, that when they heard the noyse of the gunnes, sawe the flames of fire, and smelt the sauour of brimstone (for the wynde blew toward them) they droue themselves to flight, with such feare least thunderbolts and lyghtnynges followed them, that many fell downe to the grounde, whom our men pursuing, first keeping their order, and after breaking their aray, slue but fewe, and tooke many captiue: For they determined to vse no extremitie, but to pacyfie those regions as quietly as they might. Entering therefore into the pallace of king Chiapes, Vaschus commaunded many of the captiues to bee loosed, willing them to search out their king, and to exhorte him to come thither: and that in so doing, he woulde be his friende, and profer him peace, beeside many other benefits. But if he refused to come it shuld turne to the destruction of him and his, and viter subuersion of his country. And that they might the more assuredly do this message to Chiapes, he sent with them certayne of the guides which came with him from Quarequa. Thus Vaschus, being perswaded aswel by the Quarequans, who coulde coniecture to what end the matter would come, by the experience which they had scene in themselves and their king, as also by the reasons of his owne men, to whom Vaschus had made suche friendly promises in his behalfe, came forth of the caues in the which hee lurked, and submitted himselfe to Vaschus, who accepted him friendly. They ioyned hands, embraced the one the other, made a perpetuall league of friendshippe, and gaue great rewardes on both sides. Chiapes gaue Vaschus foure hundred poundes weyght of wrought golde, of those poundes which they call Pesos, and Vaschus recompenced him agayne with certayne of our things. Thus being made friendes, they remained together a fewe dayes, vntil Vaschus souldiers were come, which he left behind him in Quarequa. Then calling vnto him the guides and labourers whiche came with him from thence, hee rewarded them liberally, and dismissed them with thanks. Shortly after, by the conduct of Chiapes himselfe, and certayne of his men departing from the toppes of the mountaines, hee came in the space of foure dayes to the bankes of the newe sea: where assembling all his menne together, with the kinges scribes and notaries, they addicted a'l that mayne sea with all the landes adiaçant thereunto, to the dominion and Empire of Castile. Here hee left parte of his souldiers with Chiapes, that he myght the easelyer search those coastes. And taking with him niene of their lyghters made of one whole tree (which they call Culchas, as the inhabitants of Hispaniola call them Canoas) & also a bande of fourescore men, with certayne of Chiapes men, he passed ouer a great riuer, and came to the region of a certaine king whose name was Coquera. He attempted to resist our men as did the other, and with like successe: for he was overcome and put to flight. But Vaschus, who intended to winne him with gentleness, sent certayne Chiapeans to him, to declare the great power of our men, howe inuincible they were, howe mercifull to such as submit themselves, also cruell and seuer to such as obstinately withstand them: Promising him furthermore, that by the friendship of our mē, he might be wel assured by the example of other not only to liue in peace and quietnes himselfe, but also to be reuenged of the iniuries of his enemies: Wyling him in conclusion so to weigh the matter, that if he refused this gentleness profered vnto him by so great a victourer, he should or it were long learne by feeling, to repent him too late of that perill which hee might haue auoyded by hearing. Coquera with these words and examples, shaken with great feare, came gladly with the messengers, bringing with him 650. Pesos of wrought golde, which hee gaue vnto our men. Vaschus rewarded him likewise, as we sayde before of Poncha. Coquera being thus pacified, they returned to the pallace of Chiapes, where, visiting their companions, and resting there a while, Vaschus determined to searche the next great gulfe, the whence, from the furthest reaching thereof into the laude of their countreyes, from the entrance of the mayne sea, they say to be three myles. This they named Saint Michaels gulfe, which they say to bee full of inhabited landes and hugious rockes. Entering therefore into the nine bates of Culchas, wherewith hee passed ouer the riuier before, hauing also with the same companie of fourescore whole men, he went forwarde on his purpose, although hee were greatly dissuaded by Chiapes, who earnestly desired him not to attempt

A gulfe of three  
score myles  
saue Michaels  
gulfe.  
The many coo-  
rage as I profy  
saue of Vaschus.

attempt

attempt that voyage at that time, affirming the gulfe to bee so tempestions and stormie three monethes in the yeere, that the sea was there by no meanes nauigable, and that he had seene many Culchias deuoured of whirlpooles, euen before his eyes. But inuincible Vascus, impatient of idleness, and voyde of all feare in Gods causes, answered that God and his holy saintes would prosper his enterpryses in this case, forasmuche as the matter touched God, and the defence of the Christian religion, for the mayntenance whereof, it should be necessary to haue abundance of riches and treasure, as the sinewes of warre against the enemies of our faith. Thus vsing also the office both of an oratour and preacher, and hauing perswaded his companions, hee lanchted from the lande. But Chiapes, least Vascus should any thing doubt of his faithfulness towarde him, proffered himselfe to goe with him whither soeuer hee went, and woulde by no meanes assent that Vascus should departe from his palace, but that he woulde bring him on the way, and take parte of his fortune. Therefore, assoone as they were now entred into the maine sea, such sourses & conflictes of water arose agaynst them, that they were at their wittes ende, whether to turne them, or where to rest. Thus being tossed and amased with feare, the one looked on the other with pale & vnecheerfull countenances, but especially Chiapes and his company, who had before time with their eyes seene the experience of those icopardies, were greatly discomforted (yet as God woulde) they escaped all, and landed at the next llande, where, making fast their boates, they rested there that night. Here the water so increased, that it almost ouerflowed the llande. They say also, that the South sea doth so in manner boyle and swel, that when it is at the hyghest, it doth couer many great rockes, which at the full thereof are seene farre about the water. But on the contrary parte, all such as inhabite the North sea, affirme with one voyce, that it scarcely ryseth at any tyme a cubite aboue the banks, as they also confesse whiche inhabite the llande of Hispaniola, and other llandes situate in the same. The llande therefore being nowe drye by the fall of the water, they resorted to their boates, which they found all ouerwhelmed, and ful of sande, & some sore bruised with great ryftes, and almost lost by reason their cables were broken: such as were bruised, they tyed fast with their girdles, with slippes of the barkes of trees, and with tough and long stalkes of cortayne herbes of the sea, stopping the ryftes or chinkes with grasse, according to the present necessitie. Thus were they enforced to returne backe agayne, like vnto men that came from shipwracke, being almost consumed with hunger, because their victualles were vterly destroyed by tempest. The inhabitants declared that there is hearde all the yeere horrible roring of the sea among those llandes, as often as it riseth or falleth, but this most especially in those three monethes in the whiche it is most boystrous, as Chiapes told Vascus before, meaning (as they could coniecture by his words) October, Nouember, and December: for hee signified the present moone, & the two moones following, countyng the monethes by the moone, whereas it was nowe October. Heere therefore refreshing himselfe and his souldiers a while, and passing by one vnprofitable king, he came to another, whose name was Tumaccus, after the name of the region, being situate on that side of the gulfe. This Tumaccus came forth agaynst our men, as did the other, and with like fortune: for he was overcome, dryuen to flight, and many of his men slaine. Hee himselfe was also sore wounded, but yet escaped. Vascus sent certayne messengers of the Chiapians to him, to returne, and not to be afraide: but he could be nothing moued, neither by promises, nor threatninges: yet when the messengers were instant, and ceased not to threaten death to him and his familie, with the vtter desolation of his kingdome, if he persisted in that obstinacie, at the length hee sent his sonne with them, whom Vascus honourably enter-teining, apprelling him gorgeously, and giuing him many giftes, sent him to his father, willing him to perswade him of the puissance, munificence, liberalitie, humanitie, and clemencie of our men. Tumaccus being moued by this gentleness declared towarde his sonne, came with him the thirde day, bringing nothing with him at that time. But after that hee knewe that our menne desired golde and pearles, hee sent for sixe hundred and fouerteene Pesos of golde, and two hundred and fourtie of the byggest and fayrest pearles, beside a great number of the small sort. Our monne marueyled at the byggenes and fayrenes of these pearles, although they were not perfectly white, be-

Riches are the  
Licence of warre.  
The fyrd, Licence  
of King Chiapes.

A tempest on  
the sea.

The increasing  
of the South sea.

The North  
Ocean.

Hard shift is  
necessary.

The region  
Tumaccus.

King Tumaccus  
is drawn to  
flight.

Golde and  
pearles.

Muscles of the sea. cause they take them not out of the sea muscles, except they first roast them, that they may the easelyer open them selfe, and also that the fish may have the better tast, whiche they esteeme for a delicate and princely dish, and set more thereby, then by the pearles themselves. Of these things I was enformed of one Arbolantius, being one of Vaschus companions, whom hee sent to the king with many pearles, and certayne of those sea muscles. But when Tumaccus sawe that our men so greatly regarded the beautie of the pearles, he commanded certayne of his men to prepare themselves to goe a fishing for pearles: Who departing, came agayne within foure dayes, bringing with them twelve pounde weight of orient pearles, after eight ounces to the pounde. Thus reioycing on both parties they embraced, and made a league of continuall friendship. Tumaccus thought himselfe happie that he had presented our men with such thankfull gyftes, and was admitted to their friendship, and our men thinking themselves happie and blessed that they hadde found such tokens of great riches, swallowed downe their spittle for thirst. At all these dooings, king Chiapes was present, as a witness and companion: He also reioyced not a little aswell that by his conducting he sawe that our men shoulde bee satisfied of their desire, as also that by this meanes hee hadde declared to the next king his borderer and enemie, what friends hee hadde of our men, by whose ayde hee might live in quietnes and bee reuenged of his aduersarie, if neede, shoulde so require. For (as wee haue sayde) these naked kinges inuest themselves with greivous warres, onely for ambition and desire to rule. Vaschus boasteth in his epistle, that he learned certayne marvelous secretes of Tumaccus himselfe, as concerning the great riches of this lande, whereof, (as he sayth) he would viter nothing at this present, forasmuche as Tumaccus tolde it him in his care. But he was enformed of both the kinges, that there is an Ilande in that gulf, greater then any of the other, hauing in it but onely one king, and him of so great power, that at suche times of the yeere as the sea is calme, he inuadeth their dominions with a great manie of Culchas, spoiling and carrying away for a prae all that hee meeteth. This Ilande is distant from these coastes, only twentie miles: So that the promontories or pointes thereof, reaching into the sea, may be seene from the hills of this continent. In the sea neere about this Ilande sea muscles are engendred, of such quantitie, that many of them are as brode as bucklers. In these are pearles found (being the hartes of those shell fishes) oftentimes as bigge as beanes, sometimes bigger then Olives, and suche, as sumptuous Cleopatra might haue desired. Although this Ilande be so neere to the shore of this firme lande, yet is the beginning thereof in the maine sea, without the mouth of the gulf. Vaschus being ioyful and mery with this rich communication, fantasizing now in manner nothing but princes treasures, beganne to speak fierce and cruell wordes against the tirant of that land, meaning hereby to winne the mindes of the other kinges, and binde them to him with a neerer bonde of friendship. Yet therefore railing further on him with spitefull and opprobrious wordes, he swore great othes, that he would forthwith inuade the Ilande, spoiling, destroying, burning, drowning, and hanging, sparing neither swarder nor fre, vntill he had reuenged their iniuries: and there with commaunded his Culchas to be in readines. But the two kinges, Chiapes and Tumaccus, exhorted him friendly to defer this enterprise, vntil a more quiet season, because that sea was not nauigable without great danger, being nowe the beginning of Nouember: Wherein the kinges seemed to saie true. For as Vaschus him selfe writeth, great roring of the sea was heard among the Ilands of the gulf, by reason of the raging and conflict of the water. Great riuers also, descending from the toppes of the mountaines the same time of the yeere, and ouerflowing their bankes, drining downe with their violence greate rockes and trees, make a marvellous noise. Likewise the stric of the South and Northeast windes associate with thunder and lightning at the same season, did greatly molest them. While the weather was faire, they were vexed in the night with colde, and in the day time the heate of the sunne troubled them, whereof it is no maruaile, for asmuch as they were neere vnto the Equinoctial line; although they make no mention of the elevation of the pole. For in such regions, in the night the Moone and other colde planettes, but in the day the Sunne and other hotte planettes, doe chiefly exercise their influence, although the antiquitie were of another opinion, supposing the Equinoctial

Taking for  
pearles.

The thiers of  
gulf.

Ambition  
among naked  
kings.

A king of  
great power.

Big pearles.

Cleopatra,  
queene of Egypt,  
desired a pearle  
in a larger and  
dearer it.  
Price shee there-  
made poundes of  
our money.

circle to bee inhabitable and desolate, by reason of the heate of the sunne, hauing his course perpendicularly or directly ouer the same, except a fewe of the contrary opinion, whose assertions the Portugales haue at these dayes by experience prouoed to be true: for they saye yeerly to the inhabitants of the South pole, being in maier Antipodes to the people called Hyperborei vnder the North pole, and exercise marchandize with them. And here haue I named Antipodes, forasmuch as I am not ignorant that there hath bin men of singular witte and great learning, which haue denyed that there is Antipodes, that is, such as walke feete to feete. But it is certayne, that it is not giuen to any one manne to knowe all things, for euen they also were men, whose propertie is to erre, and be deceiued in many things. Neuertheless, the Portugales of our time, haue sayled to the five and fiftie degree of the South pole: where, compassing about the poynt thereof, they might see throughout all the heauen about the same, certeine shining white cloudes here and there among the starres, like vnto them which are seene in the tract of heauen called Lactea via; that is, the mylke white way. They say, there is no notable starre neere about that pole, like vnto this of ours, whiche the common people thinke to bee the pole of it selfe (called of the Italians Tramonata, and of the Spanyardes Nortes) but that the same filleth beneath the Ocean. When the Sunn descendeth from the myddest of the axiltree of the worlde from vs, it ryseth to them, as a payre of ballances, whose weyght enclining from the equall poise in the myddest toward epyther of the sides, causeth the one end to ryse as much as the other falleth. When therefore it is Autumne with vs, it is spring time with them, and sommer with vs, when it is wynter with them. But it sufficeth to haue sayde thus much of strange matters. Let vs now therefore retorne to the historie, and to our men.

The starres about the South pole.

A similitude of a during Assis-poles.

#### The seconde Chapter of the thirde Decade.

Vaschus by the aduice of King Chiapes & Tumaccus, determined to defer his voyage to the sayd lande, vntill the next spring or sommer, at which time, Chiapes offered himselfe to accompany our men, and ayde them therein all that he might. In this meane time, Vaschus hadde knowledg that these kings had nettes and fishing places in certeine stations of that sea neere vnto the shore where they were accustomed to fische for sea muscles, in the which pearles are engendred, and that for this purpose they had certeine dyuers or fishers, exercised from their youth in swimming vnder the water. But they doe this onely at certeine times when the sea is calme, that they may the easier come to the place where these shel fishes are wont to lie: for the bigger that they are, so much lye they the deeper & neerer to the bottome: but the lesser, as it were daughters to the other, are neerer the brimme of the water: likewise the best of all, as it were their nieces, are yet neerer to the superficial part thereof. To them of the biggest sorte which lie lowest, the fishers descend the depth of three meues height, & sometime foure, but to the daughters or nieces, as their succession, they descend onely to the middle: thygh. Sometimes also, after that the sea hath bin disquieted, with vehement tempestes, they find a great multitude of these fishes on the sandes, being dryuen to the shore by the violence of the water. The pearles of these, which are found on the sande, are but litle, the fish it selfe, is more pleasant in eating, then are our oysters, as our men report: But perhaps hunger, the sweete sauce of all meates, caused our men so to thinke. Whether pearles be the hartes of sea muscles (as Aristotle supposed) or the byrth or spawne of their naturals (as Plinie thought) or whether they cleaue continually to the rockes, or wander by companies in the sea by the guiding of the eldest, whether euery fish bring forth one pearle or more, at one birth, or at dyuers: also whether they be cullery from the rockes whereunto they cleaue, or may bee easely pulled away, or otherwise fall of by themselves when they are come to their full growth: Lykewise whether pearles bee harde within the shell, or soft, our men haue as yet no certeine experience, but I trust or it bee long to know the truth hereof: for our men are euen now in hande with the matter. Also, as soone as I shall bee aduertised of the arryual of Petrus Arias the captayne of our menne, I will desire him by my letters to make diligent search for these things, and certifie me thereof in all poyntes: I knowe that hee will not be slacke or omit any thing herein, for hee is my verie

The manner of taking for pearles.

Petrus Arias.

friends, and one that taketh great pleasure in considering the works of nature. And surely, it seemeth vnto mee vndecent, that we shoulde with silence onerslyppe so great a thing, which aswell in the olde time, as in our dayes, hath and yet doth, drawe both men and women to the immoderate desire of superfluous pleasure. Spayne therefore shall bee able hereafter with pearles to satisfy the greedie appetite of such as in wanton pleasures are like vnto Cleopatra and Asopus: So that from henceforth wee shall neyther enuie nor reuerence the nice fruitfulnessse of Stoidum, or Taprobana, or the red sea. But let vs now returne to our purpose. Vaschus therefore determined with the fishers of Chiapes, to proue what might bee done in his fisher poole or stations of sea muscles. Chiapes to shewe himselfe obedient to Vaschus his request, although the sea were boysterous, commanded thirtie of his fishers to prepare themselves, and to resort to the fishing places. Vaschus sent onely sixe of his men with them, to beholde them from the sea bankes, but not to committe themselves to the daunger of the sea. The fishing place was distant from the pallace of Chiapes about tenne myles. They durst not aduenture to dyue to the bottome, by reason of the furie of the sea: Yet of the muscles whiche lye highest, and of suche as were dryen to the shore by the violence of the water, they brought sixe great sardelles in the space of a fewe dayes. The pearles of these were but litle, about the byggenesse of small syches: yet verie fayre and beautifull by reason that they were taken newly out of the fish, beeing yet rawe. And that they shoulde not be reprovod of lying, as concerning the biggenesse of these sea muscles, they sent many of them into Spaine to the king, with the pearles, the fish being taken out: We thinke verily that there may in no place bigger be founde. These shel fishes therefore being thus founde here in so many places in that sea, and gold in manner in every house, doe argue the riche treasure of nature to be hidde in those coastes, forasmuche as great riches haue ben founde, as it were in the litle finger of a giannet hands. What then may we thinke of the whole hande of the giannet (for hitherto they haue onlie benne in hande with the confines of Vraba) when they shall haue throughlie searched all the coastes and secretes of the inner partes of all that large lande: But Vaschus contented with these signes, and ioyfull of his good successo in these enterprises determined by another way to returne to his felowes in Dariena, where also they haue golde mines, about tenne miles from the village. He gaue therefore king Chiapes leaue to depart, and to folowe him no further, counsailling him to continue faithful vnto the Christian king his lord & maister. Thus embracing the one the other, & ioyning bandes, Chiapes departed with teares, declaring the good minde which he bore to our men. Vaschus leauing his sicke men with Chiapes went forward on his journey with the residue, hauing also with him for guides three of Chiapes Mariuers. He conueighed his armie ouer a great riuer, into the dominion of a certaine king, called Teaocha, who being aduertised of the coming of our men, of whose famous actes he had hearde muche before, was very glad thereof, and entertained them honourably, so that for a taken of his friendly affection towards them; he gaue Vaschus twentie pounds waight of wrought golde, after eight ounces to the pounde: also two hundred bigge pearles, but not faire, by reason they were taken out of the muscles after they had ben sodden. After they had ioyned handes, Vaschus recompenced him with certaine of our things: likewise rewarding his guides the accounts of Chiapes, he dismissed them with commendations to their lord. King Teaocha, at the departure of our men from his pallace, did not only appoint them guides to conduct them in the way, but also gaue them certaine slaues, in the steede of beastes to cary their victuals, because they should passe through many desertes, barren and rough mountaines and terrible woods full of Tigers and Lions. He sent also one of his sonnes with these slaues, lading them with salted and dried fish, & bread of those regions, made of the rootes of Maizium and lucca. He also commanded his sonne not to depart from our men, vntill he were licensed by Vaschus. By their conducting therefore, Vaschus came to the dominion of an other king, whose name was Paera, a cruel tyrant, fearefull to the other kings his borderers, and of greater power then any of them. This tyrant, whether it were that his guiltie conscience, for his mischeiuous actes, put him in feare that our men would reuenge the

Wancon and superfluous pleasures.

The fishing place of King Chiapes.

Gold is made in every house. The rich treasury of nature.

The golde mines of Dariena.

King Teaocha entertained Vaschus friendly.

Twenty pound waight of wrought gold.

Desertes full of wilde beastes. Dried fish.

King Paera a tyrant.

same,

same, or that he thought himselfe inferior to resist them, fled at their coming. Vaschus writeth, that in these regions in the month of Nouember, he was sore afflicted with great heate and intollerable thirst, by reason that side of the mountaines hath little water: Inso-much that they were in daunger to haue perished, but that certaine of thínhabitantes shewed them of a spring, which was in the secret place of a wood, whither Vaschus with all speede sent two quicke & strong young men of his companions, with their gourdes, and such water vessels as Tezocha his men brought with them. Of thínhabitantes, there durst none depart from their company, because the wild beasts do soone invade naked men: For in those mountaines, and especially in the woods neare vnto the spring, they say that they are sometimes taken out of their houses in the night, except they take good heede that the doores be well sparde. It shall not be from my purpose here to declare a particular chance, before I enter any further in this matter. They say therefore, that the last yeere the region of Dariena was no lesse infested and troubled with a fierce Tiger, then was Calidonia in time past with a wild Boore, and Nemica with a horrible Lion. For they affirme that for the space of sixe whole monethes, there passed not one night without some hurt done: so that it killed nightly either a Bullocke, a Mare, a Dogge, or a Hogge, and sometimes euen in the high waies of the village: For our men haue nowe great heerde of cattel in those regions. They say also, that when this Tiger had whelpes, no man might safelie goe forth of his doores, because shee spared not men, if shee mette firste with them. But at the length, necessitie enforced them to inuent a policie how they might be reuenged of suche bloodshed. Searching therefore diligently her soote steppes, and following the pathe whereby shee was accustomed in the night season to wander out of her denne to seeke her praye, they made a great trenche or pyt in her walke, covering the same with hurdels, whereupon they cast part of the earth, and dispersed the residue. The dogge Tyger chanced first into this pitfall, and fel vpon the poyns of sharpe stakes, and such other engins as were of purpose fixyd in the botome of the trench. Being thus wounded, he rored so terribly, that it grated the bowelles of such as hearde him, and the woodes and mountaynes neare about rebounded the noyse of the horrible cry. When they perceived that he was layd fast, they resorted to the trenche, and shue him with stones, dartes and pykes. With his teethe and clawes hee brake the dartes into a thousande chyppes. Becing yet dead, hee was fearefull to all such as behelde him: what then thinke you he would haue doone beeing alyue and loose? One Iohannes Ledisma of Ciuita, a neere friend to Vaschus, and one of the companions of his traualles, tolde mee that hee himselfe did eate of the flesh of that Tyger, and that it was nothing inferior to beefe in goodnesse. Being demanded howe they knewe it to bee a Tyger, forasmuch as none of them had euer seene a Tyger: they answered that they knewe it by the spottes, fiercenesse, agilite, and such other markes and tokens whereby auncient writers haue described the Tyger. For some of them had before time seene other spotted wilde beastes, as Libardes and Pantheres. The dogge Tyger being thus killed, they following the trace of his steppes toward the mountaynes, came to the denne where the bitche remayned with her two young suckling whelpes. But shee was not in the denne at their coming. They firste caryed away the whelpes with them. But afterwards, fearing least they shoulde dye because they were young, entending when they were bigger to send them into Spayne, they put cheynes of iron about their neckes, and caryed them agayne to their denne: whither returning within a fewe dayes after, they foinde the denne empty, and their cheynes not remoued from their place. They supposed that the damme in her furie tore them in peeces, and caryed them away, least any should haue the fruition of them. For they playnely affirme, that it was not possible that they shoulde bee loosed from the chaynes alyue. The skinne of the dead Tyger stuffed with drie hearbes and strawe, they sent to Hispaniola, to the Admirall, and other of the chiefe rulers, from whom the newe landes receiue their lawes and succour. It shall at this time suffice to haue written this manche of the Tygers, as I haue learned by report of them which both sustained damage by their rauening, and also handled the skinne of that which was slayne. Let vs nowe therefore returne to king Paera, from whom we haue digressed. When Vaschus had entred into

Great heate in the month of Nouember.

Hurt by wilde beastes.

A Tyger. Calidonia is a Forrest in Spaine. Nemica is a wood in Greece.

Tygers whelpes.

Thus the Tyger was the Crocodile.

The dogge Tyger taken.

The roaring of the Tyger.

Tygers both eaten.

The bitche killed.

Tygers whelpes.

A strange thing.

King Paera.

the

the houses forsaken of Pacra, he sent messengers to recedeile him as he had done the other kings. At the first he refused to come but after threatnings he came, with three other kings in his company. Vaschus writeth, that he neuer sawe a more monstrous & deformed creature, and that nature hath only given him humane shape, and otherwise to bee worse then a brute beast, with manners according to the linjamentes of his bodie. Hee abused, with most abhominable lechery, the daughters of foure kings his borderers, from whom he hadde taken them by violence. Of the filthy behaviour of Pacra, of his crueltie, and iniuries done by him, many of the other kings made grievous complainytes to Vaschus, as vnto a hygh Iudge, and iust reuenger, most humbly beseeching him to see suche thinges punished, forasmuche as they tooke him for a man sent of God for that purpose. Heereupon Vaschus, aswell to winne their good willes, as also to shewe an example of terrour to suche as vsed like fashions, commaunded that this monstrous beast, with the other three kings whiche were subiecte to him, and of like conditions, shoulde bee giuen for a pray to his fighting dogges, and their torne carcases to bee burned. Of these dogges whiche they vse in the warres, they tell maruelous thinges for they say, that they runne vpon the inhabitants armed after their manner, with no leuse fiercenesse, then if they were Hartes or wilde bores, if the Spanyardes doe but onely poynt towarde them with their fingers: insomuche that oftentimes they haue hadde no neede to driue their enemies to fight with swoordes or arrowes, but haue done the same only with dogges, placed in the forefront of their battaile, and letting them slippe with their watche woorde and prime token: whercupon the barbarians stricken with feare, by reason of the cruell countenances of their masties, with their desperate boldnesse, and vnaccustomed howling and barking, haue disparekled at the first onsette and brake their array. Yet it chaunceth otherwise when they haue any consistie against the Cannibales, and the people of Caramairi: for these are fiercer and more warlike men, also so expert archers, that they can moste certainly direct their venomous arrowes against the dogges, with such celeritie as if they were thunderboltes, by reason whereof, they sometimes kill many of them. The inhabitants of these mountaines doe not keepe warre with bowes and arrowes, but vse only Macanis, that is, certaine long and brode swoordes made of wood, also sluges, long pikes, and dartes, hardened at the endes with fire. While king Pacra yet liued, no man coulde knowe him, neither by faire meanes nor by fowle, where he had the golde whiche was founde in his house: for our men founde in his towle house fiftie poundes waight of golde. Being therefore demanded where he had it, he answered, that they whiche gathered the same in those mountaines in his fathers daies, were all dead, and that since he was a childe, he neuer esteemed golde more then stones: More then this they coulde not get of him. By this seuer punishment executed vpon Pacra, Vaschus conuiled vnto him the mindes of all the other kings of that prouince, and by this meanes it came to passe, that when he sought for the sicke men whiche he left behinde him with King Chiapas, another king whiche was in the middle way, (whose name was Bononiamia) entricqued them gently, and gaue them twentie pounde weight of pure wrought golde, beside great plentie of victualles. And not this onely, but also accompanied them him selfe, vntill he had brought them safely from his pallace, into the dominion of Pacra, where taking each of them by the right handes he deliuered them to Vaschus him selfe, as a faithfull pledge committed to his charge, and therewith spake to Vaschus in this effecte: Moste mightie and valiant victourer, behoulde, I heere deliuer vnto you, your companions in such plight as I receiued them: wishing that I had ben aswell able to giue them health, as they were hartly welcome to suche poore entertainment as I was able to shewe them. For the fauoure and gentleness whiche I haue founde both in you and them, he shall rewarde you whiche sendeth thundering and lightning to the destruction of mischeuous men, and of his clemencie giueth vnto good men plentie of Iucca and Maizium in due season. As he spake these woordes, he lifted vp his handes and eyes towarde the Sunne whom they honour as God. Then he spake further to Vaschus, saying, In that you haue destroyed and slaine our violent and proude cuimies, you haue brought peace and quietnesse to vs and our families, and bounde vs for ever to loue and obey you. You haue so overcome and tamed wilde monsters, that we thinke you to bee sent

Several kind  
of vice.

Three Kings de  
scended from  
the sun  
The use of  
dogges in the  
warres against  
wilde men.

The Cannibals  
are expert ar  
chers.

Swordes of  
wood.

Five pound  
waight of gold.

King Bononi  
am, led to the  
Christians.  
Wrought gold.

The arrival  
of King Bononi  
am.

The speake of  
the love of war  
re, in the Sun  
written in the  
houses of men.

from heaven, for the punishment of euill men, and defence of innocentes, that vnder the protection of your mightie swoorde, we may hereafter leade our liues without feare; and with more quietnesse giue thanks to the giuer of all good thinges, for his mercie shewed vnto vs in this behalfe. When the interpretour hadde tolde Vaschus that the king Bononiana had saide these wordes, and suche like, Vaschus rendered him like thanks for his humanitie declared towards our men; and rewarded him as he had doone other in whom he founde like gentleness. Vaschus writeth, that he learned manie thinges of this kinge as concerning the great riches of these regions, but that he woulde at this present speake nothing thereof, and rehearse the same, as thinges like to haue good successe. What this implicate Hyperbole; or aduancement meaneth, I do not well vnderstand; but he plainly seemeth hereby to promise many great thinges. And surely it is to be thought, that according to his hope, great riches may be looked for. For they came in manner into none of the inhabitants houses, but that they founde in them either brestplates or cures of golde, or else golden outches, iewels, or garlandes to weare about their heades, neckes, or armes. I coniecture therefore thus by a similitude of our houses: If amonge vs any men of great power were moued with the desire to haue great plentie of Iron, and woulde enter into Italie with a maike sorce, as did the Gothes in time past, what abundance of Iron shoulde he haue in their houses, whereas hee shoulde finde in one place a fryingpan; in another a caldron, here a triuett, and there a spitte, and these in manner in euery poore mans house, with suche other innumerable? whereby any man may coniecture, that Iron is plentifully engendred in suche regions where they haue so great vse thereof. Our men also perceived, that the inhabitants of these regions doo no more esteeme gold then we do Iron, nor yet so much, after they saw to what vse Iron serued vs. Thus much haue I thought good to write to your holiness, of suche thinges as I haue gathered out of the letters of Vaschus Nuanez, and learned by woorde of mouth of suche as were his companions in these assayes. As we receiue them, so we giue them vnto you. Time, which recealeth all secretes, shall hereafter minister larger argument of writing. They coulde at this time doe no great thing in searching the golde mynes, forasmuche as of a hundred, fourescore, and tenne men, which Vaschus brought with him from Dariena, there remained only threescore and ten, or at the most fourescore, whose ayd he now vsed in these dangerous aduentures, leauing euery the crased men beehinde him in the kinges houses all the way that hee went, but they most especially fell into sundry diseases, which came lately from Hispaniola, for they were not able to abide such calamities, as to liue onely contented with the bread of those regions, and wilde herbes, without salt, drinking none other then ryver water, and that oftentimes eyther lacking, or vnwholesome whereas before their stomackes had bin vsed to good meates. But the olde soldiers of Dariena, were hardned to abide all sorrowes, & exceeding tollerable of labour, heate, hunger, & watching, insomuch that merrily they make their boast, that they haue obserued a longer & sharper Lent then euery your holiness enioyned: for they say, that for the space of foure whole yeers they ate none other then herbes and fruites, except now and then perhappes fische, and very seldome fleshe: yea, and that sometime for lacke of all these, they haue not abhorred from mangie dogges and filthie toades, as we haue sayde before. The olde souldiers of Dariena, I call those which first followed the captaines Nicuesa & Fogeda, to inhabit the land, of the which nowe fewe were liuing. But let vs nowe omit these thinges, and returne to Vaschus, the victourer of the mountaynes.

The thirde Chapter of the thirde Decade.

When Vaschus had remained thirte daies in the pallice of king Paera, conciling vnto him the mindes of the inhabitants, & providing thinges necessary for his companions. As he departed from thence, by the conduct of king Teaocha his men, and came to the banke of the ryer Comogras, whereof the region and king thereof, are named by the same name, he founde the sides of the mountaynes so rude and barren, that there was nothing apt to bee eaten, but wyld rootes, and certayne vnpleasant fruites of trees. The kinges being neere of bloude, inhabited this vnforgate region, which Vaschus outpassed with all speede,

Great plenty of golde.

A similitude for the profit of plentie of golde.

Change of place in dangerous.

Old soldiers.

A long Lent.

Comogras.

Two poore Negroes.

for

Deserts.

for feare of hunger. One of these poore kinges was named Cotochus, and the other Chiurizis: He tooke them both with him, to guide him the way, and dismissed Teaocha his men with victuals & rewardes. Thus for the space of three dayes, he wandered through many desert woods, craggy mountaynes, and muddie marshes, full of such quamyres, that men are oftentimes swallowed vp in them, if they looke not the more warily to their feete: also through places not frequented with resort of men, and such as nature hadde not yet opened to their vse, forasmuche as the inhabitants haue seldome intercourse betwene them, but onely by sundry incursions, the one to spoyle and destroy the other: being otherwise contented to liue onely after the law of nature, without all worldly toyfe for superfluous pleasures. Thus ontryng at the length into the territorie of another king, whose name was Bechebueo, they founde all thinges voyde and in silence: for the king and his subiectes were all fledde to the woodes. When Vaschus sent messengers to fetch him, hee did not onely at the first submit himselfe, but also promise his aide, with all that he might make: Protesting furthermore, that he fledde not for feare that our men woulde doo them iniurie, but that he hid him selfe for verie shame and grieffe of minde, for that he was not able to receiue them honorablie, according vnto their dignitie, because his store of vitayles was consumed. Yet in a token of obedience and friendshipp, he sent our men many vesselles of golde, desiring them to accepte them as the gifte of a friende whose good will wanted not in greater things, if his abilities were greater. By which woordes, the poore man seemed to insinuate that he had ben robbed, and otherwise cruelly handled of his borderers, by reason whereof, our men were enforced to departe from thence more hungrily then they came. As they went forwarde therefore, they espied certaine naked men cominge downe from a hill towarde them. Vaschus commaunded his armie to stay, and sent his interpreters to them, to knowe what they woulde haue. Then one of them, to whom the other seemed to giue reuerence, spake in this effect. Our lord and king Chiurizis, greeteth you well, willing vs to declare that he hearde of your puissance, and vertue, whereby you haue subdued euill men, & reuenged the wronges doone to innocents: For the which your noble factes and iustice, as he doth honour your fame, so woulde he thinke him selfe most happie, if he might receiue you into his palace. But, forasmuch as his fortune hath ben so euill (as he imputeth it) that being out of your way, you haue ouerpassed him, he hath sent you this golde, in token of his good will and friendshipp toward you. And with these woordes he deliuered to Vaschus thirtie dishes of pure golde, addinge hereunto, that when so euer it should please him to take the paines to come to thoir king, he should receiue greater giftes. He declared further, that a king which was their borderer and mortall enimie, was very rich in golde and that in subduing of him, they should both obtaine great riches, and also deliuer them from daily vexations: whiche thing might easily be done by their helpe, because they knewe the countrey. Vaschus put them in good comfort, and gaue them for reuerde certaine Iron axes, whiche they more esteemed then great heaps of golde. For they haue little neede of golde, hauing not the vse of pestiferous money: but he that may gette but one axe or hatchet thinketh himselfe richer then euer was Crassus. For enow these naked men, doe perceiue that an axe is necessari for a thousand vses, and confesse that golde is desired onely for certayne vaine and esseminate pleasures, as a thing which the life of manne may lacke without any inconuenience: for our gluttony and superfluous sumptuousnesse hath not yet corrupted them. By reason whereof, they take it for no shame to lacke cobards of plate, whereas the pride and vanities of our time doth in manner impuse it to vs for ignominie, to bee without that, whereof by nature wee haue no neede. But their contentation with the benefices of nature, doth playnely declare, that men may leade a free and happie life without tables, tables clothes, carpettes, napkins, and towels, with suche other innumerable, whereof they haue no vse, except perhaps the kinges furnish their tables with a fewe golden vesselles. But the common people dryue away hunger with a peece of their breade in the one hand, and a peece of broyled fische, or some kinde of fruite in the other hand: for they eate flesh but seldome. When their fingers are imbrued with any vnctuous

King Chiurizis sends Vaschus ten Cabes of pure golde.

Asse of Iron more esteemed then any golde.

meates, they wype them cyther on the soles of their feete, or on their thyghes, yea and sometimes on the skins of their priuie members, in the steade of a napkin: and for this cause do they oftentimes wash themselves in the riuers. Our menne therefore went forwarde laden with golde, but sore afflicted with hunger. Thus they came at the length to the dominion of king Pocchorross, who sled at their coming. Here for the space of thirtie dayes, they filled their emptie bellies with breade of the rootes of Maizium. In the meane time, Vaschus sent for Pocchorross, who beeing allured with promises and fayre wordes, came and submitted himselfe, bringing with him for a present systeine poundes wrought golde, and a fewe slaves: Vaschus rewarded him as he hadde done other before. When hee was cōyded to depart, he was aduertised, that he should passe through the dominion of a certayne king, whose name was Tumanama. This is hee whome the sonne of king Comogrus declared to be of so great power, and fearefull to all his borderers, and with whom many of Comogrus familiars had bin captiue, but our men now perceiued that they measured his power by their owne: For their kinges are but gnattes (compared to Elephanes) in respect to the power and pollicie of our men. Our men were also enourmed by such as dwelt neare about Tumanama, that his region was not beyonde the mountaynes as they supposed, nor yet so rich in golde as young Comogrus had declared: Yet consulted they of his subduing, whiche they thought they might the easilier bring to passe, because Pocchorross was his mortall enemy, who most gladly promised them his aduice and ayde herein. Vaschus therefore, leauing his sicke men in the village of Pocchorross, tooke with him threescore of his most valiant souldiers, and declared vnto them, how king Tumanama had often times spoken proude and threatening wordes agaynst them: Likewise that it nowe stoodd them in hande of necessitie to passe through his dominion, and that hee thought it best to set vpon him vawares. The souldiers consented to his aduice, and exhorted him to giue the aduerture, promising that they would follow him whither soeuer he went. They determined therefore to goe two dayes journey in one day, that Tumanama, not knowing of their sodayne coming, might haue no leysure to assemble an armie: and the thing came to passe euen as they had deuised. For in the first watch of the night, our menne, with the Pocchorrossians, inuaded the village and pallace of Tumanama, whete they tooke him prysoner, suspecting nothing lesse: He had with him two young men, which hee abused vnaturally, also fourescore women, which he hadde taken violently from diuers kinges: likewise, a great number of his gentlemen and subiectes were taken stragling in other villages neere about his pallace. For their houses are not adherent together as ours bee, because they are oftentimes troubled with vehement whirlwindes, by reason of the sodayne changes and motions of the ayre, caused by the influence of the planettes, in the equalitie of the day and night, being there in maner both of one length throughout all the yeere, forasmuch as they are neere vnto the Equinoctiall lyne; as we haue sayde before. Their houses are made of trees, couered, and after their maner thatched with the stalkes of certayne rough herbes. To the pallace of Tumanama, was onely one house adherent, and that euen as bygge as the pallace it selfe. Eyther of these houses were in length a hundred and twentie paces, and in breadth fiftie paces, as our men measured them. In these two houses the king was accustomed to muster his menne, as often as he prepared an armie. When Tumanama therefore was thus taken captiue, with all his Sardanapauicall familie, the Pocchorrossians bragged and threatened him, being nowe bounde, that he should shortly be hanged: the other kinges also his borderers, reioyced at his misfortune. Whereby our menne perceiued that Tumanama was no lesse troublesome to his neighbours, then was Pacra to the kinges of the South side of the mountaynes. Vaschus also the better to please them, threatned him grieuously, but in deede entended no euill towards him. He spake therefore sharply vnto him with these wordes: Thou shalt nowe suffer punishment thou cruell tyrant, for thy pride and abhominations. Thou shalt know of what power the Christians are, whom thou hast so contemned, and threatened to drawe by the hayre of their heads to the next ryuer, & there to drowne them, as thou hast oftentimes made thy vaunt among thy naked slaves: But thou thy selfe shalt first feele that, which thou hast prepared for others. And herewith commaunded him to bee

Plenty of gold  
and treasures of  
meat.

A good pollicie.

The cause of  
vibrant winds  
neere the Equi-  
noctiall.

Vaschus his  
wordes to King  
Tumanama.

taken vpp: Neuenrösse giuing a priuie token of pardon to them whiche layde handes on him. Thus vnhappily Tumanama, fearing and beleueing that Vaschus, hadde ment in earnest as he commanded, fell prostrate at his fecte, and with teares desired pardon: Protesting that hee neuer spake any such wordes, but that perhaps his noble meene in their drunkenesse hadde so abused their tongues, whiche hee coulde not rule: For their wines, although they be not made of grapes, yet they are of force to make men drunken. Allee declared furthermore, that the other kinges his borderers had of malice surmised such lyes of him, enuying his fortune, because he was of greater power then they, most humbly desiring Vaschus, that as hee tooke him to bee a just victourer, so to giue no credite vnto their vniust and malicious complayntes: Adding heereunto, that if it woulde please him to pardon him, not hauing offended, he woulde bring him great plentie of golde. Thus laying his right hande on his breast, he swore by the Sunne, that he euer loued and feared the Christians since hee first hearde of their fame and victories: especially when hee hearde say, that they had Michans, that is swordes sharper than theirs, and suche as cutte in peeces all things that come in their wayes. Then directing his eyes towards Vaschus, who had his sworde in his hande, he spake thus, Who (except he were out of his witte) dare lift vp his hande agaynst this sworde of yours, wherewith you are able with one stroke: to cleaue a manne from the head to the nanel? Let no manne therefore perwade you (O most mightie victourer) that euer suche woordes proceeded out of my mouth: As Tumanama with trembling spake these wordes, therewith swallowing downe the knote of death, Vaschus seemed by his teares to be moued to compassion, and speaking to him with chearefull countenance, commanded him to bee loosed: This doone hee sent immediately to his pallace for thirtie poundes weight of pure golde, artificially wrought into sundry ouches, which his wyues and concubines used to weare. Also the thirde day following, his noble men & gentlemen, sent threescore poundes weight of golde for their fine and ransom. Tumanama being demanded where they had that golde: he answered, that it was not gathered in his dominions, but that it was brought his ancestours from the riuer Comogrus towards the South. But the Pocchorrosians and other his enemies sayde that he lyed, affirming that his kingdome was ricke in golde. Tumanama on the contrary parte, instantly protested that he neuer knew any golde myne in all his dominions, yet denied not but that there hath sometimes bene founde certayne small graines of gold, to the gathering whereof, he neuer hadde any regard: because they could not get it without great & long labour. While these things were doing, the sicke men which Vaschus had left in the village of Pocchorrosa, came to him the viii. day of the Calendes of Ianuary, in the yeere of CHRIST. 1413. bringing with them certayne labourers from the Kinges of the South, with sundry instrumentes to digge the grounke, and gather golde. Thus passing ouer the day of the natiuitie of CHRIST without bodily labour, vpon Saint Stephens day hee brought certayne mynes to the side of a hill, not farre distant from the pallace of Tumanama, where (as he sayth) hee perceived by the colour of the earth, that it was like to bring forth golde. When they had digged a pit, not past a hand breadth and a halfe, and sifted the earth thereof, they founde certayne small graines of golde, no bigger then linsell seede, amounting to the weight of twelue graynes, as they proued with their balances of assaie, before a notario and witness: that the better credite might bee giuen thereto. Whereby they argued, that the richenesse of that land was agreeable to the report of the borderers, although Vaschus coulde by no meanes, cause Tumanama to confesse the same. They suppose that he nothing esteemed so small a portion: but other say, that hee denied his countrey to be fruitfull of golde, least by reason hereof, the desire of golde might intice our menne to inhabite his kingdome, as indeed the seely king was a prophet in so thinking. For they chose that and the region of Pocchorrosa to inhabite, and determined to buylde townes in them both, if it should so please the king of Castile: as well that they may bee buyting places and vitalling houses for such as shoulde iourney towards the South, as also that both the regions were fruitfull, and of good grounde to beare frutes and trees. Intending nowe therefore to depart from thence, hee tryed the earth by chance in an other place, where the colour of the ground; with

Other good  
minerals.

xxx. poundes  
weight of  
wrought gold.

Threescore  
poundes weight  
of golde.

They shewre  
labour.

The colour of  
the golden earth,  
and a traill of  
the same.

certayne

certayne shining stones, seemed to be a token of golde, where causing a small pitte to be digged, litle beneath the vpper crust of the earth, hee founde so much gold as weyghed the peece of golde whiche the Spanyardes call Castellanium Aureum, and is commonly called <sup>Tokens of great plenty of golde.</sup> Pexus, but not in one grayne. Reioycing at these tokens, in hope of great riches, hee bad Tumanama to bee of good comfort, promising him that hee would bee his friende and defender, so that hee troubled not any of the kinges, whiche were friendes to the Christians: Hee also perswaded him to gather plentie of golde. Some say that he ledde away all Tumanama his women, and spoyled him, least he should rebell. Yet hee deliuered his sonne to Vaschus, to be brought vp with our menne, to learne their language and religion, that hee might hereafter the better vse his helpe aswel in all thinges that he should haue to doe with our menne as also more politickely rule, and obtayne the loue of his owne subiectes. Vaschus at this tyme fell into a vehement feuer, by reason of excesse of labour, immoderate watching, and hunger, insomuche that departing from thence, hee was fayne to bee borne vpon mens backs in sheetes of Gossampine cotton: likewise also many of his souldiers, whiche were so weake, that they coulde neyther goe nor stande. To this purpose they vsed the helpe of the inhabitantes, who shewed themselues in all thinges willing and obedient. Also some of them which were somewhat feeble and not able to traouayle, although not grieuously sicke, were ledde by the armes, vntill they came to the dominion of king Comogrus, a great friende to the Christians, of whom we haue largely made mention before. At Vaschus comming thither, hee founde that the olde king was dead and his Sonne (whome wee so prayed for his wisdome) to raygne in his steade, and that he was baptized by the name of Charles. The pallace of this Commogrus, is situate at the foote of a steepe hyll well cultured, hauing towards the South a plaine of twelue leagues in breadth, and very fruitesfull. This playne they call Zauana. Beyond this, are the great and high mountaynes, whiche diuide the two seas, whereof wee haue spoken before. Out of the steepe hilles, springeth the ryuer Commogrus whiche runneth through the sayde playne to the hygh mountaynes, receiuing into his channell by their valleyes, all other ryuers, and so falleth into the South sea: It is distant from Dariena, about threescore and tenne leagues towards the West. As our men therefore came to these parties, king Commogrus (otherwise called Charles by his Christian name) met them ioyfully, and entertayned them honourably, giuing them their fyll of pleasaunt meates and drinckes: Hee gaue also to Vaschus twentie pounce weight of wrought golde. Vaschus recompensed him with thinges whiche hee esteemed muche more, as axes, and sundry kindes of carpenters tooles: also a souldiers cloake, and fayre shurt, wrought with needle worke. By these giftes Comogrus thought himselfe to bee halfe a God among his borderers. Vaschus at his departing from hence, earnestly charged Comogrus, and the other kinges, to remayne faithfull and obedient to the Christian king of Castile, if they desired to liue in peace and quietnesse, and that they should hereafter more diligently applie themselues to the gathering of golde, to bee sent to the great Christian Tiba (that is) king: Declaring further, that by this meanes, they shoulde both gette them and their posteritie a patrone and defender against their enemies, and also obtayne great abundance of our thinges. These affayres thus happily atchieued, hee went forward on his voyage to the pallace of king Poncha, where hee founde foure yong men, which were come from Dariena, to certifie him that there were certayne shyppes come from Hispaniola laden with victualles, and other necessaries. Wherefore taking with him twentie of his most lustie soldiers, hee made hast to Dariena, with long iornes: leauing the residue behind him, to followe at their leysure. He writeth, that hee came to Dariena the xiiii. Ca. of Fe. An. 1514. The date of his letter is: From Dariena, the iiii. day of March. He writeth in the same letter, that he had many sore conflictes & that hee was neyther yet wounded, or lost any of his men in the battayle: and therefore in all his large letter, there is not one leafe without thanks giuing to almighty God for his deliuey, and preservation from so many imminent perils. He attempted no enterpryse, or tooke in hand any voyage, without thiuocation of God and his holy saintes. Thus was Vaschus Balboa of a violent Goliah, turned into Heliseus, and from Anteus to Hercules, the conqueror of monsters. Being therefore thus turned from

a rashe royster, to a politike and descret capytayne, he was iudged worthy to bee aduanced to great honour: By reason whereof, hee was both receiued into the Kinges fauour, and thereupon created the generall or Lieutenannt of the Kinges armie in those Regions. Thus muche haue I gathered, both by the letters of certayne my faithfull friends being in Dariens, and also by worde of mouth of such as came lately from thence. If your holynesse desire to knowe what I thinke herein, surely by such thinges as I haue seene, I beleecue these thinges to be true, euen so the order and agreeing of Vaschus and his companions warrelike letters, seeme to confirme the same. The Spanyards therefore shall not neede hereafter, with vndermining the earth with intollerable labour, to break the bones of our mother, and enter many myles into her bowelles, and with innumerable daungers cut in sunder whole mountaynes to make away to the courte of infernall Pluto, to bring from thence wicked golde, the seed of innumerable mischietes, without the whiche, notwithstanding wee may nowe scarcely leade a happie lyfe, sith iniquitic hath so preuailed, and made vs slaues to that, wherof we are Lordes by nature: The Spanyardes (I say) shall not neede with such traualles and difficultie, to dygge farre into the earth for gold, but shall finde it plentifully, in maner in the vpper crust of the earth or in the sandes of ryuers dried vp by the beate of sommer, onely washing the earth softly from the same, and shall with like facilitie gather plentie of pearles. Certaynly the reuerent antiquitic (by all the Cosmographers assent) obtained not so great a benefite of nature, nor yet aspired to the knowledge hereof, because there came neuer a man before out of our knowne world, to these vnkowne nations, at the least with a power of men by force of armes, in manner of conquest: whereas likewise nothing can bee gotten here, forasmuch as these nations are for the most part seuered defenders of their patrimonies, and cruel to straungers, in no conditio admitting them otherwise than by conquest especially the fierce Canibales or Caribes. For these wylie hunters of men, giue themselves to none other kinde of exercise, but onely to manhuating, and tyllage, after their maner. At the coming therefore of our wenne into their regions, they looke as surely to haue them fall into their snares, as if they were hartes or wilde bores: and with no lesse confidence, licke their lippes secretly, in hope of their praye. If they gette the vpper hande, they eate them greedily: if they mistrust themselves to be the weaker parte, they trust to their feete, and flee swifter then the winde. Agayne, if the matter be tryed on the water, aswell the women as the men can dyue and swimme, as though they had bene euer brought vp and fedde in the water. It is no maruaile therefore, if the large tract of these regions haue bin hitherto vnkowne. But nowe sith it hath pleased God to discover the same in our time, it shall become vs to shewe our naturall loue to mankind, and dutie to God, to endeavour our selues to bring to them ciuilitie and true religion, to the increase of Christes flocke, to the confusion of Infidels and the Denill their father, who delighteth in our destruction, as hee hath done from the beginning. By the good success of these first fruites, our hope is that the Christian religion shall stretch forth her armes, very farre, which thing shoulde the sooner come to passe, if all men to their power, especially Christian princes (to whom it chiefly pertaineth) woulde putte their handes to the plough of the Lordes vineyarde: The harvest surely is great, but the workemen are but fewe. As wee haue sayde at the beginning, your holynesse shal hereafter nourish many myriades of broodes of chыckens vnder your winges. But let vs nowe returne to speake of Beragua, being the West side of Vraba, and first found by Colonus the Admiral, then vnfortunately governed by Diego Nicuesa, and now left in maner desolate, with the other large regions of those prouinces, brought from their wilde and beastly rudenesse, to ciuilitie and true religion.

#### The fourth Chapter of the third Decade.

I Was determined (most holy father) to haue proceeded no further herin, but that one stery sparke, yet remaining in my mind, would not suffer me to cease. Whereas I haue therefore declared how Beragua was first found by Colonus, me thinke I should comit a hainous crime if I shoulde defraud the man of the due commendations of his traualles, of his cares and troubles, and finally of the dangers & perils which he susteyned in that nauigation.

O Scurryng fortune, looke his death in the booke of the third lastly found.

The earth is our general mother.

The courts of infernall Pluto.

Marchantes.

The secretions of the Canibales.

Our duty to God, and naturall loue to mankind.

The office of Christian princes. The harvest is great.

The fourth nauigation of Colonus the Admiral.

uigation. Therefore in the yeere of Christ 1502. in the 6. day of the Ides of May, he hoysed vp his sayles, and departed from the Ilands of Gades, with foure ships, of fiftie or threescore tunne a peece, with a hundred, threescore, and ten men, and came with prosperous winde to the Ilandes of Canarie, within fve dayes following. From thence arrying the 16. day at the Ilande of Dominica, beeing the chiefe habitation of the Canibales, he sayled from Dominica to Hispaniola in fve other dayes. Thus within the space of 26. dayes, with prosperous winde, and by the swift fall of the Ocean from the East to the West, hee sayled from Spayne to Hispaniola, whiche course is counted of the mariners, to be no lesse then a thousand and two hundred leagues. Hee tarried but a while in Hispaniola, whether it were willingly, or that hee were so admonysshed of the Vice Roy. Directing therefore his voyage from thence toward the West, leauing the Ilandes of Cuba and Iamaica on his right hande toward the North, he writeth that he chaunced vpon an Ilande more southwarde then Iamaica, which the inhabitantes call Guanassa, so flourishing and fruitfull, that it might seeme an earthly Paradyse. Coasting along by the shores of this Ilande, hee mette two of the Canoaes, or boates of those prouinces, whiche were drawne with two naked slanes against the streame. In these boates was caryed a ruler of the Ilande, with his wife and children, all naked. The slanes seeing our men afande, made signes to them with proud countenance in their maisters name, to stand out of the way, and threatned them, if they woulde not giue place. Their simplenesse is such, that they neyther feared the multitude, or power of our men, or the greatnesse and straungenesse of our shyppes. They thought that our men woulde haue honoured their maister with like reuerence as they did. Our menne hadde intelligence at the length, that this ruler was a great marchant, which came to the marte from other coastes of the land: for they exercise buying and selling by exchange with their confines. Hee had also with him good store of such ware as they stande in neede of, or take pleasure in; as laton belles, rasers, kniues, and hatchettes made of a certayne sharpe yellowe bright stone, with handles of a strong kinde of wood: also many other necessarie instruments with kytchen stuffe, and vesselles for all necessarie vses: likewise sheetes of Gossampine cotton, wrought of sundry colours. Our men tooke him prysoner, with all his familie, but Colonus commaunded him to be loosed shortly after, and the greatest parte of his goods to be restored, to winne his friendshyppes. Beeing here instructed of a lande lying further toward the South, hee tooke his voyage thither. Therefore little more then ten myles distant from hence, he found a large land, which the inhabitants called Quiriquetana, but he named it Ciamba. When he went alande, and commaunded his chaplaine to say masse on the sea bankes, a great confluence of the naked inhabitants flocked thither, simplic and without feare, bringing with them plentie of meate and freshe water, marueling at our menne, as they had beene some straunge myracle. When they had presented their giftes, they went somewhat backwarde, and made lowe curtesie after their manner, bowing their heales and bodyes reuerently. He recompenced their gentleness, rewarding them with other of our thinges, as counters, braslettes, and garlandes of glasse, and counterfeit stones, looking glasses, needelles, and pyennes, with such other trash, whiche seemed vnto them precious marchandize. In this great tracte, there are two regions, whereof the one is called Tuia, and the other Maia. Hee writeth, that all that lande is very faire and holesome, by reason of the excellent temperatnesse of the ayre: And that it is inferiour to no lande in fruitfull grounde, beeing partly full of mountaynes, and partly large playnes: also replenished with many goodly trees, wholesome herbes, continuing greene, and flourishing all the whole yeere. It beareth also very many holly trees, and pyncapple trees. Also vii. kindes of date trees, whereof some are fruitfull, and some barren. It bringeth forth likewise of it selfe Pelgoras, and wild vines, laden with grapes, euen in the woodes among other trees. He sayth furthermore, that there is such abundance of other pleasant and profitable fruites that they passe not of vipes. Of one of those kindes of date trees they make certaine long and broade swordes, and darts. These regions beare also Gossampine trees here and there commonly in the woodes. Likewise Mirobalanes of sundry kyndes, as those which the phisitians call Einblicos, and Chebulos: Maizium also, Iucca, Ages, and Battatas,

From Spayne to Hispaniola a thousand or two hundred leagues.

Simple people.

A great marchant.

Gentle people.

The region of Tuia & Maia.

Seven kindes of date trees. Wild vine.

Mirobalanes.

*Isles and  
foules.*

*People of  
poorly stature.*

*They paynt  
their bodies.*

*The swift  
course of the  
sea from the  
East to the  
West.*

*Fresh water in  
the sea.*

*Fayre rivers.  
Great reedes.  
Great Tur-  
keys.*

*Quatuor  
linguæ.*

*The region of  
Quicuri.*

Battatz, like vnto those which we haue said before to be founde in other regions in these coastes. The same nourisheth also Lions, Tygers, Hartes, Rocs, Goates, and dyuers other beastes. Lykewise sundry kindes of byrdes and foules: among the whiche they keepe onely them to frank and feede, which are in colour, biggenesse, and tast, much like vnto our Pheonnes. He sayth that the inhabitants are of hygh and goodly stature, well lymmed and portioned, both men and women, couering their priue partes with fync breeches of gossam-pine cotton, wrought with diuers colours. And that they may seeme the more comely and beautiful (as they take it) they paynt their bodies redde and blacke, with the iuyce of certayne apples, whiche they plant in their gardens for the same purpose: Some of them paynt their whole bodies, some but parte, and other some drawe the portitures of hearbes, floures, and knottes, euery one as seemeth best to his owne phantasie. Their language differeth viterly from theirs of the llandes neere about them. From these regions, the waters of the sea ran with as full a course towards the West, as if it had bene the fall of a swift ryuer. Neuerthelesse he determined to searche the East partes of this lande, reuoluing in his minde that the regions of Paria & O<sup>3</sup> Draconis with other coastes founde before towards the East, should be neere there about, as indeede they were. Departing therefore from the large region of Quiriquetana, the xiii. day of the Calendes of September when he had sayled thirtie leagues, he founde a riuer, within the mouth whereof he drewe fresh water in the sea: where also the shore was so cleane without rockes, that hee founde grounde euery where, where he might aptly cast anker. He writeth that the swift course of the Ocean was so vehement & contrary, that in the space of fourtie dayes, he coulde scarcely sayle threescore and tenne leagues, and that with much difficultie, with many fetches and compassings, finding himselfe to bee sometymes repulsed and driuen farre backe by the violent course of the sea, when hee woulde haue taken lande towards the evening, least per-happes wanderyng in vnknowne coastes in the darkness of the night, he might be in danger of shippwracke. Hee wyreth, that in the space of eight leagues, he found three great and fayre ryuers, vpon the banks whereof there grewe reedes bygger then a mannes thigh. In these ryuers was also great plentie of fishe, and great Tortoyses: Lykewise in many places; multitudes of Crocodiles lying in the sande, and yaning to take the heate of the sunne: beside, diuers other kindes of beastes, wherewith he gaue no names. He sayeth also that the soyle of that lande is verie diuers and variable, being somewhere stonie and full of rough and craggie promontories, or poyntes reaching into the sea, and in other places as fruitfull as may bee. They haue also diuers Kinges and rulers. In some places they call a King Cacicus: in other places they call him Quebi, and somewhere Tiba. Such as haue beehaued themselves valyantly in the warres agaynst their enemies, and haue their faces full of scars, they call Cupras, and honour them as the antiquitie did the gods which they called Heroes, supposed to bee the soules of such menne, as in their life time excelled in vertue and noble actes. The common people they call Chiuu, and a manne, they call Homem. When they say in their language, take manne, they say Hoppa home. After this, hee came to another ryuer apt to beare great shippes, before the mouth whereof, lye foure small llandes, full of flourishing and fruitfull trees: these llandes he named Quatuor tempora. From hence, sayling towards the East for the space of xiii. leagues, still agaynst the violent course of the water, he found twelue other small llandes, in the which, because he founde a new kind of fruits, much like vnto our Lemonds, he called them Limonates. Wanderyng yet further the same way for the space of xii. leagues, hee founde a great haueu entering into the lande, after the manner of a gulle, the space of three leagues, and in-manner as broode, into the which fell a great ryuer. Here was Nicuesa lost afterwarde, when he sought Beragua, by reason whereof, they called it Rio de los perdidos, that is, the ryuer of the lost men. Thus Colonus the Admirall yet further continuing his course agaynst the furie of the sea, founde manie hygh mountaines, and horrible valleyes, with dyuers ryuers and hauens, from all the which (as he sayth) proceeded sweete scours, greatly recreating and comforting nature: insomuche that in all this long tract, there was not one of his men diseased, vntill he came to a region which the inhabitants call Quicuri, in the which is the haueu called

called Cariai, named Mirobalanus by the Admirall, because the Mirobalane trees are native in the regions thereof. In this haven of Cariai, there came about two hundred of the inhabitants to the sea side; with euerie of them three or foure darts in their handes, yet of condition gentle enough, and not refusing strangers. Their coming was for none other purpose, then to knowe what this newe nation meant, or what they brought with them. When our menne hadde giuen them signes of peace, they came swimming to the shyppes, and desired to barter with them by exchange. The Admirall; to allure them to friendship, gaue them many of our things: But they refused them, suspecting some deceit thereby, because hee would not receive theirs. They wrought all-by signes: for ope vnderstoode not a worde of the others language. Such giftes as were sent them, they left on the shore, and would take no part thereof. They are of suche ciuilitie and humanitie, that they esteeme it more honorable to giue, then to take. They sent our men two young women, being virgines, of commendable fauour, and goodly stature, signifying vnto them, that they might take them away with them, if it were their pleasure. These women, after the manner of their country, were couered from their ancles somewhat about their priuie parts, with a certayne cloth made of gossampine cotton, but the men are all naked. The women vse to cutte their hayre: but the men let it growe on the hinder part of their head, and caste it on the fore part. Their long hayre, they binde vpp with sylletes, and winde it in sundry rowles, as our maydes are accustomed to doe. The Virgins which were sent to the Admirall, hee decked in fayre apparell, and gaue them many giftes, and sent them home agayne. But likewise all these rewardes and apparell they left vpon the shore, because our men had refused their giftes. Yet tooke hee two men away with him (and those verie willingly) that by learning the Spanish tongue, hee might afterwarde vse them for interpreters. He considered that the tractes of these coastes were not greatly troubled with vehement motions, or ouerflowings of the sea, forasmuche as trees growe in the sea not farre from the shore, euen as they doo vpon the banks of ryuers: the whiche thing also other do affirme, which haue lately searched those coastes, declaring that the sea ryseth and falleth but litle thereabout. He sayth furthermore, that in the prospect of this land, there are trees engendred euen in the sea, which after that they are grown to any height, bend downe the toppes of their branches into the grounde: whiche embracing them, causeth other branches to spring out of the same and take roote in the earth, bringing forth trees in their kinde successiuelly, as did the first root from whence they hadde their originall, as doe also the settes of viues, when onely both the endes thereof are put into the grounde. Plinie in the twelfth booke of his naturall hystorie maketh mention of suche trees describing them to bee on the lande, but not in the sea. The Admirall writeth also, that the like beastes are engendred in the coastes of Cariai, as in other prouinces of these regions, and such as we haue spoken of before: Yet that there is one founde here in nature muche differing from the other. This beast is of the bygnesse of a great Monkey, but with a tayle much longer and bigger, it lyeth in the woodes, and remoueth from tree to tree in this manner: Hanging by the tayle vpon the branche of a tree, and gathering strength by swaying her body twyse or thirse to and fro, shee casteth her selfe from branch to branche, and so from tree to tree, as though shee flew. An archer of ours hurt one of them, who, perceiuing her selfe to be wounded, leapt downe from the tree, and fiercely set on him whiche gaue her the wounde, in so much that he was faine to defend himselfe with his sword. And thus by chaunce, cutting of one of her armes, he tooke her, and with much a do brought her to the shyppes, where within a while shee waxed tame. While she was thus kept and bounde with cheynes, certayne other of our hunters had chased a wilde Bore out of the maryshes neere vnto the sea side: for hunger and desiro of flesh, caused them to take double pleasure in hunting. In this meane time other which remained in the shyppes, going a lande to recreate themselves, tooke this Monkie with them, who as soone as she had espied the Bore, set vpp her brystels, and made towarde him. The Bore likewise shooke his bristels, and whet his teeth. The Monkie furiously inuaded the Bore, wrapping her tayle about his body, & with her arme, reserved of her victourer, held him so fast about the throte, that he was suffocate.

The bones of  
Cariai or Miro-  
balanus.

Orde and b-  
ness people.

Trees growing  
in the sea after  
a strange sort.

Monie.

A strange kind  
of Monkey.

A Monkey  
fought with  
a man.

A conduct be-  
tweene a  
Monkey and a  
wild Bore.

The bodies of  
Lions dyed and  
stuffed.

cate. These people of Cariai, use to drie the dead bodies of their princes vpon hurdles, and so reserue them inuolued in the leaues of trees. As he went forwarde, about twentie leagues from Cariai, he found a gulfe of suche largenesse, that it contained xii. leagues in compasse, in the mouth of this gulfe was foure litle landes, so neere together, that they made a safe haueu to enter into the gulfe: This gulfe is the haueu which wee sayde before to bee called Cerabaro of the inhabitants. But they haue nowe learned, that only the laud of the one side therof, lying on the right hand at the enteriug of the gulfe, is called by that name, but that on the left side, is called Aburema. Hee sayth that all this gulfe is full of fruitefull landes, well replenished with goodly trees, and the grounde of the sea to bee very cleane without rocks, and commodious to cast anker: likewise the sea of the gulfe to haue great abundance of fische, and the lande on both the sides to bee inferiour to none in fruitefulnessse. At his first arryuing, he espied two of the inhabitants, hauing cheynes about their neckes, made of ouches (whiche they call Guanines) of base golde, artificially wrought in the formes of Eagles, and Lions, with diuers other beastes, and fowles. Of the two Cariaians whiche he brought with him from Cariai, he was enformed that the regions of Cerabaro and Aburema were rich in gold, and that the people of Cariai haue al their gold from these for exchange of other of their things. They tolde him also, that in the same regions there are foue villages, not farre from the sea side, whose inhabitants applie themselves onely to the gathering of gold. The names of these villages are these, Chirara, Paren, Chitaza, Iureche, Atamea. All the men of the prouince of Cerabaro, go naked, & are painted with diuers colours. They take great pleasure in wearyng garlandes of floures, and crownes made of the claues of Lions & Tygers. The women couer onely their priuie partes with a syllet of gossampine cotton. Departing from hence, & coasting still by the same shore for the space of xviii. leagues, he came to another riuer, where he espied about three hundred naked men in a company. When they saw the shippes drawe neare about the land, they cryed out aloud, with triell countenaunces, shaking their wooden swordes, and hurling darts, taking also water in their mouths, and spouting the same against our men: whereby they seemed to insinuate, that they would receiue no condition of peace, or haue ought to doe with them. Here he commaunded certayne pieces of ordinaunce to be shot of towards them, yet so to overshooote them, that none might bee hurt thereby: For hee euer determined to deale quietly & peaceably with these newe nations. At the noyse therefore of the guanines, and sight of the fire, they fell downe to the grounde, and desired peace. Thus enteriug into further friendshipde, they exchanged cheynes and ouches of golde, for glasses, and hawkes beltes, and such other merchandies. They vse drummes or tymbrels made of the shelles of certayne sea fishes, where with they encourage themselves in the warres. In this tracte are these seuen ryuers, Acateba, Quareba, Zobroba, Aiaguinit, Vrida, Duribba, Beragus, in all the whiche, golde is founde. They defende themselves agaynst rayne and heate with certayne great leaues of trees, in the steade of clokes. Departing from hence, he searched the coastes of Ehetere, and Embigar, into the whiche fall the goodly ryuers of Zohoran and Cubigar: And here ceaseth the plentie and fruitefulnessse of golde, in the tract of fiftie leagues, or there about. From hence, onely 3. leagues distant, is the rocke which in the vnhortunate discourse of Nicuesa we sayd was called of our men Pignonem, but of the inhabitants the Region is called Vihba. In this tract also, about syxe leagues from thence, is the haueu whiche Colonas called Porus Bellus (wherof we haue spoken before) in the regiõ whiche the inhabitants call Xoguarua. This region is very populous but they goe all naked. The king is paynted with blacke colours, but all the people with redde. The king and seuen of his noblemen, had eery of them a litle plate of gold hanging at their nosethrylles, downe vnto their lippes: and this they take for a comely ornament. The men inclose their priuie members in a shell, and the women couer theirs with a syllet of gossampine cotton, tyed about their loynes. In the gardens they nourishe a fruite much like the nut of a pine tree, the which (as wee haue sayde in another place) groweth on a shrubbe, much like vnto an hartichoke, but the fruite is much softer, and meate for a king: also certayne trees whiche beare goddes, wherof wee haue spoken

Crownes of  
leaves cleaue.

Syllet of  
cotton.

Guanes  
made  
of gold.

Seuen golden  
ryuers.

Note where the  
ferry of gold  
ceaseth.

spoken before: this tree they call Hiburo. In these coastes they mette sometimes with Crocodiles lying on the sandes, the which when they fledde, or tooke the water, they left a very sweete sauoure beehinde them, sweeter then muske or Costoreina. When I was sent ambassadour for the Catholike King of Castile, to the Soltane of Babylon, or Alcayre in Egypt, the inhabitants nere vnto the riuier of Nilus tolde mee the like of their female Crocodiles, affirming farthermore, that the fat or shewet of them, is equall in sweetness with the pleasant gummes of Arabie. But the Admirall was nowe at the length enforced of necessitie to depart from hence, aswell for that he was no longer able to abide the contrary and violent course of the water, as also that his shippes were dayly more and more putrified, and eaten through with certaine wormes, which are engendred of the warmnesse of the water in all those tractes, nere vnto the Equinoctiall-lyne. The Venetians call these wormes Bissas. The same are also engendred in two haucnt of the citie of Alexandria in Egypt, and destroy the shippes if they lye long at anker. They are a cubite in length, and somewhat more, not passing the quantitie of a finger in bignesse. The Spanish maryner calleth this pestilence Broma. Colonus therefore, whom before the great monsters of the sea could not feare, now fearing this Broma, being also sore vexed with the contrary sal of the sea, directed his course with the Ocean toward the West, and came first to the ryuer Hiebra, distant onely two leagues from the ryuer of Beragua, because that was comodious to harborowe great ships. This region is named after the ryuer and is called Beragua the lesse, because both the riuers are in the dominion of the king whiche inhabiteth the region of Beragua. But what chaunced vnto him in this voyage on the right hande and on the left, let vs nowe declare. While therfore Colonus the Admirall remained yet in the ryuer Hiebra, he sent Bartholomeus Colonus his brother, and Lieuutenant of Hispaniola, with the shyp boates, and threescore and eycht men, to the riuier of Beragua, where the king of the Region, being naked, and paynted after the manner of the country, came towards them, with a great multitude of men waiting on him, but all unarmed and without weapons, giuing also signes of peace. When hee approached nere, and entred communication with our men, certayne of his gentlemen, nerecast about his person, remembering the maiestie of a king, and that it stode not with his honour to bargayne standing, tooke a great stone out of the ryuer, washing and rubbing it very decently, and so put it vnder him with humble reuerence. The king thus sitting, seemed with signes and tokens, to insinuate that it should be lawfull for our men to search and viewe all the riuers within his dominion. Wherefore the sixt day of the Ides of February, leauing his boates with certayne of his company, he went by lande on foote, from the bankes of Beragua, vntill he came to the ryuer of Duraba, which he affirmeth to be richer in golde then either Hiebra or Beragua: For golde is engendred in all ryuers of that land, insomuch that among the rootes of trees growing by the bankes of the ryuers, and among the stones left of the water, and also wheresoeuer they dygged a hole or pyt in the grounde, not past the depth of a handefull and a halfe, they founde the earth, being taken out thereof, mixt with golde: whereupon he determined to fasten his foote there, and to inhabit. Which thing the people of the country perceiuing, and smelling what inconuenience and mischief might thereof ensue to their country, if they should permitte straungers to plant their inhabitations there, assembled a great armie, and with horrible outcries assailed our menne (who had now begun to build houses) so desperately, that they were scarcely able for to abide the first brunt. These naked Barbarians at their first approche, vsed onely slynges and dartes: but when they came nere to hande strokes, they fought with their wooden swordes, whiche they call Michamas, as we haue sayde before. A man woulde not thinke what great malice and wrath was kindled in their heartes agaynst our men, and with what desperate myndes they fought for the defence of their libertie, whiche they more esteeme then life or riches: For they were nowe so void of all feare, and containing death, that they neither feared long bowes or crosse bowes, nor yet (which is moste to be marueyled) were any thing discouraged at the terrible noyse of the gunnes, shotte of from the shippes. They retyled once: but shortly after encreasing their number, they returned more fiercely then at the first. They would haue bin contented to haue

Crucifixes of  
sweete sauer.  
Alcayre or Ba-  
bylon in Egypt.

Shippes eaten  
with wormes.

Alexandria in  
Egypt.

How the King  
of Beragua en-  
tertaineth the  
Lieuutenant.

Their reuerence  
to their king.

Shippes and  
dartes.

There is more  
received then  
sicken.

received our men friendly as strangers, but not as inhabitants. The more instant that our men were to remayne, so much the greater multitude of borderers flocked together daily, disturbing them both night & day, sometimes on the one side, and sometimes on the other. The shippes lying at anker neare vnto the shore, warded them on the backe halfe: but at the length they were fayne to forsake this lande, and returne backe the same way by the which they came. Thus with much difficulty & danger they came to the land of Iamaica, lying on the Soull<sup>th</sup> side of Hispaniola & Cuba, with their shippes as full of holes as sives, and holes so eaten with wormes, as though they had been bored through with wimbles. The water entred so fast at the riftes and holes, that yf they had not with the painful labour of their handes emptied the same as fast, they were like to haue perished: where as yet by this meanes they arrived at Iamaica, although in manner halfe dead. But their calamitie ceased not heere: For as fast as their shippes leaked, their strength diminished, so that they were no longer able to keepe them from sinking. By reason whereof, falling into the handes of the Barbarians, and inclosed without hope of departure, they led their lives for the space of tenne monethes among the naked people, more miserable then euer did Achemenides among the Gigantes, called Ciclopes, rather living, then being euher contented or satisfied with the strange meates of that lande, and that onely at suche times as pleased the Barbarians to giue them part of theirs. The deadly enmitie and malice which these barbarous kinges beare one against an other, made greatly with our men: For at suche times as they attempted warre against their borderers, they woulde sometimes giue our men part of their bread, to aide them. But how miserable and wretched a thing it is to liue onely with bread gotten by begging, your holinesse maye easily coniecture: especially where al other accustomed foode is lacking, as wine, oile, fleshe, butter, cheese, and milke, wherwith the stomackes of our people of Europe haue euer been nourished, euen from their cradels.

Therefore as necessitie is subiect to no law: so doth it enforce men to attempt desperate aduentures, and those the sooner, which by a certaine nobilitie of nature do no further esteeme life then it is ioined with some felicitie. Bartholomeus Colonus therefore, intending rather to prouoq what God woulde do with him and his companions in these extremities, then any longer to abide the same, commaunded Diego Mendez his stewarde, with two guides of that lande, whome he had hired with promises of great rewardes at their returne, to enter into one of their Canoas, and take their voiage to Hispaniola. Being thus tossed on the sea to and fro from rocke to rocke, by reason of the shortnesse and narrownesse of the Canoa, they arrived at the length at the last corner of Hispaniola, being distant from Iamaica fourtie leagues. Here his guides departing from him, returned againe to Colonus, for the rewardes which he had promised them: but Diego Mendez went on forward on foote, vntill he came to the citie called Sanctus Dominicus, being the chiefe & head citie of the lande. The officers and rulers of Hispaniola, being enformed of the matter, appointed him two shippes, wherewith he returned to his maister and companions. As he founde them, so came they to Hispaniola, very feeble, and in maner naked. What chanced of them afterwarde, I knowe not as yet. Let vs now therefore leaue these particulars, and speake somewhat more of generalls. In al those tracts, which we saide here before to haue been founde by Colonus the Admiral, both he him self writeth, and all his companions of that voiage confesse, that the trees, hearbes, and fruites, are flourishing and greene al the whole yeere, and the aire so temperate & wholesome, that of al his companie there neuer fel one man sicke, nor yet were vexed either with extreme colde or heate, for the space of fiftie leagues, from the great haue of Cerabaro, to the riuers of Hiebra and Beragua. Thinhabitantes of Cerabaro, and the nations which are betwixt that & the saide riuers, applie not them selues to the gathering of golde, but only at certaine times of the yeere, and are very expert and cunning herein, as are our miners of silver and iron. They knowe by long experience in what places golde is most abundantly engendered: as by the colour of the water of the riuers, and such as fall from the mountaines, and also by the colour of the earth and stones. They beleue a certaine godly nature to be in golde, forasmuche as they neuer gather it, except they vse certaine religious expiations or purging, as to

The Spaniards  
are dreyne to  
Egypte.

A miserable  
case.

Mercies had  
no lawe.

Howe ferr life is  
to be esteem'd.

Sanctus Domini-  
cus.

Landes found  
by Colonus.

Temperat  
ayre and hea-  
some aire.

Expert miners.

A godly nature  
in golde.

absteine

absteine from women, and all kindes of pleasures, and delicate meates and drinckes, during all the time that their golden harvest lasteth. They suppose that men do naturally live and die as other beastes do, and therefore honour none other thing as God: Yet do they pray to the Sunne, and honour it when it riseth. But let vs nowe speake of the mountaines, and situation of these landes. From all the sea bankes of these regions, exceeding great and high mountaines are seene towarde the South, yet reaching by a continual tract from the East into the West, by reason wherof, I suppose that the two great seas (wherof I have spoken largely before) are divided with these mountaines, as it were with bulwarkes, least they shoulde ioine and repugne, as Italie diuideth the sea called Tyrrhenum, from the sea Adriatique, which is nowe commonly called the gulfe of Venice. For whiche way so euer they sailed from the point called Promontorium; S. Augustini (whiche pertaineth to the Portugales, and prospecteth against the sea Atlantike) euen vnto Vraba and the haueu Cerabaro, and to the furthest landes founde hitherto westward, they had euer great mountaines in sight, both neere hande, and also farre of, in all that long rase. These mountaines where in some place smooth, pleasaunt, and fruitfull, full of goodly trees and hearbes, and somewhere high, rough, full of rockes, & barren, as chaunceth in the famous mountaines of Taurus in Asia, and also in diuers coastes of our mountaines of Apennini, and such other of like bignesse. The ridges also of these mountaines are diuided with goodly and faire vallies. That part of the mountaines which includeth the limites of Beragua, is thought to be higher then the cloudes, insomuch that (as they say) the tops of them can seldom be seene for the multitude of thicke cloudes which are beneath the same. Columbus the Admiral, the first finder of these regions, affirmeth that the toppes of the mountaines of Beragua, are more then fiftie miles in height. He saith furthermore, that in the same region at the rootes of the mountaines the way is open to the South sea, & compareth it as it were betwene Venice and Genoa, or Janua, as the Genues will haue it called, whiche fable that their citie was builded of Ianus. He affirmeth also, that this land reacheth forth toward the South, and that from hence it taketh the beginning of breadth: like as from the Alpes, out of the narrow thigh of Italie, wee see the large and maine landes of Fraunce, Germanie, and Panonie, to the Samaritans and Scythians, euen vnto the mountaines and rockes of Riphea, and the frozen sea, & embrace there with, as with a continuall bonde, al Thracia, and Grecia, with all that is included within the promontorie or point of Malea, and Hellespontus south ward, and the sea Euzinus, and the mari-shes of Meotis in Scithia northward. The Admiral supposeth, that on the left hande, in sailing towarde the West, this lande is ioined to India, beyonde the river of Ganges, and that on the right hande towarde the North, it is extended to the frozen sea, beyonde the Hyperboreans and the North pole. So that both the sea (that is to meane that South sea which we said to be founde by Vaschus and our Ocean) shoulde ioine and meete in the corners of that lande, and that the waters of these seas do not only inclose and compass the same without diuision, as Europe is inclosed with the seas of Hellespontus and Tanais with the frozen Ocean, and our sea of Tyrrhenum with the Spanishe seas: But in my opinion, the vehement course of the Ocean toward the West, doth signifie the let that the said two seas shoulde not so ioine together, but rather that that lande is adherent to the firme landes towarde the North, as we haue saide before. It shall suffice to haue saide thus muche of the length hereof: Let vs nowe therefore speake somewhat of the breadth of the same. We haue made mention before howe the South sea is diuided by narrowe limites from our Ocean, as it was proued by the experience of Vaschus Nunnez and his companions, which first made open the way thither. But as diuersly the mountaines of our Alpes in Europe are somewhere narrowe and in some place brode: euen so, by the like prouidence of nature, this land in some part thereof reacheth farre in breadth, and is in other places coarcted with narrowe limites from sea to sea, with vallies also in some places, whereby men may passe from the one side to the other. Where we haue described the regions of Vraba and Beragua to be situate, these seas are diuided by small distaunce: Yet ought we to thinke the region, whiche the greater river of Maragnon runneth through, to be very large, if we shall graunt Maragnonum to be a river and no sea, as the freshe waters of the same ought

Golden harvest.

High &amp; great mountains.

Tyrrhenum is now called Trieste.

The mountains of Beragua higher than the cloudes.

Mountaines of this stiles length.

Ianus aduening called by the son of Noe.

By this interpretation, the way shoulde open to Cathay by the Hyperboreans.

Looks the north prouidence of Columbus, Dec. 14. 1492.

The great river Maragnonum.

to perswade vs. For in suche narrow caues of the earth; there can be no swallowing gulfes of suche bignesse as to receive or nourishe so great abundance of water. The like is also to be supposed of the great riuer of Dabaiba, whiche we saide to be from the corner of the gulfe of Vraha, in some place of fortie fathomes depth, & som wher fittie: also three miles in breadth, and so to fall in to the sea. We must needs graunt, that the earth is brode there, by the which the riuer passeth from the high mountaines of Dabaiba from the East, and not from the West. They say that this ryuer consisteth and taketh his increase of foure other ryuers, falling from the mountaynes of Dabaiba. Our men call this riuer *Flumen S. Iohannis*. They say also that from hence it falleth into the gulfe of Vraha by seuen mouthes, as doth the ryuer of Nilus into the sea of Egypt: Likewise that in the same region of Vraha, there are in some places narrow streights, not passing fyfteeen leagues, and the same to bee sauage, and without any passage, by reason of diuers maryshes and desolate wayes, which the Latines call *Lamas*, but the Spanyardes according to their varietie call them *Tremedales*, *Trampales*, *Cenegales* *Sumideros*, and *Zabondaderos*. But before wee passe any farther, it shall not bee greatly from our purpose to declare from whence these mountaynes of Dabaiba haue their name, according vnto the antiquities of the inhabitants. They sayde that Dabaiba was a womanne, of great maganimitie and wisdome among their predecessours in olde time, whome in her life all the inhabitants of those prouinces did greatly reuerence, and being dead, gaue her diuine honour, and named the region after her name, beleeuing that shee sendeth thunder and lightning, to destroy the fruites of the earth if shee bee angry, and to send plentie if shee bee well pleased. This superstition hath bene perswaded them by a craftie kinde of men, vnder pretence of religion, to the intent that they might enioy suche giftes and offerings as vero brought to the place where shee was honoured. This is sufficient for this purpose: They say furthermore, that the maryshes of the narrow land, whereof we haue spoken, bring forth great plentie of Crocodiles, Dragons, Battes, and Gnats, being very hurtfull. Therefore whensoever they take any iourney toward the South, they goe out of the way toward the mountaynes, and eschewe the regions neere vnto those perylous fenues or maryshes. Some thinke that there is a valley lying that way that the ryuer runneth, which our men call *Rio de los Perdidos*, that is, the ryuer of the lost men (so named by the misfortune which there befell to *Nieuesa* and his company) and not farre distant from the haue *Cerabaro*, whiche diuideth those mountaynes toward the South. But let vs nowe finish this booke with a fewe other things worthe to be noted. They say therefore, that on the right hand and left hand from *Dariena* there are twentie ryuers, in all the whiche great plentie of golde is founde. Being demaunded what was the cause why they brought no greater abundance of golde from thence: they answered, that they lacked syners, and that the men which they tooke with them from Spayne thither, were not accustomed to labour, but for the most part brought vp in the warres. This land seemeth also to promise many precious stones: For beside those which I saide to be founde neere vnto *Cariai* and *Saneta Martha*, one *Andreas Morales*, a pilot (who had trauelyed those coastes with *Iohannes de la Cossa* while hee yet liued) hadde a precious *Diamonde*, which hee bought of a naked young man in the region of *Cumana*; in the prouince of *Paria*. This stone was as long as two ioyntes of a mans middle finger, and as bigge as the first ioynt of the thumb, being also psynted on euery side, consisting of eight squares, perfectly formed by nature. They say that with this they made scarres in annyles and hammers, and brake the teeth of fyles, the stone remainyng vnperished. The young man of *Cumana*, wore this stone about his necke among other ouches, & solde it to *Andreas Morales* for fyue of our counterfeit stones, made of glasse of diuers colours, wherewith the ignorant young man was greatly delighted: They found also certaine *Topases* on the shore. But the estimation of golde was so farre entered into the heades of our men, that they had no regard to stones. Also the most parte of the Spanyardes, doe laugh them to scorne which vse to wear many stones, specially such as are common, iudging it to be an effeminate vice, & more meet for women then men. The noble men only, when they celebrate soleme marriages, or set forth any triumphes, weare cheryces of golde, beset with precious stones, & vse fayre apper-

The great river  
Dabaiba, or  
santa Iohanna.

The ryuers haue  
their sources  
from the spryngs  
of the mountaynes.

The ryuer of  
Nilus in Egypt.

Maryshes and  
desolate wayes.

A superstitious  
opinion of the  
original of the  
mountaynes of  
Dabaiba.

Drynges and  
Crocodiles in  
the maryshes.

The haue *Cerabaro*.

Twentie golden  
ryuers.

Precious stones.

A precious *Diamonde*  
bought of a naked  
young man.

Topases.

rell of silke, embrodered with golde, intermyxte with pearles and precious stones, and not at other times. They thinke it no lesse effeminate for men to smel of the sweete scinours of Arabia, and iudge him to be infected with some kinde of fylthy lechery, in whome they smell the saour of muske or Castoreum. But like as by one apple taken from a tree, we may perceiue the tree to be fruitfull; and by one fyshe taken in a ryuer, wee may knowe that fishe is engendred in the same: euen so, by a litle gold, and by one stone wee ought to consider that this land bringeth forth great plentie of golde, and precious stones. What they haue found in the porte of Sancta Martha, in the region of Cariai, when the whole nauie passed thereby vnder the gouernance of Petrus Arias, and his company, with certayne other of the Kinges officers, I haue sufficiently declared in his place. To bee short therefore all things doe so flourish, growe, encrease, and prosper, that the last are euer better then the first. And surely to declare my opinion herein, whatsoever hath heretofore bin discovered by the famous trauayles of Saturnus and Hercules, with such other whom the antiquitie for their heroidal factes honoured as gods, seemeth but litle and obscure, if it be compared to the Spanyards victorious labours. Thus I bid your holinesse farewell; desiring you to certifie me howe you like these first fruites of the Ocean, that being encouraged with your exhortations, I may the gladlier, and with lesse tediousnesse, write such things as shall chaunce hereafter.

## The fifth Chapter of the third Decade.

All such living creatures, as vnder the circle of the moone bring forth any thing, are accustomed by the instinct of nature, as soone as they are deliuered of their birth, either to close vp y<sup>e</sup> matrice, or at the least to be quiet for a space: But our most fruitefull Ocean and new world, engendreth & bringeth forth daily new birdes, whereby men of great wit, and especially suche as are studious of newe and marueylous things, may haue somewhat at hand wherewith to feed their mindes. Yf your holinesse doe aske to what purpose is all this: ye shall vnderstand, that I had scarcely finished the historic of such things as chaunced to Vachas Nunnez and his companie in their yoyage to the South sea, when sodenly there came newe letters from Petrus Arias the newe gouernour, whom the king had appoynted the yeere beefore with an armie of men and a nauie of ships to sayle to these newe landes. He signified by his letters, that hee with his nauie and companie arryued all safely. Furthermore, Iohannes Cabedus (whom your holinesse at the request of the most catholike king hadde created Bishop of that prouince of Dariena) & three other of the chiefe officers ioyned in commission to be his assistantes, as Alphonsus de Ponte, Diegus Marques, and Iohannes de Tsauri, confirmed the same letters, and subscribed them with their names. The nauigation therefore of Petrus Arias, was in this manner. The day beefore the Ides of April, in the yeere of Christe. 1514. he hoysed vp his sailes, in the towne of saint Lucar de Barrameda, situate in the mouth of the ryuer Batis, which the Spanyards nowe call Guadalehebr. The seuen llandes of Canaria are about foure hundred myles distant from the place where this ryuer falleth into the sea. Some thinke that these are the llandes whiche the olde wyrters did call the fortunate llandes: but other thinke the contrary. The name of these llandes are these. The two that appere first in sight, are named Lanzelota and Fortisuentura. On the backhalfe of these, lyeth Magna Canaria or Graneanaria, beyond that is Tenerif and Gomera somewhat towards the North from that. Palma and Ferrea lye behinde, as it were a bulworke to all the other. Petrus Arias therefore, arryued at Gomera the eight day after his departure, with a nauie of sauicreene ships, & a thousand and foue hundred men, although there were onely a thousande and two hundred assigned him by the kinges letters. It is sayd furthermore, that hee left behinde him more then two thousande very peniue and sighing that they also myght not bee receiued, profering themselves to goe at their owne charges. Hee taryed xvi. dayes in Gomera, to the intent to make provision of fuel and freshe water, but chiefly to repayre his shyppes, beeing sore broosed with tempestes, and especially the gouernours shypp, which had lost the rudder: For these llandes are commodious resting place for all such as intende to attempt any nauigations in that maine sea. Departing from hence in the

The nauigation of Petrus Arias.

The Trade of Canarie.

Provision of fresh water and fuel.

Nones

Nones of May, he sawe no more lande vntill the third day of Iunie, at the which hee' arryued at Dominica an Ilande of the Canibales, beinge distant from Gomeria about eight hundred leagues. Here hee remayned foure dayes, makinge newe provision of fresh water and fuelle, during which tyme, hee sawe no man, nor yet any steppes of men, but founde plentye of sea Crabbes and great Lisarts. From hence hee sayled by the Ilandes of Mainina (otherwise called Madama) Guadalupe and Galana (otherwise called Galana) of all which wee haue spoken in the first Decade. Hee passed also through the sea of hearbes or weeder, continuinge a long tract: Yet neyther he, nor Colonus the Admirall (who first found these Ilandes, and sayled through this sea of weedes) haue declared any reason how these weedes should come. Some thinke the sea to bee verie muddie there, and that these weedes are engendred in the bottome thereof, and so beinge loosed, to ascende to the vppermost part of the water, as wee see oftentimes chaunce in certayne standinge pooles, and sometymes also in great riuers. Other suppose that they are not engendred there, but to bee beaten from certayne rocks by the violence of the waters in tempestes: And thus they leaue the matter in doubt. Neyther haue they yet any certayne experience whether they sicke fast or giue place to the shyppes, or wander loose vpon the water: But it is to be thought, that they are engendred there, for otherwise they should bee dryuen together one heapes, by the impulsion of the shypps, euen as a beasome gathereth the sweepings of a house, and should also leaue the course of the shyppes. The fourth day after that he departed from Dominica, the hygh mountaynes covered with snowe, (whereof wee haue spoken in the seconde Decade) appeared vnto him. They say that there the seas runne as swittly towards the West, as it were a ryuer falling from the toppes of hygh mountaynes, although they sayled not directly toward the West, but inclined somewhat to the South. From these mountaynes falleth the ryuer of Gaira, famous by the slaughter of our men, at such time as Rodericus Colmanares passed by those coastes, as we haue sayde before: Likewise many other fayre ryuers haue their originall from the same mountaynes. This prouince (in the which is also the region of Caramairi) hath in it two notable hauens, of the which our men named the one Carthago or Carthagena, & the other Sancta Martha, the region wherof the inhabitants call Saturno. The port of Sancta Martha, is neerer to the mountaynes covered with snowe, called Montes Niuales, for it is at the roots of the same mountains, but the hauen of Carthago is more westward, about fyllie leagues. Hee wryteth marueilous thinges of the hauen of Sancta Martha, whiche they also confirme that came lately from thence: Of the which young Vesputius is one, to whom Americus Vesputius his vncle (beinge a Florentine borne) left the exact knowledge of the Mariners facultie, as it were by inheritance after his death, for hee was a very expert maister in the knowledge of his cardes, his compasse, and the elevation of the pole starre, with all that pertayneth thereto. This young Vesputius was assigned by the king to bee one of the maisters of the gouernours shyppes, because hee was cunning in iudging the degrees of the elevation of the pole starre by the quadrant: For the charge of gouerning the rudder, was chiefly committed to one Iohannes Serranus a Spanyard, who hadde oftentimes ouerrunne those coastes. Vesputius is my very familiar friend, and a wittie young man, in whose company I take great pleasure, and therefore vse him oftentimes for my ghest. He hath also made many voyages into these coastes, and diligently noted suche thinges as hath scene. Petrus Arias therefore wryteth, and he confirmeth the same, that the inhabitants of these regions tooke their originall of the Carribbes or Canibales, as appeared by the desperate fiercenesse & cruelty which they oftentimes shewed to our men when they passed by their coastes. Suche stoutnesse and fortitude of mynde is naturally engendred in these naked Barbarians, that they feared not to assaile our whole nauie, and to forbidde them to haue a lande. They fight with venomous arrowes, as wee haue sayde beefore. Perceiuing that our menne contemned their threatninges, they ranne furiously into the sea, euen vp to the breastes, nothinge fearing either the bygenesse or multitudes of our shyppes, but ceased not continually beinge thus in the water, to cast darts, and to shoote their venomous arrowes as thicke as hayle: Insomuch that our men had bin in great danger, if they had not bin defended by the cages or pausses of the shyppes, and their targettes: Yet were two of them

The sea of  
heerbes.

These mountaynes  
are called  
Montes Niuales,  
or Serra Neua,  
Dec. 1. in l. 1.  
and 2.

Mountaynes  
covered with  
snowe.

The sources of  
the Barbarians.

The Canibales  
fight in the  
water.

them wounded, which died shortly after. But this conflict continued so sharpe, that at the length our men were enforced to shoote of their greatest peeces of ordinance with hayle-shoote: at the slaughter and terrible noyse whereof, the Barbarians being sore discomfited and shaken with feare, thinking the same to bee thunder and lightning, turned their backs, and fledde amayne. They greatly feare thunder, because these regions are oftentimes vexed with thunder and lyghnynges, by reason of the hygh mountaynes, and nearnesse of the same to the region of the ayre, wherein such fiery tempests are engendred, which the philosophers call Meteora. And albeit that our men hadde nowe dryuen their enemies to flight, and sawe them dispareled and out of order, yet doubted they, and were of diuers opinions, whether they shoulde pursue them, or not. On the one partie shame prycked them forward, and on the other side, feare caused them to cast many peryls, especially considering the venomous arrowes whiche these Barbarians can direct so certainly. To depart from them with a drye foote (as sayth the proverbe) with so great a naue, and such an armie, they reputed it as a thing greatly sounding to their reproach and dishonour. At the length therefore, shame ouercomming feare, they perswaded them, & came to land with their ship boates. The gouernour of the nauie, and also Vesputius doe write, that the hauen is no lesse then three leagues in compasse, being also safe without rocks, and the water thereof so cleare, that a man may see pybble stones in the bottome twentie cubits deepe. They say likewise, that there falleth two fayre ryuers of freshe water into the hauen: but the same to be meete to beare the Canoas of these prouinces, then any bygger vessels. It is a delectable thing to heare what they tel of the plentie and varietie, and also of the pleasant tast of the fishes, aswell of these riuers, as of the sea there about: By reason wherof they found here manie fysher boates and nettes woondersfully wrought of certayne herbes or weedes, dried and tawed, and wreathed with cords of spunne gossampine cotton. For the people of Caramairi, Gaira, and Satuma, are verie canning in fishing, and vse to sell fish to their borderers, for exchange of such things as they lacke. When our men hadde thus chased the Barbarians from the sea coastes, and had nowe entred into their houses, they assayed them with newe skirmishes, especially when they sawe them fall to sacking and spoyling, and their wyues and childrea taken captiue. Their householde stuffe was made of great reedes, which growe on the sea bankes, and the stalkes of certayne herbes beaten, and afterwaerde made harde. The floores thereof were strewed, with herbes of sundrie colours, and the walles hangd with a kinde of tapstry, artificially made of gossampine cotton, wrought with pictures of Lions, Tigers, and Eagles. The doores of their houses and chambers were full of diuers kindes of shelles, hanging loose by small cordes, that being shaken by the winde, they might make a certaine rattling, and also a whistling noise, by gathering the winde in their holowe places: for herein they haue great delight, and impute this for a goodly ornaments. Diuers haue shewed me many wonderfull things of these regions, especially one Conzalas Fernandez Quiquid, being one of the magistrates appointed in that office, which the Spaniards call Veedor, who haue also hitherto entred further into the land then any other. He affirmeth, that he chaunced vpon the fragment of a Saphire, bigger then the egge of a gooe, and that in certayne hills where he trauielled with thirtie men, he founde many of the pretious stones called Smaragdes, Calcidones, and Iaspers, beside great peeces of Amber of the mountaynes. He also, with diuers others do affirme that in the houses of som of the Canibales of these regions, they found the like precious stones, set in golde, and inclosed in tapstry or arras (if it may be so called) wherewith they hang their houses. The same lande bringeth forth also many woodes of brasile trees, and great plentie of gold, in so much that in maner in al places they found on the sea bankes, & on the shores, certayne marchasites in token of golde. Fernandus Quiquid declareth furthermore, that in a certaine region called Zenu, lying fourescore and tenne miles from Dariena Eastward, they exercise a straunge kinde of marchandize: For in the houses of the inhabitants, they founde great chests and baskets, made of the twigges and leaues of certayne trees apte for that purpose, being all full of Grasschoppers, Grilles, Crabbes, or Cr-fishes, Snailles also, and Locustes, which destroie the fieldes of corne, all well dried and salted.

The use of  
pauces.The generation  
of Canoes and  
fishing.

Plenty of fish.

Canning labors.

Tapystry.

This is he  
whom Cardenas  
praiseth.Precious stones.  
The Smaragde  
is the true He-  
meroid.Another kinde  
of Amber is  
founde in  
Brazil.Gulles and Bre-  
sils.Marchasites are  
sortes of wee-  
ds, by the  
colours wherof,  
the kindes of  
metalls are  
knowen.These Locustes  
haue the corne  
with touching,  
and deuoure the

vident. They  
are in India of  
three foute  
leghs.

Gardens.

Iardens are  
nowe called  
Lambardas, and  
Heteras,  
Tucacas.

One sayde is  
ten thousande.

The manner of  
planting the  
roote luca.

Eache rowed  
into rootes.

How bred is  
made of roote.

salted. Being demanded why they reserved such a multitude of these beastes: they answered, that they kept them to be soule to the borderers, whiche dwell farther within the lande, and that for the exchange of these pretious birdes, and salted fishes, they received of them certayne straunge things, wherein partly they take pleasure, and partly use them for their necessary affaires. These people dwell not together, but scattered heere and there. The inhabitants of Caramairi, seeme to dwell in an earthly Paradise, their region is fayre and fruitfull, without outrageous heate, or sharpe colde, with little difference of the length of day and night throughout all the yeere. After that our men hadde thus deuyen the Barbarians to flight, they entred into a valley, of two leagues in breadth, and three in length, extending to certayne fruitfull mountaynes, full of grasse, hearbes, and trees, at the rootes whereof, lye two other vallies towarde the ryght hande and the left, through eyther of the whiche runneth a fayre ryuer, whereof the ryuer of Cairi is one, but vnto the other they haue yet giuen no name. In these vallies they found many fayre gardens, and pleasant fields, watered with trenches, distributed in marueilous order, with no lesse art then our Insularians and Hetrurians use to water their fields. Their common meate, is Ages, luca, Maizium, Battata, with such other rootes and fruites of trees, and also such fyshe as they vse in the llandes and other regions of those prouinces. They eat mannes flesh but seldome, because they meete not oftentimes with strangers, except they goe forth of their owne dominions with a mayne armie, of purpose to hunt for menne, when their rauenyng appetite pricketh them forward: For they abstayne from themselves, and eat none but suche as they take in the warres, or otherwise by chance. But surely it is a miserable thing to heare howe many myriades of men these filthy and vnnatural deuourers of mens flesh haue consumed, and left thousandes of most fayre and fruitfull llandes and regions desolate without menne: by reason whereof, our menne found so many llandes, whiche for their fayrenesse and fruitfulness myght seeme to be certayne earthly Paradyses, and yet were viterly voyde of men. Hereby your holiness may consider how pernicious a kynde of men this is. We haue sayde before, that the land named Sancti Iohannis (which the inhabitants call Burichea) is next to Hispaniola. It is sayde, that onely the Canibales which dwell in the other llandes neere about this, as in the llande called Haybay or Sancta Crucis, and in Guadalupe (otherwise called Queraqueira, or Caracuiera) haue in our tyme violently taken out of the sayde llande of Sancti Iohannis, more then fyue thousande menne to be eaten. But let it suffice thus muche to haue wandered by these monstrous bloud-suckers. Wee will now therefore speake somewhat of the rootes wherof they make their bread, forasmuch as the same shall hereafter be foode to Christian men, in steade of breade made of wheate, and in the steade of radshe, with such other rootes as they haue bene accustomed to cate in Europe. We haue oftentimes sayde before, that luca is a roote, wherof the best and most delicate bread is made, both in the firme lande of these regions, and also in the llandes: but howe it is tyllid or husbanded, howe it groweth, and of how diuers kyndes it is, I haue not yet declared. Therefore, when they content to plant this luca, they make a hole in the earth, knee deepe, and raise a heape of the earth taken out of the same, fashioning it like a square bedde; of nine foote breadth on euery side, setting twelue trunks of these rootes (being about a foote and a halfe long apiece) in euery of the sayd beddes containing three rootes of a side, so layd a slope, that the endes of them ioyn in manner together in the center or midst of the bedde within the grounde. Out of the ioynes of the rootes, and spaces betwene the same, spring the toppes of the blades of newe rootes, whiche by little and little encreasyng growe to the bignesse and length of a mans arme in the browne, and oftentimes as hyge as the thygh: so that by the tyme of their full rypenesse, in manner all the earth of the heape is conuerted into rootes. But they say that these rootes are not rype, in lesse then a yeere and halfe, and that the longer they are suffered to grow, euen vntil two yeeres complete, they are so much the better, and more perfecte to make breade thereof. When they are taken forth of the earth, they scrape them, and dryse them, with certayne sharpe stones, seruing for the same purpose. And thus laying them betwene two great stones, or putting them in a sacke made of the stalkes of certayne tough

tough herbes and small reedes, they presse them (as we doe cheese or crabbes, to draw out the iuyce thereof) and so let them dry a day before they eat them. The iuyce or li-  
 quour they cast away: (as wee haue sayde) it is deadly poyson in the hand. Yet is  
 the iuyce of such as growe in the firme lande wholesome, if it be sodde, as is the whey of  
 our milke. They say that there are many kyndes of this lucca, whereof some are more  
 pleasant and delicate then the other, and are therefore reserved as it were to make fyne  
 Manchet for the kinges owne table: But the Gentlemen eat of the meener sort, and the  
 common people of the basest. The finest they call Cazabbi, which they make rounde like  
 cakes, in certayne presses, before they seethe it, or bake it. They say furthermore, that  
 there are likewise diuers kyndes of the rootes of Ages, and Battatas. But they vse these ra-  
 ther as fruites, and dyshes of seruice, then to make breade thereof, as we vse Rapes, Ra-  
 dishes, Mushromes, Nancies, Parsnipes, and suche like. In this case, they most especially  
 esteeme the best kinde of Battatas, which in pleasant tast and tendernesse, farre exceedeth  
 our Mushromes. It shall suffice to haue sayd thus much of roots: We will nowe therefore  
 speake of another kinde of their bread. We declared before, that they haue a kinde of  
 grayne or Pulse, muche like vnto Panicum, but with somewhat bygger graynes, which they  
 beate into meale, vpon certayne great hollow stones with the labour of their handes, when  
 they lacke lucca, and of this is made the more vulgar or common breade. It is sowne thrise  
 a yeere, so that the fruitfulnessse of the ground may beare it, by reason of the qualitie  
 of the time, whereof we haue spoken sufficiently before. In these regions they found also  
 the grayne of Maizium, and sundry kyndes of fruites of trees, diligently planted, and well  
 husbanded. The way betwene the regions of Caramairi and Soturna, is layre, broade, and  
 right forth. They founde here also sundry kyndes of water pottes made of earth, of diuers  
 colours, in the which they both setche and keepe freshe water: Lykewise sundry kyndes of  
 ingges, godderdes, drinking cuppes, pottes, pannes, dishes, and platters, artificially made.  
 When the gouernour hadde giuen commaundement by proclamation, that the inhabitants  
 should eyller obey the Christian king, and embrace our religion, or els to depart out  
 of their country: they answered with venemous arrowes. In this skirmish, our menne tooke  
 some of them: whereof, clothing the most parte in layre apparell, they sent them agayne  
 to their owne companie: But leading the residue to the shippes, to the intent to shew them  
 the power and magnificence of the Christians, that they might declare the same to their com-  
 panions, thereby to wyne their fauour, they appareled them lykewise, and sent them  
 after their fellows. They affirme, that in all the ryuers of these coastes, they sawe great  
 argumentes and tokens of golde. They founde here and there in their houses good store of  
 Harts flesh, & Bores flesh, wherewith they fedde themselves delicately. They also haue  
 great plenty of sundry kyndes of birdes, and foules, whereof they bring vpp many in their  
 houses, some for necessarie food, and other for dayntie dyshes, as wee doe Hennes and Par-  
 triches. Our menne hereby conjecture, that the ayre of these regions is very wholesome,  
 forasmuch as sleeping all night vnder the firmament on the bankes of the ryuers, none of  
 them were at any tyme offended with reumes or headache, by reason of any noysome hu-  
 mour, or vapour proceeding from the earth, ayre, or water. Our menne furthermore founde  
 there many great botomes of gossampine cotton ready spunne, and sardelles of dyuers kyndes  
 of feathers, whereof they make themselves crestes and plumes, after the maner of our men  
 of armes: also certaine clokes, which they esteeme as most comely ornaments. They  
 founde likewise an innumerable multitude of bowes and arrowes. The inhabitants also of  
 these regions, in some places vse to burne the carcases of their princes when they are dead,  
 and to reserue their bones buried with spyes in certayne hylles. In other places, they onely  
 drie them, and imbalm them with spyes and sweete gummes, and so reserue them in se-  
 pulchers in their owne houses. Somewhere also, they drie them, spyce them, adourne  
 them with precious iewelles, and ouches, and so reuerently place them in certain taberna-  
 cles, made for the same purpose in their owne pallaces. When our men hadde many of  
 their tablettes, brascelottes, collers, and such other ouches (which they call Guamines) they  
 found them rather to be made of lason then of golde: whereby they suppose that they haue  
 used to exchange their ware with some craftie straungers, which brought them those coun-  
 tryes.

Panicum is a  
 grasse wherewith  
 what like make  
 The Indians call  
 it Maize.

He searcheth the  
 great length of  
 day & night  
 which is contin-  
 ually in regions  
 vnder the Equi-  
 noctiall line.

Hollome 1793.

Oscopioles  
 Cucum.  
 Feathers.

Bowes and  
 arrowes.

Dead beastes re-  
 served.

Some saye, that  
 they see many  
 waynes with  
 the iuyce of a  
 certayn beate.

terfeit oouches, to defraude them of their golde: For euen our men perceined not the deceit vntill they came to the melting. Furthermore, certayne of our builders wandering a litle way from the sea coastes, chanced to find certayne peeces of white marble: whereby they thinke that in time past some strangers haue come to those lands, which haue digged marble out of the mountaines, and left those fragments on the playae. There our men learned that the riuer Maragonas descendeth from the mountaynes covered with snow, called Montes Niuales, or Serra Neuaa, and the same to bee encreased by many other riuers, which fall into it throughout all the lowe and waterly regions, by the which it runneth with so long a tract from the sayd mountaynes into the sea; and this to bee the cause of the greatnesse thereof. These things being thus brought to passe, the gouernour commaunded the trumpeter to blowe a retraite: Whereupon they which were sent to land (being fife hundred in number) making a great shout for ioy of their victory, set themselves in order of battayle, and so keeping their array, returned to the ships laden with spoyle of those prouinces, and shewing in souldiers clokes of feathers, with fayre plumes & crestes of variable colours. In this meane time, hauing repayed their ships, and furnished the same with all necessaries, they leaue stike the xvi. day of the Calendes of Iuly, directing their course to the haven of Carthagena, in the which voyage they destroyed & wasted certayne lands of the Canibales, lying in the way according as they were commanded by the king. But the swift course of the water deceiued both Iohannes Sarramas the chiefe Pilot of the gouernours ship, and al the other although they made their best that they perfectly knew the nature therof: For they affirme that in one night they were carried forty leaguts beyond their estimation.

The sixt Chapter of the thirde Decade.

Here must wee somewhat digresse from Cosmography, and make a philosophical discourse to searche the secret causes of nature. For wher as they all affirme with one consent that the sea runneth there from the East to the Weste, as swiftly as it were a riuier falling from high mountaynes, I thought it not good to let such matter styppe vntouched. The which while I consider, I am drawne into wo small ambiguitie and doubt, whyther those waters haue their course, whiche spue with so continuall a tract in circuite from the East, as though they fledde to the West, neuer to returne, and yet neyther the West thereby any whit the more fylled, nor the East emptied. If we shall say that they fall to their centre (as in the nature of heauie things) and assigne the Equinoctiall lynic, to bee the centre (as some affirme) what centre shall we appoynt to be able to receiue so great abundance of water: Or what circumference shall be found wet: They whiche haue searched those coastes, haue yet founde no like reason to bee true. Many thinke that there should be certayne large strayghtes or entrances in the corner of that great lande, which we described to be eight tymes bigger then Italie, and the corner thereof to bee full of gulfes, whereby they suppose that some strayghtes should passe through the same, lying on the West side of the lande of Cuba, and that the sayde strayghtes shoulde swallowe vp those waters, and so conuoye the same into the West, and from thence agayne into our East Ocean, or North seas, as some thinke. Other will, that the gulfe of that great lande bee closed vpp, and the lande to reache, farre towarde the North on the backe side of Cuba, so that it embrace the North landes, which the frozen sea encompasseth vnder the North pole, and that all the lande of those coastes, should ioyne together as one firme lande: Whereby they coniecture, that those waters should be turned about by the object or resistance of that lande, so bending towarde the North, as we see the waters turned about in the crooked bankes of certayne riuers. But this agreeth not in all poyntes. For they also which haue searched the frozen sea, and sayled from thence into the West, doe likewise affirme, that those North seas flowe continually toward the West, although nothing so swiftly. These North seas haue bin searched by one Sebastian Cabot, a Venetian borae, whom being yet but in manner an infant, his parents caried with them into Englande, hauing occasion to resort thither for trade of marchandize, as is the manner of the Venitians, to leaue no parte of the worlde vntersched to obtayne rycheesse. Hee therefore furnished two shippes in England at his owne charges:

White marble.

The great riuier Maragonas. The spring with the neighbour sheet called Themas Amazon same, found of late.

Clokes of feathers.

The swift course of the water. Fourty leaguts in one night.

Secretly opinions why the sea runneth with so swift course from the East into the West.

The Equinoctiall lynic. Why it water runs towarde the South or Equinoctiall, and Cardines de uolite, libet li. de circulo Arctico.

As by the strength of the pole. The North lande.

The frozen sea.

Sebastian Cabot.

charges: And first with three hundred menne, directed his course so farre towards the North pole, that euen in the month of July he found monstrous heapes of Ice swimming on the sea, and in manner continuall day light: Yet sawe hee the lande in that tracte free from Ice, which hadde beene moulten by heate of the Sunne. Thus seeing such heapes of Ice before him, hee was enforced to turne his styles, and folowe the West, so coasting still by the shore, that he was thereby brought so far into the South, by reason of the lande bending so much southward, that it was there almost equall in latitude with the sea called Fretum Herculeum, hauing the North pole eleuate in manner in the same degree. He sayled likewise in this tract so farre towards the West, that hee hadde the land of Cuba on his left hande, in manner in the same degree of longitude. As hee was troubled by the coastes of this great lande (whiche he named Bacallao) he sayth, that hee founde the like course of the waters toward the West, but the same to run more softly and gentlye, then the swift waters which the Spanyardes founde in their navigations southward. Wherefore, it is not onely more like to be true, but ought also of necessity to be concluded, that betweene both the landes hitherto vnknown there should be certayne great open places, whereby the water should thus continually passe from the East into the West: which waters I suppose to be dryen about the globe of the earth by the vncessant mouing and impulsion of the heauens, and not to be swallowed vp and cast out agayne by the breathing of Demogorgon, as some haue imagined, because they see the seas by increase & decrease, to flow and reflux.

Sebastian Cabot himselfe named those landes Bacallao, because that in the seas therabout hee founde so great multitudes of certayne bygge fyses, much like vnto Tunnies (which the inhabitants call Bacallao) that they sometimes stayed his shippes. Hee founde also the people of those regions covered with beastes skynes: yet not without the vse of reason. He also sayth there is great plentie of Beares in those regions, whiche vse to eate fische: For plunging themselves into the water where they perceiue a multitude of these fyses to lye, they fasten their claws in their scales, and so drawe them to lande, and eate them: So that (as he sayth) the beares being thus satisfied with fische, are not noysome to manne. He declareth further, that in many places of these regions, he sawe great plentie of Iason among the inhabitants: Cabot is my very friende; whom I vse familiarly, and deliight to haue him sometimes keepè mee companie in my owne house: For being called out of Englande by the commandement of the Catholike king of Castile, after the death of Henry King of Englande, the seuenth of that name, hee was made one of our counsaile and assistance as touching the affaires of the new Indies, looking dayly for shippes to be furnished for him: to discover this hidde secret of nature. This voyage is appoynted to be begunne in Marche in the yeere next following, being the yeere of Christe: 1516. What shall succede, your holynesse shall be aduertised by my letters, if God graunt me life. Some of the Spanyardes denie that Cabot was the first finder of the lande of Bacallao, and affirme that hee went not so farre Westward: But it shall suffice to haue sayde thus muche of the gulfes and strayghtes, and of Sebastian Cabot. Let vs nowe therefore retorne to the Spanyardes. At this time, they let passe the hauen of Carthago vntouched, with all the landes of the Canibales therabout, whiche they named Insula Sancti Bernardi, leaving also behinde their backs, all the regions of Carmairi. Heere by reason of a sodayne tempest; they were cast vpon the lande Fortis, being about fiftie leagues distant from the entrance of the gulf of Vraha. In this lande, they founde in the houses of the inhabitants, many baskets made of certayne great sea reedes, full of salt. For this land hath in it many goodly salt bayes, by reason wherof they haue great plentie of salte, which they sell to other nations for such thinges as they stand in neede of. Not farre from hence, a great Carlew, as bigge as a Storke, came flying to the gouernours shippe, and suffered her selfe to be easily taken, which being caried about among all the shippes of the nauie, dyed shortly after: They sawe also a great multitude of the same kinde of fowles on the shore a farr of. The gouernours shippe; which we sayde to haue lost the rudder, being nowe sore broosed, and in manner vprofitable they left behinde, to followe at pleasure. The nauie arryued at Dariena the twelfth day of the Calendes of Iuly, and the gouernours

The voyage of Sebastian Cabot from England to the Indies etc.

Demogorgon is the spirit of the earth.

People covered with beastes skines etc.

The landes of the Canibales. The lande Fortis.

Salte. A great Carlew.

uerours shippe (being voide of men) was driuen alande in the same coastes within foure daies after. The Spaniards whiche now inhabited Dariena, with their Capitaine and Licuetaunt Vaschus Nunnez Balboa (of whom we haue largelic made mention before) being certified of the arriuall of Petrus Arias and his companie, went forth three miles to meete him, and receiued him honorably, and religiously with the psalme Te deum laudamus, giuing thanks to God by whose safe conduct they were brought so prosperously thitherto al their comfortes. They receiued them gladly into their houses builded after the manner of those prouinces. I may well cal these regions, Prouinces, a Proul Victis (that is) such as are overcome farre of, serasmuche as our men do now inhabit the same, al the barbarous kinges and Idolatours being eiected. They entertained them with such cheere as they were able to make them: as with the frutes of those regions, and new bread, both made of rootes and the graine Maizium. Other delicacies to make vp the feast, were of their own store, which they brought with them in their ships, as poudered flesh, salted fishe, and bread made of wheat: for they brought with them many barrellies of wheaste meale for the same purpose. Heere may your holinesse, not without iust cause of admiration, beholde a kinges nauie and great multitude of Christians, inhabiting not only the regions situate vnder the circle of heauen, called Tropicus Canceri, but also in manner vnder the Equinoctiall line, contrarie to the opinion of the olde wryters, a fewe excepted. But after that they are nowe mette together, let vs further declare what they determined to do. Therefore, the day after that the nauie arriued, there assembled a company of Spaniards th inhabitours of Dariena, to the number of foure hundred and fiftie men. Petrus Arias the gouernour of the nauy, and his companie, conferred with them both priuillie and openlie of certaine articles, whereof it was the kinges pleasure he shoulde enquire: and most especially as concerning suche things whereof Vaschus the first finder and Admirall of the South sea; made mention in his large letter sent from Dariena to Spaine. In this inquisition they founde al things to be true whereof Vaschus had certified the king by his letters, and therevpon concluded, that in the dominions of Comogrus, Pocchorroza & Tumanama, at the assignement of Vaschus, certaine fortresses shoulde be erected forthwith, to thintend there to plant their colonie or habitation. To the better accompyshment hereof, they sent immediatly one Johannes Aiora, a noble young gentle man of Corduba, & vnder Lieutenant, with foure hundred men, and foure Carauels, and one other litle ship. Thus departing, he sailed first directly to the haue of Comogrus, distant from Dariena about twentie and fawe leagues, as they write in their last letters. From hence, he is appointed to sende a hundred and fiftie of his foure hundred, towarde the South, by a newe and righter way founde of late, by the whiche (as they say) it is not past twentie and sixe leagues from the pallace of king Comogrus to the entrance of the gulfe of Sancti Michaelis. The residue of the foure hundred shal remaine there, to be an aide and succour to al such as shall iorney to and fro. Those hundred and fiftie whiche are assigned to go southwarde, take with them for interpreters certain of our men, which had learned the soothern language of the bondmen which were giuen to Vaschus when he ouerran those regions, & also certaine of the bondemen themselves which had nowe learned the Spanishe tongue. They say that the haue of Pocchorroza is only seuen leagues distant from the haue of Comogrus. In Pocchorroza he is assigned to leaue fiftie men, with the lightest ship, which may be a passer betweene them: that like as we vse post horses by land, so may they by this currant ship, in short space certifie the Lieutenant and th inhabitours of Dariena of such things as shal chaunce. They extend also to build houses in the region of Tumanama. The pallace of king Tumanama, is distant fro Pocchorroza about twenty leagues. Of these foure hundred men, being of the olde souldiers of Dariena, & men of good experience: fiftie were appointed to be as it were Decurians, to guide and conduct the newe men from place to place to do their affaires. When they had thus set all things in order, they thought it good to aduertise the king hereof, and thierwith to certifie him, that in those prouinces there is a king named Dabalua, whose dominion is verie riche in gold, but the same to be yet vntouched by reason of his great power. His kingdome joincth to the second great riuier, named Dabalua after his name, whiche falleth into the sea

How Vaschus  
receiued the  
newe gouernour.

Habitable ref-  
erred vnder the  
Equinoctiall line.

Where the new  
gouernour sent  
with his habita-  
tion.

A passer ship.

Decurians are  
officers which  
keep traine &c.

The gold mine  
of Corduba.

out of the corner of the gulfe of Vraha, as we haue largely declared before. The common report is, that all the land of his dominions is ryche in golde. The pallace of King Dabaiba is fyfthe leagues distant from Dariena. The inhabitants say, that from the pallace, the gold mynes reach to the borders on euery side. Albeit our menne haue also golde mynes not to bee contemned, euen within three leagues of Dariena, in the which they gather golde in many places at this present: Yet do they affirme greater plentie to bee in the mynes of Dabaiba. In the bookes of our first fruites, written to your holinesse, we made mention of this Dabaiba, wherein our men were deceiued, and mystooke the matter: For where they founde the fyshermen of king Dabaiba in the maryshes, they thought his region had bene there also. They determined therefore to sende to king Dabaiba, three hundred choyse young men, to be chosen out of the whole armie, as most apt to the warres, and well furnished with all kyndes of armour and artillerie, to the intent to go vnto him, and will him, eytler friendly and peaceably to permit them to inhabite part of his kingdome, with the fruition of the golde mynes, or els to bidde him battayle, and driue him out of his country. In their letters, they oftentimes repeate this for an argument of great ryches to come, that they in a manner dygged the ground in no place, but founde the earth myxt with sparkes and small graynes of golde. They haue also aduertised the king, that it shal bee commodious to place inhabitours in the hauen of Sancta Martha, in the region of Saturna, that it may be a place of refuge for them that sayle from the lande of Dominica, from the whiche (as they say) it is but foure or fise dayes sayling to that hauen of the region of Saturna, and from the hauen, but three dayes sayling to Dariena. But this is to bee vnderstoode in going and not in returning. For the returning from thence is so laborious and difficulte, by reason of the contrary course of the water, that they seeme as it were to ascende hyge moontaynes, and stryue agaynste the power of Neptanus. This swift course of the sea towards the West, is not so violent to them whiche returne to Spayne from the Ilandes of Hispaniola and Cuba, although they also doe labour agaynst the fall of the Ocean: The cause whercof is, that the sea is beere very large, so that the waters haue their full scope. But in the tract of Paria, the waters are constrained together by the bending sides of that great lande, and by the multitude of Ilandes lying against it, as the like is seene in the straghtes or narrow seas of Scicilia, where the violent course of the waters cause the dangerous places of Scilla and Caribdis by reason of those narrow seas which conteyne Ionium, Libicum, and Tirrhennum. Colonus the firste finder of these regions, hath left in wryting, that sayling from the lande of Guanaxoa, and the prouinces of Iala, Maia, and Cerabaro, being regions of the West marches of Beragua, he founde the course of the water so vehement and furious agaynst the foreparte of his shippe, while he sayled from those coastes towards the East, that he coulde at no time touche the ground with his sounding plummet, but that the contrarie violence of the water woulde beere it vpper from the bottome: Hee affirmeth also, that hee coulde neuer in one whole day, with a meetely good winde, wyne one myle of the course of the water. And this is the cause why they are oftentimes enforced to sayle first by the Ilandes of Cuba and Hispaniola, and so into the mayne sea towards the North, when they returne to Spaine, that the North wyndes may further their voyage, whiche they cannot bring to passe by a direct course: But of the motions of the Ocean sea to and fro, this shall suffice. Let vs nowe therefore rehearse what they write of Dariena, and of their habitation there, which they call Sancta Maria Antiqua, planted on the sea banks of Dariena. The situation of the place, hath no natural munition or defence, & the aire is more pestiferous then in Sardus. The Spanishe inhabitours are all pale and yelow, like vnto them which haue the yelowe iaundies: which neuertheless commeth not of the nature of the region, as it is situate vnder the hauen. For in many regions being vnder the selfe same degree of latitude, hauing the pole of the same eleuation, they find holsome & temperate ayre, in such places wher as the earth bringeth forth fayre springes of water, or where holsome riuers runne by banks of pure earth without mudd: but most especially where they inhabite the sides of the hills, and not the valleys. But that habitation whiche is on the banks of the ryuer of Dariena, is situate in a deepe valley, and enuironed

An error.

The region of Saturna. The Ilande of Dominica.

Difficulte sayling agaynst the course of the sea.

The dangerous straghtes of Scylla and Charybdis.

The violent course of the sea from the East to the West.

By what means  
the Sunne  
beames are so  
of feruent heat.

The pernicious  
ayre of Dariena

Toades are  
regarded of  
deeps of water.

Necessity hath  
no lawe.

A house set on  
for each light-  
ning.

A dogge de-  
voured of a  
Crocodile.  
Tygers are  
deuoured  
of Lions.

Lions and  
Tygers.

Beastes were  
brought in  
to the  
land.

on euery side with high hilles: By reason whereof, it receiueth the Sunne beames at noonetyde directly perpendicular ouer their heades, and are therefore sore vexed by reflection of the beames, both before, behinde, and from the sides. For it is the reflection of the sunne beames whiche causeth feruent heate, and not their access or recerence to the earth, forasmuch as they are not possible in themselves, as doth manifestly appear by the snowe lying continually vnmoulted vpon certayne high mountaynes, as your holinesse knoweth right well. The sunne beames therefore falling on the mountaynes, are reflected downwarde into the valley, by reason of the obiecte of the declining sides of the hylles; as it were the fall of a great rounde stone, rowled from the toppc of a mountayne. The valley therefore receiueth both those beames whiche fall directly thereon, and also those whiche are reflected downwarde from euery side of the mountaynes. Their habitation therefore in Dariena, is pernicious and vnwholesome, onely of the particular nature of the place, and not by the situation of the region as it is placed vnder the heauen, or neere to the sunne. The place is also outrageous by the nature of the soyle, by reason it is compassed about with muddie and stinking maryshes, the infection whereof is not a little increased by the heate: The village it selfe is in a marishe and in manner a standing puddle, where, of the droppes falling from the handes of the bondemen, while they water the paucementes of their houses, Toades are engendered immediately, as I my selfe sawe in another place the droppes of that water turne into flies in the Sommer season. Furthermore, wheresoeuer they digge the ground the depth of a handfull and a halfe, there springeth out vnwholesome and corrupt water, of the nature of the ryuer, whiche runneth through the deepe and muddy chanell of the valley, and so falleth into the sea: Now therefore they consult of remoouing their inhabitations. Necessity caused them first to fasten their soote heere, because that they whiche first arryued in those Landes, were oppressed with suche vrgent hunger, that they hadde no respect to change the place, although they were thus vexed by the contagion of the soyle and heate of the Sunne, beside the corrupt water, and infectious ayre, by reason of venomous vapours, and exhalations rysing from the same. An other great incommodiety was, that the place was destitute of a commodious haven, being three leagues distaunt from the mouth of the gulf: The way is also rough and difficult to bring victualles and other necessaries from the sea. But let vs nowe speake somewhat of other particular things which chanced. Therefore shortly after that they were arryued, there happened many things whereof they hadde no knowledge before. A certayne well learned phisition of Ciuike, whom partly the authoritie of the Byshop of Dariena, and partly the desire of golde, had allured to those Landes, was so scarred with lightning in the night season, lying in bedde with his wife, that the house and all the stuffe therein being set on fire and burnt, hee and his wife being sore scorched, ranne forth crying, and almost naked, hardly escaping the danger of death. And another time as certayne of them stode on the shore, a great Crocodile sodenly carryed away a mastie of a ycere and a halfe olde, as a kyte shoulde haue snatched vp a chicken: and this curen in the presence of them all, where the miserable dogge cryed in vaine for the helpe of his maister. In the nyght season they were tormented with the byting of bates, whiche are there so noysome, that if they bite any man in his sleepe, they putte him in danger of life, onely with drawing of bloude: In so much that some haue dyed thereof, falling as it were into a consumption through the maliciousnesse of the venomous wounde. If these Battyge chauce to finde a cocke or a henne abroad in the night season, they byte them by the comber, and so kil them. They also whiche went last into these dominions, do write, that the lande is troubled with Crocodiles, Lions, and Tygers: but that they haue nowe deuised artes and engins how to take them. Likewise that in the houses of their fellows, they founde the hides and cases of such Lions and Tygers as they hadde killed. They write furthermore, that by reason of the ranknesse and fruitfulnessse of the grounde, kync, swyne, and horses, doe maruiculously increase in these regions, and growe to a muche bygger quantitie then they whiche were of the first broode. Of the exceeding hignesse of the trees with their fruites, of the garden herbes, fruites, plantes, and seedes, which our men brought from Spaine, and sowed and set the same in these regions: likewise of the Hartes and

and other foure footed beastes both tame and wilde, also of diuers kindes of fowles, birdes, and fishes, they write euen as wee haue declared in the decades before. Careta, the king of the region of Cioba, was with them for the space of three daies: whom when they had friendly entertained, and shewed him the secreete places of their shippes, their Horse<sup>s</sup> also, with their trappers, bards, and other furniments, beside many other things whiche seemed straunge to him, and had further delighted his minde with the harmony of their musical instruments, & giuen him many rewardes, they dismissed him halfe amased with too much admiration. He signified vnto them, that there are trees in that prouince, of the plankes Nota. whereof if shippes were made, they shoulde be safe from the woormes of the sea, whiche they call Bromas. Howe these woornes gnawe and corrode the shippes, we haue declared before.

Our shippes are greatly troubled with this plague, if they lie long in the hauens of these regions. But they affirme that the wood of this tree is so bitter, that the woormes will not taste thereof. There is also an other tree peculiar to these landes, whose leaues if they onely touche the bare in any place of a mans body they cause great blisters, and those so malicious, that except the same be forthwith healed with salte water or fasting spittle, they do incontinently engender deadly paines. They say likewise, that the sauour of the wood is present poison, and that it can no whither be caried without daunger of life. When

the inhabitants of the lande of Hispaniola had oftentimes attempted to shake of the yoke of seruitude, and coulde neuer bring the same to passe, neither by open warre, nor yet by priuite conspiracies, they were determined in the night season to haue killed our men in their sleepe with the smoke of this wood: But when the Christian men had knowledge hereof, they compelled the poore wretches to confesse there intent, and punished the chiefe authours of the deuice. They haue also a certaine herbe with the sauour wherof they are preserved from the hurt of this venomous wood, so that they may beare it safely. Of these

small things it shall suffice to haue saide thus much. They looke dayly for many greater things to certifie vs of from the llandes of the South sea: For at such time as the messenger whiche brought our letters departed from thence, Petrus Arias prepared an expedition to that riche lande which lieth in the mouth of the gulfe called Sinus S. Michaelis, and reacheth into the South sea, being also left vntouched of Vaschus, by reason that the Sea was at that time of the yeere sore troubled with tempestes, as we haue further declared in Vaschus his voiage to the South. Wee looke therefore dayly for greater things then are hitherto past. For they haue now taken in hande to subdue manie other prouinces, which we suppose to be either very riche or to bring forth some straunge workes of nature. Iohannes Diaz Solisius of Nebrissa (of whom we haue made mention before) is sent by the front of the cape or point of Sancti Augustini (which reacheth seuen degrees beyonde the Equinoctial line, and pertaineth to the dominion of the Portugales) to thintent to ouerrunne the South side, from the backe halfe of Paria, Cumana, Caquibacca, with the hauens of Carthago, and Sancta Martha, of Dariena also, and Beragua, that more perfect and certaine knowledge may be had of those tractes. Further more, one Iohannes Poncius was sent forth with three shippes, to destroy the Canibales, both in the lande and llandes there about: aswell that the nations of the more humane & innocent people may at the length liue without feare of that pestiferous generation, as also the better and more safely to searche the secretes and riches of those regions. Many other likewise were sent diuers and sundrie waies, as Gasper Badaocias to search the West partes, Franciscus Bexerra, to saile by the corner of the gulfe and Valleys, to passe by the mouth or enterance thereof to the East coastes of the gulfe, to searche the secretes of the lande, in the which Fogeda with his company had of late begun to plant there habitation, and had builded a fortresse and a village, Badaocius departed first from Dariena, with foure-score souldiours well appointed, whome Lodouicus Mercado followed with fiftie: To Bezerra were also fourescore assigned, and threescore and tenne to Valleys.

Whether they shall arrive at safe and commodious hauens, or fall into vnfortunate stations, he onely knoweth whose prouidence ruleth all: for as for vs men wee are included within the knowledge of things after they haue chaunced. Let vs nowe therefore come to other matters.

Broma or Bissa are woormes which destroy shippes. A venomous tree.

Perhaps their venomous arrows are made of this wood.

A preservative against poison.

The llands of the South sea.

The rich lland called Dians.

Cap. mcccii. An expedition to destroy the Canibales.

Of the evil manner of these voyages, see the decade, p. 3. Lib. 9.

An expedition to destroy the Canibales.

Looke decade 3. Lib. 9.

## The seuenth Chapter of the thirde Decade.

The nauigation  
of Andrae  
Moraka.
**P**ETrus Arius the gouernour of the supposed cōtinent, was scarcely entred into the mayne sea with his nauie, onwarde on his voyage to Dariena, but I was aduertised that one Andrae Moralis a pilot, who had oftentimes ouerrun the coastes of these newe seas, and the llandes of the same, was come to the court to sel such marchandies as he brought with him from thence. This man had diligently searched the tracte of the supposed continent, and especially the inner regions of the llande of Hispaniola, whereunto hee was appointed by his brother Nicolaus Ouandus (the gouernour of the llande, and chiefe Commendator of the order of the knights of Alcantara) because he was a wittie man, and more apt to search such things then any other: so that with his owne handes hee drewe fayre cardes and tables of such regions as hee discovered. Wherein as he hath beene founde faithfull of such as haue since had better triall hereof, so is he in most credite amongst the best sort. He therefore resorted to me, as all they are accustomed to do which returne from the Ocean. What I learned of him & diuers other, of things heretofore vnknown, I will now declare. The beginning of this narration, shall be the particular description of the llande of Hispaniola, forasmuche as it is the heade, and as it were, the principall parte of all the liberality of the Ocean, and hath a thousand & againe a thousand, faire, pleasant, beautifull, & rich Nereides, whiche lye about it on euery side, adorning this their lady & mother, as it were an other Tethis the wife of Neptunus enuyroning her about, & attēding vpō her as their queene & patronesse. But of these Nereides (that is to say, the llandes plac'd about her) wee will speake more hereafter. Lette vs in the meane tyme declare somewhat of the llande whiche our menne named Margarita Diues (which the Spanyardes call *De las perdas*) being nowe well knowne, and lying in the South sea in the gulfe called *Sinus Sancti Michaelis* (that is) saint Michaels gulfe. This llande hath presently brought to our knowledge many straunge and wonderfull things, and promiseth no small hope of greater things in tyme to come. In this is founde great plenty of pearles, so fayre and great, that the sumptuous queene Cleopatra might haue seemed to weare them in her crownes, chaynes, and brasletttes. Of the shellfishes wherein these are engendred, we wil speake somewhat more in the end of this narration. But let vs nowe returne to Hispaniols, moste like vnto the earthly paradise. In the description hereof, wee will beginne of the imposition of diuers names, then of the fourme of the llande, temperate ayre, and beneficiall hauen, and finally of the deuision of the regions. Therefore for the righte pronounciation of the names, your holines must vnderstand that they are pronouncd with the accent, as you may know by the verge set ouer the heads of the vowels, as in the name of the llande *Matinino*, where the accent is in the last vowel, and the like to bee vnderstoode in all other names. They say therefore, that the first inhabitours of the llande were transported in their Canoas (that is, boates made of one whole peece of woode) from the llande of *Matinino*, being lyke banished men dryuen from thence by reason of certaine contrarie factiōs and diuisions among themselues, like as we reade howe *Dardanus* came from *Corytho*, and *Teucus* from *Creta* into *Asia*, and that the region where they plac'd their habitation, was afterward called *Troianum*. The like wee reade howe the *Tyrians* and *Sidonians* arriued with their navy in *Libya* by the fabulous conduction of *Dido*. These *Matinians* in like maner being banished from their owne country, planted their first habitation in that parte of the llande of *Hispaniola*, which they call *Cahonao*, vpon the bank of the ryuer named *Bahaboni* as is reade in the beginnyng of the Romans that *Aeneas* of *Troy* arriued in the regio of *Italie*, called *Latiū*, vpon the bankes of the riuer of *Tiber*. Within the mouth of the ryuer of *Bahaboni*, lyeth an lland, where it is sayd that the inhabitantes builded their first house, whiche they named *Camotētia*. This house they consecrated shortly after, and honoured the same reuerently with continuall giftes and monumentes, euen vntill the comming of our menne, like as the Christians haue cuer religiously honoured *Hierusalem* the fountayne and originall of our fayth: As also the *Turkes* attribute the like to the citie of *Mecha* in *Araby*, and the inhabitantes of the fortunate llandes (called the llandes of *Canarie*) to *Tyrma*, builded vpon a hygh rocke, from the whiche manie were wont with

A particular description of the llande of Hispaniola. Nereides are symboles of the sea, he meaneth llandes. Tethis the wife of Neptunus & goddes of the sea.

Great pearles.

Hispaniola like vnto the earthly Paradise.

The first inhabitants of Hispaniola.

Jerusalem.

Mecha. The llandes of Canarie.

ioyfull

joyfull myndes and songes to cast themselves downe headlong, being perswaded by their priestes that the soules of all such as so died for the Ioue of Tyrma, shoulde thereby enjoye eternall felicitie. The conquerors of the Ilandes of Canarie, founde them yet remayning in that superstition euen vntill our tyme, nor yet is the memorie of their sacrifices vntill worne away: the rocke also reneweth the olde name vnto this daye. I haue also learned of late, that there yet remayneth in the Ilande some of the faction of Betanchor the Frenche manne, and first that brought the Ilandes to good culture and ciuillite, being thereto lyceenced by the king of Castile, as I haue sayde before. These do yet (for the most part) obserue both the language and maners of the Frenche menne, although the heyres and successors of Betanchor, had sold the two subdued Ilands to certayne men of Castile: Yet the inhabitants which succeeded Betanchor, & builded them houses, and increased their families there, do continue to this day, and liue quietly and pleasantly with the Spanyardes, not grued with the sharpe colde of France. But let vs nowe returne to the inhabitantes of Matiniao and Hispaniola. The Ilande of Hispaniola was first named by the first inhabitants Quizqueia, and then Haiti: and this not by chance, or at the pleasure of suche as deuised these names, but of credulitie and beleefe of some great effecte. For Quizqueia, is as muche to say as, A great thing, and that so great, that none may bee greater. They interprete, also, that Quizqueia signifieth large, vniuersall, or all, in like signification as the Greekes named their God called Pan, because that for the greatnes thereof, these simple soules supposed it to bee the whole worlde: and that the Sunne beames gaue light to none other world, but onely to this Ilande, with the other adiacent about the same, and thereupon thought it most woorthie to be called great, as the greatest of all other knowne to them. Haiti is as much as to say by interpretation, as rough, sharpe, or craggie. But by a figuratiue speache called denomination (whereby the whole is named by parte) they named the whole Ilande Haiti (that is) rough: Forasmuch as in many places the face of this Ilande is rough, by reason of the craggie mountaynes, horrible thicke woodes, and terrible darke and deepe valleys, enuironed with great and high mountaynes, although it bee in manie other places exceeding beautifull and flourishing. Here must wee somewhat digresse from the order we are entred into. Perhaps your holinesse will maruell by what meanes these simple men shoulde of so long continuance beare in minde such principles, whereas they haue no knowledge of letters. So it is therefore, that from the beginning, their princes haue euer beene accustomed to commit their children to the gouernance of their wise men, which they call Boitlos, to be instructed in knowledge, and to beare in memorie suche thinges as they learne. They giue themselves chiefly to two thinges: As generally, to learne the originall and success of thinges, and particularly, to rehearse the noble factes of their grandfathers, great grandfathers, and ancestours, aswell in peace as in warre. These two thinges they haue of old time composed in certayne meeters and ballettes in their language. These rymes or ballettes, they call Arcitos. And as our minstrelles are accustomed to sing to the Harpe or Lute, so do they in like manner sing these songs, and daunce to the same, playing on Timbrels made of shels of certayne fishes: These Timbrels they call Maguei. They haue also songs and ballettes of loue, and other of Lamentations and mourning, some also to encourage them to the warres, with euery of them their tunes agreeable to the matter. They exercise themselves much in dauncing, wherein they are very active, and of greater agilitie then our men, by reason they giue themselves to nothing so much, and are not hindered with apparell; which is also the cause of their swiftnesse of foote. In their ballettes left them of their ancestours, they haue prophecies of the coming of our menne into their country. These they sing with mourning, and as it were with groning, bewayle the losse of their libertie & seruitude. For these prophecies make mention that there shoulde come into the Iland Maguachochios, that is, men clothed in apparell, and armed with suche swordes as shoulde cutte a man in sunder at one stroke, vnder whose yoke their posteritie should be subdued. And here I do not maruell that their predecessours coulde prophecie of the seruitude and bondage of their succession. (if it be true that is sayd) of the familiaritie they haue with spirites, which appeare to them in the night, whereof we haue largely made mention in the ninth chapter of

Betanchor a Frenchman.

The first name of Hispaniola.

Their manner of learning.

Ballets and rymes. Singing and dauncing. Songs of loue and mourning.

Prophecies. Note.

Their familiaritie with spirites.

the first decade, where also we haue intreated of their Zemes (that is) their Idoles, and images of deuilles whiche they honoured. But they saye that since these Zemes were taken away by the Christians, the sprites haue no more appeared. Our men ascribe this to the signe of the crosse, wherwith they defende themselves from such sprites: For they are nowe all cleansed and sanctified by the water of baptisme, wherby they haue renounced the deuil, & are consecrated the holy members of Christ. They are vniuersally stouidous to knowe the bondes and limits of their regions and Kingdomes, and especially their Mitani (that is) noble men: so that euen they are, not vterly ignorant in the surveying of their landes. The common people haue none other care then of selling, sowing, and planting. They are most expert fishers, by reason that throughout the whole yeere, they are accustomed dayly to plunge themselves in the ryuers, so that in manner they liue no lesse in the water then on the lande. They are also giuen to hunting: For (as I haue sayd before) they haue two kindes of foure footed beastes wherof the one is, little Comies, called Vsias, and other Serpentes, named Iuannas, much like vnto Crocodiles, of eight foote length, of most pleasant taste, and lying on the sande. All the llandes nourish innumerable byrdes and foules: as Stockdoues, Duckes, Geese, Hearons, beside no lesse number of Poppingayes then Sparrowes with vs. Euery King hath his subiectes diuided to sundry affaires: as some to hunting, other to fishing, and other some to husbandrie. But let vs nowe returne to speake further of the names. Wee haue sayde that Quizqueia and Haiti, were the olde names of this llande. The whole lland was also called Cipanga, of the region of the mountaynes abounding with golde: lyke as our auncient poets called all Italic Latium, of part thereof. Therefore as they called Ausonia and Hesperia, Italy: euen so by the names of Quizqueia, Haiti, and Cipanga, they vnderstood the whole lland of Hispaniola. Our men did first name it Isabella, of Queene Helisabeth, whiche in the Spanishe tongue is called Isabella, and so named it of the first Colony where they planted their habitation, vpon the banke nere vnto the sea on the North side of the llande, as we haue further declared in the first Decade. But of the names, this shall suffice. Let vs nowe therefore speake of the forme of the llande. They which first ouerranne it, described it vnto me to be like vnto the leafe of a Chesnut tree, with a gulfe towards the West side, lying open agaynst the llande of Cuba: But the expert shippmaister Andreas Moraks, brought me to the forme thereof somewhat differing from that. For from both the corners, as from the East angle and the West, he described it to be indented and eaten with many great gulfes, & the corners to reache forth very farre, and placeth manie large and safe haues in the great gulfe on the East side: But I trust shortly so to trauale further herein, that a perfect carde of the particular description of Hispaniola may be sent vnto your holiness. For they haue now drawne the Geographical description thereof in cartes, euen as your holiness hath seene the fourme and situation of Spayne, and Italy, with their mountaynes, valleyes, riuers, cities, and colonies. Let vs therefore without shamefastness compare the lland of Hispaniola to Italic, sometime the head and Queene of the whole worlde. For if we consider the quantitie, it shall bee founde little lesse, and much more fruitfull. It reacheth from the East into the West, fute hundred and fourtie myles, according to the computation of the latter searchers, although the Admirall somewhat increased this number, as wee haue sayde in the first Decade. It is in breadth somewhere almost three hundred myles, and in some places narrower, where the corners are extended: But it is surely much more blessed and fortunate then Italic, being for the most parte thereof so temperate and flourishing, that it is neither vexed with sharpe colde, nor afflicted with immoderate heate. It hath both the staynges or conernions of the Sonne (called Solstitia) in manner equall with the Equinoctiall, with little difference betweene the length of the day and the night throughout all the yeere. For on the South side, the day ascendeth scarcely an houre in length aboue the night, or contrariwise. But the difference is more on the North side: Yet are these some regions in the llande in the which the colde is of some force. But your holiness must vnderstande this to bee incident by reason of the obiect or pcereness of the mountaynes, as we will more largely declare hereafter: Yet is not this colde so pearsing or sharpe, that the inhabitants are molested

The deuil is  
driven away by  
baptisme.

Serpentes.

Serpentes.  
A Crocodile is  
much like to  
our Foxe or  
Lynx.

Cipanga.

Italic called  
Latium.

Isabella.

The forme of  
the land of  
Hispaniola.

A particular  
carde of His-  
paniola.

Hispaniola com-  
pared to Italic.

The tempera-  
ture of Hispan-  
iola.

The Equinoctiall.

Colde accidental,  
and not by the  
situation of the  
regions.

molested with snow or byling frost. In other places, the lande enjoyeth perpetuall spring time, and is fortunate with continuall sommer and harvest. The trees flourish there all the whole yeere, and the meddowes continue alway greene. All thinges are exceeding fortunate, and growe to great perfection: Howe wonderfully all garden hearbes and fruites do encrease, so that within the space of sixteene dayes after the seede is sownen, all hearbes of small steames, as lettise, borage, radishe, and such other, come to their full ripenesse, and also how hearbes of the bigger sort, as Gourdes, Melons, Cucumbers, Pompons, Sitrones, and such other, come to their perfection in the space of thirte dayes, we have sufficiently declared els where. Of the beastes transported out of Spayne thither, we have said how they growe to a much greater kinde: Insomuch that when they fall into communication of the oxen or kine, they compare them in bignesse to Elephantes, and ayne to Mules: but this somewhat by an excessive kinde of speech. Wee have also made mention howe their swines fleshe is more savorie and of farre better and more pleasant tast, and more wholesome then ours, by reason that they are fedde with the fruites of Mirobalane trees, and other pleasant and nourishing fruites of that country, which growe there of themselves, as doe with vs Beeches, Holly, and Okes. Vines woulde also prosper there with maruoilous encrease, if they hadde any regard to the planting thereof. The like encrease cometh of wheate, if it be sownen vpon the mountains, where the cold is of some strength: but not in the same plaines, by reason of too much fatnesse and ranknes of the grounde. It is in manner incredible to heare, that an eare of wheate should be bigger then a mans arme in the browne, and more then a span in length, bearing also more then a thousand graynes, as they all confesse with one voyce, and earnestly affirme the same with others. Yet they say that the bread of the lande called Cazabbi, made of the roote of lucca, to be more holsonie, because it is of easier digestion, and cultured with lesse labour, and greater increase. The residue of the time which they spend not in setting and planting, they bestowe in gathering of golde. They have noye such plentie of soure footed beastes, that Horses and oxe hydes, with sheepe skinned, and goats skinned and such other, are brought from thence into Spaine: so that nowe the daughter in many things helpeth and succoureth her mother. Of the trees of brayle, spices, the graine which coloureth scarlet in bright shyning red, mastix, Gossampine cotton, the precious metall called Electrum, & such other commodities of this lande we haue spoken sufficiently before. What therefore canne chance more happy vnto man vpon the earth, then thereto lyue where he need not to be dryuen to close chambers with sharpe colde or faynting heate, nor yet in winter eyther to be laden with heauie apparel, or to burne the shinnes with continuall sitting at the fire, which thinges make men olde in short time, by resoluing the natural heate, whereof a thousand diseases ensue. They also affirme the ayre to be very healthfull, and the waters and ryuers to be no lesse holsonie, as they whiche haue their continuall course through the earth of the golden mynes. For there is in manner no ryuers, no mountaynes, and but fewe playnes, that are vnto without golde. But lette vs nowe at length come to the particular description of the inner partes of this blessed lande. Wee haue before declared how it is in manner equally diuided with foure great ryuers, descending from hygh mountaynes, whereof that which runneth towards the East, is called Inuma, as that towards the West is named Attibunicus, the thirde is Nabiba or Haiba, whiche runneth Southward, the fourth is called lache, and falleth towards the North. But this shypmaister hath brought another description, obserued of the inhabitants from the beginning. Let vs therefore diuide the whole land in to foue partes, calling the regions of euery prouince by their olde names: and finally make mention of such thinges as are worthy memory in euery of them. The beginning of the lande on the East side, is contained in the prouince named Caizcimu, so named for that in their language Cimu signifieth the front or beginning of any thing. After this, followeth the prouince of Hababa, and then Caibabo, the fourth is Baimoa. Guacairima containeth the West corner. But the last was one, Baintoa is of larger boundes then the three other. Caizcimu reacheth from the first front of the lande to the riuier Hozama, which runneth by the citie of saint Dominicke. But towards

Propressall  
spring and  
summer.

Miraculous  
increaseth

Beastes

Oxen and wine  
of exceeding  
bignesse.

Swine fed with  
Mirobalanes.

An eare of  
wheate as big  
as a mans arme in  
the browne.

Great plenty of  
cattell.

Inconueniencies  
of his temperate  
regions.

Holsonie ayre  
and water.  
Little euery  
where.

The citie of  
s. Dominick.

the North side, it is ended at the rough mountaines of Haiti. Hubabo is included within the mountaines of Haiti and the river Iaciga. Caiabo the third province, containeth al that lieth between Cubabo and Dahatio, euen vnto the mouth of the river Iaccha or Iache (one of the foure which diuide the Iland equally) & ascendeth to the mountaines of Cibaua, where the greatest plentie of gold is founde, 'out of the which also the river Demalus springeth, and joining with the springes of the river of Nsiba (being an other of the foure which diuideth the Iland toward the South sea) falleth to an other bank of the river of saint Dominick. Bainaou beginneth at the confines of Caiabi, and reacheth euen vnto the Iland of Cabini, which lieth neare vnto the sea bankes of the North side of the Ilande, where we saide that they erected the first colonie or habitatio. The prouince of Guaccaiarima, occupieth the remanēt towards the West: this they named Guaccaiarima because it is the extreame or vttermost part of the Iland. For Iarima in their language, signifieth the taile or end of any thing, and Gua, is an article which they vse oftentimes in the names of things, and especially in the names of their kinges, as Guarionexius & Guaccanarillus. In the prouince of Carizium, are these regions, Higueti, Guanama, Reyre, Xagua, Aramana, Arabo, Hazoa, Macoric, Casaco, Guaiagua, Bquanimabo, & the rough mountaines of Haiti. Here let vs speake somewhat of their aspirations, which they vse otherwise then the Latines do. It is to be noted that there is no aspiration in their vowels, which haue not the effect of a consonant. So that they pronounce their aspirations more vehemently then we do the consonant *f*. Yet, all suche words as in their tongue are aspirate, are pronounced with like breath and spirite as is *f*, sauing that herein the neather lippe is not moued to the yppermost teeth. With open mouthes, and shaking their breastes they breathe out these aspirations, ha, he, hi, ho, hu, as the Hebrewes and Arabians are accustomed to pronounce theirs. I finde also that the Spaniards vse the like vehemencie in the aspirations of those wordes, which they haue receiued of the Moores & Arabians which possessed Spaine, and continued there many yeeres, as in these wordes Almohada, which signifieth a pillow or boustre, also Almohaza, that is a horse comb: with diuers such other wordes, which they speake in manner with panting breathes, & vehement spirites. I haue thought it good to rehearse these things, because among the the Latines it oftentimes so chaunceth, that only the accent or aspiration, chaunceth the signification of the worde, as hora, for an houre, and ora, for the phrall number of this worde or, whiche signifieth the mouth: also ora, whiche signifieth regions or coastes. The like also chaunceth in the diuersitie of the accent, as occido I kü, & occido I sal: euen so in the language of these simple men, there are many things to be obserued. But let vs now returne to the description. In the prouince of Hubabo, are these regions, Xamano, Canabaco, Cubabo, with many other, the names whereof I haue not yet learned. The prouince of Cuthabo, containeth these regions, Migua and Cacaubana. The inhabitants of this region, haue a peculiar language much differing from the common language of the Iland, and are called Maiorixes. There is also an other region called Cubana, whose language differeth from the other. Likewise the region of Baiohagua, hath a diuers tongue. There are also other regions, as Dalabon, Cybabo, and Manababo. Cotoy is in the middle of the Ilande. By this runneth the river Nizau, and the mountaines called Mathajin, Hazua, & Neibaymao, confine with the same. In the prouince of Bainaou, are 3 regions of Manguana, Jagohaitcho, Baurucco, Dabaigua, & Attibniti, so named of the river, also Cannoa, Buiaci, Dalabonici, Maioguariti, Atici, Maccaxini, Gualabba, Amimici, Maric, Guaricó, Antaguei, Xoragua, Yaguana, Azuei, Iacchi, Honorucco, Diagno, Camaie, & Neibaimao. In Guaccaierima the last prouince, these regions are contained Mauciaro, Guabagua, Taquenazabo, Nimaca, Baiona the lesse, Cabani, Ianaici, Manabaxao, Zauana, Habacoa, and Ayquior. But let vs entreate somewhat of the particulars of the regions. In the prouince of Chizeima, within the great gulfe of the beginning, there is a great caue in a hollow rocke vnder the roote of a high mountaine, about two furlonges from the sea, the entry of this caue is not much vnylike the doores of a great temple, being very large, and turning many wayes. Andreas Moralis the shypmaister at the commandement of the gouernour, attempted to search the caue with the smallest vessels. He sayth that by certayne priue wayes

Of prouinces  
divided into  
regions.

The pronuncia-  
tion of the  
Hebrewes and  
Arabians.  
The Moores  
and Arabians  
possessed  
Spaine.

How the aspi-  
ration chaunceth  
the signification  
of wordes.

Diuers lan-  
guages in the  
Iland.

ways many ryuers haue conourse to this caue, as it were: a synke or chanel. After the experience hereof, they ceased to maruaile whither other ryuers ranne, which comming fourscore & ten myles were swallowed vp, so that they appeared no more, nor yet fel into the sea by any knowne ways. Nowe therefore they suppose that ryuers swallowed vp by the hollow places of that stony mountayne, fall into this caue. As the shypmaister entred into the caue, his shippe was almost swallowed. For he sayth, that there are many whirlpooles and rystings or boylings of the water, which make a violent conflict and horrible roryng, one encountring the other: also many huge holes and hollow places, so that what on the one side with whirlpooles, and on the other side with the boyling of the water, his shyppe was long in manner tossed vp and downe like a ball. It greatly repented him that he had entred, yet knew he no way how to come forth. He now wandred in darknesse aswell for the obscurenesse of the caue into the which hee was farre entred, as also that in it were thick clouds, engendred of the moist vapours proceeding of the conflict of the waters, which continually fall with great violence into the caue on euery side. Hee compared the noyse of these waters, to the fall of the famous riuer Nilus from the mountains of Ethiope, they were also deaf, that one could not heare what another saide. But at the length with great danger and feare, he came forth of the caue, as it had bene out of hell. About threescore myles distant from the chiefe citie of Saint Dominicke, there are certayne hygh mountaynes, vpon the toppes whereof is a lake or standing poole inaccessible, neuer yet scene of the which came lately to the Ilande, both by reason of the roughnesse of the mountaynes, and also for that there is no path or open way to the toppes of the same. But at the length the shipmaister being conducted thither by one of the kinges, ascended to the toppes of the mountaynes, and came to the poole. He sayth that the colde is there of some force: and in token of winter, he founde fearne and bramble bushes, which two growe only in colde regions. These mountaynes, they call Ymuzi Hibabaino. This poole is of fresh water three myles in compass, and wel-replenished with diuers kinds of fishes. Many small riuers or brooks fall into it. It hath not passage out, because it is on euery side enclosed with the toppes of mountaynes. But let vs now speake of another poole, which may well be called a sea in the mydlande, and bee compared to the Caspian or Hircanian sea in the firme lande of Asia, with certayne other lakes and pooles of freshe water.

## The eyght Chapter of the third Decade.

The prouince of Banoa being thrise as bigge as the three first, that is Caizimu, Vhabo, and Caibabo, includeth a velley named Caiotani, in the which there is a lake of salt, sower and bytter water, as we reade of the sea called Caspium, lying in the firme lande betwene Sarmatia and Hircania. We haue therefore named it Caspium, although it bee not in the region of Hircania. It hath many swallowing gulfs, by the which, both the water of the sea springeth into it, & also such as fall into it from the mountayns are swallowed vp. They thinke that the caues thereof, are so large and deepe, that great fishes of the sea passe by the same into the lake. Amongst these fishes, there is one called Tiburonus, which cutteth a man in sunder by the myddest at one snap with his teeth, and deuoureth him. In the ryuer Hozama, running by the chiefe citie of Saint Dominicke, these Tiburonos doe sometymes come from the sea, and deuoure many of the inhabitantes: especially such as do dayly plunge themselves in the water, to the intent to keepe their bodies very cleane. The riuers, which fall into the lake, are these. From the North side Guanibacon: From the South, Xaccoci: From the East, Guannabo: And from the West, Ocoa. They saie that these riuers are great and continuall, and that beside these, there are xx. other small riuers which fall into this Caspium. Also on the North side within a furlong of the lake, there are about two hundred springes, occupying likewise about a furlong in circuite, the water whereof is colde in sommer, freshe also, and holsome to be drunke. These springes make a riuer that can not bee waded ouer, which neare at hande ioining with the other, falleth into the lake. Here must we staie a while. The kinge of this region founde his wife praying in a Chapell builded by the Christians within the precincte of his dominion, and required her company

The Indians  
language.

pany to satisfie his fleshly lust. His wife reprov'd him, and put him in remembrance to haue respect to the holy place. The wordes which she spake to him were these, Teitoca, Teitoca, which is as much to say, as, be quiet, be quiet. Techeta cynato guamechyna: That is God will be greatly angry. Guamechyna, signifieth God, Techeta greatly, Cynato angric. But the husbande haling her by the arme, saide, Guajibba, that is, goe, Cynato macabuca guamechyna: That is, What is that to me if God be angry? And with these wordes as he profered her violence, sodenly he became darme and lame. Yet by this myracle being stricken with repentance, he euer after ledde a religious life, insomuche that from thenceforth he would neuer suffer the Chapell to be sweep't or deckt with any other mans hande. By the same myracle, many of thinshabitantes, and all the Christians being moued, resorted deuoutly to the Chapell. They take it in good parte that the king suffered the reuenge of that reproche. Let vs now returne to Caspium. That salte lake is tossed with stormes and tempestes, and oftentimes drowneth small shippes or fisher boates, and swaloweth them vp with the mariners: In so muche that it hath not been hearde of, that any man drown'd by shippewracke, euer plung'd vp againe, or was cast on the shore, as commonly chaunceth of the dead bodies of suche as are drown'd in the sea. These tempestes, are the daintie banquetes of the Tibarones. This Caspium, is called Haguwigahou. In the myddst hereof, lyeth an lland named Guarizacca, to the which they resort when they go a fishing: but it is now cultured. There is in the same playne, an other lake next vnto this, whose water is mixte of salt and fresh, and is therefore neither apt to be drunke, nor yet to be refused in vrgent necessitie: This containeth in length twentie and fure miles, and in breadth eight miles, in some places also nine or ten. It receiue many riuers, which haue no passage out of the same, but are swallowed vp as in the other. Water springeth out of the sea into this also: but in no great quantitie, which is the cause that it is so commixt. In the same prouince towards the West side, there is an other lake of freshe water, not farre disaunt from Caspius: this the inhabitantes call Iainagua. The same salte lake hath on the North side thereof, an other named Guacca: this is but litle, as not past three or foure miles in breadth, and one in length, the water of this may well be drunke. On the South side of the salt lake, there lieth an other named Babbareo, of three miles in length, and in maner rounde: the water of this is freshe, as of the two other. This lake, because it hath no passage out; nor yet any swallowing gulfes, conueieth the superfluous waters to the sea if it be encreas'd with the streames which fall sometimes more abundantly from the mountaines: There is in the region of Xamana in the prouince of Baina. There is an other called Guaniba, lying betwene the East and the South, neere vnto the side of Caspius: this is ten miles in length, and almost rounde. There are furthermore many other small standing pooles or lakes dispersed here and there in the llande, whiche I will let passe, lest I should be tedious in remaining too long in one thing. I will therefore make an ende with this addition, that in all these great plenies of fishe and foule is nourished. All these lakes lie in a large plaine, the which from the East reacheth into the West a hundred and twentie myles, being of breadth xvii. miles where it is narrowest, and. xxv. where it is largest. Looking toward the West, it hath collaterally on the left hand the mountaines of Daiguani, and on the right hand, the mountains of Gaigua, so called of the name of the vale it selfe. At the roots of the mountaynes of Caigua towards the North side, there lyeth an other vale much longer and larger then that before named: For it containeth in length almost two hundred myles, and in breadth thirtie where it is largest, and about. xx. where it is narrowest. This vale in some parte thereof, is called Maguana, in an other place, Iguaniu, and els where, Hathathici. And forasmuch as we haue here made mention of this parte of the vale named Hathathici, wee will somewhat digresse from the discourse of this description, and entreate of a thing so straunge and marueilous, that the lyke hath not bene heard of. So it is therefore, that the king of this region named Coramantexius, taketh great pleasure in fishing. Into his nettes chaunc'd a young fysh of the kinde of those monsters of the sea, which the inhabitous called Manati, not founde I suppose in our seas, nor knowne to our men before this tyme. This fishe is foure footed, and in shape lyke

A king writes  
dame and  
lame by a  
myracle.

Such as are  
drown'd in the  
lake are not  
cast vp againe.

A lake of salt &  
freshe water.

A lake of freshe  
water.

A lake of ten  
miles in length.

A plaine of a  
hundred and  
twenty miles.

A plaine of two  
hundred miles  
in length.

The marrey  
bees fysh  
Manati.

vnto

vnto a Tortoyse, although shee be not couered with a shell, but with scales, and those of such hardnesse, & couched in such order that no arrow can hurte her. Her scales are beset and defended with a thousand knobbes, her backe is playne, and her head vterly like the head of an Ox. She liueth both in the water, & on the land, shee is stowe of moving, of condition meeke, gentle, associable, and loving to mankinde, and of a marueilous sence or memory, as are the Elephant and the Delphyn. The king nourished this fish certayne daies at home with the bread of the countrey, made of the root of lucca & Panycke, and with such other roots as men are accustomed to eate: For when shee was yet but young, hee cast her into a poole or lake neere vnto his pallace, there to beeed with hande. This lake also receiueth waters, and casteth not the same forth againe. It was in tyme past called Guarabo: but is nowe called the lake of Manati, after the name of this fische, which wandered safely in the same for the space of xxv. yeeres, and grewe exceeding bigge. Whatsoeuer is written of the Delphines of Baian or Arion, are much inferiour to the dooinges of this fische, which for her gentle nature they named Matum, that is, gentle, or noble. Therefore whensoever any of the kinges familiers, especially such as are knowne to her, resorte to the bankes of the lake, and call Matum, Matum, then shee (as mindfull of such benefites as shee hath receiued of men) flieth vp her head, and cometh to the place whither shee is called, and there receiueth meate at the handes of suche as feede her. If aunc desirous to passe ouer the lake, make signes and tokens of their intent, she boweth her selfe to them, therewith as it were gently inuiting them to amount vpon her, and conueyeth them safely ouer. It hath bene scene, that this monstrous fish hath at one tyme safely carryed ouer twene men singing and playing. But if by chance when shee lifted vp her head she espied any of the Christian men, she would immediately plunge downe againe into the water, and refuse to obey, because shee had once receiued iniurie at the handes of a certayne wanton young manne among the Christians, who hadde cast a sharpe darte of her, although shee were not hurte, by reason of the hardnesse of her skinned, being rough and full of scales and knobbes, as wee haue sayde: Yet did shee beare in memorie the iniurie shee susteyned, with so gentle a reuenge requiting the ingratitude of him, which had dealt with her so vngentlely. From that day whensoever shee was called by any of her familiars, she would first looke circumspectly about her, least any were present apparelled after the maner of the Christians. Shee woulde offence play and wraiste vpon the banke with the Kinges chamberlens, and especially with a young man whom the King fauoured well, being also accustomed to feede her. Shee woulde be sometimes as pleasant and full of play as it had bene a monkey or marmoset, & was of long tyme a great comfort and solace to the whole land: For no small confluence aswel of the Christians as of the inhabitantes, hadde daily concoured to behold so strange a myracle of nature, the contemplation whereof was no lesse pleasant then wonderfull. They say that the meate of this kinde of fische, is of good tast, and that many of them are engendred in the seas thereabout. But at the length, this pleasant play-fellowe was lost, and carryed into the sea by the great ryuer Attibunicus, one of the foure whiche diuide the lande: For at that tyme there chanced so terrible a tempest of wynde and rayne, with such floods ensuing, that the lake hath not lightly bene heard of. By reason of this tempest, the ryuer Attibunicus so overflowed the banks, that it filled the whole vale, and mixt it selfe with all the other lakes: at which tyme also, this gentle Matum and pleasant companion, following the vehement course & fall of the floods, was thereby restored to his olde mother and natyue waters, and since that tyme neuer scene agayne. Thus hauyng digressed sufficiently, let vs nowe come to the situation of the vale. It hath collaterally the mountaynes of Cibana and Caiguana, which bring it to the South sea. There is an other vale beyonde the mountaynes of Cibana towards the North, this is called the vale of Guaronexius, because that before the memorie of man, the predecessours & auncestours of king Guaronexius, to whom it is descended by ryght inheritance, were euertie Lordes of the whole vale. Of this king, wee haue spoken largely in the first narration of the lande in the first Decade. This vale is of length from the East to the West, a hundred and fourescore myles, and of breadth from the South to the North, thirtie myles where it is narrowest, and fiftie where it is broadest. It beginneth from the region Canabocca by the prouinces of

A monster of  
the sea fild  
with esse  
hande.

A fish carryth  
men ouer the  
lake.

A maruelous  
thing.

The ryuer  
Attibunicus.

The great vale  
of Guaronexius.

Huhabo

Huabao and Caiabo, and endeth in the province of Banoa; and the region of Mariena: it lyeth in the middelt betwene the mountaynes of Cibaua, and the mountaynes of Cahonai & Caxacubana. There is no province nor any region; which is not notable by the maiestie of mountaynes, fruitfulnessse of vales, pleasantnesse of hilles, and delectableness of playnes, with abundance of faire ryuers running through the same. There are no sides of mountaynes or hilles, no riuers, which abound not with golde and delicate fishes, except only one riuier, which from the original thereof, with the springes of the same breaking forth of the mountaynes, commeth out salt, and so continueth vntill it perish: This riuier is called Bsbuan, and runneth through the middle of the region Maguana, in the province of Banoa. They suppose that this ryuer hath made it selfe a way vnder the grounde, by some passages of playster, or solte earth: for there are in the Ilande many notable salte bayes, whereof wee will speake more hereafter. Wee haue declared howe the Ilande is diuided by foure ryuers, and fyue promontues. There is also another partition, which is this, the whole Ilande consisteth of the toppes of foure mountaynes, which diuide it by the myddest from the East to the West: in all these is abundance of nourishing moysture, and great plentie of golde, of the canes also of the which, the waters of all the ryuers (into the which the caues empty themselves) haue their originall and increase. There are likewise in them horrible demies, obscure and darke vales, and mightie rockes of stone. There was neuer any noy-some beast founde in it, nor yet any rauening foure footed beast: no Lion, no Beare, no fierce Tygers, no craftie Foxes, nor deuouring Woolues. All thinges are blessed and fortunate, & now more fortunate, for that so many thousands of men are receiued to bee the sheepe of Christs flooke, all their Zemes and Images of deuilles beinge reiected and vterly out of memorie. If I eliaunce nowe and then in the discourse of this narration to repeat one thing diuers tymes or otherwise to make digression, I must desire your holynesse therewith not to bee offended: For whyle I see, heare, and wryte these thinges, mee seemeth that I am heerewith so affected, that for very ioy I feele my minde stirred as it were with the spirite of Apollo, as were the Sibilles, whereby I am enforced to repeat the same agayne: especially when I consider howe farre the amplitude of our religion spreadeth her wynges. Yet among these so many blessed and fortunate thinges, this one grieueth mee not

*Golde is all mountaynes, and golde and salt in all ryuers.*

*Solte Bayes.*

*The ryuers haue their issues from the caues of the mountaynes. No hartall or rauening beast is the Ilande.*

● *The ryuers receiue.*

*By what means the people of the Ilande are greatly increased.*

*The pleasures of Hispaniola.*

*The region of Caxacubana is the chiefe of high mountaynes. A plaine in the loppes of mountaynes. The higher the colder. Moderate colde in the mountaines.*

*Golde.*

a little: that these simple poore men, neuer brought vp in labour, doe dayly perishe with intollerable trauaile in the golde mynes, and are thereby brought to such desperation, that many of them kill themselves, hauing no regarde to the procreation of children: insomuch that women with child, perceiving that they shall bring forth suche as shall bee slaves to the Christians, vse medicines to destroy their conception. And albeit that by the Kinges letters patentes it was decreed that they should be set at libertie: yet are they constrained to serue more then seemeth conuenient for free men. The number of the poore wretches is wonderfully extenuate, they were once reckened to bee about twelue hundred thousand heades: but what they are now, I abhorre to rehearse. We will therefore let this passe, and returne to the pleasures of Hispaniola. In the mountaynes of Cibaua, which are in manner in the middelt of the Ilande, in the province of Caiabo (where we sayd to bee the greatest plentie of natyue gold) there is a region named Cotobi, situate in the cloudes, enuironed with the toppes of high mountaynes, and well inhabited: it consisteth of a playne of xxx. miles in length, and xv. in breadth. This plaine is higher then the toppes of other mountaynes: so that these mountaynes may seeme to bee the chiefe progenitors of the other. This playne suffereth alterations of the foure tymes of the yere, as the Spring, Sommer, Autumne, and winter. Heere the herbes waxe withered, the trees loose their leaues, and the meadowes become hoare: the which things (as we haue saide) chaunce not in other places of the Ilande, where they haue only the Spring and Autumne. The soyle of this plaine bringeth forth ferne and bramble bushes, bearing blacke berries, or wilde raspies, which two are tokens of colde regions: Yet is it a faire region, for the colde thereof is not very sharpe, neither doeth it afflict the inhabitants with frost or snowe. They argue the fruitfulnessse of the region by the ferne, whose stalkes or stummies are bigger then a speare or laurell. The sides of those mountaynes are riche in golde, yet is there none appointed

appointed to digge for the same, because it shalbe needefull to haue appparelled miners, and such as are vsed to labour: For thinhabitants liuing contented with little, ear and tender, and can not therefore away with labour, or abide any colde. There are two riuers which runne through this region, and fall from the toppes of the present mountaines: One of these is named Comoiayxa, whose course is towarde the West, and falleth into the channell of Naiba: the other is called Tircotus, which running towarde the East, ioineth with the riuier of Junna. In the Ilande of Creta (now called Candie) as I passed by in my legacic to the Soldane of Alcair or Babilon in Egypt, the Venetians tolde mee, that there lay such a region in the toppes of the mountaines of Ida, which they affirme to be more fruitefull of wheate corne then any other region of the Ilande: But forasmuch as once the Cretences rebelled against the Venetians, and by reason of the streight and narrow way to the toppes thereof, long defended the region with armes against thauthoritie of the Senate, and at the length, being foreweried with warres, rendred the same, the Senate commaunded that it should be left desarte, and the streightes of thentraunces to be stopped, least any should ascend to the region without their permission. Yet in the yere of Christ M. D. ii. licence was granted to the husbände men to till and manure the region, on such condition, that no such as were apte to the warres might enter into the same. There is also an other region in Hispaniola, named Cotoby, after the same name: this diuideth the boundes of the prouinces of Vbabo and Caiabo: It hath mountaines, vales, and plaines: but because it is barren, it is not much inhabited: Yet is it richest in golde, for the originall of the abun-daunce of golde be-ginneth herein, in somuch that it is not gathered in small graines and sparkes, as in other places: but is founde whole, massie, and pure, mong certaine softe stones, and in the vaines of rockes, by breaking the stones whereof, they folowe the vaines of golde. They haue founde by experience, that the vaine of golde is a liuing tree, and that the same by all waies that it spreadeth and springeth from the roote by the softe pores and passages of the earth, putteth forth branches, euen vnto the vppermost parte of the earth, and ceaseth not vntill it discover it selfe vnto the open aire: at which time, it sheweth forth certaine beautifull colours in the steede of floures, rounde stones of golden earth in the steede of fruites: and thinne plates in steede of leaues. These are they which are disperced throughout the whole Ilande by the course of the riuers, eruptions of the springes out of the mountaines, and violent fallies of the flooddes: For they thinke that such graines are not engendred where they are gathered, especially on the drie land, but otherwise in the riuers. They say that the roote of the golden tree extendeth to the center of the earth, and there taketh nourish-mēt of increase: For the deeper that they dig, they finde the trunkes thereof to be so much the greater, as farre as they may folowe it for abun-daunce of water springing in the mountaines. Of the branches of this tree, they finde some as small as a thread, & other as bigge as a mans finger, according to the largenesse or straightnesse of the riftes and cliftes. They haue sometimes chaunced vpon whole caues, sustained & borne vp as it were with golden pillers, and this in the waies by the which the branches ascende: the which being filled with the substance of the trunke creeping from beneath, the branche maketh it selfe waie by which it maie passe out. It is oftentimes diuided by encountering with some kinde of harde stone: Yet is it in other cliftes nourished by the exhalations and vertue of the roote. But nowe perhaps you will aske me what plenty of golde is brought from thence. You shall therefore vnderstand, that onely out of Hispaniola, the summe of foure hundred, and sometimes fise hundred thousande ducates of golde is brought yeerely into Spayne: as may bee gathered by, the fiftth portion due to the Kings Exchequer, which amounteth to the summe of a hundred and fourescore, or fourescore & tenne thousande Castellanes of golde, and sometymes more. What is to be thought of the Ilande of Cuba and Sancti Iohannis (otherwise called Burichena) being both very rich in golde, we will declare further hereafter: to haue sayde thus much of golde, it shall suffice. We will now therefore spake some-what of salt, wherewith wee may season and reserue such thinges as are bought with golde. In a region of the prouince of Baimoa, in the mountaynes of Daiaguoa, about twelue myles distant from the salt lake, called Caspius, there are salte bayes in the mountaynes, in a

The Thraucers of Hispaniola can abide no labour nor colde.

The floures of Creta or Candie, vnder the dominion of the Venetians.

Parte and steede golde is the region of Cretoby. The vaine of golde is a liuing tree.

These colours of floures are called Mirachana.

The roote of the golde tree.

The branches of the golde tree. Cliftes intertized with pillers of golde.

The steeres of the golde mines.

What golde is brought, yeerely from Hispaniola into Spayne.

Salt of the mountaynes very hard and cleare.

maner as harde as stones, also clearer and whiter then crystal: There are likewise such salt boyes, which growe wonderfully in Laletania (nowe called Catalania) in the territorie of the duke of Cadana, the chiefe ruler in that region: but such as knowe them both, affirme that these of Baïnoa are most notable. They say also, that this cannot bee clef without wedges and boettles of Iron: But that of Laletania may easily bee broken; as I my selfe haue proued. They therefore compare this to suche stones as may easily be broken, and the other to marble. In the prouince of Caizima, in the regions of Iguanama, Caizeco, and Gwariagua, there are springes whose waters are of marcyulous nature, being in the superficiall or vppermost parte freshe, in the midst, myxte of salte and freshe, and in the lowest parte salte and soure. They thinke that the salt water of the sea issueth out softly, and the freshe to spring out of the mountaynes: The one falleth downe, and the other ryseth, and are not therefore so vnconcerally myxte, whereby the one may vterly corrupt the other. If any manne lay his care to the grounde neere to any of these springes, hee shall perceiue the grounde there to bee so hollow, that the rebounding noyse of a horseman coming, may bee heard for the space of three myles, and a footeman one myle. In the last region toward the South, named Guaccarima, in the lordship of Zauma, they say there are certayne wild men, which liue in the cajes and denes of the mountaynes, contented only with wyld frutes: These men neuer vsō the company of any other, nor will by any means become tame. They lyue without any certayne dwelling places, and without tyllage or culturyng of the grounde, as wee reade of them whiche in olde tyme lyued in the golden age. They say also that these men are without any certayne language: They are sometymes seene, but our menne haue yet layde handes on none of them. If at any tyme they come to the sight of men, and perceiue any smaking towards them, they flee swifter then a Harro: Yea, they affirme them to bee swifter then Grehounds. What one of these solitarie wanderers dyd, it is worth the hearing. So it is, that our men hauing granges adioyning neere vnto the thicke woods, certayne of them repayed thither in the moneth of September, in the yeere M.D.xiii. in the meane tyme, one of these wyld men camd leaping out of the woode, & approaching somewhat towards them with smyling countenance; suddenly snatched vpe a childe of theirs, being the sonne of the owner of the grange, which he begot of a woman of the Ilande: He ranne away with the childe, and made signes to our men to followe him: Many followed, as well of our men, as of the naked inhabitants, but all in vayne. Thus when the pleasant wanderer perceiued that the Christians ceased to pursue him, hee left the chylde in a crosse way by the which the swyneheards were accustomed to dryue the swyne to their pasture. Shortly after, a swynehearde founde the childe, and brought him home to his father; yet tormenting himselfe for sorrowe, supposing that wyld man to haue bene one of the kinde of the Canibales, and that his sonne was nowe deuoured. In the same Ilande they gather pych, whiche sweateth out of the rockes, being much harder and souer then the pych of the tree, and is therefore more commodious to calke or defende shyppes agaynst the wormes called *Bromas*, whereof wee haue spoken largely beefore. This Ilande also bringeth forth pych in two kyndes of trees, as in the Pyne tree, and another named *Copia*. I neede not speake of the Pyne tree, because it is engendred and knowne in manner euery where. Let vs therefore speake somewhat of the other tree called *Copia*. Piche is likewise gathered of it, as of the Pyne tree, although some say that it is gathered by distilling or dropping of the woode when it is burnt. It is a strange thing to heare of the leafe thereof, and howe necessary prouision of nature is shewed in the same. It is to bee thought that it is the tree, in the leaues whereof the Chaldeans (being the first finders of letters) expressed their mynde beefore the vsō of paper was knowne. This leafe is a spanne in breadth, and almost rounde. Our men write in them with pynces or needles, or any such instrumentes made of metall or wood, in maner as well as on paper. It is to bee laughd at, what our men haue perswaded the people of the Ilande as touching this leafe. The simple soules beleue, that at the commaundement of our men, leaues doe speake and disclose secretes. They were brought to this credulitie by this meanes. One of our monne dwelling in the cite of Dominica, the chiefe of the Ilande, deliuered to his seruant (being a man

borne

Salt is hard as  
stone.Springes of salt,  
fresh and souer  
water.Hollow caves in  
the ground.Certayne wild  
men liuing in  
caves and  
denes.Men without a  
certayne lan-  
guage.A man is seene  
as swifter  
as Grehounds.A wilde man  
repayeth very  
with a childe.Pitch of the  
rocke.Pitch of two  
kinde of trees.  
The Pyne tree.  
The tree *Copia*.The leafe of a  
tree is the meane  
of paper.They beleue  
that leaues do  
speake.  
A pious man.

borne in the llande) certayne rosted Conies (whiche they call Vtias, heeing no bygger then myse) willing him to carie the same to his friends, whiche dwelt further within the llande. This messenger, whether it were that he was thereto constrained through hunger, or entayed by appetite, deuoured three of the Conies by the way. Hee to whom they were sent, wrote to his friends in a leafe how many he received. When the maister hadde looked a while on the leafe in the presence of the seruant, hee sayde thus vnto him, Ah sonne, where is thy fayth? Could thy greedie appetite preuaile so much with thee, as to cause thee to eate the Conies committed to thy fidelitie? The poore wretche trembling and greatly amased, confessed his fault, and therewith desired his maister to tell him howe he knewe the truth thereof. This leafe (quoth he) which thou broughtest mee, hath tolde me all. Then he further rehearsed vnto him the houre of his coming to his friends, and lykewise of his departing when hee returned. And thus they merily deceiue these seely-soules, and keepe them vnder obedience: insomuche that they take our men for gods, at whose commaundement leaues do disclose such thinges as they thinke most hid and secrete. Both the sides of the leafe receiue the fourmes of letters, euen as dooth our paper. It is thicker then double parchment, and maruelous tough. While it is yet florishyng and newe, it sheweth the letters white in greene, and when it is drie, it becommeth white and harde, like a table of woode, but the letters waxe yellowe: It dooth not corrupt or putrifie, nor yet loseth the letters though it bee wet, nor by any other meanes, except it bee burnt. There is another tree named Xagua, the iuyce of whose soure apple, being of a darke redde colour, stayneth and coloureth whatsoever is touched therewith, and that so firmly, that no washing can take it away for the space of twentie dayes. When the apple is full ripe, the iuyce looseth that strength. The apple is eaten, and of good tast. There is an hearbe also, whose smoke (as wee haue rehearsed the like beefore of a certayne wood) is deadly poyson. On a tyme when the Kinges assembled together, and conspired the destruction of our men, where as they durst not attempt the interprise by open warre, their deuise was, priuily to lay many bundels of those hearbes in a certayne house, which shortly after they intended to set on fire, to the intent that our men, making hast to quench the same, might take their death with the smoke thereof: But, their purposed practise being bewrayed, the authours of the deuise were punished accordingly. Nowe (most holy father) forasmuche as your holinesse wryteth, that whatsoever we haue written of the nowe worlde, doth please you right well, wee will rehearse certaine thinges out of order, but not greatly from our purpose. Of the setting the rootes of Maizium, Ages, Iucca, Battaras, and such other, being their common food, and of the vse of the same, we haue spoken sufficiently before: But by what meanes they were first applied to the comodity of men, we haue not yet declared. Wee nowe therefore entende to entreate somewhat heereof.

#### The ninth Chapter of the thirde Decade.

They say that the first inhabitours liued contented with the rootes of Dates, and Magucans, which is an hearbe, much like vnto that whiche is comonly called Sengrene or Orpin: also the rootes of Guaiegans, which are round and great, muche like vnto puffes of the earth or mushroomes. They did likewise eate Gusieros, like vnto Pennips, Cibaiois like Nuttes, Cibaioes and Macoanes, like vnto Onions, with diuerse other such rootes. They say that after many yeeres, a certaine Boition, that is, a wise olde man, saue vpon the bankes syde a bush like vnto fenell, & transplanting the root thereof, brought it from wilderness to a better kinde, by nourishing it in gardens. This was the beginning of Iucca, which at the first was deadly poyson to all such as did eate thereof rawe. But for as much as they perceiued it to be of pleasant taste, they determined many wayes to proue the vse thereof, and at the length found by experience, that being sodde, or fryed, it was lesse hurtfull: by which meanes also, they came to the knowledge of the venome lying hyd in the iuyce of the roote. Thus by drying, salting, seasoning, and otherwise temperyng it, they brought it to their fyne bread, which they cal Casabibi, more delectable and holsome to the stomacke of man then bread made of wheate, because it is of easier digestion. The same is to be vnderstoode of

Ignorance causeth administration.

The leafe whereon they write.

A strange colour of the iuyce of an apple.

An hearbe whose smoke is poyson.

The kindes of fruites wherewith the Indians keepe their food fast.

Necessitie the number of all men.

The fyne bread Casabibi, made of the rootes of Iucca.

These Ceres  
have founded the  
wheate & barley  
is 277.

The vnder of  
Ages

The vnder  
of  
Ages

These

By what names  
they salute the  
King child  
when they see  
him.  
The names and  
styles of the Ro-  
mane Emper-  
ours.

other roots, and the grayne of Maizium, whiche they haue chosen for their chiefe meate among the seedes of nature, as we reade howe Ceres the daughter of Saturnus, gathered wheate and barley (with such other corne as are now most in vse among men) in Egypt, of certayne graynes taken out of the muddle dryen from the mountains of Ethiopia by the increate of the ryuer Nilus; & left in the playne at such time as Nilus resorted agayne to his chanell. For the which fact, we reade that the antiquitie gaue diuine honour to Ceres, who first nourished and increased suche chosen seeds. There are innumerable kindes of Ages, the varietie whereof, is knowen by their leaues and flowers. One kinde of these, is called Gnanagax, this is white both without and without. An other named Guaraguei, is of violet colour without, and white within. The other kindes of Ages, they call Zazaucios, these are redde without and white within. Squimetes, are white within, redde without. Tunna, is altogether of violet colour. Hobas is yelowse both of skinne and inner substance. There is another named Atibunieix, the skinne of this is of violet colour, and the substance white. Aniguamar, hath his skinne also of violet colour, and is white within. Guaccancea, hath a white skinne, and the substance of violet colour. There are many other which are not brought to vs. But I feare me least in the rehearsal of these, I shall prouoke the spurres of malicious persons against me, which wil scorne these our doings, for that wee haue written of many such small things, to a Prince occupied in such weyghtie affayres, as vnto your holinesse, vpon whose shoulders resteth the burden of the whole Christian worlde. But I woulde aske of these malicious enuyers of other mens traualles, whether Phinix and such other famous writers, when they directed and dedicated such things to kinges and Princes, entended onely to profit them to whom they consecrated the fruit of their knowledge. They sometymes interayxt famous things with obscure things, light with heauie, and great with small, that by the furtherance of Princes, their vniuersall posteritie might enioye the fruition of the knowledge of things. At other times also being content about particular things, and desirous of new things, they occupied themselves in searching of particular tractes and coastes, with such things as nature brought forth in the same, by this meanes to come the better to more absolute and vniuersall knowledge. Let them therefore contemne our doing, and we will laugh to scorne not their ignorance and slouthfulnesse, but pernicious curiosnesse: and therewith hauing pytie of their forwarde dispositions, will committe them to the venomous Serpentes of whome enuie tooke his first originall. It shall in the meane tyme abundantly content vs, that these thynges doe please your holynesse, and that you doe not deapye our simple veatures, wherewith wee haue only weaned together, and not adourned, gathered, and not described, such marueilous thynges, in the garnyshing wherof, nature hath sufficiently shewed her cunning. Our desire is none other herein, but for your sake to doe our endeavour that these things may not peryshe: let every man take heereof what lyketh him best. Of the sheepe or bullocke solde in the market, nothing remaineth in the evening, because the shoulder pleateth one, the legge another, and the necke another: yea some haue most phantasie to the bowelles, and some to the feete. Thus hauing enough wandered, lette vs returne to our purpose, and declare with what words they salute the Kinges children when they are first borne, and how they apply the beginning of their liues to the end, and why their kinges are called by many names. Therefore when the King hath a sonne borne, suche as dwell neere about his pallace or village, repayre to the queenes chamber, where one salueth the newe borne child with one name, and another with another name. God saue the thou shining lampe, sayth one: Another calleth him, bright and cleare. Some name him the victourer of his enemies: and other some, the puissant conquerour descended of bloud royall, and brighter then golde: with diuers other suche vayne names. Therefore like as euery of the Romane emperours was called Adiabenicus, Parthicus, Armenicus, Dacicus, Gothicus, and Germanicus, according to the titles of their parents and auncesters: euen so by the imposition of names intended by other kinges, Bechicus Anacacoa the lord of the region of Xaragua (of whom and of the wise woman Anachaona his sister, we haue spoken largely in the first Decade) was called by all these names following, Tiroigua Hobin, which is as much to saye as, a king shining as bright as lalon, Starci, that is, bright, Huibo, high-  
ness,

ness, Duiheynequia, a rich fould. With all these names, and more then fourtie other such, doth king Beuchius magnifie himselfe as often as hee commandeth any thing to be done, or causeth any proclamation to be made in his name. If the cryer by negligence leaue out any of these names, the king thinketh it to sounde greatly to his contumely and reproche: The like is also of other. Howe fondly they vse themselves in making their testaments, wee will nowe declare. They leaue the inheritance of their kingdomes to the eldest sonnes of their eldest sisters. If shee fayle, to the eldest of the seconde syster, and so of the thirde if the seconde also fayle: For they are out of doubt that those children come of their bloude, but the children of their owne wyues, they counte to be not legitimate. If there remaine none of their sisters children, they leaue the inheritance to their brothers: and if they fayle, it descendeth to their owne sonnes. Last of all, if all these fayle, they assigne it to the worthiest, as to him that is of greatest power in all the llande, that hee may defende their subiectes from their ancient enemies. They take as many wyues as they lysteth. They suffer the best beloved of the kinges wyues and concubines to be buried with him: Anachona the sister of Beuchius the king of Xaragua, being a woman of such wisdome and cunning, that in making of rymes and ballettes shee was counted a prophetisse among the best, commanded, that among all the wyues and concubines of the King her brother, the fayrest (whose name was Guanahatabenechina) should be buried aliuie with him, and two of her wayting maydes with her: Shee would surely haue appointed diuers other to that office, if shee had not bene otherwise perswaded by the prayers of certayne fryers of saint Francaes order, which chaunced then to bee present. They say that this Guanahatabenechina had none in all the llande comparable to her in beautie. Shee buried with her all her Jewels, and twentie of her best ornaments. Their custome is, to place beside euery of them in their sepultures, a cuppe full of water, & a portion of the fyne bread of Cazzabi. In Xaragua, the region of this king Beuchius, and in Hazna, part of the region of Caiabo, also in the fayre vale of salte and freshe lakes, and lykewise in the region of Yaguimo in the prouince of Banoia, it rayneth but seldome: In all these regions are fosses or trenches made of olde tyme, whereby they conuey the water in order to water their fieldes, with no lesse art then doe the inhabitours of newe Carthage, and of the kingdom of Murcien in Spartaria for the seldome fall of rayne. The region of Maguens, diuideth the prouince of Banoia from Baiabo, and Zanana from Guacaciarima. In the deepe vales, they are troubled with rayne more often then needeth. Also the confines of the chiefe cite, named S. Dominike, are moister then is necessarie. In other places, it raineth moderately. There are therefore in the lland of Hispaniola, diuers and variable motions of the elements, as we reade the like of many other regions. Of their colonies or mansions which the Spaniards haue erected in this lland, we haue spoken sufficiently before. They haue since that time builded these villages, Portus Platæ, Portus Regalis, Lares, Villanoua, Azuam, and Salua Terra, Hauing saide thus much of the lland of Hispaniola, the mother and lady of the other llandes, and as it were Tethys the most beautifull wife of Neptunus the God of the sea, let vs nowe entreate somewhat of her Nymphes and fayre Nereides, which waite vpon her, and adorne her on euery side. We will therefore begin at the nearest, called the newe Arethusa, so named of the fountaine Arethusa in the lland of Sicilie. This is famous by reason of a spring, but otherwise vnprofitable. Our men named it lato Dupas Arborea, because it hath onely two trees growing in it: neere vnto the which is a fountaine that cometh from the lland of Hispaniola through the secreete passages of the earth vnder the sea, and breaketh forth in this lland, as the riuier Alphus in Achaia runneth vnder the sea from the cite of Elde, and breaketh forth in the lland of Sicilie in the fountaine Arethusa. That the fountaine of this newe Arethusa, hath his originall from the llande of Hispaniola, it is manifest heereby, that the water issuing out of the fountaine bringeth with it the leaues of many trees whiche growe in Hispaniola, and not in this lland. They saie that the fountaine hath his originall from the riuier Yiamiro, in the region of Guacaciarima, conuoying with the llande of Zanana. This llande is not past a mile in circuite, and commodious for fishermen. Directly towards the East (as it were the porter keeping the entrie to Tethis) lieth the lland

Howe they make their testaments.

So did great Alexander.

The kinges wyues & concubines are buried with him.

They burie their Jewels with them.

A Cuppe of water & a portion of the fyne bread.

Where it rayneth but seldome.

Where it rayneth much.

Variable motions of the elements.

The colonies said villages which the Spaniards haue builded. The riuier Alphus about Hispaniola. The fountaine of Arethusa.

A spring running vnder the sea from Hispaniola to Arethusa.

- The Island of Sancti Iohannis (otherwise called Barichena) whereof we haue spoken largely before: in this aboundeth with gold, and in fruitfull soile is equall with her mother Hispaniola: in this are many colonies or mansions of Spaniards, which apply them selues to geathering of golde. Towards the West on the North side, great Cuba (for the longnesse thereof, long supposed to be continent or firme lande) wardeth our Tethis on the backe halfe. This is much longer then Hispaniola, and from the East to the West is diuided in the middest with the circle called Tropicus Caneri. Hispaniola and the other lying on the South side of this, are included almost in the mydde space betwene the said Tropike and the Equinoctiall line, which many of the olde writers supposed to be vnhabitable and desart, by reason of the feruent heate of the Sunne in that clime, as they coniectured: but they were deceiued in their opinion. They affirme that richer golde mynes are founde in Cuba, then in Hispaniola. They say also that euen now while I write these things, there is golde gathered together ready to the melting, amounting to the quantitie of a hundred and fourescore thousand Castellans of gold, an argument surely of great richesse. Iamaica is more towards the South then these, and is a pleasant and fruitfull lande, of soyle apt for corne, grasses and settes, it consisteth of onely one mountaine: the inhabitants are warrelke men, and of good will. Colonus compared it to Sicilie in bignesse. They which of late searched it more exactly, say that it is somewhat lesse, but not muche. It is thought to be without golde and precious stones, as the like was supposed of Cuba at the beginning. The lande of Guadalupe (first named Caraqueira) lying on the South side of Hispaniola is foure degrees nearer the Equinoctiall. It is eaten and indented with two gulfes (as we reade of great Britanie, nowe called England, and Calidonia, nowe called Scotland) being in maner two llandes. It hath famous Portes. In this they founde that gumme whiche the Apothecaries call Animæ Album, whose fume is holsume against reumes and heauinesse of the head. The tree whiche engendereth this gumme, beareth a fruit much like vnto a Date, being a spanne in length. When it is opened, it seemeth to containe a certaine sweete meale. As our husbandmen are accustomed to reserue Chestnuts, and such other harde fruites, all the winter, so do they the Dates of this tree, being much like vnto a Figge tree. They founde also in this lande, Pine trees, of the best kinde, and such other daintie dishes of nature, whereof we haue spoken largely before: Yea they thinke that the inhabitants of other llandes, had their seedes of so many pleasant fruites from hence. For the Canibales, being a wilde and wandering people, and ouerrunning all the countreie about them, to hunt for mans fleshe were accustomed to bring home with them whatsoever they founde strange or profitable in anye place: They are intractable, and will admit no straungers. It shall therefore be needefull to ouercome them with great power: For as well the women as men, are experte archers, and vse to inmenome their arrowes. When the men go forth of the lande a man hunting, the women manfully defend their coastes against such as attempt to invade the same. And hereby I suppose it was thought, that there were llandes in the Ocean, inhabited onely with women, as Colonus the Admirall him selfe perswaded meo; as I haue saide in the first Decade. This llande hath also fruitfull mountaines and plaines, and notable riuers. It nourisheth hony in trees, and in the caues of rockes, as in Palma one of the llandes of Canaria, hony is gathered among the briers and bramble bushes. About xviii. miles Eastward from this llande; lieth an llande which our men named Desiderata, being. xx. miles in circuite, and verie faire. Also about tenne miles from Guadalupe towards the South, lieth the llande of Galbata, being thirtie miles in circuite, and plaine: It was so named for the neatnesse and beautifullnesse thereof. Nine miles distant from Guadalupe towards the East there are sixe small llandes, named Todos Sanctos, or Barbuta: these are full of rockes, & barren, yet necessary to be knowne to such as vse to trauielle the seas of these coastes. Againne, from Guadalupe. xxxv. miles towards the North, there is an llande named Monserratus, containing in circuite fourtie miles, having also in it a mountaine of notable height. The llande named Antiqua, distante from Guadalupe thirtie miles, is about fourtie miles in circuite. Diegus Colonus the sonne and heire of Christophorus-Colonus, tolde me that his wife (whom he left in the llande of Hispaniola at his coming into Spaine to the court) did write vnto him, that of late

late among the Ilandes of the Canibales, there is one founde which aboundeth with golde. On the left side of Hispaniola towards the South, neere vnto the haueu Beata, there lieth an Ilande named Portus Bellus: they tell marueilous thinges of the monsters of the sea about this Ilande, and especially of the Tortoises, for they say that they are bigger then great rounde targettes. At such time as the heate of nature moueth them to generation, they come forth of the sea, and making a deepe pit in the sande, they lay three or foure hundred egges therein. When they haue thus emptied their bagges of conception, they put as much of the sande againe into the pit, as may suffice to couer the egges, and so resort againe to the sea, nothing carefull of their succession. At the day appointed of nature to the procreation of these bestes, there creepeth out a multitude of Tortoises, as it were pissemeries swarming out of an ant hill: and these onely by the heate of the Sunne, without any helpe of their parentes. They say that these egges are in maner as bigge as Geese egges. They also compare the fleshe of these Tortoises, to be equal with veale in taste. There are beside these, innumerable Ilandes, the which they haue not yet searched, nor yet is it greatly necessary to sift this meale so finely. It may suffice to vnderstande that there are large landes, and many regions, which shall heereafter receiue our nations, tongues, and maners, and therewith embrace our religion. The Troians did not sodeinly replenish Asia, the Tirians Libia, nor the Greekes and Phenices Spaine. As touching the Ilandes whiche lie on the North side of Hispaniola, I haue Jet passe to speake: For albeit they are commodious for tillage and fishing, yet are they lefte of the Spaniards as poore and of small value. We will nowe therefore take our leaue of this old Tethis, with her moist and watery Nymphes, and receiue to our new acquaintance the beautifull lady of the South sea, richly crowned with great pearles, the Ilande of Dites beinge riche both in name and in treasure. In my Epistle booke which I sent vnto your holinesse this last yeere, I declared howe Vaschus Nunnez Balboa, the Captaine of them which passed ouer the dangerous mountaines toward the South sea, learned by reporte, that in the prospect of those coastes there lay an Ilande abounding with pearles of the greatest sort, and that the king thereof was riche, and of great power, infesting with warres the other kinges his borderers, and especially Chiapas and Tumacchus: Wee declared further, howe at that time it was left vntouched by reason of the raging tempestes which troubled that South sea three monethes in the yeere. But it is nowe better knowne to our men, who haue now also brought that fierce king to humanitie, and conuerted him from a cruell Tyger, to one of the meeke sheepe of Christes flocke, sanctified with the water of baptisme, with all his familie and kingdom. It shall not therefore be from our purpose to declare, by the gouernance of what captaines, or by what meanes these thinges were so happily atchieued.

The Ilande Portus Bellus. Great Tortoises. The generation of Tortoises.

The Egges of Tortoises. Innumerable Ilandes.

Tirians. Tirians. Greeks. Phenicians. The North Ilandes.

The Ilandes of the South sea.

The Ilande of pearles.

Wilde beastes must be tamed with the rod.

#### The tenth Chapter of the third Decade.

AT the arryual of Petrus Arias the new gouernour of Dariena, he gaue commandement that one Gaspar Moralis should take in hand the expedition to the Ilande of Dites. Hee therefore tooke his voyage first to Chiapas & Tumacchus kinges of the South, whom Vaschus before had conciled & left friends to the Christians. They friendly & magnificently entertained our men, who prepared the a navy of 3 kings boats to passe ouer into this Iland, which they cal Dites, and not Margarita or Margarita, although it abound with pearles, which in the Latin tongue are called Margaritæ. For they first called another by this name, which lyeth next to the mouth of Os Draconis in the regio of Paria, in the which also is found great plenty of pearles. Caspar brought with him only xl. armed men to the Iland, for that he could conuey ouer no greater number, by reason of the smalnes & narrownes of their boates or barks, which they cal Cutchas made of one whole peece of timber, as we haue sayd before. The king of the Iland came forth against them fierly, with cruel and threatening countenance, & with a great band of armed men, crying in manner of a lamento, & in token of the battayle, Guazauara Guazauara, which is as much to say as, battaille against the enemy, & is (as it were) of such word to giue the onser: wherewith also they threw their darts, for they haue not the vse of bows. They were so obstinate & desperate, that they assailed our men w<sup>th</sup> foure Guazauaras,

An expedition to the Ilande of Dites in the South sea.

The Ilande of Margarita.

Os Draconis. Paria.

A conflict.

that

that is, battalles. At the length our men with certaine of Chiapes and Tumacchus men (beinge olde enemies to this king of the llande) got the vpper hande, by reason they assailed the king sodenly and vnawares. Yet was hee determined to assemble a greater power, and once againe to attempt the fortune of warre, but that he was otherwise perswaded by the kinges his borderens, which counselled him to giue ouer, and submit himselfe, sometime by the example of themselves & other, threatening the destruction of his flourishing kingdome, and otherwhiles declaring vnto him the humanitie and gentleness of our men, by whose friendship hee might obtayne honour and quietnesse to him and his: willing him furthermore to consider, what chaunced vnto them which the yee before resisted and aduentured the hazard of the battaile, as did these kings Poncha, Pocchorrosa, Quarequa, Chiapes, and Tumacchus, with such other. By these perswasions, the king submitted himselfe, and came

The king of the llande of this aduanted himselfe.

The kinges palace.

A hundred and ten pound weight of pearles.

Asse and hatchets more esteemed than golde.

friendly to our men, whom he conducted to his palace, which they say to bee marueilously adourned, and prince like. As soone as they entred into the palace, hee brought forth a basket of curios, workmanship, and full of pearles, which hee gaue them. The summe of these pearles amounted to the weight of a hundred & ten pounds, after. viii. ounces to the pounce: being againe rewarded of our men, with such tryfles as they brought with them of, purpose, as garlandes of Christall, and glasse, and other counterfeit stones of diuers colours, with looking glasses also, and laton belles, and especially two or three iron hatchets (which they more esteeme then great heapes of golde) he thought himselfe abundantly recompensed. They laugh our men to scorne, that they will depart with so great and necessarie a thing for a sicke summe of golde: affirming an axe or hatchet to be profitable for many vses of men; and that golde serueth onely for wanton pleasures, and not to be greatly necessary. Being therefore ioyfull and glad of the friendship of our men, hee tooke the captaine by the hande, and brought him with certaine of his familiars to the highest towre of his palace, from whence they might prospecte the mayne sea: then casting his eyes about him on euery side, and looking towards the East, hee saide vnto them, Beholke, heere lyeth open before you the infinite sea, extended beyonde the sunne beames: then turning him toward the South and West, he signified vnto them that the lande which lieth before their eyes, the toppes of whose great mountaines they might see, was exceeding large: then comming somewhat neerer, hee sayde, Beeholke these llandes on the right hande and on the left, which all obey vnto our empyre, and are ryche, happie, and blessed, if you call those llandes blessed which abounde with golde and pearle. We haue in this lland little plentie of golde: but the deepe places of all the seas about these llandes are full of pearles, whereof you shall receyue of mee as many as you will require, so that yee persist in the bonde of friendship which you haue begunne. I greatly desire your friendship, and woulde gladly haue the fruition of your things, which I sette muche more by then millions of pearles: You shall therefore haue no cause to doubt of any vnfaithfulness or breach of friendship on my behalfe. Our menne gaue him lyke friendly wordes, and encouraged him with many fayre promises to doe as hee had sayde. When our menne were none in a readinesse to departe, they couenaunted with him to pay yeerely to the great king of Castyle a hundred pounce weight of pearles. Hee gladly agreed to their request, and tooke it for no great thing, nor yet thought himselfe any whit the more to become tributary. With this king they founde such plentie of Harts and Conies, that our men, standing in their houses, might kill as many as them list with their arrowes. They liue heere very pleasantly, hauing great plentie of all things necessary. This lland is scarcely sixe degrees distant from the Equinoctiall lyne. They haue the same maner of breade, made of rootes and the graine of Maizium, and wine made of seedes and fruites, euen as they haue in the region of Comogra, and in other places, as well in the llandes, as in the firme lande. This king is nowe baptised, with all his familie and subiectes. His desire was, at his baptisme, to be named Petrus Arias, after the name of the gouernour. When our men departed, hee accompanied them to the sea side, & furnished them with boates to returne to the continēt. Our menne diuided the pearles among them, reseruing the fift portion to be deliuered to the officers of the kinges Eschequier in those partes. They say that these pearles were marueilous precious, faire,

The kinges words.

Hundred ryche in silde and pearles.

C. pounce weight of pearles yearly for a tribute. Pearles of Harts and Conies.

Wine of Maizium and wine. The king is baptised.

The fift parte of pearles due to the king.

oricut,

orient, & exceeding big: insomuch that they brought many with them bigger then hassell nuttes. Of what pryse, & value they might bee, I consider by one pearle the whiche Paulus, <sup>Big pearles.</sup> predecessor to your holines, bought at the second hand of a marchant of Venice for foure & <sup>A pearle fees</sup> fourtie thousand ducates. Yet among those which were brought from this land, there was <sup>Page.</sup> one bought euen in Dariena, for a thousand & two hundred Castellars of gold this was almost <sup>An other pearle</sup> as big as a meane walnut, & came at the length to the handes of Petrus Arias the gouernour, <sup>of great price.</sup> who gaue it to that noble and faithfull woman his wife, of whose manner of departure with her husband, we haue made mention before. We must then needes thinke that this was very precious, whiche was bought so deare among such a multitude of pearles, where they were not bought by one at once, but by poundes, and at the least by ounce. It is also to bee thought that the Venetian marchant bought his for no great summe of money by the East parts: But he sold it the dearer, for that he chanced to liue in those lasciuious and wanton dayes, when men were giuen to such nice and superfluous pleasures, and met with a mar- <sup>Nice and su-</sup> chant for his purpose. But let vs nowe speake somewhat of the shellfishes, in the which <sup>pericious</sup> pearles are engendred. It is not vnknowne to your holynesse, that Aristotle, and Plinie his <sup>pleasures</sup> follower, were of diuers opinions as concerning the generation of pearles. But these <sup>Diuers opinions</sup> Indians, and our men, rest only in one assertion, not assenting to them in any other: as, either that <sup>of the generation</sup> they wander in the sea, or that they moue at any tyme after they are borne. They will therefore that there be certayne greene places, as it were meddowes, in the bottoome of the sea, bringing forth an hearbe much like vnto Tyme, and affirme that they haue seene the <sup>fishes in the</sup> same, and that they are engendred, nourished, and growe therein, as we see the increase, <sup>bottoome of the</sup> and succession of Oysters to grow about themselves. Also that these fishes delight not in the conuerzation or companie of the sea dogges, nor yet to bee contented with only one, two, or three, or at the most foure pearles, affirming that in the fyinghing places of the King of this lande, there was founde a hundred pearles in one fische, the whiche Gaspar Moralis, <sup>A hundred</sup> the Captaine himselfe, and his companions, diligently numbered: For it pleased the King at their <sup>pearles in one</sup> being there, and in their presence, to commaunde his dyuers to goe a fyinghing for those <sup>kind fische.</sup> kinde of fishes. They compare the matrices of these fishes, to the places of conception <sup>The matrix of</sup> in Hennes, in the whiche their egges are engendred in great multitudes and clusters, and <sup>the pearle fische.</sup> beleeue that these fishes bring fourth their birth in like manner. For the better proofe whereof, they say that they founde certayne pearles comming forth of their matrices, as <sup>The birth of</sup> beeing nowe come to the tyme of their full rypenesse, and mooued by nature to come out <sup>pearles.</sup> of their mothers wombe, opening it selfe in time conuenient: lykewise, that within a while after, they sawe other succede in like manner. So that to conlude, they sawe some comming forth, and othersome yet abiding the tyme of their perfection: which being complete, they also became loose, and opened the matrice. They perceyued the pearles to bee inclosed in the myddest of their bellies, there to bee nourished and increase, as an infant sucking his mothers pappes within her wombe, beefore hee moue to come forth of her priuie places. And if it chaunte any of these shellfishes to bee founde scattered in the sande of the sea (as I my selfe haue seene Oysters dispareled on the shores in dyuers places of the Ocean) they affirme that they haue beene violently driuen thither from the bottoome of the sea by force of tempestes, & not to haue wandered thither of themselves: But, that they become white by the clearnesse of the morning dewe, or waxe yelowe in troubled weather, or otherwise that they seeme to reioyce in fayre weather and cleare ayre, or contrarilywise, to be as it were astonysed and dymme in thunder and tempestes, with such other: the perfect knowledge hereof, is not to be looked for at the handes of these vlearned men, which handle the matter but grossely; and enquire no further then occasion serueth. Yet do they <sup>where the</sup> affirme by the experience and industrie of the dyuers, that the greatest pearles lie in the <sup>largest pearles are</sup> deepest places, they of the meane sort hygher, and the least highest of all, and neerer to <sup>engendred.</sup> the brimme of the water: And say therefore, that the greatest doe not wander, but that they are created, nourished, and increase in the deepest places of the sea, whether fewe dyuers (and that but seldom) dare aduenture to dyue so deepe to gather them, as well for feare of the sea crabbes, which wander among these pearle fishes to feede of them, and for feare of <sup>Sea crabber.</sup> other

The sea muscles  
wherein pearly  
are dispersed

other monsters of the sea, as also least their breath should staye them in too long remayning in the water: And this they say to be the cause why the oldest (& therefore biggest) sea muscles inhabit the deepest places, from whence they are not lightly moued by tēpests. Furthermore, how much the bigger & older these fishes are, they say that in their larger matrices, the greater number & bigger pearlye are found, and that for this cause there are fewer found of the biggest sort. They thinke also; that when they first fall from their fishes in the deepe places, they are deuoured of other fishes, because they are not yet heard. Again, the smallest differ from the biggest in a certaine swelling or impostumation, which the Spanyards call a tympany: For they denie that to be a pearle which in olde muscles cleaueth fast to the shell, but that it is a wart, which being rased from the shell with a syle, is round & bright but only of one side, and not precious, being rather of the nature of the fish it selfe, then of a pearle. They confesse that they haue seene certaine of these muscles cleauing on rockes, yet these but fewe, and nothing woorth. It is also to bee thought, that the pearle fishes or sea muscles whiche are founde in India; Arabia, the redde sea, or Taprobana, are ruled in such order as the sforesaid famous authours haue written: For their opinion herein is not vtterly to be rejected, forasmuche as they were learned men, and trauelyed long in the searching of these things. But wee haue nowe spoken sufficiently of these sea fishes, and of their egges, which the sond' nicenesse and wantonnesse of men haue made dearer then the egges of hennes or geese. Let vs therefore increate somewhat of other particular things, which are come to our knowledge of late. Wee haue elswhere largely described the mouthes of the gulfe of Vraha, with sundry and variable regions diuided with the manifolde gulfes of that sea: But as concerning the West coastes, in the which our men haue builded houses, and planted their habitations on the banks of Dariena, I haue no newe matter to write: Yet as touching the East partes of the gulfe, I haue learned

The regions of  
the East side of  
the gulfe of  
Vraha.

The region of  
Caribana.

The principall of  
the Caribanes.

The villages of  
Caribana.

Manhunters.

Bookes:  
written in the  
beginning of the  
booke of the  
lands lately  
founde.

to followeth. They say that the vniuersall lande of the East region of the gulfe, from the corner thereof farre reaching into the sea, and from the extreame or vttermost mouth of the same, recituing the waters of the sea whiche fall into it, euen vnto Os Draconis and Paris; is by one generall name called Caribana, of the Caribes or Canibales whiche are founde in euery region in this tracte: But from whence they hadde their particular originall; and howe, leauing their natyue soyle, they haue spreade their generation so farre, lyke a pestiferous contagion, wee will nowe declare. Therefore from the firste front reaching forth into the sea: (in whose tracte we sayd that Fogeda fastened his foote) towards the corner, about nine myles distant, there lyeth a village of Caribana, named Puteraca: three myles distant from this, is the village of Vraha, of the whiche it is thought that the whole gulfe tooke his name; because this village was once the heade of the Kingdome. About sixe myles from this, is Feti: Nine myles from Feti, is Zerema: And about twelue myles from this, Sorache. Our men founde all these villages full of people, all the which giue themselves onely to man hunting: Inasmuche that if they lacke enemies agaynst whome they may keepe warre, they exercise crueltie agaynst themselves, and eather slay the one the other, or els dryue the vanquished to flight: Whereby it is apparant, that by these their continuall warres, and drying the one the other out of their countreys, this infection hath gone so farre, not onely on the firme lande, but also into the landes. I was also aduertised of another thing, the whiche to my iudgement seemeth woorthie to bee put in memorie. One Coruske, a iudge in causes of lawe among the Spanyardes of Dariena, sayth that on a tyme walking abroad with his booke in his hande, hee met by the way with a fugitiue, which hadde fledde from the great landes lying farre towards the West, and remayned here with a King with whome hee was entertayned. When this man perceiued the lawyer looking on his booke, marueyling thereat; hee came running vnto him, and by interpretations of the king whom hee serued, spake thus vnto him: Haue you also bookes, wherein you may reserue things in perpetuall memorie; and letters, whereby you may declare your mynde to suche as are absent? And herewith desired that the booke might bee opened vnto him, supposing that we shoulde therein haue founde the letters of his owne countrey: But when hee saue them vnto him, he sayde further, that in his country there were cities fortified with walles, and gouerned by lawes, and that

the people also used apparell: but of what religion they were, I did not learne. Yet hadde our wicke knowledge both by the wordes and signes of this fugitive, that they were circumcised: What nowe thinke you hereby (most holy father) Or what doe you thinke may come hereof; when time shall stidde all these vnder your theorie: Let vs nowe entertermine certaine small things among these great matters: I haue not thought good to p̄termitt that which chaunced to Iohannes Solisius, who to searche the South side of the supposed continent, departed with three shippes from the port Ioppa (not farre distant from the landes of Gades or Gales in the Ocean) the fourth day of the Ides of September, in the yeece M. D. xv. or what successe Iohannes Pontius hadde; whom the newe gouernour Petrus Arias appointed to vanquish and destroy the Caribes, discoverers of many fishes: also to what ende the voiajes of the other captaynes came, which were sent forth diuers waies at the same tyme, as Gonzales Badajocius, Franciscus Bezarra, and Vallemus, Iohannes Solisius tooke the matter in hande in an euill houre: He sayed beyonde the poynt of saint Augustine (whiche they call Cabo. S. Augustini) toward the South side of the supposed continent beyond the Equinoctiall line: For (as we haue said before) that point reacheth Southward to the seventh degree of the South pole, called the pole Antarcticke. He proceeded in that voiage sixe hundred leagues; and found the land from the point to extend to farre toward the South beyond the Equinoctiall; that he came to the thirtieth degree of the South pole: As he sayed this forward, hauing poise on his backe haffe the starres named Caput Draconis, (that is, the Dragons head) and the regions of Paria lying northward from him, & prospecting toward the pole Artycke, he chaunced to fall into the hands of the filthy Canibales: For these craftie foxes seemed to make signes of peace, when in their mindes they conceiued a hope of a dauntie banquet, & espying their enemies a farre off, began to swallow their spetle; as their mouth watered for greedlines of their pray. As vnhappy Solisius descended, with as many of his company as could enter into the boate of the biggest shyppe, sodenly a great multitude of the inhabitants burst forth vpon them, and slae them euery man with clubbes, euen in the sight of their fellowes. They carried away the boate, and in a moment broke it all to fytters, not one escaping. Their furie not thus satisfied they cut the slayue men in peeces, euen vppon the shore, where their fellowes might behold this horrible spectacle from the sea. But they being stricken with feare through this example, durst not come forth of their shippes, or deuise howe to reuenge the death of their Captayne and companions. They departed therefore from these vnfortunate coastes, and by the way lading their shyppe with Brasell, returned home agayne with losse, and heauie cheare. Of these thynges I was advertised of late, by their owne letters. What they haue els doone, I shall haue more particular knowledge hereafter. Iohannes Pontius was also repaued by the Canibales in the lande of Guadalupe, being one of the chiefe landes of their habitation. For when they sawe our men a farre off on the sea, they lay in ambuske, sodenly to invade them when they shoulde come a lande. Our men sent forth a fewe foote men, and with them their Lawdresses to washe their shirtes and sheetes: For from the lande of Ferrea; being one of the landes of Canarie (euen vnto this lande, for the space of foure thousand & two hundred myles) they had scene no lande, where they might finde any fresh water, forasmuche as in all this large space the Ocean is without landes. As their coming therefore to lande, the Canibales assailed them, carryed away the women, and pittie the meane to suche distresse, that fewe of them escaped. By reason whereof, Pontius being greatly discomfited, durst not invade the Canibales, fearing their venomed arrowes, which these naked manhunters can direct most certainly. Thus good Pontius sayling of his purpose, was fayne to giue ouer the Canibales, whom (being safe & vnder the houle rooff) he threatened to vanquish & destroy. Whither he went from thence, or what new things hee founde, I haue as yet no further knowledge. By these misfortunes, Solisius lost his life, and Pontius his honour. Let vs nowe speake of another, whose enterpryse came to lyke purpose the same yeece. Iohannes Aiora, borne in the cite of Corduba, a man of noble parentage, sent in steade of the Lieutenant (as we haue saide) more couetous of gold, then carefull of his charge, or desirous of prayse for well seruing, sought

Circumcised people.

What chaunced to the Captaynes whiche the gouernour sent to discover the newe Indies. See the Decade in lib. vi.

The voiage of Iohannes Solisius. See the Decade in lib. vi.

Iohannes Solisius is slaine of the Canibales.

The seruantes of the Canibales

Dreijle.

Iohannes Pontius is repaued by the Canibales.

The voiage of Iohannes Aiora. See the Decade in lib. vi.

The seveth  
housen of  
Iohn Arias.

occasions of quarrelling agaynst the kinges; and spoyled many, violently extorting gold of them against right & equite: and further, handled them so extremely, that of friondes they became most cruell enemies, insomuche that they ceased not with desperate myndes, by all meanes they could, to slay our men openly or privily. By reason whereof it is come to passe, that where beefore they bartered quietly, exchanging ware for ware, they are nowe sayne to doe all thynges by force of armes. When hee had thus exacted a great quantitie of golde of them (as it is sayde) hee fled pryncly and tooke away a shippes with him by stealth, as the common rumour goeth, nor yet hitherto have we heard whither he went, or where hee arriued. Some suspect that Petrus Arias the gouernour shoulde consent to his departure, because this Iohannes Arias, is brother to Gonsalus Arias, the kinges hystoriographer, a man both learned, and expert in the discipline of warre, and so much the gouernours friend, that these two among a fewe, may be counted examples of rare amitie. I my selfe also am greatly bounde vnto them both, and haue long enjoyed their friendship yet shall I desire them both to pardon me in declaring my phantasie heerein, that in all tymes and tragicall essayes of the Ocean, nothing hath so much displeas'd me, as the contumaciousnes of this man, who hath so disturbed the pacified minds of the Kinges. Nowe among these troublous chaunces, let vs rehearse the variable fortune of Gonsalus Badaocicus, and his fellows, whose prosperous beginnings; ended with vnsfortunate success. Gonsalus therefore in the month of May; in the yeere of Christ 1565. departed from Dariena with fourescore armed men directing his voyge towards the South, and resting in no place vntill he came to the region of Cerabara; which our men named Gratia Dei, distant from Dariena about a hundred and fourescore myles: for they call it threescore leagues. He spent certaine daies heere in idleness; for he coulde neither by sayre meanes, nor by soule allure the king of the region to come to him. While he lay thus idely, there came to him other fytie men, sent from Dariena vnder the gouernance of captayne Lodouicus Mercado, who departed from Dariena in the Calendes of May, to the intent to searche the inner partes of those regions. When they mette together, they determined, after consultation to passe ouer the mountaynes lying toward the South, euen vnto the South sea lately founde. Beholde nowe a wonderfull thing, that in a lande of suche marueilous longitide in other places, they founde it heere to bee onely about fytie myles, distant to the South sea: for they count it xvii. leagues, as the manner of the Spaniardes is to reckon, and not by myles. Yet say they that a league consisteth of thre myles by lande; and foure by sea, as wee haue noted before. In the toppes of the mountaynes and turning of the waters, they founde a king named luana, whose kingdom is also named Coiba, as is the region of king Careta, of whom we haue made mention elsewhere. But for as much as the region of this luana, is rycher in golde; they named it Coiba Dites, that is, Coiba the rich: For wheresoever they dygged the grounde, whether it were on the drie lande, or in the wet chanelles of the ryuers, they founde the sande, whiche they cast soorth, myxt with golde. Luana fledde at the coming of our men, and coulde neuer be brought agayne. They spoyled all the country nere about his palace: yet had they but litle golde, for he had caryed all his stuffe with him. Here they founde certaine slaves, marked in the faces after a straunge sorte: For with a sharpe pricke made eithr of bone, or els with a thorne, they make holes in their faces, and soorthwith sprinkling a powder thereon, they moiste the poked place with a certayne blacke or reddy iuyce whose substance is of such tenacitie and clamminesse, that it will neuer weare away. They brought these slaves away with them. They say that this iuyce is of suche sharpnesse, and putteth them to suche payne, that for extreme doloure they haue no stomacke to their meate certaine dayes after. The kinges which take these slaves in their warres, vie their helpe in seeking for golde, and in tyllage of the grounde, euen as doe our men. From the palace of luana, following the course of the water about tenne myles toward the South, they entred into the dominion of another king, whom our meane named the olde man, because hee was olde, not passing of his other name. In the region of this king also, they founde golde in all places, both on the lande, and in the ryuers. This region is very fayre, and fruitfull, and hath in it many famous ryuers. Departing from hence, in fye.

The variable  
fortune of Gon-  
salus Badaoc-  
icus.

Cerabara. Dis-  
tante six k. ill.

The South sea.

A league con-  
sisteth foure  
myles by sea  
and twoe there  
by lande.

The golden  
region Coiba  
Dites.  
Sande myxt  
with golde.

Howe their  
faces are  
marked in  
the face.

Coiba.

dayes journey they came to a launde left desolate: They suppose that this was destroyed by civill discord, forasmoeche as it is for the most parte fruitfull, and yet not inhabited. The fift day, they sawe two men comming a farr off: these were laden with breade of Maizium; whiche they carryed on their shoulders in sackes. Our men tooke them, and vnderstoode by them that there were two kinges in that tracte, the one was named Periquete, who dwelt neere vnto the sea, the others name was Totonoga. This Totonoga was blinde, and dwelt in the coastmaine. The two men whiche they mette, were the fishers of Totonoga, whom hee hadde sent with certayne fardelles of fische, to Periquete, and had againe receiued bread of him, for exchange: For thus doe they communicate their commodities one with another by exchange, without the vse of wicked money. By the conducting of these two menne, they came to king Totonoga, dwelling on the West side of saint Michaels gulfe, in the South sea. They hadde of this king the summe of sixe thousande Castellans of golde, both rude, and artificially wrought. Among those grumes, of rude or natyue golde, there was one sounde of the weight of two Castellans, whiche argued the plentifull-rychnesse of the grounds. Following the same coast by the sea syde toward the West, they came to a king, whose name was Taracura, of whom they had golde, amounting to the weight of eyght thousande Pesos. Wee haue sayde before that Pesos is the weight of a Castellane, not coyned. From hence they went to the dominion of this kinges brother, named Pananome, who fledde at their comming, and appeared no more afterward. They say that his kingdome is ryche in golde: They spoyled his palace in his absence. Sixe leagues from hence, they came to another king, named Tahur. From hence they came to the king of Cheru. Hee friendly entertained our men, and gaue them foure thousand Pesos of golde. Hee hath in his dominion many goodly salt-bayes: the region also aboundeth with golde. About twelue myles from hence, they came to another king called Anata; of who they had xv. thousande Pesos of golde; whiche he had gotten of the kinges his borderers, whom hee had vanquished by warre. A great part of this gold was in iude-sourme, because it was molten when hee set the kinges houses on fire whome he spoyled. For they robbe and slay the one the other, sacking & firing their villages, and wasting their countreies. They keepe warre barbarously, and to utter destruction, executing extreme crueltie against them that haue the ouerthrowe. Gonzalus Badaocius, with his felowes, wandred at libertie, vntill they came to this king, and had gathered great heapes of golde of other kinges. For what in braettes, collers, earringes, breast plates, helmettes, and certaine barres wherewith women beare vp their brestes, they had gathered together in gold the summe of fourscore thousand Castellans, which they had obtained partly by exchange for our things where they founde the kinges their friendes, & otherwise by forcible meanes where they founde the contrary. They had gotten also foure slaues, whose helpe they vsed both for cariage of their victualles and baggages, in the steele of Moiles or other heaues of burden, & also to relieue such as were sicke and forwearyed by reason of their long iournies and hunger. After these prosperous voyages, they came by the dominion of king Scorid, to the palace of a king named Pariza, where (fearing no suche thing) Pariza enclosed them with a great armie, and assailed them straggeling and vnwares, in such sort that they had no leisure to put on their armour. Hee slue and wounded about fiftie, and put the residue to flight. They made such hast, that they had no respect either to the golde they had gathered, or to their slaues, but left all behinde them. Those fewe that escaped, came to Dariena. The opinion of all wise men, as concerning the variable & inconstant chaunces of fortune in humane things were false, if all things should haue happened vnto them prosperously. For such is the nature of this blinde goddesse, that she oftentimes delighteth in the ouerthrowe of them whom she hath exalted, and taketh pleasure in confounding high things with lowe, and the contrary. Wee see this order to be impermutable, that who so wil apply him selfe to greater rootes, shal sometimes meet with sweete Liqueresse, and other whilles with soure Cockle. Yet wee vnto Pariza: for he shall not long sleepe in rest. The gouernour him selfe was of late determined with three hundred & fiftie choice souldiers to reuenge the death of our men: but where as he by chaunce fell sicke, his power went forwarde vnder the conducting of his Lieutenaut Gaspar Spinosa, a Iudge in cases of law

A fruitfull re-  
gion left deso-  
late by civill  
discord.

Sixe thousand  
Castellans  
of golde.

King Tara-  
cure.

Foure thou-  
sand Pesos of  
golde.

Their manner  
of warre.

Gonzalus Ba-  
daocius hath  
the southerne  
and is possid-  
ed of great riches  
of gold.

The inconsu-  
etud of fortune.

in Dariena. At the same time other were sent forth to the Iland of Dites, to exact the portion of pearles limited to the King for his tribute. What shall succede, time will bring to our knowledge. The other two attempted thinhabitantes beyonde the gulfe. Francisus Bezerra, passing over the corner of the gulfe, and the mouths of the river of Dababiba, with two other captaines, and a hundred and fiftie souldiers well appointed, went to make warre vpon the Cabniales, euen in Caribans their owne chiefe dominion, towards the village of Turusy, wherof wee haue made mention beefore in the coming of Fogeda. They brought also with them diuers eagins of warre, as three peeces of ordinance, whose shot were bygget then egges: likewise fourtie archers, and xxv. habbuters, to the intent to reach the Canibales a farre off, & to prevent their venomd arrowes: But what became of him & his companie, or where they arrived, wee haue yet no perfect knowledge. Certaine which came of late from Dariena to Spaine reported, that at their departere they of Dariena stonde in great feare least they also were tossed with some misfortune. The other captaine Valleius obtayned the fore part of the gulfe, but hee passed over by an other way then did Bezerra, for he tooke the beginning of Caribana, & Bezerra the end: Valleius returned againe. But of the threescore and ten men which he conueighed over with him, hee left fourtie and eight alyne among the Canibales. These are the newes which they bring that came last from Dariena. This came to mee the day beefore the Ides of October in this yeere 1516. Rodericus Colmenares (of whom we haue made mention beefore) & one Francisus Delapuate. This Francisus was one of the vnder captaines of this band, whose chiefe captaine was Gonsalus Badaocius, who hardly escaped the handes of King Pariza. These two captaines therfore, Rodericus & Francisus, who departed from Dariena immediately after the misfortune which befel to Badaocius & his companie doe both affirme, the one, that he hath heard, & the other that he hath seene, that in the South sea there are diuers llandes lying westward from the Iland of Dites, and Saint Michaels gulfe, in many of the which are trees engendred and nourished; which bring forth the same aromaticall frutes as doth the region of Collocutea. This lande of Collocutea, with the regions of Cocchibus and Camemorau, are the chiefe marre places from whence the Portugales haue their spices: And hereby doe they coniecture, that the land where the fruitfulnessse of spice beginneth, should not be farre frō thence, insomuch, that many of them which haue ouerrunne those coastes, do only desire that leaue may be granted them to search further, and that they will of their owne charges frame and furnish shyppes, and aduenture the voyage to seeke those llandes and regions. They thinke it best that these shippes should be made and prepared, euen in saint Michaels gulfe, and not to attempt this voyage by saint Augustines point, which way were both long and difficult, and full of a thousand dangers, and is saide to reach beyonde, the fourtieth degree of the pole Antartike. The same Francisus, being partener of the traouayles and dangers of Gonsalus, saith, that in ouerrunning those landes, hee founde great hardes of Hartes and wyld Bores, and that he tooke many of them by an art which thinhabitantes taught him: which was, to make pittes or trenches in their walkes, and to cower the same with boughes: By this meanes also they deceyue all other kinde of wilde & fouere footed beastes. But they take foules after the same maner that we do: As stocke doues, & an other tame stocke doue brought vp in their houses. These they tye by a string and suffer them to flie a litle among the trees: to the which as other birdes of that kinde resort, they kill them with their arrowes. Otherwise they take them with nettes, in a bare place purged from bryers & bushes, & scattering certayne seedes round about the place, in the middist wherof they tie a tame foule or bird, of the kinde of them which they desire to take: In like maner doe they take Poppingayes & other foules. But they say that Poppingayes are so simple, that a great multitude of them will flie euen into the tree in whose boughes the fouler sitteth, and swarome about the tame chattering Poppingay, suffering themselves to bee easily taken: For they are so without feare of the sight of the fouler, that they tary while he cast the snare about their neckes, the other beyng nothing feared hereby, though they see him drawe them to him with the snare, and put them in the bagge which hee hath about him for the same purpose. There is another kinde of fouling, heretofore neuer heard of, and pleasant to consider. Wee haue declared

before

before howe that in certayne of the Ilandes, and especially in Hispaniola, there are diuers lakes or standing pooles: In some of these (being no deeper then men may wade ouer them) are seene great multitudes of water foules: as well for that in the bottome of these lakes there growe many herbes and weedes, as also that by reason of the heate of the Sunne, peering to the naturall place of generation and conception, where being double in force by reflection, & preserued by moysture there, are engendred of the slimmieste of the earth and water, and by the providence of the vniuersall creator, innumerable little fishes, with a thousand sundry kindes of frogges, wories, gnattes, flies, and such other. The foules which use these lakes, are of diuers kyndes: as Duckes, Geese, Swannes, sea Mewes, Gullies, and such other. Wee haue sayde also, that in their Orchards they noryshe a tree which beareth a kinde of great Gourdes. Of these Gourdes therefore, well stopped least any water should enter in at their risses, and cause them to sinke, they cast many in the shalowe pooles, where, by their continuall wandering and waueryng with the motions of the wynde and water, they put the foules out of suspicion & feare: the fouler in the meane time, disguising himselfe: as it were with a visour, putteth a great gourde on his head, much like to a helmet, with two holes neere about his eyes, his face and whole head beside being covered therewith: and thus entereth hee into the poole euen vnto the chynne. For being from their infancie exercised in swimming, and accustomed to the waters, they refuse not to continue therein along space: the fouls thinking this Gourde to bee one of the other that swymme vpon the water, the fouler goeth softly to the place where hee seeth the greatest focke of foules, and with wagging his head, counterfeiting the mouing of the wauering Gourdes draweth neere to the foules, where softly putting forth his right hande, hee sodainly snatcheth one by the legges, and plungeth her into the water, where hee putteth her into a bagge which hee hath with him of purpose: The other foules supposing that this dyed into the water of her owne motion to seeke for foode (as is their vsuener) are nothing moued hereby, but go forward on their way before, vntill they also fall into the same snare. I haue heere for this cause entred into the declaration of their manner of hunting and fouling, that by these more pleasant narrations, I may somewhat mitigate and assuage the horrour conceyued in your stomack by the former rehearsal of their bloody actes and cruell manner. Let vs nowe therefore speake somewhat againe of the newe and later opinions, as concerning the swift course of the sea towards the West about the coastes of Paria, also of the manner of gathering of golde in the golde myne, of Dariena, as I was advertised of late: and with these two quiet and peaceable things, we will make an ende of the tragickall affayres of the Ocean, and therewith byd your holynesse farewell. So it is therefore, that Andreas Moralis the pilot and Ouicidas (of whom we haue made mention before) repayed to mee, at my house in the towne of Matrite. As wee met thus together, there arose a contention betwene them two, as concerning this course of the Ocean. They both agree, that these landes and regions pertaining to the dominion of Castile, doe with one cotinual tract & perpetual bond, embrace as on whole firme land or continent, all the mayne land lying on the North side of Cuba, & the other Ilands, being also Northwest both fro Cuba & Hispaniola: Yet as touching the course of the water, they vary in opinion. For Andreas will that this violent course of water be receiued in the lappe of the supposed continent, which bendeth so much, and extendeth so farre towards the North, as wee haue sayde: and that by the object or resistance of the lande, so bending and crooking, the water shoulde as it were rebounde in compasse, and by force thereof bee driuen about the North side of Cuba, and the other Ilands, excluded without the circle called Tropicus Canceri, where the largenes of the sea may receiue the waters falling fro the narrow streames, & thereby represseth that inordinate course, by reason that the sea is there very large and great. I can compare his meanyng to nothing more aptly, then to the swift streame coming forth of a myll, and falling into the myll poole: For in all such places where waters raine with a violent fall through narrow channells, and are then receyued in large pooles, they are sodainly dispatched, and their violence broken: So that where, as before they seemed of suche force as to ouerthrowe all thinges being in their way, it cannot there be perceived which way they runn. The Admirall himselfe Diegus Colonus, sonne and heyre to Christo-

Tables and  
vnto the  
Coast of  
Spain.  
Foules.

Coastes of  
the tree.

Later opinions  
of the swift  
course of the  
Ocean toward  
the West.

The continent  
or firme land.

The voyages  
of Diego  
phorus Colonus.

phorus Colonus, the first finder of these landes (who had nowe in coming and going, foure times passed through these seas) being demanded of me what he founde or perceined in saying, too and fro: answered that there was muche difficultie in returninge the same way by the which they goe. But whereas they fyrst take the way by the mayne sea towards the North, before they directe their course to Spayne, hee sayth that in that tract hee felt the shyppe sometymes a litle dryuen backe by the contrary course of the water: Yet supposed that this chaunceth onely by the ordinary flowing and reflowing of the sea, and the same not to be enforced by the circumflux or course of the water, rebounding in compasse as wee haue sayde. But thinketh rather, that this mayne land or supposed Continent, should somewhere bee open, and that the sayde open place, should bee as it were a gate entrie, or streight, diuiding the North partes of that lande from the South, by the which also the Ocean runnyng towards the West, may by the rotation or impulsio[n] of the heauens, bee dryuen about the whole earth. Ouides agreeth with Andreas Moralis as touching the continuall adherence and closenesse of the sayde continent: Yet neither that the waters should so beate against the bendinge backe of the West lande, or bee in such sort repulsed and dryuen into the mayne sea: But sayth, that he hath diligently considered, that the waters runne from the deepest & myddest of the maine sea towards the West: Also, that sayling aecre vnto the shore with small vessels hee founde the same waters to returne againe towards the East, so that in the same place they runne together with contrary course, as we oftentimes see the like to chaunce in ryuers, where, by the object of the bankes diuers whirle pooles and turnings arise in the water. By reason whereof, if any chaffe, strawe, wood, or any other thing,

The voyege  
from the new  
land to Spayne.

The contrary  
course of waters.

of light substance be cast in any such places in ryuers, it followeth, that all such as runne with the water in the myddest of the channell, proceede well forwarde, but such as fall into the bending gulfes and indented margences of the crooked bandes, are caryed ouertwart the channell, and so wander about vntill they meete with the full and directe course of the ryuer. This haue we made you partener of suche things as they haue giuen vs, and written their dyuers opinions: Wee will then giue more certayne reason, when more certayne truth shall be knowne. We must in the meane time leane to opinions, vntill the day come appointed of God to reueale this secreete of nature, with the perfect knowledge of the pointe of the pole starre. Hauing sayde thus muche of the course of the Ocean, a briefe declaration of the gold mynes of Dariena, shall close vp our Decades, and make an ende of our traualles. Wee haue saide, that vniue myles distant from Dariena, are the sides of the hilles and the drye plaines in the which golde is gathered, both on the dry lande, and also on the bankes, and in the channells of ryuers. Therefore to all suche as are willing to gather golde, there is of ordinarie custome appointed to every man by the surueyers of the mynes, a square plotte of grounde, conteinng twelue pases, at the arbitrement of the chooser, so that it be not grounde already occupiye, or left of other. The portion of grounde being thus chosene (as it were assigned of the statures to buylde a temple) they inclose their slaues within the same, whose helpe the Christians vse in tylling of their grounde, and gathering of golde, as we haue sayd. These places appointed vnto them they keepe as long as them list: and if they perceyue tokens of little golde, they require an other plot of grounde of twelue pases to be assigned them, leauing the first in common: And this is thorder which the Spaniards inhabiting Dariena obserue in gathering of golde. I suppose also, that they vse the like order in other places: Howbeit, I haue not yet enquired so farre. It hath beene prouoed, that these twelue pases of grounde, haue yielded to their choosers the summe of fourescore Castellaynes of golde. And thus leade they their lynes in fulfilling the holy hunger of golde. But the more they fill their handes with finding, the more increaseth their couetous desire. The more woodde is layde to the fire, the more furiously rageth the flame. Vnsatiabie couetousnesse is no more diminished with increase of rychesse, then is the drinnesse of the dropie satisfied with drynke. I let passe many thinges whereof I intende to wryte more largely in time conuenient, if I shall in the meane season vnderstande these to be acceptable vnto your holynesse: my duetic and obseruance to whose authoritie, hath caused mee the gladlier to take

The point of  
the pole starre.

The golde  
mynes of Da-  
riena, and the  
number of cho-  
osing golde.

Our inclosure  
would be use no  
such customes.

And sacra  
I am.

The dropie of  
couetousnesse.

this labour in hande. The providence of the eternall creatour of all things, graunt your holynesse many prosperous yeeres.

The 4. Decade of Peter Martyr a Milanese of Angleria writen to Pope Leo the 10 now first set forth, and examined.

MOST blessed Father, Agidius Viterbiensis that bright example of the Heremites of Augustines profession, and of the sacred order of Cardinals having executed his Legation a Latero whē he departed out of Spaine, left mee this charge in your Holynesse name, and his owne, that after my 3. Decades long since sent vnto your Holynesse, I shoulde set downe also in writing, what the pregnant Ocean brought forth, beginning from the yeare 1492. and concluding with the yeare 1516. of all which I deferred to write, because many idle things were reported, and very litle worth the memorie. In our royall Senate of Indian affaires, Epistles full of circumstances sent from euery vaine fellowe, were daily read, out of the which wee gathered litle substance: One boasted that hee had found a finger of the hande discovered, another, a ioynt of the finger, and they who were the first Authors of discovering that world vaunted much more proudly and with full mouth, that they had discovered great masters, and writt newe and strange things. Imitating the Ante, which thinketh shee is waightfully laden, when shee carrieth a graine of corne to her Anthill, stolne out of the floore from a greate heape; sowed by anothers labour. I call a finger of the hand found out graines of corne whatsoever landes, the Ocean maintaineth, lying nere to Hispaniola and Cuba, and so to the Continent: For they are compassed about, both before, and behinde, and also on both sides with innumerable landes, as hennes inuironed with chickens, yet euery one is to haue the reward of his labour. Let vs therefore omitting circumbstances present to the handes of your Holynesse, to delight your longinge eares, whatsoever is reported of the landes Iucatan, and Cozumella, and the huge country of Hacolucan, as yet not well knowne whether it bee an land, or annexed to the Continent, seeming worthy of my remembrance. After this I will breifly declare in the ensuing story what succeeded in the supposed Continent: And Hispaniola shall finish the whole worke.

#### The first Chapter.

BY my former Decade, published by meanes of the Printers, your Holynesse may gather that certaine fugitiues arriving vpon the borders of Dariena, wondering at our bookes, said, they sometimes dwelt in such countries, whose inhabitants vsed such instruments, and liued politickly vnder lawes, & Pallaces & had stately Temples built of ston, & also streets, and paved wayes orderly composed, where they traded and vsed to resort. Those lands our men haue now found out. Who therefore were the Authors, and how matters proceeded, let your Holynesse lend your attentive care, seeing all these are published, to be subjected to your Throne: Of the land Cuba (which Diex Velasquez Lieutenant gouernor by the name of Colonus the Admirall, called Fernandine, nere Hispaniola on the West, yet so toward the North, that the Tropick of Cancer diuideth Cuba in the midst, but Hispaniola is distant certaine degrees from the Tropick to the Equator) we haue spokē somewhat before. In this land of Cuba there are now 6. towns erected. The cheife whereof taketh his name from Saint James the Patron of the Spaniards. Heere, there is natiuo gold both in the mountaine, and rivers: so that they are dayly occupied in gathering and digging thereof. The same yeare that I finished my bookes, three Spaniards of the most ancient citizens of Cuba, Franciscus Fernandes of Corduba, Lupus Ochoa Caicedas, and Christophorus Morantes, determined to seeke out new countries: but, for the kinge, Bernardinus Iguiguez Calcatinensis of the office of Accompts, and Captaine of one of the shippes. The Spaniards mind is euer restlesse, and alwayes buyssing it selfe about great attempts. These men (at their owne proper costs and charge) furnished three shippes, such as they call Carouelles, and from the West angle of Cuba called Saint Antonio, they take sea with their Pilot Antonibus Alaminus and 110. soldiers: for this angle is most commodious, and fit for relieuing of shippes, and for prouision of wood and water. Betweene the West and South, which winde the Spaniards

Franciscus Fernandes  
Lupus Ochoa  
Christophorus Morantes  
their  
The Spaniards  
call

S. Antonio  
Antonibus Alaminus

call South, West, they see lande for six dayes space. In which time (they say) they ran onely 66. leagues, for they anchored wheresoeuer sunneset came vpon them, least wandringe through an vnknown sea, they might strike vpon the rockes or lightinge amouge the sandy shells, might so be drowned and sanke. At length they fell vpon a very greate lande, where they goe a shoare and are courteously entertained and receiued by the Inhabitants. Our men (by signes, and beckning to them) demaunde of them what they call the name of the whole Prouince? They answered Iucatan, which signifieth in their language, I vnderstand you not. Our men thought Iucatan had bin the name of the Prouince. So from this vnpremeditated euent this name of Iucatan remained, and shall continue for euer: yet the beginning thereof the Inhabitants call Encampi. Our men goe vnto the city seated on the shore, which for the hugeness thereof they call Cayrus, of Cayrus the Metropolis of Egypt: where they find turreted houses, stately temples, well paved wayes & streets where marts and faires for trade of marchandise were kept. The houses are either of stone or bricke, and lime maruelous artificially built. To the square courts or first habitations of their houses they ascend by 10. or 12. steps or staires. Yet they are not tiled but covered with reedes, or great stalkes of herbes. They gratifie each other with mutuall presents. The Barbarians gaue our men brooches, & Jeweles of gold very faire, & cunningly wrought, and our men requited them with vestures of silke & woll, & gaue them also counterfet stones of glasse and little laton or copper belles acceptable presentes to them because of the strangeness thereof. But they made slight account of our counterfeits, because themselves (out of certaine stones in their Mines) might get those that were much brighter. This nation is not appareled with wooll, because they haue no sheepe, but with Cotton after a thousand fashions, and diuersly coloured. The women are clad from the wast to the ancle, and couer their heade and breasts with diuers wayes, and are very carefull that their leggs, and feete bee not seene. They frequent their Temples often, to the which the better sort paxe the wayes with stone from their houses. They are great Idolaters: and are Circumcised, but not all. They liue vnder lawes, and traffike together with greate fidelitie, by exchanginge commodities without money. They sawe Crosses: and being demaunded by Interpreters whence they hadde them, some say, that a certaine man of excellent beauty passinge by that coast, left them that notable token to remember him. Others report a certaine manne brighter then the Sunne dyed in the workinge thereof, But concerninge the truth, there is no certaintye knowne.

## The seconde Chapter.

HAving stayed there some fewe dayes they now began to seeme troublesome to the inhabitants: for the long stay of a guest is not well pleasinge vnto any. Taking therefore provision of victuals, they bēd their course directly to the West: and passing the prouinces Coma, and Maia (so called of the borderers) they tooke only woodd and water for their voyage. The Barbarians on the shore wondered to see our great vessels floating on the sea, to the beholdinge wherof menne, and women, children came strining and thronginge from all places. Our menne also (not without great astonishment and admiration) beheld farrre of from sea, their goodly buildings, but chiefly their Temples next the Seaside, advanced like Castelles. At length hauing sayled 110. leagues, they determined to anchor in a prouince called Campechium, whose towne consisteth of 3000. houses, where after they hadde landed, and friendly imbraced each other, the Barbarians with great astonishment wondered at our mens art of sayling, the greatnesse of the vessels, the sayles, the flagges, and other things. But as soone as they hearde the thunder of our ordinance discharged, and perceiued a smoaky, and sulphury fierie sent, and smell, they thought lightning had come from Heauen. The petty king of this prouince courteously and royally entertayned our men in his Pallace, when they had feasted them after their manner, (where they haue both Peacocks and crammed soule both of the Mountaynes, Woods, and Water, as Patryches, Quayles, Turtles, Duckes, Geese, and fourefooted wilde beastes, as Boores, Hartes, and Hares: beside Wolfes, Lyons, Tygers, and Foxes) our menne were conducted with a princely Trayne to a broade crosse-way, standing on the side of the towne. Here they shew our menne a square stage or pulpit foure

steppes

Iucatan and why so called.

Cayrus a great City.

The apparel of the Inhabitants.

The Inhabitants superstitious Idolaters, and some of them circumcised. Crosses and a fabulous Tradition thereof amongst them how they were receiued.

The prouince of Campechium.

A strange artificiall spectacle.

steppes high, partly of flaming Bitumen, and partly of small stones; where the Image of a manne cutte in marble was ioyned, two fourfooted vnkowne beastes fastening vpon him, which (like madde dogges) seemed, they would teare the marble-mans guttes out of his belly. And by the Image stood a Serpent, besmeared all with gore bloud deuouring a marble Lyon, which Serpent compacted of Bitumen, and small stones incorporated together, was seuen and fourtie feete in length, and as thicke as a great Ox. Next vnto it were three rafters or stakes fastened to the grounde, which three others crossed, vnderpropped with stones. In which place they punish malefactors condemned, for proofe whereof, they sawe innumerable broken arrows, all blouidie, scattered on the grounde, and the bones of the dede, cast into an inclosed courte neere vnto it. The houses also heere, are built of lime and stone. This king they called Lazarus because they landed vpon S. Lazarus day. They depart from thence, alwayes to the West 15. leagues: and take the prouince called Aguani. The towne thereof is called Moscobo, and their king Chiapoton, accenting the last sillable with a sharpe accent. This king sternly beholdeth our men like an enemy, and seekes to intrappe them with a Stratagem. For demanding water, they signifie vnto them that there is a fountayne on the other side of the next hill, where they were to passe through a narrow path: but by the changing of their countenances, and carrying of their bowes and arrowes; they perceived the deceit. Our men refused to goe any further. The Barbarians therefore charge them, and set vpon them, straggling & vnprovidd, and ouerthrowe aboue a thousande of our menne. Suche as fledde, sticke fast in the myre on the shore, for the Sea was very muddy there, by means whereof they shot 22. of our men through with their arrowes, and so slewe them, and for the most parte wounded the rest. They report that Francisus Fernandez himselfe Admirall of the Fleete, received 33. woundes almost none escaped scotfree: if they hadde marched forwarde to the hilles they shewed them, they hadde beene slayne eury man. They therefore that remained alive, returned sad and sorrowfull, to the Ilande Fernandina from whence they came, and are receiued by their companions with teares, and sighes, for those they hadde left behinde them, and those that were present, being wounded.

The prouince  
of Aguani.

1000. Spany-  
wre slayne by  
the Barbarians.

The Admirall  
was waded in 33  
places of his  
body by the  
Barbarians.

#### The thirde Chapter.

Diecus Velasquez Lieutenant Governour of Cuba Fernandina vnderstanding this, furnished a fleete of foure Caranelles, with 300. menne or thereabouts. And appoynteth his Nephew Iohn Grisalua Admirall of this litle Fleete, ioyning vnder officers with him, Alphonsus Auila Francisus Montegria, and Petrus Aluaradus, but for Pilotte the selfe same Anthonius Alaminus, who hadde the direction and regiment of the former Fleete. Who vnderooke the same voiage agayne, but sometimes more to the South. And hauing sayled some 70. leagues they discryed a tower spiring aboue the Sea, but sawe no land. By direction of which tower, they made towarde an Ilande called Cosumel, three leagues distaunt from whence (they say) they smelt the sweete sauour of fresh water the winde blowing from thence. They finde this Iland to be 45. leagues about, a playne lande, and a most fortunate and fertile soyle. It hath golde, not naturally growing there; but brought vnto it from foreine partes. It aboundeth with hony fruites, and herbes, and hath great plentie of soule and fourfooted beastes. That I may briefly conclude, the Oeconomick, and Politicall gouernment of these inhabitants, agreeth with theirs of Iucatan. Their houses, temples, streetes, and trade of marchandise are all one, and the apparell both of men and women is of Cotton, which the common people of Italie call Bombase, and the Spaniards; Algodon, not cloth of woll, or silke. Their houses of bricke or stone, are covered with reedes, where there is scarcitie of stones, but where Quarries are, they are covered with shindle or slate. Many houses haue marble pillers, as they haue with vs. They founde auncient towers there, and the ruines of such as hadde beene broken downe and destroyed, seeming very auncient: but one aboue the rest, whereto they ascended by 18. steppes or staires, as they ascende to famous, and renowned temples. These people wondered at our ships, and art of sayling. At the first encounter they were vnwilling to entertaine guests, but afterward they courteously admitted them. The Governour (whome they suppose to bee a Priest) conducted them

The Ilande  
Cosumel.

Their houses.

Auuncient Tow.

them vnto a tower, in the toppē whereof they erect a banner, and adiuſging the Dominion thereof to the king of Caſtile. They call the Iſlande Santa Cruce, becauſe they entered into the ſame the Nones of May, being then the feaſt of the holy croſſe. But they ſay, it was called Cozumella, of a certaine king Cozumellus, whoſe auncesters (as he vaunteth) were the firſt inhabitants of this Iſlande. In the tower they founde chambers, wherein were marble Idoles, or Statues, and Images of earth in the ſimilitude of Beeres, theſe they call vpon with loud ſinging all in one tune, and ſacrifice vnto them with fumes, and ſweete odors, worshipping them as their houſholde goddes. There they performe their diuine ceremonies, and adoration: they are alſo circumciſed. This king was apparelled with a garment of goſſampine cotton, curiouſly wrought, and had the toes of one of his ſeete cut of. For a deuouring fiſh called Tubero, violently snapped his toes of at a bit, while he was ſwimming. He honorably feaſted our men, and bountifully entertained them. After three daies they depart, ſaying directly to the Weſt, and eſpic great mountaines a farre of. Which they perceived to bee Iucatan, a land which they had already diſcouered, being but ſiue leagues diſtant from Cozumella. They take the South ſide of Iucatan (to witte) next the continent. They compaſſe it, but not all, by reaſon of the multitude of rockes, and ſandlie ſhelves. Then Alaminus the Pilot brings backe the ſhips to the North ſide of the Iſlande, already knowne vnto him. And at length came to the ſame towne Campechium and king Lazarus, to whom the former ſhips went the yeere before: of whom being gently receiued, they are invited to the towne. But they ſoone repented, that they had invited them. For within a ſtones caſt from the towne, the borderers will our men to ſtand, and command them to begon, our men deſire leaue to water before they depart. They ſhewe them a well behinde them, from whence (they ſay) they might draw water, but not elſewhere. They lodge at night in a ſelde nere vnto the well. The Barbarians miſtruſt, and about 3000; armed men incampe themſelues not farre from our men neither partie ſlept that night, they fearing our menne would breake into the towne, and our men ſuſpecting ſome ſudden aſſault of the Barbarians, wakened the ſleepy, with the ſound of the trumpet, and drumme. As ſoone as day began to peepe, the Barbarians came vnto them, and call for our Cuba Interpretours, whoſe ſpeech (though not the ſame) is notwithstanding ſomewhat like vnto it: and lighting a Torch of Frankincenſe, between both armies, they threaten to kill them, vnleſſe they quickly depart, before the torch bee extinguished, and plainly tell them, that they will haue no gueſts. The torch is put out, or conſumed they encounter hand to hand, and kill one of our men, whome they ſhot through his ſhield with an arrow, and wounded many: ſo that our men retired to the ordinance placed by the well, to diſcharge them vpon the Barbarians. The borderers retire vnto the towne, the ſouldiers with eger courage deſired to puniſhe the. The Admiral Grimalua forbiddeth them: from thence they proceed to the furtheſt end of Iucatan, & found it more then 200. leagues in length from Eaſt to Weſt. They go to an excellent harbor which they called the hauea of Deſire. Afterwardes they paſſe ouer ſea to other landes, and lande on the Weſt nere to Iucatan: and doubt whether it be any Iſlande or not. They ſuppoſe it to be annexed to the Continent, there they find a Bay, which they imagin to be compaſſed on both ſides with lande: but knewe no certaintie thereof. This lande is called Collua, or otherwiſe Olla, of the borderers. A mightie great river ſounde there, through the rage and violent current thereof into the Sea, yeeldeth potable waters for the ſpace of two leagues. They called the river (by the Admirals name) Grimalua; the bordering Barbarians wondering at the ſaying of their ſhippes, beſet both ſide of the river, to the number of 6000. warriors, armed with golden targets, bowes, and arrowes, and broode wudden ſwords, and ſpeares hardened in the ſire, to reſiſt their landings and to defend the ſhore. Both parties that night ſtoode in armes. At the firſt dawning of the day, behold, about an hundred Canoes full of armed men. Wee haue elſewhere ſayde, that the Canowes are little barks, made of one tree. Here the Interpreters of Cuba, and they, agreed well inough in language. Peace offered by the Interpreters, is admitted. One Canoa cometh vnto them, the reſt ſtande ſtill. The Maister of the Canow, demandeth what our men ſeek in ſtrang countries: they answer they deſire gold, but onely by exchange,

Santa Cruce.

Idoles.

Circumciſion.  
The Kiſſes ap-  
perſe.The Barbarians  
concey & make  
warre againſt the  
Spaniards.The hauea of  
Deſire.

Collua or Olla.

The river Gri-  
malua.  
Golden targets.

change, not of gift or violently. The Canow returneth to the king and the mariners report what they had done: the king being sent for, willingly commeth vnto them. O admirable thing (most holy father) & worthy to be reported: The king calles his chamberlane vnto him, willeth the furniture of his chamber to be brought, & commaundeth to seme our Generall Grisalua: therewithall: first therefore he beginneth to put him on golden shoes, bootes, breastplate, and whatsoeuer armour usually made of Iron, or Steele, a man of armes armed from top to toe vnto to wear when he cometh into the field, all that made of gold, wrought with wonderful art, the king bestoweth on Grisalua. Grisalua requieth him with vestures of silke; linnen; woollen, and other things of our country: In the beginning of this Iucatana, when they passed ouer from Cozumell, they light on a Canow of fishermē: wherin were 9. borderers, fishing with golden hookes: they take them all vnto, misdoubting nothing. The king knew one of the, & promised to send Grisalua as much gold the next day for his ransom as the man should weigh. Grisalua denied to release him without the consent of his felowes, and therefore kept him still, and departed desirous to know further what lay beyond them.

The Generall  
by a Barbarian  
King armed from  
top to the toe  
in complete  
gold.

## The fourth Chapter.

Saying about 100. leagues thence; alwayes to the West, they found a great gulfe, in the which 3. small Ilandes stood: they went vnto the greatest of them: But oh cruell impiety (most holy father) oh terrible & blouddie minds of men, let your holines close the mouth of your stomacke, least it be disturbed. There they offer vp their children, boyes and girles, vnto their Idols, they are circumcised. The Images which they worship, are some of marble, & some of earth. Among the marble Images, standeth a Lad, with an hole through the necke, into the which they poure the blond of those miserable wretches, that from thence it may run into a marble trough; let vs now declare with what ceremonies they sacrifice the blond of those miserable creatures. They cut not their throats, but ripping vp their breastes, they plucke out the heart of the vnhappie sacrifice, with whose warme blond they anoint the lips of their Idoles, and let the rest runne through into the trough, & then burne the heart vnopened, and the bowels; supposing it to be an acceptable fume vnto their gods. One of their Idoles hath the shape of a man, which bowing downe his head, looketh into the blouddie trenches, as it were accepting the oblation of the slayne sacrifices: they eate the brawnes of the armes, and fleskie partes of the thighs, and calves of the legges, especially if they sacrifice an enemy conquered in the warres. They founde a riuer of congealed and clotted blond, as though it had runne out of a butchery. For this wicked purpose, they transport poore soules from the bordering Ilandes: there they sawe innumerable heades and dead carcases mangled and cut in peeces, and very many whole, covered with mats. All those coasts abounde with golde & precious stones, one of our men wandering in the land, light vpon two hollow alabaster pitchers (cunningly wrought) full of stones of diuers colours. They say also that they find a stone of the value of 2000. Castellans of gold, which they sent vnto y<sup>r</sup> governor. This Ilande they called the Ilande of Sacrifice, there are also other Ilandes situate on the sides of this Coluacana; which women onely inhabit, without the societie of men. Some thinke they liue after the maner of the Amazones. But they that consider the matter more wisely, thinke them to be virgins living in common together, delighting in solitarines, as with vs, and in many places in auncient tyme, the virgins vestales, or such as were consecrated to Bona Dea used to doe. At certaine times of the yeere, men from the bordering Ilandes passe ouer vnto them, not for the cause of generation, but moued with pittie, to till their fields and dresse their gardens, through which manuring of the ground they might the better liue. Yet report goeth, that there are other Ilandes, but of corrupt women; who cutte off the pappes of their young children, that they may the better practise the art of shooting, and that men restore vnto them for the instant of generation, and that they keepe not the male children; but I thinke it a fable. Our men therefore at the shore of Coluacana, drew neere vnto the land, and quietly trafficke there. The king gaue our men a Cawdron, bracelets, chaynes, brooches, and manie other Iewelles of diuers kindes, and all

An Ilande  
wherin they sa-  
crifice their chil-  
dren to Idoles.  
The manner of  
their most abhor-  
minable sacrifice.

A precious stone  
of a great value.  
The Ilande of Sa-  
crifice.  
Ilandes of wo-  
men.

G. I. I.

of golde. Our men againe on the other part, gratifie him with our countrie commodities, and make him very cheereful. Here the cōpaign desired to settle themselves, and plant a Colonie, but the Admirall would not permit them. At that time the soldiers (companions in armes) were desperately bent against the Admirall. Their prouince consisteth of turreted houses: & hath also 15. very great townes, & in some places, they affirme, that they sawe townes of 20000. houses. The houses ioyne not euery where together, but are disscnered with gardens, and courts. Many of them are distaunt one from another. They haue streets compassed with walles, where they keepe their markets and fayres, they haue paved streets, ouens & furnaces, lime, & bricke: they haue also potters, & Carpenters, & other artificers, & haue gotten most excellēt workmen of all the mechanicall arts. This king is called Tausacus: the countrie Palmaria. They say the towne where he keepeth his courte, called Pontanchianum, consisteth of fiftene thousande houses. When they receiue straungers or newe gūestes, whoe entertayne peace with those countryes, in token of friendshipde, they drawe a little blood from themselves (with a razor, or a little knife made of stone) either out of the tongue, hand, arme, or any other part of the bodie, and this they doe, euen in the sight of the stranger. Their Priestes liue a single, and vacorrupted life. No man knoweth what the act of generatio meēteth, vntil he marry. It is a detestable and haynous matter, and punishabie with death, if they chauce to do otherwise. The women are maruelous chast. Euery great man afore he hath maryed a wife; may haue as many Concubines as he pleaseth: But the married wife being takē in adultery, is sold by her husband, yet only to his soueraign Prince, from whom, it shalbe lawfull for her kinsfolke to redeme her. It is not lawfull for any that is vnmaried to sit at table with such as are married, or to eate of the same dish, or drinke of the same cup and make themselves equall with such as are married. In the monethes of August, and September, they abstaine 35. dayes, not onely from flesh, whereof they haue the best, both of foule, and wilde beastes taken by hunting: but they doe not so muche as eate fish, or any thing which might nourish the blood: so that for those dayes of abstinence, they liue onely vpon hearbes, or pulse. Here our men spent a fewe dayes very pleasantly, afterward they depart, following the same shore, and meete with another king whom they call Ouandus. When the king vnderstoode our men desired golde, he brought them plates of moulten golde. The Admirall signified by the interpreters, that hee desired store of that mettall, the next day he commaunded the golden image of a man of a cubit long to bee brought and a fan of gold, and an Idol of one of their Domestick goods curiously wrought, and also garlandes of diuers stones. He gaue our men also great store of breast-plates, and brooches and ornaments of diuers kinds, and precious stones of severall colours. He also satisfied them with most delicate meates very sauorie and wel seasoned. Inuiting our men a shore, forthwith erecting pavilions or boothes by commaundement of the king, they speedily covered them with greene boughes. The king smote his domestick seruants (that were negligent in bringing of boughes) with the scepter he bare in his hand, the seruants with an humble countenance patiently beare the stripes he gaue them: the king being demanded, where so great plenty of gold was gathered, pointed with his finger to the next mountaines, and riuers runninge from them: these people are so used to riuers, and lakes, that it is all one to them to swimme or goe vpon the lande. When they desire to gather gold, they diue into the riuers, & bringe forth their hands full of sande. And siftinge the sande from hande to hande, they picke out the gold. In the space of two houres, they are report to fill a cane as bigge as a mans finger, with gold. Smooth, and pleasinge words might be spoken of the sweete odors, and perfumes of these countryes, which we purposely omit; because they make rather for the effeminatage of mens minds, then for the maintenance of good behauiour. The Admirall refused a boy of 12. yeeres of age which the kinge offered him, but receiued a yonge Virgin richly adorned, and reiected the boy, contrary to the mindes of the company. Of the precious stones they had from this king, they write, that one, was worth 2000. Castelanes of gold. So, at length they depart from this kinge, laden with gold and precious stones. The Admirall Grisalax sendeth one of the Carauels to the Lieutenant Gouverneur of Fernandina his vncle with messengers, who had the gold and precious

15. very great townes in Colonias & is the name of it.

Palmaria.

A strange ceremony of these Barbarians at the receiving of strangers. Single life. Chastity.

Adultery.

The honorable estimation the Barbarians haue of marriage.

General Law.

Rich plates of golde were brought vpon the Admirall.

Swimming & diving into the bottomes of riuers for gold.

Seuered odors.

A name of a great value.

precious

precious stones: In the meane space, the rest followe the shoare towards the West. But one ship wherein Francisus Montegrius the Viceadmiral was, sayled hard by the shoare, and the two other kept a loofe within vewe of the lande. The borderers wondering at them, ascribe the strangenes of the matter to miracle. Thirteen Canoas came vnto Montegrius, by interpreters speake together, and courteously salute each other: The borderers humbly intreat thē to come a shoare and promise them great matters, if they would goe to the king of the country. But Montegrius saith he cannot yield to their intreaties, because his companions were to farre of from him, yet he sent them away contented giuinge thē certaine gifts of our country commodities, which pleased them well. From thence they goe vnto another famous towne & the 3. Carauelles together approached neere the shoare, but the borderers with their targets, bowes, quiuers full of arrowes and broad wooden swords & lauelins hardened at the end with fire, came fortharmed to our men, to resiste their landinge, & shot at them afarre of, but our menne discharged their ordinance against them. The Barbarians wonderinge at the thundring of the greate Artillerie, and astonished at the furie thereof, betake them to flight, and desire peace. Here our mens victualles began to faile them, & nowe the shippes were froised, & shaken, with long voiaiges. Grialua therefore contented with that which he had done, and found, to returne to the Iland Fernandina, without the good liking of his companions.

The borderers  
like to repulse  
the landing of  
the Spaniards,  
& at thastownde  
with soft verue  
of the greates  
artillerie are put  
to flight.

#### The fift Chapter.

WE will now diuert a litle, and handle another navigation, & then returne to these new found landes againe. The same Diecus Velasquez Governour of Fernandina, almost at that time whē he sent forth this nauy of 4. Carauels, appointed another voyage for one Caruauell onely, with one Brigantine to go in consort with 45. men. These vsed violence against the inhabitants. The people were Idolsters, and circumcised, & are bordering next vpo the shore of the supposed Continent. There are many fertile Ilandes, of a blessed & fruitfull soyle, Guanaxam, Guittillam, and Gaanaguam. From one of these, they violently tooke 300. harmless inhabitants of both sexes. This Ilande they called Sancta Marina. They thrust them into the Carauell, & returned to Fernandina. They leaue the Brigantine with 25. of their companie, to the intent to hunt for more men. The haueu where the Caruauell first arriued, is called the haueu of Carenas: this haueu is 200. and 40. leagues distaunt from the towne of S. Iames, the chiefe towne of the Iland of Cuba, this is a very long Ilande reaching in length to the West, which the Tropicke of Cancer diuideth. Fortune seeking reuenge for these miserable wretches, certaine of the keepers of the captiues go aland, and fewe remained in the Caruauell. The Ilanders hauing gotten opportunitie to recouer libertie, suddenly snatching vppe our mens weapons, fel vpon the keepers, & slew sixe of them, the rest leape into the sea. By which meanes the Ilanders possess the Caruauell, which they had learned to rule, so that they returne into their country, they lande not first at the same Iland, but at the next. They burne the Caruauell, cary the weapons away with them, and passe ouer to their companions in Canoas, and sette vpon our menne which were left in the Brigantine, overthrew them, and slew some of them. They who escaped, fled vnhappyly to the Brigantine: there standeth a great tree, next vnto the shore, in the top whereof they place a Crosse, and engrauē this inscription in Spanish vpon the vpper barge thereof: Vamos al Darien. Darien is a ryuer, on the shore wherof the chiefe towne of the supposed Continent is seated, called Sancta Maria Antiqua. The gouernour hauing intelligence thereof, speedily sendeth 2. shippes laden with souldiers, for succour of them that were left, but they consulted too long while all was done and past. Yet following the Crosse, they came to the shore, and read the letters ingrauen on the tree: but durst not attempt fortune with those desperate men that fled, well armed, and therefore returne backe againe. These men from the next Ilande, cary away 500. men & women as it had bin so many haers: thinking they might therefore lawfully doe it, because they were circumcised, the like mischance befell them arriuing at Fernandina: Of the 2. shippes, they fiercely assault one, and fighting eagerly, kill some of their Spanish keepers, the rest cast themselves into the sea, and swimme

The fift  
Ilands of  
Guanaxam  
Guittillam  
and Gaanaguam.  
300. Barbarians  
taken Captiues.  
The haueu of  
Carenas.

The Captiues  
escape and slay  
sixe of the  
Spaniards.

The riuer  
Darien.

500. men and  
women taken  
& the success  
ascriuē to  
the force.

swamme to the next Carauell, which went in consort with them; and vauiting themselves all together with the Carauell which remained, assayed the other taken from them: the victory was doubtfull for 4. houres space the Barbarians, both men and women, for recouery of their libertie, fought very fiercely, and the Spaniards likewise with no lesse fury and courage encountered them; least they should loose the pray which was taken from them. At length the Spaniards were conquerers, because they were more nimble and readie in handling their weapons. The vanquished Barbarians cast themselves headlong into the sea, but are taken vp againe in boates: so that those that were slaine in fight, and drowned in the water, were about 100. persons. Of the Spaniards but fewe were wanting. The Barbarians that remained alive, are sent to the towne of S. Iames, and to the mines of gold. Shortly after they goe vnto another of the neighbouring Ilandes: which are more in number there then Simplegades in our Ionian Sea, which multitude of Ilands they commonly call Archipelagus. Here, as many of our me as went a shore out of the ships, were entertained with hostile armes, and slaine or wounded: they suppose this Iland to be that whereunto Iohannes Pontius the Captain of one ship went and left them much disquieted, being repulsed by the inhabitantes, and called it Florida: because he founde that Ilande, on the day of the resurrection: the Spaniard calleth Easter, the flourishing day of the resurrection. They report, they saw, 26. Ilands, which Colonus had overpassed, as it were so many daughters of Hispaniola and Cuba, and quarters of the supposed Continent, to breake the force of the stormes coming from the Ocean. In many of these, they found native graynes of gold. These people also weare diuers Jewelles, and vse gilded wooden Idols of their household gods, and some of gold very artificially wrought, they are most curious and ingenius workemen euery where. Francisus Chierogatus your holiness his Nuncio to our Caesar in Spaine, brought one of their Idols with him, whereby you may gather how ingenius they are. It is a maruileous thing to see the making of their razors. They forme them of certaine yelow stones cleere and transparent as chrystall, and with them they shaue, no otherwise, then if they were made of the most excellent Steele. But that which is most admirable, and worthe the beholding, when they haue a blunt edge through long vse, they sharpen the not with a whet-stone, or other stone, or powder, but temper them onely by putting them into a certaine water. They haue also among them a thousande kindes of instruments and tooles, & other excellent fine things, which were too long to rehearse, & peraduenture tedious to your holines, so much busied with matters of great importance. I returne therefore from whence I digressed, to Cozumella, Iucatan, and Coluzama; or Oloa, riche and pleasant landes as Hispania, lately found out, from which I diuerted, where it is sufficiently knowne, of how great moment those tracts & countries are.

## The sixt Chapter. 11

The new inhabitants of the Iland of Cuba, (the Spaniards) with the consent of the governor, furnish a new navy of ten Carauells, with 500. men, ioyning three Brigantines with them as light horsemen, whose helpe they might vse to sounde the shallowe shores, and to discouer the dangers of many rocks. They shippe 16. horses, fit for warre: and choose Fernandus Cortesius (who then was chiefe Commaunder of the Citie of Cuba) Generall, and Admirall of the navy, and for vnder officers they appoynt Alphonsus Fernandez Porticarceries, Francisus Montegius, Alphonsus Auila, Aluarus the Spatsian Commendatory, Iohn Velasquez, and Diecus Ordazus. They still followe the same winde (from the last angle of Cuba to the West) which first Francisus Velasquez did, and after him Iohn Grisclus, and so came to the Iland of Sacrifices, whereof I made mention before. Heere a sharpe and boistrous wynde forbade them to take lande, and a cruell tempest carryed them backe againe to Cozumella, lying on the East side of Iucatan, this Ilande hath onely one haven, which they called S. Iohns Port. It hath in it sixte townes onely, and hath no other water, then such as is in wellles and cisternes. It wanteth riuers and fountaynes because it is a playne lande: and is onely 45. leagues in circuit about. The inhabitantes fled vnto the thicke woodes, and forsake their townes for feare, our men enter their desolate and empty houses, and feede vpon their country

The Barbarians fight with the Spaniards.

100. Barbarians slaine and wounded.

Archipelagus.

Florida.

26. Ilands.

Gold.

Idols of gold.

A wonder is it that they should be such excellent workmen ship amongst the Indians without the vse of metals and Iron.

S. Iohns Port.

country victualles, and found there, furniture for houses of diners, colours, rich and costly hangings, garments, and coverlets, which they call Amaceas of gossampine cotton. Besides all this (most holy father) they founde innumerable bookes: of the which, together with other things brought to our newe Emperour, we will hereafter speake at large. Our souldiers, viewed the llande diligently throughout, yet still keeping themselves in battayle array, least any violence might assaile them. They finde but few of the inhabitants, and one woman only in their companie. By the Interpreter of Cuba, and three others, which the former Spaniards had taken from Iucatan, they perswaded the woman, to sende for the absent kings. The inhabitants were the familiar friends of this woman, the kings conducted by the woman, came with her, who sent messengers for them, made a league of friendship with our men, and cheerefully returne vnto their country houses, and had much of their stuffe restored vnto them. They founde them Idolaters, & circumcised. They sacrifice children of both sexes to their Zemes which are the Images of their familiar and domesticall spirits, which they worship. Alaminus the Pilot, Franciscus Montegius, & Poruacarricus, the messengers who brought the presentes to the king, being demanded by me, from whence they had the children they offered in sacrifice: answered, that they were brought to be sold from the collateral llandes, for exchange of gold, & other merchandize. For in so huge and spacious a llande, the cursed care of damnable money hath no where yet possessed the inhabitants. They report also the same of other lands lately found two of the which llandes they call Bian and Segestian. For want of children they sacrifice dogges: they nourish also dogs to eate, as our nation doth Conies: which dogs cannot bark, & haue snouts like foxes. Such as they purpose to eate, they geld. They reserve store of bitches for increase, and but a small number of dogs, as our shepherds do, of the sheepe. They that are gelded growe morosefull fat. Our men diswaded them from sacrificing men, and told them howe abominable it was. These Barbarians desire a lawe which they might followe. They easily perswaded them that there was one God, who created heaven and earth, and was the giuer of all good things, being one in substance vnder a triple person. They suffer their Zemes to be broken in peeces: & set vp the paited Image of the blessed virgin (which our me gave the) in a sacred place of y temple, they pare, & sweep y temple, & the pavement thereof. They receiued also a Crosse to be worshiped, in remembrance of Religion, God himselfe, and that man, who died thereon for y saluation of mankind: and on the toppe of the temple they erected a great wooden Crosse. They all assemble themselves together, and with reuerent feare, and trembling, humbly adore the Image of the blessed Virgin in the temple. These Inhabitants signified by interpreters vnto our men, that there were seuen captiue Christians in the bordering lland Iucatan, who arryued there being driuen thither, by tempest. This lland is only five leagues distant from Iucatan: The Admirall Cortes understanding this presently dispatcheth fiftie menne with two Carauelles for that business: who carrie with them three Cozumellanes to make inquirie for them, with letters also from the Admirall to the Christians, if they were to bee founde. Ouer these fiftie men and two Carauelles hee appointed Diecus Ordassus chiefe commander, who was a warlike and valiant man; and declareth vnto them howe honourable an act they shoulde performe, if they could bring any of them. Hee earnestly commendeth the matter vnto them, for he hopeth to haue some light from them of all those tracts and countries. They fortunately depart; sixe dayes were appointed them for their returne, they stayed eight. Our men suspected that the Cozumellane messengers, were either slaine or detained, because they stay so long: & therefore returne to the Admirall to Cozumella leauing them behinde. Nowe the Admirall began to thinke of his departure from Cozumella (despayring of the Christians, whom he so much desired, and of the Cozumellanes they had left behinde) but the opposite violence of the sea withheld him. While they stay, behold frõ the West, they discry a Canow coming from Iucatan, which brought the Cozumellanes and one of the captiue Christians, called Hieronimus Aquilaris, an Astigitan Vandall who had liued 7. yeers among the Iucatanes: with what ioy each embraced other, this casual accident may declare. Hee reporteth vnto them his owne hard chauce & the miserable condition of his copanions lost together with him and they harken vnto him with attentive minds. Here I thinke it not much from the

Rich hangings.  
Bookes.

They sacrifice  
children.  
Circumcised.  
Sacrificing of  
children.

For in so  
Marchandise of  
children for  
gold.  
It is said that  
the captiue  
children were  
sold for  
gold.

The Britian  
early before  
there is a  
God.  
So apte a  
people to  
receive  
the doctrine  
of Religion,  
the more to  
be  
lamented that  
more that  
were they  
had beene  
discovered by  
the  
small Spaniards  
that might not  
so much their  
precious soules  
as their golden  
mines.

A captiue  
Christian  
liued 7.  
yeers among  
the Iucatanes.

Valdina and his  
comrades for-  
tune.

matter, nor troublesome to your Holinesse, if I release how this mischance befel them. In my former Decades I made mention of a certaine noble man called Valdina, sent frō the Spaniards which inhabited Darien in the supposed Continēt of the gulfie of Vrabia, to Hispaniola to the vice roy and Admirall Colonus, & to the Kings counsel (to whom the ordering & redresse of matters touching the supposed Cōtinent appertained) to signifie with what penalty they were punished, and what want they had of all things. Vnhappy Valdina tooke this matter vpo him in an vn lucky houre: for in the view of the land Iamzica, on the South side of Hispaniola & Cuba, a suddaine whirlwind droue him vpon the Quicksandes. These blinde and swallowing shoales of sandes the Spaniards call the Vipers, and that very aptly, because many shippes are there intangled, (as Lycertes with the Vipers tayle) and so drowned. Here the Carauell splitte in peeces, so that Valdina with thirtie of his companions could scarce descende into the shyppe boate: where, without oares, and sayles, these miserable wretches were violently caried awaie by the strong current of the Sea. For (as wee sayde before in our Decades) the Seas flowe there in a perpetuall course towards the West. Thus they wandered thirtene dayes, not knowing whether they went, nor euer found any thing to eat. By meanes whereof 7. of them perished through famine, and became foode for the fishes. The rest that remained alive, now fainting through famine, were driuen to Iucatan: where they fell into the handes of a cruell king, who slew the Captaine Valdina, with certaine of his companions, and presently sacrificed them to their Zemes, & then inuited his friends, hee ate them. These Barbarians ate ouerly their enemies, or such strangers as come vnto them, otherwise they abstaine from mans flesh. This our Hieronimus Aquilaris, and 6. of his fellows, were kept till the third day to bee sacrificed: but they brake their bands by night, and so escaped the hands of this cruell and bloody Tyrant. They fle to another king who was his enemy, & humbly submit themselves vnto him, and are receiued, but as bondmen, and slaves. It is a lamentable thing to heare of the mother of this Aquilaris, whā shee vnderstood the matter, shee presently fell mad, though shee had heard it onely but vncertainly reported, that hee fell into the handes of men-eaters: so that when soeuer shee sawe fleshe roasted, or put on the spit, shee would fill the house with her outcries, saying: Behold the members of my sonne. O most miserable and wretched mother, the most vnhappy of all women. Aquilaris therefore hauing receiued the Governours letter, sent by the Cozumellane messengers, declareth before the king his maister called Taxmarus, what netes the Cozumellanes brought: And discourseth at large of the power of their king, who were arrived in those partes, and of the fortitude of the menne and their bounty towards their friends, and rigor toward those that refused, or denied their requestes. Wherewith hee made Taxmarus tremble, insomuch, that hee intreateth his seruant that hee would so handle the matter that they might not enter his dominions as enemies, but would come peaceably vnto him. Aquilaris promiseth peace, and if neede were to succour and ayde him against his enemies. Wherupon hee dismissed Aquilaris, and giues him three of his familiars for his companions. These things thus prosperously succeeding, Cortes joyfull for the preservation of Aquilaris, whom he might vse as a fit interpreter, departeth from Cozumella. Note therefore let vs declare, whether that flecte went, and what happened vnto them.

Valdina and  
certaine of his  
companions  
slew, and sa-  
crificed to the  
King Zemes.

The mother of  
Aquilaris fell  
mad, and the  
cried.

Aquilaris de-  
clared of the  
loyalty of the  
Barbarians.

#### The seuenth Chapter.

SO then, Alaminus the Pilot directing their course, they fall downe to the riuier which Grisalua had first discovered before: and found the mouth thereof stopped with sand, as we read of the riuier Nilus of Egypt, when the wind bloweth Easterly, about the Caticular dayes. They could not therefore proceede against the streame in greater vessels, then Brigantines, although else where it be apt to receiue such shippes. The Governour sendeth 200. men in Brigantines & boates vpon the shoare, offereth peace by Aquilaris. The borderers demanded what they would haue? Hieronimus Aquilaris answered, victuals. There was a large sandy plaine: on the side of the towne, whether the inhabitants will them resorte. The day following our men goe thither, and they bringe them eight of their hennes, as bigge and as saoury meate as Peacocks some what of a brownishe colour, and brought also as much  
Maizium,

Maizium, as woulde scarce haue sufficed tenne hungry menne: and withal protest and plainly tell them, that they speedily depart thence. A greates multitude of armed menne come flocking to our men refusing to departe, and the Barbarians demande againe, what they meant to sayle through other mens countries. Our menne (by Aquilaris) answered, they desire peace, and victuales for exchaung of commodities, and gold also if they haue any. They answered, that they will neyther haue peace nor warre with them, and that they shoulde bee gone againe, vnlesse they woulde bee kilde euery manne. Our menne sayde, and repeat it againe, that they woulde not departe, without plenty of victuales, sufficient to maintayne the soldiers that were prescete. The Barbarians appoynte to bring them victuales the nexte day, but they fayled: yet the thirde day, after our menne had incamped on the sandes, and stayde there all night, they brought them as much more victuales as before, and in their kings name commaunded them to depart. Our men sayde, they desired to see the towne, and to haue better victuales yet. They denie their request, and murmuring turne their backs. Our men oppressed with hunger, are compelled to seeke food. The Governour therefore sendeth his vnder Captaines a lande with 150. men, who goe sundry wayes (diuiding themselves in severall companies) vnto the countrie villages. The Barbarians cullly intreated one of the troopes they met: but their companions were not farre from them, who hearing the sound of the alarm, came to rescue them beeing in danger. On the other part, the Governour planteth the Ordinance in the Brigantines, and boates: and draweth neere the shoore with the rest of the soldiers, and 16. horses. The Barbarians prepared to fight, runne speedily to defend the shoore, and withstand their landing, and with their arrowes and darts, hit some of our men a farre off, and wounded about 20. persons vnprepared, whereupon the Governour discharged the great Ordinance against the enemy, who with the slaughter which the bullets made, the thundering of the Artillery, and flashing of the fire, are astonished and discomforted. Our men cast themselves into the water, and ranne vp to the knees, to pursue the stragling enemy flying, and together with the affrighted Barbarians enter the Towne. The Barbarians with continued course passe by the Towne, and forsake their houses. On the banke of this river, they say, there standeth a wonderfull huge towne, greater then I dare report. Alaminus the Pilot sayth it is a league and an halfe long, and containeth 25000. houses. His companions lessen the greatnes, and number of the houses: yet they confesse, it is a wonderfull great and famous towne. The houses are diuided with gardens, and are built of lime and stoue, cunningly wrought by the industrious art of the Architect. Vnto these houses or habitations they ascend by 10. or 12. steppes or stayres. For none may charge his neighbours wall with beames or rafters. All the houses are separated the distance of .3. paces asunder, and for the most part are covered with reede, thatch, or marsh sedge: yet many of them are covered with slate, or shindle stone. The Barbarians themselves openly confessed, that they were 4000. men in battaile that day, yet vanquished of a few by reason of the newe and strange kind of fight, with horses, and shot, for the horsemen assaying the Barbarians in the reere ouertrew their troupes, slew and wounded them on the right side, and on the left, as disordered flocks of sheepe. These sillie wretches stroken with astonishment at this miraculous & strange sight stooode amased, and had no power to vse their weapons. For they thought the man on horse-backe and the horse to haue beene all one beast, as fables report of the Centaures. Our men held the towne 22. dayes, where they made good cheere vnder the roofo, while the hungry Barbarians abode in the open ayre, and durst not assayle our men. They chose the strongest parte of the Towne; as it were a Castle of defence, and securing themselves with continuall watch by night, alwayes suspitious, and fearing some violent assault, they gaue themselves to rest and sleepe, vnder the King Tanosco. The Inhabitants call the towne Potanchium, and by reason of the victorie obtained there, our men called it Victoria. They report also wonderfull and strange things of the magnificence, greatnes, and finenesse of their countrie pallaces built (for their delight) vpon their possessions or farmes, with solars, square courtes to receiue the raine, and excellent, bordered rooms, after our fashion. At length by Interpreters, and such as were taken in battaile, they sende for the King, and those that were cheife in authoritie vnder him, and perswade

The Barbarians  
flee with the  
soldiers to the  
Coastland.

A wonderfull  
large towne on  
the banke of  
the river.

The conceits of  
the Barbarians  
when they saw  
men on horse-  
backe.

Victories  
towne.

swade them to come vnzarmed, and submit themselves. They obey their commands; and restore ebery man vnto their homes, whereupon they assure them of peace vpon certaine conditions proposed; that they abstaine from the horrible ceremonies of mens' bodies which they sacrificed to their Zemes, and pernicious deults, whose image they worshipped, and direct the eyes of their mind to our God Christ; the father of Heauen and earth; borne into the world of a Virgin, and crucified for the redemption of mankind; & that they breakē downe their images, and finally profess themselves to become subiect to the King of Spaine. All which they promise: and at the shortest of time would performe, they were instructed. Being restored our men giue them content by presenting them with our countrie commodities. They suppose such men to bee sent from Heauen, who being so fewe in number durst hieounter hande to hand, against so huge a multitude. They likewise also gaue our men certayne presents of gold; and twenty women slaues. So leauing them, they depart to seeke out other lands of the same shoare; and goe vnto a gulfe found out by Alaminus vnder the condict of Gristalua; which they named S. Iohas Baye, for Ihan in the Spanish tongue signifieth a gulfe. The inhabitants come peacefully vnto them. The towne was some mile distant from the shoare situate vpon an hill, containing 500. houses, as they reporte. They invite them to lodge in the towne; and offer them the halfe parte thereof, if they will dwell with them for euer. Our menne thought they were cyther terrified with the example of the Inka's bitatties of Potenchianum; having heard the report thereof, or else, hoped (vnder the protection of such men) to haue fauour & aide against the bordering enemies. For euen these people also are continually sicke of this naturall disease; at the rest of mankind, miscarried through raging ambition of souerainie and dominion. Our men refused to seate themselves there still, but graunt to stay with them for a time. The people follow our men returning to the shoare, and with greate diligence erect boathes for them, and cottages made of boughes; and couer them the safest way to shelter them from raine. There they incampe: and least the rest of the company should growe slouthfull, the Admirall chargeth Alaminus the Pilot and Franciscus Montegius to inducouer to search the West part of that land: and that in the meane time hee woulde vbercate and refresh the feeble and weary soldiers; and cure those that were wounded at Potenchianum. The Admirall therefore remaineth with the rest. When they were readie to goe, he giueth them 2. Brigantines and 50. men. To this gulfe, the course of the water was very smooth: but when they had sayled a little further vnto the West, the violence of the Sea in short space transported them 50. leagues from their fellowes, as if they had bene forcibly carried away with a swift streame falling from the high mountaynes. They light on a place where two waters meete together, discouering it selfe to them to be an huge plaine sea; which met with the waters running to the West, as two mighty riuers; when they meete one against the other. So the waters coming from the South seemed as if they would resist them as enemies, setting foote in anothers right, against the will of the true possessor thereof. Opposite to which concourse of waters, they sawe land a farre off, but on the right hand, and on the left nose. Floing betweene these conflicters, they were tossed hether and tither with the whistle pooles, which had almost swallowed them insomuch that for a long space they doubted of any hope of life. Thus struing with stayle and oares, they were scarce able to ouercome the violence thereof, for when they thought, they hadde one night sayled two leagues forward, they founde that they were driuen backe foure. Yet at the length, through Gods fauour and helpe, they ouercome this dangerous conflict: they spent twentie two dayes in that little space of Sea, and retourne at length to their fellowes. They declare the matter vnto them: and adjudged it to be the end of the land of Hasolucana, & of the supposed Continent. The land which they saw before them, they suppose to be cyther annexed to our continent, or else to ioyne with the North partes to the Baccelars, whereof wee haue at large discoursed in our Decades. So that (most holy Father) this matter remaineth doubtfull yet, but will be discouered in time. These advertisementes they gaue vs, we deliuer to your Holinesse. While Alaminus, and Franciscus Montegius searched these secrets, the king of the Prouince, whose name was Muzcuzuma, by one of his nobles called Quitalbitor, who gouerned the foresayd towne, presented our men with many rich gifts of gold.

Comments for  
interpreting of  
Military and  
exercising of  
Christian religion, agreed  
vpon by the  
Dutchians.

S. Iohas Bay.

Viceroyall is the  
tytles of Am-  
bin.

Ala. p. 10.

gold and silver, and precious stones sette in golde, curiously wrought after a marvellous strang manner, which they determined to send vnto our new Emperour the King. They consult concerning the planting of a Colonie, without the aduise of Diegas Velasquez Governour of Cuba, and differ in opinion. Some hold it as a fowle error, but the greatest part seduced through the subtilty, and practise of Cortes, gaue him their voyces and consent. Here many things are reported against Cortes; touching his treachery and false dealing, which shall be better knowne hereafter, and therefore now may be omitted. They say, that they were not to respect the Governour of Cuba, seeing the matter should be brought before an higher Iudge, (to wit) the King of Spaine himselfe, so the multitude preuailed. Wherefore they desire victuales of Quantalbor the king, & assign the place for plantatio of their Colonie, 12 leagues fro thence in a most blessed and fertile soyle. And for their General and Commander they chose Cortes himselfe, (as some thinke) against his will. Who createth other Magistrates to gouerne the citie which they purposed to build. They chose Portucarrerius, and Monteguis (of whom else where I haue sufficiently spoken) as messengers to carry the presents to the Emperour the King of Spaine, vnder the conduct of the sayd Alaminus the Pilot. Power of the nobles willingly offer themselves, with two women to attende the after the fashion of their country, which they likewise brought. The people are somewhat of a brownish colour. Both sexes peire the flappes of their eares, where they hang pendants of gold beset with precious stones. But the men bore whatsoever space remayneth betweene the vppermost part of the nether lippe, and the rootes of the teeth of the lower chapp: and as we sette precious stones in gold to weare vpon our fingers, so in that hole of the lippes, they weare a broad plate within, fastened to another on the outside of the lippe, and the iewell they hang thereat is as great as a silver Caroline doller and as thicke as a mans finger: I doe not remember that I haue sawe so filthy and ougly a sight: yet they thinke nothing more fine or comely vnder the circle of the Moone. By which example we are taught, how foolishly mankind runneth headlong, blinded in his owne errors, and how wee are all deceiued. The Ethiopian thinketh the blacke colour to be fairer, then the white: and the white man thinketh otherwise. Hee that is polled, thinketh himselfe more amiable then hee that weareth long hayre; and the bearded man supposeth hee is more comely then he that wanteth a beard. As appetite therefore moueth, not as reason perswadeth, men run into these vanities, and eery prouince is ruled by their owne sense, as one sayth, we chose vaine things, and abhorre things certaine and profitable. Whence they haue gold wee haue sufficiently spoken, but our men wondred whence they had their silver. They shewe them high mountaynes continually covered with snow, which fewe times of the yeere shewe their bare topps, by reason of thicke cloudes and mists. The playne and smooth mountaines therefore seeme to bring forth gold, and the rough craggy hilles and colde vallies ingender silver. They haue copper also. They found battayle axes, and digging spades among them: but no iron or Steele. Let vs now come to the presents which were brought to the king, and begin first with the bookes.

## The eight Chapter.

We haue sayde before, that these nations haue bookes: and the messengers who were Procurotors for the new Colonie of Colmacana, (together with other presents) brought many of them with them into Spayne. The leaues of their bookes whereon they write, are of the thin inner rinde of a tree growing vnder the vpper barke: I thinke they call it Philyra, not such as is within the barke of Willowes or Elmes, but such as we may see in the wooly and downy partes of dates, which lyeth within the hard outward rinds, as nets interlaced with holes, and narrow spots. These mashes or little nettings they stampe in a mortar together with Bitumen, and afterward being softened binde and extend them to what forme they please, and being made hard againe, they smere and annoynt them with playster, or some matter or substance like playster. I thinke your Holinesse hath seene table bookes, ouerstrued with playster beaten and sifted into fine dust, wherein one may write whatsoever he pleaseth, and after with a sponge or a cloath blot it out, and write thereon againe. Bookes also



A Colonie created.

The people of a leuare colour. Eare rings.

Lippe leuels.

Constitutione nihil feruiss. Senec. All is but opinion.

Snow.

Copper.

Bookes.

are cunningly made of the fig-tree timber, which stewards of great houses carry with them to the market, and with a penne of mettall sette downe the wares which they haue bought, and blot them out againe when they haue entred them in their bookes of account. They make not their books square leafe by leafe, but extend the matter and substance thereof into many cubites. They reduce them into square peeces, not loose, but with binding, and flexible Bitumen so conioyned, that being compact of wooden table bookes, they may seeme to haue passed the hands of some curious workman that ioyned them together. Which way soeuer the booke bee opened, two written sides offer themselves to the view, two pages appeare and as many lye vnder, vnlesse you stretch them in length: for there are many leaues ioyned together vnder one leafe. The Characters are very vnlike ours, written after our manner, lyne after lyne, with characters like small dice, fishhookes, snares, files, starres, & other such like formes and shapes. Wherein they immitate almost the Egyptian manner of writing, and betweene the lines, they paint the shapes of mē, & beasts, especially of their kings, & nobles. Wherefore it is to bee supposed that the worthy acts of euery kings ancestors, are there set downe in writing, as we see the like done in our time, that oftentimes the Printers insert the pictures of the authors of the matter deliuered into generall histories, and fabulous bookes also, to allure the mindes of such as are desirous to buy them. They make the former wooden table bookes also with art to content and delight the beholder. Being shut, they seeme to differ nothing from our bookes, in these they set downe in writing the rites, and customes of their lawes, sacrifices, ceremonies, their computations, also, & certayne Astronomical annotations, with the manner and time of sowing and planting. They begin the yeere from the going downe of the Starres, Pleiades, or Virgilie, and end it with the moneths of the Moone. For they call a moneth a moone, hereupon when they intend to signify moneths, they say moones. They call the moone in their language Tona: and reckon the dayes by the Sunne: therefore naming so many dayes they say so many sunnes, and in their language they call the Sunne Tonatico: yet somewhere it is otherwise, where yet without shew of reason they diuide the yeere into 20. moneths, and include the moneths also into 20. dayes. The huge Temples they frequent, they adorne with golden tapestry, and other furniture intermixed with precious stones. Every day as soone as light beginneth to appeare, they perfume their temples, and offer deuout prayers before they take any thing in hand. The inhabitants also of these countreys vse horrible impietie in their sacrifices, for

The Characters which the Indians vse.

The reliet of the Indians bookes.

A moneth a moone.

Their division of the yeere. The cutt the Indians vse on their temples very absurdly. Profr.

Scilla.

The supplication of this peop.

as I haue sayd before, they sacrifice children of both sexes to their Idols. At what time they cast their seede into the ground, and when the corne beginneth to shoote out in eares, the people for want of children, sacrifice slaues (bought with money, daintily fed, and richly arrayed) vnto their Zemes. They circumsise them twentie dayes before they offer the to their Idols, who passing through the streets, are humbly saluted by the townesmen, as though they should shortly be reckoned among the number of the Godds. They honour their Zemes with another sharpe kinde of piety, and deuotion: for they offer their owne blood, one out of the tongue, another out of the lippes, some out of the eares, and many out of the breast, thigh, or legges. This blood they draw from them, by cutting and gashing themselves with a sharpe rasor, which as it droppeth they receive in their hands and casting it on high towardes heauen, besprinkle the pavement of the Church therewith, supposing the godds are thereby pacified. Twelue leagues distant from the new Colonie Vizta richa, on the East standeth a towne of 5. thousand houses, by the ancient name of the inhabitants, called Cempool, but by a new, Siuilla. The King of this towne had fine men imprysoned reserued for sacrifices:

which our men hauing taken away, hee humbly desired to haue them restored, saying, you bring destruction vpon me, and all this my kingdome, if ye take the slaues away from vs, which we determined to sacrifice. For our Zemes being displeas'd when our sacrifices cease, will suffer all our corne to be eaten with the weeuell, or to bee beaten downe with hayle, or consumed with drough, or to be hid flat to the ground with violent showerrs. Least therefore the inhabitants of Cempool should desperately revolt from them, our men chose the lesse euill for the present, supposing it was no time to forbid them to vse their ancient & accustomed ceremonies, and therefore restored the slaues.

Although

Although the Priestes promise them eternall glory, and perpetuall delights; and familiarity with the Godds after the stormy dayes of this world: yet they hearken to these promises with heauie cheere, and had rather bee deliuered, then put to death. They call their Priestes Quines, in the singular number Quin, who liue vnmarried; a pure and chaste life; and are honoured with reuerent feare. They also hang vp the bones of their enemies taken in the wars after they haue eaten the flesh, bound together in bundles, at the feete of their Zemes, as trophes of their victories, with the titles of the conquerours vnder them. They report also another thing worth the noting, which will bee very pleasing to your Holiness. The Priestes seeme to baptise children both males and females of a yeere olde, with holy ceremonies in their temples, pouring water crosse-wise out of a cruet vpon their heads, and although they vnderstand not their words, yet they observed their murmurs and actions: neyther do they as the Mahometanes or Iewes, thinke their temples profaned, if any of another sect be present at their sacrifices, or ceremonies. Wee haue now spoken sufficiently of their bookes, Temples, and rites and ceremonies of their sacrifices, let vs therefore proceede to the rest of the presents brought to the King.

A persuasion of the resurrection.

The bones of their enemies hangd up for trophies.

A kinde of baptizing with water, read enough them.

## The ninth Chapter.

They brought also two mills, such as may bee turned about with the hand, the one of gold, and the other of siluer, solid and almost of one circumference and compass: (so wit) twenty eight spannes about. That of golde weighed 3800. Castellanes. I sayd before, that a Castellane is a coyne of golde, weighing a third part more then the Ducate. In the center of this mill, was an Image of a cubite long, representing a King sitting in a throno, clothed to the knee, like vnto their Zemes; with such a countenance, as we vse to paint hobgoblins or spirites which walke by night. The field or plaine without the center was florished with boughes, flowers, and leaues. The other of siluer was like vnto it, and almost of the same weight: and both were of pure metall. They brought also graines of gold, as they grew, not molten, for proofe of natieue gold, which were as big as Lintels, and small pulse. And two chaynes of gold, wherof the one contayned eight linkes, wherin 232. redd stones were set, but not carbuncles, and 183. greene stones, which are of the same estimation therethat the best Emerodes are with vs. At the edge of this chaine, hang twenty seuen golden belles, and betwene euery bell foure iewels set in gold; at euery one wherof golden pendants hang. The other chaine had 4. round linkes, beset with 102. red stones, & with 172. greene, garnished with 26. golden belles. In the middle of the chaine, were 10. great precious stones set in gold, at the which 130. golden pendants hang, curiously wrought. They brought also by chaunce 12. payre of leather buskins of diuers colours, some embroydered with gold, and some with siluer, and some with precious stones, both blew, and greene. At euery of these hang golden belles: also certaine myters, and attyres of the head fall of diuers blew precious stones sowed in them, like vnto Saphires. I know not what to say of the crests, helmets, and finnes of feathers: if manns witte or inuention euer got any honour in such like artes, these people may woorthily obtayne the cheife souerainety and commendation. Surely I marueile not at the gold and precious stones, but wonder with astonishment with what industrie and laborious art the curious workmanship exceedeth the matter and substance. I beheld a thousand shapes, and a thousand formes, which I cannot expresse in writing: so that in my iudgement I neuer saw any thing which might more allure the eyes of men with the beauty thereof. The feathers of their foule vnknowne to vs, are most beautiful and shining. As they would admire our peacocks, or pleasant traines when they saw them: so did wee wonder at their feathers, with the which they make their fannes, and crests, and trimly beautifie all their worke. Wee sawe blew, greene, yellow, redd, white & brownish, to be natieue colours in feathers. All those instruments they make of gold. They brought two helmets covered with blew precious stones: one edged with golden belles, and many plates of gold, two golden knobbes sustaining the belles. The other covered with the same stones, but edged with 25. golden belles, crested with a greene soule sitting on the top of the helmet, whose feete, bill, and eyes were all of gold, and seuerall golden knobbes sustained euery

The rich gold brought to the King.

The Indians with all other artes in riches of workmanship.

every bell. Also foure trout-speares three-forked, covered ouer with quilles, and platted and wrought in, of diuers colours, the teeth whereof were full of precious stones, fastened together with golden threedes, and wyars: They brought also a great Scepter beset with precious stones after the same manner, with two golden ringes, and a bracelet of golde: and shoes of an Harts skinne, sowed with golden wyar, with a white sole in the bottom, and a looking glasse of a bright stone, halfe blew and white, set in golde, and by chaunce also they brought a cleere transparent stone called Spheugites. Likewise a Lybert set in gold, and two great shelles, two golden duckes, and the sandyrynges of diuers birds, and all of golde, foure fishes called Cephalo of massive gold, and a rodd of copper. Besides targets for the warres, and bucklers, 24. shieldes of gold, 5. of silver, what soeuer they brought was curiously wrought in with feathers. Also a light square target platted and wouen with quilles and feathers of diuers colours, in the front whereof, the middle of the golden plate was ingrauen with the portraiture of the Idoll Zemes. Foure other golden plates in maner of a crosse inclose the Image, wherein were the proportions of diuers beastes, as Lyons, Tygers, and Woolues, hauing their heads framed of twigges, and little splints of timber, with the skinnies of the beastes sowed vpon them, garnished with copper belles, and the shapes of diuers other beasts exceeding well made of the whole skinne. Likewise great sheetes of gossampine cotton, intermingled with blacke, white, and yallow colours, checker wise, which is an argument, that they are acquainted with chesse boards. One of these sheets, on the right side was chequered with blacke, white, and red colours, and on the inside, all of one colour, without variety. Another also wouen after the same manner, of other colors, with a blacke wheele in the middlest, full of rayes and spots, with bright feathers intermixed. Two other white sheetes also, Tapestry courtiers, rich Arras hangings, a little souldiers cloake or cassocke, such as they vse to weare in their countrie, with certaine wouen coates which they weare vnder the, and diuers thinne light tyres for the head. I omitte many other things more beautifull to behold, then precious, which I suppose would be more tedious to your Holiness, then delightfull to report: as also the innumerable particulars of the discoverers, concerning their labours, wantes, dangers, monsters, and many aduersities, whereof euery one in their motations largely discourse, which also are read and registred in our Senate of Indian affayres. These few observations I haue gathered out of many and diuers of their bookes, and priuate letters. Yet the bringers of these presents, and Ferdinandus Cortes the Admirall, and author of erecting the new Colony, in those remote countries; were adiudged by the Kings Councell of India, to haue done against equity and right, for that without the aduise of the Governour of Cuba, who by the Kings authority sent them forth; they took the matter vpon them contrary to his commandement, and that they went (although it were to the King) without his consent. Diecus Velasquez therefore, the Governour by his procurator accuseth them as fugitive threues, and traitours to the King: but they alledge, that they had performed much better seruice and obedience to the King, and that they appealed to a greater tribunal and an higher Iudger and say, that they furnished a nauie at their owne charge, and that the Governour himselfe parted with nothing vpon other termes, then as a marchant that was to receiue gaine and profit by his commodities, which they alledge, he sold at as farre dearer rate. The Governour requireth to haue them punished by death, they desire magistracy and offices of command, and reward for the dangers, and labours sustayned. Both the reward, and punishment are deferred: yet was it decreed, that both parties should be heard. Now let vs returne to the Darienenses the inhabitants of the gulfe of Vrabia in the supposed Continent. Wee haue sayd heretofore that Darien is a river falling into the West side of the gulfe of Vrabia. Vpon the banke whereof the Spaniards erected a Colony, expulging the King Camaccus by force of armes: and called the name of the Colony Sancta Maria Antiqua, by occasion of a vow made at the time of the fight. To these (as wee mentioned in the ende of our Decades) the same yeere wee ceased to write, 1200. men were sent vnder the conduct of Petrus Arias Abuleusis, at the request of Vasques Nunnus Balboa, who first discovered the South Sea heretofore vnknewne, and gouerned the Darienenses: Petrus Arias arriuing at Darien with ample authority from the King, we declared, that diuers Centurions were sent forth diuers wayes with diuers

diuers companies of foote: whereupon what followed I will briefly deliuer, because all was hideous and dreadfull, & nothing pleasing. Since our Decades ceased, no other thing was acted saue to kill, and be killed, to slaughter, and be slaughtered. The Catholique King created Vascus Balboa Atlantado, who could not brooke the sovereignty and commande of Petrus Arias, so that the dissention betwene them overthrew all: Iohannes Capedus the Bishop, preaching Fryer of the order of St. Francis mediated the matter betwene them, and promised to giue Vascus the daughter of Petrus Arias to wife. But no meanes might be found to make agreement betwene these two Commanders. They fall out much more cruelly, insomuch that the matter came to that passe, that Petrus Arias taking occasion against Vascus through proces framed by the magistrats of the city, commanded Vascus to be strangled; and b. other cheife Commanders with him, saying that Vascus and his confederates went about to rebel in the South Sea, where Vascus built a flecte of 4. shippes, to search the South shoare of the supposed Continent. And affirmeth, that to the 300 souldiers he had with him (his companions in armes) hee should speake these wordes. What, my friendes and fellow souldiers, partakers with me of so many labours, and dangers, shall we alwayes be subiect to anothers command? Who can nowe indure the insolency and pride of this Governour? let vs follow these shoares whither Fortune shall conduct vs, and among so many Eblian provinces of so huge a land, let vs chiose one, where at length wee may leade the remanant of our life in freedome and liberty. What manie shall be able to finde vs out, or having found vs do vs violence? These wordes being reported to the Governour, Petrus Arias sendeth for Vascus from the South: Vascus obeyeth his command, and is cast in pryson, and yet denyeth that he euer imagined any such purpose. Whereupon they sought to prodice testimony of the misdemeanours which he had committed: his wordes are repeated from the beginning, and he adiudged worthy of death, and was executed. So poore miserable Vascus (euen when he hoped to obtaine greater titles) ended the labours and dangers which he had vndergon. Petrus Arias, leaving his wife in Dariena, imbarcketh himselfe in the flecte, to search the countries lying on the shoare: but whether hee bee returned, we haue yet no certaine intelligence, so that Fortune playes her part also with him. For euen now another, whose name was Lapius Soia, being called home, from the fortunate Ilandes, where he had bene Viccroay a long time, was made Governour of the Darien: what stomacke Petrus Arias may haue, if he returne, let good men iudge. There was nothing done vnder his government, woorthy of glory. On the one side he is blamed for being too remisse, and negligent, and on the other, for being too fauourable, and nothing seuer in correcting errors and disorders. But we haue spoken enough of this matter: Now let vs repeat some things remayning yet behinde.

## The tenth Chapter.

OF the great and deepe river Dabaiba; called by our men Grandis, which falleth into the vttermost angle of the gulfe of Vrabia, by 7. ports or mouths as Nilus into the Egyptian Sea, we haue spoken at large in our Decades. The hilly countries thereof by report of the inhabitants are very full of gold. Vascus and other Commanders went foure times vp this river armed in battayle aray against the streame, with shippes of diuers kindes: first forty leagues, next fifty, then eighty, and at an other time crossed it, to search the secrets of Dabaiba: but O wonderfull mischeife and mischaunce. A naked people alwaies ouerthrew the clothed nation, the vnarmed the armed, and sometimes kild them euery manne, or wounded them all. They goe to the warres with poisoned arrowes, and where they can see the bare fleshe of their enemies, they will not fayle to strike them there. They haue likewise darts, which in the time of fight, they cast so thicke a farrre off, that like a cloude they take the light of the sunne from their enemies: and haue also broad wooden swordes hardened in the fire, wherewith they fiercely fight hande to hande, if they come to handie strokes, and Vascus himselfe sometime receiued many woundes at their handes. So the river of Dabaiba, and the kingdome were left vnsearched. It remayneth, that wee speake somewhat of Hispaniola, the mother of the other Ilandes. In it, they haue a full Senate, and sixe Iudges added

to them, to giue lawes to the people of all those tractes and Countries, but shortly they will leaue gathering of golde there, although it abound therewith, because they shall want myners, and labourers. The miserable inhabitants (whose helpe they vsed in gathering golde) are brought to a very small number: consumed from the beginning with cruell warres, but many more with famine, that yeere they digged vpp the roote Iucca, wherewith they made bread for their nobles, and ceased from sowing that graine Maizium their common bread: the spots and pustels of that soule disease heeretofore vnknowne vnto them, in the former yeere 1518 which like rotten sheep invaded the through a contagious breath or vapour, and withall, to speake truly, the greedy desire of gold in digging, sifting, & gathering whereof, they cruelly vexed these poore wretches, who after the sowing of their seede, were wont to giue themselves to idle sportes, dancing, fishing, or hunting of certaine conies, which they call Vitæ, consumed the rest. But now it is decreed by all the Kings Councell, that they be reduced to a free people, and giue themselves onely to increase or generation, and to tillage and husbandry: and that slaues else where bought, should be drawne to that labour of the gold mines. We haue spoken sufficiently of the deadly hunger of golde. It is a marueilous thing to heare how all things grow & prosper in this lland. There are now twenty eight suger-presses erected in it, wherewith they wring out great plenty of suger. They say, that higher and greater suger canes grow in this lland, then any where else: and that they are as thicke as a mans arme in the fleshy and brawny part, and of a mans stature, and an halfe high. And which is more strange, Valentia in Spayne, where our Ancestors made greate quantity of suger every yeere, or wheresoeuer they take most care and paines about their suger canes, and when every roote bringeth forth sixe, or seuen sprouting canes at the most: in Hispaniola, euery roote bringeth twenty and sometimes thirtie. The plentie of four footed bestes and cattle is exceeding great: yet the raging thirst of gold hath hetherto diuerted the Spanyard from tyllage. Corne increaseth wonderfully there, insomuch (as they say) it hath sometimes yeilded more then an hundred fould, where they are careful to sow it in the hilles, or tops of the mountaynes, especially towards the North. But in playne and open fieldes, it vanisheth to chaffe, by reason of the ranknesse, and excessive moysture thereof. Vines also grow in those parts: but what shoulde wee speake of the trees which beare Cassia-fistula, brought hether from the bordering llandes of the supposed Continent, mentioned in the bookes of our Decades? Whereof there is so great plentie now, that after fewe yeeres, wee shall buy a pound thereof at the Apothecaries, for the price of one ounce, I haue spoken sufficiently in my Decades of the Brasil woodes and other prerogatiues of this blessed lland, and also of the benefits which nature hath bountifully bestowed vpon it. I thought good also to repeat many things, because I suppose, the weight of your important affayres, might happily dissent your Holinesses mind from the remembrance thereof. And suoury and pleasing discources, distort not the lippes by repetition, so that a precious matter be adorned with rich and costly attire. The matten deserued a garment embroydered with gold, and precious stones: but wee haue covered it with a fryars coole. Let the blame therefore of my fault be imposed vpon the most reuerent Egidius Viterbiensis that well deuering Cardinall of your Holinesses sacred Sea Apostolical, who insoynd mee, being an vskilfull artificer to melt gold in a Smithes shopp, to frame costly jewels and ornaments therewith.

Has Peiri Martyris salebras, & spineta qua potuimus cura, & industria, iam tandem percurrimus, in quibus traducendis si temporis mora tibi nimis longa videatur, qui poteras, quod mihi oneris imposuisti facilius subire, qui acuto polles ingenio, & arte meliore: æquo tamen animo, & amica fronte feras, quod in hisce novi argumenti libellis studuerim magis veritati, quam verborum ornameto, aut breuitati,

M. Loex.

The 5. Decade of Peter Martyr a Millanoise of Angleria, dedicated to Pope Adrian the sixth.

MOST holy father, and most gracious Prince, I dedicated my fourth Decade of the state of India, to Pope Leo the tenth your most bountifull Cousin germane: wherein we have related with great fidelity, and integrity what newe, Ilands, or vnknowne Landes have bene discovered in the Ocean in our time, to the yere from the incarnation 1520. Since which time, other letters came from Fernandus Cortes, Admirall of the Emperours flecte, sent from those countries, which he had then subjected to the Spanish dominion, wherein newe and straunge matters were contayned, such as had neuer bene heard of before, very admirall and wonderfull. All which, as briefly and truly as I could, observing the order of the matter and times, I have pressed in this fift Decade of my Commentaries, which I dedicated to Pope Adrian your predecessour, and seeing he is departed this life before the receipt thereof, as you are heyre of his dignity, so be inheritor of my labours, as hereafter you shall see of all, if I write any thing worthy the historிக்க reading. I dedicate it therefore by name to your gracious and sacred maiesty, that vnder your happy protection and authority it may be published, & all men may know howe great an addition hath bin made vnto the name of Christ, since your Holinesse came to the Papacy which the Almighty, (as I hope, and desire) for your piety, and clemencies sake, will infinitely increase. Proceede therefore, as you have begonne, and make perpetual peace betweene Christian Princes, especially betweene the Emperour, and the most Christian Princes, which are at variance with him, and advance the standarde of the healthfull Crosse against the impious enemy: and so leaue eternall monuments of your name, and fame to al posterity, which no time shal euer be able to deface. In the end thereof of the former booke, (that we may returne to our purpose,) mention was made of the most mighty King Muteczuma, who in a huge city, seated in the middle of a salt lake, called Tenustitane, raigned farre, and wide ouer many citties, and kinges of diuers Prouinces, from whom (as we mentioned before) presentes of wonderfull excellency were sent by the Spanyardes Montegius and Portucarreirus to the Emperour Charles abiding at Vallidolet that most famous towne of Spaine. But in the meane space while Cortes expecteth the returne of the messengers hee sent to the Emperour, least through idleness the soldiers should become dull and sluggish, hee determined to execute his intended voyage. That great and mighty city therefore being pacified and quieted, which in the former booke of your Decades, I say was called Potenchizium vnder King Tausco, was presently after called Victoria by our men, by reason of a victorie obtained there against an huge multitude of Barbarians. From whence Cortes went some 80. leagues to the West, and there planted a Colonie vpon the shoare, some fewe leagues from another city within the lande, named Zempoal, neere the riuier of Grisatua, and aboute halfe a league from the yillage, vpon a little rising hill, named Chianistan: but hee called his owne Colonie Vera Cruz, because he landed vpon the Eeue before the feast of the Crosse. From thence Cortes determined in persō to vnderstand what was reported of so great a King, as he had heard Muteczuma was, and what rumour went of so huge and vast a city. Cortes thought and purpose being vnderstood, the inhabitants of Zempoal bordering vpon Muteczuma, who by violence yielded him subiection, yet being deadly enemies vnto him, consulting together, went vnto Cortes, as the Hoadui, and Sequani, after the Heluctians were vanquished, came humbling themselves and sweeping vnto the Emperour, for the insolent and outrageous tyranny of Ariouistus King of the Germanes: so did the Zempoalenses complaine of Muteczuma, & much more graciously, in that, besides the heavy tributes of other prouinciall reuenues, which they yecrely gaue, they were compelled to giue vnto Muteczuma slaues, and for want of them, to giue him some of their owne children in stead of tribute, to be sacrificed to their godds. For wee haue sayde, and it is well knowne vnto your Holinesse, that in all those countryes they offer vp mans blood to appease their angry godds, as hereafter shalbe declared more at large. The Zempoalenses therefore promise to giue Cortes pledges for their fidelity, and auxiliary forces (valiant and courageous warriors) against the Tyrant because they hope (that God, creator of

He begins his narration.

The Colony Zempoal. Vera Cruz.

Mutezuma a mighty King.

Slaves (and for wth of slaves) free children giue for tribute to Mutezuma to be sacrificed.

Heaven and earth favouring them, of whom our men made report, and also safely brake downe their parents Images which they worshipped before) they shall free the city from so cruell a Tyrant, and restore liberty to the whole Province, otherwise most fortunate, if Cortes would pittie this their so great calamity, & meeete with their cruell injuries: and they further say, they doubt not but they shal get the victory because they thought Cortes and his consorts were sent from Heaven, seeing they were so mild vnto the conquered, and such destroyers of them that refused amity with them, or being fewe in number, that they durst stand, and resist so great a sorte of warriors as the power of the Potenchianensioans was. For our men in that battayle disfranked and ouerthrew 40000. armed men (as your Holiues hath often heard of them who were present thereat, and hath likewise read it in letters sent from the cheife Commanders) with no more then 500. foote, 16. horse and some great ordinance. Heere we must make a litle digression to another sort of men, who are of so slender and base a courage as they take those things for fables, which they think to be without compass of their strength. These men will writh the Nose, when they shall understand that so many thousands of the enemye were ouerthrown by so small a number of souldiers. But two things may cutt their caillies asunder. The one is an example, the other the strangenes of the thing. Haue they not read that the Emperour with lesse force conquered the mighty armies of the Heluethians, then of Arionistus, and lastly of the Belgae? Did not Themistocles vanquish Xerxe kinge of the Persians and slew his army at Salamina (who is reported to haue invaded Grecia with so great a multitude, that his army hauing pitched their teates, desirous to dine, drinking riner water, drew their chanel-drye) when he had no greater a power, then 12. thousand Grecians so that the Emperour being scarce able to flie, escaped with one shippe onely? Besides, our memo hadd twoe scurall kindes of fight, neuer scene before to those Barbarians or euer heard of, which with the onely sight thereof compelled them to runn away, to wit, the thunder of the ordinance, & the flame and sulphury smell issuing from the great artillery which they supposed to be thunder and lightning, brought by our men from heauen. Neither were they lesse terrified through the approach of the horses thinkinge the manne on horsebacke and the horse to haue bin but one beast, as fables report of the Centaures: neither did it alwayes succede well and happily with our menne, who had often vndergone the like hazzardes themselves, insomuch, that the Barbarians haue sometimes destroyed whole armies of our men and haue vterly refused to intertaine, strangers and guesates. But I must now returne to the intended voyage, from whence I diuerted. The oration of the Zempoalenses being ended, and interpreted by Hieronimus Aquilaris, who tossed to and froe with waues had 7. yeeres together led a seruile life, vnder the power and commande of a certaine King of whom I haue at large made mention in the booke goinge before this Decade Cortes departed from Vera Cruz, leauinge 130. men there, for defense of that Colony & so marched forward with 16. horsmen only, 300. foote and 400. auxiliary Zempoalenses to ayde him in the wars: yet first, he commaunded all the shippes (wherein he had brought his army) to be snuke vpō pretence that they were rotten: but he himselfe confesseth the cause, to be this, to wit, that thereby he might remoue all hope of flight from the souldiers, seeing he had determined to scittle himselfe in those countryes & make his perpetuall dwellinge there. Yet the souldiers for the most part seemed to thinke otherwise: for they feared by the example of many of their companions who were often slaughtered by the Barbarians, least the same might happen to them, that being but few in number, they should be brought to infinite nations, and those warlike, and armed people. Moreover many of the were the familiars, & frendes of Iacobus Velasquez Governour of the Iland of Fernandina, which is Cuba who desired to obey their old commander after they shuld returne from the search and viewe of strange countryes. Many of these (at what time Cortes dispatched a ship with the presents to the Emperour, without acquaintinge Iacobus Velasquez therewith) attempted to steale away with a Brigantine, to signifie the departure of y ship, y laying al passage both by sea, and lid he might take her wherevpon Cortes apprehended foure and punished them as guiltie of treason: Their names were Iohn Scutifer, Iacobus Zermegnus, Gonsalus Vmbria, all Pilottes, together with

The Concreit  
that the Barba-  
rians had of the  
Christians.

A digression to  
warre on shire-  
les.

The great Ar-  
tillery and men  
on horse back  
how terrible to  
the Barbarians.

A Preface of  
Cortes.

with Alphonsus Pognatus. The shippes therefore being sunke, and the rest terrifyed (by the example of these foure) from further thought of any departure, he tooke his journey vpon the 16. day of August, 1519. to that great citie Tenusitan standing vpon a lake, an hundred leagues distant to the West, from the Castle of Vera Crux: And had with him from the Zempoalenses three principall Commanders, called Teuchims, Manexus, and Tamaius. That citie, and her neighbour towne named Zacacami, gaue him 1300. men, whose helpe. our men vsed for caryage of their bunties, in steede of pack-horses, as the manner is in those countries. Nowe therefore least matters should slightly bee omitted, I am to declare, what befell Cortes in that iourney. As he was vpon the way, it was told him that an vnknowne Fleete wandred along that shore: & as he vnderstoode, it was Franciscus Garaius Governour of the Hande Iamaica, who also sought a place to erect a newe Colonie. Wherefore Cortes sendeth messengers to Garaius, and offereth him entaynement at his Colonie of Vera Crux, and such supplie as he had there, if hee wanted any thing: but whether he did this politlickly or no, we shall hereafter knowe. Garaius refuseth it: & by the Kinges Secretary, and witnesses hee protesteth to Cortes, that he yeelde him halfe part of all those countries, and assigne limites to diuide their iurisdiction. Cortes denyeth his demaunde, and commanded the Secretarie and witnesses set from Garaius to bee spoyled, and taking away his owne mens olde raggs gaue them as many new garments for them. Garaius vrged him no further, but departed; being about to goe to other countries, of the same shore. For from Iamaica, (the government whereof was committed vnto him) he also in three Carauelles, the yeere beefore, ranne along the Sea coastes of that lande which Iohannes Pontius called Florida, (of whom I haue spoken at large in the former Decades) but with ill successe. For hee was oerthrowne by the inhabitants, who slewed the greatest part of his menne. The like also happened to Iohannes Pontius, the first finder of Florida. Being oftentimes repulsed by the inhabitants, hee was so wounded at the length, that returning to Cuba to cure himselfe, & his wounded men, he presently died there. But Garaius searching those shores after the death of Iohannes Pontius, saith hee founde Florida, to be no land, but by huge crooked windings & turnings to bee ioyned to this mayne Continent of Tenusitan. Garaius sayling to those shores, light vpon a riuer, flowing into the Ocean with a broad mouth, and from his ships, discryed many villages covered with reedes. A king whose name is Panuchus possesseth both sides of that riuer, from which the country also is called Panucha. This king is reported to be subiect to the great king Muteuczuma, and to paye him tribute. Free libertie of trading was not permitted there, and as wee gather by the Chart or map which Garaius his painters brought, it bendeth like a bow, so that descending from Tenusitan, to the North, it bendeth alwayes more and more to the middle of a bowe. And presently againe it bendeth by kile and litle to the South, so that if a line be stretched from the shore of Tenusitan, to that parte of the lande which Iohannes Pontius first touched, from the North side of Ferdinando, it will make the string of the bow. Garaius thinketh that coast to be very litle profitable, because he sawe tokens & signes of small store of golde, and that not pure. Wherefore he wished rather to erect a Colony not farre from Sancta Crux the Colony of Cortes, but he forbad him. For in that place Cortes himselfe planted another; which he called by the name of Almeria, from Almeria a citie of the kingdome of Granada standing on the Sea shore, which not many yeeres since was recouered fro the Moores by warlike proesse. These things being thus done, Cortes pursueth his intended purpose. And hauing marched foure dayes iourney, forwarde from Zempoal, came into a Prouince named Simucuhimalrem, which is a playne hauing onely one citie or towne, seated on the side of a litle rising hill, exceeding strouge and fortified by nature. There is no other access vnto it, but by two scales or greeces, made by mans hande, harde to clyme: which is the seate, and house of the King of that small Prouince tributary to King Muteuczuma. It is amost fruitfull Prouince, euery where in the playne full of many townes and villages, euery one of them containyng 300. or 400. houses, but countrey cottages. The Nobilitie (as it falleth out euery where) dwell with their Kinge. This king peaceably entertained our menne in his

Cortes takes his  
iourney towards  
the great Citie  
of Tenusitan.

Franciscus  
Garaius.

Florida.

The vnhappy  
successe of Ioh-  
annes Pontius.

Panucha.

The Colony  
Almeria.

Simucuhim-  
alrem a Prou-  
ince.

towne, and fed them well, affirming that Muteczuma charged him so to doe. Cortes sayeth, hee will report it to Muteczuma and giue him thanks, and further sayth that hee came out of his owne Empire and dominions to see him. Cortes departing from this kinge, went to a most high mountaine inclosing the end or boundes of that prouince. Cortes affirmeth, and they that came from it confesse, that no mountaine in Spayne is higher, and that passing ouer it in the Month of August, they indured sharpe and bitter cold, by reason of the congealed snow & continuall Ice. In the descent of these mountains, they enter another plaine, at the beginninge and entrance whereof standeth a towne named Texuacum, this also is a most fruitful plaine, and fortified with many villages and towers, and all of them subject to Muteczuma. Being gone out of that valleye two dayes iorney, weakened & spent with hunger and cold they passed ouer barren countries without water, and therefore desolate, and not inhabited. Through that distemper, and a violent storme of winde and raime, with lighteninge and thunder many perished. From thence they came vnto a calmer Mountaine, on the topp whereof stoode a Chapell dedicated to their Idolls. Before the Chapell doores, was an exceeding great staeke of wood. At certaine times of the yeere, euery one offer to their godds pyles of woode, together with the oblations which are to be sacrificed: Who thinke thereby they appease the angry gods. The Spaniards call the opening of the mountaine toppes, Portes, so from the same effect, they called that passage the Port of wood. Descendinge from that Mountayne, they enter into another valley fruitful and inhabited; whose Kinge is called Cacataminus. The Kinges Courte is all of stone, very grate made with halles, and many Chambers, after our fashion, and seated vpon the branke of a pleasant riuer runninge through that valley. This kinge honorably intainted vs; and being demanded whether he were at Muteczumas commaund, he answered, & who is not? seeing Muteczuma is Lorde of the world. But demanding of him what hee thought of our King, he confessed he was greater, whom Muteczuma also himselfe would obey. Our men instantly requiring to know whether hee could get any gold, he confessed, that he had gold, but that he would not giue it to any, without Muteczumas consent. So they durst not compell him to giue them any least they should disquiet Muteczuma becing farr of. Two other borderinge Kinges persuaded through the fame of our nation, came vnto Cortes and either of them brought him a seuerall chaine of gold, but of smale weight, and no pure mettall, whereof the one had dominion 4. leagues vp the riuer, and the other two leagues downe the streame. They say that both sides of the riuer are euery where fortified with houses which haue gardens, and country farmes lying betweene them. They report that the Princes court, who hath his house vp the riuer, is not inferior either in greatnes, excellency, or strength, and that there is a Castle here neere vnto his court, inexpugnable, and most exactly built with bulwarkes and turreted walles. The report goeth that this Kinges towne consisteth of 5000. houses, & some say 6000. but they told vs not the name thereof. Our menn were also well entertained by this Prince: who is likewise subject to Muteczuma. From this kinges lodginge Cortes sent 4. messengers to the next towne called Tascalteca, to sounde the myndes of the inhabitants, whether they would be pleased, that hee should come vnto them because he had heard that the Tascaltecanes were a warlike people, and deadly enemies to Muteczuma: Whereupon hee stayde 2. dayes with his king, expecting the messengers. Muteczuma could neuer perswade the Tascaltecanes to admit any laue from him, or that they should obey him, insomuch that they alwayes brought vp their youth in the hatred of Muteczuma, by meanes whereof for many yeares together they wanted salt and gossampine cotton wherewith to make garments, being inclosed on euery side with Muteczumas countries, and could not elsewhere procure these necessaries. They say, that they had rather liue with greate want of things necessary, free fro the slavery & seruitude of Muteczuma, then to become his vassells, & subjects. In this city they say there are many nobles, Lords of villages, whose helpe the comon wealth of 5 Tascaltecanes vseth, making the captaines & Commanders in the wars. They will haue no Lords. If it arise in any manns minde, to be desirous to raise an heade, it woulde draw to a worse mischief vpon that citizen, then the Heluetians inflicted vpon Orgentorites,

A high mountaine.

Texuacum a towne.

A Chapell dedicated to Idolls.

The Port of wood. Cacataminus and his Court.

Muteczuma thought to be lord of the world yet acknowledged to be less then the Tescaltecane.

2. very Kinges bringe presents to Cortes.

Tascalteca a towne.

The messenger minde of this people.

Orgeritorites, affecting Empire and soueraintie, and perswading the Princes and chiefe of the Hediui, and Sequani, to do the like. The Tascaltecanes are iust & vpright in their dealing, as they sou'd by experiece afterwards, wherof hereafter we wil speake at large. Cortes therefore expecting the messengers, and none of them returned, departed from that towne, yet spent eight dayes in that valley, and diuers villages thereabout. In the meane space the Zempoalenses goe about to perswade Cortes, to procure the amitie and friendship of the Tascaltecan common wealth, declaring how great helpe he should finde in them against the power of Muteczuma, if at any time hee attempted to doe any thing against them. Whereupon he removed thence towards Tascalteca. In his iourney he founde another valley, which a wall of 20. foote broad, and a mans height and an halfe high, ouercrossed from both the bottomes of high mountaines standing on either side. In the whole wall there was but one gate, ten paces wide, built with diuers crooked turnings, least the sudden inuasion of the enemie might assault them wandering & vnprouided. The wall appertained to the Tascaltecanes, made for that purpose, least the Muteczumans shold passe through that valley, whether they would or no: The inhabitants of the valley behinde them, accompanying Cortes, as Guides to direct him the way, admonished and perswaded him, not to goe through the borders of the Tascaltecanes, saying they were deceitfull, breakers of their fidelity and promise, and enemies to all strangers, and such as receiued intertainment from them, and further that if they tooke any, they were deuourers of their enemies: and therefore they would conduct Cortes and his companions at the way through the countreyes of Muteczuma, where by Muteczumas commaundement, they should haue whatsoever they could wish or desire. On the contrary parte the Zempoalensian guides, Teuchius, Manexius, and Thamaius, and some of the chiefe of Zacatamini who had a thousand warriors, were most of the same opinion, who aduise him by any meanes not to trust the tributaries of Muteczumans, for our me were to be drawn by Muteczuman guides, through places, full of dangers, and passages fit for ambushment: and that he should beware of the deceit of the Muteczumanes, they earnestly besought him: promising that they would be his guides through the open countreyes of the Tascaltecanes. Resolving therefore to followe the counsell of the Zempoalensians, and Zacatamini, hee taketh his iourney through the Tascaltecan fields. Cortes himselfe went beefore the bandes as they marched, with the horse, of the which, he drewe forth two, and sent them beefore as scouts, who if they sawe any imminent danger beefore their eyes, they might take notice thereof, & coming backe, signifie, that they must prepare themselues to fight. The horsemen being sent beefore from the toppes of an high hill some foure miles of, by chauce discovered certaine armed men lying in ambuscado in the next plaine, nowe in the iurisdiction of the Tascaltecanes. As soone as they sawe the horse, supposing the man and the horse to be but one beast, stricken with feare at such an horrible sight and strange apparition, they fled away or dissembled flight. Our men make signes of peace, and cal them backe againe as they fled, beckening, and waiting to them with their hands. Of many, 15. of the onely make a stande: hauing an ambuscado hard by. The two horsemen that went beefore, cal the rest of the horse, and bidde them make speede. A litle further about 4000. armed men issue forth of the place where they lay hid, and begin the fight with our men, and in the twinkling of an eye kill two horses with their arrowes. Our foote companies goe vnto them, and set vpon the enemie, who being wounded with arrowes and arquebus shot forsake the battaile. They slew many of them, but not a man more of ours either slayne or wounded. The next day following, messengers were sent to Cortes to desire peace: who brought two of the messengers with them whom Cortes expected a long tyme: they intreate pardon for that they had done, and make excuses: saying, that they had forraigne souldiers that day, whiche they coulde not restraine, and that it was done against the power & abillitie whiche the Princes of that Prouince hadde to withstande it: and that they were readie to pay for the horses, and if any other dammage were done, they offered recompence. Cortes admitted their excuses. Marching some three myles thence, hee incamped on the side of a certayne ryuer, and appoynted his nightlie watches, shrewdly mistrusting the Barbarians.

A well be-  
longing to the Tar-  
scaltecan.

Cortes makes  
scouts be-  
fore him.

Many armed  
men of the Tar-  
scaltecan in am-  
buscado discovered  
and at the sight  
of our horse-  
men.

The Tascalte-  
canes begin to  
fight.

The Tascalte-  
canes desire  
pence.

As soone as day began to appeare, he went to the next village, where (of the foure messengers he sent to sounde the inhabitants myndes) he found two of them had bin taken by the inhabitants, & bound with cords, but breaking them by might they escaped. It was determined, that the next day they should be slaine: this they themselves reported. While he thus stayde, beholde a thousande armed men v unexpected, filling the ayre with their horrible clamors, cast their lanelines, and many sortes of darts, at our open a farre of: but Cortes endeoured with faire speeches to allure them, yet it profited nothing. They signifie vato them by interpreters, that they prouoke not our men: but the more gently he dealt with them, the more insolent, and outrageous was the Barbarians. At length they retyred, and by litle and litle drewe our men pursuing them, to an hidden ambuscado of armed men, about some hundred thousande as Cortes himselfe writeth. The Barbarians issue forth, and compassed our men on euery side, so that they fought with doubtfull success from an hour before noone vntill the evening. In that battayle the Zempoalenses, Zacatamini, Istacmatitani, and the rest of the inhabitants, who folowed Cortes, behaued themselves valiantly, compelled through extreme necessitie: for being inclosed within the countries of the Tascaltecanes, there was no way open for flight. The only hope of their safety was, to despair of safety. Yf they had bin vanquished, they had made the Tascaltecanes a daintie banquet with their flesh. For the conquered become foode to the conquerours. Wherefore the Tascaltecanes trusting in their multitude began nowe to licke their lippes, through hope of daintie and delicate eates, when they vnderstode a sordaine nation had entred the limits of their borders. But it fell out otherwise with them: for Cortes had sixe field peeces, and as many arquebuses shot, fourtie archers, & 13. horsemen intermixed with them, warlike engines and instruments vknown to the Barbarians. Wherefore that cloud of Barbarians was nowe at length dispersed: yet hee passed that night without sleepe (in a certain chappell in the field consecrated to Idolatry) much troubled & disquieted in mind. But at y first dawning of the day, he came forth into the open field with all his horse an hundred soote of his owne and 300 of the Istacmatitan Provinciales: for that towne Istacmatitan also peaceably receiued Cortes, and gave him 300. men for his supply and ayde against Muteczuma. Hee tooke also of the Zempoalenses, and their next neighbours foure hundred men, leaving the rest to garde the campe and the carriages, and ouerranne al the enemies plaine, burnt five villages, made hauocke and spoyle of whatsoever he met with: and brought 400. captiues to the Campe. But at the first twilight, before the morning began to waxe red, beholde such an infinite number of the enemy, ran violently to the Campe, that they seemed to couer all the fieldes. They write, that there came 130000. armed men thither, who fought furiously at the fortifications of the campe. They say they incounered hand to hand for the space of foure houres with great hazard of our men: but the Barbarians, retyred without doing any thing, for none there, coulde turge their backs. Of fearefull sheepe, each man then tooke a Lyons couraige with him. The enemy being put to flight, Cortes like a tyger great with yong, marched forth against these traitors, who here and there were nowe returned to their houses. So waiting, destroying, taking, or killing, all he met hee came vnto a towne of 3000. houses (as they report) and aboue, all which he destroyed with syer and sword. This being thus done, the Provinciales smitten with exceeding terror and feare, sent the Nobility of that country Embassadors vnto Cortes. They craue pardon for that which is past, and promise that hereafter they would be obedient to his commaunde, and receiue what Lawes soeuer in the name of that greates King of whom Cortes so much gloryeth. For proofe wherof, they brought preuentes such as were honourable and of esteeme with them, to witte, helmettes and plumes of feathers, (ornamentes for the warres) curiously wrought with wonderfull art. They brought also necessarie provision of victuall, as of corne, and plenty of crammed soule, after their manner. For wee haue sayde before, and your Holinesse hath heard it reported, that they mayntaine certaine fowle among them (in steede of our henies) greater then Peacocks, and nothing inferior to them in tast.

The Tascaltecanes make fight against.

300000. Barbarians in ambuscado. A doubtfull battayle.

A strange proceeding.

400. captiues taken.

A huge army of the Tascaltecanes assault the campe.

Greates and prodigious as the effects of reuerend minds is wrought by extraordinary.

The Tascaltecanes craue pardon and bring presents.

## The second Chapter.

HAVING heard what the Embassadors would deliver, he greatly accuseth their Lordes and masters, yet offereth them pardon for the former damage they had done: & to admit them into his amity and friendship, so that hereafter they carry themselves faithfully in the obedience of the King of Spaine. The next day after, 50. men of the nobilitie came vnto him (vnder color of intertaining amity) to espie the entrance of the campe. When Cortes sawe the view the situation of the campe with fixed eye, & troubled countenance, he began to suspect. Separating one of them therefore from his fellows, hee leadeth him aside, and by a faithful Interpreter exhorteth him to confesse the truth, who being irritated through promises, and flattering speeches, openeth the whole matter. He saith that the chiefe man of that prouince Quetzitangal by name, lay in ambushment with a great power of armed menne, to assault the campe vntoares the next night: and for that purpose his consorts were sent vnder pretence of peace, that they might vnderstand where to make the assault, or which might be the easiest way to the booties which our menne had erected; (that they might not lodge all night in the open ayer) that so entering them, they might set them on fire, and while our menne were busied in quenching the same they might assault them, and put them all to the sword: for (saith he) we will tempt fortune with crafty deuises, and stratagemes seeing they were alwayes ouerthrowen so vnhappily through warlike prowess. Cortes vnderstanding this, desired more fully to knowe the truth of the matter. Wherefore hee brought other 6. of the same company into a secret place a part, and threatened to torture the, & offered the liberal rewards, in conclusion all of them (without discreence) confessed the same the first man did. But, before report of this inquisition should be spread hee tooke those 50. every man: & cutting of their right hands set the back to their master with this message. Tell your Princes thus, that it is not the part of valiant men, or such as are renowned for warlike prowess, to bringe their purposes to passe by such treacherous deuises: As for you the instruments of treachery who came enemies vnto vs in steede of negociators, receiue this punishment of your wickednes, that hauing your right handes cutt off, ye returne vnto the who chose you to be authors of so mischieuous and foule a deed. Tell them, we wilbe ready, what houre soeuer they come, whether they assault vs, by night or set vpon vs at noone daye: so that they shall well know what those fewe are, whom they seeke to disquiet. They goe, and report what they sawe, and shew what they had suffered. In the evening, an huge and turbulent multitude of Barbarians, diuided into two seuerall companies came vnto them. Cortes thought it much better to medle with them in the open day, when by the light he might shewe the Barbarians the sterne countenance of his horse, vnknewne to the, & the force of the furious artillery, then to expect night which brings a thousand dangers with it, especially to those that set footing in strange countries, ignorant of the places; if they be copelled to change. Seeing the horses and fury of the great ordinance; and stricken with feare at the noyse thereof, at the first encounter the Enemy retires to the stading corne, whereof the fields at that time were very full, so being dispersed, they sought to hid themselves. Their corne (as I haue oft said) is Maizium. Hercupō they gaue Cortes free liberty to wander: yet for certaine dayes he durst not put his heade out of the Campe. About some league from the Campe they had a city of the enemy which at the sound of a trumpet assembled an innumerable multitude of souldiers. For Cortes himself writeth, and they who came fro thence are bold to say that this city Tascalteci consisteth of 2000. houses. At length being certified by spies, the inhabitants of that greete city were vnprouided, and secure, he suddenly invaded it in the second watch of the night, and set vpon them either wandring or being asleepe: by means whereof he possesseth the strongest place thereof. At the first dawning of the day, the chiefe men come vnto him & humbly intreat him to doe the no hurt & sweare to obey his command. They bring with the plenty of their comestric victualles, as much as Cortes would desire, where vpon Cortes returned victor to the Campe, where he founde the company much moued against him, because hee brought them, where they might not returne, and therefore sayd

so, spits are  
borne to their  
palaces with  
their right  
hands out of

The enemies  
about to begin  
fight are aston-  
ished at the  
noise of the  
ordnance and  
&c.

Cortes taketh  
the city by  
night.

A multitude in  
Cortes his com-  
paigne.

said they would goe no further, for they could by no meanes escape, but should shortly bee slayne either man, seeing they sawe themselves compassed on euery side with such fierce warriors, and that they should perish either with famine or colde, after they had escaped the weapons of the Barbarians. Affirming further, that the successe of war was vncertaine, and that the victorie was not alwayes in the hande of menne, and therefore they perswade and intreate him to returne to the shore, where their companions were left. Yf he refused, they protest, that they will forsake him. But Cortes who resolved in his mind, that he would goe to Tenustitan, the chiefe citie of all those countreys, thinking to deale wisely and gently rather then to handle the matter severely, thus reasoneth with them. What a strange thing is this my selow soldiers and companions in armes? why doe yee feare? Do you not apparently knowe that God is with you, who hath giuen vs so many happie victories? Doe yee thinke those whom wee are about to seeke, are better, and more valiant and stout? Doe yee not see, that it is in your power, that the faith of Christ should infinitely be amplified? What kingdomes, and of what quality shall ye procure to your King? and your selues, so yee be constant? That which remaineth behind is but a small matter. If peradventure, (which I nothing feare) we must die, what could be more happie? could any man euer finish his life with more glory? Besides, remember ye are Spanyards, who commonly are of an vndanted spirit, not esteeming their life a farthing, where either the obedience of Almighty God, or the opportunitie of obtaining glory, offer themselves. Againe, whether shall we goe? What shall wee doe gaining slothfull through idleness on the shores? Take courage, take courage I say, and with me subdue these barbarous nations to the Lawe of Christ, and the obedience of our King. What fame shall be left to posteritie of these worthy actes, which yet neuer came to the cares of any man liuing? We shal be more honourable among our neighboures in our country, then euer was Hercules in Greece, through his coming into Spaine, of whose monuments are yet extant. Our labours are much more grieuous, and our rewardes shall be the greater. Rouse vp yourselves therefore and with a stout courage vndertake with me what ye haue begonne, making no question of the victorie. Having ended his oration, the Centurians affirmed that Cortes had spoken well. The multitude (more vncostant than the waves of the Sea, which goe whither soeuer the winde bloweth) yeeld likewise their consent, and lend their cares and tongues to serue euery turne. The soldiers mynides being pacified, Embassadors came vnto Cortes from Zeutegal, Generall Commander of that country, who craued pardon for that which was past, for taking armes agaynst our men. And that they should not wonder thereat, they say, that they neuer acknowledged any king, or were euer subiect vnto any, and that they alwayes esteemed liberte so much, that they suffered many inconueniencies in former times, least they should obey Mutezczumas command. But chiefly they wanted cotton garments, and salt to seison their meats which they coulde not get, without Mutezczumas leaue. Yet if they might now be receiued into his fauour and grace, they promise to doe whatsoever he should commande. No man knewe of it, and so they were admitted. That citie Tascalteca was sixe leagues distant from the Campe, the citizens intreate him to come vnto them. Cortes a long time refused it, yet at length overcome through the intreaties of the Princes, he went. But I must insert another thing before I proceed in the Tascaltecan matters. Sixe of the familiar friendes of Mutezczuma came to Cortes, with excellent and costly presentes: who brought diuers leuels, and sundry vestures of golde, to the value of a thousand Castellanes of golde, and a thousand garments of Gosampine cotton dyed of diuers colours. When these men vnderstoode that Cortes determined to visite Mutezczuma and his citie, they desired Cortes in the behalfe of Mutezczuma, so thinke no more of that matter, because that citie Tenustitan was seated in the waters, where naturally was great want and scarcitie of all things: so that vnles they were supplied by forrainers, there would be smale store of prouision fit for so great persons. But the Embassadors promise that Mutezczuma should send what sime soeuer Cortes would demand of golde, silver, precious stones and other things, wheresoeuer he should make his aboad. To this Cortes made answer that he could not by any meanes graunt their request, because he had expresse commandement from his king, both to see that citie, and the king thereof, & make diligent inquiry of all

Cortes his beseechment to the soldiers.

View here the mortality of a multitude.

Zeutegal the Embassador to Cortes with presents of intimation.

Cortes presented by 6 of the leaders of Mutezczuma with rich gifts.

all things, that he might signifie by messengers to his maiesty what a thing it is. Vanderstanding his minde and purpose, they desire leaue of Cortes to send one of themselves with that answer to Mutezcuma. Leau is granted, & one of the six, who were joynd in commission went & returned againe the sixth day: & broght ten peeces of embossed golden plate from Mutezcuma of equall waight and very fairely wrought. He brought also vpo slaues shoulders (because they can get no beastes for carriage) 1500. garments more precious then the former 1000. They that are of a base spirit, will heere wonder, & beleue those things to be fabulous which they neuer heard of before or which are without the compasse of their strength. These men wee will satisfy in their place, when wee shal come to treat of the oeconomicall and howshold affaires of Mutezcuma. Let this digression from the Tascaltecanas suffice. Now let vs report the quality, & greatnes of Tascalteca, and this first, which I touched before. It alloweth Noblemen but cannot brooke Lords, as I sayd before, and is governed partly Democratically and partly Aristocratically, as sometime the Common wealth of Rome was, before it came to a violent Monarchy. Cortes writeth & they that come from thence say, that it is much greater then the city of Granada, and more populous, and abounding with all things necessary for the life of man. They vse bread made of Maizium: and haue store of foule, wild beastes and fresh water fish, but no sea fish: for it standeth too farre from the Sea, about 50. leagues distant, as some say. They haue also diuers kinds of pulse. Within the stone walls, are houses of stone high and well fortified, for they are alwayes suspicious and in feare, by reason of the bordering enemy which ioynes vpo them. They frequent markets, and fayres: and are clothed, & weare stockings or buskins. They delight much in Jewels of gold & precious stones: & greatly esteeme helmetts, and plumes of feathers of diuers colors, which they vse for ornament in the wars: all which they plat & interlace with gold: they sell wood for fuel euery where in the markets brought vpo mens shoulders: & sei also for the vse of building, beames, rafters planckes bricke, stones, & lime, & they haue architects, & excellent potters. There is no earthen vessels with vs, that exceedeth the workmanship of theirs. They haue also Herbaristes that sell medicinable herbes: and they vse bathes. And it is also certainly knowne that they haue an order and lawes where by they gouerne. The largeness of that prouince is 90. leagues in circuit about, whereof this city Tascalteca is the heade & cheife: being full of townes, villages, and streets, mountains, and fruitfull valleyes replenished with people, and those men of warre, by reason of the neighbourhood of Mutezcuma their perpetual enemy. Heereunto adioineth another prouince, called the country of Guazuzingo: which is governed after the same order, in the forme of a common wealth. They are all enemies to theues, for hauing taken them they lead them bound through the marketts, and beate them to death with cudgelles & are iust & vpright dealers. He about 20. dayes with the Tascaltecanas: at what time, the six Embassadors of Mutezcuma were alwayes at his side endeuoring to perswade Cortes not to intertaine friendship with the Tascaltecanas, and that hee should not trust faithlesse, & deceitfull men. The Tascaltecanas on the contrary part, affirmed that the Mutezcumanes were tyrants, & wold bring Cortes into some dangerous & inevitable misery, if he gaue credit to the. Cortes secretly reioyced at this dissentio, thinking their mutuall hatred might profit him, & therefore fodd the both with faire speeches. The Mutezcumanes were very earnest with Cortes, to discharge himselfe of the Tascaltecanas and that hee wold goe to the city Chiurutezal: in the iurisdiction of Mutezcuma, not about 5. leagues distat thence. There (say they) he might more easily treat whatsoeuer he wold concerning the affaires, hee had with Mutezcuma. The Tascaltecanas on the contrary, told Cortes, that they had prepared to intrappe him, both in the way & in the city Chiurutezal. In the waye, because they signified y in many places the citizens thereof had cut trenches whereby y horses might be indangered, and that other wayes were turned from the right course: And that within the city the wayes were stopped and dammed vp in many places, and fensed with heapes of earth, or stones: & that those citizens had gathered together a great heape of stones in their solars, turrets, & windowes which were ouer the streets & publicke wayes, whereby fro aloft, they might kill our men coming vnto the.

Mutezcuma sends presents of waightfull value to Cortes.

Democratically and Aristocratically the gouernment of Tascalteca.

A Politic gouernment.

Guazuzingo, a Prouince, Princeship of Thebes.

Cortes his pollicie to separate a faction.

Chiurutezal a city.

thē. And further the Tascalcēas declare that it was an argument, that the Chiurutecalesens were corruptly affected towards our men, in that they neuer came vnto them, as they of the citie Guazuzingo did, who were further of. Cortes vnderstanding this, sent vnto the Chiurutecalesens, to complayne of their iniurie and negligence. Having hearde the message of Cortes, they sent Embassadours, but of the basest of the people, and men of no worth to tell him, that they came not before, because they were to goe through their enemies countries, yet they sayde that the Chiurutecalesens were well affected vnto Cortes. But vnderstanding the indignitie they offered him, in that the nobilitie disdayned to come vnto him, hee sent those base companions away with threatening wordes, and with this charge, that vnlesse the chiefe men of that citie came vnto him within three dayes, hee woulde come against them as an enemy, and then (sayth he) they shoulde prooue what hee vseth to doe when he is angry, if they deferred their coming, to yeeld obedience to the King of Spayne, to whom the dominion and Empire of all those countries belongeth. So they came, and Cortes sayth, hee woulde admit the excuses they made, so they performed their promise. They promise willingly to doe his command and that he shoulde know, and vnderstande that the Tascalcēas had spoken vntruth, and offered that they would pay tribute according to Cortes his edict, if he woulde come vnto them. So he stood long doubtfully distracted in diuers opinions. At length hee resolved to trie his fortune, and yeelding to the Muteczumans, taketh his journey towards Chiuruteal. But the Tascalcēas hauing hearde his resolution, perceiuing that good counsel preuailed nothing, say, they woulde by no means suffer, that Cortes shoulde freely commit himselfe to the Muteczumans trust so that it might be in their power, to be able to hurt him. That they were thankfull menne, to him who vsed them so kindly, and receiued the Tascalcēas into his friendshippe and fauour after so innumerable errors, when he might vtterly haue destroyed them in due reuenge of their rebellion. Wherefore they instantly affirme that they woulde giue him an hundred thousande armed mā in steed of a Prætorian army to gard his persō: but Cortes refused. It booted not to deny thē. That first night therefore he encāped on the banke of a riuer ouer against him, with that army of almost an hundred thousand men. Afterwards retaining 2000. for his defence, hee sent away the rest, yeelding them deserued thankes, as was fit. The Chiurutecalesian priests coming forth after their manner with boyes and girles, singing, and with the sounde of drummes, and trumpettes, receiued our menne (coming vnto them) a farre of. Entering the citie, they were entertayned, and fedde well enough, but not daintilie, or plentifully. Concerning the damming vp of wayes, and rampires, & stoness which were prepared, they perceiued somewhat, as they were admonished by the Tascalcēas. But now, beholde newe messengers from Muteczuma: who spake vnto the citizens of Chiuruteal in the care, and not to Cortes. The messengers demaunded what they had done with our men, the citizens made them no further answer. Wherefore Cortes moued to suspicion, being mindfull of the counsel of the Tascalcēas, by Hieronimus Aquilaris the Interpreter (who was skilfull in the language of these countries, hauing serued long time in the bordering prouinces) questioneth a certayne young man admitted to his presence: & this is the summe of all that he vnderstoode. He saith, that the Chiurutecalesens when our men were to goe vnto them, had sent away all the children, and old men, with their women, and goods what they ment else, hee plainly professeth, that he knoweth nothing. The treatson is discouered, but in what manner and order, I must declare vnto you. A certaine Zempoalensian mayde was abiding with a woman of Chiuruteal, who peraduenture followed her husbande or her friende. The Chiurutecalesian woman spake thus vnto the Zempoalensian stranger. Friende, go with me. Whither saith she? without the citie, and farre of south shee. For that night she saith innumerable multitude of armed men would cōe from Muteczuma, who will kill as many as they find within these walles. I reueale this vnto you, because I haue compassion on you: stay not heere, vnlesse you desire cruelly to finish these pleasauit yeeres of your tender age, with the rest. The mayde discouereth the matter to Aquilaris. Cortes desiring to examine it, knoweth the matter, and vnderstoode it to be true. Whereupon he sent to cal the chiefe rulers of the Chiurutecalesens, & cōmādeh his

The Chiurutecalesens as an Embassadours to Cortes.

Cortes (intending to be good counsell of the Tascalcēas) is by practice driven to goe to Chiuruteal.

A conspiracie of Muteczuma with the citizens of Chiuruteal against Cortes.

me presently to arme themselves. He declareth the matter to the captives, & willett the vpon-notice giue by discharge of a peece they fall vpon the authors of that mischeuous practise, whom hee would assemble together in the hall of his lodging. The chiefe men of the city came, and declaringe the matter first vnto them, hee casteth them in prison, taketh horse, and goeth forth. He found the gates of his pallace compassed about with armed menne: so greate was the armed multitude of citizens which expected their comming. Hee settes vpon them, before the rest could come vnto them, so that they fiercely fought a long time, as he himselfe saith for the space of 5. houres: At length hee vanquished the treacherous Barbarians, and then returneth to the appointed pallace. Hee calleth the citizens (who were bounde) vnto him, who beinge demaunded why they did so, they answered, they were deceived by Mutezuma: and that it was done against their will. But if hee would spare them, they promise, they would bee subiect to him for ever, and neuer obey Mutezuma, any more. The Zempoalenses, and Tascaltecanes who ayded him, behaued themselves manfully that day, for the hatred they conceived against the tyranny of Mutezuma. Whereupon Cortes spared the citizens, and commanded them to goe vnto the women, and children, and the rest, & bringe them backe againe. They did so: and the city was replenished with her people. This beinge done, hee did his endeuour to reconcile the Tascaltecanes; and the Chiurutecalenses, and to make them agree together, who were at variance before by Mutezumas meanes, and deadly hated one another. That city Chiurutecall standeth in a fruitfull plaine, consisting (as they write) of 20000. houses built of lime and stone, within the wall, and as many in the suburbs. It was sometimes a common wealth: but Mutezuma made it tributary and subiect to his commaunde. Both cities will now willingly obey vs. These people are richer, and haue better garments then the Tascaltecanes their neighbours. The Chiurutecalenses water a great part of their plaine by trenches which they haue cut: and that prouince is well fortified with turreted walles. Cortes himselfe writeth that fro one high Church, he numbered 400. towers belonging to the prouince, besides those which were erected in the streets of the city which al were in steed of Churches. This country hath land fit for pasture, which (he saith) he yet found no where else in those countries because other prouinces were so full of people that they haue scarce grounde enough for their seede. These things succeeding thus, he calleth Mutezumas Embassadours vnto him, and blameth the vniust and deceitfull dealing of their maister, affirming that it was not the part of a noble Prince, such as he supposed Mutezuma had beene, to deale craftily, and to make others instrumentes of his cunning practises and deuises: Wherefore Cortes saith, that he would no longer keepe fidelitie and promise of amitie, giuen him by messengers betwene them, seeing Mutezuma had so treacherously contrary to his oath attempted these things against him. But the Embassadors halfe dead, and out of hart, sayd, their master, neuer imagined, or knewe of any such matter, and that time shoulde discouer what they sayd, to be true. They say, that Mutezuma was alwayes a religious obseruer of his promise: and that the Chiurutecalenses diuided that of their owne heade, to persecute them from the displeasure of Cortes. Having thus spoken, the Embassadors desire Cortes that with his good leave they might send one of their cōpany to Mutezuma, to signifie what might be treated. Prouision of victuall is giuen him: who within fewe dayes returning brought presentes with him for a King, to witte, tenne golden chargers, as he writeth and 1500. garments of Gossampine cotton, such as they vse to wear. I sayd elsewhere, I would deliuer these things more plainly to satisfie base spiritues of meane capacitie, from whence this King hath so many garments in his wardrope: besides many things for soode, but specially wine, which Kings and noble men delight in, differing from that which the people vse. For they make many sorts of drinke, the ordinarie and common sort of Maizium, but the better of diuers fruites. But of certaine almondes, which they vse in steed of money, they make wonderfull drinke, of this almonde we will speake hereafter. By that familiar friend therof of Mutezuma, and by these other new Embassadors, he affirmed that he knewe nothing of that, whiche the Chiurutecalenses spake of him, who spake vtruly to excuse themselves, and that it shoulde so fall out hereafter that hee shoulde vnderstande there

Cortes blameth the chiefe men of the city because of the conspiracy. The Burroughs beyond.

Cortes vanquisheth.

Cortes pardoneth the Complainers and they become his subiects forsaking Mutezuma.

The description of the City of Chiurutecall.

Parton.

The Embassadors excuse Mutezuma.

Kingly spiritus Almondes are sent from Mutezuma to Cortes.

Wine.

Drinke. Almondes in steed of money.

Moteczuma &  
—such Cortes  
mean remaining  
to his wife.

was true friendship between them, and, that Moteczuma used not to attempt any thing by fraudulent means. Yet among these discourses, hee intreateth him agayne, to desist from his intended purpose of coming to his city, for want of things necessary, because that city being seated in the waters, was naturally destitute of all things: yet sufficiently provided for her inhabitants by the ancient trading of the neighbouringe towncs: but if strangers came vnto it, it would bee poore and beggerly. Cortes denyed that he could graunt that because he was so commaunded by his kinge. Understanding Cortes his resolution, hee signifieth vnto him by the Embassadours, that hee would expect him in the city, and that hee would provide accordinge to his power, that nothing might be wantinge. And for that purpose they sent many of his cheife rulers to accompany him vnto him. He therefore setteth forward towards the city Tenustitan, being desirous to see it. About some 8 leagues from thence hee founde a mountaine covered with ashes in the sommer, having two toppes, large and spacious on euery side, called Popocatepeque which is as much to say as a smoaky mountaine, because in their language Popoca, signifieth smoake, and tepeque a mountaine. From whose toppes a stronge smoake continually issueth, ascendinge ypright vnto the cloudes, as an obscure cloude ariseth with a thicke vapour, so that the smoke equaleth the quantity of a greate house, and is carried vp into the ayer with such fury, that though the ayer bee shaken with violent windes, yet the smoake is not at all dispersed. Cortes wondering at the matter, sent ten valiant Spaniards with guides of the inhabitants, to search out the cause of so strange a thinge, if it were possible. They obey his command, and ascend the mountaine as neere as they might goe: but could not come vnto the very topp, by reason of the thicke ashes, yet they came so neere, that they perceived the roaringe of the flame; and the furious & fearefull noyse of the smoake that issued forth, with perpetuall whirlwinds which blustered about the mountaine, so that the mountaine trembled, & seemed as though it would haue falle. But two messengers of the Spaniards more bold then the rest determined to get vnto the topp, the inhabitants dissuading them, who ascended to the view of that huge gaping mouth and say it is a league & an halfe broade: yet in the end much terrified through the noyse of the raginge flame, they returned, happy in their chance. They escaped by violence of the flame more & more increasing, which issued forth somewhat more mildly at the time, but in a very short space became most furious, castinge out stones after an incredible & strange manner so that vnto the chace they had found a place in the way which was somewhat holowe, which gaue the shelter, while the shower of stones was ouerpast (for that mountaine doth not alwayes cast forth stones) they had vnto the topp, and lost their liues. The inhabitants so wounded at this matter, that they came flocking from euery place, with presents, to see them, as if they had bin halfe Goddes. But this (most holy father) is not to be omitted: The inhabitants suppose kinges (also whome they lined, governed amisse) to haue a temporary abode there being companions with diuels amonge those flames, where they may purge the soule spots of their wickednesse. These things being thoroughly sought out, the Moteczuman Embassadours led Cortes, whether the Tascalticans dissuaded him to goe. For that way, hath troublesome passages, trenches, and ditches full of narrow bridges, where an army, might easily be ouerthrowne, because they could not passe ouer those places in toopees. He therefore tooke his iourney another way, somewhat further about, & more difficult, by the lowe valleyes of high smoakinge mountaines, from whence, when they were past, and looked doune before them, from the litle hilles vnder the mountaine they sawe a mighty greate valley called Colua where that greate city Tenustitan lieth in the lake. This greate valley is famous for two lakes, the one salt, where the city is seated, which (as they say) containeth 60 leagues in circuit: the other fresh, whereof we shall speake more at large hereafter. The Moteczuman Embassadours, who accompanied our men, being demanded why they went about to leade the army another way, answered, that they denyed not but that this way was better and more commodious: but because they were to march a dayes iourney through the Enemyes countreyes of the Guazuzingi, and because peraduenture they might want provision of victuall by way, therefore they perswaded the therevnto. Here we are to note and obserue of the Guazuzingi, and the Tascaltcani (two comonwealthes) were

A strange and  
admirable report  
of a smoaky  
mountaine called  
Popocatepeque.

The boldnes of  
the Spaniards.

The opinion the  
Inhabitants haue  
of this mountaine.

3 Lakes.

The Guazuzingi.

were vnited in league & heart against Muteczuma: & therefore they found the but poore because being compassed with so mighty an enemy, they enioyed no free liberty of traffike with any other nation. Wherefore vsing & contenting themselves with their provinciall reuenues, they liued in greate misery, rather than they would submit their necke vnto the yoke of any kinge. Yet vnto Cortes, because by his meanes they hoped in time to come to vnder freely, they performed covenantes of friendship, and in token thereof, they gaue him certaine slaues, and garments after their manner, but very meane, and bestowed vpon him things necessary for his reliefe, plentifully inough, for one day. August was now ended when being scarce gone past the narrow passages of those mountaines, he was brought to a pallace in a place, built for Summer delights, which was so exceeding great, that the whole army was intertained there that night. For making a muster of them, he found with him of the Zempoalensians, Tascaltecanes, and Guazuzingi, more then foure thousand armed men, but of his Spaniards scarce 300. But as I haue now sayd, to stopp the mouthes of base & meane spirites, the matter was performed with gunnes, and horses, strange and vnknewnd kinds of sight, rather then with the multitude of armed men: And they had prouision of maintenance enough. For Muteczumas stewards whether soeuer our men went, provided plentifully enough for them. Here they quaked for cold, by reason of the high mountaines nere adioyning, therefore they had neede of great fires. The brother of Muteczuma with many nobles came to Cortes that day, and brought presents in Muteczumas name, 3000. Castellanes of golde, and excellent iewels, and withall besought them to returne, and stay wheresoeuer they pleased. And that Muteczuma would giue what tribute soeuer Cortes should set downe, so hee would desist from comming to the city compassed with waters where, of necessity, especially with so great a multitude, hee must suffer penury and want; because naturally it yeeldeth nothing, and that hee would neuer, or by any meanes revolt from the obedience of that kinge, from whom hee sayd he was sent. Cortes as mildly as he could, answered that hee would willingly yeeld to Muteczumas request to gratify so great a king, if he might safely do it without breach of his kings commandment. And that they should not thinke his comming to bee vnprofitable, but rather beneficiall and honorable. And that hee purposed to come thither, seeing hee could not otherwise chuse. But if hereafter his abode should be troublesome to Muteczuma, he would presently returne, after a league made and matters composed betwene them, which might more apparantly and commodiously be performed in presence, then by intercourse of messengers, on either side. While they were busie about these things, Cortes saith, that the inhabitants ceased not to prepare to intrapp him, and that the woods in the mountaines nere vnto the pallace, were that night full of armed men: But hee glorieth that hee was alwayes so wary, that hee easily freed himselfe from their practises and deceipts. Remouing thence toward the city in the lake, hee founde another lande, city, of 20000. houses, as they say, called Amaquemeca, the name of whose prouince is Ghalco. The king of that place is subiect to the dominion of Muteczuma. Here hee feasted our men daintily, and plentifully and gaue his guests 3000. Castellanes of gold, & iewels, & 40 slaues, as another had giuen him alittle before. Foure leagues from thence, he came to a fresh lake, much lesse then the salt: on the shore whereof standeth a city, halfe in the water & halfe on drye land. An high mountaine byeth nere vnto the city. There twelue men came vnto Cortes, the cheife whereof was carred in a horse litter vpon mennes shoulders: he was 25. yeeres old. When he alighted from the horselitter, hee ran speedily, and clenched the way of all silth, and stones, and if any strawe or dust lay there they made the way cleane as hee went to salute Cortes. After hee had saluted Cortes in the behalfe of Muteczuma, hee intreated that hee would blame the King as careless and negligent, because hee came not forth to meeete him; affirming hee was sicke, and that they were sent to accompany him. Yet if he would alter his purpose of goinge thither, it should be most pleasing and acceptable vnto them. Hee courteously intertained them with faire words, & gaue them certaine pleasing presents of our country comodities: so they cheerefully departed. Cortes followinge them, found another towne of 1500. houses seated in a lake of fresh water: whereto they passed & returne by boat. Their boates are made of one tree as I haue oft

The Omaztecal  
presents to  
Cortes and his  
promises such as  
they had.

A great palace.

Cortes is all  
alone, strange.

Presents brought  
from  
Muteczuma.  
Muteczuma  
offers tribute.

Amazquec  
prepared and pre-  
pared.

Amazquec  
is the prouince  
of Chalco.  
Cortes.

A City.

A great mountain  
where hee went to  
salute Cortes  
on the way.

A 1592.

Iztapalapa a  
city.Coluacana  
City.Cites  
The palace of  
Iztapalapa.

said of the Cánoves of the Iiads & they call those bootes Ácates. Marching through the middle of the lake, he found a causey of the height of a spear, which brought him to another famous towne of 2000. houses. Heere, he was honorably entertained; and the townsmen desired Cortés to stay with them all night, but the Mutezúman Princes accompanying him denied their request. Wherefore the Mutezúmans conducted him that evening to a farre greater city, called Iztapalapa, which touched the shore of a salt lake. This city was in the jurisdiction of Mutezúmas brother, whose name was Tacatepla, three leagues distant from the former towne. Another city called Coluacam is three leagues distant from Iztapalapa, from whence the province also is called Colhua, whereupon our mean from the begininge called the whole country by that name, because they vnder stood thereof being farre from thence. Iztapalapa (as they say) consisteth of eight thousand goodly houses for the most part: and Coluacana is not much lesse. The king of Coluacana was with Mutezúmas brother, who also presented Cortes with precious gifts. They report that the palace of the king of Iztapalapa is very curiously built with limbe and stone: and they say that the workmanship of the tyMBER thereof is very artificiall: and they highly commend the princely pavements, inner roomes, and chambers, thereof; together with the huge and greates halles. That house also hath orchardes; stately planted with diuers trees; and herbes, and flourishing flowers, of a sweete smell. There are also in the same, great standing pooles of water with many kindes of fish, in the which diuers kindes of all sortes of waterfoule are swimminge. To the bottome of these lakes, a man may descend by marble steeppes brought farr of. They report strange things of a walke inclosed with wittinges of Canes, least any one should freely come within the voyde plates of grounde, or to the fruite of the trees: Those hedges are made with a thousand pleasant devises, as it falleth out in those delicate purple crosse alleyes, of myrtle, rosemary, or boxe, al very delightfull to behold. He reporteth many ordinary & meane things touching these matters which haue almost veried me with their prolixity. Now therefore omittinge other things, let vs cast forth this maner Cortes into the citie Tenútitlan, and to the destructions of Mutezúma, on the one part.

## The 3. Chapter.

A wall of stone  
built in the  
water.  
A Citye build-  
ed in the water.  
Metezúzinge  
a city.The use of  
salt.They are  
Mutezúmas and  
cast no salt.

A Castle.

Divers bridges.

They goe from Iztapalapa to Tenútitlan, the seate of that great king Mutezúma, vpon a wall of stone, made by the hande of man & with incredible charge, built in the waters; two speares length in bredth. That wall is in steed of a bridge for Iztapalapa also itselfe, some part of it standeth in a salt lake, but the rest is built vpon the land. Two cittyes founded partly in the water, ioyne to one side of that bridge. On the other side standeth one, whereof the first they meete with who goe that way, is called Metzquatlingo: the second is Coluacana, whereof I spooke a litle before: and the third is called Vuichilabasco. They say the first, consisteth of more then 2000. houses the second, of 6000. and the third of 4000. all of them furnished with turretted and sumptuous kiole temples: These cittyes adioyninge to the bridge, make salt, which all the nations of those countries vse. Of the salt water of the lake, they make it harde, conueyinge it by trenches into the earth apt to thicken it: And beinge hardened and congealed they boyle it, and after make it into rounde lumpes or balles, to be carryed to marketts, or fayres; for exchange of foraine commodities. The tributaries only of Mutezúma were made partakers of the benefit of that salt: but not such as refused to obey his commande. The Tascaltecanes therefore and Guazúzingi, and many others, reason their meate without salt, because, as we haue sayd, they resisted the gouernment of Mutezúma. There are many such walles, which serue in steede of bridges from places on the land, to cittyes on the water which sometimes, as diuers wayes, ioyne and meete together. With this wall descending from Iztapalapa, another wall meeteth, from another side of the city. In the place where they meete is a Castle erected of two inexpagnable towers, from thence by one way they goe to the city. In these walles, or bridges, within a certaine space, there are litle notable bridges of tyMBER, which, when any suspicion of warre is imminent are drawne vp. I thinke these partitions or cleftes also are made for portes, that they might not be deceiued; as in many places, which inioy quiet peace wee see the gates of cittyes shut by night for no other cause.

The

The bridges being drawne vp, the pooles of flotinge waters remaine. They make a way for the waters, for the waters (as they say) ebb and flowe there. This is a wonder (most holy father) in nature, in my judgement and theirs, who say they cannot beleue by any meanes that it can be so, because themselves haue else where neuer read it. This citie standing in the lake, or the situation of the salt lake itselfe, is more then seventy leagues distant from the Sea. And betwene that and the sea lye two long ridges of high mountaines, and two mighty valleys betwene both mountaines. Yet the lake receiveth the flowinge and ebbing of the Sea, unless they speake vnto truth. But no man knoweth where the Sea cometh in, or goeth out. The flood cominge, by the narrow strights of two hills; the salt water is emptied in the channell of the fresh lake, but the force thereof returninge, it returneth from the fresh to the salt, neither is the fresh thereby so corrupted but it may bee drunke, nor doth the salt lake become fresh. We haue spoken sufficiently of lakes, walles, bridges & Castles: let vs now at lengthe returne to that pleasing spectacle to the Spaniards, because it was longe desired, yet happily to the wise Tomastians it may seeme otherwise, because they feare it would so fall out, that these guesates came to disturbe the Elisian quietnesse and peace, though the common people were of another opinion, who suppose nothinge so delectable, as to haue present innovations before their eyes, not carefull of that which is to come! To this crosse way, a thousand menne, attired after their country fashion, came from the citie to meeete Cortes: who all vsing their severall ceremonies, salute him. The ceremony or manner of salutation is this, to touch the earth with their right hand, & presently to kisse that part of the right hand where with they touched the earth, in token of reuerence. All these were Noblemen of the Court: behind the king himselfe so much desired, cometh now at length. That way (as I haue already said) is a league and an halfe long, others say, it is two leagues, yet is it so straight, that layinge a line vnto it nothinge can bee drawne more straight. If the quicknes of mans eiesight beholding it wold serue him, he shal easily perceiue the entræce of Muteuczuma citie from the very Castle, from whence Cortes remoued. The King went in the middle of the bridge; and the rest of the people on the sides orderly followinge in equal distances one from another, and all bare footed. Two Princes (whereof the one was his brother, the other, one of the peeres, Lord of Iztapalapa) taking the Kinge Muteuczuma drew him by the armes, not that he needed such helpe, but it is their manner so to reuerence their kinges, that they may seeme to be vpheld and supported by the strength of the nobilitie. Muteuczuma approachinge, Cortes dismounted from the horse whereon he roode; and goeth to the kinge being about to embrace him: but the Princes which stood on either side would not suffer him for with them it is an hainous matter to touch the kinge. They that came on the sides in ordered troopes, left their appointed places, that they might all salute Cortes with the accustomed ceremony of salutation. And then presently euery one went backe to his place againe, least the ranks should be disordered. After cheerefull salutations ended; Cortes turninge to the Kinge, tooke a chaine from his owne necke (which he wore) of smale value, and put it about the Kings necke. For they were counterfeits of glasse, of diuers colours, partly diamonds, partly pearle, & partly Carbuncles & all of glasse, yet the present liked Muteuczuma well. Muteuczuma required him with two other chaines of gold and precious stones with shelles of golde, and golden Creuises hanginge at them. Hauinge intertained all, they who came out to meeete them, turned their faces to that huge and miraculous citie: and march backe againe in the same order that they came, by the sides of that admirable bridge, leauing the middle alley of the bridge, onely for the Kinge Muteuczuma, and our menne. But oh abhominable impiety to behould, and horrible to bee spoken. On either side of that bridge, on the outside, were many stately towers erected in the lake, all which were in steede of Churches. In these either the bodies of slanes bought for money or the children of tributaries appointed for that purpose instead of tribute, were offered or sacrificed, with a certaine honor that cannot be conceiued. Many vnderstanding of matter as they passed by confessed of their bowells earned within the. At length they came to an exceeding great Palace, the ancient seat of Muteuczumas ancestors, finely decked with Princely ornaments. There Muteuczuma placed Cortes on a throne of golde, in the Kings hal and returned to another Pallace. He commanded all Cortes his followers and companions to be

The falling & drawing of a hill, no longer distant from the sea.

A Ceremony of salute made of salutation.

The Kinge drawn by the armes & what that may signifie.

Cortes commencing to embrace the king was interrupted of the nobles.

Cortes touch the King's counterfeits that are a proper reward for so many rich prizes.

The abhominable sacrifice of slanes and children, the Christians first counterfeits.

Cortes placed in a throne of golde.

Cortes his voyall  
secretary letters.

The creation of  
Mutezuma  
with Cortes &  
his companions.

fed with delicate and Princely meates, & to bee all commodiously and well entertayned in their lodgings. After a few houres Mutezuma having dined, returneth to Cortes, and brought with him Chamberlaines, & others of his domestically seruantes, laden with garments, intermixed with golde, and most finely coloured of Gossampine cotton. It is incredible to be spoken, but how credible it is, wee shall hereafter speake; They (who sawe them) say, they were 6000. garments and Cortes himself writeth the same. They brought also with them, many presentes of golde and silver. At the tribunall of Cortes there was another banded floure layde, decked with the like ornamentes. Vpon that scaffold Mutezuma assembling at the nobilitie of his kingdomes vnto him, made this oration vnto them, as they perceiued by the Interpreters which Hieronimus Aquilaris vnderstood. Most worthy & renowned men for warlike prowesse, & gracious towardes the suppliant, I wish that this your meetinge may be prosperous, and I hope it shall be so: and let your coming to these countries be fortunate and happie. After, turning to his nobilitie he speaketh thus. We haue heard by our ancestors, that we are strangers. A certaine great prince transported in shippes, beefore the memorie of all men liuing, brought our ancestors vnto these coasts, whither voluntarily, or driven by tempest, it is not manifest, who leaning his companions, departed into his country, & at length returning, would haue had them gone backe againe. But they had now built them houses, & inuoying themselves with the women of the Prouinces had begotten children, and had most peaceable settled houses; Wherefore our ancestors refused to returne, and harkened no further to his perswasion. For they hadde now chosen among themselves both a Senate, and Prince of the people, by whose counsell and direction they would bee gouerned, so that they report he departed with threatening speeches. Neuer any appeared vnto this time, who demanded the right of that captaine & Commander. I therefore exhort and admonish you the Nobles of my kingdomes, that you doe the same reuerence to so great a Commander of so great a king, that ye doe to me, and at his pleasure, giue him the tributes, due vnto me. After turning his face vnto Cortes, he spake further. We thinke therefore by that which we haue spoken, that king who (you say) sent you, desired his discent from him, wherefore ye are luckily come, repose your mindes after the exceeding great labours, which I vnderstande ye haue endured since ye came into these countries, and now refresh and comfort your faint and weary bodies. All the kingdomes which wee possess are yours. What Nobleman soeuer thou art, being sent a Captaine for this purpose thou mayst lawfully commande all the kingdomes, which were subiect vnto me. But as touching the reports of the Zempoalensians, Tascaltecanes, and Guazuzingis, concerning me, they may iustly bee taken, for such, as proceeded from the affection of an enemy: but the experience of matters shall proue them liars. They habbled that my houses were of golde, and my matters golde, and my household stuffe was all of golde, and that I was a god, and not a man. You yourselles see, that my houses are of stone, my matters made of ryer weedes, and the furniture of my house of cotton. I confesse I haue Jewels of golde, layde vp in my Treasury. Those are yours: which in the behalfe of that great king of ours, we at your pleasure. But as touching that, that they said I was no man, but immortal, beholde mine armes, and my legges, looke whether they be not flesh and bone. Speaking this, he discovereth his armes, and legges, halfe weeping. When he hadde made an end of speaking, Cortes comforteth him, and putte him in good hope that matters should be well carryed. With these wordes Mutezuma departed, somewhat with a cheerefull countenance, but whither quieted in minde, to suffer a Competitor, let him iudge who euer tasted the sweete of Souerainty, and whether any man would euer entertaine guests willingly, who violently intrude, lette such speake as haue hadde experience thereof. In the faces of the Princes assembled, who heard it, casting downe their eyes vpon the ground; you might apparently vnderstande, how quiet that assembly was. For being readie to weepe, they receiued whatsoever was acted, with sobbes and sighes, and remained long silent in a dumpe: and at length promise to performe Mutezumas commaunde: yet, that they could not but be troubled in their mindes, for so great and suddaine an alteration of their state. The assembly being dismissed, every one went to their owne kindred or familie. Of these thinges we haue sufficiently spoken: now let vs declare what succeeded after that

Mutezuma  
respects vs  
his Kingdomes  
to Cortes.

that meeting. 'All things fell out very ill and vnluckily to Mutezuma his Tributaries, and his friendes, as we shall hereafter speake:' but for the enlargment of our religion, exceeding well. For wee hope, it shall shortly come to passe that those blouddie sacrifices shall bee taken away from among them, through the embracing of the commandements of Christ. So they passed sixe dayes quietly, but all the dayes following, full of sorrow, and calamitie, so that nothing coulde euer haue fallen out more vnhappy to any people, not onely to a King. For after those seuen dayes, whether that it so fell out, or that Cortes woulde thereby take occasion; hee sayd, hee receiued letters a little before from that Governour whom he left in the garrison of the Colonie of Vera Crux, whereby that Governour signified, that Coalecopoca the King of that prouince, where Cortes erected a Colonie, called Almeria, had committed a soule matter, not by any meanes to be indured. That Governour reported that Coalecopoca sent messengers vnto him, to tell him that the King Coalecopoca came not yet vnto him to salute him, and doe him that reuerence, due to so great a King, as he was, whose Cortes and his companions acknowledge, because he was to passe through the enemies countries, from whom they feared some inconuenience woulde ensue, and therefore desireth, that the Governour woulde sende some of his Spanyardes vnto him, to accompanie him in the way for his defence. For, he sayde, hee was in good hope, that the enemy durst not attempt any thing against him, while the Spanyardes were in his companie. The Governour gave credite to the messengers, and sent foure Spanyardes to Coalecopoca, to accompanie him vnto him, through countries, friends to him: but enemies to Coalecopoca. The messengers going vnto him, were assaulted within the borders of Coalecopoca, two of them the robbers on the high way side slew presently, the other two being grievously wounded, escaped. The Governour supposing it was doone by the practise of Coalecopoca, in reuenge of the matter, went agaynst Coalecopoca. Hee hadde only two horses, & with those, certayne shot, and some peeces of ordinaunce, and footemen. Hee bringeth 50. of his companie with him, yet scatheth for the bordering enemies of Coalecopoca to come to aide him, and so they assault the cite of Coalecopoca. The Coalecopocans fiercely resisted: In the assault they slew seuen Spanyardes, and many of those that came to aide them. At length the seat of Coalecopoca was vanquished, and made a pray, many citizens being slayne and taken: But Coalecopoca escaped by flight. Cortes hauing gotten this occasion determined to destroy and ouerthrow Mutezuma: fearing least peraduenture fortune might change, or lest at any time becoming loathsome vnto the, through insolency of the Spanyardes, whom specially when they were idle and full fed hee coulde hardly restraitte, fearing also least through the long & continuall trouble of entertainment, he might make them desperat who entertained them, hee goeth to Mutezuma: and affirmeth that it was written, and tolde him, that Coalecopoca his Tributary did those things against the Governour of Vera Crux, not onely without the priuie of Mutezuma, but by his commandement. Cortes sayde he woulde not haue beleued it. Yet to take all suspicion out of the minde of the great King, to whose eares as he sayd; the report of the matter came, Mutezuma must come to the Pallace where Cortes himselfe dwelt, that hee might write that he had him in his power, although his purpose were not to alter any thing concerning the government of the cite or the kingdome. But Mutezuma, although hee vnderstood his authoritie beganne now to bee weakened; yet granted his request. Hee commandeth his horchiller to be brought, wherein hee might come vnto him. Whereupon through so great an alteration of things, a murmuring arose among the people, and they beganne to make a tumult. Mutezuma commanded them to lay downe their armes, and bee quiet: and perswaded them all, that hee did it of his owne accorde. His Nobles and familiar friendes followed their maister with teares. After a few dayes, hee desireth, that hee woulde sende for Coalecopoca, and the partakers of that wicked practise to punish them, that so hee might acquitte his innocencie with the great King. Mutezuma obeyeth: and callinge for certayne of his faithfull friendes, giueth them his pryue scale, in token of his last will, adding this also in charge, that calling the next tributary people vnto them, they endeavour to bring him by force, if hee denyed to come. Coalecopoca, and one of his sonnes, and 15. Nablemen came. Hee denyed at the first, that hee did it by the consent of Mutezuma. Whereupon Cortes making a great fire in a large and spacious

Letters to Cortes from the Governour of Vera Crux.

A note sent by Cortes to Mutezuma about his power.

Coalecopoca sent for reuenge to Cortes.

spacious streete, commaunded Coatlcozca with his sonne, and the rest to be burned, Mutezcuzma and all his huge princely citty looking on, the sentence of treason was pronounced against them. But when they saw they should be brought to receiue punishment they confessed that Mutezcuzma commaunded them. Whereupon Cortes who by seeking occasion, went about to challenge the Empire of Mutezcuzma vnto himselfe, bindeth Mutezcuzma (whom he had with him) with fetters, and reuiled him besides with threatening speeches. Vnhappy Mutezcuzma then, astonished at so strang a matter, was full of feare, and his courage began to faile, so that he durst not now lift vpp his head, nor intreate ayde of his subiectes and friends, yet he presently loosed him, and greatly blamed him for the dedde. But he confessed hee had deserued punishment, who like a meeke lambe with patient minde seemed to suffer these rules harder then those which are inioyned grammer schollers, being but headlesse boyes, and quietly beareth all things, least any sedition of the Cittizens and Nobilitie might arise. Any yoaके whatsoever seemed to bee more easie vnto him, then the stirring vp of his people, as if he had beene guided by the example of Dioclesian, who rather determined to drinke poison, then to take the Empire vpon him againe, which he had once reiected. After that Cortes speaketh to Mutezcuzma, saying, that he hoped, hee would keepe the promise he had made, concerning his obedience, and other couenants concluded in the behalfe of that great King of Spayne, wherefore to fulfill his desire, if hee would, hee might returne backe vnto his palace, where he liued before in princely manner. Cortes offereth him this fauour, but he refused it, saying, it was not possible, but he should be prouoked by his nobility, and tormented with a thousand troubles, and saith further, that their mindes were prepared to raise tumults, who (as he vnderstood) gnashed their teeth for anger, because he intertained Cortes, and his companions, especially with such a multitude of hatefull officials. He confessed, that he liued more quietly and safely with our menne, then to converse with such an varuly and tempestuous multitude of his subiectes. Yet sometimes he went to his pallaces to walke, which hee had built with wonderful curiosity and art for his delight, whereof wee shall speake more at large hereafter. So, they liued both together vnder one roose a long time, Cortes the guest intertained, and Mutezcuzma the intertayner, but now contrary. When soeuer he returned in the evening, he went not to the ancient palace of his ancestors, and his seate, but to the palace of Cortes. Descending from his horse-litter, he gaue gifts to all his followers, and to the Spanyards also, and desired to haue the Spanyards take him by the hand to whome hee called, and spake vnto them with cheerefull countenance, and courteous speeches. The state of things being thus, Cortes desired Mutezcuzma, to shew him the mynes of golde, from whence he and his ancestors had their gold: I am well content saith Mutezcuzma: and presently he commaunded skillful workemen experimented in that art to be brought vnto him. Diuers men with Spanyards appoynted by Cortes are sent into diuers places to bringe newes to Cortes, what they had seene. They are first directed to the gold mines of a certaine prouince called Zuzulla. That prouince is 80 leagues distant from the Pallace of Tenustitan, where they gathered gold out of three riuers with little trouble, and yet the Spanyards tooke not their instruments with them, wherewith to elense it. For the inhabitants doe not so highly esteeme golde, that they make any reckoning to seeke for it otherwise, then, that casting vp the sand, they may picke out the greater graines of gold among the little stones: They say, that countrie, especially in the middle thereof, is replenished with stately townes within a leagues distance one from another. He sent others to the countrie called Tamaculappa, whose inhabitants are richer, and more costly and curious in their attire, the Zuzullani, because they inioy a more fertile soyle. He apoynted others also to go to another prouince named Malinaltepech, which lyeth neerer the Sea. 60. leagues distant from that Princely lake. There they gathered golde out of a great-river. Others went to a countrie in the mountaines, named Tenis. Heere are fierce warriors, who haue speares of 30. spans long, fit for fight. Coatlimalacus, the King thereof, is free from the subiection of Mutezcuzma: who sayd, that the Spanyards might lawfully set footing in his borders, but not the Mutezcuzmanes. So Coatlimalacus peaceably receiued the Spanyards, and fed them daintily. This Country Tenis is famous for 8. riuers, all which ingender gold. This King sent messengers to Cortes,

Mutezcuzma appointed of some prince is bound with fetters.

Cortes to Mutezcuzma.

The golden mine of Zuzulla.

scarcely containe Tamaculappa.

Malinaltepech.

Tenis. Coatlimalacus King of Tenis.

8. riuers in Tenis yielding gold.

to offer himselfe and all that he had. Others were appointed to goe to a province called Tachintebeck, who found two rivers there yielding gold, and that it was a fit country for plantation of a Colony. Cortes being certified of the goodnes of this countrie of Tachintebeck, desired of Muteuczuma, that he would erect an house in that province, in the behalfe of our great King, whether, such as went thither to gather gold, might resort. This motion pleased him well: whereupon he commaunded the kings Carpenters to bee readie at hande. The diligence of his seruantes was so great that within lesse then the space of two moneths, they built a pallace, able to receive any great Prince, and all his kingly traine, that they should lacke nothing. In the meane space while the house was building in the twinkling of an eye, as I may say, graines of Panick, wherewith they make bread, innumerable measures, and many small pulse, and diuers kindes of other pulse were sowne, & they planted also 2000. of those trees, which beare the almonde, which they vse in stead of money, wherof else where I haue spoken more at large. Men of meane capacity, will thinke it but a phantasie, that money should be gathered from trees. Without the greater house, three other houses were built, appointed as houses of seruice for the pallace. They made also great pooles of fresh-water, where abundance of fish and water-foule might be kept, and maintained, but specially geese. For he caused 500. at one clap to be cast in, because they haue more vse of them, for the feathers, wherof they make many sortes of couerings. For they plucke the feathers from them euery yeere in the beginning of the spring. He added also hens, which are greater then our peacocks, & not inferior to the in tast, as I sayd elsewhere, wherof he provided 1500. for present-foode, & for increase of chickens. Besides, they make all instruments what soeuer might serue for tillage of the ground, and for the vse of husbandry. Cortes writeth, that that pallace erected in so small a time, if it might haue bin sold, to haue bin more worth then 20000. Castellans, & that there was not the like thereof in all Spaine. We grant what they grant. Muteuczuma being afterward demoued where there was any haueu, answered, he could not tell, because he neuer had any care of matters pertainyng to the sea coast: yet hee would giue him all the shoare described in painting, that hee might choose a place himselfe, at his owne pleasure. And to that ende, he sent skillfull maisters of those shoares with the Spaniards, who trauaile diuers parts. In the province Guazacaco, whose king is deadly enemy to Muteuczuma, the king admitted the Spaniards, but not the Muteuczumehes. This king sayth he had heard of the worthinesse of our men, and of their warlike practise, since they subdued the Potencianeseas, and from that time he desired the amitie and friendship of our men, and sayth that hee wisheth that their coming might be prosperous, and shewed them the great mouth of a river, which river (they saye) is deepe, where they might haue harbour for their greater shippes. There, he began to erect a Colony, the king to desiring it, who after the manner of that country, set vp six of his Tributaries houses vpon the banke of that river. He promised more, when need shall require and invited the Spaniards to a perpetuall habitation, if they would settle themselves within his borders, ay, euen within his city also, if they rather sought it. Hee sent presents in token of desired amity, although not very sumptuous, and embassadors also to Cortes to offer his obedience. Let vs returne to Muteuczumas matters againe. Muteuczuma being detained, or (that I may more freely speake,) brought into honest seruitude, Catamazinus the possessor of the province of Haco-lucana, (the cheif city where of is Tesueco,) being a subiect, and allyed to Muteuczuma, began to rebell: and openly professed that now, hee would neither obey Cortes, nor Muteuczuma any longer, and proudly advanced his crest against them both. This King hath dominion ouer foure cities (from thence he is called Nahautecal, because Nahau signififieth foure, and teal Lord) yet are they vnder the Empire of Muteuczuma: As your Holinesse knowes, it falleth out in our kingdoms of Europe, that there are mighty Princes vnder the Emperours in Germany, and vnder the kings of Spaine, and France, yet are they subiect to Emperours, and kings, with the countries themselves, which they command. They say, that the cheif of those cities, Tesueco: containeth 30000. houses, famous for excellent wals, sumptuous temples, and stately houses: and the rest, haue some 3. or 4000. houses, with country farmes, streets, and rich villages, blessed with a fruitfull soyle. The messengers of Cortes, inuited

him

Tachintebeck  
Cort.A great palace  
of Tachintebeck  
built in two  
moneths.Instruments of  
husbandry.Great Muteuczuma  
was thus so near  
to the sea.

Guazacaco.

The great river  
into this king  
to Cortes.Catanamazinus  
detaind.

Tesueco a city.

The answer of him to peace, he answered with a proud and haughty countenance: doe you thinke vs to be so dejected in mind, that we will subiect our necks to you strangers? Hee also sharply re-  
 Catamazinus is  
 proud. Muteezuma, that he so faintly yeelded himselfe into the power of our men: and that  
 they should vnderstand what hee was, if they came vnto him. And casting out his armes, he  
 said, let them come whensoever they would. This being reported Cortes desired to invade

Muteezuma Co-  
 wished to warre  
 with Catamazi-  
 nus.

Catamazinus with hostile armes: Muteezuma aduised him to deale otherwise. For slaughter  
 was prepared, if they came to handy blowes, because Catamazinus was mighty, and Lord and  
 Commander of men well experimented in armes. That the victory would be doubtfull, and  
 if he ouercame, it would be bloody and therefore he thought best, to deale with him by sub-  
 tility, and cunning stratagemes. He answered, that care should be left to him: and sayth,  
 that he will cut Catamazinus his combe, without any great difficulty. Therefore sending for  
 his noble Stipendiary Captaines, hee sayth, that hee would suppress the rash insolency of  
 Catamazinus. These Captaines had alliance with Muteezuma and Catamazinus, and his fami-  
 liar friends, who being suborned, he commandeth to doe their endeour to take Catamazinus,  
 and bring him vnto him whether hee woulde or no, and if they saue it needefull to kill him.  
 The circumstances are long, and the history tedious: but it sufficeth to declare how the mat-  
 ter was acted. The Captaines performed the commandement of their maister, huckly.

Catamazinus  
 surpris'd and  
 brought to Cor-  
 tes. Catamazi-  
 nus the  
 brother made  
 king.

They tooke Catamazinus by violence in the night, vnprepared, and fearing nothing, and sur-  
 prised him by heates in his owne house, seated on the brinke of a salt lake, and brought him  
 to the pallace of Tenastitan standing in the lake. Hee gaue Catamazinus to Cortes, who being  
 imprysoned and bound in chaines, he placed his brother Cacusazimus in his kingdome, who  
 was obedient to Muteezuma. The people of those citties desired it, because they were  
 to proudly gouerned by Catamazinus, neyther durst the brother liue with the brother, because  
 hee was to stubborn, and captious. A fewe dayes after, Cortes perswaded Muteezuma, to  
 send messengers to the Noble menne, (who hearing their Kings oration, concerning the  
 performing of their obedience to the great King of Spayne, went backe againe vnto their  
 native countries) to require of euery of them, some parte of those things they possessed, to be  
 sent to the great King of Spayne, because he was iustly employed in framing of a certaine  
 great and endles peice of worke, and was carefull to finish the building hee had vnderaken.  
 Muteezuma granted his request. Whereof of his familiar friends, Noble men knowne vnto  
 him, as it happeneth in kings houses, through conuersing in kings secret chambers, Cortes  
 sendeth two or three, to euery noble man, with as many Spanyardes to accompany them. So  
 great a feare was now conceiued among them, that hearing the name of the Spanyardes no  
 man knew how to muter, or to thinke otherwise, then that he should be commanded.  
 Diners men went to diuers places, some 50. some 60. some 80. and some an 100. leagues  
 and more, and demanded, and received large and liberal gifts. There was such plenty of  
 gold, that Cortes writeth, that the 5. parte of that which was molten, due vnto the King,  
 amounted to 34000. Castellans of gold: and your Holinesse knoweth, that the coyue which  
 they call a Castellan, exceedeth the Ducat, a third part. Besides the gold which was to be  
 melted, they brought many precious iewels of great waight, and value, very curiously

Prerogative de-  
 mand'd to be  
 use to the King  
 of Spayne.

30000. Castellans of gold for  
 the King of  
 Spaine.

Martinus repre-  
 sent opus. Ocul.

wrought, wherein, the art and workmanship exceeded the metall. For they haue most in-  
 genious workemen of all arts, especially for working in gold, and siluer, whereof your Hol-  
 inesse is not ignorant. For your Holinesse hath seene many, & hath sometimes wonder'd at  
 the curious workmanship thereof, when you were with vs, before you attayned to that high  
 and mighty throne. Cortes also saith, that they brought no meene store of precious stones.  
 But of the siluer which was brought, Cortes writeth, that the Kings fitt part, was more then an  
 hundred weight, of eight ounces, which the Spanyard calleth marke. They report incredible  
 matters of Cotton, household-stuffe, tapestry or arras hangings, garments, and couerlets. Yet  
 are they to be thought credible, when such a person dare boldly write such things to the  
 Emperour, and the Senatours of our Indiu Colledge. He addeth further, that he omitted  
 many things, least hee should be troublesome in recounting so great variety of things.  
 They also who returne vnto vs frō thence, affirme the same: But, as for those things which  
 hee receiued: from the King himselfe Muteezuma, they are so admirable both for the value,  
 and

The King's  
 part of the sil-  
 uer.

and art, that I thinke it best to omit them, before we see them. What was sent before, we saw, together with your Holiness in that famous towne Valdolet, which in the fourth Decade we described. He writeth, that hee will shortly send many of those things. They, who come vnto vs, say that the former, were much inferiour, both in number, quality, and value. Cortes gaue himselfe to rest & quietnes, and knew not what to doe in so great, and happy a successe of things, for beholding the power of Muteezuma, the largenes of his Empire, and the order, elegancy, and plenty of his house, confesseth that he knows not which way to turne himselfe, nor were to begin, to make report thereof. Yet, he declareth, § he wold begin with that prouince, where those lakes, and the great city of Tenustitan, and many others lie, and that hee will afterwarde speake of the rest. He sayth, the prouince is called Messica, inclosed with high mountains. In that Plaine are those two lakes, the fresh, and the other salt, as I sayde before. They say, that, that plaine is 70. leagues in circuit about, the greatest part whereof is filled with lakes. Seeing the city of Tenustitan is the seate of the great King Muteezuma, placed in the center of a salt lake: which way soeuer you go vnto it, it is a league and a halfe, or two leagues, distant from the Continent, the lake day and night is plyed with boates going and returning. For they goe by stone bridges made by hand, foure leagues, as from the foure sides, for the most part ioynted together, and solid, yet for a long space open, and deuided, with beames layde ouer those parts vnderpropped by posts, whereby the flowing, and ebbing waters may haue a passage, and whereby they may easily be drawne vpp, if any daunger appeare. They say, those bridges are two speares length broode. One of them, wee described, when Cortes mette with Muteezuma, from thence, the forme and fashion of the rest, may bee taken. Two conduits of water were conueyed by the bridge, without impedimēt to the bridge: All the city take their drinke from thence. And places are appointed along the bridg, for the kings reuengatherers, who keepe boates to carry water through the city to be sold, and require tribute of such as fetch water there. This conduit hath 2. channells: so that whē one is foule, through the mossy furcing of the running water, they turne the course of the water into another channell, while the other be clesed, so cyther channell being scoured by turne, they drinke purified water throughout the whole city. They say the thickness of that pipe, equalleth the body of an oxe. What shall I speake of the multitude of bridges, throughout the city itselfe, whereby neighbours passe ouer vnto neighbours? They are made of timber, and all of them so broad, that ten men may walke together in a rauke, they are innumerable as they say, and wee can thinke no lesse. For their wayes for the most part, are by water: yet are there other wayes by land, as appeareth in our famous common wealth of Venice. Moreover, they say, there are other cities built and founded vpon either lake, both on the banke, and on the water, after the manner of Venice. As for Tenustitan itselfe, they report, that it consisteth of 60. thousand houses, or thereabout; and if the rest be true, which is deliuered, none may object against the possibility thereof. There are exceeding great streetes therein, but specially one, inclosed on euery side with walkes or galleries: which is the receit of all marchants and other tradesmen. Heree there are worthy shoppes and warehouses of all vendible wares, most commodious for apparell, victualling, and warlike, and ciuill ornaments: you may euery day in the markets, and faires number 60. thousand men buyers, and sellers, who bring of the commodities of their country in boates vnto the city, and carry backe some forraigne marchandise with them againe. As all our country men with vs use to conuay their carriages, vpon asses, or else vpon packe-horses, or carts, so doth the country people out of the villages and country farmes to the neighbouring townes, and citties; what-oeuer they haue gathered through their labourious industry and care: and at their returne in the evening, cary home, wood, strawe, wine, wheate, barley, crammed foule, & such like, wherewith to satisfie either necessity, or appetite. But there is another great benefite there for all strangers, and traders. For there is no streete, biuisill, triuall, or quadriviall, where there are not victuallers. Euery moment of an houre rest, and solden, meates of foule, and foure footed beasts are there to bee founde, but oxen, goates, and sheepe they haue none. Young whelpes flesh is vsuall there, as I haue already sayd, which they geld and fatte for foodde, they haue also store and plenty of decre and wild bore, beere.

The vnspeakable power & riches of Muteezuma.

Messica the name of a prouince.

Muteezuma his Court is the center of a salt lake.

Bridge.

Tenustitan hath 60000 houses.

Trades and marchants.

No cat, goats or sheep, but oxen, young whelpes such as they, more there. Decree and wild bore, beere.

Hare.  
Cuckoo.  
Turkie.  
Blacke hiden.  
Partridge.  
Peacocks.

Of the nature of  
their Hens and  
Cocks.  
A pretty com-  
cept.

hore, and they are excellent hunters: and haue also hares, and conies, turtle doves, blacke birdes, and certaine birdes feeding vpon eggs and grapes, Partridges, and other birdes they call Atagenes, that country also nourisheth Pheasants. And among other domestical foule, euen as our country women bring vp chickens, so do they maintaine Geese and Duckes, & Peacocks which our country men call hennes. I haue heretofore sayd, that in greatnes, & colour of feathers, they are like Peahennes. But I neuer yet described their nature and disposition. The females sometimes lay 20. or 30. egges, so that it is a multiplying company. The males are alwayes in loue, and therefore they say, they are very light meate of digestion. They alwayes stand gazing and looking vpon themselves before the females, and as our peacocks doe, they walke all the whole day with their traines spread like a wheele, before their beloued females, ietting and going crossewise, as our peacocks also doe, and continually euery moment, after they haue gone foure strides, or little more, they all make a noyse, like a sick man oppressed with a violent feuer, when he gnasheth and chattereth with his teeth for cold. They shew diuers colours at their pleasure among the feathers of the necke, shining sometimes blew, sometimes greene, and lastly purple, according to the diuers motion of the feathers, as a delicate young man inuared with the loue of his lemman desiring to yeeld contentment & delight. But a certaine priest called Benedictus Montinus, a curious searcher of those countries, told me one thing, which hee sayd, hee learned by experience, hard for mee to beleue. He sayth, hee nourished many flockes of these peacocks, and was very careful to multiply them by generation: who sayth, that the male is troubled with certayne impedimentes in the legges, that he can scarce allure the henne to treade her, vnlesse some knowne person take her in his hand, and hold her, nor doth the henne (saith he) refuse to be taken, nor is she discouraged from coming vnto her. For as soone as hee perceiuethe the henne which he loveth, is held, hee presently cometh vnto her, and performs his business in the hand of the holder. This he reporteth, yet his fellows say it falleth out very seldome so. Of those peacocks, Geese, and Duckes, they haue great plenty of egges, so that, whether they will haue them raw, or dressed after diuers manners, or serued vpon sippets, they haue them alwayes at hand. They haue also with them, plenty of fish, both of the river, and of the lake, but no sea fish, for they are a great distance from the sea, and of those, raw, boyled, or roasted, marchants get store at their pleasure. But of our countrie fruites, they haue cherries, plumes, and apples, of diuers kinds, but many of those sortes of fruites are vnknowne to vs. Many rauening fowles of every kinde for sensuall appetite, are sold aboue, and their whole skinnes stuffed with cotton, so that such as behold them, would thinke they were liuing. All streetes, and passages haue their artificers, diuided apart. They highly esteeme Herborists and Apothecaries, to cure diseases. They haue also many kinds of pot herbes, as lettuce, raddish, cresses, garlicke, onyons, and many other herbes besides. They gather certaine hony, and wax from trees, and such hony as our country yeeldeth from bees. I haue now sufficiently spoken concerning crammes foule, foure-footed beastes, fishes, and other things seruing for food, and sensuallitie: but with what many these things are done, it is a pleasing story to report, but your Holinesse hath heard it, and I haue else where written thereof.

Fruites.

Peacocks.  
They gathered  
from trees.  
Of bees.

#### The fourth Chapter.

Money of the  
Ilands of orin.

Drinke may be  
made of that  
money by soe a  
king.  
Hee hath prefer-  
red this money to  
ouer of gold and  
silver, so some  
hardly to the  
made and more  
profitable to the  
body.  
Drinke.

I Haue heretofore said that their currant money is of the fruits of certaine trees, like our almonds, which they call Cachoas. The vtility and benefit thereof is two fold: for this almonde supplieth the vse of monie, and is fit, to make drinke, of itselfe it is not to be eaten, because it is somewhat bitter, although tender as a blanched almond. But being bruised or stamped in a mortar, it is kept for drinke, a portion of the powder whereof being cast into water, and then stirred about a little, drinke is made thereof, fitte for a king. O blessed money, which yeeldeth sweete, and profitable drinke for mankind, and preseruethe the possessors thereof free from the hellish pestilence of auarice, because it cannot be long kept, or hid vnder ground. There are also many other sortes of drinke, (as it commonly happeneth in the Country where your Holinesse was borne,) of ale, and syder, and the graine Maizzen bruised and boyled in certaine great vessels, or pitchers, with fruites and certayne herbes,

which

which drinke, euery kitchen or victualling house where meate is dressed, affordeth to such as will buy the same. Before your Holiness departed out of Spayne, you vnderstoode of that strange matter of the money tree, neuer heard of before. But how that tree might be planted, nourished, and grow, wee had not then heard: but now all things are better knowne vnto vs. Those trees grow but in fewe places: for they haue neede of an-hot, and moist country, vsed with a certaine milde temper of the ayre. There are Kings, whose rents, and reuenues are only the fruits of those trees. By exchange and barter thereof they buy them necessary things, as slaues, and garments, and whatsoever maketh for ornament, or other vses. Marchantes bring in diuers wares and commodities vnto them, and carry out plenty of those fruites, which the rest of the prouinces vse. These almondes are so currant, as by that meanes, all the borderers are made partakers thereof. The like happeneth in all countries: for who soeuer haue spices, gold, silver, Steele, iron, leade, or any other metall, through the bounty of their country, they obtaine the sordaine commodity which they desire. For they goe through other countries, which want these marchandies, or which through humane effeminacy suppose they want them, and bring home such things as they knowe are acceptable to their neighbours, that through this varietie of things they may adorne nature. So wee liue in the world, and so we must speake. But with what art these trees are nourished, I am now to docc aer. The yong & tender tree is planted vnder any other tree, that as a yong infant in the bosome of the nurse, it may be secured frō y heat of the sun, & violence of showers. But after it is grown vp y it may spread her roots, & being now hardened, may inioy y calme breathing of y aire & sun, the nourishing tree is either rooted vp, or cut downe. Let this suffice for the tree which beareth money: which if comon & base spirits wil not beleue, I desire not to compell them therunto. Whatsoeuer also serueth for the building or ornament for houses, is sold in the streets of Tenusitan and common markets, as beames, rafters, wood, lime, mortar, or playstere, bricke, and stones readie hewed for present vse. Many sorts also of earthen vessels are sold there; as water pots, grate wiggs, chargers, goblets, dishes, colenders, basens, frying pans, porringers, patches, all these vessels are cunningly wrought. They lacke Steele, and iron: yet haue they great plenty of gold, silver, tinne, leade, and copper. Whether a man desire the rude metall, or to haue it molten, or beaten out, and cunningly made into any kinde of Jewell, hee shall find them ready wrought. They are so sharpe witted, and ingenious, that whatsoever the workemans eyes behold, they presently forge, and graue it so fayre, that they imitate nature. There is no aspect, countenance, or shape of any bird, or foure footed beast, whereof Mutezuma hath not the similitudes and representations, most likely counterfeiting them that hee aloue, and whoeuer beholdeth them a farre off, would thinke they were liuing. And your Holiness knowes it very well: for your Holiness hath seen many of them in a present, which was brought, before you tooke your iourney from Spaine to the City. There is also another thing not to be omitted. In the broad field of a large streete standeth an huge Senate house, where tenne or twelue ancient men authorised, continually sit, as lawiers readie to decide and iudge of controversies arising. And by them stand sergeants to execute their commaundement: the Clarkes of the market also are present there, who haue the charge of the measures, and numbers, whether they vse waight or no, they had not yet heard. There is another thing besides much to be wondered at. I haue heretofore said, that there is great plenty of all things, in that city compassed with a salt lake, although they haue neither beastes of burthen, Mules, or Ases, nor Oxen wherewith to drawe waynes or cartes. But many with good reason will demand by what meanes or industry such huge beames especially, and stones fit for building, and such other things, & the rest might bee carried? Let them know, that all these things are carried vpon the shoulders of slaues; and it is not without admiration, that seeing they want iron and Steele, they so cunningly frame and make all things with such elegance and perfection. Let them vnderstande that all things are formed and fashioned diuersly with stones. In the beginning of this so rare inuentio, I gotte one of them, which Christophorus Colonus, Admirall of the Sea gaue mee. This stone was of a Greene darkeish colour, fastened in most firme and harde woode, which was the handle or helme thereof. I stroke with all my force vpon Iron barres,

The nature of  
this money tree  
and howe  
the planting  
thereof.

Commodities of  
all sorts sold in  
Tenusitan.

The wonderful  
ingenuity of the  
Indians work-  
men.

A Seat house  
and Senates.

Sergeants,  
Clarkes of the  
market.

Slaves in stead  
of beastes of bur-  
then.

All workman-  
ship hit neuer  
so curious  
found, and fa-  
shiond with  
stones.  
A Greene Sea-  
regline Stone.

and dened the Iron with my strokes without spoiling or hurting of the stone in any part thereof. With these stones therefore they make their instruments, for hewing of stone, or cutting of timber, or any workmanship in gold or silver. After this, Cortes fearing that which commonly falleth out in the vnconstancy and fragility of humane things, to wit, that the variable mindes of men might change, and supposing that it might come to passe, that the Temuitanes, cyther wearied through the continuall trouble of intertainment, or vpon any other occasion taken whatsoever, would rise vpp against him, and take armes, although Mutezuma endeouored to hinder the same, when hee saw himselfe compassed about with

Cortes buildeth  
a small galleon  
and the cause  
thereof.

waters, and draw bridges, hee built 4. smale gallies in the salt lake, with 2. ranges of oares, called Brigantines, that vpon any vrgent necessity assaying him, he might set 20. men a shoare at once, with the horses. The Brigantines beinge finished, when through the benefite thereof he nowe thought himselfe safe, hee determined to search the secretes of that city, which were of any moment or worth. First therefore, Mutezuma accompanying him, hee visiteth the Churches: where, as with vs, is euery Tribe called a Parishes, the Churches are all assigned to their particular Saint, so in euery streete with them, their temples are dedicated to their peculiar Idols. But vny Holinesse shall heare what thinges are reported of their

Euery temple  
hath a peculiar  
Idol.

The description  
of the chiefest  
of Cuzco  
Temple.

greatest temple, & cheifest Idols. He sayth, it is a famous and renowned square temple. On euery side thereof, there is an huge gate, whereunto, those 4. admirable, paved wayes, (which are in stead of a bridge from the Continēt) directly answer. The largenes of that temple in situation, is matchable with a towne of 500. houses: it is fortified with high stone wals, very well, and cunningly made, and compassed about with many towers, built after the manner of a strong castle. Of many towers, he sayth, 4. of them are greater then the rest, and much more spacious, because in them are halles and chambers appointed for the priests, & prelates. To the chiefe dwellings the priests ascended by 50. marble stappes: these are the houses of the priests, who (as I sayd) take charge of the sacrifices. There the sonnes of the chiefe meane of the cittie, are shut vpp at seven yeeres olde, and neuer put out their

A College of  
young boys.

heades, or come forth thence, vntill they become marriagable, and are brought forth to be contracted in marriage. All that time, they neuer eat their hayre, and at certaine times of the yeere they abstaine from all riot and excesse, and meates ingendering blood, & chasten their bodies with often fastings, least they waxe proude, and so the seruant contemne reason the mistresse. They are clothed in blacke. He writeth that some of those towers are higher then the steeple of Sion, which is very high: so that hee concludeth that he neuer saw greater, better, or more curious wrought buildings in any place: but whether he hath seene any out of Spaine, let the curious aske the question. It is a fearefull thing to be spoken, what they declare, and report concerning their Idols. Omitting therefore to speake of their greatest marble idol Wichfabuchichi of the height of three men, not inferior to that huge statue of Rhodes. When any moued through piety towards any diuine power, determineth to dedicate an Image thereunto, he endeouoreth to gather together of all sedes fit to be eaten, such an heape, as may suffice for the height of that Image which he hath purposed to erect, bruising those sedes, and grinding them to meale. But oh cruell wickednes, oh horrible barbarousnes, they tear in peeces so many boyes, and girles, or so many slaues, before the meale which is to be baked, while they draw so much blood, as in stead of luke warme water may suffice to temper the lump, which by the hellish butcheris of that art, without any perturbation of the stomacke being sufficiently kneaded, while it is moyst, and soft euen as a potter of the clay, or a wax chandler of wax, so doth this image maker, admitted and chosen to be maister of this damned & cursed worke. I haue else where said, if I mistake not, that these sacrifices are not slaue, by cutting of the throat, but by thrusting a knife through the short ribs neer vnto the hart, so that their hart is pulled out, to be sacrificed while they be yet lining, & behold their own miserable condition: with the blod which is next vnto the hart they annoint their godds lips, but burne the hart it selfe, who thereby suppose the displeasure of their godds to be appeased, and this prodigious act, the priests perswade the people to be acceptable seruice to their Idols. But many will demand, & that rightly, what they do with the flesh & members of those miserable sacrifices: O wicked yawning & gaping,

Wichfabuchichi  
their great Idol.  
The description  
of an Image.

Howe these  
Sacrifices in  
the temple  
laste, if they  
eate without  
compassion.

oh

oh loathsome prouocatio<sup>n</sup> to vomit: as the Iewes sometimes eate the lambs which were sacrificed by the old law, so do they eate mans flesh, casting only away the hands, feet, & bowels. To diuers effects they forme diuers Images of their godds, for victorie if they be to fight in battaile, for health, for plenty of fruits, & such like, after euery ones pleasure. Now let vs returne to Cortes walking about that great Church. In the halles, which as we said before, were in the temples, were the great Images of their godds, & in the halles were darke inner roomes, into the which they enter by narrow & strait doores, wherunto the priests only haue access. The great halles, beset with great Images, were dedicated to the Princes for their sepulchers: & the lesser, which were in the inner chambers, were appointed for euery of the Nobles descended of honorable parentage: and as euery man was of abilitie, so euery yeere he offered sacrifices of mans flesh. A poore man with vs offereth a small taper, to the Saints, and a rich man a great torch, many sacrifice onely with frankincense, others build churches, as we pacifie Christ and his Saints with our frankincense, and waxe, yet offering the fervent zeale of the heart. It happened, that while the King, and Cortes went through the open halles of the great church, some of Cortes his familiars, entered into those narrow, & darke chappels, against the keepers wils, and when by torch light they saw the wals besmeared with a reed colour, they made prooffe with the pointes of their poniards, what it should be, and brake the walles. O brutish minds: the walles were not only besprinkled with the blood of humane sacrifices, but they found blood added vpon blood two fingers thicke, oh loathing to the stomacke, out of the holes they made with their poniards they say, an intolerable hellish stincke issued from the rotten blood which lay hidd vnder the fresh. But among so many horrible and fearefull things, one thing commeth to mind worthy of a Iubile. Whatsoeuer Images were in the halles Cortes commaunded them to be presently ouerthrowne, and broken, and to be throwne downe the steppes of the high stayes, in pieces, one marble Colosse he left standing, because it was too huge, & could not easily be taken away. Wherewith Mutezuma (being present) was much troubled, & all the Nobilitie of the court, who complained saying: O vnhappy, and miserable men that we are, the godds being angry with vs, will take away the fruites which we eate, and so wee shall perish through famine, and as at other times it hath befallne vs, the Godds being displeas'd all kindes of diseases shall sodainely come vpon vs, and wee shall not be freed from our enemies, if we be assayed by warre, nor be sufficiently secured from the tumult of the people, who if they vnderstand this, will furiously arise in armes. Whereto Cortes maketh answer: Behold (sayth he) what is more wicked, and abhominable? and what more foolish? doe you thinke those to bee Godds, which are formed and fashioned by the handes of your Tributaries? Is the seruice of your men more worthy, then the men themselves? Is that thing (O Mutezuma) which your workemen, and peraduenture a filthy slaue fashioneth with his handes, more woorthy then your maiestie? what blindness is this in you? or what mad cruelty? that ye slaughter so many humane bodies euery yeere, for these insensible Images sakes? what doe these perceiue, which neither see, nor heare: Him, him, (I say) who created heauen and earth, him, yee are to worship. This is he, from whom all good things proceede, to whom these your sacrifices are most offensive. Besides, it is decreed and established by a law from our King, whom yee confesse to deriue his descent from him, who brought your ancestours vnto these countries, that whosoever smiteth male or female with the sword, should die the death. When Cortes had declared these things by interpreters, Mutezuma with a pale countenance, and trembling heart replied: Hearken O Cortes, the ceremonies of sacrifices left vs by tradition from our ancestours, those wee obserue, and haue hitherto exercised, but seeing you say wee haue so muche erred, and that it is displeasing to our King, wee are greatly delighted to heare it, so wee may perswade the people therunto. These rites and ceremonies, peraduenture our ancestours who were left here, found them to be obserued by the inhabitants of those times, so that wee haue followed the customes of our Fathers in lawe and of our viues, neyther are you to wonder that wee fell into these errors, if they be errors. Giue vs a law, and we will endeouour to embrace it with all our power. Cortes hearing this, repeated that there was one God, three in persons, and one in essence,

Gods for Emers  
purpose.

O Religious  
of Hell, O  
hellish rage.

Cortes over-  
throweth  
A huge marble  
Colosse.

Such was the  
power of Sakh  
ouer those  
godles people  
to affect them  
if in any time  
they had reg-  
lected his ser-  
uice.

Cortes comma-  
ndeth instantly  
their Idols  
and sacrific-  
ing of children.

Mutezuma  
his answer.

Mutezuma  
consented to  
Serges Ministry.  
Cortes pro-  
ueth our God.

who created the heauen, and the earth, and the Sunne & the Moone, with all the ornament of the Stars, which mooue about the earth for the vse of men, and hence it cometh, that it is odibus vnto him to kill men, who formed the slaue, & all others hauing the face of men, of the same matter, whereof he made me, thee, and them. He was borne among vs of a woman who was a virgin, and suffered for the saluation of mankind, which by the learned men who are to come, shal hereafter more largely be declared both to you, & the rest. The standard of that God, and ensigne of victorie, is the Image or representatio of this crosse, for it becometh the Generall both to haue the crosse, and also the image of the virgin his mother, carrying the infant in her bosome. And as he was speaking thus, Cortes of a Lawyer being made a diuine, shewed the crosse, and the Image of the virgin (to be adored.) These Images of wicked spirits and monsters being broken in peeces, Mutezuma causeth his seruantes to sweepe the temples in his presence, and cleanse them by rabbing of the walles, that no signe or token might remaine of such horrible bloodshed. We haue now sufficiently spoken of the corrupt religion of Tenustitan: lette vs therefore say somewhat of the pallaces of the nobilitie, and other rich men, and of their excellent buildings. Cortes sayth, that he neuer sawe any pallace in Spayne either of Kings, or any other Prince, which the meanest of 70. stone or marbale houses, doth not match, who sayeth that they are all builte by the curious art of the architect, with pauementes of diuers sorts, and pillars of Jasper stone, or white transparent marbale, round aboute the courts, and large galleries vnder the solars. He addeth further, that whatsoever is reported concerning these things, ought to be credited, saying it is no wonder, because Mutezuma hath many large-kingdomes, in the which a great multitude of noblemen gouern many countreys, as vnder the Emperours crowne, many Dukes, Earles, and Marquesses, and Nobles of other titles, are shadowed. All these at certayne times of the yeere, by an auncient custome, frequent the court of Mutezuma, nor may they doe otherwise. It is a thing whereto they are much inclined, that euery one shoulde strue in his desires, to excell his companions in the building of sumptuous houses: I might compare the manner of the Popes Cardinals in the citie of Rome to their magnificence: but much otherwise, for the Cardinals in their buildings haue respect onely to themselves, not regarding succession. But these people being obedient to Mutezuma, prouide for posteritie long to come: for they send their owne children to bee brought vp with Mutezuma, especially suche as descend from nobilitie, whereof there is so great a multitude, that euery day as soone as light appeareth you may see more then 500 such young noblemen walking in the halls, and open solars of Mutezuma, with whose familiars, pages; & folowers, three great courts, and streets (before the gates of the pallace) are filld at that time, to the houre of dinner. All these are filld with Mutezumas provision, he saith, the cellers are neuer shut all day long, and that any manne may demand drinke of the butlers. Yet no man seeth the King, before he come forth to dinner or supper, out of the priue chambers, in to the great Hall, whose equall in greatness, Cortes sayth, hee knowes not any. When he is set, 300. young men apparelled after the Palestine manner come vnto him, and euery one of them bring severall dishes of diuers daintie meates, with chaffin dishes vnder them that the meates freese not in the winter tyme. But they come not neere the table, for it is compassed about with a rayle, one onely standeth within the rayle, who taketh the severall dishes from their hands, and setteth them before the Prince being readie to dine. Mutezuma giueth with his owne hande of the dishes to 6. auncient men of great authoritie standing at his right hand, who after the auncient maner, while he dineth, stand all bare footed. The pauementes are covered with mats. If it so happen that he cal any, he that is called goeth vnto him, bowing downe his bodie, with his face to the earth: and listeth not vp his head at all, before he be gon far from him, creeping backwarde, for he may not return turning his back toward him. No man vseth directly to looke vpon the king, his familiars, and friends, & also the princes, casting downe their eyes, & turning their face to y left or right hande, harken what the king answers: and thereupon they blamed Cortes, because he suffered the Spaniardes which he called vnto him, to behold him with a direct countenance: who answered y it was not the matter with vs, nor that our king so highly esteemed his mortalitie, although he were the great

Cortes Cortes  
reads three  
words in this  
tyme.

Pallaces

Mutezuma  
hath many  
large king-  
domes.

A most frequent  
Court of  
Nobles.

you young nob-  
le men stand-  
ing in Mutez-  
umas his  
Courte.

No Prince  
equall in great-  
ness to Mutez-  
uma.  
The manner of  
his service.

The auncient  
manner of their  
counting and  
returning to  
the King.  
An other purpose  
of state.

est, that he would be adored with so great reuerence: this answer pleased thē. Besids, whē Muteczuma is present, in what state soeuer he appeare, amōg so great a multitude there is so wōderfull a silence, that non would thinke any of thē, drew any breath at al. Euery dinner, & euery supper, he washeth his hands on both sides, & wipeth them with very white linnen, & the towel hee once vseth hee neuer taketh in hands againe, all instrumentes must neuer be touched more. The like doth he concerning his apparel, arising from his bed, he is cloath-  
 ed after one maner, as he commeth forth to bee seene, and returninge backe into his chamber after he hath dined, he changeth his garments: and when he commeth forth againe to supper, hee taketh another, and returninge backe againe the fourth which he weareth vntill he goe to bed. But concerning 3. garments, which he changeth euery day, many of them that returned haue reported the same vnto me, with their owne mouth: but howsoeuer it be, all agree in the changing of garmentes, that beinge once taken into the wantrope, they are there piled vp on heaps, not likely to see the face of Muteczuma any more: but what manner of garmentes they be, we will elswhere declare, for they are very light. These things beinge obserued, it will not be wōdrēd at, that we made mention before concerning so many garments presented. For accountinge the yeares, and the dayes of the yeares, especially, wherein Muteczuma hath inioyed peace & howe often he changeth his garments euery daye, all admiration will cease. But the readers will demand, why he heapeth vp so great a pile of garments, & that iustly. Let them knowe that Muteczuma vsed to giue a certaine portion of garments to his familiar friends, or well deseruing soldiers, in steed of a benouolence, or stipend, when they go to the wars, or returne from y victory, as Augustus Cæsar lord of the world, a mightier Prince then Muteczuma, commāded only a poore reward of bread to be giuen ouer & aboue to such as performed any notable exploit, while being by Maro admonished, that so small a largē of bread was an argumēt y he was a bakers son: then although it be recorded in writt that Cæsar liked y mery cōceit, yet it is to be beleued y he blushed at that dinatiō, because he promised Virgil to alter his dispositiō & that hereafter he would bestow gifts worthly a great king, & not a bakers son. Muteczuma eateth & drinketh in earthen vessels, although he haue innumerable plate of gold, & silver beset w precious stones: such earthē vessels as are once brought, as chargers, dishes, porringers, pitchers & such like vessels, neuer goe backe againe. I will now speak sōwhat of their palaces, & houses in y plaine fields. Euery nobleman, besids his houses in the city, hath sumptuous houses builde for delight in the open fielde, and gardens and greene plots of grounde adioyning to them, & places where fruit trees growe of diuers kindes, and hearties, and roses, and sweete fragrant floures: where there wanteth no art in looking to the plats or quarters, & fencing them about with inclosures of cane, least any suddenly enter into the manured delights to overthrow them, or robbe or spoyle them: besides euery one hath staiding pooles in his orchardes, where sculles of diuers fishes swimme, and multitudes of water fowle flete vpon them. If therefore euery Noble man hath one such house, it is meete that their Emperour Muteczuma shoulde not come behinde them. Muteczuma hath three great houses in a solitary place out of the way to refresh and recreate himselfe in the heate of sommer: in one of these he hath great plentie of monstrous men, as dwarfes, crooke backed, such as are gray headed from their youth, and men with one legge, or two heades, and seruants are appointed to attend them. The second is ordained for roasting foule, where both Vultures, and Eagles, and all other kindes of hawkes and cruell byrds of pray are kept. Euery foule hath her open cage in a great court with two perches fastened in them, the one on the outside to take the sunne, and the other within, to roost vpon: and euery cage separated one frō another with their sedge betweene them. But the whole court is covered with wooden grates about that euery foule may inioy the open ayre, and sobbye lie in that parte assigned her: seruants also are appointed them, not onoly to giue them meate, but they haue likewise a certain number of stendiary Surgeans, who by the art of phisicke knowe how to cure the diuers kinds of diseases which grow in birds. One thing seemeth somewhat wonderfull & strange, concerning water foule: whatsoever they bee that liue in the sea, are included in the salt pooles, and those that lyue in fresh waters, are kept in the fresh pooles, and at certayne tymes of the yeere, the old waters beinge dried vp, and the fresh ponds carefully clem-  
 ed,

An other part  
of them.

An other part  
of them.

The change of  
the Kings gar-  
ments.

Why Muteczuma heapeth  
up so many gar-  
ments.

Muteczuma  
eateth & drinketh  
in earthen  
vessels.

Of palaces in  
the country.

Of Muteczuma  
his three great  
houses in the  
country.

One for mon-  
strous men.  
The second  
house for roast-  
ing foule.

Springe pooles  
of water foule.

ed, fresh waters are let in: the seruantes giue vnto euery kind of soule, of fishes, herbes, and the graine Maizium, according to euery ones nature, deliuered them by the householde seruants and stewards of Muteczuma. Round about those standing pooles are large walke, where, vpon marble, alablaster, & Jasper pillars, are other solars or floares, from whence Muteczuma (whē he cometh) may behold all the actions & conflicts of the birds below, especially when they are fed. The third house is appointed for lions, tygers, woolues, foxes, & other rauening beasts of this kind, & peacocks inclosed within their pales, & roomes, whereof I haue sufficiently spoken before: with these the fierce & wild beasts are fed. Those pallaces or courts are well replenished with houses, so yf if the king with his family determin to lodge ther at night, he may conveniently doe it. This they say, and this we report. Whatsoever they write, or declare in our presence, we beleue, because, we suppose they would not presume to signify any thing rashly, contrary to truth, & because we haue also learned to beleue yf those things might be done, which are possible, & not miraculous, and they further say, that they omit many things, lest they should offend the eares of Casar & the courtiers, with too long narrations. While our men thus searched these things, messengers were sent with Spaniards to accompany them, vnto diuers countries of Muteczumas dominions, to declare vnto yf noblemen of the countries in their kings name, that they were to obey the great King of Spayne, and (in his behalfe) the captains sent from him. From the East vnto the furthest limits of those countries, which diuide them from Iucatan (for they think Iucatan w first offereth itselfe to them yf come from Cuba, to be an Iland, & it is not yet certainly known) they say, so much lād lyeth betweene, yf it is almost thrice as big as Spain: for we haue already said that Tenustitā is more thē an 100: leagues distāt from yf citie Potenchiana, otherwise called Victoria, & yf borders of Potēchian are extended further vnto Iucatiū & to yf gulfe called Figueras lately discovered. But they that were sent vnto the West, found a city, & that a great one too called Cumatana, 200. leagues distāt or therabouts from Tenustitan, & yf King of this citie, whose name I know not, & such as lie betweent, and they of the East also as farre as the Potenchiani, who (except those fewe common wealthes of whom I haue spoken before at large) were obedient to Muteczuma, nowe both of them haue subiected themselues to vs. Cortes often perswaded Muteczuma to goe vnto his ancient pallace: but he refused, saying, it is expedient for neither of vs, yf we should be parted: for my nobles as I said before louing their benefit more then our quietnesse, will instantly intreate me, to raise the people, and make war against thee, being therefore knit together, wee shall be safer from their insolent ambition. Yet sometimes for his recreation, he resorted to those houses, as I mentioned a litle before, & at the euening, he alighted from his cabinet at the Pallace of Cortes. As he went or returned no man looked directly vpon him: so great is the reuerence which is conceiued towards him, that they thinke theselues vnnorthy to behold him. That superstition is ingrafted in the minds of the people, from their ancestors. But what? but what? & againe yf 3. time, but what? The flattering incitemēt of fortune yf mother, in the turning of her wheele, were conuerted to the accustomed buffets of a stepdame. Cortes saith, he entred into that city of the lake the 8. day of September in yf yeere 1619. and there passed a most quiet and peaceable winter, & the greater part of the spring vntill the month of May the next yeere: at what time Diegus Velasquez gouernour of Cuba or Ferdinandina, furnished a nauy to cōe against Cortes, because, without asking his aduice, & against his wil, as I mentioned before, he determined to set footing on those countries, & plant Colonies there. As touching the flecte wee will hereafter speak, but now concerning Cortes. While he thus aboad with Muteczuma, daily expecting with earnest desire, yf returne of the messengers Montegins, and Portuacarricus, whom he had sent with presents vnto Casar, behold it was told him by the inhabitants of Muteczuma who bordered vpon the Sea shore, that ships were seene at Sea: he supposed it had bene his messengers ship, & reioyced, but his ioy was presently transformed into sorow & sadness. I will here omit many small matters, which the Grecians, & Iewes (because they are alwayes straited within narrow boundes) would insert into their Hystories, if they hadde happened to their fellow-citizens: but in so great a vastity of matter, wee omit many things. To be short, It was the flecte of Iaco-

The thirde house.

Cumatana a Cite.

Muteczuma a flecte and almost giuice and free from ambition.

The vncertainty of fortune.

bus Velasquez, consisting of 18. shippes, both beaked Carauelles, & Brigantines of two ranges of oars, furnished with men, to witte, 800. footemen, and 50. horsemen & 17. peeces of ordinance, as hereafter shall appeare. Ouer this present fletee Velasquez made a young manne called Pamphilus Naruacij, Generall. Cortes sent messengers vnto Pamphilus, to require him to come in friendly manner, and that hee shoulde not goe about to disturbe so happie enterpryses. Pamphilus made aunswere, that the Emperour commanded him, to execute the office of Generall of the armie of those countreys, and willethe to command Cortes, to yeeld vp his Empire and gouernment, and come humbly, and vnarmed vnto him, that rendering account of his actions, hee might submitte himselfe to his Iudgement, or to the censure of Iacobus Velasquez who sent him. Cortes sayth hee woulde obey the Kinges letters patentes, if he woulde shew them to the Gouernour left in the Colonie of Vera Crux. But if he falsly say that he hath those letters, let him depart the Prouince, in the which he determined to sette footing, and not forraging the countrey violently take away what hee findeth, because hee thinketh it auailable for the king, not to disturbe so great attempts by his coming: & that all the Barbarians now conquered, who vnder his conduct became obedient vnto Caesar, and honor his name, if they vnderstande that the Spaniardes disagree, and are at variance among themselues, will aduance their crests, and rebell against the Christians.

A flecte of 18. shippes sent from Velasquez vnder the conduct of Pamphilus Naruacij against Cortes. Cortes sendes messengers to Pamphilus.

## The fift Chapter.

MAny suche thinges by messengers were discussed on eitheir side, & nothing don, so that Pamphilus continued his purpose. In the mean space those shippes, with their seuerall peeces of ordinance, horses, 28. smal shot, 120. archers, all landed vpon the shore, were brought by certaine trybutaries to Mutezuma, paynted in a certaine table of the barke of a tree. Cortes therefore vnderstanding the matter, was much tormented in mynde ignorant at the first, what counsell to take. If he made light of the matter, he saw that, it would so fall out, that the authoritie of a newe open enemy, woulde gather strength both with the Spaniardes, and the Barbarians. On the other side it was a hardie case to forsake so great a matter, for feare of that, which fell out, to witte, the violent assaulte of the Barbarians vpon his menne. At length he thought it better to goe to Pamphilus, relying vpon the authoritie, wherby hee preayled with them that came with Pamphilus, when hee was chiefe Magistrate for Iustice, in the Ilande of Cuba. Leauing garrisons therefore in the Pallace where he kept Mutezuma, hee spake vnto Mutezuma in these words. O my king Mutezuma, now occasion of thy future happines offereth it selfe, if the king shal find thee faithfull at such a time, it shal coe to passe that al things shall succeede prosperously, & happily vnto thee. I goe, to search out what this matter may be, in my absence be carefull that no inuouation arise. The Spaniardes whō I leaue to be at your command, I commēd to your faithfull protection. Mutezuma promised them al succour & helpe, & sayd, he woulde account the Spaniards in steede of kinsmen. Go prosperously, & if they touch my borders with a treacherous mind, giue me notice therof: & I will command them to be subdued by war, & expelled out of my countreys. Therefore leauing a garrison there, and bestowing certaine acceptable presents vpon Mutezuma, & his son, he taketh his journey towards Pamphilus, who had scated himselfe in Zempoal, and seduced the citizens against Cortes. He went with that mind, to disturb what-ouer he met opposed vnto him. So Cortes went vnto him: and omitting circumstances, sendeth for his Aiguazill (that is to say the executioner of Iustice, which the Latines call a sergeit: although a sergeant seldō cometh into the dining roome) & sendeth him before with 80. footmē, with commandement that vsing y Prætorian law, he apprehend Pamphilus. He himselfe foloweth after to aid him with the rest, which were 170. He therefore with 250. men setteth vpon Pamphilus, not vnprepared, because he was admonished therof by the scouts. Pamphilus had fortified himselfe in an high tower of the tēple of that citie: & had eight peeces of ordinance planted on the steps of the staires. This Terentian Pamphilus rather, then that Troian Hector is beset with 800. soldiers, assaulted, & takē. We think those Pamphilā souldiers durst not lift vp their heads against Cortes, who sometime

Cortes to Mutezuma.

Cortes leaues a garrison and goeth against Pamphilus.

Pamphilus takē.

made

made them afraid, when he was chief gouernor of  $\frac{1}{2}$  citie of Cuba: we also thinke  $\frac{1}{2}$  the chief cōmāders were seduced through  $\frac{1}{2}$  subtilly & crafty deuises of Cortes: that, at  $\frac{1}{2}$  time, when  $\frac{1}{2}$  matter was to be performed, they should leaue their swords they brought w them, in their sheaths. Here many things are muttered against Cortes, which time will discouer: howsoeuer it be; Pamphilus making so resistāce, lost one of his eies. So he led away Pāphilus with on eye, who a litle before had the luster of 2. eyes, & with him, his chief cōsorts, faithfull Centurians to their General: who are said to be but a few. A certain Licentiate called Aglionius, an excellent lawyer, one of  $\frac{1}{2}$  Senators of Hispaniola, followed Pamphilus. This Licentiate in the behalfe of the Senate of Hispaniola, by whom lawes were giuen to al, those parts, commāded Iacobus Velazquez; not to sende out that flecte against Cortes, & that he should not be the occasiō of so great a mischiefe: who said that the matter was to be decided by authoritie of the king, & not by armes: & eie also to declare  $\frac{1}{2}$  sūc to Pāphilus, & endenored with all his power to direct  $\frac{1}{2}$  authors of the flecte that enterprise. This Terentian Pamphilus did not onely not obey him, but casting the Senator into prison, sent him in a ship to Cuba to Diecus Velazquez, the inuiter therof. The wisdomē of  $\frac{1}{2}$  Licentiate was such, that seducing the mariners, he brought his keepers bound, in the same ship to Hispaniola. So they became a pray in the lap of fortune. These are small matters, let vs now come to those of more weight, & importāce. Whosoever followed Pamphilus, stauke to Cortes the known Gouernour of  $\frac{1}{2}$  citie. He sent the ships to the garrisons of  $\frac{1}{2}$  Colonie of Vera Crux, to giue them notice of the victorie: & with the rest hee taketh his iourney towards Tenustitan: & sendeth messengers before, to certifie Muteuczuma. (and the rest who were left behinde) concerning the success of things. This messenger was stabbed with manie wounds in the way, so that he scarce escaped aliuē: who brought backe newes, that they were all in an uproare in the city Tenustitā & that the Barbarians were reuolued, and had burned those 4. Brigantins (whereof I made mention before) built for defence of our men, and that our garrisons being besieged were in extreme perill, and straightly beset with fire and sword, and all provision of victuall intercepted. And he further said, that they had all perished, and bin ouerthrowen, if Muteuczuma had not withstood it, to whom the citizens are now become rebellious & disobedient as he sayth. Cortes with all his tralae approacheth to the brinke of  $\frac{1}{2}$  salt lake, and sendeth a Canoa made of one whole tree, to search, what the matter was. Another Canoa meeteth them, wherein one of Muteuczumas messengers, & another of the garrison of the Spaniards besieged, were conueied, who cāc to signify vnto Cortes the distresse our men were in. It is manifestly known,  $\frac{1}{2}$  this was don against  $\frac{1}{2}$  wil of Muteuczuma: wherefore the messengers exhort him to make hast, who say, that Muteuczuma hopeth by means of his comming, that the sedition which was already risen should torne vnto a quiet calme: whereupon the 8. of the Calendes of Iuly, he speedily conueiyeth himselfe with certayne Canoes into  $\frac{1}{2}$  Pallace, to the garrisons, & Muteuczuma, who was very peniue and sadde by reason of that tumult. He founde the wooden bridges (which all along diuide the stone bridges) drawne vp, and the wayes fortified with rampers: he first thought they hadde done it through feare, but it was farre otherwise: for they determind rather to dye, then any longer to indure such guests, who deteined their King vnder colour of protecting his life, possessed the citie, and kept their ancient enemies the Tascatecanes, Guazuzingi, and others beside, before their eyes, at their charge: and consumed their provision which was harde to get, by reason that beeing compassed with water, they naturally wanted all things, abstained not from iniuries, imposed tributes, and desired whatsoever thing was precious which they vnderstande they had, endeauoring either by force or equiuing to extort it from them, who, to conclude brake in peeces the Images of their gods, & deprived them of their old rites, and ancient ceremonies. For these causes the Princes of  $\frac{1}{2}$  city being much moued, & with the the forraigne Nobility (who familiarly ioyed the presence of their king, and brought vp their children & kinne with him from their childhood) determind in a rage, to rōote out this nation, as husbandmen vse to pluck vp thistles by the roots out of their corne. And therefore tooke vpō them (without the kings cōmandemēt, nay though he withstood it to his power) to conquer the Pallace, & kil the garrison, or consume them with

The Tenustitan  
in rebellion.

The sedition of  
Muteuczuma.

Cortes comes  
with his ships,  
to see the Pallace.

famin.

famine. Whereby our men were now brought to extreme hazard of life, vnles Cortes had come vnto the, at whose coming, they took courage again, being now almost out of hart seeing there was no further hope remaining. They had fortified y<sup>e</sup> Pallace in maner of a Castle, the Castle had his churches, neer which stood a tower intiredd with fire trees. They greatly indamaged our mē by casting darts & stones out of y<sup>e</sup> fire trees, & fortresses. As soon as the Barbarians vnderstood y<sup>e</sup> Cortes was cōe with auxiliary forces, & entred the Pallace, to his mē, they begā more furiously & fierly to assault the, a blacke cloud of stones, & darts, & arrowes, & al kind of weapōs deliuered from the hād, cāe so thick y<sup>e</sup> our men could not discern the sky. The clamors raised to the Heauens, cōfounded the eare, because the nūber of those obstinate & sturdy warrourers was innumerable. To those y<sup>e</sup> fought on the plain ground, Cortes sent forth a Captain with 200. Spaniards, who made some slaughter of the Barbarians, but being inclosed by an infinite multitude, he could not breake the array. It was hard for them to returne vnto the Castle, yet he got out, making his way with his sword: among them y<sup>e</sup> were slaine, he was grievously wounded, and left 4. of his company slaine: on the other side Cortes cometh suddenly vpon them, but did them little hurt, for as soon as they had cast their darts, & stones, they retired to certai little turrets, which the Spaniards call Azoteas, whereof there are many built throughout the citie: the battaile continued fierce a long time, insomuch as Cortes was constrained to betake himselfe to y<sup>e</sup> Castle out of the fight, which (not without dāger) he scanty performed, many of his cōpanions being slaine through violence of stons, & diuers kinds of weapons. Cortes being brought back away into the Castle, the Barbarians renued the assault, & soeke entrāce on euery side, & ruine, & coming close vnto y<sup>e</sup> ports, they endenour by setting fire to them, to burne them, they y<sup>e</sup> defended the assault shot many of the assaylants through with bullets with the shot, & bowmen, yet with an obstinate corage remaining by the dead carcases of their companions, if need required, they proceeded, to renew y<sup>e</sup> fight: they say the battaile continued from morning vntill the euening. This was an intolerable labour for our men, y<sup>e</sup> they were al compelled to be al in armes, the whole day, but much more easy for them, that 4. times in euery houre, fresh & sound men were placed in the ranks in steed of the weary, slaine, & wounded men, who came no lesse cheerfull vnto dāger, then they departed weary from the fight: so great was the perturbation of that hatred which they now conceiued. They exhorted one another, to indenoure corragiously to thrust such guesstes out of their houses, that none could lue with more contentment, then to shake of such a yoke from their neckes, by fighting, or loosing their liues for y<sup>e</sup> libertie of their country. So they continued the whole day in the battaile like raging wolues about a sheepfold, & the fight ceased at the euening. But y<sup>e</sup> whole night was so troubled with their strūg & loud clamors, y<sup>e</sup> through the noise therof, al y<sup>e</sup> dwelt neer were struck with deafnes. Neither could they within y<sup>e</sup> castle hear one another there was such a rescūding or bellowing of voyces. The Barbarians departing y<sup>e</sup> day, Cortes taking muster of his men, found 80. of the wounded. The next day after, which was y<sup>e</sup> 8. of the Calends of Iuly, they ran more fierly thūher then their accustomed maner, wherupon a cruel conflict ariseth. He planteth 13. field peeces against y<sup>e</sup> enemy, & rāgeth the Archers, & y<sup>e</sup> smal shot in the front: oh admirable attempt, although 10. & sometimes 12. of the were shot through with euery great shot, & their dismembred liues tossed into the ayre, yet notwithstanding they persisted, & cāe on still: & which way soeuer the great shot tare them in peeces, they presently closed the Armie, like the German or Heluetias. The next day being cōpelled through great want of things necessary, he determined to try his fortune abroad. The Spaniards (whom cruel hūger cōpelled) issued forth like raging lions. They sal vpon y<sup>e</sup> enemy, kill many, & woon certaine houses by assault, which lay neere to y<sup>e</sup> castle. They passed some of the wooden bridges which crossed y<sup>e</sup> waies. But at the euening our men returned, no lesse hunger starued, Cortes & 50. of his company being wounded. Necessitie daily more & more vrging, especially the great penury of corrite, they were enforced to find out deuises, whereby doing greater dāmage to the enemy they might draw the to some quiet peace. By night therefore he made 3. warlike engis of wood, covered

The Totonacians  
fierly assault  
the Pallace.

Cortes himselfe  
wounded.

A battaile still  
morning to the  
euening.

The Totonacians  
showe great  
courage.

Cortes repaire  
wounded.

with boordes, in maner of a litle square house, the art military calleth them engins of defence, this engin was able to containe 20. souldiers, and putting wheels vnder it, they issue out of the same: they were shot & bowmen which filled the engin of defence. They brought also behind them, slaues with axes, & mattocks, thinking to be able to ouerthrow houses, & bulwarkes y<sup>e</sup> annoyed them. There was such casting of stones and dartes from the Towers (which hinged ouer the wayes) vpon those Engines, that they brake the covering thereof: so they were faine to creepe backe againe vnto the Castle. These things thus doone, Muteczuma (that vnhappie King, whome our men hadde with them) desired that hee might bee brought to the sight of them that fought, promising to indeuoure to perswade them to giue ouer the assault. By euil fortune, hee was brought vnto a certayne open loft, on that side where the assaillantes were thickest, when presently such a mighty tempest of stons came violently pouring down vpon them that fought, that no manne put out his head, who departed not shrewdly shaken, and bruised. There, the most puissant king Muteczuma, a good man by nature, and wise enough, got the vnhappie end of his greateste, and delightes, who being strucke with a stone by his owne people, the thirde day breathed out that soule which commanded so many kingdomes, and was a terror to so many nations and people. Our men gaue his body to the citizes to be buried. What was els done, they knowe not. For they had no free libertie left them, to be able to doe any other thing, then to bethinke them, how to preserue life.

The Lances-  
ble and vnhap-  
pie end of the  
mightie King  
Muteczuma.

#### The sixth Chapter.

Cortes speaketh  
to the citizes.

The next day after, Cortes speaketh to the commanders of the warres, the Principall men of the citie, and the kings Allies (among whom was the Lord of Astapalapa the kings brother) being sent for to the place, where that lamentable mischance happened to Muteczuma. And perswadeth exhorteth & aduiseth them rather to embrace peace then warre: and that vnlesse they desisted from their enterprises hee woulde vterly destroy that so famous and renowned citie, their chiefe seate and natiue soile: and that hee pitied their future calamitie, whom hee once admitted for his friends: whereto they answered, that the wordes which Cortes spake, were vaine, & idle. They sayd; they woulde account him for no friend, but a deadly & hatefull enemy: & further say, they will not accept his offered peace, vnlesse he leaue them their country free, departing out of their borders with his army. Cortes againe putteth them in mind to beware of the future dammage, and grieuous losses. They replied, that rather then they would indure such a bondage, they would constantly die euery man: and therefore bid him thinke of his return, & not put any confidence in weak & fraile words, they say, death should be most pleasing vnto the, so they might shake of that slauish bondage from the necke of their children and the rest of their posteritie. Contrarily, Cortes againe propoundeth vnto the, what miseries other natōs (who refused his friendship) had indured. Hee promisseth to pardon former Errors. They reply again, that they will haue none of his friendship, nor none of his pardon. Nay, they say, they doubt not but they shal consume them euery mā either with the sword or famine, & shew, that it might easily be done, because there is so great a multitude of desperate men desiring death, so that they make no reckening of the slaughter of a thousand men: if the death of euery thousand be recōpenced, but with one of ours. They affirme, that they are al resolute in this opinion, & therefore admonish him with threatening words, that (a Gods blessing) hee goe from whence hee came, & proud for him, & his, with the time: & desire, & beseech him to suffer them to ioyne the customs, & precepts of their Ancestors. Cortes, who shortly was likely to perish through famine, with all his traine, vnlesse hee ouerthrew the force & power of the Barbarians (for hee was nowe pressed with extreme famine) out of his necessitie was compelled to frame the courage of his mind vnto an higher straine. Hee suspected also, least if hee went about to depart, as was required, hee might be intercepted within the drawe bridges, which was easily don, the woodē bridges betwene him & the, being either drawn vp, or taken away. It increased his suspicion also, for y<sup>e</sup> chiefe men of the citie were not ignorant that Cortes had great treasures heaped vp, through desire wherof they were drawn, and that

The mischance  
which befell  
of the Barba-  
rians.

A Verse of  
reuerence.

that not without cause surely, for our merine confesse, that out of all those countries he had gathered the sum of seven hundred thousand Ducates, in gold, silver, and precious stones, all which he had in his custodie. Thereupon hee determined to prepare himselfe to the fight, and that night to hazard what the fortune of war should decree. They amend those Engines of war whercof we haue made mention: & as soone as day began to appeare, he went forth, first to destroy those little towes, out of the which our men were indangered by casting down stones, & such like things from thence: & then to possessse them by strong hand, if he could. These Engines with wheels, were drawn by them that were within, behind the 3. peeces of battery folowed after, whose flanks many targeteers, & shot guarded & defended, accompanied with troops of 3. Tascaltecus, & Guazuzingi to the nuber of 3000. out of the first litle town which they assayed, such a cloud of stons & darts was thrown down vpon our me, 3. they could not vse the ordinace: so that on of our me being slaine, & many wounded, they returned w heavy cheer vnto the Castle. Out of the hie tower of 3. church also, which was ouer 3. Castle, they receiued innuerable damages. Wherefore our men attempted to assault it, & ascend by an hundred marble steps, & more, vnto the top thereof: but the Præsidary Barbarians of the nã, made our men tũble headlong down the stairs. Whereupon the corage of our men failed, but the enemies puffd vp with pride, pressed 3. seig much more grieuosity, & renewed the fight. Cortes compassed with so great calamitie, perceiuing that present death would follow, except he woon 3. tower by assaull, because they could not so much as put forth a finger, for the enemy, so lög as 3. tower stood speedily taketh vp a target himselfe, and such as were of stoutest courage folowed after him, armed with targets in like manner. They assault the tower: with resolution either to win the tower, or in that conflict to end their liues. And although they vnderooke it with manifest hazard and danger of life, yet boldnes of courage preuailed. The enemy endeouours to defend the stayres, our men desire to ascend them, in so much, as they fought eagerly. At length our men obtained their desires. They woon the tower, & made the defenders to leape down from the top of 3. stajns. In that tower (casting down their Idols) they placed the image of the blessed virgin: which the enemy stole away. Wherefore he commanded that tower, & 3. others to be burned, least any farther damage should be don vnto the Castle thereby. Those towers being lost, 3. Barbarians began to quaike. The night folowing our me rallying forth, in one of the wates neere vnto the castle, burned 300. houses: & many in another, from which the castle was much annoyed. So sometimes killing, sometimes destroying, & sötimes receiuing wounds in the wayes, & bridges, they laboured many daies & nights, on both sides. At length the nobles of the city, sayning feare, send messengers to Cortes to treat of peace, who say, they will be obedient vnto him, so he will pardon that which was past. Whereto Cortes sayth, that he was well content. Now Cortes had one of the Priestes a man of great authoritie whom he deteined in the castle. They earnestly intreat him to set 3. Priest at liberty, by whose means the matter might be performed: the priest is let go, & Cortes being credulous taketh no further care for 3. matter. Cortes sitteth down to dinner, vpd a sudden, messengers cõe rüning forth continually, who report 3. the bridges were interrupted by armed enemies. Cortes had filled certain spaces, which 3. woodẽ bridges vsed to couer, to the intet that if the bridges were taken away, the horses might freely runneither and thither, vpon the firme ground: they signifie that the bricke of those void places, and the earth, and all other kinde of matter or rubble were cast out, and the bridges made vnpassable againe, and those spaces clensted, so that no footemen, much lesse horsemen, might passe that way. He leapeith forth from the table, sendeth out the horsemen vpon the Barbarians, and violently breaketh in through the midst of the enemy, wounding, and killing, on both sides, for a long space. But it repented him that he ragged so far, and wide. Returning from the fight, hee founde all the way behinde him, very full of souldiers, on the water with boates, and thicke on both sides, and before, filling the whole breadth of the bridge. They that remayned by sight, presse vpon him dangerously behinde: he was also assayed from the towers, many on both sides were battered with stones, and pierced with dartes, and Cortes also grieuosity wounded on the heade, and fewe escaped free, and those so faint and weake, that they

The best use of gold and silver that Cortes had gathered.

Cortes assaulted the tower.

A short repulse and a small set of Castles.

They win the tower.

300. Houses burnt.

The Nobles multiply enemies peace.

Cortes smothered the Barbarians but with small success.

coulede not so much as lift vp their armes. But after they rétyrod to the Castle they found not meate sufficiently enough seasoned to refresh them, nor peradventure morselles of breade of rough Maizim, nor potable drinke, as for wine & flesh, they had no great care. So being all becaue and sad, they besought Cortes, to bring them backe againe from thence, for it woulde shortly come to passe that they should either dye by the sword of the Barbarians; or pine through famin. He harkened to the request of his selowes in armes, & being moued with y matter it selfe now brought to the last cast, he yeeluded to depart: & prepared certain great peeces of timber, to lay ouer the bridges wher the stone bridges were wanting. Being ready to goe fourth one night secretly, he diuideth the treasures, so the sum of 7. hundred thousande Ducates. He assigneth the kings sifst part to the kings Auditor, and Treasurer; & other officers, & commandeth them to take charge therof. The rest he diuideth to be carryed behinde them vpon horsebacke. He had with him Mutezcumas son, and 2. daughters, pledges, & many other chiefe men taken in the conflicts, for whose sakes, & for casting down y images of their gods that tumult of the people arose. He setteth his ranks in order, he chooseth chiefe commanders, and vnder officers, rauingeth the army, & taketh his journey in the silent night. The report & fame thereof is spread throughout the whole cite in the twinkling of an eye, that Cortes, and his companions were fled. A huge number of warriors run suddenly vnto them, they raise their clamors to the heauens, so that our miserable men were pelted with stones and darts on euery side. They that were in the vanguard escaped, but such as were in the middle, and followed in the reare, were shrewdly smitten, and wounded. The discourses concerning these conflicts are long & tedious. Your Holiness shall briefly heare what they write at large: the Barbarians slew many of our men, and horses, because they carryed away their Kings children, and the chiefe men of the city, and for that they conueied away the treasure, they fought with madde fury and courage: so that whatsoever riches or householdstufte our men tooke away, became their praye, except that litle which fell to the vanguards share by chance: the fury of the conflict was so great, that they slew p<sup>r</sup> mel Mutezcumas children, and the principall men of the city, together with the slauces, wherof our men had gotten many, and our men also intermingled with them; and if at any time, the horsemen which remained, went backe to such as followed them; the first they met withall, with a violent course heapt into the waters, seeing it is all one with them to swimme, and to walke vpon the land (as is it to Crocodiles, or Seales) and afterwarde coming out of the water, creeping by the walles of the bridges, they came in againe. So our men being vterly ouerthrowne, and dispersed, forsooke the whole lake. They whose good huppe was to escape, made a stand in the field of a certayne land city, called Tacuna. Vpon an high steepe side of a hill of that plaine, Cortes abode, to gather the remnant of his vanquished Armie together, and incamped there all night, in the open ayre. Mastering his army after the vnhappy remnant thereof receiued, he found left behind him slaine, of the Spaniards 150. of the Auxiliary Tascaltèques, and Guazuzingi, and others bordering vpon them, about 2000. of the horses, he lost 42. and there remayned not one of the children of Mutezcuma, or of the chiefe men who were led captiue. The like also befell the slauces: they all dyed in the sight of our men. The Tenustitan conquerors alwayes followed the stopps of our men fighting, to the very view of this city Tacuna: expecting the day light. Cortes being certified by the Spies, what purpose they had, and how great a multitude was gathered together against him, vsed a Stratageme. He commaunded sirs to be kindled in diuers places, to the intent, that the enemy should thinke our menne woulde stay thre, and not moue a foote till day light. At the second watch of the night hee commaundeth to take vp the Ensignes, and chargeth the souldiers to follow as well as they could: one of the Tascaltèque Auxiliaries escaped, Cortes being very pensie, because he knew not which way they must goe, or should be compelled to go: he offereth his helpe to conduct him; because he declared, that he had trauiled through those countries before time. This Tascaltèque beeing his guide, he remoueth, they bring forth those that were grievously wounded vpon the buttockes of horses, or fastened to their taylor: the rest who were vnprofitable for warre, who could stand vpon  
their

Cortes packs  
up a great mass  
of treasure.

Cortes and his  
companions flee.

Mutezcumas  
children slain.

Tacuna.

150. Spaniards  
slaine, & 2000  
others.

A Stratageme.

their foete: or such as were wounded, or otherwise sicko of any-disease, he sent before. The rearward, which he kept, with the horse, and a few sound men, were scarce marched one mile from the place where they incamped that night, when in the first twilight and dawning of the day, an innumerable multitude of Enemies came: vnto them: and with their large paces the Barbarians ouertooke our rearward. They so galled our men behind, that the horsemen violently fell vpon them all along the way, and slew many, and returned backe againe to the armie while they were marching. So, they alwayes followed our men fighting for two leagues together, for they might not make a further iourne, for the annoiance of the enemy: neither was it les greiuous vnto them, that they were oppressed with the want of al things, because they carried nothing out of Tenustitan fit for food, nor did they safely march frō the townesmen: they that were next in the way, came violently running out of their houses with loud outcries, as shepheards vse to doe vpon the taking of a Woolfe at the sheepefold, while they perceiue the wolfe is gon farr from the foldes. Through these difficulties, at length they came to their friends the Tascaltecaes. In the second encounter after they were got out of the city Tenustitan, the enemy wounded 4. horses with their arrowes of the which one being alaine, (as Cortes saith) gaue him and his fellow souldiers a sumptuous & delicate supper, for that they greedily deuoured the horse. They say they led a miserable life for siue daies together, with the parched graine of Maizium only, & that, not to saturity neither. I omit many particulars heere, which cause mee to beleue, that neither that fabulous Grecian Hercules, nor any man liuing euer suffered any such things, & yet remained aliue, so many painefull labours, so many dangers of sight, such hunger, I thinke none liuing which is not a Spaniard could haue indured. This Race of men is borne for this, that it might more easily indure what labour soeuer, & hunger, and thirst, heat and cold, & continuall watching, (& that in the open ayre if necessitie require) then any other nation in my iudgemēt. At the length the sixth day frō that departure, which was like vnto a flight, he came to a town of the Tascaltecan iurisdiction, called Guazillipa: which consisteth of 4000 houses, as they report. He entred that towne halfe suspected, because he feared (which usually happeneth in humane affaires) least their mindes might be changed with fortune, and of friends were nowe become enemies, but hee found they had dealt faithfully with him. That towne was 4. leagues distant from Tascalteca. Vnderstanding by the Tascaltecanes of the slaughter of our men and theirs, and of their coming: they sent two of the chiefe men of the city messengers vnto them, the one a man of authority, and the other Sacuetengal. Messengers also came from the common wealth of Guazuzingo friend to the Tascaltecanes, who comforted our distressed men & perswade them to be of good cheere, and put them in some hope of future reuenge, offering al their forces for the effecting of the matter. They exhort them to quiet themselves for the present after so many greiuances, & cure their companions: and further promise that the Tenustitanes should shortly receiue punishment for the slaughter of the Spaniards, & the losse of their cittizens alaine vnder their protection. Cortes with these words confirmed his wandering mind, & at the request of the embassadours went to Tascalteca. But he sent the embassadours of the Guazuzingo cheerefully back againe, hauing presented them with certaine gifts of our country commodities, acceptable vnto them, because they were strange. Our men were curiously intertayned, & cherished with soft beds, & necessary prouision of victuals. Cortes being to depart to Mutezumaz, had left with the Tascaltecanes some store of gold & siluer, and found all things intire and safe, & their fidelitie kept. But what auailed it: he sent that wealth in chests (to the summe of 21000. Castellanes of golde, besides fewels,) to the Colony of Vera Crux: siue horses accompanied those riches, and 44. footemen through the enemies borders of the prouince of Colua, because they are friends to the Tenustitanes: who were takē euery man, & all sacrificed to their gods, & deuoured by the Coluani, & their treasures diuided among thē. Hauing continued 3 space of twenty daies with the Tascaltecanes, he cured the wounded men and refreshed the feeble. After this, he sent againe to the Colonie of Vera Crux, the messenger returning, sayd those Garrisons were all well, at that message Cortes reioyced, but the rest of the Commanders and souldiers were of opinion, that they should be brought backe to that Colony, to the intent that being ioyned together, they might more easily resist the treachery and

The Barbarians  
ouertake the  
rearward.

Hee commendeth  
the hardnes  
and hartenes  
of the Spaniards.

They come to  
Guazillipa.

They of Guazuzingo  
put some hope of  
revenge.

and deceits of the enemy. Cortes sayth hee will not returne againe, seeing hee had found so great faithfulness in the Tascaltecanes and Guazuzingi, and perswadeth them to bee ready to take reuenge of the Tequistitanes for such their outrageous & villanous actes. About the Calendes of Iuly in the yeere 1520, hee marcheth forward in battayle array. There is an huge city called Tepeaca not farre distant from Tascalteca, these citties pursue each other with hostile hatred. The Tepeacenses sacrificed and deuoured 12. Spanyards taken passing through their borders. To them Cortes (with great and mighty armies of the Tascaltecanes, Chiurutecali, and Guazuzingi,) directeth his course: it was reported by the Spies that the Tepeacenses, had receiued mercenary souldiers from the city Tequistitan, against our men. But that I may conclude in few wordes, omitting circumstances, both the hostes, & the guests were conquered: so that he had the city yeilded vp vnto him. They promised by an oath that they would obey the command of Cortes, and in token of obedience, they gaue pledges. Our ordnance and warlike engins together with our horses (things neuer seen nor heard of before, by them) presently make their courages to quaille, but the greatest help was, that power of 3. nations gathered together. In this prouince of Tepeaca he chose a new place to plant a colony, & built a Castle there, which he called Sugura la Frontera. He determined not to trust the Tepeacenses, because they might easily be perswaded to imbrace the counsell of the Tenustitan Princes, & for that Tepeaca is the midd-way, intercepting from Vera Crux to these friendly nations. While these things were thus done, Cortes had messengers from Vera Crux, who reported, that the forces of Garames were sent from Panncus the king, to that great riuer, to erect a Colony, and that they were vanquished, and ouerthrowne, and escaped out of the hands of the King Panncus, and were arrived at Vera Crux. After the Tepeacenses vanquished, a spreading rumour throughout the rest of the bordering nations, stirred vp the minds of the people. There is another mountainous city called Guaccachiulla, which secretly sent Embassadors to Cortes, to offer themselves and all their power against the inhabitants of the Prouince of Colna, the friends of the Tequistitanes, from whom they complained, that they had receiued innumerable losses, and disgraces, even to the ruishment of their women. The Guaccachiulli are seated on this side the mountaine, enemies to these inhabitants beyond the mountaines situated in the countrie of Colna. They told Cortes that 30000. armed men lay in ambush beyond the mountaines in the borders of Mexinga, because they hearde that our men were minded (being next vnto the mountaines) to passe into Colna. He went therefore to the Guaccachiulli with 200. Spanish footemen, 13. horses onely, three thousand of the auxiliary forces, and with certayne peeces of Artillery: the Commanders of this ambuscant quietly rested themselves securely in the city Guaccachiulla. Whereupon he tooke, or slew them euery manne. The city Guaccachiulla is fortified with strong towred wals, compassed about with mountaines, blessed with a fruitfull soyle, consisting (as they say) of 6000. houses or thereabouts build of lime and stone, famous for 2. riuers watering the plaine thereof. There is another city 4. leagues distant only from Guaccachiulla. This City also sent Embassadors to offer to yeelde themselves. The king hereof fled away, with the Coluani that escaped, who being for to inioy his dominion, refused the same. He rather desired to suffer banishment, then to be subiect to our men. At the request therefore of the people, hee made his brother king in his steade, who promised the citizens, that hee would not alter and change his opinion. A few dayes after that, he went to another city, named Izzucca, 4. leagues also from Guaccachiulla, but lying another way. After he was in his iourney, hee perceived there were very great forces of the Coluani in the borders of that city: they write that they were 20000. They thought they were able to defend the country, that our men should not enter. Within the city were 6000. defenders, the best of the rest, were distributed into the towne and villages: but the women, and all such as were vnfit or vnpromisable for war, they sent forth into the woods, and mountaines with their household stuffe. This city is very well fortified by art and nature, I should be weary with recounting all the strength thereof, therefore shortly thus. It was wonne at length: the greater part of the defenders leaped downe from the wall into a riuer running close thereby, because they perceived they were assailed behind. The city being taken, Cortes pardoned the people, & commandeth them to bring backe their families,

Tepeaca  
a huge city

Cortes taketh  
the city of  
Tepeaca

A castle built

Embassadors  
to Cortes from  
Guaccachiulla  
a city, situate  
by the  
Tequistitanes

An other City  
sent Embassadors  
to Cortes

Cortes perch  
ing vpon Izzucca  
a city

houses wonne

families, and goods. They all cheerfully returned vnto their houses, so that the city is precisely replenished. By 2. messengers of the city he commandeth the King who departed with the Tenustitans, and the rest of the Coluani, to be sent for: hee refused to come, and desired banishment rather. The brother vnto this king was a bastard, and aged, and by his soune who was dead, there was a grandchild of ten yeres old, he therefore placed the nephew only in the kingdome, because he was legitimate, choosing his vackle for Protector, ioyning three of the bordering Guaccachiulli faithfull men, and of great authoritic with him in guardianship, to looke to the estate of the orphā, while attaining to more yeres, he knew how to gouerne himselfe. They say this city Izzuca consisteth of 3000. houses, with about an 100. towred temples dedicated to their Idols, which Cortes himselfe saith he numbred from a certaine high place, and in them they sacrifice with mans blood. All these towres with all their Idols he caused to be burned: commanding, that hereafter they should no more apply their mindes to such ceremonies. And he further sayd, that the Creator of heauen and earth hated manslavery: and that it was contrary to the law of God and Nature, that one man should kill another. This city hath a Castle neere vnto it compassed with hilles, which defend it from the sharpe and bitter blastes of winds; and by reason of the heate thereof it bringeth forth exceeding great quantity of Gossampatie cotton. The plaine thereof is well watered. All the fields thereof are well moystened in the summer by trenches cut from place to place. There is plenty of all manner of fruits there, neither is the sowing of pot herbs neglected. The plaine is full of towne and villages. The Guaccachiulli being vanquished, & the Izzucani subdued, the same thereof being spread through far removed nations, declared that the countenance of rauenous and greedy fortune was now changed, & of a stepmother was turned into a milde and courteous mother. The mindes and affections of the nations ranne headlong frō the Tenustitans to our men, as it vsually happeneth, in turning of the wheele. Embassadours come striding in all post hast from every place to yeeld themselves: affirming that for feare of the Coluani, & the Tenustitan Princes of that prouince, they durst not hitherto offer their due obedience to so great a king, as the Spaniards professed he was. But now, seeing they hoped to be safe, and secured by the fauour of our men frō the tyranny of the bordering kings, they say that they are come to discouer the affection of their citties. That we may now at length end this discourse, related in a sufficient long story: Cortes vnderstood by certaine captiues, that after the death of Mutezuma, his brother the Lord of Hastapalappa was made king in the city Tenustitan, who 3. monthes after the kingdome & souerainty taken vpon him, died of the Measels, in whose stead Mutezumacs sisters son succeeded, whose name was Catamazin, for of the 3. daughters of Mutezuma, they themselves had slain one, at the bridges in the slaughter of our men. But of the that remained aliue, the one was an idiot, & other diseased with the palse. This Catamazin endeuoured to get all maner of armes, as many as he could: especially long pikes, wherwith he hopeth to be able to wound the horses afar off: because they are disranked onely with the iacounter of 3 horse. For he feareth that Cortes would return vnto him, to reueng the outrage committed: because he vnderstood the nations chiefly round about bordering vpo him were revolted frō him, & promised aid vnto our men for their destruction. Neither was he surely deceiued, for he said 3 Cortes would prepare 13. vessels of 2. ranks of oars called Bergantines to destroy that great salt lake, 3 so great a city, their prouisiō of victual being taken from thē & their cōdits broken, might be vrged with such necessity, 3 they might be compelled to submit their necks to 3 yoke of the king of Spaine. In the meane space he sent 5. ships to Hispaniola, to bring a conueniēt nūber of horses, & harquebus shott, with store of gunpowder. Cortes writeth that those cōtries are like vnto Spaine in the abundance of riuers, mountains, & woody vallies. Therefore he desireth the Emperor to confirme 3 name, which he had giue vnto those cōtries: for he called all which is described, Noua Hispania, of the Occā sea. Withal in the end of his huge volume, he humbly beseebeth him that it would please his M. to send some man of courage & experience vnto him, to viewe the coastes of those countries subdued by him, that he might report, what he had seene. Dated the 30. day of October, from the Castle which he called Segura Frōtera.

1520.

Cortes burnes the temples with their Idols.

Fortes againe saith vpon Cortes.

Catamazin King of the Tenustitans.

Cortes prepareth for the warre.

To Adian the Pope; concerning the compassing of the world.

The seventh Chapter.

While these writings remained in my deske, messengers sayling by reason of the long distance of place, and dangerous trausiling, beholde late matters discouered, behold new hatched broods from the pregnant Ocean. This worke shall be concluded with two additions therunto, which shall far exceede the former discourse in worth: one, of the strang, and incredible compassing of the world; and the landes which bring forth spices discouered: y other, with what art, pollicy, heate of courage and force of armes of the Yascaltecan, Guazuzingi, and the bordering enemies of Mutezuma aiding him, Fernandus Cortes recouered that huge and mighty city of the lake, Tenustitan, and all the power thereof and ouerthrew it, and almost vterly destroyed it. Whereby no small addition is made to the sceptre of your Holinesse, and the kingdom of great Castile. But let vs come to the Paralell compassed from East to West; and to the negotiation of Spices, which is somewhat further to be deriued. From the city Barchinona, when the Emperour intended the Laletane Council there, your Holinesse being president in our Emperours Senate of Indian affayres: charge was giuen, as you may remember, to Fernandus Magaglianus the Portugall, who fled from his owne King, to search out the Molucha Ilands, which nourish spices, for that being 7. yeeres conversant in times past, in the Cochinean, Cananorean, Colocutean, Chersonesian, otherwise called the Malachian Martes and fayres, he knewe where those Ilands lay. They are not farre distant by sea from golden Chersonesus, commonly called Malacha & y rest of those maris. Magaglianus being dismissed by our Senat whereof your Holinesse was president, set sayle to sea from Baranade the mouth of Belhix, the 20. of September in the yeere 1519. with 5. shippes, the Admirall whereof was called the Trinity, the other S. Anthony, the Victory, the Conception, and S. James in the which he carried 257. men, of these ships, two only returned. One of the which forsaking the Admirall, returned vnserviceable: the other, almost 3. yeeres after her departure out of Spaine (for shee arrived the 6. of September 1522. at the same haue, fr whence shee departed when shee went out) returned laden with cloutes, & certaine other spices: Few of the men escaped. And the Admirall himselfe Magaglianus remained still in one of the Ilandes called Matam, slaine by the inhabitants in his voyage, as we shall declare hereafter. Betweene the Castellanes and the Portugues there is a certaine naturall hatred and priuie grudge from all antiquity: Magaglianus seeking diuers occasions vnder pretence of Iustice, consumed many of the Castellanes, because they obeyed him vnwillingly. Of these, we shal speak in their fit places: now let vs come to the voyage vndertaken by them. Arriving at the fortunate Ilands first, and after coming within view of the Ilands Gorgodeis, which the Portugall Lord thereof calleth the Greene Cape: they turned about to the right hand on the backe side of our supposed Continent, all along the length of that land which is called S. Augustine, as the Castellanes named it: and a little further to S. Mary, so called of the Portugalls, which extendeth it selfe 5. degrees beyond the equinoctiall line; and so they came to the Antarctic, to the very signe it selfe: where in one of the Decades we sayd that Solisius the Captain of our flecte, running along those shoores, was slaine, with certaine of his consorts, and deuoured by the inhabitants: That Bay, as they say, is 38. degrees beyond the equinoctiall to the Antarctic. This place was called the Bay of Saint Mary: I haue else where sayd that a Bay is called a gulfe: Messengers being sent from Magaglianus against the streame which fell into the gulfe with one of the ships, & the pinnace of another, they saw three halfe wild, and naked men, two spannes higher then the common stature of men: One of them being more hardy then the rest entred the boate. Our men supposed that he would haue allured his companions to the ships, if they intreated him well, when they had him in their hands. Having well intertained him with meate & drinke, and cloathing, they sent him backe againe: But none of them came vnto them, neither returned he any more. Yet they found trees cut with our hatchets, and in the top also of another tree, a Crosse erected, but found no footing of any one of our men. They report wonder-

S. Mary.

3. halfe wild and naked men.

full

fall things of the largenes of this river, as else where I have spoken of Maragnonis in the country of Paria to the North. They say, they went 20. leagues vp the river, where they af- A River. firme it is 17. leagues broad. But the mouth thereof (because in their iournie they perceived that many other riuers: flied into it) they say, is exceeding broad: and that fresh waters are drunke for a very great space within the Sea: leauing which Bay, a few degrees to the antarctick, because it now bended to the westerne land, they found another great gulfe, which they named S. Iulian. There was a very safe Harbour there, therefore the Ad- S. Iulian. mirall commanded them to cast ancor. Now the sunne ascending vnto vs, forsooke those countries: After they had passed the middle of Aries, they were oppressed with cold, as our northern men are, the sunne passing the halfe part of Libra. In that haue our men passed more then 4. months of the sommer, vnder cottages, and sheds vpon the shoare, deteyned through extremity of cold, and shut in by tempestuous weather. For in the Kalends of April they tooke that Harbour, and went out the 9. of the Kalends of September. Here Magaglianus the Portugall dealt cruelly with a certaine man called Iohannes Cartagena, the familiar friend of the Burgentian Bishop: who by the kinges decree was ioynd in commission with Magaglianus, and was Vice-admirall of the flecte. Him, and a priest (vnder pretence of plotting to kill him) he set a shoare, with a bagg of basket, and each of them their sword: he would haue punished their deuises by death, if peradienture they imagined to kill him: but fearing the hatred of the Castellanes already conceiued against him, he durst not. Diuers report this matter diuersly, and other things like vnto this. Some say Magaglianus lawfully did, that which he did, others taxe him, and ascribe those executions to the generall ancient hatred betweene the Castellanes and Portugues. There, they saw cottages of the inhabitants: but it is a barbarous nation, vnarmed, onely covered with skinnes, a runagate The Portugues. people, without any certaine place of abode, lawlesse, of a large stature, and are called Patagones. The sunne now returning to those coastes: wayng anchor out of that Harbour of Saint Iulian; the 9. of the Kalenders of September; in the year 1521. they descended vnto the antarctick 14 degrees more, as they say. Heere wee must walke a litle vpon plaine ground: This Magaglianus when hee was a childe, confusedly heard vnder a cloud, in the Portugal actions, that there lay a straight, and narrow Sea, in those countries, intangled and inclosed with diuers coastes, and reaches, but which way he was to seeke it, he vnderstood not: Chance offered that, which reason directed not: for ther arose a great tempest, inasmuch that it violently carryed one of the ships, and cast her whole vpon some of the next rocks, and left her hanging there, the men were preserued: but the shipp remained shuicred in pieces by the violence of the storme. Beholde now one of the fuc left behind. A litle further on the left hand he had the huge Ocean. On the right hand, vnaccessible snowy mountains: one of the ships which drew lesse water, seeking an Harbour from the fury of the waues, drew neere to the land. By chance they saw a narrow straight, and going a litle further in, she light vpon a Bay 4. Spanish leagues broad, and 6. leagues long, the ship returning bringeth tidings of a straight. Heere I omit many small and trifling things, the rest of the ships follow: they say that in some place they might cast stones with a sling to cyther mountayne. The country is desert, and they affirme that the mountaynes on both sides of the Straight are beset with Cedar trees. Hauing passed beyond that Bay, they met with another Straight, some what broader, yet narrow. After that, another Bay, and then another Straight, beyond which; there was another Bay, to witt, as two narrow mouthes in the Maps of Europe, containing a certain large space to the Hellespont: so in this straight they were three; with as many large & great spaces. These straights are full of small lands, whereupon being always suspicious, and fearing shallowe water; they sayed by those places. But every where they found very deepe seas. Nowe that tract or coast bent vnto the restiall Occident, which they note to bee extended an hundred and ten leagues in length. While they cast anchor in a certaine square space of the Sea of that coast, they found nothing worthy the remembrance. Three of the four shippes follow their course. The fourth called S. Anthony, remayned in that square space, their coasors thought shee would follow: but shee abode still, and gaue her companions the slip, and now returning backe, a long time reueiled Magaglianus with reprochfull speeches. Wee do not suppose that the Commanders of the Another ship  
was cast.

ship would suffer such disobedience unpunished. The rest therefore proceed with 3. ships onely. At length they come out of those straights, and having entered into them the 21. of October, they came out the 5. of the Kalendes of December. They say, they had very long dayes at that time, and very short nights: neither is it contrary, to the reason of the Sphere, Having passed that coast, they took the huge Ocean, another Sea. That is to say, on the backside of our supposed Continent, and is ioyned to that Sea, which in the Decades I call the South sea, first found out by Vachus. from Darien, the sons of King Cosmogrus directing him: they say, they liued 3. months, & 20. dayes in that huge Ocean, contenting themselves with the sight of the heauen, and the salt water. They report lamentable things of their great wantes, and of the extremity of heate which much vexed them. They confesse that an handful of Rice, for many daies together, was their daily portion onely, without a morsell of any other meate. And there was such scarcity of potable water, that they were compelled to cast in a third part of salt seawater to boile the Rice, and if perhaps any would

A great Land  
there.

drink it without mixture, hee was forced to shutte his eyes by reason of the Greene tainture thereof, and stoppe his nose for the stincke. Sailing through that great sea, to the West, and North, they came to the equinoctiall line againe, next vnto which, they founde two worthlesse Ilandes, which they called the vnsfortunate Ilandes, because they were vnsprofitable, and desiert. After that they called the multitude of Ilandes Archipelagus, like our Cyclades in the Ionian Sea: in the beginning of which, they went a shoare in manie Ilandes five hundred leagues distant from the coming out of the narrow Straight, those Ilandes (the auncient name not being expressed) they called Latrones, because they stole whatsoever they could lay hand on, although our menne quietly suffered it: as that wandering kinde of theeces, whiche the Italian calleth Zingari, who sayne themselves to bee Egyptians: amonge the things which were stolne, the boate, wherein our menne went a shoare from the shippes, when they had scarce turned their backs, yet they carryed her away: but many of them being slaine first, they brought her againe. It is a naked people, and halfe brutish. In

The vnsfortunate  
Ilandes.

Latrones.

that place a tree groweth which beareth Coccus. The greatest of those Ilandes is Burncia, which without doubting, they write to be two hundred and foure and fiftie leagues in circuit about. In the Harbour of this Ilande they say, a tree groweth, whose leaues falling, goe creeping like a worme: I suppose some vitall spirite swelles between both sides of the leafe, which like a puff of winde that lasteth for a small time, may moue the leaues. They vnderstood that there were 2. kinds of Religion there, Idolaters, and Mahumetanes; agreeing well enough one with another. Heards of oxen & Buffaloes are nourished there, flocks also of goats, and great plenty of our country fatted foule are there maintained, but no sheepe. They want wheate, barlie, and wine; but haue abundance of Rice, that is their bread, and of Rice they make diuers daintie dishes. The Burncian King, and our men, interchangeably saluted each other with acceptable presents. The King sent his presents to our men, vpon 2. Elephants: and the next day after, 32. sortes of daintie meats brought vpon the shoulders of noblemen: they say that the city of this Prince consisteth of 25. thousand houses: but made of wood, except the Kings pallace which (they say) is built of stone. Many little Ilandes lie about Burncia: among the which there are two; whereof the one is called Zubo, and the other Matan of the cheife towne thereof so called. Magaglianus procured vnto himselfe the loue & fauour of the king of Zubo, by bestowing certaine presents of our countrys commodities vpon him, acceptable vnto him, because they had not bin seene before & were estranged from their knowledge. He subiected the King to Baptisme, and to the obedience of Cesar. Moreouer, leauing the ships in the haue of Zubo, he passed ouer with their skiffes, & the Canoes of that Prouince, and certaine Zubensian soldiers, into the land Matan, so called of the towne Matan, which lieth within the view thereof, 4. leagues only distant from thence. He endeouored by Interpreters to perswade the King of Matan, that he would subiect himselfe to the great king of Spaine, and to the king of Zubo, & to pay tribute to the great king of Spaine, he answered he would obey him, but not the king of Zubo. Magaglianus made a pray of the towne next vnto the kings seabe, and wholly consumed it with fire, to the number of some 50. houses: and returned backe to Zubo with a pray of victuals (whereof there was some scarcity in Zubo) and of diuers implements &

The Island Bur-  
nia.

A strange tree.

burnt

Idolaters and  
Mahumetanes  
here.

Rice.

burnt

Presents carried  
vpon Elephants.

burnt

The kings pal-  
lace.  
The Island Zubo.

burnt

The Kings of  
Zubo bayoned  
and subiected  
to the King of  
Spaine.

burnt

burnt

burnt

furniture for houses. But the greater parte of them the Zubensians (enemies to them of Matan) took from him. Eight dayes after that, Magaglianus returning after the same manner, leaving his shippes, attempted by force of armes, and assault, to win Matan the kings towne it selfe. The king refused to obey the command of Magaglianus, brought better by euill destinie: and went out armed with the inhabitants of the towne to meet him. Besides weapons of that prouince, of canes, and wood hardened in the fire, this king hath gotten long speares: for the Sericæ, & marchants of the countries of the Sienn do often trade with these lands. To make short he was slaine with 7. of his companions, by the king, and 22. wounded. So that the good Portugall Magaglianus ended his greedy desire of spices. They that remained, returning to their companions to Zubo, were intaid by the Zubensian King. At that banquet Iohannes Serranus (the principall Pilot of the Ocean, of whom I spoke in my former Decades) now master of one shipp, & another master of another, with some 10. more perhaps of their companions, were present. In the meane space, about some 40. others of the mariners wandred through the land. The kings armed troops lying in ambushes saile forth vpon them while they were at dinner, & slew some, and kept the masters of the ships (liue) and stripping them starke naked drew them openly to the shore, supposing that others would haue come from the ships with their skiffes, to take them in. They that kept the ships durst not go vnto them. So leaving their copanions, these unfortunate men set saile. I inquired diligently of them that returned, & among the rest, of a young man of Genoa, one Martinus de Iudicibus, who was present at all things, what crime committed moued the Zubensian king to attempt so cruel & wicked a deed. They suppose that the deflowering of their women caused this perturbation: for they are ielous. These are the lands (in my iudgement) wherof many Authors report many things: that thousands of lands; some say 8. thousand, others increase it; are not far distant from the Indian shores. Of those lands that lie about Burncia, there is one whererein are 2. towne, Baturan, & Calegam: there they were peaceably received. Frō the same land they saw another (which the Calegancians shewed the with their finger, where the Baturanemes, & Calegancians said, that there was great plenty of gold in the sand of the Sea, that the sand only being sifted through a siue, they might picke out graines of gold, which were as big as a silberd: nut, or little lesse: the rest they contemne, as nothing worth: with in the view of this land there is another, famous for two stately towne: Vuidanaus, & Châpicus, of the which the one looketh to the South, and the other to the North. The Southerne land ingendreth Cinamon, the other gold: they gaue our men somewhat of either, for exchange of commodities. To these lands (as I haue already said) marchants of the Sericæ, and Siennese, & other countries of India, use often to resort barter for gold, and precious stones, and other things: and giue them webbs of linnen or woollen cloth: and other things seruing for apparell, and humane ornament, and also for the vse of warre. From the prospect of these lands, those Malucha llandes so much desired, are 175. leagues distant to the equinoctiall, they account them 10. degrees: why they should beate their braines about these computations, I see no reason. The ancient Philosophers, will haue a degree consist of 60. Italian miles, wherof euery one includeth 6. thousand paces by measure. These say, that a league containeth 4. of those miles by sea, and but three by land. If we take the computation of leagues, after the manner of the Spanish sea men, euery degree containeth 15. leagues: but they, contrary to the opinion of all men, say that a Degree containeth 17. leagues, and a halfe. Let them vnderstand themselves, for I vnderstand them not. Let vs come to the Maluchas: at length they attained theis. There are siue principall llands of them, either vnder the equinoctiall line, or next vnto it, almost of an equall circuit or compass: euery one of them is contained within the compass of 4. 5. or 6. leagues at the most. By a certaine instinct of Nature, an high hill ariseth in euery one of them. In them the Cloues naturally growe and increase. The huge land named Gilolo seemeth to inclose them all fine vpon the Antarctick side. Cloues also grow in Gilolo, but somewhat sharpe, and halfe wilde: as it happeneth of Chestnuts, & olives of wild olive trees not grafted, but in all these small llands there are aromatically, and pleasant fruits and spices. But it is almost deliightfull thing to heare, by what means in their

Magaglianus  
slaine by the  
kinge of Matan.40 more dayes  
and time in the  
the Zubo.A nicke trade of  
handes.Bucoran and  
Calegam.

Gillolo.

Vuidanaus and  
Châpicus two  
stately towne.They come to  
the Micuchas.Cloues  
Gillolo.Fruits and  
spices.

The opinion of  
the inhabitants  
concerning the  
age of their  
Clowes.

judgement that aromatical vigor is put into the Clowes. The inhabitants say, that a certain Clowde ariseth thrice euery day (they say it is sent from Heauen) early in the Morning, at noone, and in the evening, which couereth the toppes of the Hillies which bring forth clowes, so that, at that time the loppes cannot bee seene: and after a short time, that clowde is dissolued. And the trees of clowes, which are almost equall; & like to bay trees, they say it is an argument, that they become fruitfull with that spirit of breathing, because that clowde neuer descendeth to the plaine of those hills: nor the trees transplanted from the hills prosper; or bring forth sauiory fruite. Every Island preserueth the plaine for the sowing and bringing forth of Rice. They went a shoare in one of them, by whose king they were peaceably, & honorably intertained, but with 2. ships only: for the third, they brak in peeces; because they wanted men, to gouerne more, after the slaughter of the Admirall, and his companions; and that fatal banquet. The ships which were called the Trinity, and the Victory, remained safe. This nation is almost naked, and vse breeches made of the inner rinde of trees to couer their secret parts only. But that king told vs, that therefore he ioyfully receiued our meane for his guests, because that a few months before, he saw in the circle of the moone, a forraigne nation come from sea plainly, & confessed that our men differed not one jot fro that image which he saw: they say, that they suppose these lands are 5000. leagues distant from Hispaniola, which containe 20000. Italian miles: but I thinke they are deceived: Our men say those lands are happy, although they want our bread; and wine, and beefe, and mutton; because they are contented with their Rice; of the which they make a thousande sorts of meate: They haue another kinde of common bread of the inner pith of certaine olde date trees salued downe; withered with long continuance, as it usually falleth out in thicke woodes standing vpon mountaines, removed from resort of men, in the which great trees fall, smitten with the violence of whirlewindes, or earthy substance falling in the rootes; through long space of yeers, and the length of trees increasing, which require greater strength of rootes, then the earth it selfe can giue them, to sustaine the tree. How soeuer it be, many lie in the woods, and grow old; & are eaten with the wormes. Such is that pith of the Date tree, of which they make their common bread. They cut the pith into square proportions, then presently they grinde it into meale, and dry it, and lastly they kneade it, & bake it. They brought peeces thereof made in the forme of a bricke. I desired to tast it, but nothing was more rough, nothing more vsuauory: that must bee the food of poore miserable men, who haue not ability to procure rice: because they are ignorant in tillage of the ground. And I my self haue seen the inhabitants of y<sup>e</sup> mountaines in the mountainous countries; & villages, eat a little more sauiory breede, almost of a blacke color, of the grayne of Tifha, commonly called Spanish Centenon, or Millium or Panicum, or some other worse then these.

Rice.  
A third ship  
broken.

Three Islands  
happy, and  
why.

Break of the pith  
of old date trees.

A sherry kinde  
of bread is used.

Break of the  
grayne of Tifha.

A small rub-  
ber.

African apple.

Innocent  
specimen.

Anapellus of  
woolles head.

It is a rule in the arbutement of the wheele turning about; that some should be satisfied; many famished, some haue delicats, not many foodes. Yet men liue euery where, for nature is contented with a little, so we be used to a little: They are careful to maintaine goats & all kinde of crined soule: they haue also sweete Canes, out of which suger is taken: They haue also African apples, which the Italians & the Spaniards call Pomegrasses & Oringes & Citrons of all sortes. Among these apples, the Spaniards calleth Limas Limones; Narangias Torongias; Cidras, Cidrones which diuers among themselves. Among herbes also why should I call Nasturcium Aquaticum herbs growing in little streams of fountains? If the common people of Spaine plainly & without circuloctio call the by one name Berros and y<sup>e</sup> Italian Cresones? And which promoketh more to disdain amonge those herbes, a certaine poisonous killing herbe (I know not what) groweth, of the Spaniard called Anapellus. One being demanded (who careth to store vp nothing in the treasure of his minde, but to be a Latinist) whether it might bee lawfull to call it Anapellus, because the Latino tongue wanteth that woorde, & it may very well bee taken elsewhere? he will wryth the Nose, and with a certaine graue and stately countenance whisper and buzz it into your eares; that it ought to be called woolles head. Therefore thus in my judgement with the good blinke & leaue of those fine-witted fellows; the lands of Malacha abound with Limons, Oringes, Citrons, Pomegrasses, and pott herbes. I made metio of Cresones of Berros,

Berris, & Anapellus, not without cause, for whē in the first beginning of supper we eat <sup>of the leaves of this berbe.</sup> herbe with salt, vineger, & oyle: my deere frised Fernandus Rodericus (whose helpe you Holines sometimes used by persuasio of <sup>the</sup> Emperours Maicesty) lyght vpo Anapellus which as soone as he had takē, he fell flat downe in such a taking as if he had eaten Hemlock, or Libberds bane, but we presently preuented danger of death with Treacle & Mithridate: Yet he liued a long time halfe benumbed. Is not Anapellus a pleasing & well soundiug word, when they will chatter & babble <sup>of</sup> it ought to be called the stragler of <sup>the</sup> woollie by a slūby circumlocution? They make not wine of grapes, which the Maluchas llandes haue not, but make very pleasant wines of diuers kinds of fruites, especially of one. There is also with them and with the inhabitants of our supposed continent, a tree almost a Date tree in likeness of forme, but very vnlike in the manner of beariuge fruite. This tree bringeth forth 12. bunches of berries, sometimes more, euen to the number of 20: in euery bunch clusters as of the grape, but couered with a thousande rindes: euery cluster being pilled, is very like vnto a smale Melō, but of a shelly rinde or barke, almost as hard as a shell. They call those fruites Coccus, & this Coccus is wrapped vp in more outward curious wouen works, then the date, which is to be eaten, with the same litle ribbes, certaine nettworks bindinge them together: and those skinnes are to be taken away with noe lesse labour, the dates are pilled. These Cocci being opened, yeeld meate & drinke, for they finde the full of sweete & pleasāt liquor. Within the barke or rind a certaine spongy masse of the thicknes of two fingers, is nourished sticking within the shell in whitenes & softnes like vapo butter, or suet, but sweeter in tast: That lump is cutt a way from the inside of the shell, being very fit to bee eaten: If it remaine but a few dayes in the vessell a litle rouled vp together, it is sayd to melt, & turne into oyle, sweeter then oyle of oliues, and is very wholesome for such as are sicke. Another profitable seruice of nature is receiued from this tree. They pierce the sides of <sup>the</sup> tree where the leaues spring out: whereupon they say that potable liquor distillith forth by droppes, into vessels set vnder the, which liquor is most pleasing to the tast, & agreeable with health. They apply the scules to takinge of fish, wherof those Seas eery where ingender many sorts, and among the rest, one very monstrous, somewhat lesse then a cubit, all libelly, with a backe not fenced with scales, but with a very hard skinnē, with a swines snout, armed in the forehead with two straight bony hornes, and with a diuided backe, bunchinge out, & bony. The Kinge to whom our men went a shoare, beleeuing that they were brought thither by Gods helpe and direction: demanded of our men what they desired, or what they sought for. They say, they desire spices. What we haue (saith he) you shall obtaine. With that he calleth his tributary llandes vnto him, and commandeth eery one of them to shew their heapes of cloues vnto our men, & suffer them at their pleasure to take them away, yet giuing honest contentment for the same: for when they be ripe, they lay them together on heapes at home, expecting marchants, as it falleth out, in all others marchandize. Heere they are carried to the Collocitean, Cochinean, Cuscenorian, and Malachean faires, in certaine great shippes, which they call luncques. So doe they likewise of Pepper, Ginger, Cinnamon, and other Spices which esseminate the mindes of men, needles, and vnecessary allurements: but in these 5. llandes of the Maluchas noe other Spices grow, save Cloues. Yet those llandes which bring forth other delicacies are not farre distant fro those, as the inhabitants of the Maluchas told vs, & had learned by an experiment of pyracē. For when they set sayle to the Maluchas from the great llande Barceia, and the rest of the llandes lying round about, in one of the which they steeve the Admirall Magaglianus: as they sayled, they suddenly light on a great ship of those prouinces vnaprepared, called a luncque, laden with marchandize, amonge which they found some store of all other spices, but in smale quantity, yet very perfect, and well conditioned, because they were new gathered: nor dare those shippes passe ouer the longe reaches of the Sea, because their shippes are not built with so greate art, that they can brooke those stormes of the Sea, which ours endure: nor are their mariners so skillfull, that they knowe how to sayle, when the wind bloweth not directly in the sterne. That shipp brought her burdē of the country prouision into another lland next adioyninge: to witt, Rise, Coccus, wherof I spake a litle before,

Of the tree  
Coccus, & the  
properties  
thereof.

A fish of a monstrous shape.

Types of Spices.

before, beemes, geese, & many things else to be eaten, & some store also of grained of golde: with thosē profits & revenues they prepared themselves dainty dinners, at y<sup>e</sup> cost of innocents passing by without suspition. They therefore determined to lade the two ships that remained with Cloutes: & because they found not such store with y<sup>e</sup> King, to fill both shippes the King himselfe speedily roweth ower to the bonding handes within viewe, for, of 5. fower of them may see one another. The first is a little further from the rest, not so far, as the eye of man may discern but a little more. Behold two ships filled with Cloutes newly gathered from the trees themselves, from which they brought also the bowghes, each hauinge their cloutes vpon them. It was a delightfull thing to all Courtiers to see those branches & to smell those little berries on their mother bowghes. That sent differeth not meanly from the smell of old Cloutes which the Apothecaries sell: I had many bowghes of them that were brought: and I imparted many vnto many, to be sent vnto diuers countryes. There remained yet a fewē with me, which I will keepe vntill I vnderstand whether any of them came vnto your Holines his handes. Behold two shippes laden with Cloutes. Let vs declare what followed thereupon. One of the two called the Trinitie; purified, was eaten through, & rotted with wormes (which the Venetian calleth Bissa, and the Spaniard Bromo) & was boored so full of holes, as the water ran through her sides, & Pumpe as through the holes of a Sieue. Wherefore shee durst not commit her selfe to the Sea for such a longe voyage, till she were newly repaired. The Trinitie therefore remained there still vntill this day, but whether shee be safe or no, wee knowe not. Of the other shippes therofore two only returned: This which is called the Victory returned now; and the other called Saint Anthony, the former yeere, but fowē of the men. It remaineth that wee declare, what way shee returned: For after three yeeres (a fewē dayes only excepted) from her departure shee came backe another way, by euill fortune leauinge all the cheife men behinde her: But this shipp (which was neuer heard of before, nor neuer attempted from the beginninge of the worlde) went about the whole Parallel, and compassed all the Earth. What would Græcia haue fained vpon this incredible Nouelty, if it had happened to any Græcian? The Argonauitick shippe (which without blushing and derision they suspiciously fable to be carryed vnto heauen) may say what hath she effected? If we consider what y<sup>e</sup> ship hath done, going out of the city Argos into Pontus, to Oeta; & Medes, with their Nobles Hercules, Theseus, and Inon, I knowe not what shee hath done: for it is yet vnknown what that golden steere was but what the distance of the iourney frō Græcia to Pontus was, children haue learned it with yong Grammatians. That distance is much lesse thē a Gyanttes mayle. But wee must labour to persuade men, how it might be that shee compassed the worlde: for it is hard to be beleued: Let vs take proofe therof from hence. Let your Holines command a solid round Sphere, to be brought, wherein the figure of the whole world is described. There let your Holines take the Herculean narrow passage called the straight of Gibraltar for your guide. Goinge out on the left hande, the Fortunate Islands commonly called the Canaries, are the first handes they meete with. Betwene them & the shoare of Affrica sayinge directly South, they meete with other handes called the Islands of y<sup>e</sup> Greeke Cape, by the Portugallies who are Lords therof, but in Latine y<sup>e</sup> Medusean Gorgones. Here your Holines is to make with an Attick minde, for from hence the grounde of this admiration is taken. The Portugallies from thō Hesperides turned about wholly to the left hand, and passe the equinoctial line, and goe beyond the Tropick also of Capricorne, euen to the furthest ende of Montes Lunæ: called the Cape of Bona Esperanza: as they commonly call it: from the Equator 34. degrees some; deduct two. From the pointe of that promontory, they returne backe to the East, and sayle by the mouthes of the British Sea, and the Persian gulfe and by the huge mouthes of Indus, and Ganges, as farr as golden Chersonesus, which (as we sayd) they call Malucha: Behold the halfe part of y<sup>e</sup> Circle of y<sup>e</sup> world. All Cosmographers by a perpetuall account haue set it downe in writinge, that, that is y<sup>e</sup> space of 12. houres, of the 24. which the sunne runneth. Now let vs measure the halfe which remaineth. We must therefore returne to the Gorgodes: This other little steere of 5. shippes, leauinge those handes on the left hand, went directly to the right hande, turninge sterne to sterne to the Portugallies, on the backe

The Trinitie  
and what befell  
her.

What way the  
Victory returned  
how shee compassed  
the earth.

A comparison  
betwixt the  
Argonauitick  
ship so much  
reuerenced by  
antiquity and  
this.

The proofe from  
the sphere and  
equinox.



side of that lande of ours, which we call the supposed Continēt; whose first entrance is in the jurisdiction of the Portugues, & this fleet went so far, y<sup>e</sup> (as wee now say) y<sup>e</sup> way they attained more then 50. degrees of the Antarectic: I note not the particular number because they differ in the report of the degrees, although but little. Followinge the West, as the Portugals did the East; they made those Ilands of the Maluchas behinde them which are not far distant from that where Ptolomeus placeth Gatigara, & the great gulfe: that wide & open entrance to the country of the Siue. What shall I say of the great gulfe, and Gatigara which (they say) they found not so situated, as they are described by Ptolomey, for the present I omitt them happily else where I shall speake thereof more at large. Let vs returne to the compassing of the Paralel, behold the golden Chersonesus found out a cleane contrary way to that of the Portugues; and this shipp (Queene of the Argonautikes) returneth the same way within the vewe of golden Chersonesus, holding the same course that the Portugues did: this shippe arriuinge at the Hesperian Gorgodes, in great want and necessity of all things, sendeth her boate a shoore with 13. men, to desire water, and something to eat, yet not freely. There the Portugues officers of their King (who supposed their right eye should bee plucked out, if any other Prince gott the profit of Spices) made stay of the boate and men against the league made from the beginninge of the diuision, established & confirmed by Pope Alexander the sixt: and the Kings Gouvernours of the Hesperides attempted to take the shippe it selfe, which had bin easily done. But the mariners vnderstandinge of the successe of their companions, before the Portugals could prepare their shippes for the encounter wayinge ancor, they say, they fledd away, leauinge 13. of their companions in the power of the Portugues, of 31. which they brought thether, of 60. men taken into the shippe at the Maluchas, but the Portugues settinge them at liberty, by comandement of their King sent the home againe. If I would recite their grieuances, daungers, hunger, thirst, watchinges, & painfull labours in pumpinge out the Sea water day and night which came in through the open chinkes and holes, I should insert too-longe a discourse, let this therefore suffice for that shipp which was fuller of hoales than any siue, and for those 13. persons which shee brought, who were more carion leane, then any staruellinge horse. They say they were violently driuen so far out of their course, that they affirme they ran, 14. thousand leagues, saylinge now hether, now thither, although they confesse the whole compass of the Earth is lesse then 8. thousand, because they knewe not what way (contrary to the course of the Portugals) these desired Ilands were to bee sought. Meanes are made, that such enterprises should not come to nought: what shalbee determined, and how the matter shalbee concluded with the Portugals, who complaine that they shall sustaine exceedinge losse by this meanes, wee will hereafter signifie. They say that the Maluchas are within the limits assigned to either king, to witt, y<sup>e</sup> kings of Casteele, & the Portugall, by Pope Alexander y<sup>e</sup> sixt: they say, they are townes, & coutry villages which bring y<sup>e</sup> profits of their kids to y<sup>e</sup> Malachia, Colocutea & Cochinean marts, as generally it falleth out with country men, who bring such necessary things as country men nourish and maintaine at home, to sell the at cities & townes. But we haue found y<sup>e</sup> Maluchas haue bin vsurped by them, because it is without that line, diuidinge frō East to West, from either Pole. That it best knowne vnto your Holines, because this question was often discussed before you, One thing remaineth which will fill y<sup>e</sup> Readers with great admiration, especially those, who thinke they haue y<sup>e</sup> wandering courses of the Heauens familiar before hand. When this ship came backe to the Gorgodes, y<sup>e</sup> saylers thought it had bin Wednesday, but found it to be Thursday. Whereupō they say that in that wandering course they lost one day, in that space of 3. yeeres. But I replied to them your preists peraduenture deceiued you by omitting y<sup>e</sup> day either in their Celebrations, or in y<sup>e</sup> account of howers. They answered me againe what doe you think it possible that all, especially wise men, & wel experienced could fall into so soule an Error? it is a common ease, to keep a ready account of y<sup>e</sup> dayes and monthes, because many had with the bookes of the computatio of howers, & knewe very well what was dayly to be accounted. In the howers especially of the blessed Virggin, to whom we prostrated our selues every momēt, desiring her protectio: in these, &

Golden Chersonesus.

They arrive at the Hesperian Gorgodes.

The direct compass of the earth is less than 8. thousand leagues.

The Maluchas to belong to the King of Spaine.

The issue of a day in this voyage a strange thinge to be considered.

in the commemoration of the dead, many spent  $\frac{1}{2}$  vacant time. Direct your thoughts therefore another way: without all questiō wee lost a day. These remember this, others other things, & diuers diuers things, but all agree, that they had lost aday. I added moreouer: my friends, remember  $\frac{1}{2}$  yeere following after your departure (which was 1520) was leape yeere, least peraduenture you were deceiued thereby. They affirmed, that they gaue Pigmean February 29 dayes that yeere, and forgot not the leape yeere at  $\frac{1}{2}$  Kalendes of March. These 18 persons which remained, were altogether vnlearned: so they say all, one after another. Being much disquieted and troubled with that care, I conferred with Gasper Costarinus (a man not meanelly instructed in all kinde of literature) who then was Embassadour with the Emperour for his famous commonwealt of Venico. Whereby wee know (discussing the matter with diuers arguments) that this strange report, neuer heard before, might very well be, after this manner. This Castelline ship set sayle frō  $\frac{1}{2}$  llads of Gorgodes towards  $\frac{1}{2}$  West, which way also the Sunne goeth. Thence it came to passe, that hauinge followed the Sunne, they had euery day longer, according to the quantity of the way they made, wherefore hauinge perfited the Circle, which the Sunne performeth in 24. howers towards the West, it cōsumed & spent one whole day, therefore it had fewer dayes by one, then they who for that space of time, kept one certaine place of aboade. But if the Portugall Fleet, which sayleth towards the East, should returne againe vnto the Gorgodes, continuing their course vnto the East, by this way and Nauigatiō, now first found & discouered to mortall men, no man wold doubt seeing they shuld haue shorter dayes, hauing perfited  $\frac{1}{2}$  Circle, but that 24. whole howres shuld remaine vnto the ouer & aboue, and so one whole day, wherefore they should reckon more by one: and so if either flecte, to witt, the Castellane and the Portugall, had set sayle the same day from the Gorgodes, and the Castellane had sayled towards the West, and the Portugalles had towards the East, turninge sterne to sterne, and had returned to the Gorgodes, by these diuers wayes, in the same space of time, and at  $\frac{1}{2}$  same moment, if that day had bin Thursday to the Gorgodes, it had bin Wednesday to the Castellanes, to whom a whole day was consumed into longer dayes. But to the Portugalles, to whom by aborteninge of the dayes, one day remained ouer & aboue the same day should be Friday. Let Philosophers more deeply discuss this matter, we yeld these reasons for the present. We haue now spoken sufficiently of the Parallel compassed, and of the llands nourishinge spices, and of a day lost, and of strange countryes. Now let vs at length come to the affaires of Tenustitan, which I will shortly touch in as few wordes as I can, because I am now grieuous, and troublesome to my selfe through so great a labour, by reason of fidinge old age in whose greedy talons your Holines left me almost faintinge: which indenoureth with speedy flight to thrust me downe to that more greedy and deuouringe gulfe of his crooked aged Sister, as if I should more quietly walke through the pathes of this cloyster.

#### The Eight Chapter.

1511.

OF the casting of our men out of the Laky city Tenustitan, or by what meanes, after so great an ouerthrow through the ayde of the borderinge enemies of the Tenustitanes, they began to gather strength againe, hath bin sufficiently spoken: Let vs now therefore at one cast passe ouer to  $\frac{1}{2}$  neighbourhood of  $\frac{1}{2}$  lake omittinge meane actions. In a city of 8. thousande houses (but consistinge of vnmeasurable suburbs reaching euen to the lake 18. leagues frō Tascalteca) called Tazucuo, Cortes with a mighty army settled his aboade. The Tazucucan citizens taught by the example of their neighbours, durst not deny him, least they should be made a praye. Cortes had left shippwrights in Tascalteca, to make 13. Bergantines (as we mentioned before) while he by warring, subdued the borderinge enemies round about. As soone as hee first settled his army in Tazucuo, he commaunded the Ioyntes of  $\frac{1}{2}$  Bergantines to be brought, which were carried boorde by boorde, or peece by peece vpon the shoulders of  $\frac{1}{2}$  Tascaltecas and Guazuzingi, neither did they vnwillingly vndertake  $\frac{1}{2}$  labour & paines, so cruell is their hatred against the Tenustitanes that they account all trauaile & paines whatsoeuer delightfull, directed to the destruction of the Tenustitanes. Behold a thinge not easy for the people of Rome to haue done, whē their estate most flourish-

An Excellent  
and very probable  
reason for  
the loss of a  
day.

Cortes settled in  
Tazucuo a great  
city.

The Tazucucan  
citizens came the  
Bergantines vpon  
their shoulders  
to Tazucuo.

rished. From Tascuco to  $\frac{1}{2}$  lake runneth a small river, each bank where of is fenced with houses standing together on a row with orchards lying betwene the. In the meane season while the joyntes of the Bergantines were set together, and whilst the oares, and all the flagges were making, he commanded a Trench to be cut frō Tascuco to the lake, for the space of 8 Italian miles and 4 fathom deepe somewhere, most strongly fortified with their bulwarkes; which might receive a River, to carry the Bergantines to the lake and within the space of 50. dayes with 8000. continuall pioners of the meane of that province, he finished the worke. But when both the Trenches were ended and the Bergantines framed, and set together, he burned and destroyed many cities both on the lande and standing vpon lakes, whereby hee was molested when he fledd away: so that the Tenustitans durst not now peepe out, nor ioyne battayle with our menn in open field. The 13. Bergantines beinge launched in the lake by that admirable worke of cuttinge of a Trench, the Tenustitans sawe their present ruine and destruction: yet forced by necessity they tooke courage. Understandinge of the comming of the Bergantines into the Lake, an huge multitude of boates in an instant of time, with armed warriors came speedily rowing to the Bergantines, they say, that in a trice, there were 5. thousand present, which also the citizens reported after the victory obtained: the boates comming towards them, by force of the ordinance planted in the prowes, and sides of the Bergantines were dispersed euen as little clouds by fierce winds. So wandering and routing in the open Sea of the lake, they shrewdly molested and vexed the city with the Bergantines. In a few dayes space Cortes tooke away from the city their fresh river waters, their conduits beinge torne asunder by Christopher Olit: and that no provision of victuall might be brought from any place to them that were besieged, hee compassed the city with three Armyes: with one from Tascuco, by Astapalapa, which he destroyed vterly, because it was more mighty then the rest, & at that time the ancient seate of Mutezumas brother. Cortes himselfe had the command thereof with more then threescore thousand warriors, as they say: for many more then he desired both for the hope of booty, and liberty, came now flocking to him from all the provinces: so that Cortes himselfe kept the bridge which came from Astapalapa to the Princely city, whereof mention was made before. And fighting by little and little the enemy withdrawing themselves, by stronge hande, and by force of the ordinance, and the horse before and by the helpe and fauor of the Bergantines on the sides, hee got the bridge as far as the Castle, whereof wee speake in the meetinge of the Kinge Mutezuma, with our menn, where wee described that Castle to be fortified with two townes, buttinge vpon two bridges, which are ioyned vpon the arches thereof. In  $\frac{1}{2}$  place Cortes pitched his Campe, & by  $\frac{1}{2}$  meanes possessed  $\frac{1}{2}$  entrace of either bridge. On  $\frac{1}{2}$  contrary he commanded other capes to be placed for defence of another greate bridge on  $\frac{1}{2}$  North, ouer which he gaue the charge to Gonzalus Sandouanus, a soldier to execute iustice which the Spaniard called Alguazil. And ouer  $\frac{1}{2}$  third army incamped on another side of the city hee committed the charge to Petrus Aluiradus. They say, that those 3. armyes consisted of one hundred & twenty thousand soldiers. So the miserable city compassed on euery side with Enemies, indured extreme want of all things: and was no lesse wasted and consumed through the ambition of a fewe (whose greedy desire of souerainty drew the vnhappy people to that misery) then it was afflicted by the enemy. The people might easily haue bin perswaded to subiect their necke vnto our yoke, but that the kinges sisters sonne who vsurped the kingdome, and the pride of his Nobles, withstoode it. For 70. dayes together both before and behinde it was continually vexed & molested with incursions, and assaules. Within the streets of the city it selfe, our men returninge to the Campe toward the Evening they write, that 500. and sometimes a thousand were slaine, at euery encounter: the more cruell the slaughter was so much the more plentifully and daintily the Guazuzing, Tascaltecanes, and the rest of the auxiliary provincials, supped, who vse to bury their enemies which fall in battaile in their belly, neither durst Cortes forbid it. They say, but fewe of our menn, alwayes were slaine. Therefore both by the sword, & famine the greater part of the citizens was consumed: Our menn for the most part entering the city fightinge, founde heapes of dead men in the

A trench cut to  
conuey a river  
to an admirable  
worke.

A multitude of  
boates went to  
stop the Spaniards  
before the  
city, by the ordinance.

The Bridge was.

Cortes his 3. armies  
consisted of 200000.  
Soldiers at this  
siege.

streets, who as they sayd, dyed with hunger and thirst. They destroyed many of those excellent buildings when they thrust the Enemyes out. Cortes was once circumvented and surpris'd by the Enemy vpon one of the bridges, but was preserued by a certaine familiar freinde of his, called Francisus Olea, who brandishing his sword against the enemy cutt of both his handes at one blowe who pressed vpon his maister Cortes hauing taken him. But with y vnhappy destiny of y Preseruer who (after he had giue him his horse) was slaine. At length it was now reported to our men, in what part the king had hidd himselfe with his familiars, and Princes. Cortes vnderstanding the matter, with the Brigantines, scetheth vpon a little flecte, of Boates discouered by Spies (wherin the Kinge wandred in, certaine secret cornery of the lake) and tooke them all. The Kinge being now subject to the power of Cortes, touchinge the dagger wherewith Cortes was girded, sayth, behold the weapon, wherewith thou maist, and oughtest to kill me, I haue done what laye in me; so that now my life is become hatefull & loathsome vnto me. Cortes comforted him, and sayde, he had done that which became a couragious Kinge. But yet hee ledd him with him into the Continent, and deliuered him to his men to bee kept in safe custody. These things being done, so greate a city vanquished, and the people thereof almost destroyed, hee subdued all those Nations to the Emperours Iurisdiction. Two men came vnto me, of them which Spaine calleth Fidalgi, who had not least to doe in all matters, both in searchinge out the secrets of the Prouinces, and also in all the conflicts, the one called Diecus Ordassias, and the other Benecides: who sayd that Cortes (at his pleasure) created a King in Tenusitan, who was of the blood royall and commanded him to seate himselfe there, to the intent that city beinge now desolate for want of resort might vnder the shadowe of a king be stored with people againe, otherwise so huge a city had remained desolate without inhabitants. But hee himselfe impatient of ease determined by Messengers to search out other strage countreyes. High mountaines to the South laye within viewe, but what lay beyond them, hee commandeth diligently to bee sought: and it was told him, that another Sea lay on the South side of these mountaines, as I wrote in the Decades, of the South Sea, discouered from Darien, by Vasquez Nunnez. There are six Cities there whereof (they say) the least is much greater then our Vallidoleit that famous corporation: one whereof is called Teph, the second Mechnaca, the third Guaxaca, the fourth Fuesco, the fift Tequantepceh, to the sixt they giue no name: and it is written in a particular letter out of the volum of the Affairs of Tenusitan, that they vnderstoode in the South Sea that those Ilands ingendringe spices, gold, & precious stones were not farre distant from that shore. But the cities that lye in lakes, and one the sides of lakes, are called by these names. Saltuar, Tenauica, Tenusitan, Scapuzaleo, Tacuba, Capulzpech, Culucan, of that name two, Guichilobusco; Suchimilco, Quitagua, Astapalappa, Mesechico, Coluacaa, Tezucco. Of these two, Benecides, lately returned from his companions, one of the two ships set from Cortes. In them they bringe gifts sent from Cortes, which they say are much more precious and excellent, the those which were carryed and brought from the Emperours Maiesty, that yeeere hee went out of Spaine vnto the Belgæ, which your Holines sawe: they valew these riches about two hundred thousand Ducates in estimation, but those shippes are not yet come vnto vs. They stayd in the Ilandes Cassiterides, called the Azores by the Portugales who are Lords thereof, least they should haue fallen into the hands of the French Pyrates, as another did the yeeere before, comminge from Hispaniola and Cuba, with a great masse of gold of seuenty two thousand Ducates, and six hundred waight of precious pearles of eight ounces to the pounce, & with 2000. sugar bushes (a bribe is called of the Spaniard arraua) of 25. pouid waight, of 6. ounces to the pounce. Besides many brought many particular things: all which became a Pyrates pray. An armed flecte was sent to waite those two safe frō the Azores. At the time that I wrote this they were not yet brought hether. Those ships brought (as Benecides sayth) three Tygers brought vp of little ones in severall cages, or grates, made of longe rafters, two in one of the shippes, and the third in the other: in that, where two were carryed, one of the cages was a little battered and broken by the rowling and shaking of the shipp by tempestuous and foule weather, so

Cortes surpris'd  
and by his freinde  
Oleas rescued at  
a close rate.

The king taken.  
Hee speakes to  
Cortes.

The city was  
and those na-  
tions all subdued  
to the Emperour.

Cortes created  
a King out of the  
blood royall in  
Tenusitan.

The South sea  
& cities.

1 Teph  
2 Mechnacas  
3 Guaxaca  
4 Fuesco  
5 Tequantepch  
6 Sanct name.  
Cities in lakes  
lying in lakes.

20000 bushes  
sent to the king  
of Spaine.

3 Tygers.

It made way for the Tyger to come out. The Tyger escaping by night ran about the ship with noe lesse rage and furye, then if shee had neuer seene any man: shee runneth about rauinge euery where & shooke & seised vpon 7. men, from one shee tare an arme, from another a legge, from others the shoulders, slewe twoe and leaping vpon one who fled from the mast of the ship, shee caught him: and being halfe dead yet rescued by his companions, he perished not: All they that were in the shippe ran vnto her with lauelines, swords and all kinde of weapons, and hauinge giuen her many woundes, they forced her to leape downe into the Sea, and slew her fellow in the cage, least the like mischaunce should befall them by her. The third which is in the other shipp, Beneuides saith, is brought. In y<sup>e</sup> thicke woods of these Moutaines, great multitudes of Tygers, Lions, and other wild beasts liue. Being demanded with what foode they are maintained, he sayth they pray vpon hartes, Robackes, deere, hares, and conyes, & many other milde creatures which liue there. Two men had the charge of those shippes who were Captaines of the warres in those countreyes, to witt, Alfonso Auila, and Antonius Quignonus: these men bringe the Kings part giuen him by the people, to be deliuered vnto him: But Iohannes Ribera hath the charge of Cortes his part, who was his Secretary, & companion of all his labours from the beginning: and by the decree of the Kings Councell of India, the Emperour confirmed y<sup>e</sup> government of Noua Hispania to Cortes, who gaue it that name. But Diecus Velasquez is both thrust out of the Governmēt of Cuba, & nere there about, because it is decreed, that he did not well in sendinge forces against Cortes, the Councell of Hispaniola forbiddinge the same. Newes was lately brought, that fiftene of the shippes of the French Pyrates were seene wandringe at Sea, vpon hope to gett these shippes, as they tooke another: But by foule and tempestuous weather, they were transported into Affrica, and most of them drowned.

The Govern-  
ment of Noua  
Hispaniola con-  
ferred to Cortes.  
Velasquez dis-  
posed from the  
Government of  
Cuba.

## The Ninth Chapter.

I haue hetherto declared, what Cortes, what y<sup>e</sup> fellow soldiers of Cortes, and the officers of the Kings Magistrates, the Treasurer, Auditor, and Distributor (whom the Spāiard calleth Factor) both writte while they remained, and also reported vnto me by word of mouth returning: Wherein I haue omitted many circumstances, least through the repetition of small and trifling matters, I should become tedious and contemptible: Let vs now report somewhat from Darien by the letters of Petrus Arias Governour of y<sup>e</sup> supposed Continēt, & by his Eldest sonne Diecus Arias who returned fro his father, and then, many things lately vnderstoode concerning the affaires of Hispaniola, and Cuba Fernandina: and this first. In the supposed Continent b. Colonies are planted, vpon the North shoare of the country Sancta Maria antiqua, which towne we call Darien: because that towne (as in the former Decades I spoke at large) is seated vpon the Banck of the Riuer Darien: why they chose a place there, & why they gaue the place that name which of Zemacus the King thereof was called Zemacus, I then sufficiently declared. The second Colony called Acta is situated toward the West, Acta and 30 leagues distant from Darien: 40. leagues fro Acta standeth an house seated on the shoare, to the West, called Nomen Dei, of a Hauen thereof so called, by Colonius who first discovered it. At the South shoare are Panaman & Natan (accenting the last syllable,) their country names not being changed. The third is very broad in some place, but chiefly on y<sup>e</sup> coast, where that great riuer Maragnonus runneth, whereof I haue spoken at large in the former Decades where shewing y<sup>e</sup> causes why so great abundance of waters could be conioyned in one channel, among other, I sayd, that country was very large from North to South, whereby through the great distance of place many riuers might be ingeired, which might fall into this one, to be conueyed to y<sup>e</sup> Northerne Ocean Sea. So (most holy father) it was said y<sup>e</sup> I had prophesied, when y<sup>e</sup> passage was discovered. Fro those Northerne shoares, famous for the fall of Maragnonus (where I sayde y<sup>e</sup> Kings are called Chacones) y<sup>e</sup> land is extended to y<sup>e</sup> antarcticke to y<sup>e</sup> straight beyond the Equinoctiall, 54. degrees some deduct two whereof in the discourse of the seeking out of the Iland of Spices I haue sufficiently spoken. Nere vnto that straight, winter shut vp that flecto of b. shippes, through y<sup>e</sup> extremity of cold, almost

Santa Maria  
antiqua  
Darien.

Acta.

Nomen Dei.

Panama and  
Natan.

A learned con-  
jecture of the  
largeness of a  
Continent.

for our first summer monethes (as we haue already spoken) when the Sun departed from them vnto vs. From thence ariseth the admiration of the prodigious river Maragnonus. How then should the land be very broad there; which elsewhere is content with narrow straightes of land? but especially from the Colony called Nomen Dei, to the South shore, and the Haueen Panama, are 17. leagues distance, yet by vnpassable mountaines; and inaccessible, by reason of the huge rockes, and exceeding thicke woodes, neuer meddled with in any age: so that those desert places are the dennes and habitation of Leopardes, Tygers, Lyons, Beares, & Apes of many shapes, & other monsters. Wonderfull things are reported of these wilde beasts. They say the Tygers doe no more feare to meete Trauellers, then if they mette with a little whoelp: If they finde any man walking alone, there is no remedy but hee must needs be torne into a thousand peeces and eaten. Therefore they chiefly beware of Tygers, which by experience they finde much more cruell then Lyons: There are many valleyes of most fruitfull land, and many sides of those mountaines, which remaine desert, without any inhabitant, by reason of the Saunge and wild beasts, which otherwise would be replenished with store of people. But it is a pleasant thing to bee reported, touching diuers Apes, and dangerous also. By those mountaines through which Petrus Arias now Governour, writeth hee hath made a passage, and daily doth proceede more and more, in breakinge the stones in the craggy rocks, and burning the thicke woods, the ringleaders of the Apes, when they perceived any of our troopes of men marching (for being but a few; much lesse being alone durst they attempt any such thing) assembling a common multitude of diuers kindes, runne forth to meete them and pursuing our men which way soeuer they march, with horrible outcries, leaping from tree to tree, and deride them with a thousand scurrilities, & a thousand mocking gestures, especially those that haue tayles: and oftentimes make shew as if they would assaile our men by troopes and companyes. But as soone as they are come downe to the body of the trees, and see the arrows, & harquebuse shot (which they haue sometimes felt) ready to be leuelled & directed against the, they make back againe as swift as the winde to the toppes of the trees from thence vtering their railing complaints they gnash with their teeth in threatening manner. They say their dexterity & agility is such, that they know how to avoide arrowes shot at their bodies, & take the in their hand, as if they voluntarily received the, being reached vnto the. Yet they haue not so learned to shift & avoide the arquebuse shot, wherewith they slew many, peradventure of the younger sort, who were not so skillfull & cunning: But when they see any one of their company fall headlong wounded, & take vp by our men from the ground they thunder & fill the eyes with such a violent, & horrible noyse that it exceedeth the roarings of a thousand Lions & as many Tygers. But one thing is worthy the hearing: Euery Ape when they are nowe about to chime the trees; caryeth as many stones as shee can beare in one hande, and some in her mouth, and thereby fight with stones against such as passe by, whensoever our men cease shooting the vpon the archer, shee shrewdly bruised his face, and (as they say) brake his teeth out of his head: But yet the Munkie was punished for her straunge stratagem, for at what tyme the stone fell downe vpon the archer, the arrowe ascended vnto the Ape, and hauing slayne her; they cate her for a daintie dish, for so great hunger oppressed them, that they hadde eaten toads, or any other worse meate. We haue spoken sufficiently of fourefooted beasts: now let vs speake somewhat of them that are two footed: for that two footed nation, is almost like those fourefooted beasts. There is a mightie and courageous king called Vtracus, in the borders of the Colonie of Natan towards the South, whom Petrus Arias the Governour could neuer persuade to intertayne amity and peace, and therefore prepared to master him by warre. But this king trusting in his power and authoritie, is reported to haue answered the Embassadors proudly who came to treat concerning peace, and presumed, smied after his maner, by incursions to invade the Colony of the Christians who inhabit Natan. For they haue many kinds of darts in those countries, wherewith they fight a farre

Of the crueltie  
in ferocities of  
Tygers in those  
countreys.

A pleasant story  
of apes.

Scorpion an in-  
strument of warre  
like a Scorpion  
in those small  
countreys.

Vtracus mightie  
and courageous  
King.

of, and broad wooden swords burnt in the fire, wherewith they encounter hand to hand. They haue bowes also, with the ends of their arrowes either of bone, or hardened in the fyr. In those countries there is great plenty of the fruite of Coccus, wherof I made mention before. Where especially in the South coast, the flowing Sea washeth the broad neighbouring playnes: of the which, they say, one is overflowed by the flood for the space of two leagues, and becometh dry againe with the ebbe. In those places (they say) those trees grow and increase of their owne nature: and not elsewhere, vnlesse the yong and tender plants be transported thence. Some thinke that the flowing of the Sea brings the seeds of those trees thither fro vnknowne countryes, from other countryes of the Indies, where they naturally growe: they say, they are brought to Hispaniola and Cuba as I sometimes sayd of the trees which beare Cassia-Fistula, and from the Ilandes to the Continent; vntill they come to those Southerne partes. But in the Ilandes by the wonderful purpose and worke of nature, another tree groweth, (whiche I know not yet whether it growe in the Continent or no) which hath leaues whereon a man may write, besides that tree wherof I made mention in the Decades. This tree compared with that, differeth much: which wee will describe, when wee shall speake of those Ilandes. Now let vs returne vnto the affaires of the Continent. From Panama Colonie of the South Sea, they descended with shippes built in that Sea, so farre to the West, as they thought they hadde attained to the backside of Iucatan. For argument and prooffe thereof Gil. Gonzalus the Admirall of that flecte, and his Consortes say, that they light on men appparelled after the same maner, with holes pierced in their lips, wearing goulden or silver iewelles about their neckes, beset with precious stones, such as those were, wherof I made report in my 4 Decade to Pope Leo, when mention was made of the affaires of Iucatan, and of the presents which were brought. They write, that on the right hande they founde suche a furious and raging Sea, that they suppose there was a narrow strayght there betweene the Continent, and Iucatan; though not yet discovered: but durst not hazarde themselves in such a raging sea, because the shippes, by reason of the long space of time they had sayled along those shores, were halfe rotten, and eaten through with wormes. Hauing repayred and amended their shippes, they promise to returne. In that voyage Gil. Gonzalus, and his Consortes tolde Petrus Arias, that about an hundred leagues from the Colony of Panama, they found the Vast Sea of a blacke colour, in which fishes swim of the bignesse of Dolphines, melodiously singing with sweet harmony, as is reported of the Syrenes, and after the same maner; inuiting to sleepe. Heere menne of meane spirit and conceit will wonder, and say it is a thing impossible. I will therefore discourse the matter a little with these men. Do we not read that the Erythrean gulfe is red, from whence it hath the name of the red sea. Whether it be by the nature of the water, or whether it happen by the redde sandes, or reuerberation of the red rockes on the shore, the Sea appeareth red: who therefore would make nature so dull, to take away her power that shee could not ingender blacke sandes also, and blacke rocks, which elsewhere might make the waters seeme blacke? But concerning the singing and melody, I my selfe also thinke it to bee a fable, albeit wise and discrete menne report it: yet notwithstanding in their excuse, is it not knowne that the Trytones are very shrill? they haue bene sometimes heard, and haue bene found dead cast vp vpon the shore, in the West Spanish Ocean: & doth not a frogge croake vnder water? Why should it then be wondered at, of other Vocall fishes also be founde, neuer heard of before? Let every manne beleeeve as hee pleaseth: I thinke nature able to doe great matters. All the ryuers of the supposed Continent are full of Crocodiles: in the Ryuers they are hurtfull, and dangerous, but not on the Lande, as those of the Riuier Nilus are. They founde one dead of two and fourtie fecte long, and seuen foote broad betweene the lawes. Petrus Arias his sonne being returned from his Father, sayth, that those trees are now found, of the plankes and tymler wherof, if shippes bee built, they might bee freede from danger of those mischievous wormes which gnawe holes through them. He sayth also that the wood being brought into the kitchen, could scarce bee burned, by reason of the exceeding moysture thereof. Now let vs come to the commodities. That lande hath many Gold mines:

Coccus.

A great ebbe.

A tree on  
whose leaues  
a man may  
write.A furious and  
raging sea.The blacke Sea.  
The Syrenes.

Crocodiles here.

mines:

Gold mines.

mines: but let Petrus Arias, and the rest pardon me, who haue gotten gold, by the sweate of the poore miserable Inhabitautes. That whiche by the assistance of your Holynesse hath bene often attempted, is nowe established and decreede in our Senate of the Indian affayres: to witte, that the Indians shoulde euery where bee free, and applie themselves to tillage of the ground, and Christian discipline. But if any, through hope of obtaining aunc of our commodities, voluntarily offer themselves they might lawfully haue them as mercenaryes, & hired seruants. We haue sufficiently spoken of the Continent: now let vs speake somewhat of the landes. In Hispaniola nothing is changed. The Senate is the same, from whiche all those tractes and countries receiue their Lawes. Whatsoeuer thinges are sowed or planted there, increase daily more and more. There are great multitudes of

No small proof  
of good land  
by this growth  
of beanes.

horses, swine, and herds of cattell there. The like also is in the rest. A yong mare colt conceiuethe the tenth moneth after shee is foaled, and hath scarce brought forth a colt when she desireth and taketh the horse again. They liue contented with their countrey bread made of Iucca, and Maizium: wines are brought home vnto them from Vandalia, although

Vineyardes.

they haue vineyardes in very many places: they say, they growe wonderfully: and become so ranke, that they spend their vigor and strength in the leaues and branches, and little in the clusters, and die a fewe yeeres after the planting. They say the same of corne, that it groweth to the height of canes, with exceeding long eares, yet that the graynes vanish to nothing, before they be ripe; for the most part: and that there is more plentifull store of other thinges in those landes, then elsewhere. Sugar presses are euery yeere increased: Now lette vs speake of the tree which yeeldeth parchement, which is very like a date tree; the leaues whereof are so great, that euery one being spread vpon the head, may defende the

A tree which  
yieldeth parch-  
ment.

whole body of a man from a showre of raime, as if he cast a cloath cloake vpon his backe. This is but a smal matter, lette vs speake of that which is admirable: those leaues which cleaue to the tree no otherwise then the Date doth to her tree, the leafe plucked vppe by the roote, whereby it is ioyned to the tree (for the leafe you lay holde on is easily taken from the tree by thrusting the poynt of a knife to the bottoome of the stalke) in the inner rinde thereof containing the parchement, a little white skinnie is found, like to the white of an Egge: whiche is pulled away, as the skinne is slayed from a sheepe new killed, and is taken whole from the bark, not much lesse than a sheepes, or a goates skin of parchement: whiche all those people vse, as if they hadde gotten parchement it selfe: and they say it is no lesse tough and strong. They cattie that parchement with sissers, so muche

The tree Yagua.

paucely as serueth for the present necessitie of writing. This tree is called Yagua: the fruites thereof is lyke to an Olive, it fatteth swine, and is not so conuenient for menne. But howe they vse the benefite of the other leafe which may bee written vpon, differing from this thinne skinnie, wee haue sufficiently spoken in his place. There is another Tree whiche groweth in the cliftes of Rockes, and not in a fatte soyle, and it is called Pythaya: the fruites is sower mixed with sweet, as yee see in the Soure sweete Africain apple, called Pomegranate: the fruites thereof is as bigge as an Orange, of a red colour within, and without. But the fruites of the Tree called Mamcia, in the landes is no bigger then a small Melon, but in the Continent, not much lesse the a great one. This fruites nourisheth three small creatures somewhat greater, then a nutte, for preservation onely of their kind. Nowe let me speake a little of the Pepper of the landes, and of the Continent.

Pepper of the  
same sort.

They haue woodes full of fruites whiche bring forth Pepper, I call it pepper, although it be no pepper, because it hath the strength and Aromaticall tast and sauour of pepper, nor is that graine lesse esteemed then pepper, they call it Axi, accenting y last sillable, & it exceedeth the height of Poppey. Grains or berries of them are gathered like those of Iquiper, or sirre tree, but not altogether so great: there are two sortes of that: grayne, some say fine: one of them is halfe as long againe as the length of a mans finger, it is sharper, and biteth more then pepper, the other is rounde, no greater then pepper. But this consisteth of a thinne skinnie, and certayne substantiall, and animall partes, which spruce, haue a hottie kinde of sharpnesse and biting. The thirde is not biting, yet aromaticall, which if we vsed, we should not neede Caucasian pepper: that which is sweete, and pleasant

pleasant they call Boniatum, the thinne sort they call Caribe, because it is sharpe and strong, and from thence they call the Canibales Caribes, because they confesse them to be strong, and cruel. There is another kinde in these Ilandes, the dewe whereof being touched, a manne is infected as if he had taken poyson. If any mah with fixed eye beholde that tree, he looseth the sight of his eyes, and presently swelleth like one that hath the dropsie. There are two other trees, the woode and leanes whereof being set on fire, kill onely with the fume, if the woode of any one of them beeing but a little kindled, be carryed about the house or lodging. It is an others poyson, if any sucke in, the fume of the leafe by the nostrils. A certayne priest told mee of a cruell and mischievous act, who sixe times sayled from the Continent to Cuba and Hispaniola, that long voyage by sea going three times, and returning as often, his name was Benedictus Martinez a man of good sort. This was he, who first came to Barchiuona to make report of Iucatan, and the rest of those bordering countreys. He sayth that a certayne man called Madronus a citizen of the towne of Albazet in the Country Spartaria, hadde by an ancient custome, a certayne King with his subjects at his commande, vnder his subiection to digge golde out of the Mines, in a place called S. Iames: in short time, that mine of gold was found by chance. This king with his Miners, gathered for his Temporary Maister 9000. Castellanes of gold. Now it was decreede in our Kings Senate, that some largesse, of our commodities, shoulde bee giuen to enerie one departing from their labour, to witte, a cappe, a stomacher, or a shirt, a casocke, or a glasse, or such lyke. The king supposed hee should haue had some fatte larges from his maister, because that in so short a time he hadde founde so great a Masse of Golde. Madronus dealt more strictly with him then he ought: whereupon the King conceiued such displeasure, and anger, that calling those Miners into an house, to the number of ninty siue, he thus debateth with them. My worthy companions & friends why desire wee to liue any longer vnder so cruell seruitude? lette vs nowe goe vnto the perpetuall seate of our Ancestors: for we shall there haue rest from these intollerable cares and grieuauances which we indure vnder the subiection of the vnthankful. Go yee before, I will presently followe you. Hauing spoken this, he helde whole handfulls of those leaues which deprive life, prepared for the purpose: and giueth euery one part thereof beeing kindled, to sucke vp the fume: who obeyed his command. The King, and a chiefe kinsman of his, a wise and prudent man, reserued the last place for themselves, to take the fume. The whole pauement of the Hall was now couered with dead carcases: so that an eager conflict arose betwene those two that were liuing, whether of them should kill himselfe first. The king vehemently vrged that his companion should first dispatch himselfe: but his companion saith he wil follow him, but not goe before. At length the king made riddance of himselfe first. His copanion through the loue of sweete life, deriding the king, and those other fooles, refused to follow, & coming out from thence, reported to our men what had happened. Hee further sayth, that much about that tyme, another more horrible accident fell out in the Prouince called the Princes prouince, one of the city captains called Olandus had a Cubensian mayden the daughter of a king: the captayne suspecting (though she were with childe by him) that she dealt abroad, fastened her to two wooden spits, not to kill her, but to terrifie her, and set her to the fire, and commaunded her to bee turned by the officers: the mayden stricken with feare through the cruelty thereof, and strange kinde of torment, gaue vp the ghost. The king her father vnderstanding the matter, tooke thirtie of his men with him, and went to the house of the Captayne who was then absent, and slew his wife whom he had maryed after that wicked act committed, and the women who were companions of the wife, and her seruants euery one: then shutting the dore of the house, and putting fire vnder it, he burnt himselfe, and all his companions that assisted him, together with the Captaynes deade family, and goods. Hee reporteth also a fearefull story of another mayde. This mayde being deflowred of a Spanish Mulettoer, went home, and declared what had happened, and told her parents that she would therefore kil her selfe, it booted not to comfort her. She tooke the iuice of lucca, which if it be taken rawe, is poyson, if boyled, is vsed for milke: the force of y

Boniatum.  
Caribe.

A kind of pepper tree that bloudeth the beholders.

Other strange reports of the poyson tree.

A tragical tale of barbarous cruelty.

A veritable and Roma like set of an Indian mayd.

poyson

poysd was not such, that it would kill her: yet notwithstanding she resolved to end her life, by any means whatsoever. The next day, shee sayd shee would goe wash her selfe at a ryuer neere adioyning: for it is the manner with them to wash themselves twice every day: shee founde a cruell way of reuenge for her selfe: shee bent downe a little tree standing by the ryuers side, and brooke it to the height of her heade, and sharpened the point of the tree as well as she could. Then getting vpp into a greater tree neere vnto it, shee thrust the point of the tree into her selfe, where shee was deflowered, and remayned spytted, euen as a kiddie to bee roasted at the kitchen fire. Another mayde also, a feyre dayes after, determined to finish the miseries of her life, who brought as a companion with her, the maid seruant of this Priest, of like yeeres to her selfe, and easilie perswaded her, that by her example, shee would goe with her vnto their auncesters, where they should leade a quiet and peaceable life: binding therefore the girdles, wherewith they were girt, to the boughes of a tree, & fastening them with a knot about their necks, they cast themselves down from the tree, & so by hanging themselves, they obtayned their desires. They report many things of such like matters. I determine therefore to vphold this last leafe with a giant-like discourse, to backe and defende those reports, like that fearefull supporting Atlas. Diacus Ordacius, of whom I made mention before, diligently viewed many secret and solitary places of those Countries, and appeared their Kinges: especially the King of that Province, where the Money tree groweth, where he learned howe that Money tree was planted, and nourished, as I haue declared in his place. This Diacus Ordacius founde a peece of the thygh bone of a Giant (in the vault of a Church) broken off, and halfe consumed through long continuance of time: whiche thygh bone, the Licentiate Aithonius, a Lawyer, & one of the Counsell of Hispaniola brought to the cite Victoria, not long after your Holiness departed thence towarthes Rome. I hadde it at home for certayne dayes: it was fife spannes long, from the huckle bone vnto the knee, and the proportion answered the length. After this, they that were sent by Cortes to the Montanous Countreys of the South; reported that they hadde found a Country inhabited with these men, and for proof thereof, they are sayd to haue brought manie of the ribbes of those dead men. Concerning other occurrences, which happen among vs, your Holiness is often aduertised by those that are neere about the Emperour, and therefore none of those matters are to bee required of me, whiche disquiet the afflicted mindes of Christian Princes intangled in mutuall secret hatred, and displeasure, to the benefit of the Mahumetanes, and losse, & hinderance of our Religion. Nowe therefore I bid your Holines farewell, before whose keete prostrating my selfe, I dedicate my most humble, and deuoted seruice.

Thou hast  
Mythes sayd  
last of leading  
Apes in hell.

Of the thygh  
bone of a Giant.

A country  
inhabited with  
Giants.

#### The tenth Chapter.

EVEN as the heads of Hydra smitten of are seuen times doubled, so vnto me deliuering one discourse, many other arise. I thought I should nowe at length haue concluded the affaires of Tenustitan: when behold through new tidings coming suddenly, & vnexpected, I am compelled to enter into the discourse thereof againe. In one of the 2. shippes which brought the Presents from the Cassiterides, one of the familiar friends of Cortes (neere about him) called Iohannes Ribera, is returned: the other shippe, for feare of the French Pyrates, expecting other subsidiary shippes to conduct her, with the Treasure, whereof, besides the fill due to the Kinges Exchequer, Cortes willingly giueth a parte of the riches gotten by his owne labour, and industry: another part also the rest of his chiefe companions in Armes bestowed. This Ribera bringeth in charge with him, to present the giftes, assigned by Cortes, to the Emperour, in his maisters name, for the rest, those two, who (as I said before, remained in the Cassiterides, with the ships) should offer their presentes. This Ribera is skiffull in the Tenustitan language, and nothing was done all the time of the warres, at the which hee was not present alwayes at his maisters side: who was sent from his maister, many daies after the departure of his companions: from him therefore we may haue a most cleare and apparent reason of all things. Being first demanded of the Originall of the city Tenustitan, and defini-

tion

tion of the name then of the ruine and destruction, and of the present state thereof, and with what forces Cortes maintayned and defended the same. & of many such like things besides: hee saith the Citie was built in the middle of a silte lake. vpon a rocke found there (as we read of that most famous Citie of Venice, seated on a plat of ground appearing in that parte of the Adriaticke Gulfe) to secure themselves from the incursions of the enemy: but the name thereof is deriued from 3. short words. That which seemeth diuine, they call Teu, fruite, they call Nucil, and Titan, they call a thing seated in the water. from whence cometh the name of Temuztitan, that is to say, a diuine fruit seated in the water: for vpon that rocke they founde a naturall tree laden with pleasant fruit (fit to be eaten) greater then our country apples; which yielded desired foode to the first inuentors: wherupon in token of thankfulness, they beare that tree imbrodyered in their Standard, it is like a Mulberry tree, but hath leaues much greener. The Tascaltecan also in their Colours, haue 2. hands ioyned together, kneading of a Cake, for they vvaunt that they haue more fruitful fields of corne, then the rest of the borderers, & from thence the city hath her name: for Tescal is a cake of bread in their language; and Teca, is a Lady, and therefore she is called the Lady of breade. The same also is reported of the inhabitants of the Mountayne which we call Vulcanus, which casteth out smooke. For in their warlike Auncients, they beare a smoking Mountayne, and call the Mountayne it selfe Popocatepech, because Popoca is Smooke, and Tepech, signifieth a Mountayne. A little distant, on the East, standeth another Mountayne neere vnto this, couered all the yeere with Snowe, there are also other Mountaynes laden with Snowe, by reason of the height thereof. Another hill also full of Conies is called Cachutepech, because Cachu is a Conie; and therefore it is called the Mountayne of Conies. The house of their Religion they call Teucle, of Teu; which signifieth God, and Calc, an house. So they define all their matters from the effect: but we shall more curiously search into these things hereafter. He further sayde, that the Citie for the moste parte, was ruined and destroyed with fyre, and sworde, and that but fewe of the chiefe menne, remayned aliyue. In some places hee sayde it remayned whole, and intyre, where anie secrete streete or rowe of houses was free from the furious conflicts; and that the three chiefe Pallaces were woonderfully repayred and amended, the chiefe whereof beeing the house of Mutezum; all menne report to bee so great, that no manne after hee entred into it, was able to find the way out agayne, without a guide, borne, and brought vpp there, as wee reade of the wyndynges; and turnynges, of that fabulous Labyrinth of Minos: in this house, Cortes sayeth hee purposeth to Seate himselfe, and therefore intended first to repayre it. And this manne reporteth, that there are houses of pleasure, built within the Citie; and in the water it selfe, with pleasant and deliyghtful greene plattes of grounde, and not in the Continent as others sayde, where dyuers kindes of souerfooted wilde Beastes, and sundry sorts of fowles &c. enclosed, as I mentioned before. Hee reporteth manie thynges of the Roaryng of Lyons, and of the querulous yellying, and howling of Tygers, Beares, and Woolues, when they were burnt with their houses, and of the miserable spoyle of all those thynges. It will bee long ere those houses bee repayred, and acere built, for they were all of stone from the Foundation, with Turrettes rounde about them, adorned and beautified in manner of a Castle: for seldom doe the Conquerours repayre the ruines of defaced towne, who rather racke twentye stately Cities, and fortified Castles, then erect one particular house; especially, where newe conquests call them away, and the greedy desire of enlarging their dominion hasteneth them to invade other Prouinces. But the common houses themselves as hygh as a maine Girdle, were also built of stone, by reason of the swelling of the Lake through the floodes, or washing flote of the Ryuers falling into it. Vpon those greate Foundations they builde the rest of the house, with Bricke burned, or dried in the Sunne, intermingled with Beames of Tymber: and the Common houses haue but one Floore, or Planchin. They seldom make their abode, or lodge vpon the Grounde, least the dampse thereof through excessive moysture might indanger their desired health. They couer the Roofe of their houses, not with Tyles, but with a certayne kinde of clammye earth, or Claie: for that way or manner of couering is more apt to receiue the Sunne, yet it is supposed to bee consumed in a shorter tyme. But howe they drawe those huge Beames, and Rafteres, which they vse in building

Temuztitan seated at Venice.

An erectiō of the worlde Temuztitan.

As wōlde is that of Temuztitan the Lady of bread.

A kinde of bearing of smokes amongst the Barbarians appeare here. A Mountayne covered all the yeere with snowe.

Teucle: Gods house.

Of the greatness and intricacy of Mutezum his Palace.

of their Houses, considering they haue neyther Oxen, Asses, nor Horses, nor any other beast of burthen, (as hereafter shall bee spoken) weq will nowe declare. The sides of those high Mountaynes are beset with goodly spreading Citron or Lymon Trees, with the which the Voluptuous Romaynes, (after they fell from Contynencie to Ryot) made Tables, bedde-steetes, and other Vessells, for ornamente and furniture of houses: because the Citron Tree perpetually preserueth whasoeuer is boordell with it, from Wormes, and Putrifaction, (as the ancient writers report of the Cedar) and the boordes of that Tree are naturally Flourished with dyuers coloures: imitating the curious art of some ingenious Artist, and the places where Pyne Trees growe are neere adioyning to those flourishing Cytron Trees in all the spacious Woodes. With their Copper Hatchets, and Axes cunningly tempered, they fell those Trees, and hewe them smooth, taking away the chyppes, that they may more easily be drawe. They haue also certayne hearbes, with the which, in steed of broome, & hempe, they make ropes, cordes, and cables: and boaring a hole in one of the edges of the beame, they fasten the rope, then sette their slaues vnto it, like yokes of oxen, and lastly in steede of wheels, putting round blocks vnder the timber, whether it be to be drawn steepe vp, or directly downe the hill, the matter is performed by the neckes of the slaues, the Carpenters onely directing the carriage: After the same manner also, they get all kind of matter fitte for building, and other things apt for the vse of manne, seeing they haue neither oxen, nor asses, or any other four-footed best of burthen. Incredible things are reported of those beames of tymbre, nor durst I repute them, except meanes of great authoritie, and that many, had testified, and affirmed vnto vs, assembled in our Senate, that they had measured many: & that in the cite Tascuco, they sawe one of a hundred and twentie foote long, eight square, bigger then a great Ox, which supported almost the whole Pallace, they affirme that they beheld it, & no man gaue sayeth it: hence we may gather, howe great the industry of these men is. But concerning the woney called Cacao, and of the strength of Cortes to sustaine so great an Empire, he sayth that the money is not changed, nor that it is expedient that it should be altered. And he declareth, that the strength of Cortes consisteth in 40. peeces of ordinance, 200. horse, & 1300. foote, of the which he hath 250. alwayes in a readinesse to man the Brigantines, beating vp and downe the lake day, and night, with their appoynted Commander. Others helpe bee weth it ranging new countries: many haue throughly searched the middle of the Mountaynes from the playne of Tenustitan vnto the South: and from the East vnto the West they finde them verie farre extended. They who attempted the discouery say, they traauyled fiftie leagues: and that they were well stored with victualles, and delightfull, and famous for many excellent cities. From those Mountaynes, and diuers Riuer running through the playne of Tenustitan, this Iohannes Ribera, in token of the riches of the soile, bringeth many sorts of old, as big as a lentil, or the pulse of pease, & diuers pearls fro the South part: but they were such as were founde with Muteczuma, and his gallant and delicate Nobles, or other enemies among the spoyle of warre. When I had this Ribera at home with mee, the Reuerend Secretary Caracciolus, Legate to your Holinesse, with Gaspar Contarinius the Venetian Embassadour, and Thomas Mainus a yong man, the nephew of great Iason Mainus, Embassadour for the Duke of Millane, desirous to heare, and see strange things came vnto me. They wondered not at the great plenty of golde, nor that it was so pure of his owne nature (for it is so pure, that golden Ducates might be coyned thereof, without refining it) but they first wondred at the number and forme of the vessels filled with golde, which from diuers Nations contained diuers sortes, sent for Tribute: & for prooffe that that gold was gathered with them, every vessell or little cano had the severall markes of their country printed in them with an hoite Iron: and every one of them consisted of eyght ling or tenne drammes weight of gold. That being shewed vnto vs, declareth, what kinde of golde properly belongeth to one manne, of those who were partakers of those things: For Ribera himselfe is maister of all that, which hee showed: but, that which is brought in the shyppe which staid, is an huge masse, to bee presented to the Emperour: the summe of the golde which is moulted and brought into wedges, and barres, amounteth to 32000. Ducates: and that which may be made of ringes, Jewells, shields, helmettes, and other thynges, amounteth to the summe of an hundred and fiftie thousand ducates more, as he saith: but I know not what shyp report

The Citron or  
Limon tree as  
conuert to  
woolles

Copper hatchets.

Ropes and cables  
made of  
certain  
herbes.  
The vse of  
wheels was  
long here.

Beames of tymbre  
of a huge  
length and  
bignesse

With howe  
Cortes was  
strong a great  
Empire.

Pearles.

The puritie of  
these parts.

A huge masse  
of golde for the  
Emperour.

there is, that the French Pirates haue vnderstoode of those whips, God sende them good successed. Let vs nowe come to the particulars of this Ribera, which are but smal shaddowes, and proportions of the thynges which are to bee brought. Hee shewed vs Pearles, (so worse then those which humane effeminacie calloeth Orientall) whereof many exceede a very great silberd, <sup>Pearles.</sup> but for the most parte not very white, because they take them out of roasted Shelle fishie, ingendring pearles: yet wee sawe some cleare, and of a good lustre. But this is but a small matter. It was a delightfull thing to beholde the variety of Jewelles, and Rynages: there is no fourefooted beast, no foule, no fische, which their Artificers haue once scene, but they are able to drawe, and cutte in metall the likeness and proportion thereof, euen to the lyfe. We seemed to beholde liuing countenances, and wondered at their vessels, earrings, chains, bracelets, and all of golde, wherein the curious workmanship and labour exceeded the matter and metall; as also their crests, plumes, targettes, and helmettes, artificially wrought with smale pricks and pouncing so drawne out in length, that with the smallnesse thereof, deceived the very sight of the Eye: wee were muche delighted with the beautie of two glasses especially, the one was garnished and edged about, with an halfe globe of golde, the circumference and compass thereof was a spanne broade: the other was sette in greene woode, not so bigge altogether. This Ribera sayth, that there is such a Quarrie of stons in those Countreies, that excellent glasses may be made thereof by smoothing and polishing them, so that wee also confessed that none of ours did better shewe the naturall and liuely face of a manne. Wee sawe a Visard very excellently well made, set in a table on the inside, and about vpon that, inlayed with very small stones, so fastened together, that the nales coulde not enter them, and the clearest eye woulde thinke them to bee one entire stone, made of the same matter, whereof weo sayde the glasse was composed: it hadde also golden eares, and 2. greene circles of Emrodos ouerthwart the face thereof, from either side of the heade, and as many yellow, with bone teeth, shewing themselves halfe out of the mouth, whereof two of the innermost cheeke teeth hanging downe from either iawe, were putte forth without the lippes: those Visardes they sette before their Idolles face, when their Prince is sicke; and take them not away before hee either escape and recouer, or els die. After this, hee brought fourth diuers garments out of a very great chest: they haue three kinds of matter or stuffe, whereof they make all garments, the first is of Cotton, the next, of the feathers of foule and the thirde, they compact of Conies haire: and they set those feathers in such order betweene the Cony haire, & intermingle them betweene the thriddes of the Cotton, and weaue them in such difficultly, that we doe not well vnderstand how they might do it. Of cotton there is no wonder: for they weaue their cotton cloth, as we weaue, or begin our webs, of linnen, woollen, or silke. Concerning the shape and fashion of their garments, it is ridiculous to beholde: they call it a garment, because they couer themselves therewith, but it hath no resemblance with any other garment, of any fashion: it is onely a square couering like vnto that, which your Holines cast on your shoulders, sometimes in my presence, when you were about to kembe your heade, to preserue your garments, least haire, or any other filth should fall vpon the. That couering they cast about their necke, and then knitting 2. of the foure corners vnder their throate, they lette the couering hange downe, which scarce couereth the bodie as lowe as the legges. Hauing scene these garments I ceased to wonder, that so great a number of garments was sent to Cortes, as we mentioned before: for they are of small moment, and many of them take vpp but litle roome. They haue also sloppes or breeches, wherof (for elegancie & ornament) certain toyes of feathers of diuers colours hange: from the knee downeward they goe bare. Many vse breeches for the most parte of feathers, they mingle feathers and Conies haire most curiously together in the cotton thriddes in all thinges, and of them they make their winter garments; and courletts or blankets for the night. For the rest, they are naked, and vnlesse it be extreme cold, they alwayes put out one of their armes. Therefore they are all somewhat swart, & brown coloured: but the country (although they sometimes feele the cold) necessarily cannot be much troubled with cold, seeing they say that plaine is distant from the North Pole from 19. Degrees onely vnto 22. but I marked one thing described in the Mappes whereof he hath brought many. On the North, the Mountains in some places are distant one from another, most fruitfull valleyes diuiding them, betweene the narrow passages whereof, the violence

of the Northerne windes is very strong, and boystrous in that playne, and therefore that side of the city Tenastitan which looketh towardes the North, is fortified with rampires of huge stones, and tyber fastened in the grounde, to defend the cite from the violence of whirlwindes. I sawe the like inuention at Venice, to sustayne the furie of the Adriaticke Sea, leaste it should shake the houses, the Venetians call that pile of woode, the shore, commonly El Lio. Contrarily, on the South side all the Mountaynes ioyne one vpon another, so high, that the South windes haue no power to blowe through that playne, to giue them heate: but the North windes come from the skie, and from on high doe more beate vpon them then the South winds because they ascend from the bottome to the toppe, and the playne it selfe hath perpetuall snowie Mountaynes, and burning Mountaynes not farre from it. Wee sawe a Mappe of those countreyes 30. foote long, and little lesse in breadth, made of white cotton, vpon: wherein the whole playne was at large described, with the Prouinces, as well friends, as enemyes to Muscuma. The huge Mountaynes compassing the playne on euery side, and the South coastes also butting vpon the shore are ther, together described, from whose Inhabitanes, they say, they had hearde, that certaine Handes were neere vnto those shores, where (as wee sayde before) the Spyces grew, and great plentie of gold and precious stones were ingendred. Here (most holy Father) I must make a little digression. When this poynnt was reade amongst vs, many distorted the nose, and thought that fabulous which the letters reported of a doubtfull thing to come as it happeneth in manie thynges, which are deliuered by report of the Barbarians, while they come to bee openly knowne: and surely they doubted not without good cause, by the example of three thynges, which happened in our supposed Continent not agreeing with the first propositions, whereof I made mention in the former Decades, yet leauing them alwayes doubtfull: I haue heretofore said that the Spanyardes were accused by one of the sonnes of King Comogrus, chiefe of seuen, because they esteemed golde so much, whereof he offered to shew them sufficient plentie, so they would procure some forces of armed menne, by whose conduct they might boldly passe ouer the Mountaynes he shewed them, possessed by warlike kinges, courageous, and stout defenders of their owne right: because those sides of those Mountaynes, which looke towardes the South, had another Sea, at the Antarticke, and the inhabitanes of those sides were very rich: they passed those Mountaynes, to consider thoroughly of the South Sea: and knew the substance and wealth of those Kinges to be farre inferiour to that which fame reported: the like also they vnderstoode of the ryuer Dabaiba, whereof I haue largely and sufficiently discoursed before. Which two thynges declared to the Catholike Kinge incited him to send Petrus Arias with 1200. soldiers to be slaughtered: For they are almost all dead, with out any great benefit, as I haue elsewhere sufficiently declared. The third thing persuading them to giue lesse credit to y which is reported, is this, nor is it repugnant to reason. It is now manifestly known through long experience, y all the inhabitanes of those Countries, to y intent to driue our men away from their borders diligently inquire what they desire: & whē they vnderstoode they desire gold, or victuals, they shewe vnto thē by signes, places y are farther distant from them, & tell thē with admiration, that they shall finde much more abundance, of the things they seeke with certaine Kinges which they name, then with them: But when they went to the appointed Kinges they vnderstood they had bin deceived. Not with out cause, therefore, they iudge that the like also may happen concerning those thynges which are reported from farr Countries. But I, embracing this Casualty, in fauour so, so great a man, seeme to my selfe to haue found out probable, and persuasive reasons. I disputed these thyngs in the Senate of Indian affaires, in presence of the great Chancelor Mercurius a Gattinera, the chiefe Comendator Fernandus Vega, Doctor, Lord dela Rochia Belga, a man gracious with the Emperour Philippes great Chancelers sonne & the great treasurer, Licentiate Vargas, admitted after the departure of your Holines. I should blush to reckon this thyng amonge the difficult or miraculous thyngs of Nature. The Malucca Handa ingendring spices, are partly vnder the Equinoctiall as I mentioned before: and these Countries if we consider the whole world occupy but a very smale space. Seeing then the equinoctiall circle compasseth the whole world, who will deny, but that elsewhere as well

He agreeth  
to this  
doubt.

A description  
of the  
Barbarians.

He seemes to  
demonstrate that  
a great part  
of the world is yet  
vndiscovered.

as there, other countries may bee founde of the same milde temper of the Ayre, which the powerfull influence of the Sunne may inspire with that aromatically vigor, and yet the Diuine Prouidence would haue them vnknown vntill our times: as wee see so great a vastity of the Ocean and earthy Countries to haue bin hitherto concealed? for those Southerne shores of Tenusitao, are scarce 12. degrees distant from the Equinoctiall. What wonder then, if as the rest which were drowned before, we now see them discovered? and this falleth out for the increase of our Emperours, felicity, the disciple of your Holines. I would the same should be spokē to such as resolve only to beleue those things, which they may attaine by the power of their owne witt, and that, in your Holines name, who haue allwayes bin a prudent searcher, of not onely the secrets of Nature ingendering all things, but also of such as bee diuine. Besides that which hath bin already spokene I am moued with another argument. Cortes, who performed so great matters, would not in my iudgemēt, be so voyd of reason, if at his owne charge he wold blindfold vndertake so great a matter in the South Sea, as wee knowe hee embraced, in the building of 4. shippes to search out those countries, vales he had vnderstoode some certainty, or likelyhod at the least. We haue now spoken sufficiently of these things let vs therefore returne to Ribera his familiar friend. In those Mountaines by report of the Inhabitants, he saith, there are wild men, rough as hairy beares, contenting: themselues with montanous caues, or the naturall fruites of the earth, or such beasts as they take in huntinge. After that, we saue another greate Mapp, a little lesse, but not lesse alluring: our mindes, which contained the city of Teanustian it selfe described by the same hand of the inhabitants, with her Temples, bridges, and lakes. After this I caused a boy borne in the same country (whom he carried with him as his seruant) to bee brought vnto vs out of my chamber, furnished in warlike manner, as we sate in an open Solar. In his right hande hee held a plaine wooden sword, without stones which they vse (for they abate the edge of their warlike sword and fill the hollow and concavity thereof with sharpe stoncs fastened with tough and clammy Bitumen and clay) so that in fight, they may almost compare with our swordes. These stones are of that kinde of stone whereof they make their rasors, whereof I haue spoken elsewhere. He brought sooth a target also made after their manner: that is to say compact and ioyned together with twigges or osyers, ouerlayd with golde, from the middle lower circumferences of the edge whereof, waining feathers hange dangling downe, more then a spanne longe, set in for ornament: the inner part of the Targett was covered with a Tygers skinn: the out side had a bosse of gold in the middle, with a field or large space of fethers of diuers colours little differinge from our veluet. The boy commeth sooth armed with his sword, clad with a straight garment of feathers, partly blew and partly redd with a paire of breeches of bombasin cotten, and a little napkin hangeinge betwene his thighes, hasinge his breeches fastened to his garment therewith, as one that putteth off his doblet without vndoinge his poyntes from his hose, and being very well shodd, the boy thus counterfeited the practise of warr, now setting vpon the enemy, and presently retyringe from them, at length hee maketh shewe as if he had taken another boy in fight, instructed for that purpose, and his fellow seruant, and halinge him by the haire of the head, as they vse violently to carry away their enemyes taken in the warres, hee draweth him to sacrifice him, & hasinge layd him all along, hee seemed first to open him with a knife about the short ribbes where the hart lyeth: and then pluckinge out the hart made as if hee had drawne out the blood next vnto the hart with both his handes, and therewith besmeeringe his sword and target, he moistened and washed them. After this manner (as they say) they vse the enemyes which they haue taken. But the hart it selfe hee burneth in the fire kindled with twoe stickes rubbed together, for that purpose, for the fire which they supposed to be acceptable to y<sup>e</sup> Goddes that fauour their warres must be virgin fire newly kindled: the rest of the body they diuide and cutt into seueral parts, (leaving the whole belly with the intrayles least y<sup>e</sup> fish fall out) as the boyes action did demonstrate. But the head of the sacrificed enemy, hasinge the flesh taken from it, euery slaidleterer rescueth it, set in gold for a trophy or signe of victory & causeth so many little golde gaping heads to be made for him, as shall be proued he hath slaine, & sacrificed enemyes: & haget

Hee returns to Ribera. His name.

A boy armed after the Indian manner.

He counterfeited the warr.

The heads of the sacrificed set in gold for a Trophy.

the about his necke, & it is thought; they feede vpō their members. This Ribera saith, he knew ſ all ſ Princes of Mutezuma. theſelues vſed to eate many fleſh, wherupō he ſuſpected ſ Mutezuma alſo himſelf did ſ like: although in ſ caſe he alwayes forbore ſ ſame after they declared how ſoule a fault it was, & displeaſing vnto God, to kill a man, how much more to eate him. After ſ ſained ſolenities of ſacrificing ended by the boy, while in ſ meane ſpace wee wearied Ribera with queſtioning him concerning the cuſtoms of thoſe countreyes; and the largenes thereof, hauing brought the boy into a chamber they attired him for ſport; and meriment: Who came ſooth vnto vs cladd in another manner, taking a golden rattle curioſly beautified, in his left hande, but in his right hande hee brought a garland of belles, ſhaking it and gently aduancing the rattle about his head, and then preſently ſwinging it about belowe, ſinging after his country manner, hee filled the roome with dauncing, where wee ſate to behold him: it was a delightfull thing to ſee when he came to any more honorable perſon how they ſalute kings whē they bring preſents, with a trembling voyce, and lowly countenance, neuer preſuming to looke the kinge in the face, approachinge, & proſtrating his body he ſpeaketh vnto him, and deliuereth words to this effect: Hee calleth him Kinge of kings, Lord of heauen and earth, & in the name of his city or towne hee offereth his ſeruitce, and obedience, and of two things intreateth him to choſe, which he would rather haue: Whether that they build him any houſe, in drawing ſtones, timber, and rafters thereto: or whether he purpoſe to vſe them in tillage of the grounde: They ſay, they are the Kinges bondmenne, and affirme that (for his ſake) they haue ſuſtained exceeding great loſſes by the bordering enemies, yet that they willingly received all iniuries for the reuerence, and fidelity they bare vnto him and many ſuch like idle ſpeeches. Thirdly, while wee were caſtly talking with Ribera, ſ boy cometh forth of the Chamber, cōterſeiting a drunkard: ſo that wee haue not ſcene any ſpectacle more like a drunken man: when they ſhall obtaine any thing which they deſire of their Idol gods, he ſaith, that two or three thouſand of them come together, and fill themſelues with the iuice of a certaine inebriatinge herbe, and ſo runn naked hether and thether through the ſtreetes of the city, ſeeking the walles to ſupport them, and demanding of them they meete, which is the way to their owne lodgings ſometimes ſpittinge, and ſometimes vomitinge, and often fallinge. Let this ſuffice for the boy. I knowe not what Ribera ſaith hee hath heard of a country inhabited onely by women in thoſe Mountaines lying towards the North but noe certainty.

The manner of ſaluting a kinge of ſeruitce to the kinge.

A drunken ſpectacle.

The country of women.

A note of the greatnes of Mutezuma.

Chess } Play.  
Tenne }

Here is a note for the French men that ſeem to be borne with nettles in their countreyes.  
Cocōia.

For this reaſon (they ſay) it may bee beleued, becauſe the country is called Ygnatſau for in their language Yguat ſignifieth a woman, and ſau is a Lord or Miſtreſ: ſuppoſing therefore, that it is the country of women. In the meane ſpace while the boy was prepared for diuers ſpectacles, amongst other arguments of the power and greatnes of Mutezuma hee ſayde to haue had interpreters & innumerable Embaſſadours of diuers prouinces with him, gracing his Court with their perpetuall reſidence in their Lordes behalfe, as we haue Earles Marqueſſes and Dukes, obſeruers of Ceſar. It is not much from the purpoſe, although it bee but a trifling matter, to declare what ſports and games they vſe: It is well knowne that they haue cheſſe bordes, by the checker worke which they haue wouen in their ſheetes: but Tennis play both with them, and in our lands, is accounted the cheeſt paſtime. Their ballies are made of the iuice of a certaine herbe which climeth on the trees, as hoppers doe vpon hedges: this iuice they boyle, which beeing hardened by heate, conuerteth into a maſſy ſubſtance, of the which, beeing rubbd together and wrought with the hande, euery one formeth his ballie at his owne pleaſure, and others ſay, that of the rootes of the ſame herbes wrought together weighty ballies are made: but I knowe not how, there is a ventosity in that ſolid body, that being ſtrocken vpō the ground but ſoftly, it rebounds vcredibly into the ayer. And in ſ ſport & paſtime they are very quick & nimble: ſo ſ they ſmite the ball with their ſhoulders, elbowes, and heades, ſeldome with their handes, and ſometimes with their buttockes turninge their backe from him that playeth with them while the ball is ſmitten, for they exerciſe this paſtime naked like waſtlers. In ſteade of candels, and torches they burne the pith or heart of the pine, and they haue no other tallow, greaſe, or oyle: neither did they vſe wax for that purpoſe (although they haue both hony and wax) before

before our comming vnto them. In the courtes or entrances of the kinges and noble mēnes houses, they keepe three fires burninge all the night, made of those peeces or chippes of pine, appointinge likewise fuellem for that busines, who with perpetual supply of wood to the fire, maintaine the light vpon an high candlestick, curiously wrought of copper. One candlestick standeth in the entrance of the Court another in the cheife hall where their household seruants walke expectinge their Lordes pleasure; and the third within the Princes chamber. If they bee particularly to goe any whether, every one carrieth his torch in his hande, as our mean doe a candle. But in the handes they vse the trane or tallow of the Tortoise to maintaine candle light. Hee further saith, that the cōmon sort of people content themselves with one wife: but that every Prince may maintaine harlots at his pleasure: and affirmeth also that Princes onely lye vpon beddes, and the rest on matts spread vpon the floore, or vpon cotton carpets, being contented onely with certaine cotton sheets: the halfe part whereof they spread vnder them, and with the other part they couer themselves. Of these kinde of sheets Ribera shewed vs many. Moreouer they lye contented with number, and measure, weights are vnkowne vnto them. I haue heerebefore sayde, that they haue bookes whereof they brought many; but this Ribera saith, that they are not made for the vse of readinge, but that those characters garnished and beautified with diuers Images and proportions, are examples and patternes of things from the which workemen may draw out examples for the fashioning of Jewels, sheets, and garments to beautify them with those proportions, as I see semesters euery where in Spaine, and those who with fine needles make silken chaine worke, roses, & flowers in linnen cloath, and many kinde of formes, to delight the eye that beeholds them, the formes and proportions of all which workes they haue in particular samplers of linnen cloth, by direction whereof they instruct younge maydens and girles. What I should thinke in this variety I knowe not: I suppose them to bee bookes, and that those characters, and Images, signifie some other thinge, seeinge I haue seene the like things in the obeliskes and pillars at Rome, which were accounted letters consideringe also, that wee reade, that the Caldeis used to write after that manner. I remember that I haue written beefore, that Muteezuma at the request of Cortes, built a Pallace by his architects nere, vnto the Sea, 60. leagues from his owne Court, where he commanded 2000. many trees to bee planted, and many measures of Hemina of the graine Maizium to bee sowed, and geese and duckes, and peacokes, to be cast in for breed, with three other houses for seruice of the Court or Pallace: but at such time, as they were expelled out of the city, he saith, that the borderinge Barbarians stewe our menn, and made hauock of all. Hee maketh report also of the commodity of foode, of the salt, and potable lake: that the fish of the salt lake are lesse, and lesse sauiory, & when the water of the salt lake floweth into the fresh, that the fishes bred and nourished in the salt lake, flye backe from the tast of the fresh water, to the course and passage of the ebbing water. And contrarily as soone as the fishes bred in the fresh water begin to tast the salt, they likewise returne backe. Being demanded, what was done concerninge the auncient forme of rites and ceremonies, or after what manner they receiue so sudden an alteration of their holy rites, hee saith, that all Images or Idols are overthrowne by the warre of the Conquerours: and that it is viterly forbidden to sacrifice mans blood any more. And that such friends as hee left, were perswaded to kill noe more menn, if they desire to please the Creator of Heauen, neuertheles hee thought it was noe time, that he should so suddenly compell them to change and alter the customes receiued from their auncesters. In this one thinge onely he is supposed to haue done enough, that neither the Tascalitians, nor Guazuzingi, or any other friendes whatsoever, durst publickly any more exercise that kinde of slaughter, and butchery: yet, whether secretly they also geather abstaine hee sayth hee maketh some doubt. It is to bee hoped, that by litle and litle hee shall abolish their auncient ceremonies. He requirith Preists and desireth belles, with ornaments: all which shalbee sent vnto him, whereby many new hundred thousands of people shalbe subjected to your Holiness throne.

Of less in the Court.

Wines and cleare beere.

Princes study lye on beddes.

Of bookes otherwise these in the 4. Decade chap. 2.

Three quarters of a piece.

Of the fish of the salt lake and fresh lake.

A good way to wards Christ. being.

The sixt Decade, of Peter Martyr a Millanoise of Angleria, written to the Con-  
sentine Arch Bishop, to bee giuen to the Pope.

The first Chapter.

BEfore you returned to the city, hauinge executed your Spanish Legation honorable, & profitable to two Popes while Spaine wanted a Kinge, by reason of his departure to take vpo him the Imperiall crowne offered vnto him, I suppose, that amonge the Nobles of Spaine, who passed through the South side of our supposed Continent in the new worlde, you knewe, that Ægidius Gonsalus commonly called Gil. Gonzalez, and Licentius Spinosa the Lawier, were men of noe ordinary rancke. Concerninge Spinosa I wrot many things in the third booke of my Decades (while you were present) to Pope Leo, at his request. But now we haue letters from Ægidius Gonsalus two yeeres after, dated the day before the Nones of March 1524. written fro Hispaniola the Pallace or Princly Court of those countries: where (hee saith) hee arrived with an hundred and twelue thousand dragmes of gold: and that hee returned the 25. of Iuly 1523. to Pannama, the yeere before. It would arise to a great volume of paper, to declare euery little accident that befell them in so longe a space of time and distace of countries. And the demaundes which hee requirith at the handes of the Emperour are very large, for their trauales, & dangers sustained, & for their miserable wantes indured in that wandring Voyage: nor are there complaints, & wordes wanting concerning Petrus Arias the generall gouernour of those countries (which vnder one denominatiō we call golden Castele) straightly desiring liberty from his will and pleasure: among which hee saith he is more nobly borne, as if it made any matter, whether those he are chose of the kings for the effecting of such laborious and waigthy affaires, were borne of base and idle vntuallers, or Hectores, and valiant menn, especially in Spaine where for the most part they suppose, the Nobilitye haue a speciall prerogative, to lue idley, without any exercise or employment, except it were in the warres, and that as commanders, not as ordinary & priuate soldiers. I receiued letters from you deliuered me by the hands of your Iohannes Paulus Oliuerius dated in the city the Nones of Maye, whereby amonge other things, you say, that Pope Clement is noe lesse delighted with these relations, then his cousin german Leo, or Pope Adrian his Predecessors were, who by their letters mandatory commanded me to set downe the same the same in writing. Of many things I haue gathered a few, to be directed vnto you, not vnto his Holines, which if as his nephew Leo, or as his Successor Adrian did, he shal comand me to write, I willingly obey otherwise, I will forbear he labour, least by scandalous mouthes I be iudged to haue incurred he schlander of temerity. Observinge therefore our manner, little regarding he slight affection of he writers, we will shortly touch such things as we thinke necessary to be knowne, neither shal he chiefe point of your Epistle diuert me a lot fro this purpose, where you say, he through he persuasio of Iohn Granatensis he elect Bishop of Vienna, whatsoever Fernandus Cortes, the Conqueror of those huge countries of he Iucatanas & Tenisitān, hath written to he Emperors Couzell of he Indian affaires, & to he Emperour himselfe, was translated in Germany, word for word out of he Spanish tongue, into he Latine: for out of the, & by relation of others (as you knowe) I haue made speciall choice of such things as I thought worthy he noting. Let vs now therefore at length come to he matter, & begin with he Colonies erected, to the intet he the ancient Geography being more easily perced, the vnderstanding may apprehed, what coasts, & countries this Ægidius hath traualled. Concerning he largenes of those countries, which thrice exceede all Europe in length, & yet the ende thereof not discovered, I haue made mention in my former Decades (vnder he name of he supposed Continēt) subiect to he printers presse, & sufficiently spread abroad throughout the Christiā world. We wrot he they lay in the probatio or prooffe of the Latitud of the riuier Marguā, & he this lād hath two huge, & mighty Seas: this our Ocean, butting vpon that Northerne country, & the other, he South sea. These things pre-  
sented, his Holines may vnderstand he on the sides of he land, there are six Colonies planted by the Spaniards: three on the North, vpon the banke, or shoare of the riuier Darien  
in

Letters from  
Ægidius Gon-  
salus.

A space vpon the  
nobility of  
Spaine.

in the Gulfe of Vraba, one called Sancta Maria antiqua 20. leagues from Darica Acta: & the third, called Nomē Dei, in the dominion of king Careta, 37. leagues distant from Acta. And on the South shore they haue erected as many, one whereof, leauinge the country Name, they haue called Panama, the second Natan, 31. leagues from Panama, & the third called Chiriqui, they built 75. leagues from Natan.

## The second Chapter.

OVt of the Hauē of ꝑ North Colony called Nomen Dei, the Inhabitantes, with Petrus Arias the Gouverneur, decreimēd to make a way to Panama standing on ꝑ South shore, through the mountaines ouergrown with thick woods neuer touched from all alterity, and vnpossible to passe out: by reason of the steepe and dangerous rocks, reachinge vp to Heauen. For that distance of lande betwene both Seas is 17. leagues onely, which containe about some 50. miles, although elsewhere the land be very broad and so enlarged, that from the mouth of the riuer Margaron falling into the Ocean from the North, to the Antaretick, it extendeth it selfe more then 54. degrees beyond the Equator, as I thinke you saue in that Decade directed vnto Adrian, who lately dyed, which I sent you to be giuen to his Successor, although intitled by another name, because he was preuēd by death, without receiuing the Decade where mention is made at large, concerning thelandes ingendring spices, foid out by that way. Through this narrow strait of land therefore, at the great cost and charge both of the kinge and Inhabitantes breaking the rocks, and felling downe the woods which were a couert for diuers wild beastes, they make that way able to giue passage to two carts at once, to the intent they might passe out with ease to search ꝑ secrets of either spacious Sea, but they haue not yet perished the same. From the land therefore which in my former Decades (I sayd was called Dites, but now the land of Pearle, because there is great store of pearle there, seated within the view of the Colony Panama, Egidius Goncalus saith, that the 21. day of Iunary in ꝑ yeere of our Lord God 1522. he set sayle vnto the West, with a smale, and almost an vnarmed flecte of 4. shippes, to the end that by the Emperours command, he might obey the counsell and aduise of our kings Senate, from whom hee receiued this charge, to view the westerne coasts neuer yet attempted, and make diligent search, whether betwene the furthest boundes of the same supposed Continent lately knowne, and the begiminge or first entrance of the country of the Iucatanes, any straight or narrow Sea might be founde, diuiding betwene those huge Countreys: in few wordes to cōclude, they finde no straight at all: but what he performed (omitting many circumstances & many noted, & obserued) you shal heare. He writeth ꝑ in the space almost of 17. monethes, he passed six hundred and 40. leagues (which amount to 2000. miles or thereabout) to the West, through the coasts of strange countreys, and dominions of petty kings. At what time while his broken shippes, (and eaten through with Sea wormes which the Spaniards call Bromas) were repaired, wanting also necessary victuals hee was compelled to trauaile the rest by lande, Hee passed through the heart of the countrie 244. leagues, with an hundred men or thereabouts, begginge breade for himselfe, and his followers of many kinges, from whom (hee sayth) hee had giuen him 112000. dragmes of gold: (Pensum is a drame and a fourth part more, as you maust needs haue learned through your singular familiarity, and conuersation with the Spaniards for foorteen yeeres space:) and hee further sayth that more then 32000. persons of both sexes, were willingly baptisid by such as hee had with him, who had receiued baptisme, and entred into the rules, and first principles of Religion: and that he sayled so farre, that on the backe side of the Promince of Iucatane, he found the same customes, & manner of behauiour, & speech which ꝑ Iucatane inhabitants chiefly vse. Of ꝑ 112000. Pensa of gold brought by ꝑ Treasurer Cerezeda sent frō him he saith he sedeth vnto Cesar for ꝑ kings portio, on ꝑ on part 17. thousand Pensa of halfe pure gold, which attaineth to ꝑ degrees of twelue, & thirteene, on ꝑ other part 15000. 3. hundred and sixty Pensa. In hatchets, which they vse in steed of Iron & steele ones made fitt for the cutting of wood or timber, he writeth that by testimony, of the ouerseers, appointed for that purpose deducting the Pensa of euery one of them a litle more thē halfe a Ducate of gold, each

A way of 30. miles in length cutt downe the mountains from Nomen Dei to Panama.

The land of Pearle.

His Sea Voyages with 4. shippes to the Westward of the West.

Beggars well rewarded.

30000. persons baptisid.

The Alleged part of gold.

Hatchets of Iron.

bath their true valewe. But that which we greatly esteeme, is that we haue founde countries, where smithes worke, and also rusticall Instruments are all made of gold, though not pure. In belles also made of gold, wherein they are greatly delighted, he sayth he hath sent fiftescore & six, weighing about 6000 Pents, which attaine almost noe degree by the assay of the ouerseers: in y the belles shakē to & fro, sound more dull or shrill, our men suppose they are so made without any order, or rule: for y ringinge of gold (as you must needs know) y purer the gold is so much more duler is y sound thereof. And recounting many things more particularly: he sayeth, y by reasō of their wading through y riuers, and the often showers of raine, in regard they were our winter monethes: although, weere vnto the Equinoctiall they were not so oppressed with colde, yet hee, and his consorts fell into diuers diseases, which hindered them from makinge great iourneyes. Passinge ouer to a strange land in their Canoes with the Prouincialls or inhabitants of that prouince, which by testimony of his companions is ten leagues longe and six broad, he was courteously intertaind by the King of the Ilande, whose Court or Pallace was erected in forme of a warlike pailition, built with vnder setters of crosse beames vpon a litle rising hil, & covered with reede, and grasse to defend them from the raine. In this land, and neere about the Pallace runneth a mighty riuē: which diuideth it selfe into two armes: this riuē as hee sayth, at that time that he remained with that king intercepted of his iourney, did so overflow almost the whole Ilande with inundations of water, & so surrounded the kings house it selfe to the height of a mans girdell, that through the fury of the increase thereof, the very foundations of the pillars sustenting y Pallace being ouer throwne, & moued out of their places, y house it selfe fell downe. But (he saith) that the endes of the beames being fastened, held the house together that it should not wholly fall vpon them; so that they were forced to cut out a dore with axes, wherat they might issue forth. From whence they fledd for refuge to the boughes of high trees, where (he saith) himselfe, his companions, and their hostes that receiued them, remained for the space of two dayes, while the waters returned to their channels, after the rayne ceased. He reporteth diuers particular accidents: But it is sufficient for you, if principally you make blessed Clemēt partaker of these trifling matters of Fortune, whom that greates and weighty pontificall charge ought alwayes to deteine buisied in great affayres. All provision of victuall being taken away by this inundation, compelled through want, and being about yet to seeke foode by land, he travaileth further to y West, yet neuer leaving the viewe of y shoare, at length he came to an haven already known, which our men called the haven of S. Vincent. Where he found his consorts arrived, with whom he thus mett, after he departed from them while they repayed their shippes, and water caske.

### The third Chapter.

HAVING satisfied his companions as the time would permit & speedily deliberating what euery one should doe, taking 4. horses out of y ships which he brought with him, he comandeth the of y flecte to sayle by litle & litle directly towards the West. And chargeth them to beware of sayling by night, by reasō of the rockes, & sady shoules, because they were now to passe through the vnkown coastes of the Sea, but he, with those 4. horses, & about 100. foote traouling by land, light on a King called Nicoianus: this Nicoianus hauing courteously intertaind him, gaue him 14000. Pents of gold: being persuaded by our men y there was another Creator of heauen & earth about the sunne then they supposed, who made the sunne it selfe, & the moone & the rest of the visible starrs, of nothing, & governed the by his wisdome, who also rewardeth euery man according to his deserts. Whereupō he desired with all his family to be baptised; & by the kings example, a thousand men of his kingdom or thereabouts were baptised. Hauing remained about 17. dayes space with Nicoianus, hee left him so well instructed, that hee deliuered thees wordes in his owne language (vnderstood by the bordering Interpreters) at such time as they departed. Seeing I shall neuer hereafter speake any more to these ancient Imagēs of the Gods, nor euer desire any thinge at their handes, take them away with you. And speakinge thus to Agidius Gonzales he gaue him six golden Images of a spain longe, the ancient monuments of his ancestors. fiftie leagues

Smiths that make rusticall Instruments of gold.

The palace of a King, & of the fall thereof.

The haven of S. Vincent.

King Nicoianus his courteous entertainment of our King of gold.

Nicoianus desired to be baptised & is baptised with 1000. more of his subjects.

Nicoianus his desire to have his Images of his Images.

leagues distant frō the Pallace of Nicoianus, he vnderstoode, that the Kinge called Nicoragua, had his kingdom: staying therefore one dayes Iourney from the princely seat of Nicoragua, he sent messengers to deliuer the same message to the King which our men were wont to declare to the rest of the kinges before they would farther presse them, that is to say: that they should become Christians, and that they admitt the lawes and subiection of the great Kinge of Spaine: but if he refused, then they would rayse warr, and vse violence against him. The next day after foure Nicoraguanian Noble menn came forth to meete him, sayinge in their Kinges behalfe, that they desire peace and baptisme. Our men goe forward to Nicoragua, whom they constrainē to receiue holy baptisme with all his household, and somewhat more then 9000. menn besides. This Nicoragua gaue vnto Ægidius Gonzalus 15000. Pennas of gold made into diuers Jewels. Ægidius recompened his gifts with other presents, and gaue vnto Nicoragua a silken garment, and an inner vesture of linnen wouen, and also a purple capp: and erectinge two crosses, one in their temple, and another without the towne he departed: and went vnto another cōuntry about 6. leagues of, makinge his way alwayes to the West: where (hee sayth) hee found 6. villages, euery of them consisting of about 2000. houses a peece. The fame & report of our menn being heard, while they staid amongst those 6. villages, another Kinge farther to the West called Diriangen (desirous to see them) came vnto our menn accompanied with 500. menn, and 20. woemen, tenn auncients: and sine Trumpeters goinge before him after their manner. The King comminge to Gonzalus expecting his approach in a throne adorned with rich and princely furniture, commaunded to sounde the Trumpetts and presently to cease, & the auncients that went before him to be layde down & euery one of the men, one, brought one, the other, two foules like vnto peacocks, not inferior in tast, nor greatnes. These foules are their domestical poultry: as hēnes are with vs. I make a litle digression with your leaue: & reapeate many particulars of this sort, who being but an vnskillfull husbandman instruct Æsculapius in medicine: for may of these things are very well known to you, & dilated at large in my Decades. But supposing that these relations may come vnto the hands of men desirous thereof, to whom they are vnknewen, vnlikey to obtaine your interpretation, I reapeate them, that for your sake, they might obtaine their desire: do not you therefore accuse me, who are borne for the benefit of many. This King Diriangen by his seruants brought about 200. hatchets, euery of them weighing 18. Pennas, or somewhat more. Beinge demanded by Interpreters, which Ægidius had of his next bordering neighbours, who vnderstoode our menn, what cause moued him to come: he is sayd to haue answered, that it might be granted him to behold a strange Nation, which he had heard, trauided those countreys, and offeringe, that whatsoever they desired of him, he would performe their demandes. Whereupon they admonished them (by alledginge the same reasons they vsed to perswade the rest) to become Christians, & that they would submit themselves to the obedience of the great king of Spaine. Hee saith, hee was contented to doe both, and promised the third day to returne vnto our menn to receiue their charge. And so he departed.

#### The fourth Chapter.

IN the meane time, while our menn remained with Nicoragua, many things fell out betwene them not vnworthy the relatinge. For beside that I gathered them out of the letters of Ægidius, the kings Quæstor with him, commonly called the Treasurer, one Andreas Cereceda, no meane partaker of all their traualles, & labours, told me, & departing left me his writings. Ægidius, & cōmander of our soldiers & Nicoragua & king falling in to diuers discourses for recreation, while they were at leasure, by an Interpreter which Ægidius had brought vp, borne not very farr frō the kingdome of Nicoragua, who perfectly spake both languages. Nicoragua demaunded of Ægidius what was thought (with the mighty king, whose seruant he confesseth himselfe to be) concerninge the generall flood past, which as hee had heard his auncesters say, ouerwhelmed the whole earth with men & bestes. Ægidius sayth it is beleeued that it was so: beinge demanded whether he thought it should come againe, he answered, noe: but as once by the inuadition of waters for the wicked misdeedes of men,

Ægidius Gonzalus saith hee was in a Nicoraguan with offer of the cheyfe of Christe Iohann & reliquies, & warrs. Nicoragua with all his household & 9000. men hee did receiue baptisme. Nicoragua gaue to Ægidius 15000. Pennas of gold. A Crosses erected.

Diriangen a King begetter of the issue of Ægidius Gonzalus comes to see him.

King Diriangen presents to Ægidius Gonzalus 200. hatchets of gold.

It is very reasonable how apte the barbarians are alwayes to receiue the Christian religion.

Notable questions proposed by Nicoragua to Ægidius Gonzalus. A tradition of Noah his flood amongst these Indians.

The great  
rebellion to  
come.

Nicoragua made  
a question whe-  
ther God should  
and his crea-  
ture from hea-  
ven or no.

His questions  
of the departure  
of Soules  
departed, of  
those he thought  
which God hath  
put in his own  
power, Act. 1. 7.

Nicoragua ques-  
tioned.

Divine ques-  
tions touching  
various matters.

Inconspicuous  
and the words  
thereof.

Mirages.

Excelling of  
manlike dis-  
order.

Their Mirages  
and  
images and  
images of the  
devil.

Nicoragua de-  
manded to  
know how to  
please God.

& chiefly, for their unlawfull & most rous lust, all living creatures (a fewe only excepted) perished, so after an appointed terme of yeeres (unknown to men) it should come to passe by through flaminge fire cast downe from heauen, all things should be consumed to ashes: wondering at this discourse, they were all stricke with astonishment. Whereupon Nicoragua turninge to the interpreter, with a discontented countenance demanded of him: Whether this so wise & vnderstanding a Nation came from Heauen: the Interpreter sayth they were sent downe from Heauen. Then out of his simplicitie & innocencie he asked him, whether he came directly down or in a circuit, and compass like a bowe or arch, the Interpreter sayth, hee knewe not that, who was borne in the same country where Nicoragua was, or in the next. After this he commanded the Interpreter to aske his Maister Egidius, whether the earth should ever be turned upside downe: Whereunto Egidius answered, declaringe that this was a secret resting onely in his mind who is the Creator of Heauen, Earth, and man. And questioninge him further concerninge the vniuersall consumption of mankinde; and of the places appointed for the soules departed out of the prison of the body, and of the determined time of sendinge downe that fire, when the sunne, and moone, and the rest of the starres shall cease to giue their light, and of the motion, quantity, distance, and effects of the starres and many things besides. Egidius although hee were very wise, and delighted to reade common booke translated out of the Latine tongue, yet hadd hee not attained that learninge, that he could otherwise answer this, then that his knowledge of those things was reserved in the breast of his diuine providence. Nicoragua further demanding of him concerninge the blowing of the windes, and the causes of heate and colde, and of the varietie of dayes and nights, although it be very smal with them (because they are but a little distant from the Equinoctiall) and many such like questions, Egidius answered Nicoragua satisfying him in many things according to the ability of his iudgement, and commending the rest to the diuine intelligence. Nicoragua and his familiar Courtiers descendinge afterwarde to earthly things, demanding whether without sinne, they might eat, drinke, vse the act of generation, play, sing, and dance, and exercise arms, he answered them after this manner: he sayth they might chere themselves with meates, and drinke, but auoyde gluttony and sarfeting: for whatsoever is taken beyonde the necessitie of nature, is receiued both against the excellencie of the minde, and health of the bodie, and thereby he sayth that the seeds of vices, braules, and priuie hatred, and displeasure are stirred vp, and reuiued: and that it is lawfull to vse the act of generation, but with one woman onely, and her, coupled and ioyned in marriage. And if they desire to please that God who created all things, they must abstaine from any other kinde of lust whatsoever: and that it was not forbidden to delight themselves with singing, honest sportes, and dancing in their due times. Seeing they questioned him not concerninge their ceremonies, nor slaughtering of yenne in sacrifice, hee moued conference thereof himselfe, and sayth, that those oblations of sacrifices were most displeasing vnto God, & by with his Maister the great King there was a Law made, that whosoer slewe any man with the sword, should dye by the sword. And he further sayth, that those idoles, whereunto they sacrifice mans blood, are the Images & representations of deluding deuilles, who being cast out of Heauen for their pride, are throwne downe to the pitte of hel. From whence, going out by night, they shewe themselves for the most parte to innocent men, & perswade them through their deccifull artes, that those things are to bee done, which ought in all kinde of things to bee auoyded, to the intent they might estrange our soules from his loue, who created them, and desireth by charity, and other honest actions of lyfe to reduce them againe vnto hel, least being violently carried away by those wicked spirits from eternall delightes, vnto perpetuall tormentes, and miserable woes, they be made companions of the damned.

#### The fifth Chapter.

After that Egidius, like a pulpit preacher, had thus reasoned, or in the like sense, by his Interpreter he signified the same to Nicoragua as well as hee could. Nicoragua assented to the wordes of Egidius, and withall demanded what hee shoulde doe, that they might please that

that God, the author of all things, of whom he maketh report. Cerezeda the Kings treasurer with him, witnesseth that Egidius answered Nicoragua in this manner: hee who created vs, and all things, is not delighted with the slaughter of menne, or shedding of bloude, but in the feruent loue only of our mind towards him, hee greatly reioyceth, the secrets of our hearte are apparant vnto him, hee desireth onely the meditations of the hearte it selfe, he feedeth not on flesh, or bloude, there is nothing wherewith he is more angry and displeas'd, then with the destruction of menne, of whom he desireth to be magnified, and glorified. These abhominable sacrifices are pleasing, and all impious, and wicked actions are acceptable to his, and your enemies cast downe to the bottomlesse pitte of Hell, whose Images you heere observe, to the ende that they may drawe your soules (departing hence) together with themselves into eternall ruine and destruction. Throwe these vaine, nay pernicious Idolles, out of your houses and temples: and embrace and entertaine this Crosse, the Image whereof the Lorde Christ beedew'd with his bloude for the saluation of mankinde that was lost: and hereby yee may promise vnto your selues happie yeeres, and blessed eternitie to your soules. Warres, also are odious to the creator of all things, and peace amonge neighbours is amiable, whom hee commandeth vs to loue as our selues: yet, if leading a peaceable lyfe any doe prouoke you, it is lawfull for euery manne to repell iniury, and to defende himselfe, and his goods, and substance. But to prouoke any through the desire of ambition, or couetousnesse, is vterly forbidden: and that these things are done both against common civility, and also against the will of God himselfe. These things thus playnly declared, Nicoragua, & his Courtiers who were present fixing their eyes with open mouth vpon the countenance of Egidius, consented to all other things beefore propounded, but to this one concerning warlike affaires, they made a wry mouth: and demanded where they shoulde cast their weapons, golden helmets, or whether they should throw their bowes and arrows, their military ornaments, and their renowned warlike ensignes, shall we giue them (say they) to women, to vse? & shall we handle their spindles, and distaffes, and till the ground after the rusticall manner? Egidius durst not answer them any thing to this, because he knewe they spake it halfe discountred. But when they asked him concerning the mystery of the Crosse to be adored, and of the benefit thereof, hee saith, that if with a pure, and sincere heart looking vpon it, (mindfull with a religious zeale of Christ who suffered thereon) you shall desire any thing ye shall obtaine it, so ye desire iust and honest things: if peace, or victory, against your enemies, plentie of fruits, if temperates of the ayre, or saluie and health, and if ye propounde such other like things to be desired and wished for, ye shall obtaine your desires. I haue mentioned beefore, that Egidius erected them two Crosses, one vnder a rooffe, and another in the open ayre, vpon an high hill of bricke made by hande: at what time it was carried to, hee sette vpon the hill, Cerezeda saith that the Priestes went beefore the glorious and pompous shewe in procession, and Egidius followed with his soldiery and traine, the King accompanying him, and the rest of his subiectes. At what tyme the Crosse was sette vpp, they beganne to sound the Trumpettes, and stricke vpp the Drummes. The Crosse being fastened, Egidius with his heade discour'd, and bowing the knee, ascended first to the foote thereof, by the steppes which were layde, and powred out his secreete prayers there, and embracing the steppes of the Crosse, lastly kissed them. The King, and by his example all the rest did the like. So being instructed in our rites and ceremonies he made a decree. Concerning the distribution of dayes saith he, sixe whole daies ye are continually to apply your selues to tillage, and the rest of your labours, and arts, and the seuenth, you must diligently attende sacred and religious exercises, and hee appointed them the Lordes day for the seuenth, nor did hee suppose it to be profitable to be further troublesome vnto them with a long rancke of holy dayes. I will adde one thing onely omitted by Egidius himselfe in the discourse of his narration, which Cerezeda recytleth. All the Barbarians of those Nations are beardlesse, and are terribly afraid, and fearefull of bearded men: and therefore of 25. beardlesse youthes by reason of their tender yeeres, Egidius made bearded men with the powlings of their heades, the haire being orderly composed, to the end, that the number of bearded men might appeare the more, to terrifie thē if they should

*Egidius his reply.*

*This good doctrine concerning war: easily accepted by the Barbarians.*

*Hee reprehendeth them with the Bishop.*

*The Barbarians of these nations are beardlesse in great feare of bearded men vpon this occasion Cerezeda used a pretty policy.*

*Ægidius Com.*  
When he set  
afile for the  
straggle.

The fashion of  
the kings courtes  
in these parts  
and the matter  
of the other  
buildings.

Their Temples.

Auncients  
payed with  
dolls.

be assailed by warre, as afterwarde it fell out. Cerezeda added that Ægidius wrote vnto him, that with 250. foote mustered in Hispaniola, and 70. horse, he set sayle about the Iles of March 1524. to the desired prouince to seeke the Straght. But this matter is not yet reported to our Senate, when we haue it, you shall haue notice thereof. Nowe at length, let vs passe ouer these things, and come a little to that horrible Lestrigonian custome of those Nations, and to the situations, and buildinges of their houses and temples. The length of their kinges courtes consisteth of 100. paces, and the breadth 15. the frontes whereof are open, but are all close behinde. The puenements or floores of their pallaces are erected halfe a mans stature from the groūd the rest, are nothing raysed from the earth. All their houses are made of tymber, and couered with strawe, and haue but one rooff or couering, without any boorded floore. Their temples also are built after the same manner: they are large, and replenished with lowe, darke, inner chappels, wherein euery noble manne hideth his housholde goddess, and they haue them also for Armoyes: for there with their Auncients painted with Diuelles, they keep their warlike weapons, their bowes, quiuers, golden brest plates, and golden helmettes, and broade wooden swoordes, wherewith they fight hande to hande and their darts also whiche they cast a farr of, and diuers ornamentes of warre, during the time of peace, and to the proper Images of the goddess left by their Auncesters, according to their abilities they slay particular sacrifices of mans flesh, and adore them with affected prayers of vowes or desires, composed by the priests after their manner.

#### The sixth Chapter.

The situation  
of the Kings  
courtes and  
weasens houses.

Gold smeltes.

Pillars erected  
for thanksgou-  
les sacrifices.

Their cursed  
altar of sacrifices.

A notable  
preacher.

Two kinds of  
sacrifices.

Large and great streetes garde the frontes of the Kinges courts, according to the disposition and greatnes of their village or towne. If the town consist of many houses, they haue also little ones, in which, the trading neighbours distant from the Court may meeete together. The chiefe noble mens houses compasse and inclose the kinges streete on euery side: in the middle site whereof one is erected which the Goldsmithes inhabit. Golde is there moulten and forged to be formed and fashioned into diuers Jewelles, then being brought into small plates, or barres, it is stamped or coyned after the pleasure of the owners thereof, and at length is brought into the forme and fashion they desire, and that neatly too. Within the viewe of their Temples there are diuers Bases or Pillers like Pulpittes erected in the fieldes, of vnburnde bricke, and a certayne kind of clammye earthy Bitumen which serueth for diuers uses and effectes, which Bases consist of eight steppes or stayes in some place twelue, and in another fiftene the space of the highest parte of the toppe thereof is diuers, according to the qualitie of the designed mistery, one of these is capable of tenne men, in the middle space whereof standeth a marble stone higher then the rest, equalling the length and breadth of a mans stature lying all along: this cursed stone is the altar of those miserabell sacrifices: at the appointed day for sacrifice, the people rounde about beholding the same, the King ascendeth another pulpitte in the viewe, to beeholde the execution thereof. The Prieste in the audience of all, from that eminent stone, standing on his feete performeth the office of a Preacher, and shaking a sharpe knife of a stone, whiche hee hath in his hand (for they haue quarries of stoue in al those countries, fit for the making of hatchets and swords, whereof we may haue as many as we will, and the Cardinall Ascanius was not ignorant hereof) proclaymeth that sacrifices are to be slaine, whether they be of the bodies of their enemies, or bred at home. For there are two kindes of humane sacrifices with them: the one, of enemies taken in the warres, the other of such as are brought vp and maintained at home: for euery king, or Noble manne from their infancie maintaine sacrifices at home to be slaine, to their abilitye, they also not being ignorant wherfore they are kept and fed more daintily then the rest, who are not sadde & sorrowfull for the same, because from their tender yeeres they liue so perswaded, that through that kinde of death, they should be turned into goddess or heauenly creatures. Hereupon walking freely through the villages and townes, they are reuerently receiued of all that meeete them, as if they were halfe deified already, and are sent away laden with whatsoever they demande, whether they desire any thing for foode, or ornament: nor doth

doth he who giueth to the goddess, suppose, that day fell out valckily with him, wherein he bestoweth something. Therefore they diuersly handle these diuers kindes of sacrifices in offering them to their Idols. They stretch out either sacrifice on that stone flat vpon their backe, and after the like manner open them through the short ribbes, plucking out the heart, and with the blood of either obseruing the same rule, they anoint their lips, and beards, but the preaching Priest holding a knife in his hande, compassing the enemie whiche is to bee sacrificed with certayne mournfull songes, being layde along vpon the stone, goeth thrice about him, and then openeth him, and after that cutteth him into small peeces, and being cutte diuideth him in this manner to be eaten. The handes and also the feete are both giuen vnto the king, the harts are giuen to the Priestes, their wiues, and children, who by the Law ought to haue them, the thighes are diuided to the Nobilitie, and the rest to the people in peeces: but the heads in steede of a trophy or signe of victory, are hunge vpon the boughes of certayne small trees a little way distant from the place of execution, where they are preserved for that purpose. Every king nourisheth his appointed trees in a fielde neere vnto him, obseruing the names of eury hostile country, where they hange the heads of their sacrificed enemies taken in the warres (as our Commanders and Captaynes fasten the helmettes, colours, and such like ensignes to the walles of churches) as witnesses of their outrageous crueltie which they call victory. And whosoeuer should haue no parte nor portion of the sacrificed enemie, would thinke he should be ill accepted that yeere. But although they teare the domestick sacrifice in peeces after the same manner, and order, yet they vse it otherwise beinge deade: they reuerence all parts thereof, and partly bury them before the doores of their temples, as the feete, handes, and bowels, which they cast together into a garde, the rest (together with the harts, making a great fire within the view of those hostile trees, with shrill hymns, and applauses of the Priestes) they burne among the ashes of the former sacrifices, neuer thence remooued, lying in that fielde.

The manner of their sacrifices.

#### The seventh Chapter.

NOW when the people perceiue by the accustomed murmur, and whispering of the Priestes, that the gods lippes are rubbed, they vtter their vowes, and prayers, & desire the fertilitie of their ground and plentie of other fruits, salubrity of the ayre, & peace, or if they are to fight, victory and eury one through torment of minde earnestly intraceth them to driue from them the flies and locustes, and to remoue inundations, and drought, and violence of wilde beastes, and all aduersitie. Not content with these sacrifices, the King, Priestes, and Nobles, sacrifice to one Idoll onely with their owne bloude. This Idoll fastened to the toppe of a speare of three cubites longe, the elder sorte authorised thereunto with great pompe in the face of heauen out of the Temple, where it is religiously kept all the yeere: and it is like the infernall goddess, after the same manner that is paynted vpon the walles to terrifie men: The mytred Priestes goe before, and a multitude of people following after carry eury one their banners of wouen cotton painted with a thousande colours, with the images & representations of their diuels. From the Priestes shoulders, covered with diuers linnen clothes, certaine belts more then a finger thicke, hange downe vnto the ancles, at the fringed endes whereof seuerall purses are annexed, wherein they carry sharpe razors of stone, and little bagges of powders made of certayne dried hearbes. The king, and his Nobles followe the Priestes behinde in their order, and after them the confused multitude of the people to a man: none that can stand on his feete may bee absent from these ceremonies. Being come vnto the appointed place, first strawing sweete smelling hearbes, or spreading sheets or couerlettes of diuers colours vnder them, that the speare may not touch the ground, they make a stand, and the priestes supporting the same they salute their little diuel with their accustomed songes, and hymnes: the young men leape about it tripping, & dancing with a thousande kindes of antique sports, vaunting their agiity, and nimbleness of body by the shaking of their weapons, & targets. The priestes making a signe vnto them, eury one taketh his razor, and turning their eyes vnto the Idoll, they gasp and wound their owne tongues, some thrust them through, and the most part cut them, so that the bloud issueth forth

An Idol whereunto the King, Priestes & Nobles sacrifice with their owne bloude. This may be called the Gods procession.

forth in great abundance all of them (as we sayd in the former sacrifices) rubbe the lippes and beard of that foolish Idoll: then presently applying the powder of that hearbe, they fill their woundes. They say the vertue of that powder is such, that within few houres their vlcers are cured, so that they seeme neuer to haue beene cutte. These ceremonies ended, the Priestes bowe downe the speare a litle, at what tyme, the king first, then the Nobles, and lastly the people whisper the Idoll in the care, & euery one vteroth the turbulent and tempestuous outrage of his minde, and bending the heade to one shoulder, with reuerent trembling, and mumbling they humbly beseech, that luckily, and happily he would fauour their desires. Being thus deluded by the Priestes, they returne home again. While they applied these rites to the diligent search of these, and such like other idle toys, beholde, first one, then another, and after that, many spies or scouts came, who brought tidings that Diriangen was come, armed: for he came not onely with a purpose to take againe that which he hadde given, but also to kill our men, presuming vpon the small number of men which he had discovered, and with an hope to possess that which our men had with them: for euen they themselves loue golde, though not as money and coyne, but for the making of Iewels, for ornament sake: hee came therefore with a great troope of men accompanying him, armed after their manner, hee setteth vpon our men, whom, if he had found vnprovidd, he had killed them euery man. So they fought fiercely vntill the night.

Diriangen with a great troope armed after their manner set vpon the Christians.

#### The eight Chapter.

Here hee reporteth many things, which I omit, least we should be troublesome, I vnto you, & you vnto his Holinesse, and your friends: & therefore you may collect the rest. Our small company of men ouercame their great armies: hee reciteth religiously and with feare & trembling that God, who is the Lord of hosts was present with them, and brought them safely out of that danger. Nicoiannus the king left behinde, vnto whom he was constrained to returne, following the change of fortune, practised to slaughter them, & to take away from them the golde which they caryed. Egidius Gonsalus suspecting the same, did not committe himselfe to Nicoiannus. Therefore setting his men in battaile array, and so keeping them, and placing the weake wounded men, & the gold in the midst of the array of footemen in the battaile, with those 3. horsemen, and 17. shot, and bowmen, he sustained the fury of the warriors, and slew many. That night hee slept not, at the first dawning of the day, they desire peace, and peace is grited. So they returne to the haue of S. Vincent from whence they departed. Where they found the shippes returned, whiche had now sayled about 300. leagues to the West of an vnkowne sea, while the Admirall Egidius made diligent search within the country. But they returned, as he saith, to repaire their ships againe in that haue, which were bruised, and battered after many monethes wandring and sayling. Hee describeth the bordering country of Nicoragua after this manner. On the very inner side of the Court of Nicoragua he saith he found a lake of fresh water whiche extendeth it selfe so farre, that they coulde not discouer the ende thereof, wherevpon he thinketh it may be called a sea of freshe waters, for those causes: and he further saith, that it is full of Islands. The borderers being demanded, whether it should runne, and whether those waters were emptyd into the neighbouring sea three leagues distant thence, they plainly declared that it had no issue out: especially to that South Sea nere vnto it, but whether it fell into the other sea, hee saith, hee left them doubtful. Therefore hee plainly confesseth, as hee himselfe reporteth by the opinion of maisters and pilottes, that they holde it for a certainty, that this is that heape or gathering together of waters, correspondent to the North Sea, and that the streight so much desired, might there bee founde. If you desire to knowe what I thinke in this case, I thinke it spoken to excuse himselfe, because hee founde not the straight: both by reason of the nature of those potable waters, as also for that the borderers are ignorant whether those waters haue any issue out, we ought to be disquieted and tormented with the same desire, whether any straight diuide those huge countries:

The Christians with a small company ouercame Diriangen his great army. Nicoiannus practiseth slaughter. Egidius with his handfull of horse & foote slays many of his men.

Egidius re-vertes to the haue of S. Vincent.

A supposed Sea of fresh water.

## The ninth Chapter.

STAY awhile, after these letters, The letter carrier yet tarrying and almost putting on his Hat to be gone, Diccus Arias the sonne of Petrus Arias the gouernour came vnto me, & brought with him that Licentiaus Spinosa whom I mentioned before. Spinosa saith, that Petrus Arias the gouernour, & himselfe, were defrauded by this Egidius Gonsaluz, who affirmeth, that those tracts and coasts were long since discovered by them both, & that in their progresse they left the kings (who inhabited the same) in amity & peace with them: Both parties shal be heard. What Cesar shall thinke good to be decreed in our Senate, such as are desirous of these things yet vntoucht, shall vnderstande thereof hereafter for your sake: and so let this suffice for the present. And when occasion shall giue opportunitie, present many kisses in my behalfe to the feet of our most blessed Clement. The Spaniards will esteeme his Holines to be of so great value & price, as he regardeth you, whom for your long conuention with them, they thinke worthily to be most highly respected of the best, and greatest. The iudgements & censures of men are often deliuered, from the elections and choyce of Princes in their ministers, and seruants.

A report of one Licentiaus Spinosa of Seville the first country of the best vntoucht countries to Petrus Arias and himselfe.

Receive now the third thing that came to light, while the post yet stayed, which as I suppose will be very acceptable & delightful to his Holines to know. In that Decade directed vnto Adrian, where the description of the landes of the Maluccas impending spices appeareth, mention is made of a controuersie that arose betwene the Castellane discoverers and the Portugalles, concerning these landes being found. And we thinke it to bee so certayne a thing within our limits assigned by Pope Alexander, that for preparation of a new voyage, with no meane charge, we haue builde 6. newe ships in the Cantabrian hauē of Bilbauus & furnished the with all necessary prouision of victual, & determined, they should set sayle about the vernal Equinoctiall, out of the Clunia Giflician haueu which you know, is appointed for the trading, & marchandise of spices, because for all merchants coming from the North coasts, it is much neerer, and more commodious, & a safer way, then if they should be constrained to goe to Siuill (appointed for the Indian affaires) called the house of trafficke or trading, or into Portugall, by diuers and long windings & turnings of the shores. The Portugalles seeing almost the present ruine & ouerthrow of their estate, earnestly besought vs with their whole industrie, that they might not sustaine so great losse, their interest & right not being first vnderstoode, for that they perswade themselves, those Ilands of y Maluccas were hitherto found out, & traded by their mariners, & y they lay within their limits, & not within the bound of the 300. & 70. leagues assigned to the Emperor, without the Ilandes lying towards Caput Viride so called, which by Ptolomy is called the Risardianian Promontory, supposed by vs to be the Gorgones. Cesar, as he is a louer rather of that which is right, and iust, then of riches, with a King of his kindred; especially who is his cousin germaine, & peraduenture (if the rumor spread abroad be true) should shortly become his sisters husband, granted their requestes, that the matter should bee deliberated what right they had. The ships are stayd, the preparation gaineth nothing, and the men and officers chosen for that seruice mutter thereat. Whereupon it was decreed that menne skillfull in Astronomy, Cosmography, and Navigation, and learned Lawyers also on either side, should meeete together to discuss the matter in the city Pax Augusta, which the Spaniard commonly calleth Badaiozum, because that place is the bounde of Portugall and Castelle. Our men went, and they came. From the Calendes of April, or thereabouts the property began to be sifted and discussed. The Portugalles who thought it not expedient to consent any iot, admit no reasons which our men brought. The Castellanes will that the assignement of the 300. and 70. leagues should begin from the last Iland of the Gorgones called S. Antony lying to the West, & they say that it is nine degrees of longitude and an halfe distant from the knowne Meridian of the fortunate Ilands: on the contrary, the Portugalles obstinately vrge that it ought to be accounted from the first of the Ilandes, called the Ilande of Salt, which distance containeth 5. degrees of longitude. The Castellans proue their matter thus. If any Arbitrator chosen to decide controuersies betwene neighbours

He opposeth a controuersie betwixt the Castellanes and the Portugalles for the right of the Maluccas.

The causes put to Commission.

The Castellans what they allege.

The Portugall his sayes.

contending for their boundes, shall so censure that from the known and long possessed inheritance of Iohn, his neighbour Francis shoulde haue an hundred paces, no man will doubt, that the measure is to begin from the furthest limit of the inheritance of Iohn. For if the measure be to be taken from the beginning of the mannor, or inheritance, of necessite Iohn must loose the possession of his inheritance, because by that meanes he includeth his inheritance in the covenant. Therefore the Castellanes say, either discharge the souerainity & dominion which hetherto you haue had ouer the Ilandes Gorgones, els you must needs consent, that this question or matter of controuersie is to be measured from the furthest shoare of those Ilandes. They stood long vpon it: but nothing concluded: because if the Portugalles shoulde haue consented to the opinions of the Castellane Iudges, they must needs confesse, that not onely the Maluca Ilandes bordering vpon the Sinenses, & the great gulfe and Promontory of the Satyri, and Gillola (whercof I spake in the Decade to Adrian) by Ptolemy as many of them thinke Catigara, a 100. and 75. degrees from the fortunate Ilandes, and 150. from the Jyne diuiding the boundes of cyther King: but also Malucha it selfe, long time vsurped by them, as the Castellanes say. For the Castellanes vaunt that the Portugalles are conuicted by the authorities of Ptolomey, and other authors disputing about the longitude of degrees. The Portugalles hearing this shake their heads thereat: our mariners also returning from that vast and long nauigation, brought letters, and excellent presents from the chiefe King of those Ilandes (where they laded  $\frac{1}{2}$  shippe called the victory with cloues) as an euident argument of their obedience yielded. But the Portugalles shewe no league or covenant made with any king of those Ilands: yet they say, that the name of the Portugalles came to those Ilandes, and that Portugalles were scene there: Whereunto our men answer and confesse, that they sounde one Portugall, but a fugitiue, fearing iudgement for his wicked acts committed, but none els, nor any signe or token of any other kinde of trading. What shalbe decreed by Cæsar, whereof consultation was had in our Senate before, is yet vnknowne. It will be very hard for the Portugalles to be intercepted of their accustomed actions and trading, nor will it be pleasing vnto vs to loose the occasion of so great a discouery. God be present with vs. Now fare you well, from Burg the 14. day of Iuly 1524.

#### The tenth Chapter.

BY reason of diuers Pirats, and hostilitie with the French King, the iniury of the times barred vs of all traualles by lande, and sea voyages. I sende therefore vnto you (after two manner) requiring the same, suche newes as came to light concerning the newe world, a fewe things only being added. Foure & twentie approued men of euery facultie six, to wit, Astronomers, Lawyers, Cosmographers, and Nauigators were sent with the Portugalles to the consultation of the foresaide controuersie. Fewe of these are known to you: but to the Popes Holyness none. They all returned: and in the name and behalfe of others yielded a larg account of their acts in that meeting, first to our Senate, and next vnto Cæsar. Don Fernandus Colonus the seconde sonne of Christophorus Colonus, the first searcher and discouerer of these tracts and countries, a learned man, and three lawyers, the rest being hearers, Licenciatius a Cunna, and Licenciatius Emanuelus, the one auditor of the Kings Senate, and the other, likewise of the Valledoletane Chauncery, and also Licenciatius Perisa chiefe Iudge of the Cranatensian Chauncery, as the report goeth, brought the Aduocates backe againe. What I mentioned before, was inacted, and nothing more. At the day appointed by Cæsar, which was the last of May, the Castellane arbitrary Iudge appointed for that purpose, vpon the bridge of a riuier called Caia, diuiding Casteele and Portugall, deliuered their sentence: nor could the Portugalles obtaine (to whom euery delay was beneficiall) that they shoulde deferre their sentence for a day or an houre: which they deliuered in this manner. That the Malucha Ilandes both by the iudgement of yong and olde, should be vnderstoode to be situate 20. degrees and more within the Castellane limits, it is so decreed. Neither doe they exclude Malucha and Taprobana, if that bee it, which the Portugalles call Zamatra. The Portugalles therefore returned hanging down their heades, and taxing whatsoever was done,

The names of  
the Committers.

The sentence of  
the Iudges  
touching the  
controuersie be-  
twixt the Crowne  
of Iohn & Portu-  
gales.

The Portugalles  
discouered.

done, not purposing to forsake their ancient actions. And wee haue-hearde that a mightie fleet is nowe sent from that young king: and they secretly giue out that they will drown and destroy ours, if it come. But we, the day before the Calends of Iuly, haue thought good in our Senate of Indian affaires, that Cæsar should decree, that before the next month of August comming, be ended, our fleet of sixe shippes should set saile, w<sup>ch</sup> shall they be commended to fight together: if the Portugalls being more mightie, shall presume to provoke them, it is in Cæsars power to auenge himselfe by lande, if they attempt disobedience at Sea. For Portugall as you very well knowe, is an angle or corner of Castele, and howe great a portion of Portugall, seeing in Portugall there are famous cities Metinna of the playne, a notable Mart towne, Sahnantica, together with Abula, Segouia, Zamora, Tâurus, & the fortunate kingdome of Toledo, and many besides, inclosed within the riuers Aua and Doris, as I often declared in my olde Decades: that countrey sometimes was a county: of Castele, freely transferred and bestowed by a bountifull king vpon his nephew, by the name, and title of a king. It is also decreed; that one Stephanus Gomez, (who also himselfe is a skillfull Navigator) shall goe another way, where by betwene the Baccalor, and Florida, long since our countries, he saith, he will finde out a waye to Cataia: one onely shipp called a Carauell is furnished for him, and he shall haue no other thing in charge, then to search out whether any passage to the great Chan, from out the diuers windings, and vast compassings of this our Ocean, were to be founde.

Of the Kingdome of Portugall

Portugall once a County of Castele. Stephanus Gomez to be sent out for Cataia.

FINIS.

Soli Deo Laus &amp; gloria

The Seventh Decade of the same Peter Martyr, dedicated to the Vicecount Franciscus Sfortia, Duke of Milaine.

ASCANIUS the Vicechancellor your Excellencies vncle, sometimes a most worthy, and famous Prince amongst the Cardinales, and inferiour to none, obtayned the first front of my Decades, concerning the newe found world, because through his importunate suite, & often requestes hee commended me, to signifie vnto his Excellency, what accidents fell out in these Westerne coastes, and countries. Hereof I present you this famous witness, inuolued with all vertue, and experience Marcus Caraciolus, the Apostolicall chiefe Secretary, at this present chosen the Emperor Charles his Catinuesian Embassadour with you, who then way your vncles Secretary, when the Ocean first opened her gates vnto vs, which before, vntill these times, from the beginning of the worlde, were shutte. And at that time, he saith, in his maisters behalfe he receiued my letters, and made mee suche answer as his maister willed him to write. Ascanius being deade, and I growing slothfull, no manne inciting, and stirring mee vp, King Fredericke (before his fortune was changed from a milde and gentle mother, into a cruel stepdame) hadde receiued my second Editions by the hands of his cousin germaine, the Cardinal of Aragon: then, the Popes, Leo the tenth, and his successor Adrian the sixt, inueting me by their letters, and parchment patents, vsurped the body of my scattered Decades, perswading me, not to suffer a matter of so great worth, inuiously to lye buried in obliuion. And you most Noble Prince, lately borne, and lately advanced to the kingdome of your Ancesters, vnderstand what lately happened. Camillus Gelinus your excellencies Secretary, being Petitioner to the Emperour, I diuert these Narrations from other Princes, to your Excellencie the Lady, and mistres of my birth day. Among so many turbulent affaires, wherewith your Excellencie is incumbered, hee once or twice plainly protested with an oath, that it would be a most acceptable ease, & solace of your cares. From the first, and large bouytie of the Ocean, raised by Christophorus Columbus, whatsoever went before, euen vnto these narrations, Iacobus Pierrius carried in one bundell to his maister the chiefe Secretary, elected Catinuesian Embassadour (when hee departed from this legation vnto you in Cæsars behalfe), to be presented to Pope Adrian: which were partly published by the Printers meanes, and partly written by his owne hande, out of my first copies, and examples.

examples. He remaineth with your Excellencie vnder the same maister. For the things past, demaunde account of him, which if hee yeeld you not, he shall be accounted but a badde fellowe. Lette vs now briefly recite what nowe things the pregnant Ocean hath brought forth, a short epilogue (of what is past) going beforc. For this our Ocean is more fruitfull than an Albanian Sowe, which is reported to haue farrowed thirtie pigges at one time; and more liberall then a bountifull Prince. For euery yeere, it discovereth vnto vs new countries, and strange nations, and exceeding great riches. Concerning Hispaniola the Queene of that huge, and vast country, where the Seaate remaineth giuing lawes vnto the rest, and of Iamaica and Cuba, by a new name called Fernandina, and the rest of those Elisian Ilands, reaching vnto the equinoctiall; within the Tropick of Cancer, wee haue now sufficiently spoken: where none of the people vnderstand the difference of day & night all the yere long, where there is neyther hard and intemperate Summer, nor cold and frosty winter, where the trees also are greene all the yeere, laden with blossomes, and fruite together, nor all the yeere long are all manner of pulse, gouldes, melons, cucumbers, or other garden fruites wanting, where sockes, and heards of Cattle being brought thither (for no fourefooted beast naturally breedeth there) more fruitfully increase, and grow taller, and larger bodied: as also of the supposed Continent, which in length from East to West, thrice exceedeth all Europe, no lesse also somewhere extended from North to South; although elsewhere it be comprehended within narrow straights of land. That land of the supposed Continent is extended from 55. degrees, of the Pole Arctick diuiding both Tropicks, and the equator, to 54. degrees of the Antarticke Pole: where, at what time the Orcaides haue their Summer, they quake, and tremble, for frost and Ice, and so contrary. These things your Excellency may gather by a relation to Adrian the Pope, by mee compiled, and brought vnto the city with the rest; and plainly set downe in a short parchment-mapp, which I deliuered to your Secretary Thomas Maius, when hee departed hence. Therein your Excellency shall finde the situation of all those coasts, and countries, with their bordering Ilandes. Now, let vs hasten to relate things which more lately happened. On the North side of Hispaniola, and Cuba, otherwise called Fernandina, of Fernando the King, so great a multitude of noble and ignoble Ilandes lie, that I my selfe (to whose handes whatsoever cometh to knowledge, is brought) dare scarcely beleue the number of them, which are reported. Of those within these twentie yeeres, and more, in which the Spaniards (inhabitants of Hispaniola, and Cuba) haue had to doe with them, they say, they haue passed through 400. & carried away forty thousand of both sexes, into seruitude, to satisfie their insatiable desire of gold, as wee shall hereafter speake more at large. These they call by one name Iucaia, and the inhabitants Iucaij. Many of these Ilands consist of trees, growing of their owne nature, which are maruelous profitable. The leaues neuer fall from them, or if any fall through age, yet are they neuer left bare, for new begin to bud forth; beefore the olde leaues wither, and faile. Nature hath giuen them two excellent trees, most worthy to be remembered about the rest, the one they call Iatuma, the other they gaue no name. This Iatuma is like a figtree, not solid, after the manner of other trees, nor hollow, and empty, like a reede: but rather like fennell gyant, or the elder tree. It yeeldeth a kinde of fruite of a spanne and an halfe long, of the softnes of a figge, saury, and medicinall for the curing of woundes, the leaues wherof worke wonderfull effects: as certaine men of authority proued, by one example. Two Spaniards brawling, fought together, one of them, with one blow of a sword cut of almost the shoulder and arme of his aduersary, a little thin skin vnder the arme hole, where it is ioyned to the flanke, scarce sustaining the member. Whereupon an old Iucaian woman runneth vnto him, and stayeth vp the member fallen from his place, & layeth thereon the bruised leaues of that tree, without applying any other kinde of medicine, and within few dayes after they testifie, and affirme, they saw him whole, and sound. Who so seeke knots in rushes, let them champe, and ruminat hereon at their pleasure: but wee determine to beleuee, that this, and greater things in nature, may be done. They report, that the bark of this tree is slippery, and smooth, which not being solid, but full of pul, with little scraping is easily emptied, and made bare. Whereupon your

The fruitfullnes  
of the Ocean.  
Itt faller into  
the progress of  
Hispaniola, Iu-  
maica & Cuba.

The largenes of  
the supposed  
Continent.  
The situation  
thereof.

The multitude  
of Ilands on the  
North side of  
Hispaniola and  
Cuba.

40000. Iucania  
carried away  
thirty to 400  
yell.

Iucaia.

The kinde of  
the trees of  
these Ilands  
never fall.

Of the tree  
Iucania and of  
the wonderfull  
nature thereof.

your Excellency shall heare an accident most worthy the reporting, but vnhappy to the artificer, and contriuer thereof. The Iueij being violently taken away from their habitations and places of abode, liue in despaire: and many idle drones, refusing meate, lurking, and hiding themselves in the vnfrequented vallies, desert woods, and close, and darke rocks, gane vpp the ghost: others ended their hatefull life. But such as were of a stronger courage, vpon hope of recouering liberty, desired rather to liue. Many of these, peraduenture the wisest, if they had opportunity to escape, went vnto the more northerly partes of Hispaniola, from whence, the winds blew from their country, so that they might see the North pole a farr off: there, stretching out their armes, and with open mouth, they seemed to desire to sucke in their country breath by fetching of their wind, and many of them, breath fayling, fainting through hunger, felle downe dead. One of these more desirous of life, being a carpenter, and built houses in his countrie: (although they want Iron, and Steele, yet haue they axes, but made of stone, and other instrumētts and tooles, for that purpose) tooke vppon him a hard and difficult peice of worke, to bee beleecued. Hee cut of the body of the tree Laruma, and scraping out the pith, made it empty, and hollow, hee stuffed it with the graine Maizium, and gourdss filled with water, and kept a little without, for prouision of victuall, and so filled and stopped eiyther front or ende of the tree, and casting the beame into the sea, gate vp vpon it, and almitteth another man, and a woman skilful in swimming, who were of his kindred, and affinity, and with oares they drine the raft towards their country. This miserable man began that excellent inuention vnluckily, about some 200. miles off, they light on a shippe returning from Chichora, whereof wee will speake in his proper place: the Spaniards draw the mournfull pray into the shippe, brought the beame to Hispaniola, for a witnes and proofe of so strange a thing, and vsed that miserable store which was piled and heaped vp: many men of authoritie say, they both saw the beame of timber, and spoke with the Architect of that frame, & deuiſe: we haue now spoken sufficiently of the tree Laruma, and the circumstances thereof. There is another tree very like vnto a Pomegranate tree, & no bigger, but more full of leaues, of the fruit thereof, they yeeld no reason, of the barke which is taken from the tree, (as the corke tree which is rinded euery yeere to make slippers, and yet withereth not, nor dieth, or ceaseth to beare fruit as is reported also of the Cynamō tree) almost incredible things are spoken: yet I beleecue them who bitt, and tasted the barke brought from Hispaniola where this tree also groweth euery where, of the fruites whereof I sent to Ascanius Sfortia your vncle, when Colonus the first discoverer of these tractes and coastes, returning from his first voyage and nauigation, made mee partaker of many strange things. In the ende of the second Chapter of my first Decade, your Excellencie shall finde mention made hereof: that barke resembleth the taste or smacke of Cynamon, the bitternes or biting of Ginger, and the sweete smell, and odour of Cloues. Out of our dulnesse, wee seeke strange spices, which we should not want, if such as commonly grow in our llandes, were in vse, and request: as without doubt they wilbe hereafter. The cruell and vnstable hanger of gold, hath violently transported the minds of the Spaniards: to the onely loue thereof: other things being contemned, although worthily precious, and profitable, are reiected as vile, & contemptible. Behold, what I report of our pepper, sent to Ascanius together with the rest, which like mallowes and nettles with vs, groweth euery where in great plenty, which being bruised, & stamped, and the bread being infused, and mingled with water, all the Ilanders eate, whereof they say there are five kindes. This pepper is hotter then the Malabrian and Caucasean pepper, & where twenty graines of Malabrian and Caucasean pepper would not suffice, sine of these are enough, and they make the fleshe pottage of these five more sweete, and delicate, then of those twentie. The madnes of mankinde is so great, that what things he obtayneth with more difficulty, hee thinketh them to be more sweet, and profitable. This tree is famous onely for the barke, it sendeth forth for many furlonges, sauory, and pleasing smelles, and refreshing sauours, it reacheth out his broad boughes, and in the Iucian Ilands, it is very common. So great a multitude of Doves builde their nests among the boughes thereof, that of the next borderers the Bimini a great Iland, and the Inhabitantes of the countrie of Florida, passing ouer thither so catch

The desperate  
condicions of  
the eyrie  
Iucian Inlandes  
by the cruell  
Spaniard.

A most strong  
adventure and  
labourous of an  
Indi shote.

Glades.  
Of the barke of  
a tree there  
growing  
vnto us.

Asci seen  
sine.

Pepper.

Doves building  
in trees.

Doves,

Doucs, carry away whole shippes laden with their young: their woods are full of wild vines climbing vp the trees, as wee haue else where sayde of the woodds of Hispaniola. They affirme that the women of Iucaia were so faire that many Inhabitants of the bordering countries allured through their beauty, forsaking, & leauing their owne private houses, chose that for their country, for loue of them. Wherefore they say that many of the Iucaian Ilands, hie after a more ciuill manner, then in those countries which are further distant from Florida, and Bimini, more ciuill countries. It is a pleasant thing to heare how the women behaue. them in attyring themselues: for the men goe naked, but when they make warre, or vpon solemn holy daies giue themselues to dauncing, and tripping, and then for elegancy, and ornament they put on garments of diuers coloured feathers, and tufts, or plumes of feathers.

The women while their childish yeeres continue, before the pollution of their Menstrua, weare nothing at all. But after that, they couer their priuities with small meshed nets of bombasine cotton, wherein they put certaine leanes of herbes. When the Menstrua begin to come, as if she were to bee brought to a man to be married, the parents inuite the neighbours to a banquet, and vse all signes, and tokens of ioyfulness, and while they be marriageable, they couer no other parte at all. But being deflowred, they weare breeches down to the knee, made of diuers stiffe, and tough herbes, or of bombasine cotton, which naturally groweth there, of which they drawe threds and spinne, and sewe, and weaue them in: although they bee naked, yet for ornament of their beddes, and necessitie of their hanging cabins, they make sheetes or coverlets, which they call Amacas. They haue Kings whom they so reuerently obey, that if the King command any to leape downe headlong from an high rocke, or top of any steepe hill, alleading no other reason, but I command you to cast your selfe downe, he executeth the commandement of the King without delay, but within what bounds the regall authority is included, it is a sacred thing to be heard. The King hath no other care, but of the seede time, hunting, and fishing. Whatsoeuer is sowed, planted, fished, hunted, or effected by other artes, is done by the kings commandement: so that at his pleasure he diuideth these exercises and employments man by man. The fruites being gathered, are stored and layd vp in the Kings garners: and from thence, to the vse of the people, are diuided to euery one according to their families, all the yeere long. The King therefore as the king of Bees, is the distributor, and steward of his flocke, and people. They had the golden age, mine, and thine, the seedes of discord, were farre removed from them: the rest of the yeere from seede time, & harvest, they gaue themselves to seain; dancing, hunting, and fishing: concerning iudicall courts of Iustice, suits of law, & wrangling, and brawling among neighbours, there is no mention at all. The will & pleasure of the King was accounted for a law. The like was obserued in the other Ilands, in all of them, they were contented with a little: they find a certaine kind of precious stone vnder the water, among the redd shellfish, greatly esteemed of the, which they bring hanging at their eares. But they haue another more precious out of the great sea snailles, whose flesh is dainty meate, they finde redde translucent flaming stones in the braid of euery Sea snaille: such as haue seene any of them, say, they are no worse then the redd Carbuncle, comonly called the Rubie: they call the shellfish it selfe Cohobus, and the stones thereof they call Cohibici. They gather also bright and cleere stones vpon the land, of a yeallow, & blacke colour, of these, they bring chaines, & Jewels for ornamet of the armes, neckes, and legges, although they went naked, when they were Iucaians. I will now speake of the situation of their coutrie, and shortly touch their ruine and ouerthrowe.

## The second Chapter.

Ovr men suppose by coniecture that the Iucaia were sometimes ioyned to the rest of the great Ilandes, and that their ancestors so thought, the Inhabitantes themselues plainly conuince. But through violence of tempestes the earth beeing by little and little swallowed vpp, they were diuided each from the other, the Sea coming betweene them, as Authors are of opinion concerning the Messanensia straight, diuiding Sicilia from Italia, which in times past ioyned together. Wee see, and that euery-where, that land ariseth in many places, and daily.

The beauty of the women of Iucaia.

The clothes of the Iucaia like of maidens.

Causes of violence against nature and reason.

The kings care.

The golden age.

The kings pleasure a law.

Of certaine precious stones found in the Ilands and sea snailles.

The Iucaia supposed to be sometimes ioyned to the rest of the great Ilandes. The Messanensia straight between Sicilia and Italia.

dayly increaseth and driueth backe the Sea, as appeareth by the cities Rauenna, and Patanaum, which had the Sea neere vnto them, but now farre removed: and that the Sea is now in many places, where land was wont to be. By a present similitude therefore wee may make coniectures of things absent. They report that the greatest part of these Ilands were sometimes most happy and blessed with diuers commodities, and profits arising out of the earth, I say they haue been, because at this present they are desolate and forsaken, as shall be remembered in his place. They say that euery one of the lucian Ilands are from 12. to 40. miles in circuit about, & that ther is none greater, as we reade of the Strophades, & Symplegades of our Sea, assigned to the exiled Romans, with Giara, Scriphus, & many small Ilands besides. But they confesse these were sometimes filled with inhabitants, yet nowe desolate, for that they say, from the thicke heape thereof the miserable Ilanders were brought to the grieuous seruice and labour of the gold mines of Hispaniola, and Fernandina so that the inhabitants thereof sayled, about some twelue hundred thousande men being wasted and consumed, both through diuers diseases, and famine: as also through too much excessive labour and toyle. It greiueth mee to report these things, but I must speake truth: yet the Lucians were afterward-awegged for their destruction, by slaughtering them who violently carryed the away, as in my former Decades I mentioned at large. Through the desire therefore of hauing the Lucians, after the manner of hunters who pursue wilde beastes through the woodes of the mountaines, and marsh grounds, so certaine Spaniards in 2. barkes built at the charge of seuen men, passed ouer sea three yeeres since, out of the towne called the Hauen of Plate, situate on that side of Hispaniola, which looketh towards the North, to the Lucian Ilandes to take men. Although I now write these things, yet was I requested by Camillus Gillinus, to search out some things (not yet published) out of the printers presses concerning these discoveries, to bee directed to your Excellencie. They therefore went, and diligently searched all these Ilandes, but found no pray, because their bordering neighbours, hauing thoroughly searched the, had wasted, and depopulated them long before. And least their conuors should deride them, if they returned empty to Hispaniola, they directed their course to the North, of Charles wayne. Many say they lyed, who sayde they chose that way of their owne accorde, but they affirme by a suddaine tempest arising, and continuing for the space of two dayes, they were violently carried within the view of that lande, which wee will describe, hauing scene an high Promontorie a farre off. When our men made to the shoote, the Inhabitantes astonished at the miracle and strangenes thereof, thought some monster came vnto them, because they want the vse of shipping: at the first through the greedie desire of gasing, they ranne flocking together in troopes vnto the shoare, and presently (our menne landing with their boates) they all fledde away swifter then the winde, and left the shoare desolate: our menne pursue them bastinge away. Certaine more swift and nimble younge menne goe before the Troope, who making more speede, tooke two of them, a man, and a woman, who ranne more slowly then the rest, and bringeth them to the ships, apparelleth them, & let them go. Perswaded through that liberalitie, the inhabitants fill the shoares againe. Their King also vnderstanding how beautifully our men had dealt with them, and beholding the strange, and costly garments neuer scene before, for that they cloth themselves with the skins of Lyons or other beastes for the most part, sent fifty of his family vnto our men, laden with their country prouision. And whē they came a land, bee friendly and honourably received them, and being desirous to see the country neere there abouts, gaue them guides and companions to conduct them. Where-soeuer they went, the inhabitants of the Kingdome came wondering forth vnto them with presents as it were vnto the Godds which are to be adored, especially when they saw them bearded men, and clothed with linnen and silken garments. But what? The Spaniards at length violated the fidelitic of hospitalitic. For by craft, and diuers subtill deuises, after they had diligently searched out all, they practised, that on a day many of them should come together to see the shippes, so that the shippes were filled with beholders: and as soone as they had them full of men and women, weying ancor, and hoysing sayle, they brought them away mourning into seruitude. So of friendes, they left all those countiees, enemies, and of peaceable

The Lucian Ilands were depopulated by Spanish tyranny.

Menne killed by us, and they be beasts: who hunt for such as beastes.

2. ships set out to take men.

The Barbarians astonished at the view of the men and shippes fled away.

The Spaniards pursue and take two of them, a man and a woman.

Men clothed in fouldrins.

The barbarous King with presents of his countie prouision & friendly receiues them.

The treachery of the Spaniards which they used towards these last Barbarians.

One of the 2  
ships lost.  
A case of double  
Francis la non  
nolle/retrochary  
to escape you  
possible.

peaceable men, much disquieted, and discontented, having taken the children from the parents, and the husbands from their wives. But of those two shippes, one onely escaped, the other was neuer any more seene: they coniecture it was drowned with the guilty and guiltes, because it was an olde shippe. That spoyle was very offensive and greivous to the Senate of Hispaniola, yet they left them unpunished. And having consulted to sende the booty backe againe, nothing was put in execution, the difficulty of the matter being observed, especially that one was lost. I learned certaine particulars of these things, of a wise man skilfull in the law, a priest, called Basilius Alvarus a Castro. This Priest, for his learning, and honest behaviour was made a Deane of the Priory of the Conception in Hispaniola, who being Vicar, and Inquisitor also of heresie I may give the better credit vnto him in these things. As Pliny in the description of Taprobana, the dominion of Claudius, hearing of the fame of the Romans, saith that hee must give credit to the Embassadour, called Rachia sent from that King: with three companions, so Laiso in these things whereof I doubt, give credit to men of authority. This Priest also sayth, that after diuers complaints of those raishes, that the women brought from thence were apparelled with the skynes of Lyons: and the men with the skynes of other wild beastes whatsoever. Hee sayth, those kinde of men are white, and exceede the stature of common men. And being let goe at Hbette, he sayth they were found among the dungheilles betwene the trenches before the walles seeking the rotten carion of dogges, and Asses to eate, and at length the greatest part of them died through greife, and anguish of minde: the rest that remayned, were distributed among the Citizens of Hispaniola, to vse them at their pleasure, eyther at home, or in the gold-mines, or tillage of the grounde. Now let vs returne to their country, whence wee digressed: or to the Baechalais, discovered twenty sixe yeeres since from England by Cabotus, or Bacchalaïs, whereof wee haue else where spoken, at large, I suppose those countries ioyne together. I am therefore to speake now of their celestiall situation, ceremonies of Religion, profits and commodities of the countrie, and of the manners and customes of the people. They asseme, that they lie vnder the same altitude of Degrees, and the same parallles, vnder which Andaluza of Spaine lyeth. They thoroughly searched the cheife Countries Chicora, and Dubare in seve dayes space, and many of them farre extended into the lande ioyning together, where they cast ancor. They say, the Chicoranes are halfe swart or tawne, as our husbandmen are, burnt and tanned with the summer Sun. The men nourish their blacke haire downe to the girdle, and the women in longer traces round about them, both sexes tie up their hayre. They are beardlesse: whether by nature, or by arte by applying some kinde of medicaine, or whether they plucke of their hayre like the people of Tenusitan, it remaineth doubtful: howsoever it bee, they are delighted to shewe themselves smooth. I cite another witness of lesse authority among the laïke, then that Deane among the Clergie: his name is Lucas Vasquez Aigliouis a Licenciaste, a Citizen of Toledo, and one of the Senatours of Hispaniola, partner of the charge of those two shippes: who being sent Procurator from Hispaniola came vnto our Senate of the affaires of India, and hath bene a long while to haue leaue to depart againe vnto those Countreys, to builde a Colony there. He brought one of the Chicoranes with him (which were brought thither) to waite vpon him, whom, being baptised he called Francis, and gave him the surname of Chicora, of his native Countrey. While he stayed following his affaires, I sometimes had both Aigliouis the maister, and Chicora his seruant my guests. This Chicorane is so dull witted fellow, nor meanely wise, and hath learned the Spanish tongue indifferently well. Such things there as Aigliouis himselfe the Licenciaste shewed vnto me set downe in writing by report of his fellows, and which the Chicorane by worde of mouth confessed (very strange and admirable) I will heere recite. Let every one diminish or adde to the credit of the things I will report, according to his inclination. Enuy is a naturall plague bred in mankind, which neuer ceaseth to scratch, and compelleth to seeke brambles in other mens fields, although they be very cleane. This infectious disease chiefly raigneth in them, who are dull witted, or exceeding wise, who like vnpromisable burthens of the earth haue lead an idle

Of the Bac-  
chalaïs.

Of the Chicor-  
anes, their  
manners and  
customs.

Lucas Vasquez  
Aigliouis.

A Chicorane  
described  
Francis.

Envy the pest  
of virtue.

idle and slothfull life, without the study of learning: Leaving Chicora therefore, they went vnto the other side of that Bay, and tooke the Country called Duharhe: Aiglianus sayth the Inhabitants thereof are white, which also Franciscus the tawny-Chicorane with yallow long haire downe to the ancles, affirmeth. These people haue a King, of a gyant like stature, and height, called Dathu, and they say, that the Queene his wife, is not much shorter then himselfe: They haue five sonnes borne of them both, in steede of horses, the King vseth tall young men, who carry him on their shoulders, running to and fro, to the places and lodgings hee desireth. Heere diuers reporters compelled mee to doubt, especially the Deane, and Aiglianus, nor did Francis the Chicorane who was present, free vs from that controuersie. If I shall bee demanded, what I thinke; I should not suppose that so barbarous, and vniciuill a nation hath any horses: There is another country neere vnto this, called Xapida. This, they say, ingendreth pearles, and another kinde of precious stone of the earth, which they highly esteeme, much like vnto a pearle. In all the countries which they passed through, are heardes of Deere, as of oxen with vs: they soue at home, and reare them at home, and being loosed they wander through the woods as long as light lasteth, seeking pasture, and at euening they returne to visite their young, kept in the house, and suffer themselves to bee shutte vpp within penes, (and hauing fedd their yong) to be milked. They haue so other milke, or cheese made of other milke: They nourish many kindes of foule to bee fatted, as hens, ducks, geese, and such like: Their bread is made of Maizium, as with thelanders; but they haue not the roote lucca; whereof Cazabi is made which is the food of the Nobility. The graine Maizium is very like to our Panicke of Lusabria, but in bignes equalleth the pulse of pease: they soue also another kinde of corne, called Xathi, they suppose it to bee Milium or Millet: now doe they certainly affirme it, especially, because sent of the Castellanes vnderstand what milium is, seeing they neuer sowe it in Castile. They haue some kinds of Batatas, but very little. Batatas are rootes to bee eaten, as radishes, carrots, parnepps, turnepps, and rape rootes vs: of these, and lucca, and the rest seruing for foode, I haue abundantly spoken in my former Decades. They name many other countries, which they thinke to bee vnder the gouernement of one and the same King: Hitha, Xamunambe, Tibe. In this country they make report of a priestly attire differing from the people, and they are accounted for priests, and are had in great reuerence by the other bordering countries. The inhabitants hereof cut their haire, leaving onely two curled locks hanging downe from their temples, which they tye vnder their chinnes: When (as the pestilent custome among men is) they go forth to warre against the borderers, either party sendeth for them to the campe, not that they shoulde fight, but to be present at the battaile. Now when they are ready to come to handy strokes, & to incouter, they compass them al sitting, or lying along vpon the ground, & wet and besprinkle them with the iuice of certain herbes chewed w their teeth: (as our priests going to diuine seruice, sprinkle the people with a wett bough or branch) which ceremony performed; they suddenly sally forth, & invade the enemy. But they are left to guard the campe. The fight & colliet being ended, they cure aswell wounded enemies, as frends without any difference at all & carefully apply themselves to bury the dead corpes of the slaine: These people eate not mans flesh: the conquerors haue those that are taken in battaile for their bondslaves. The Spaniards trauiled through many Countries of that greate Prouince, whereof they named these: Arambe, Guacacia, Quothat, Tanzaca, Pahor, the Inhabitantes of all which are somewhat tawny and swart. None of them haue any letters, but an hereditary memorie of antiquities left them from their ancestors, which they celebrate, & solemnize in rimes, and songs. They exercise dauncing and skipping, and are delighted with the play of the ball, wherein they are very nimble & skillfull: The women seue, and spinne, and although for the most part they are clothed with the skinnes of wilde beastes, yet haue they Gosampine cotton, which our Insulber called Bombasino, and they make threede of the inner rindes of certaine sougth herbes, suche as hempe, or flaxe is with vs: There is another Country called Inzigama: The Inhabitantes by report of their succitours

The Inhabitantes of the country of Duhare white.

Of Dathu that vseth like King.

Xapida where are pearles. Of Deere that are herceally tame as oxen and kine. Deere milke and cheese made thereof and no other.

A kinde of corne called Xathi.

Reason for traue.

Hitha, Xamunambe, Tibe. A priestly order.

Eare locks (a pestilent custome) here in vs.

A ceremony (of besprinkling the priests) much like the Popish holy water.

He writes this as a wonder. Arambe, Guacacia, Quothat, Tanzaca, Pahor.

Their celebration of rimes and songs.

Their threede made of the inner rindes of herbes.

A fabulous  
tradition of  
men with long  
tayles.

say, that a people as tall as the length of a mans arme, with tayles of a spanne long, sometimes arrived there, brought thither by Sea, which tayle was not moucable or wauer-  
ing, as in foure footed beastes, but solide, broad aboue, and sharpe beneath, as wee see in fishes, and Crocodiles; and extended into a bony hardnesse. Wherefore, when they desired to sitt, they vsed seates with holes through them, or wanting them, digged vpp the earth a spanne deepe; or little more, they must conuay their tayle into the hole when they rest them: they fabulously reporte that that nation hadd fingers as broad as they were long, and that their skinne was rough; and almost scaly. And that they were accustomed onely to eate rawe fish, which sayhu; they say all dyed, and that they left no posterity of them behind them. They reporte, these, and many such idle vaine thinges were left them by tradition from their grandfathers, and parents. Now let vs come vnto their religious rites and ceremonies.

### The third Chapter.

Where Kinges  
Pallaces are  
honoured as  
Churches.

They want Temples, so that Kinges Pallaces are honoured of them as Churches: where-  
of they bring one example: wee sayd that in the Prouince Duhare, there is a Gyant King  
called Datha: in whose stonẽ Court (for other houses are built of slender timber, and  
couered with reede or grasse) they found two Images male and female, of the bignes of  
a childe of three yeres old, which they call by one name Inamahari. In this pallace there is  
a recit for Images: They are seene twice euery yeere; once in the time of sowing, that  
the seede time may be well, and happily begun, and prosperously succede, they devoutly  
pray: the second time, concerning the fruits of the harvest, in thanksgiving if it fell out  
well; if otherwise, that they may more luckily succede, & that auaying their anger, the  
gods would carry themselves more peaceably towards them the next yeere. The Images  
are carryed forth with solemaẽ pompe, and frequent concourse of the people: but after  
what manner, it will not be vnfit to bee heard. The night before the holy day of adora-  
tion, the King himselfe, hauing his bedd made in the Images chamber, sleepeth before  
the Images. The day beginning to appeare, the people run vnto him: The King himselfe  
bringeth the Images in his armes close vnto his breast: and sheweth them on high vnto the  
people, which Images together with the King, the people kneeling or prostrate on the  
ground with reuerent trembling, and feare, and loud voyces, salute. Then presently the  
King departing, bindeth them to the breasts of two old men of approved authority, with  
linen clothes after their manner fairely wrought of cotton. They bring them out decked  
with garments of feathers of diuers colours, and accompany them vnto the open fielde with  
hymnes, and songs, or with daunting and skipping of young men and maidens: And at  
that time it is not lawfull for any to stay at home, or to be else where: not onely hee who  
should be absent should be taxed with the sinne and fault of heresie; but also hee who  
should exercise this ceremony coldly, or disorderly: The men accompany them the  
whole day, and the women all the night: long with the Images, shewing all signes of ioy-  
fullnesse, and arguments of adoration, sleepe not at all. And lastly, the next day, they  
are carryed back againe vnto the Pallace after the same order that they were brought forth.  
Thus much be spoken concerning their Images, from which they thinke they shall obtaine  
fertilitie of the fieldes, health of their bodies, and peace, or victory if they be in battayle,  
if they reuerently and rightly sacrifice vnto them: They sacrifice as they did in old time,  
with cakes made of corne: and they thinke their prayers shall be heard for the increase and  
fruites of the field, especially if they be mingled with teares. There is another holy day  
euery yeere, wherein they place a rude wooden statue; or Image in the field, vpon an high  
pole fastened in the earth, accompanied with the same traine that the former were, &  
hauing pitched lesser stakes, they goe about the former greater pole. And vpon these stakes  
the people (euery one according to his ability) hang gifts of diuers sorts vnto the Idol,  
which at night the nobles diuide among them, as our priests doe the cakes or wafers which  
women offer, or other gifts whatsoever. He that bestoweth the best oblations vpon the  
Idol, is accounted more honorable: Witnesses stand by to receiue them, in steed of  
Notaries,

Adoration of  
Images & their  
miser Ceri-  
monies.

Offering to  
Images.

Their emulation  
in giving.

Notaries, who (when the holy ceremonies are ended) recite what euery one hath giuen. Moued through that ambition, neighbour striueth earnestly to exceede neighbour. From Sunne rising vntill the Eueniug, they leape, and skip about the idoll with much shouting, & clapping of hands for ioy, and in the first twilight of the night, hauing taken it from the pole, if they bee borderers vpon the Sea, they throw it headlong into the Sea, if of the Riuers, they drowne it in the rypon, and it is no more seene, so that euery yeere they make a new one. They haue a third festiuall day, wherein hauing taken the bones of a certaine old dead corse out of the graue, they erect a wodden pauillion in the field, after the maner of a tent. But the top being open, that they may behold heauen, laying a floore of boordes in the middle space of the pauillion, they sett vpp the bones which they had taken out of the earth. Women only stand about them mourning, and euery one of them according to their wealth and abilitie offer answerable gifts. The next day, they are carryed backe againe vnto the graue, and are accounted for an holy relique: the bones being buried, or readie to be buried, the chiefe priest playing the parte of an Orator, out of a pulpit in the midst of the throng of people standing round about, preacheth and discourseth many things of the prayse of the dead; and then presently, more of the immortality of the Soule, and lastly whether they goe. They say that they first goe to the colde Northerne partes, and to the countreyes congealed with snow, and are expiated and purged with a King (who is Lorde of all the earth) called Matecungua: and after that, they tome another way to the South countreyes, vnto the iurisdiction and dominion of another great Prince called Quexuga, who being milde and bountifull, yet lame, offereth them a thousande delights and pleasures: where they perswade the people, the soules enjoy eternall delights, among the dancing, and songes of young maidens, and among the embracements of their children, and whatsoever they loued hetherofore, they babble also there, that such as growe olde, waxe young againe, so that all are of like yeeres full of ioy and mirth. These thinges are deliuered by worde of mouth and tradition from the Elders to the younger, for a most sacred and true hystoric, insomuch as he who but seemed to thinke otherwise, shoulde bee thrust out of the society of menne: They thinke also that men liue vpon the wheele or orbes of the heauens, and make no doubt of the Antipodes. They beleuee there are Godds in the Sea, and boldly play the children as lying Grecia did, who fable of the Nereides, and Sea Godds: Glaucus, Phorcus, and the rest. These thinges thus ended by a sermon, hee seemeth to purge the people departing, and absolute them from their sinnes, applying the fume of certayne herbes vnto their nostrils, breathing and blowing vpon them, and whisperinge somewhat vnto them. Hecce vpon the people returne home ioyfully, beleueing that the famed deuises of that coesening deceiver are profitable not onely for the ease and comfort of the soule; but also for their bodily health. They also beguile the ignorant and sottish common people with another deceit, their chiefe Prince dying, remoouing all witnesses from him when hee is readie to giue vpp the ghost, they stand about him, and by their subtill deuises secretly faine, that when his last breath issueth out, sparkles of fire, & hot imbers come forth, as fro firebrands shaken, newly taken out of the burning fire, or from sulphury papers cast vpon high for sport and pastime. These counterfeit the dauncing and skipping Roebuckes, or wilde goates, which the people suppose to be shooting starres, running hither and thither in the ayre, and presently vanish: for at what time hee yeeldeth vp the ghost, that sparkling flame ariseth vp with a horrible cracke, three armes lengths high, & there vanisbeth: that flame they salute for the soule of the dead, and giue it the last farewell, and accompany the same with lamentations, teares, and howlinges, being so perswaded, they thinke it is departed vnto Heauen. Lastly wailing, and weeping they carry the dead corse to the graue. It is not lawfull for widdowes to marry any more, if the husband dyed a naturall death, but if he were putt to death by sentence of the iudge she hath liberty to marry. This nation loueth chastitie in women, and hateth lewde and dishonest women, and baniseth them from the company & society of the chast. Princes are permitted to haue two wiues, the common people but one onely. The men diligently apply themselves to mechanicall arts, chiefly to the Carpenters trade, and dressing of wilde beasts

O miserable god that searcheth the secrets and that is drownd.

Their conceit of the immortalitye of the soule whether it goes.

The perfect subjects from sinners.

A policy used at their Princes death.

Widdowes haue may not marry againe if their husbands die a naturall death. Chastitie in women.

Their custom of  
the fern, the  
same with ours.  
Theeves and  
robbers severly  
punished.  
Navye boone of  
Gentry and  
dismayd money.  
Their sports.

skines: the women are appointed to exercise the distaffe, spindle and needle. They divide the yeere into twelue moones, and they have magistrates in these countries, for execution of Justice: They punish wicked and mischievous malefactors, with severe judgement, especially theeves and robbers: Their kings are rayants, wherof I have already made mention: and all those countries are tributarie: Every one of them pay tribute of their profits, and revenues, and because they are not cumbrd with deadly and dimmed money, they trade each with other by bartering, and changing their commodities. These people are also delighted with sports and pastimes, especially with the play of the ball, or tennis; and also with topps or gigger driven upon tables, as likewise in shooting their arrows at a marke. Their nightly lightes are torches, and oyle of diuers fruites, although they plant olive trees: They are delighted in feasting one another: and live long: and olde age is strong in them. They easily cure fevers with the iuyce of herbes, and easily heale woundes, so they be curable: They have, and know many kinds of wholesome herbes, if any percieve himselfe oppressed with sharp cholles, drinking the iuyce of a certaine common herbe called Guacum, or eating the same herbe, hee vomiteth cholles, & shortly recovereth health: And they vse no other kind of medicine, or will use any other phisitions, then experienced olde women, or priestes skillfull in the vertues of secreete herbes. They also want our wanton superfluities, and having not Arabian odours, perfumes, and strange spices, contenting themselves with such things as naturally grow in their country, they live more cheerefully, in better health, and are more lusty, and strong in their old age. They have small care to please appetite, with diuers and sundry daintie meates, little sufficeth them. They feruently and zealously adore their gods: whatsoever, wherof they make chbyce. It is a ridiculous thing to heare with what gesture the people salute their Princes, and how the Prince being saluted, intertaineth them, especially the Nobles. The Saluter, in token of reuerence listeth vp both his hands as high as his nose, and then presently stretcheth out his handes to his forehead, and the forepart of the head with a certaine shrill screeking bowling almost like a Bull. The Prince receiveth the peoples salutation without any signe of courtesie, but answereth the salutation of a Noble man, by bowing downe his head to his left shoulder, not speaking a worde. But your Excellence shall heare an incredible intencion. I mentioned that the chiefe tyrant or lord of those countries, was of a giant like stature: Aiglionus the Licenciate, a grane man, and of authority, (of whom I made mention beefore) as hee had heard by them who were partners with him in the charge of building the ships, and Francis his household servant by report of the borderers, being demanded, why he alone and his wife should attaine to that wisenes and height of body, and none of the people besides, say, that this gift is not hereditary vnto the by nature, or from their birth, that they should exceede other by that prerogative: but that it proceedeth from violent art, after this manner: while the infants dre in the cradell, and vnder the breastes of the nurses, the masters of that art are sent for, who amount the severall members of the infant for certayne dayes, with medicines of certayne herbes which molliſie the tender bones, so that the bones being presently conuerted into the softnesse of luke warme waxe, they so stretch them out in length often times, that they leave the poore miserable infant almost halfe dead, and after that they feed the nurse with certayne meates of powerfull vertue. Lastly the nurse giueth it the breast, while it lyeth couered in warme clothes, and refreshed, and cheereth the infant with milke gathered from substantiall meates: and after some fewe dayes of refreshing, they returne to the dolefull seruice of wresting and winding of the bones againe. This Aiglionus, and Francis his serua, the Chlicorane, report. But the Deane of the Conception, of whom I have made mention before, tolde me that hee heard otherwise (of them who were stolne away with the shippe which escaped) then Aiglionus his companions told him, both of the medicines, and art augmenting the body: for he saith, it is not done by wresting of the bones, but eating of a certayne stuffing meate verie nutritiue, made of diuers herbes stamped together fit for that purpose, especially when they begin to grow in yeeres, at what time nature tendeth to increase, and the meates are turned into flesh, and bones. Surely it is maruelous, these things notwithstanding considered, what strange matters are reported of

Yeuere cured  
with the iuyce of  
herbes.

Cholles cured  
with the herbe  
Guacum.

There is neither  
wine, in the  
west of Europe.  
Babians.

Natures power.

Their ridiculous  
salutation of  
their prince.

A maruelous  
report.

the chiefe tyrant or lord of those countries, was of a giant like stature: Aiglionus the Licenciate, a grane man, and of authority, (of whom I made mention beefore) as hee had heard by them who were partners with him in the charge of building the ships, and Francis his household servant by report of the borderers, being demanded, why he alone and his wife should attaine to that wisenes and height of body, and none of the people besides, say, that this gift is not hereditary vnto the by nature, or from their birth, that they should exceede other by that prerogative: but that it proceedeth from violent art, after this manner: while the infants dre in the cradell, and vnder the breastes of the nurses, the masters of that art are sent for, who amount the severall members of the infant for certayne dayes, with medicines of certayne herbes which molliſie the tender bones, so that the bones being presently conuerted into the softnesse of luke warme waxe, they so stretch them out in length often times, that they leave the poore miserable infant almost halfe dead, and after that they feed the nurse with certayne meates of powerfull vertue. Lastly the nurse giueth it the breast, while it lyeth couered in warme clothes, and refreshed, and cheereth the infant with milke gathered from substantiall meates: and after some fewe dayes of refreshing, they returne to the dolefull seruice of wresting and winding of the bones againe. This Aiglionus, and Francis his serua, the Chlicorane, report. But the Deane of the Conception, of whom I have made mention before, tolde me that hee heard otherwise (of them who were stolne away with the shippe which escaped) then Aiglionus his companions told him, both of the medicines, and art augmenting the body: for he saith, it is not done by wresting of the bones, but eating of a certayne stuffing meate verie nutritiue, made of diuers herbes stamped together fit for that purpose, especially when they begin to grow in yeeres, at what time nature tendeth to increase, and the meates are turned into flesh, and bones. Surely it is maruelous, these things notwithstanding considered, what strange matters are reported of

413  
 1615  
 1616

the vertues of hearbes, if their secret power were rightly vnderstood, I shoulde thinke it might be possible. But, that kings onely may lawfully eate thereof, for the reason is playne and easie. He should be accounted guiltie of high treason, who durst presume so much as to eat those delicacies, or woulde require the order or manner of that Composition of the makers and deuisers thereof, because he might seeme: to desire to compare himselfe with kings, and with them, it is an vndecent thing and without maiesty. that the King should not exceede the common stature, who must looke downe from on high (vpon such as come vnto him) by being higher then they, or ouerpeering them. This they gaue vs to vnderstande, and this we signifie. Lette your Excellence giue credite thereto, as you please. Wee haue spoken sufficiently of the ceremonies of their religion, and of their manners and customes: let vs nowe come to the giftes of wilde nature growing in the fields. Wee haue already spoken of their breade, and sorts of flesh, it now followeth that we speake somewhat of trees.

The reason why their kings should exceed others in stature.

## The fourth Chapter.

They founde there growing of their owne nature whole woodes of oake, Pines, and Cypress, and Chesnutt, & Almond trees, & wild vines blacke, & white, climbing vpon the boughes of trees, without the vse of wine pressed from them, for they make drink of diuers fruites. That country also yeeldeth figgetrees, and Olive trees of diuers kinds: and being grafted these their wildnes, as with vs, which without culture would retain the rude tast of nature onely. They plant orchards, or gardens, & abound with diuers sortes of pot hearbes and are delighted with greene plottes of ground, or gardens finely manured and dressed. They also nourish trees in their orchards. There is a particular tree called Carito, which bringeth fourth a saury fruite aqull in bignesse to a small Melon: there is also another called Guacomic, which yeeldeth a kinde of fruite greater than a Quince, they say it is of an excellent, and pleasing tast, and very wholesome. They plant and regarde many other besides, and many other kindes of thinges; whereof, least by reporting all at onc wee overcharge and cloy your Excellencie, we will elsewhere speake. We caused Licentiaus Aigliorus the Senator to obtaine his desire: so that now he is sent away from vs and from Cæsars maiestic through our perswasion. Hee determineth to builde a newe flecte in Hispaniola, to passe ouer to those coastes, to plant a Colonie: nor shall he want folowers: for all this Spanish nation, is so desirous of nouelties, that what way soeuer they bee called with a becke onely, or soft whispering voyce, to any thing arising aboue water, they speedily prepare themselves to the, and forsake certainties vnder hope of an higher degree, to followe incertainties: which wee may gather by that which is past. With what stomacke they shall be receiued of the inhabitants so greatly weakened by rauishment of their children and kindred, time shall be Iudge. The like accident commeth to minde (though out of order) not to be omitted, concerning the Lucian handes, brought by the Spaniards, inhabitants of Cuba and Hispaniola, to the grieuous seraice, and slauey, of the Goldmines. When the Spaniards vnderstood their simple opinions concerning the soules, which (after their sinnes purged in the cold Northern Mountaynes) should passe into the South to the intent that leauing their native countrey of their own accord, they might suffer themselves to be brought to Hispaniola and Cuba whiche lye in the southwarde of those handes, they inducoured to perswade those poore wretches, and did perswade them, that they came from those places, wher they should see their parents, & children, & al their kindred, & friends that were dead: & should inuoy al kind of delights, together with y<sup>e</sup> embracements & fruition of beloued thinges. Being infected, and possessed with these crafty & subtil imaginatiōs, by their own cozening deceiuers, as I mentioned before, & after by the Spaniards, singing and reioycing, they left their countrey, and followed vayne, and idle hope. But, when they sawe, they were deceiued, and neither met their parentes, nor any they desired, but were compelled to vndergoe grieuous soueraignty and commaunde, and to endure cruell and extreame labours vncustomed, becoming desperate, they either stowe themselves, or choosing to famish, gaue vpp their faint spiritz, being perswaded, by no reason, or violence, to take foode, as I haue elsewhere sayde.

Vines without knowledge of their vse.

The tree Carito.

The tree Guacomic.

The Spaniards arent in pursuit of nouelties.

The policies of the Spaniards whereby they brought the Indians into slauey.

sayde. So the miserable lucians came to their ende: of whom, the number with the Spaniards is now very small, as of the inhabitants themselves. But I suppose, that at the complayntes and pittifull grones of those wretched innocents, some diuine power being prouoked, affirmed reuenge of so great a slaughter, and peace of so many nations disturbed, because they confessed they were moued vnder pretence of increasing religion, and yet without any regarde they turne them to ambitious avarice, and violence. For whosoever were the first attempters or invaders, doing otherwise then their Kinges commaunded them, were either slayne by them that they oppressed, or shott with poisoned arrowes, or drowned in the sea, or grievously afflicted, fel into diuers diseases: for the decrees of the Lawes giuen them (by my testimonie, who daily considered thereof with my associates) were so framed according to equitie and iustice, that nothing might be more sacred and honest. For it was decreede for many yeeres, that they shoulde deale courteously, mercifully, and peaceably with those strange nations borne vnder the honour of age, and that the Kinges with their subiectes assigned to every one of the Kinges bounty, should bee vsed like tributary subiectes, and ditionaries, and not in a seruile manner, and that giuing them a due portion of flesh and breade, they shoulde bee well fedde to sustayne labour: that all necessaryes shoulde bee giuen them, and for their digging and myning in the day, they shoulde rewarde them with clothing and appoynted ornaments as mercenaries, that they shoulde not want lodgings for their nightly rest, that they shoulde not bee rayzed before the sunne rising, and bee brought home before the euening, that at certayne times of the yeere being freed from the golde-mines, they shoulde apply themselves to the setting of the roote luca, and sowing the graine Maizium: that vpon holy dayes they should cease from all worke, be present at the churches, and presently after the holy ceremonies of religion ended, they shoulde permit them to apply themselves to their accustomed sports, and dancings, and many things besides compacted and composed with prudent and humane reasons, by suche as were skillfull in the Lawe, and religious men. But what? falling downe through the descending Ocean (which imitateth the whirling course of the heauens) to so strange, forraigne, and removed worldes, far distant from their Generalls and Commanders, carryed violently away through the blinde desire of golde, they who departed hence milder then Lambs, arryuing there, were changed into rauening Woolues: vaminidial of all their Kinges commaundements. Many of them are both reprooued, fined, and punished: yet the more carefully the heads of Hydra are cut off, we see them arise and bud forth the more. I rest in that prouerbe: wherein many offend, that remaineth alwayes vnrueged. We now begin to make new Constitutions, & decrees, and purpose to send new Governours: determining to try, what fortune will haue vs doe with them that are left. And whether they ought to be free, and no labour exacted of any of them vnrillingly, nor without rewarde, we make some doubt. For through the diuers opinions of grave men, wee are ambiguously distracted: especially through the opinions of the religious of the Dominican profession, who perswade vs to the contrarie by their writings vnder their owne handes: affirming that it will bee muche better, and more secure for them, & more profitable for the health of the body, and saluation of their soules, if they bee designed to a perpetual hereditary obedience, then if they bee putte to temporary seruices, because they to whom hitherto they haue become commended, at the kings pleasure, and in the name and behalfe of another who was absent, handled the matter as mercenaries. And seeing they feared, lest after some fewe yeeres they shoulde be taken from them, as it is usually doone, hauing no rewarde of the benefite of those poore wretches contrary to the articles & summe of holy lawes and constitutions, they vexed and pined both sexes in the gold-mines euen vnto the death, without respecting their age, so they might satisfy their maisters thirst of gold, and their owne. They giue them neither necessaryes to maintaine life, nor provided for their health, if it so happened, that through vnaccustomed and too much labour they fainted, and fell downe. Contrarily they say, that he who vnderstandeth that the Indians are appoynted to be transferred ouer to his heire, will inducours as in his proper substance, not onely that they be preserued in health, but also will carefully provide that the number of them may be increased by the pleasures

The Spaniards pretend conceits but exercise subuersion and detestable cruelties.

A recital of certaine decrees will make best be observed by the Spaniards.

The heads of Hydra.

What heere should be to be giuen to the Indians.

received

received of their wives and children. But they viterly deny to give them liberty, by many examples alledged. That those Barbarians could neuer attempte the destruction of the Christians, but that they executed their purposes and deuises and when it hath bene often proued whether libertie might bee profitable, it is manifestly knowne that it bred their ouerthrowe and ruine. For being idle and slothfull, they wander vp & downe, and returne to their olde rites and ceremonies, and soule and mischieuous actes. The thirde particular cause is horrible and fearefull, whereby it is proued, that especially in the supposed Continent, they are not worthy of liberty. In a certaine parte of a great Prouince of the supposed Continent in the countrey called Chiribichi, the Fryars of the Dominican profession, some twelue yeers since erected a temple. Through a thousands miseries of labours, and hunger, they nourished and maintained the children of kinges and nobles, and when they came to more yeers they endeouored to drawe them to religion, exhorting, admonishing, and teaching them by intermixing faire and courteous vsage. And they had so instructed many of their children, that they ministred at the altars to such as had entred into religion, and had to doe with the holy misteries, and that not rudely, and vnaptly, and vnderstoode the Spanish tongue very well. But your Excellencie shal heare an horrible wicked act committed by them. Their childish yeeres being past, scarce attaining the age wherein the tender downe beginneth to budde forth the chief manne of them that were instructed, whom they thought they hadde nowe drawne from the brutish nature of their ancestors to the doctrine of CHRIST, and to humane rites, determining to sic for succour, putting on their olde skirne lyke Woolles, received agayne their ancient and natue vices, and corruptions, and hauing procured a great army of the bordering neighbours, they being their Captaynes and guides, went and assaulted the Monastery, where they hadde bene brought vp with fatherly charity. The Monastery being vanquished, and viterly ouerthrowne, they slewe them that brought them vpe, and their fellows euery manne. Omitting circumstances, that after my sharpe accusations, you may knowe the Spanyards deserued some excuse, if they denie that liberty should be given them, your Excellencie may reade one of the letters deliuered in our Indian Senate by certaine Fryars which escaped, by reason they were absent at that time in seeking prouision of foode for the rest. And this letter or handwriting was presented vnto vs when we were assembled with the chief manne of our Senate Gaspar Louiza, a learned man in Italy, the Osomènsian Prelate and (to speake after the vulgar manner) Cesars Confessor, of the order of preaching Fryars, elected generall maister at Rome for his desert, to whom your Excellencie is neyther vnknowne, nor ill accepted: receiue it therefore in the Spanish language it selfe (for to any Latinist, or Italian, it will bee easie to bee vnderstoode by reason of the affinity and propinquitie of the tongues) and I purposed so to doe, least any might argue, that I hadde changed any thing from the sense of the thing, or intent of the sender, through my translation. Lette vs therefore heare the Fryar himselfe, called Fryar Thomas Ortizitis speaking Viua Voce before the Senate, and writing in the name and behalfe of others:

Of a wicked  
practice of cor-  
rupting young men  
of the Indians.

Estas son las propiedades de los Indios, por donde no merecen libertades.

Comen carne humana en la tierra firme: son Sodometicos mas que generacion alguna: ninguna lutticia ay entre ellos: andan desnudos, no tienen amor, ni vergenencia: son estobidos, alocados: no guardan verdad, si no es a su prouecho: son inconstantes: no saben que cosa sea conseo: son ingratisimos, y amigos de nouedades. Se precian de embeudarse que tienen vintos de diuerzas yerbas, y fructos, y granos, como Zerueza, y sidras, y con tomar fumos tambien de otras, yerbas que emborrachen, y con comerlas. Son bestiales, y precian se de ser abominables en vicio: ninguna obediencia, ni cortesia tienen macos a vicios, ni hijos a padres. No son capaces de doctrina, ni castigo: son traydores, crueldes, y vengatiuos, que nunca perdonan, inimicisimos de religion. Son haraganes, ladrones, son de iuyzios, muy terrestres, y baxos: no gardan fee, ni orden. No se guardan lealtad maridos a mugeres, ni mugeres a maridos. Son echizeros, y augureros, y comenles como liebres. Son Sauios: comen pioios, y arrañas, y gusanos crudos, doquiera que los hallan: no tienen arte ni manna de hombres. Quando an apprendida las cosas de la fee, dizen, que essas cosas son, para Castilla, que

que para ellos no valen nada, y que no quieren mudar costumbres: son sin barbas, y si algunas les nascen, pelan las y arrancanlas. Con los enfermos no tienen piedad ninguna: esta grave el enfermo, a vn que sea su pariente, ó Vezino le desamparan, ó heuan a los montes a morir, y dexan tabe el vn poco de pan y agua, y vanse: quanto mas crecense hazen peores: hasta diez o doze años parece que an de salir con alguna crianca, y virtud; passando adelante, se tornan como bestias brutas. En fin digo, que nunca crio Dios tan cozida gente en vicios, y bestialidades, sin mistura alguna de bondad ó policia. Agora juzgen las gentes para que pueda ser cepa de tan malas manas y artes: los que los sucosos tractado esto auiamos experimentado.dellos. Mayormente el padre fray Pedro de Cordous, de cuya mano yo tengo escrito todo esto y lo plaucamos en vno con otras cosas que me callo; hallamos a Dios vistas: son inescusatos como asnos; y no tienen en nada malarse.

These, and such like other things daily offer themselves in controuersie, which although they bee diuersly disputed, haue almost fallen blouddily vpon the heades of the oppressors, as I sayde, before, nor did the priuate grudges and dissensions arising for soueraignie take away a smol number of the Spaniards themselves, whereof I haue discoursed at large in my former Decades, where I spake of the Pinzones, the inhabitants of two townes Palos, and Moguer, on the Ocean shore, in Andaluzia, who running hither and thither along the vast shores of the supposed Continent, and the banks of that miraculous river Maragnon, were shotte through, and slayne with poisoned arrows by the inhabitants who were Caniballes, and then dressed, and serued in, in diuers dishes, as delicacies to bee eaten: for the Caniballes, otherwise called Caribes, are men eaters. Of Solisius to who the same happened on the backe side of the supposed Continent from whose horrible mischance name was giuen to that gulf of the sea, where Magaglianus stayed a long time with his secte in his journey. After this of Alphonsus Fogeda, and Iohn Cosa who with a strong army of souldiers searching the countries of Cumana, Coqui, Bacoba, Cauchietus, and Vrabia vnhappily lost their liues. Of Diecus Nicuesa, commander of 800. men or therabouts, lost after these, while wandering from the western Bay of Vrabia, he searched the coaste of Beragua. Of Iohannes Pontius ouerthrowne by the naked Barbarians, and wounded vnto death in the country of Florida first founde out by him, who afterward lying long sicke, and languishing through that wounde, dyed in the Ilande of Cuba, and of many commanders, and armies besides slaine through the might and fortitude of the Caniballes, to whom they made dainty banquettes with their bodies: for the Caribes were found with a flecte of Canoes, to haue sayled many leagues from their borders in warlike manner and battayle array, to take men: their Canoes are boats made of one tree or peece of tymber (in Grecke called Monoxulou) whereof some of them are capable of 80. rowers.

Lastly, of Diecus Velasquez gouernor of Cuba called Bernardino, from exceeding great wealth and ryches brought vnto pouerty, and nowe at length dead, and of Bernardus Cortes disagreeing with deadly hatred among themselves, I haue at large discoursed of all these, Cortes onely as yet flourisheth, who is supposed to haue heaped vp treasures (in that great citie of the lake Tenusitlan, vanquished & destroyed) to the summe of thirty hundred thousande Pensa, and this Pensa exceedeth the Spanish Ducate a fourth part, or quadrant: for hee commandeth many cities and Princes, with whose there is great plenty of gold; both of the ryuers and Mountaynes, nor doe they want rich eares of gold mines, but in his case peradventure the generall proverbe will preuaile, concerning his money, fidelity, and treasure, that much lesse wilbe founde, at his departure, then same reporteth: which time shall discover.

Iohannes Ribera, known to the Embassadour Thomas Moyses, and Guillimus Cortes his agent with Cesar, brought vp with him from his youth and partaker of all his noble and worthy acts and attempts, saith that his master Cortes hath 300000. Pensa prepared to be sent to the Emperof. But being aduertised of the taking of so many ladē ships by the French Pirates, he dare not send them away. There are also in the supposed Continent, and Hispaniola, Cuba, and Iamaica, exceeding great riches prepared, of golde, pearle, sugar, & Cassia fistula growing in the Ilands, of Cotiman or Coccinean wood also, vsed for the dying of wooll (which the Italian calleth Versin, the Spaniard Brasil) commodities ready prouided. There are thicke woods of those trees

He reporteth  
diuers Counters  
of the Spaniards.

The Caribes  
Cannibals  
of their nature  
Of Solisius he  
saith.

Of Alphonsus  
Fogeda  
and Iohn Cosa.

Of Iohannes  
Pontius.

The Caribes  
are warlike  
people.

Of Diecus  
Velasquez.

Of Bernardus  
Cortes his  
heaped riches &  
flourishing  
prosperities.

A proverbe.

Three hundred  
thousand pessa  
prepared by  
Cortes to be sent  
to the Emperof.  
Cassa fistula,  
Cotiman, and  
Coccinean wood.

trees in Hispaniola, as groves of firre trees, or oak: with *va.* While we consulted in our Senate of the affairs of India (concerning the safety, and defence of these ships) what counsell might be taken for remedy, it was decreed, & through our persuasion provided, and commanded by Caesar, that every one of them should meete together at Hispaniola, the heade and chiefe place of those countries, with such riches as they had heaped up: whereby, the ships being gathered together, from all those countries, a strange flecte might be made, so that they might safely defende themselves from the injury of pyrats, if they met with them. What fortune shall befall them, is reserved in the armory and storehouse of the diuine providence. There are some, who say, that Cortes made two golden peeces of ordinance capable of Iron bullets, as bigge as a small tennis ball, stuffed. It might be peradventure for ostentation, because the softnes of gold (in my judgement) is not apt to sustaine and endure, so great fury & violence, or els fabulously fained, through enuy: for his worthy acts are bowery wrested with enuius, and spitefull blowes.

Francis desired  
with God.

#### The fifth Chapter.

While I was thus writing these things, news were brought me that 4. ships from the Indies arrayed vpon our Spanish coasts, what riches they bring, we vnderstand not yet: letters are brought fro the Senat of Hispaniola vnto Caesar, concerning a cruell and mischieuous accident which lately happened, & (by coniecture) some worse matter is feared hereafter. Concerning Francisus Garaius gouernour of Iamaica, I haue discoursed many things in my booke to Adria the Pope, brought vnto the city by Iacobus Pierius. Francisus Garaius being about to erect a Colony vpon the riuer Panucus (from whence, both the country, & the king derive their names, & the bordering country ioyning vpon the iurisdiction of Tenustitan), twice attempted the matter, & was as often repulsed and ouerthrowne almost by the naked inhabitants: the yeere past, hee vntertooke the same Prouince againe, with 11. ships, and 700. men, and more, and manie horsemen, presuming vpon the authority of the Kinges letters, whereby licence might be giuen him to erect the desired Colonie on the bank of that riuer. This riuer is famous for the chandell, able to receive ships of great burden, and is also in steed of an haueu, because that Prouince subject to the iurisdiction of Tenustitan, is without hauens, and a wild, and vnsecure road for shipping. Beholde Garaius, and his consorts safely arrayed. A strong and mighty tempest troubled them at Sea, and the fortune of war abandoned them to all abuses on the land, for arraying hee lost 2. of the flecte by shipwracke, and found the banks of the riuer possessed by the soldiers of Cortes, hauing erected a Colonie there, & ordained magistrats to gouerne the people, with the assent of the king Panucus (because he saith those countries are his, in the right of Tenustitan, & that the ryer Panucus is included vnder the name of Noua Hispania, giuen to those countries by him, & confirmed by Caesar). Garaius goeth to his Comprovincials the Spaniards, inhabitants of the place, & speaketh to them. He sheweth the kings letters patents, wherein he appointeth those banks of Panucus to be inhabited by him, & that he came for that purpose. He exhorteth, & admonisheth them to obey the kings commaund, and giue place to him, or retaine their Pretorian authority in his name, & not in the name & behalle of Cortes, & y they should receive fro him, & obserue the rest of their lawes & constitutions, necessary for their good, & quiet government: but all in vaine. Hauing heard this in a long Oration, without further premeditated speech, or making any doubt at all, they answer. That, that Colonie was appointed & erected by Cortes, vpon the soyle sometimes in the subiection of Tenustitan, which lyeth within the limits of Hispania Noua, assigned by Caesar: & therefore it would iustly come to pass that they might be charged with treachery & treason, if they revolted; & hardened to the demands of Garaius. Garaius cisteth, and sheweth the Kinges letters agayne. They say, that they were falsly procured, and obtayned, by misinforming Caesar: and that they were hadde and gotten agaynst Cortes, through fauour of the Burgensian Bishoppe, President of the Indian Senate, who is offended with him for Iacobus Velasquez Gouernour of Cuba his friende, and sometimes a familiar of his brother Fonseca, a most deadly enemy to Cortes. As touching their priuate discontents and hatred, I haue sufficiently discoursed you. v.

Franciscus Garaius  
desires about to  
erect a Colony  
vpon the riuer  
Panucus in vaine  
repulsed.

Garaius sheweth  
the kings letters  
to erect his Colony  
but hee is re-  
pulsed.

courted at large in the matters concerning them both, which of themselves, all'noisial' vo-  
 luntie. Resisting, Garaius proclaymeth them guilty of treason, if they obey not the kinges  
 commaundement. They say, they will sticke the letters on their heade, after the Spanish  
 manner, and accept the commaundement, as farre as they ought: but for execution thereof,  
 they say, they will take aduise of the King, or the Indian Senate, that both parties being  
 heard, Caesar the King might censure, what should be most bechouefull for them to obey;  
 and say; that they thinke Caesar will commaunde otherwise, if he vnderstoode to what daunt-  
 ger so great a matter may be subject, through this innoation: for if the Barbarians, being  
 but lately conquered, shall perceiue that discorde ariseth among the Christians, they will  
 indoueuire to cast of the yoke of subiection. It was at length decreed betweene them;  
 that messengers should be sent to Cortes. They doe their indoueur, and goe, and signifie  
 the matter to Cortes. He appointeth two of his Captaynes, to indoueuire to persuade; that  
 Garaius might haue access vnto him, in that great city of the lake Tenustitan; the head  
 and chief city of that mightie Empire, being about some 60. leagues distant from the riuer  
 Panucus. The messengers come to Garaius, and persuade him. Garaius goeth: for he con-  
 fessed he was inferior to Cortes: Cortes taketh the sonne of Garaius to be his sonne in Law,  
 by marriage of his bastard daughter: While these things were thus doing, whether it were  
 doone by the secreet counsell of Cortes, or that the inhabitants moued of their owne ac-  
 corde, sette vpon the forces of Garaius, and ouerthrew them, the Senators of Hispaniola  
 leaue it doubtfull, whosener wrote these things; particularly to their particular friends;  
 whether this way, or that way, it little skilleth in the matter it selfe. The whole army of  
 seuen hundred menne was ouerthrowne; and two hundred and fiftie of them are reported to  
 bee slayne; and they write, that Garaius himselfe is dead, whether hee dyed with Cortes, or  
 elswhere, and whether grieuously troubled with a fever, or holpen by the beemigne and  
 courtesie presidence of Cortes, who freed the man from the troubles, and incumbrances of  
 humane cares, that hee alone might enjoy the sweetness of his tyrannical profession, it is  
 vncertainly signified. For we haue neither letters from Cortes, nor from the magistrates  
 sent to those countries, nor from any of the consorts of Cortes, nor from the Senate onely  
 of Hispaniola, writing to Caesar, and our Senate, that one Christopherus Oñius, one of  
 Cortes his Captaynes, arryued at the furthest wester angle of Cuba (where that Island  
 fronteth Iucatan) with 300. men, and 150. horse in no meane and contemptible flecte, and  
 they say he goeth about to seduce and drawe an hundred other fresh men from Cuba it selfe;  
 Who accompanying him, he giueth out, that hee woulde thoroughly searche those countries;  
 which lye in the middle betweene Iucatan (not yet knowne, whether it be an lande) and the  
 supposed Continent, and there, he is reported to haue sayde, he woulde erect a Colonie.  
 The Senators say, they were certified hereof by the Notary of Cuba, together with the di-  
 uers misfortunes that befell Garaius. Withall the Senators themselves say, that they thinke,  
 these reportes were giuen out among the common people by false rumours of the seducer  
 Oñius; to the intent, that being out of hope of revolting to Garaius, the wanderers, and  
 straglers (whom hee desired to haue) might the more easily turne vnto him. In another  
 clause of the Epistle, they say, that Egidius Gonzalez is ready in the haue of Hispaniola  
 to goe to the same place, of whose navigation by the South sea, the Embassadour Thomaz  
 Mainus hath brought with him a coppie of the discourse, vnto the Consentine Archbishoppe,  
 to be presented to Clement the Pope: the navigation is direct, which, it is needfull to be  
 holde, that it may be vnderstoode, what the intent of these Captaynes is in seeking those  
 countries, by the permission and commaundement of Caesar: for Egidius being returned  
 from the South Sea, where hee founde an exceeding greate and huge Sea of fresh waters,  
 replenished with Handes, hee determined to search to the North what fortune woulde affoord,  
 concerning the Strayge so much desired. Hee therefore came to Hispaniola with the Treas-  
 ures spoken of in their place, leauing the southerlie flecte, that hee might builde a new one  
 in the North. For he supposed that the flowing of that abundance and heape of waters,  
 breaketh out betweene Iucatan, and the Continent, by some ryuer able to receiue shippes,  
 as Ticiuus out of the lake Verbanus, and Mincius out of Benacus, and Abdia out of Larius,

Messengers sent  
to Cortes.

Garaius goeth to  
Cortes.

Garaius his army  
ouerthrowne by  
the Spaniards.

Cortes suspected  
to make away  
Garaius.

Christopherus  
Oñius arrived  
at the West  
angle of Cuba.

Egidius Gon-  
zalez and of his  
navigation to the  
South Sea.

and Rhodanus out of the lake Lémanus, are scene to issue forth, that they might convey the waters (which they had swallowed) vnto the Sea. These things being vnderstood, and that Petrus Arias Governour of the supposed Continent, about to vndertake the same matter, hath taken the same way, leaving leuied an armie of horse and foote, of no small, and contemptible number: the Senate forbad Ægidius Gonzalez to goe, least if Olitius, and Petrus Arias, & Ægidius himselfe meete together, they should kill one another: by speedy messengers, and swift shippes they admonished Petrus Arias, Fernandes Cortes, and Olitius vpon paine of treason; that none of them take armes against the other, if they met, and protested, that if they did the contrary, they should be thrust out of their government with ignomy, and disgrace. This iudgement and decree of that Senate, our Senate, alloweth, what shall succeed we will write. The earnest desire of seeking this straight is so great that they obiect themselues vnto a thousand dangers: for whosoever shall finde it, if it may bee founde, shall obtaine the great fauour of Cæsar with high authoritie, because if from the South Sea a passage may bee founde vnto the North, the way to the Ilands of spices ingendring precious stones should be the more easie. Nor should the controuersie begun with the king of Portugall preuaile, whereof I haue sufficiently spoken in my former Decades: but concerning the strayght there is little hope, yet we dissent not from the opinion of Ægidius, but that the ryuer which receiue these fresh waters may bee founde, running to the North, seeing they manifestly know, that those waters haue no fall to the South coast. Which if it so fall out, it is shewed, that the way from either sea will bee commodious enough, because from the bankes of the fresh waters, which bende towards the South, to the shoare of the South sea, the distance is onely three leagues, through a broad plaine: by which Ægidius saith, it will be an easie iourney for any waimes, and cartes; and very shorte to the Equinoctiall circle:

Gonzales his purpose forbidden by the Senate.

The straight.

#### The sixth Chapter.

WE suppose also (most noble and renowned Prince) relying vpon most assured arguments, that it will come to passe, that other newe Ilandes may be found, not many yeeres hence, both subiect to the Equator, and also nere vnto it on this side, and beyonde, as the Malucas which are already found, and the rest described in my former Decades. For if through the vertue of the sunne about the Equinoctiall vnder a terrestriall disposed matter, apt to receiue a celestiall benefite offered, that aromaticall tast is infused into those trees, and other Ilandes are next vnto them, enriched with sandie golde: who dare infect mighty and powerfull nature with so great a blemish, and deface it with such injury, that in so shorte a space of the Malucas, as it were in the little finger of a Giant, (if we consider the whole circuite) he will affirme shee hath fully expressed her force, and spent her wombe (filled with an excellent progeny) vpon so slender and small an infant? This reason issued from my braine, in the Indian Senate among my associates one example being added, that the matter might more easly be vnderstoode. I suppose I wrote the same reason to Pope Adrian, but I doe not wel remember, because the last seventieth yeare, age, and cares haue dulled my memorie, nor doe such things repeated vse to displease, although they haue been elsewhere scene, with out the limites of their grounde. For teene yeeres together in the times of Sixtus the 4. & Innocentius the 8. I liued at Rome, with her neighbourhood. Being prouoked; & stirred vp through the same of the Granatensian wars, I went into Spaine: coming from Rome, I trauielled through the rest of Italy: I passed ouer that part of France which our Sea washeth beyond the Alpes. In those 37. yeeres wherein (through the gracious promises, & honourable receiuing into familiarity of the Catholike Princes Ferdinandus, and Elizabeth) Spaine held me. I viewed it all round about. But you will say (most noble Prince) to what end are these things fetched? Trauielling ouer these parts, I light vpon woods of oake, & then of pine, yet mountains, & champion places, & riuers, or marshes diuiding betwene either wood, & after I met with wildernesses of diuers trees, growing of their own nature, which tooke vp great & huge countries, and mette with such like woodes of, pine, and oake, and riuers, or lakes, and

An estate added to prove the 23. Decade of the Discoveries.

A. African.

passed our plines! not vnlike vnto the former, the subiect matter of the countries receiving those varieties. So (most renowned Prince) on this side, beyond, & vnder the Equinoctiall Circle, the Tropicke of Cancer vnto Capricorne (which space and distance, the greatest part of the Philosophers falsely supposed to be desolate, and forsakeu, being molested with the heate of the perpendicular sunne), many huge countries of lande, and vast and spacious seas lye, because the space of this circumference is the greatest, seeing it goeth aboute the whole worlde, where it most intargeth it selfe, with the length thereof. That Circle therefore is the broadest of all. If therefore is so short a distance of lands and countries (as I haue said) the art of powerfull nature be so great, that what cometh forth and groweth in one part of the same region, may also be founde in another drawing the same influence, in that kinde of things, which that grounde hath brought forth, who doubteth, but in this aromatical kinde, vnder so great a caelestiall vastity, manie other countries may be found capable of the same vertue, which is bestowed vpon the Maluchas and the neighbouring Ilandes, lying partly vnder the Equator it selfe, and partly on both sides? One of the Colledge shuggled his shoulters, that he might bee accompanied the wiser in infringing my argument. Behold (saith he) no mention is made of these things by our ancestors, if they stoode vpon this matter, these things should be knowne to vs, or not vnknowne to any nation. Through ignorance of learning, especially of Philosophie, and by reason of his small experience, his obiection was easily ouer throwne, the great Chancellor who highly respecteth your Excellencie, and the rest of the associates, yielding vnto me. For I sayde, that it was farre from all admiration, because we had notice of the Maluchas, and the bordering Ilandes, but none of the rest. For the Maluchas are almost within the view of India beyonde Ganges, and are almost adioyning to the countries of the Sinae and the great Bay of Catigara, which are knowne landes, not much distant from the Persian gulfie, and Arabia falsely called the kappie, whereby, by little and little they crept vnto them, and then vnto vs (since the luxury of Rome began to increase) to our no small losse & damage. For the miodes of menn growe faint and effeminate, their manly courage is extenuated, through such flattering delights of odors, perfumes, and spices. But concerning the rest of the vnkown Ilands, the reason is easily yielded why they haue bin vnkown to this daye, because the mayne Continentes next vnto them, through the same purpose of the diuine prouidence, haue lyeen vnkowne, euen vntill our times. These things considered, which are most true, if those countries be of great courtes of the world, if there be adherent or neighbouring Ilandes of those courtes, who could walke through the halles, or search the secret rooms; when the courtes, were yet vnknowne? we haue therefore founde the courtes when we finde so vast and vnkown countries, that they thrice exceede all Europe and more, if as we haue elsewhere proued, we shall measure what came to the knowledg of menn in our time, from S. Augustine the said poynt of our supposed Continent, to the riuer Panucus 60. leagues distant (or thereabouts) from Tenusitan, that great city of the lake: we haue elsewhere largely discoursed these things. We shall also finde the members of those courtes: and we are not far from the assurance of fulfilling this our desire. For we thinke it will come to passe, that Sebastian Cabot (who first founde the Baccalay, to whom about the Calends of September, leaue was graunted (at his request) by authority of our Senate to search that nauigation) will returne in shorter time, & more luckily, then the shipp called the Victory, which only of her 5. consorts escaped, went about the world, and returned laden with Cloues: where of I haue spokē at large in his proper place. Cabot required of Cæsars treasury a flecte of 4. shippes furnished with all things necessary for the Sea, and with comement peeces of ordinance, & saith he had found cōsorts at Siuil, & mart towne of all Indian marchandises, who vpon hope of great game, voluntarily offered ten thousand Ducates towards the victuallinge of 3 flecte, & other necessaryes. About the Ides of September Cabot was sent away from vs to offer bonde to the consorts who weere partners with him. If it fell out well hee shall haue part of the game of those that contribute their mōy, of every one according to his rate. It remaineth (most noble Prince) that with some likely & probable

An other excellent reason.

Others performe & opine that they estimate man's minde.

An Allegory very witty and significant.

Sebastian Cabot end of his borrowed voyage.

& probable argumēt it be declared, why I sayd, he wold return in shorter time then the Victory, & why we should think this matter should more happily succcede, least moed with a windy breath wee seeme desirous to yeeld a reason of future euents. Cabot is about to depart the next month of August in the yeere 1525, and no sooner surely, because things necessary for such a matter of importance can neither be prepared beefore, nor by the course of the heauens, ought hee to beginn that voyage before that time: for then he must direct his course towards the Equinoctiall; when the sunne (depriting vs of summer, and the length of 3 dayes) beginneth to goe to 3 Antipodes. For he is not onely to goe the direct way to the Tropik of Cancer and the Equator, but also 45. degrees to the Antarctic to the furthest bounde of Capricornes, vnder which the mouth of the Straights of Magellane lye, by a way traded at other means charge, and with the death of many, and not by bywayes; and diuers delays, and turnings about, as Magellane must needes doe, who through carefull labours, and diuers hard calamities spent three yeares, wandringe in that Navigation, and of a flecte of fine shippes, together with the greater part of his company, lost lower, and his owne life in the ende. Of these thinges I haue sufficiently spoken at large in the Parallell compassed; directed to Adrian the Pope. For this cause therefore hee will sayle it in a shorter time, for that he is to direct his course by coasts hetherto vnknoone, but now very well knowne. But in that we suppose it wilbe with more prosperous successe, & better fortune, we may gather from hence. At what time the dayes are shortest with the people of the North, Cabot shall haue them longest. He shall therefore commodiously runne alonge those shoares; while (hauing passed the windinge Strait of Magellane, next to the Doggart) he direct his course to the right hande, on the backe side of our supposed Continent, whereof our former Decades dedicated to Ascanius, your vncke, and the Popes, Leo, and Adrian are full, and shall returne by the Zone of Capricorne to the Equator in which space hee shall finde an innumerable number of Ilands seated in that huge Sea. But whence the hope of great riches ariseth vnto vs you shall heare. The flecte of Magellane, hauing passed through the straight, sought out with so great calamity of the men, leaning all the Ilandes they mett with, and sawe a farr of both on the right hand and on the left, directed their eyes, and their course alwayes to the Maluchas; for all their care was of taking the Maluchas. Searchinge by the way what euery one of the other Ilands brought forth he curiously passed ouer: although in many of them hee landed for watering, & takinge in of wood or necessary barteringe of things for victuals, yet he made litle stay, and in that short abode, hee searched the commodities of euery Iland (whereunto hee went) with signes, and becke, as well as he could, and vnderstood that in some of them the sands were mixed with much gold. And he farther learned, that in other of them, shrubbes or smale bushes of the best Cinamom growe, which are like to the Pomgranate, of which precious barkes (as Maynas and Guillinus can testifie) I got some smal peeces. He likewise heard of great pearls; & other precious stoness, things of noe slight regard. He determined to deferre the better searching of these Ilands vntill a more conuenient time, with open mouth and panting spirite gaping only after the Maluchas: but plottinge to attempt great matters in his mynde, cruell fortune violently drasse him into the handes of a barbarous and almost a naked nation, to be slaine, as hath bin spoken in his place. If therefore from a voyage and speedy nauigation, neuer open to any beefore this, they gather such probabilities of the excellency of those Ilandes, what is not to be hoped, concerninge the procuring of a settled tradinge with those Ilanders? For they must be courteously handled, & dealt with, without any violence and injury, and with courteous vsage & gifts, they wilbe inticed. For those ten thousand Ducates, which Cabot is to haue of his coists are to be bestowed vpon 3 busines, that victual for two yeres may be provided and wages giuen to 150. men, the other part remaining, shalbe employed vpo warre, & marchandise such as they know wilbe acceptable to the Ilanders, to the intent, they may willingly giue such things as they lightly esteeme, naturally growing w thē, for exchange of our commodities, vnknoone to thē, for they know not the pestilent vse of mony, & whatsooner is strige,

Cabot's intended course of voyage.

The fleet of Magellan.

strange, & brought fro' foraine cōuntries, euery nation accounteth it a precious thing. These thoroughly viewed, & handled w<sup>th</sup> prudent diligence, they will scoone along all y<sup>e</sup> South side of our supposed Continent, & arrive at y<sup>e</sup> Colonies of Panama and Naui erected on those shores, the boundes of the golden Castele: the whosoever at that time, shall bee gouernour of that Province (of the Continent) called golden Castile, will certifie vs of the successe. For wee thinke of the changinge of many Gouvernours, least they wax insolent through to longe custome of Empire and souerainty, especially such as were not conquerors of the Provinces, for concerning these Captaines, another reason is considered: wh<sup>ch</sup> wee shall vnderstande the nexte hath sett sayle we will pray for their happy and prosperous successe.

#### The seventh Chapter.

But first another flecte shall depart to goe for the Mahuchas, that the possessiō taken, may be maintayned, nor shall it be any impediment, that hee hath admitted the king of Portugall for his soueraine lawe, to whom Caesar hath giuen Catharine his sister: of the whole blood to wife, borne after the death of his father, a most delicate young woman of seauenteene yeeres old, & a most beautifull and wise mayden. It is a vaine & idle rumor of the people, that Caesar hath agreed with the king of Portugall to discharge his handes thereof, by reason and occasion of her dowry, being so exceeding great, and rich an inheritance although hee complayne it will bee pernicious vnto him, and to the vtter destruction & vndōing of his poore Kingdome sometimes an Earldome of Castile, if hee bee deprived of that intercourse of trading. Besides, Caesar (who is very wise) thinketh it meete to provide that so great injury bee not done to the Kingdome of Castele (which it concerneth) being the best sinewes of all his power. Let this digression suffice concerning the Iucianus Chicora, Dukare, the Tropiques Equinoctiall, and such like. Now let mee report some new things out of order, which Gillinus affirmed would bee acceptable vnto you. And let vs begin with the most notable miracle of nature, wherein wee will first declare what is reported; next, what is the opinion of the Philosophers concerninge the same, and lastly what our iudgment conceiveth thereof, at our manner is in all things whatsoever, hardly to bee credited. In my former Decades, which wander through the world in print, mention is made of the same and report of a fountaine, and they say, the secret force thereof is such, that through drinkinge and bastinge therein, the vse of that water maketh them that are growne old, wax younge againe: I relyinge vpon the examples of Aristotle, and our Pliny, may presume to repeat and commit to writinge; what men of great authority dare boldly speake. For neither did the one write of the nature of liuinge creatures, which hee hadd seene, but by the only report of them whom Alexander Macedo appointed to search the same at his great charge, or did the other note two and twenty thousand things worthy the obseruinge without relyinge vpon others reports, and writings. But they whom I cite in my Decades (besides the letters of such an absent, and their report by word of mouth who often goe, and retorne hether) are, that Deane, Aghianus the Senator a lawier before referred, and also the third, Lucenianus Figueroa sent to Hispaniola, to be President of the Senate, and to require account of all the magistrats of their gouernment, and to direct at his pleasure things miscarried, and maintaine that which was directly done, to fauour the good, and punish the euill. These three agree that they had heard of the fountaine restoringe strength, and that they partly beleued the reportes: but they sawe it not, nor proved it by experience, because the inhabitants of that Terra Florida haue sharpe nayles, and are eager defendērs of their right. They refuse to intertaine any guests, especially such, who goe about: to take away their liberty, & possess their country soyle. The Spaniards brought thether by ship from Hispaniola, & by a shorter way from Cuba, often determined to subdue them and set footing on their shores: but so often as they attempted the matter so often were they repulsed, ouerthrowne, & slaine by the inhabitants, who (though but naked) yet fight they with many kindes of darts, and poysoned arrowes. The Deane gaue one example hercof.

The wonderful  
virtue of a  
fountaine in  
Terra Florida  
nearly dis-  
covered of.

heerof. Hee hath a lucian one of his household seruants surnamed Andreas Barbatus, for that hee hauinge a beard, escaped amonge his beardless countrymen. This fellow is sayde to haue had a father now greuously oppressed with old age. Wherefore moued with the fame of that fountaine, and allured through the loue longer of lyfe, hauinge prepared necessary prouision for his journey, he went from his native Ilande neere vnto the country of Florida, to drinke of the desired fountaine, as our countymen doe from Rome or Naples to the Patcolane bathes, for the recovery of their health: Hee went, and stayd, and hauinge well drunke and washed himselfe for many dayes, with the appointed remedies by them who kept the bath, hee is reported to haue brought home a manly strength, and to haue used all manly exercises, and that hee married againe, and begatt children. The sonne bringeth many witnesses heerof, amonge them who were carried away from his country lucaia, who affirme they sawe him almost oppressed with decrepit age, and after that flourishinge, and lusty in strength, and ability of body. But I am not ignorant, that these thinges are reported, contrary to the opinion of all Philosophers, especially Phisitions, who thinke that no returne may possibly bee from the Priuation to the Habit: in the aged I confesse, the watery, and aeryr: vapours of the radical humor are either expelled, or at the least diminished, but the terrestriall predominant which is cold, & drye, hath power to conuert & substance of all meats & drinckes into her corrupt, & melancholy nature; I doe not assent, that dayly more & more euen to the corruption thereof, that dulnesse decayed increaseth, the naturall heate failinge. Therefore hee that dares not beleue any thinge but that which is probable, & vsuall it wilbe demanded, how this may be, which they say. Amonge the assertions therefore of these, and the powerfull arguments of the auncient wise menn, whether so great power (exceptiunge diuine miracles) may bee giuen to Nature wee doubtinge thereof: not by the medicines of Medea wherewith Nature the Grecians fable her father in law Esou was restored to youth: nor moued by the inchaunements of Circe, concerninge the companions of Vlisses transformed into beasts, and brought home againe: but taught by the example of brute beasts, wee determine to dispute of this so strange a matter, and impossible in the iudgment of many, least wee iudge menn of so great authority to haue spoken altogether in vaine. First of the Egles renuinge her age, and then of snakes, wee reade that hauinge cast their old skinnce, and leauinge the spoyle amonge the brakes, or narrow clefts of rocks or stones, they wax yonge againe. The same is also sayd of the Hart (if it bee a true narration) that hauinge sucked in an Aspe by the nostrels (which he hath long sought) lyinge hid in vnnoticed walles, or within the limits of hedges, in the winter time, he waxeth soft and tender like soddren flesh through force of the poyson, and wholly changinge his old skinnce, taketh new flesh, and new blood againe: what shall we say of Ravens, and Crows abstainyng from drinke in sommer about the Solstitium, duringe the blastes of the furious doggstarr, beinge taught by the instinct of nature, that in those dayes the waters of fountaines, and riuers are vnwholsom, flowinge at that time from the menstruous wombe of the earth? And of certaine others beside, of whose prouidence, no foolish and ignorant authors haue deliuered many things to posterity to bee read. If these thinges be true, if woonder working nature bee delighted to shew herselfe so bountifull and so powerfull in dumbe creatures not vnderstandinge the excellency thereof, as likewise vngratefull: what woonder is it, if also in that which is more excellent, it engender and nourish some like thinge in her fruitfull bosome so full of variety? Out of the properties of waters runninge through diuers passages of the earth, and drawinge thence diuers colours, odors, tastes, and qualities, as also diuers waights, we see diuers effects produced. No lesse also is manifestly known, that diuers diseases are euery where cured by the rootes, bodyes, leaues, flowers & frutes of Trees. Aboudinge steame also beinge killed, or to Of priuation & hark speake more properly destroyed, choler ariseth: & contrarily the goodnes of the blood beinge corrupted, the purifying thereof by diminishing the same, is founde to be the iuice of flowers or hearbes, or by eating thereof, or by bathes, & medicines appropriated for & purpose. Whereupon & humors beinge repressed, health is conuayed to & sicke by smiting & patient. If therefore, as it is manifest, these thinges fall out thus in them, why shall we maruell, but that Nature beeing also a prouident mother, may as well nourish some radical humour

The Father of Andreas Barbatus an old man becomes yonge againe.

Nature

The Eagle & Snakes reuue their age.

The Hart

Ravens and Crows abstainyng from drinke in the doggdayes.

A good argument.

Of priuation & hark

humour to repress that terrestrial part, so that the watery and ayery vapors beeing restored, the naturall heate decayed might bee renewed in the blood, which arisinge, the dull heauienes it selfe may bee tempered, and all these beeing restored, an old house supported, by such helpe, may bee repayred. I should not therefore so greatly wonder at the waters of that fountaine so much spoken of, if they bringe with them some secret vnknowne power to moderate that crabbed humor, by restoringe the ayery and watery vertues. Nor yet may your Excellency thinke that this is easily obtained or that these things ought to be done without torture, and distance of time, without fastinge, and abstinence from pleasinge and delightfull meates and drinckes, or without drinkinge vsauory potions vnpleasinge to the tast: they also who are desirous of longe life, suffer their difficulties, as they who seeke bathes, and such as desire to be cured of the troblesome disease of the poxe, which some thinke to be the Leprosie. For

The manner of  
the takinge of  
Guacum.

An objection  
answered.

heeerby occasion of takinge Guacum a comon wood in Hispaniola, they abstaine thirty dayes from all accustomed meates and drinckes especially from wine, & the Phisitians bringe them to such a dulnes through that fastinge that I should thinke a thousande kindes of diseases might bee removed without drinkinge the decoction of Guacum, which for the whole space of that time they only vse. Let vs now answer a secret obiection, which at the first sight may seeme legitimate and iust. Some haue said: we haue not at any time seene or heard of any man, who attained that gift of Nature, but both hartes, & snakes, and Egles, and other liuinge creatures of this kinde, by the iudgement of wise men renuinge their old age, wee see them euery where dye, after a fewe yeares of their age and surely they relye vpon no meane and foolish argument. To these I answer as few men haue the gift to be sharpe witted & ingenious, or to knowe what wisdom is, so is it not permitted to all Egles, hartes, and Rauens to enter into the knowledge of this secret. For the knowledge of thinges in brute beasts is diuers, as in men and though they knowe a secret, it may not yet be granted, that they shall haue power to inioy it, seeinge they may be terrified with the memory of torments past, and the discomforts of a longe life: so that they care not to returne to that shopp to buy such wares. It must needes bee an hard matter for the fourefooted beastes, and such foules to indure so many winter coldes againe so many scorchinges of the summer sunne, and often wantes of foodde. But it is much more horrible for a man, by reason of the intermixed troubles, and vexation of the minde, which the dumbe beastes want, and for a thousand miseries, and casualties in the diuers interchaungeable courses of humane affaires, whereto hee is subiect, and for the cause whereof, it often repenteth many that they ener came forth of their mothers wombe, how much more to desire longer yeares through the straight and narrow passages of fire and water. Who so desire the highest degrees in the wheele of fortune, more bitterly gnawe vpon these meates: prouident nature therefore hath appointed the terme & ende of life for a

The miseries of  
long life.

Short life the  
providence of  
nature rather of  
the God of  
warre.

Immortalitie his  
as speere.

Speciall benefit vnto men, least they should either be too much puffed vp in pride through long life, or fallinge into aduersity, they should despair, and therefore reuile her with cursed speeches. But if peradventure any haue deceiued nature by such like artes and deuises, in searchinge out her secrets, and puttinge the same in practise, so that they knowe how to prolonge life, it is to bee supposed, that happeneth but to a fewe, nor to those fewe in such excellent manner, that they can bee made immortal or permitted to inioy so rare a prerogatiue any longe time. Let this be sufficient and more than enough, that I haue wandered in these arguments: And let euery one collect, or reiect, from them at his pleasure. For these my writings, whatsoever they bee, yet are they to goe to Rome vnder your Excellencies name, to the intent I may bee obedient to honorable persons greatly desiringe the same. Let vs also report certaine other thinges, though not impossible to bee credited, yet to be admired, because not known to any European, or inhabitants of the world better to be discovered.

A fountaine of  
Pitchy water.  
Such a fountaine  
as this there is  
in Sher, where  
is a place called  
Pitcheard where  
of Camden maketh  
much mention in  
his Britannia.

In the Ilande of Fernandina, which is Cuba, a fountaine of pitchy water bursteth out, wee haue seene the pitch brought vnto Cæsar, and it is somewhat softer then the pitch of the tree, yet fit for the colouring and beesprinkleage of the keeles of shippes and other accustomed vses: and my selfe pausinge a little at the strangenes of the matter, seeinge wee haue the like euent euery where before hande in a differinge thinge, I cease to wonder. Omittinge the salt of the Mountaine, of the pitts, and of the Sea coast, if the waters, retained in voyde

voide places (as happeneth in all the kingdomes of Casteele) fallinge downe somewhere by the steepe mountaines, be converted through the feruacit heat of the scorchinge sunne into hard and congealed salt, who will wonder, but that by the same purpose of nature, the like may also be done, concerninge the waters of that fountaine, brought by floodes to little trenches, and lowe receptacles without the Chawwell of the running river itselfe, or vnto a plaine plot of grounde may be thickened, and incorporated into hard pitch, the vehement heate of the sunne fallinge thereupon? There is yet another thing not to be omitted: In the same llande of Feruandina there is a mountaine which yeeldeth stone bullettes, which are so rounde, that they could not be made rounder by any artificer, and these bullettes equall the weight of metall, fit to fulfill the raging madnes of princes in the warres. That Licentiaus Figueroa, who (as I sayde) was made cheefe President of all the magistrates of Hispaniola, to require an account of the government administr'd by them, brought many, all which, wee sawe presented vnto Cæsar: from the arquebussè bullette; that mountaine ingendereth bullettes fit for the Canon, and the Colacrin. I use the vulgar woordes, and names seeinge the auncient Latine tongue wanteth them, and I may lawfully clothe such things with newe apprell, as newlye arise, seeinge (by their leaue that deny it) I desire to be vnderstoode. We also sawe such as he brought, which are not lesser than a silber-must, nor bigger than a smale tennis ball. Yet hee affirmeth that both the lesser, and the greater growe there, of their owne Nature: wee gave one of them to a smith, to be broken, to knowe whether that stony matter were mingled with any metall: the hardnes thereof is such, that it almost broake the smithes hammer, and his anile, before it would be beaten in peeces, which beinge broken asunder they iudged there were some vaines of metall therein but of what nature they made no further search. These bullettes are kept in Cæsars Treasury. Certaine other things (not vnplesing) came into my minde. I suppose they wilbee acceptable to your Excellency, or to your Courtiers desirous to reade, especially such as hee without serious employment.

Of a medicine  
in Feruandina  
engendereth  
stone bullettes.

#### The Eight Chapter.

IN my former Decades, mention is made of an huge Sea Cauer in Hispaniola and the country Guaccasirama, extending certaine furlonges within high mountaines, where it looketh towards the West: by the belly or bagg of this Cauer they saile. In the furthest darke bay thereof for that the sunne beames scarce come therein, yet enter into the mouth thereof at Sunne sett, they who went into the same, sayde, their bowes were griued with horrible terrour, through the fearefull noyse of the waters fallinge into that hole from an high. What the inhabitants beleeue concerninge the mystery of the caue, left in memory from their great grandfathers, it wilbee a pleasant thinge to heare. They thinke the llande hath a vitall spirit, and that it bloweth backe from thence, and sucketh in, and that it is fedd, and doth digest, as an hiddeous and monstrous monster, of the female kinde. They saye, the hollow hole of this Cauer is the female nature of the llande, and thinke it to be the fundament whereby it purgeth the excrements and casteth out the filth thereof: and for prooff heereof, the country hath the name from the Cauer, for Guacca is sayd to bee a country, or necrees, and Larima the fundament, or place of purgation. When I heare of these things, I remember what rude antiquitye iudged of that fabulous Demogorgon, breathinge in the wombe of the world, whence they supposed the ebbing and flowinge of the sea proceeded. But let vs intermingle some true reports with fables. How happy Hispaniola is in many things, & how fruitfull of many precious things, I haue often spoken in my former Decades to Ascanius, and the Popes, Leo, & Adrianus. They finde therein daily more and more many sortes of medicinable things. Concerninge the tree, from whose cutt bodye, brought into powder potable decocted water is made, to drawe the vnhappy disease of the pox out of the bones and marrow, I haue both sufficiently spoken, and now the peeces of that wood wandering throughout all Europe, make triall thereof. It ingendereth also innumerable sorts of sweete smelling things as well of herbes, as trees, and great plentie of manifold droppinge gummies, in the number whereof that sort is which the Apothecaries call Animæ Album, good for easinge the paine of the head, & giddines. A certaine liquor also almost

Of a huge Sea  
Cauer in Hispaniola  
and a pleasant noise  
thereof.

Demogorgon.

Hispaniola.

Of the tree that  
cures the pox.

Animæ Album.

like oyle, issueth out of certaine trees. A certaine learned Italian named Codrus, trausailinge ouer those places, to search the natures of things, hauinge leaue graunted him (for moe straunger may lawfully doe it otherwise) perswaded the Spaniards that it had the force of Balsamum. Now let vs repeate a few things of the fish wherewiththey hunt to take other fishes: This, sometime prouoked mee a little, to choller. In my first booke of my Decades dedicated to Ascinius, if I well remember, amonge other admirable things; because they bee strange, and not vsuall, I sayd, the inhabitants haue a fish, an hunter of other fishes. Some at Rome who were apt to speake cuill in the time of Leo, scornfully made a mocke at this, and many other such like things, vntill Iohannes Rafus Forolinianensis the Cosentine Archbischoppe (returninge from his 14. yeeres Spanish Legation for Iulius the Pope, & Leo who succeeded, to whō whatsoeuer I wrote was well knowne) stopped the mouthes of manye: by his testimony; in defence of my good name. It seemed also very hard for mee to beleeuete it from the first beginninge. Hereupon I diligentely inquired of the foresayde men of authority, and many others besides. What the matter might bee concerninge this fish: Who sayde they sawe it amonge the fishers, noe lesse common then wee pursue a hare with a French dogg; or chase a beare (brought into an inclosure) with a mastiffe, and that, that fish was sauiory meat, and in the forme of an Eete, and beinge no greater, it durst assaile the bigger fishes, or Tortoyses greater then a target, as a weasell seisseth on a stocke doue, and a greater pray if hee may come by it, and leapinge vp on the neck thereof, causeth it to dye. But this fish by euery fisher is kept bounde in the side of his boate, tyed with a little corde, the station of the fish is somewhat distant from the keele of the boate, that hee may not perceiue the brightness of the ayre, which by no meanes hee indureth. But that which is more admirable; in the hinder part of the heade hee hath a purse which holdeth very fast, wherewith after hee seeth another fish swimminge by him, hee maketh a signe by his motion of takinge the praye: the corde beinge loosed, as a dogg vnchained, hee assaileth the praye, and turninge the hinder part of his heade, castinge that purse-like skinne vpon the necke thereof leapeeth vpon the pray, if it bee a great fish, but if it bee a mighty Tortoysse hee seisseth on it where it lyes open from the shell, and neuer looseth his holde till drawinge the cord by little and little hee come to the side of the boate. Then if it bee a great fish (for the Hunter catcheth not for little ones) the fishers cast their harpingse Irons or hooks into it, and kill it, and after they drawe it to the view or sight of the ayer, and then the Hunter looseth the praye: but if it bee a Tortoysse the fishers leape into the Sea, and lyft vp the Tortoysse, with their shoulders while the rest of the company may lay hande thereon. The praye loosed the fish returneth to his appointed place and remaineth fixed there while hee bee fedd with part of the pray, as an hauke rewarded with the head of a quaille which shee hath taken, or else; bee sent backe againe to Hauete. Of the education or traininge vp of this fish vnder his Maister I haue sufficiently spoken in his proper place. The Spaniards call that fish Heuersus, because by turninge it selfe it setteth vpon the pray with his purlike skinnae, and taketh it: Concerninge the Matinianus Iland, which I sayd, not that women only inhabited after the manner of the Amazonas, but reported that I had heard so: those witnesses leaue it doubtfull, as I did then. Yet Alfonso Argogolius Caesars priuy Counsellor in the affaires of Castelle, and collector of the reuenues of princely Margaret Caesars aunt who trauielled through those coasts, affirmeth it to bee a true story and noe fable. I deliuer what they declare. The same Deane told mee certaine other things, not vnworthy the reporting, many approuinge the same. There is another Iland distant from Hispaniola about some 700. myles, next adioyninge to the Continent, named Margarita for that an infinite number of pearles are gathered there, out of shellfish: thirty myles distant from Margarita in the Continent lies a Bay in forme of a bowe, like a Cressant or new moone, like the Iron shoe of a mule, the Spaniard calleth such a Bay an Elbowe. In circuit it is about some 30. myles: and is very famous for two prerogatiues. Whatsoeuer is washed either by the flood or stormy tempests on the shoare thereof, is full of salt: yet the ebbings, and flowings are very small in all those coasts, to the northward: but in the South coasts it is contrary. Another prerogatiue is this that there is so great a benefit and so infinite a multi-

A strange report of a fish a hunter of fishes worth the reading.

The Matinianus Iland inhabited by women after the manner of the Amazonas.

Margarita an Iland of pearls. Of a bay next Margarita which hath a crescent prerogatiue.

tude of fishes, especially of Pollardes & Mulletts, in that Baye, that the shippes cannot sayle through the Baye by reason of the great number of them, without danger of ouerswayinge, amonge which the fishers lightinge, are stayed for the present: wherefore castinge out their nets they easily driue the scoole vnto the shoare. There they haue a triple order of seruiciable attendants: they who stande on the shoare vp to the knees in water reach the fishes (which they haue taken with their hands) to the slaughter menn standinge within the shipp, who hauinge bowelled them cast them into the bandes of their fellowes of the third order, who season the fishes with salt gathered from the shoare, prepared for that purpose. Being so salted, they spread them in the sunne vpon the sandy plaine, so that in one dayes space they are saued, and preserued, for that the sunne beames are exceedinge hot there, both because they are next vnto the Equinoctiall, and the plaine is compassed about with mountaines, into the which the wheeling sunne beames fall, as also for that naturally the sunne more vehemently heateth the sande, whercon it beateth, then the cloddy or turfe earth. Being dried they gather them euen to the ladinge of their shippes: Of salt in like manner: so  $\forall$  every one may freely lade their shippes with both commodities. They fill all the neighbouringe countreyes with those fishes: nor doth Hispaniola it selfe, the general mother of those countries, almost vse other salt fish, especially of that kinde. But concerninge pearles, how they bee ingendred, increase, and are taken; I haue at large declared in my former Decades. The same men of authority also (whom I haue often at home with mee by reason of the affaires wherewith they haue to doe in our Senate) say, there are two smale riuers in Hispaniola, and the Priorye of the Conception, the one called Baho, the other Zate, retayninge their ancient country names. Now the Spaniards by reason of the medicinable properties thereof which I will declare, call them Conualentia, where they ioynge together. Through so long a voyage at Sea whercof from the straites of Gades to the beginninge of Hispaniola, they sayled little lesse then 5000. myles through the Ocean, in the view only of the heauens and waters, through the change also of meates and drinckes, but chiefly of the ayer (for that Hispaniola and lamacia are situated many degrees to the Equinoctiall beyonde the Tropick of Cancer, but Cuba standeth in the very line of the Tropick which the Philosophers (some few excepted) thought to bee uninhabited through the scorching heate of the sunne) they say, that such as lately came vnto them, for the most part fell into diuers diseases, and they who went vnto the waters of the riuers Baho, and Zate, now intermingled in one Channel, with drinkeinge, & washing therein, were purged and censed, in the space onely of fiftene dayes and in as many more were perfectly cured of the paine of the sinewes, and marrowe, and such also as had burninge feuers, & were payned with the swellinge of the luges, were healed: but if they indorened to wash them selues, or vse them longer, they shoulde fall into the bloodie fluxe. Thereupon, they who desire to gather golde out of the sandes thereof (for there is noe riuer that yeeldeth not golde nor any part of the earth without golde) dare not send diggers or labourers into the Channelles of those riuers before noone or suffer them to drinke those waters, though they bee pleasant, and well relishinge, because they easily procure the fluxe, especiall in such as bee heathly and sounde. The same menn also say, that in the North angle of the country of Guacca larina of Hispaniola, many landes of a smale circuit lie together in a short tract, which they thinke were sometimes ioyned. One of these excelleth the rest for notable fishing called labbaque producinge the fast sailable sauc one: the sea betweene those landes in some places is very shallowe, and full of shouldes, but heere and there betweene, lie deepe pits, and huge and many whirlepooles. They say, the pits or deepe places, are filled all the yeere with diuers fishes, as it were, gathered together into a safe place of succour as the owner may sweepe heaped come out of the floore, so (they affirme) such as goe thether may after the same manner deale with the fishes and with little trouble, and paynes they may lade their shippes. It is a pleasant thinge to heare, what they report concerninge certaine sea foules, eagles, and great vultures, by their speeches I coniecture them to bee the raueninge foules called Onocrotaly: For (they say) they haue a wide and large throate so that one of them swallowed halfe a huge whole, wherewith a soldier couered himselfe, which hee cast vpon the foule seizinge vpon him with

Of their reaching and catching of their fish.

Baho & Zate two riuers in Hispaniola medicinal waters

Cuba situate in the line of the Tropick which the Philosophers thought to be uninhabitable.

Markes this particular.

Quares Larina.

labaque in those of coast fishing.

Of Onocrotaly. See foules a pleasant reluc.

open mouth in the sight of all the standers by, and (they say) it was plucked out of the throat of the deade fowle, without any losse or harme done vnto the garment. It is reported thee deuoured liuing fishes of fise pounce waight at one swallow, and greater. But when they are fedd with fishes, it will not bee amisse to tell, after what manner they get the pray swimminge vnder water in the Sea, seeinge they diue not as other seafooles Geese, Duckes, & cormorants do: wheeling about and mounting aloft into the ayre like Kites, and wanton sporting foules, they watch when the fish cometh to the brimme of the water to the bright ayre. For there is a great flocke of them that flye houeringe about, so that sometimes many of them furiously cast themselves downe together to take the praye, insomuch as the sea it selfe is opened an armes length and an halfe wide: with that great noyse the fish flieth amazed, and suffereth himselfe to bee taken. Two of the company for the most part take one fish: then is it a delightfull and pleasinge spectacle to behold their conflict from the ships; if they happen to bee present, or else to looke vpon them from the shoare: neyther of them leaue the pray, while hauing torne it in peices, each of them bring away their parte. They say it is a birde with a bill of a spanne and an halfe long, & more hooked and croked, then any other rauening foule hath, with a very long necke, and with much more wide and spreading wings, then an Eagle or Vulture, but so carrion leame, that it scarce equaleth the flesh of a Ringdow. Therefore to sustaine the waight of her huge throat, provident nature hath giuen her great wings, seeinge shee had no neede thereof to carry her light body: the Spaniards call these foules Alcatrazes. Those countries abound with many other foules besides, vnkowne to vs: but especially Parrats of diuers colours, and bignes of body, which equall cocks, and exceede them in greatnes, and which are scarce so bigge as a little sparrow, are found there: and great multitudes of Parrats are no lesse commonly ingendered there, then Rauens and laves with vs: and it is there generall food, as blackbines, and Turtles are with vs, and they nourishe Parrats at home for delicacy and delight, in steede of Linnets, or Pyes. There is also another gift of nature not to bee concealed.

The description  
of a fishy fowle.

Parrots of Coors  
Colours.

#### The ninth Chapter.

The Colony of  
Zanana.

IN Hispaniola there is a Colony full of Hauens, called Zanana, because it lyeth in Zanana, that is to say, a moorish and grassie plaine, commodious for the nourishing and feeding of Oxen, and horses, for the Spanyards calleth the like plaine Zanana: this Colonie hath a famous riuer. At certaine times of the yeere, it receiueh such store of raine water into the channell, that it filleth all the plaine (though very large) the lets of hilles and limitts withstanding, that the waters cannot haue their free course into the hauein: and that flood bringeth with it so great plenty of Eccles, that the riuer returninge to the channell, the Eccles remayne a farr off on the dry land as it were intangled among the marsh weedes, and thicke canes, whiche naturally grow there. At report and fame thereof, the Mariners with the consent of the borderers, if at any time they went in due season, might lade their shippes with that fish if they pleased: but if after the flood, (as it often falleth out through the diuers disposition of the heauens) such as seeke Eccles prolong or deferre their coming, or if impatient of delays they purpose to be gone, because they went before them, least the inhabitants exceeding abundance of putrified Eccles, corrupt the ayre, they driue herds of swine into the plaine, & make a dainty feast to the hogges, whereof (of a fewe carried thither from hence) there is an incredible multitude in those llandes. By the nature and inclination of the heauen, all foure footed beasts are cyther great with young, or giue sucke to their young, all the yeere long, and oftentimes both: they affirme that young Cow-calses, & Marefoles conceiue the tenth moneth, and often bring forth two at one burthen, and that they liue longer then else wher vnder the ayre of our climatts. And this they proue by one example. The Deame, of whom I haue often spoken, is reported to haue transported a Cow to Hispaniola sixe and twenty yeeres since, which is yet liuing, and by testimony of the borderers, yeerely calueth, and hee vaunted before me (for he is yet with vs) that by that Cow onely, & her calves calues, and successiue offspring, hee had gotten herdes of about 800. head of cattle. They report the same of all fowles, that being scarce driuen out of the nest, and but yet growing, they go to ingender new posteritie. Hee is worthy of another commendation

Trueth of  
Cattle.

The Deame of  
the Conception  
in Cow.

Trueth of  
fowles.

commendation among the Inhabitantes of the Priory of the Conception, the seate of his creamery, that he was the first that planted the trees of Cassia fistula, the former by living Deatures, the other, by planting himselfe whereby they say, they grew to haue such plenty of those trees (as great as Mulberry trees) in Hispaniola, Cuba, and Iamaica, (whose rich abbūlike Priory gracious Cæsar lately gaue me) that within few yeeres we may thinke a pound thereof will be valued at that price for which the Apothecaries nowe sell an ounce. But there ariseth no sweet or liquerish thing in humane affaires, but it bringeth some cockle with it. So great abundance of ants runneth to the smell of these trees, that whatsoever is sowed among them, or nere-about them is denoured by them, so that they now become very troublesome to the Inhabitants. They report pleasant stories concerning the coddles of this tree, or rather sheathes by reason of their length. The windes blowing, especially when they begin to ripen, there is such a conflict betwene them, that a thousand flockes of geese and ducks seeme to make a noyse or gagle among them. By that concourse, through the quality of the tart or ripe iuyce, or through the weight of the small seedes, and marrow or substance of the coddle, they say that sweete melodies of diuers sounds are caused. Concerning the tree, which I might rather call a stalke or stem of an herbe, because it is pithy, like a thistle, not solid, although it arise to the heighth of a bay tree, many things are to be repeated: but hereof mention is briefly made in my former Decades. They who imyt this tree, call it a Plane tree, although it differ very muche from a Plane tree, and hath no resemblance or affinity with the Plane tree. For the Plane tree is a solid tree, full of boughes, and more full of leaves then other trees, barren, high or tall, and long lasting, as I suppose your Excellencie hath sometimes heard. But this, as I sayd, is almost bare, and empty, yet fruitfull, a little branching, dull, and briclike, with one twigg onely, without boughes, cōpacted with a few leaues an armes length and an halfe from the top, and two spans broad, from the bottome sharpe, very like the leaues of caines or reedes, when they become weake through the cold of winter, they hang their heades, and bowe themselves downe to the ground, drawne with their own weight, and this tree is so prodigall and luishe of her vegetatiue life, that it withereth, waxeth olde, and dyeth the ninth month from the time it beganne to growe, or when it continueth longest, the tenth. It suddenly groweth, and being growne vp, it nourisheth a few clusters or bunches of berries, from the body thereof. Eury cluster bringeth forth thirty coddles, and sometimes a few more. These, in the hands grow in the clusters to the very precise forme and bignes of a garden cucumber, and so become greater, but in the Continent much bigger: the greene ones are sower, and tart, but being ripe they waxe white, or shining. The pulpa or substance thereof is very like freshe butter, both in softnes, and tast, it seemeth vnplesant to him that first tasteth it, but to such as are accustomed thereunto, it is most delightfull. The Egyptian common people habble that this is the apple of our first created Father Adam, whereby hee overthrew all mankind. The strange and forraine Marchantes of vnpromisable Spices, perfumes, Arabian effeminating odours, and woorthlesse precious stoues, trading those Countreys for gaine, call those fruites the Muses. For mine owne part, I cannot call to minde, by what name I might call that tree, or stalke in Latine. I haue read ouer certaine Latine Authors, and haue questioned some of the younger sort, who professe themselves to be best Latinists, but no man directeth me. Plinie maketh mention of a certaine fruit called Mixa. One (not vnlearned) sayth, it should be called Mixa, because it seemeth to differ little from Musa in the diuersity of the word, or sound. But I consented not vnto it, because Plinie sayth, that wine is made of Mixa. But it is absurd to thinke that wine might be made of this. I haue seenne many of these, and haue not eaten a fewe, as Alexandria in Egypt, when for my Catholike Princes Fernando and Elizabetha, I executed my Soldanian Legation. It is farre from my iudgement and conceit, that wine may be wronge out of it. Now let vs declare whence this tree came to the Spaniards the Inhabitants of those countreies, and why it is now so little regarded and accepted. They say, it was first brought from that part of Ethiopia commonly called Guinea, where it is very familiar, & common, and groweth of the owne accord: being set, or planted, it is enlarged to such a growth and increase, that many

Aster.

The melody that the winds make in the Cassia tree.

The Plane tree.

The Cassia tree grows up and withereth in nine months.

The opinion of the Egyptians.

The Cassia thought to be first brought out of Guinea.

represent

The Cross  
where it is  
planted maketh  
the earth barren  
and sterre the  
Lilke.

repent that euer they nourished or planted it in their country farms: wheresoeuer it is once planted, it maketh the earth vaprofitable for the increase of other things. (contrary to the liberality of Lupines, which fatten the ground with their twisted grasse or stalkes) it nourisheth and spreadeth the rootes thereof more abundantly then the feare of the mountains, so that the field that hath received it can neuer any more be purged or cleansed with any plow-share, or mattock, but through the perpetuall growth thereof, arising from euery little or hayry roote, new sprouts bud forth againe, which so suck the liuing mother, when they come forth from the bottome of the body of the tree, that they draw out all the strength thereof, and bring it to vniuersity destruction. The like also happeneth afterward to the sprouts themselves, as it were in reuenge of their impietie towards their mother, that hauing yeelded fruite, they presently dye: it is so bricckle, and fraile, that although it swell to the bigness of a mans thigh, and grow to the heighth of a Lawrell tree, as hath beene sayd, yet it is easily ouerthrowne or cut downe with the stroke of a sword, or cudgell, like the plant of fennell gyant, or of a thistle. There is a tree in Hispaniola (and in the mari-diction of an olde king called Mocarix, from whom the country retaineth yet the name) which equallith the broad spreading Mulberry tree ingendring gosampine cottō at the ends of the boughs thereof, no lesse profitable then that which is sowed euery yeere, and yeeldeth fruite.

A tree

A tree that  
carrieth wood.

Another tree bringeth fourth wooll, as with the Seres, fit for the making of threed, and for weaving. But they haue no vse thereof at all, because now they haue exceeding great plenty of sheepes wooll, yet haue they no workemen to this day, who apply themselves to the making or spinning of wooll. By little and little they will augment the Mechanicall arts, as the people increase. Nor is it to bee omitted, by what means nature of her owne accord giueth them ropes, and cordes. There is no tree almost, from whose rootes, a certaine herbe like Verben spoueth out, they call it Bexucum, it climeth vp like hoppers by the body of the tree, holdeth faster then Iunc, reaching to the highest boughs, and windeth and twisteth it selfe about the tree in such a multitude of wreathes, that it covereth it, as it were a friendly helpe, and a little shadow, to secure it from the heate. Nature seemeth to haue ingendred it to binde great burthens together whatsoeuer, or to sustayne ponderous and waighy things, and also to fasten and tye beames, and rafters of houses together: they say that the ioynts set together with Blexucum, are more safely bounde, then those that are fastened with Iron nayles: because it neuer either rotteth with the showers of raine, or waxeth drie with the heate of the Sunne, and that it giueth way a little without breaking, if the house happen to be shaken with the fury of a violent whirlewinde, being all of timber. (The Inhabitantes call those raging boysterous windes Furacanes, which vse to plucke vp huge trees by the roots, and often ouerthrow houses:) such as were compact and set together with nayles, the nayles being plucked out, fell vnder, but such as the knotty bandes of Bexucum tyed together, wagged, and waered onely when they were shaken, and after returned to their place, the ioynts being closed againe. They say, they were greatly vexed with these furious whirlewindes after our manner, from the very first beginning that Hispaniola was inhabited by our menne, which blowing, infernall deuils were often scene. But they asserue, that horrible calamity ceased, since the Sacrament of the Eucharist was vsed in the Iland, and that the deuils were no more scene, which familiarly vsed to shew themselves to auncient people in the night: therefore they themselves made their Zemes, that is to say, their Idols which they adored, of wood, or of Gosampine cotton stuffed to the hardnes of a stone, in the likenes of walking spirites, as paynters vse to drawe hobgoblins vpon the walles to terrifie and affright men from errors. Amonge other things I sent two of those Zemes (brought thence by Columbus the first discoverer of the secrets of the Ocean) to Ascanius your vncke, while his fortune was a mother. Of Bexucum, as many cubits as one hath neede of for his present vse, euery one may draw out as it were by one continued threed. Let this suffice for Bexucum: now let vs endeavour to declare another admirable benefit of nature. In Hispaniola and the rest of the Ocean Ilandes, there are plashy and marsh places, very fit for the feeding of herdes of cattell.

Bexucum is a tree  
whereof ropes  
are made.

The deuils be  
part, the Spa-  
niards come in,  
which is worse.

Gnates of diuers kindes, ingendred of that moyst heate greiuously afflict the Colonies, seated on the brink thereof, and that not onely in the night, as in other countries: therefore the inhabitants

A discourse of  
gnats and how  
they are  
by the Ocean.

inhabitants build low houses, and make little doores therein, scarce able to receive the maister, and without holes, that the gnats may have no entrance. And for that cause also they forbear to light torches, or candles, for that the gnatts by naturall instinct follow the light, yet nevertheless they often finde a way in. Nature hath giuen that pestilent mischeife, and hath also giuen a remedy, as she hath giuen vs cates to destroy the filthy progeny of misse, so hath shee giuen them prety, and commodious hunters, which they call Cucuij. These be harmeles winged wormes, somewhat lesse then backes or recremise, I shoulde rather call them a kinde of beetles, because they haue other winges after the same order, vnder their hard winged sheath, which they close within the sheath when they leaue flying. To this liuing creature (as we see flies shine by night; and certaine sluggish woormes lying in thicke hedges) prouident nature hath giuen foure very cleare looking glasses: two in the scate of the eyes, and two lying hid in the flanke vnder the sheath, which he then sheweth, when after the manner of the beetle, vnzueathing his thin winges, he taketh his flight into the ayre, whereupon euery Cucuius bringeth foure lightes or candles with him. But how they are a remedy for so great a mischeife, as is the stinging of these gnatts, which in some places are little lesse then bees, it is a pleasant thing to heare. Hee, who cyther vnderstandeth he hath those troublesome guesstes (the gnatts) at home, or feareth least they may get in, diligently hunteth after the Cucuij, which hee deceiseth by this meanes and industry, which necessity (effecting wonders) hath sought out. Whoso wanteth Cucuij, goeth out of the house in the first twilight of the night, carrying a burning sier-brande in his hande, and ascendeth the next hillocke, that the Cucuij may see it, and swingeth the sier-brande about calling Cucuius aloud, and beateth the ayre with often calling and crying: out Cucuij, Cucuij. Many simple people suppose that the Cucuij delighted with that noyse, come flying and flocking together to the bellowing sound of him that calleth them, for they come with a speedy and headlong course: but I rather thinke the Cucuij make hast to the brightnes of the sier-brande, because swarms of gnatts fly vnto euery light, which the Cucuij eate in the very ayre, as the Martlets, and Swallowes doe. Beholde the desired number of Cucuij, at what time, the hunter casteth the sier-brande out of his hande. Some Cucuius sometimes followeth the sier-brande, and lighteth on the grounde, then is hee easily taken, as traualers may take a beetle (if they haue neede thereof) walking with his winges shut. Others denie that the Cucuij are wont to bee taken after this manner, but say, that the hunters especially haue boughes full of leaues ready prepared or broad linnen clothes, wherewith they smite the Cucuius flying about on high, and strike him to the ground; where hee lyeth as it were astonished, and suffereth himselfe to bee taken, or as they say, following the fall of the flie, they take the praye, by castinge the same bushie bough, or linnen cloth vpon him: howsoeuer it bee, the hunter hauinge the hunting Cucuius, returneth home, and shutting the doore of the house, letteth the praye goe. The Cucuius loosed, swiftly flyeth about the whole house seeking gnatts, vnder their hanging bedds, and about the faces of them that sleepe, whiche the gnatts use to assayle, they seeme to execute the office of watchmen, that such as are shut in, may quietly rest. Another pleasant and profitable commodity proceedeth from the Cucuij. As many eyes as euery Cucuius openeth, the host enioyeth the light of so many candles: so that the Inhabitantes spinne, sewe, weaue, and daunce by the light of the flying Cucuius. The Inhabitantes thinke that the Cucuius, is delighted with the harmony and melodie of their singing, and that hee also exerciseth his motion in the ayre according to the action of their dauncing. But hee, by reason of the diuers circuits of the gnatts, of necessity swiftly flyeth about diuers wayes to seeke his foode: and our men also read, & write by that light, which alwayes continueth, vntill hee haue gotten enough whereby he may be well fedd. The gnatts being cleansed, or driuen out of doores, the Cucuius beginning to famish, the light beginneth to faile, therefore when they see his light to waxe dim: opening the little doore, they endeouor to set him at libertie; that hee may seeke his foode. In sport, and meriment, or to the intent to terrifie such as are affrayd of euery shaddow, they say that many

The manner of  
using the  
Cucuij.

wanton

wanton wild fellows sometimes rubbed their faces by night with the sische of a Cucuius being killed, with purpose to meete their neighbours with a flaming countenance, knowing whether they went to goe, as with vs sometimes wanton young men, putting a gaping toothed visard vpon their face, endeouir to terrifie children, or women who are easily frightened: for the face being anointed with the hump or fleshy parte of the Cucuius, shineth like a flame of fire, yet in short space that fiery vertue waxeth feeble, and is extinguished, seeing it is a certayne bright humour receiued in a thin substance. There is also another wonderfull commodity proceeding from the Cucuius: the Islanders appointed by our men, goe with their good will by night, with 2 Cucuij, tyed to the great toes of their feete: (for the traailer goeth better by direction of the lights of the Cucuij, then if hee brought so many candles with him, as the Cucuij open eyes) he also carrieth another Cucuius in his hand to seeke the Vitæ by night. Vitæ are a certayne kinde of Cony, a little exceeding a mouse in bignesse, and bulke of bodie: which four-footed beast they onely knewe; before our coming thither, and did eate the same. They goe also a fishing by the lights of the Cucuij, vnto the which art they are cheifly addicted, and exercised therein from the cradell, that it is all one with eather sexe of them to swimme, and to goe vpon the drie land: and it is no wonder, the childe birth of those women considered, who when they know it is time to bee deliuered of the childe being ripe, they goe forth vnto the neighbouring wood, and there taking holde of the boughes of any tree with both their hands, they are disburdened without the helpe of any midwife, and the mother herselfe speedily running, taketh the childe in her armes, and carryeth it vnto the next river.

The great benefit which states here by the Cucui.

Vitæ a kind of Conies little bigger than mice.

The manner of the childe-birth amonge their women very strange.

There shee washeth herselfe, and rubbeth; & dippeth the childe often, and returneth home againe without any complaint, or noyse, and giueth it sucke, and afterwards as the manner is; shee washeth herselfe, and the childe often euery day. All of them doe the like after one manner. There are, who say, that the women being ready to bee deliuered, goe forth to the waters themselues, where (as they report) they stay with their legs wide open, that the childe may fall into the water. Divers report diuersly concerning these things. While I was writing this discourse of the pretty Cucuius, a little before noone, accompanied with Camillus Gillinus (whom I make my continuall companion, both because hee is your Excellencies seruant, as also for his pleasing disposition and behaviour) Iacobus Camizares the doore-keeper of Cæsar's chamber, came vnto me vnexpected, who also from the first beginning of these things (together with no small number of Palatines, the familiar frindes of the Catholicke Princes Ferdinando and Elizabeth, young men desirous of nouelties) went with Colonus himselfe, when hauing obtayned the second flecte of 17. shippes, hee vnderooke the matter or discouery of the Ocean: whereof I haue sufficiently, and at large discoursed to Ascanius. He declared many things in the presence of Gillinus, while wee were at dinner. Who when he saw I had made mention of the Cucuius, sayth, that in a certaine land of the Canibals, in an exceeding darke night, when they went a shore and lay on the sandes, hee first saw one onely Cucuius, which coming forth of a wood nere vnto them, so shined vpon their heads, that the company might perfectly see, and know one another: and hee affirmed with an oath, that by the light thereof, letters might easily bee read. Also; a citizen of Siuill, a man of authority, called P. Fernandez de la Vares, one of the first inhabitants of Hispaniola who first erected an house of stonew from the foundation, in Hispaniola, confesseth the same, that by the light of a Cucuius hee had read very large letters. Nor will I omit what hee reported concerning certayne small slender greene snakes very dangerous. Hee sayth, that these serpents speedily creepe vnto the trees nere vnto the wayes, and when they perceiue any trausyer about to passe that way, they take holde of a bough with their tayle, hanging thereat, and loosning themselves from the bough, they assaile the trausyer vnawares, and leape against his face, that they may hit him on the eye, and hee sayth that their property and nature is, to yme at no other place, save the bright luster of the eye: but fewe fall into that mischeife, by reason that long experience hath made them wary, to take heede howe they goe to nere suspected trees as they passe by: this worthie manne reporteth that one of them leaped

Another notable proofe of the Cucui.

Of a small Serpente which is dangerous to manne if hee passe by.

downe vpon him, which somewhat astonished him, and hadd hurt him, if (admonished by an Ilander who was his companion) hee hadd not stretched out his left hand against it descending vpon him. They say that the sting of this Serpent is horrid. They also adde morcouer that it is true which is reported concerning an Iland replenished only with women archers, who are eager and stout defenders of their shoares and that at certaine times of the yeere the Caniballes passe ouer vnto them for the cause of generation, and that after they be great with childe they endure the compaie of a manne no longer, and that they sende away the Male children, and retayne the Females: whereof, I made mention in my former Decades, and left it supposed to bee halfe fabuloues. A little before, I declared, that Alphonsus Argoglius the Secretary sayde the same that Canizares didd, heere I learned an excellent poynt, omitted then, because ample mention was made concerning the Religious rites and Ceremonies of the Ilanders: for neyther doth bee who runneth on horsebacke, attayne to the ende of the goale or race at one leape, nor doe shippes passe ouer the whole Sea, with one blast of winde.

Here againe  
advertiseth the  
report formerly  
made of the  
Ilands of  
women.

## The tenth Chapter.

While the estate and condition of kinges florished the King on certaine dayes by messengers, and common cryers commanaded the subiectes of his dominion to bee called to celebrate their sacred and religious rites. At which time, neatly dressed after their manner, and painted with diuers colours of herbes, as we reade the Agathyrri sometimes did, all the men came, especially the young men: but the women resorted thither naked, without any kinde of colouring or painting, if they had neuer bene deflowered, but such as hadd knowne a man, covered their primitives with breeches onely. Both sexes in steede of belles, filled their armes, thighs, calves of their legges, & ancles with shelles of certaine shellfish fastened vnto them, which made a sweete rattling sound at every motion, as for the rest, they were all naked. Being thus laden with shelles, shaking the earth with their foete, tripping, singing, and dauncing, they reuerently saluted their King, who sitting in the entrance of a gate, beating on a drumme or taber with a stickc receiued them coming vnto him. When they were about to sacrifice to their Zemes, to their Idoll (I say) like the infernall spirites as they are painted, and to the ende that being purged they might bee more acceptable to their godd, every one thrusting the hooke (which alwaies on these dayes they carry in their handes) downe into their throat euen to the weesell, or vna, they vomited, and voyded their glorious ostentation, euen to the emptying of themselves. Afterwardes they went into the Kinges court, and all sate before their princely Zemes, in a rounde circle or ring, after the manner of a Theater, as it were in the turning circuites of a Labyrinth, with their feete vnder them like a Tayler, almost trembling through pietie and feare, they beheld their Zemes wry necked, bending their heades to one shoulder, and praied that their sacrifices might not be displeasing to their godd. While these things, were thus done in the court of their drumming king the women were busily employed in another place, in offering cakes, a signe giuen by the Bouiti, the women crowned with garlands of diuers flowers, dancing, and singing their hymnes (which they call Arecites) offer cakes in baskets very fairely wrought and platted in. In their entrance they began to compassc shen that sate, who (as though they had bene raysed by a suddaine leape) together with the women (by their Arecites) extolled their Zemes with wonderfull praises and commendation, and singing, recited the renowned actes of the ancestors of their King. And after this, they gaue their Zemes thanks for benefits past, and humbly besought him to prosper their future estate, and then at length both sexes kneeling offered cakes vnto their godd, the Bouiti hauing receiued them, sanctified them, and cut them into as many small little peeces, as there were men there. Every one brought home his portiou vntouched and kept it the whole yeere, for an holy relique. And by the perswasion of the Bouiti, they thought that house to bee valucky, and subject to many dangers of fire, and whirlwindes which they call Furacanes, if it wanted the like little peece of cake. But your Excellency shall heere another, ridiculous, matter of no small moment: after their oblations, hanging with

A discourse of  
the kind cere-  
monies de ser-  
uitions de leur  
Ilanders.

The Bouiti the  
name of their  
peeces.

The Oracle.

open mouth they expected answers from their wooden, or bombasin cotton stuffed Godd, as simple antiquity did from the Oracle of Apollo. And if cyther by wind included, or deluded by the Bouiti, they persuaded themselves that a voyce came from their Zemes, which the Bouiti interpreted at their pleasure, they went forth cheerfully singing, and making melody, lifting vp their voyces in commendation: and spent the whole day in the open ayre exercising sports, and dauncing. But if they went out sorrowfull hanging their heades, supposing their Zemes to be angry, & tooke that silence for a greivous and ominous signe, they feared diseases, & other losses would follow theron; and if war assailed them, they greatly feared vnsappy success. Both sexes going forth sighing, with their hayre hanging loose, & with abundant shedding of teares, casting away their ornaments, pinched themselves with fasting, & abstinence fro sweet & pleasant meats, euen to extreme faintnes, until they thought they were reconciled to their Zemes. This Iacobus Canizares, & his copanions report. If you demand (most renowned Prince) what I think here of, I say, I should iudge they are deceived by their Bouiti, priests, and Phisitions, through some Magicall or deluding arte. For they are greatly giuen to diuination euen from their ancestors, to whom infernall spirites often shewed themselves by night, and told them what they commanded, as in my former Decades I haue at large declared. They are also in some place in the supposed Continent incumbered with vayne and idle ceremonies woorthie the reporting.

The authors opinion of the Oracle.

Dabaiba compared to Niles.

The great and mighty Riuier Dabaiba, which as Nilus is sayd to fall into the Egyptian sea by many mouthes, so runneth it into the Bay of Vrabia of golden Castile, and that greater then Nilus: what people inhabite the same hath bene sufficiently spoken in his place. Now let vs declare the rites & customes hitherto vnknowne, but lately reported vnto mee by the Inhabitantes of Darien. There is an Idoll called Dabaiba, as the riuier is, the chappell of this Image is about 40. leagues distant from Darien, wherunto the Kings at certaine times of the yeere send slanes to bee sacrificed; from very farre removed countries, and they also adore the place with exceeding great concourse of people. They kill the slanes before their godd, and then burne them, supposing that flaming odor to be acceptable to their Idoll, as the light of a taper, or the fume of frankincense is to our Soints. They say, that within the memory of their great grandfathers, all the riuers, and fountaines fayled, through the displeasure of that angry Godd: and that the greater parte of the men of those countries perished through hunger, and thirst, and such as remainyd aliue, leauing all the montanous places, descending to the plaines neere vnto the Sea, vsed pitts digged on the shoare in steede of fountaines. Therefore all the Kings mindefull of so greate a destruction, through religious feare, haue their priests at home, and their Chappels compassed with countermeasures, which they sweepe, and cleanse euery day, & are very carefull that no hoarènes, or mouldines, nor so much as an herbe, or other sith bee in them. When the King thinketh to desire of his particular Idoll, cyther sunshine, or raine, or some such like thing which the neighbourhood wanteth, hee with his priests getteth vp into a pulpit standing in his domestick Chappell, not purposing to depart thence, vntill they haue obtayned their requests from the godd, ouercome by their intreaty: they vrge, and vehemently desire him with effectuall prayers, and cruell fasting, that they may obtayne their desires, and humbly pray that they may not be forsaken. Being demanded to what god they poure forth their prayers, the Spaniards who were present, reporte, they answered, that they prayd to him, who created the Heauens, the Sunne, and the Moone, and all inuisible things, from whom all good things proceede. And they say that Dabaiba, the generall godd of those Countries, was the mother of that Creator. In the meane space, while the King, and his companions continue praying in the temple, the people (being so perswaded) macerate themselves with greivous fastings for foure dayes space, for, all that time, they take neyther meate nor drinke. But the fourth day, least the stomacke shoulde bee oppressed, being pinched with so greate hunger, they onely sup the thiane broth of the liquid pulse, made of the flower of Maizium, that so by little and little they may recouer their decayed strength: But it is not vsfit to bee heard,

A tradition of the sayre of their god.

An answer not receivable to these History. Dabaiba the mother of the Creator.

Their answers to religious seruice by belles as ours.

after what manner they are called, and summoned to their religious, and sacred rites, or what instruments they vse. One day (the cursed thirst of gold prouoking therunto) the Spaniards

Spaniards having leuied a strong power of armed menn, went to passe through the banks of that riuer Dabaiba. Heere they light vpon a King whom they ouerthrew, and hadd from him about fourteeir thousande pensa of gold; brought into diuers formes, very fairely wrought, among which they found three golden trumpets, and as many golden belles, one of the belles weyed sixe hundred pensa, the other were lesser. Becing demanded, for what seruise they vsed the trumpets, and belles, they answered (as they say) that they were wont to vse the Harmony and Concert of Trumpets to stir their vp to mirth vpon their festiuall <sup>Trumpets</sup> dayes, and times to sport, and that they vsed the noyse and ringing of belles to call the people to the ceremonies of their religion. The clappers of the belles seemed to bee made after our manner, but so white, and cleere, that at the first sight, saue that they were too long, our menne woulde haue thought they hadd beene made of pearles, or of the Mother of pearle, in the eade they vnderstoode they were made of the bones of fishes. They say, the carres of the hearers are delighted with a sweete and pleasant sounde, although the ringing of golde vseth to bee dull. The tongues or clappers moued, touch the lippes or brimmes of the belles, as wee see in ours. A thousand three hundred sweete sounding little belles of golde, like ours, and golden breeches, or cod-peeces (wherein the Noblemen inclose their priuities, fastened with a little cotton cogd behind) were in this booty and praye. It is <sup>Golden cod- pieces.</sup> very necessary and expedient for their Priests to beware of all luxury, and carnall pleasure, if any (contrary to his voite and purpose of chastity) shall be found to bee polluted, hee shall either bee stoned to death, or burned, for they suppose chastity pleaseth that God the Creator. What time they fast, and giue themselves to prayer, hauing washed and rubbed their faces, (when at other times they waked alwayes painted) they nowe lifted their handes, and eyes to heauen, and abstained not onely from harlots, and other venereous actions, but also from their owne wines. They are such simple men, that they know not how to call <sup>They are ignorant of the soules, yett gentle of a kinde of innocency.</sup> the soule, nor vnderstand the power thereof: whereupon, they often talke among themselves with admiration what that inuisible and not intelligible essence might bee, whereby the members of men and brute beastes should be moued: I know not what secret thing they say, should liue after the corporall life. That (I know not what) they beleuee that after this peregrination, if it liued without spott, and reserved that masse committed vnto it without injury done to any, it should goe to a certayne eternall felicity: contrary, if it shall suffer the same to be corrupted with any filthy lust, violent rapine, or raging fure, they say, it shall finde a thousande tortures in rough and vnpleasant places vnder the Center: and speaking these things, lifting vpp their handes they shewe the heauens, and after that casting the right hand downe, they point to the womb of the earth. They bury their dead in sepulchers. Many of their liuing wines follow the funerals of the husband. They may haue as many as they please, (excepting their kindred, & allies) vnlesse they be widowers, wherupon, they found them infected with a certaine ridiculous superstition. They childishly affirme that the thicke spott seene in the globe of the Moone; at the full, is a man, and they beleuee hee was cast out to the moyst, and colde Circle of the Moone, that hee might perpetually be tormented betweene those two passions, in suffering colde, and moisture, for incest committed with his sister. In the sepulchers, they leaue certayne trenchers on high, wherinto euery yeere they poure a little of the graine Maizium, and certayne suppinges or small quantities of wine made after their manner, and they suppose these things will be profitable to the ghosts of their departed friends. But your Excellency shall heare an horrible and shamefull act more cruell then any sausage barbarousnes. If it happen that any mother giuing suck dyeth, putting the child to the breast, they bury it aliuie together with her. But in some place a widow marryeth, the brother of her former husband, or his kinsman, especially if hee left any children. They are easily decieued through the crafty deuises of their priests, wherupon they religiously obserue a thousand Kindes of fooleries. These things are reported to be in the large countries of the great riuer of Dabaiba. But you shall heare other things of the same nature, (last related vnto mee by men of authority, who diligently searched the South shoures of that country) omitted by Ægidius Gonsalus, and his companions, yet worthy to bee knowne: for besides Ægidius himselfe, others also haue searched

dijers coastes, and nations of those huge countries, with severall fleets, as I have often spoken. Among the Kings of those parts, besides other foolish errors, they knewe them touched with one, neuer reade, or heard of before. They are informed in some places that the Kings and Noblemen have immortall soules, and beleue that the soules of the rest perish together with their bodies, except the familiar friends of the Princes themselves, and those onely (whose masters dying) suffer themselves to be buried aliue together with their maisters funerales: for their ancestors haue left them so perswaded, that the soules of Kings, deprived of their corporall clothing, ioyfully walke to perpetuall delights through pleasant places alwayes greene, eating, drinking, & giuing themselves to sports, and dancing with women, after their olde manner, while they were liuing, and this they hold for a certaine truth. Thereupon many straining with a kinde of emulation cast themselues headlong into the sepulchers of their Lordes, which, if his familiar friends deserre to doe (as we haue sometimes spoken of the wines of kings in other countries) they thinke their soules become temporarie, of eternall. The heires of Kings, and Noblemen in those countries, renew their funerall pompe euery yeere after the old custome: that funerall pompe is prepared, & exercised after this manner. The King with the people and neighbourhoode, or what Nobleman so euer hee bee, assemble together at the place of the sepulcher, & hee who prepareth this funerall pompe, bringeth exceeding great plenty of wine made after their manner, and all kinde of meates. There, both sexes, but specially the women, sleepe not that whole night, one while bewailing the vnhappie fortune of the deade, with sorrowfull rythmes, and funerall songes, especially if hee dyed in the wares, slayne by the enemy (for they pursue one another with perpetuall and deadly hatred, although they lyue contented with a little) then they taxe the life, and manners, of the conquering enemy with railing speeches, and outrageous contumelies, and call him a tyrant, cruell, and a traytor, who vanquished their Lord, and wasted his dominion by subtil practises, and not by vertue of the minde or strength of the bodie (for this is their barbarous custome) Then presently they bring the Image of the enemy, and faining fight, they assault the Image in a rage with diuers incursions: and at length cutte it in peeces, in a vaine reuenge of their deade Lord. After this, they returne to eating, and drinking, euen to drunkennesse, and surfetjng (For they make diuers potions of inebriating graynes, & hearbes, as with the Belgæ ale is made of hopped, and corne, and with the Cantabri Sider is made of apples) After this, they come to dancing, and merry songes, euen till they be extreame weary, extolling the vertues of their Lorde with wonderfull commendation in that he was good, liberall, and very loving to his people, for that also he was carefull of their sowing, or planting, and of their standing corne, and to distribute all fruites for the benefite of the people. For this is the chiefe and principall care of Kings, that in military affaires hee bee a valiant and couragious souldier, and a wise commander. Returning againe to their mourning, they lift vp their voyces, and bewaile the deade with the rythmes wherewith they beganne, saying: O most famous, and Noble Prince, who hath violently taken thee away from vs? oh vnhappie day, which hath deprived vs of so great felicity, oh miserable wretches that wee are, who haue lost such a father of our country: these and such like thinges proclaymed, turning to the Prince that is present, they deliuer wonderfull commendations of his merits, goodnesse and other vertues, and compass the king about with restles skipping and dancing like the furies of Bacebus, yet withall, looke reuerently vpon him, and adore him, and say that in him they behold a present & future remedie and solace of their afflictions, and so many euils past: and after the manner of flatterers, they call him more elegant and fine then the finest, more beautifull then the fairest, and more liberall then the most liberall, and singing all together with one voyce they proclaime him religious and grations, and many such like. Now when the day beginneth to appeare, they cõe forth of the house, and finde a Canow (of the bodie of one tree, capable of 60. oars and more) with the image of the deade ready prepared there. For the trees in that place are of an exceeding length, especially the Citrons, the familiar and common trees of those countries, of whose excellen prerogatiues I lately learned one, vnknoũne to me before. They say the Citrean plances, besides the other ancient commendations thereof,

because

That their  
Kings & nobles  
haue only im-  
mortall soules  
and no other.

Allsmall fune-  
rals.

In drinking  
drunken.

Speeche of the  
prince.

Citron plance  
not generally  
knowne.

because they are of a bitter taste, are safe from that mischievous plague of Sea worms, which eat through the pumpes of ships, whersoever the sea is full of mire & filth, and boare them worse then a pierced sique. These little sea-wormes the Spanyard calleth Broma. In the meane space while the maister of this funerals pompe cometh forth, the king's Stewardest, and officers, keepe the foresajde Canow of the deade ready prepared without, filled with drinckes, herbes, & fruits, & fish, flesh and bread, such as he delighted in while hee was liuing: then they who are iuited comming forth, cary the Canow vpon their shoulders, going about the Courte. And presently in the same place, from whence they lifted the Canow vp to cary it, putting fire vnder it, they burne it with all the things included, supposing that fume to be most acceptable and pleasing to the soule of the deade. Then all the womenne filled with excess of wine, with their hayre loose, and their secrets discovered, watemperatly foming, sometimes with a slowe, and sometimes with a speedie pace, with trembling legges, somwhat leaning to the wals, and sometimes staggering, and raging, with shamelesse faller, & lastly taking the weapons of the men with noyse and outcries, they brandish, and shake the speares, & handle the darts and arrowes, and furiously running hither, and thither shake the court it selfe: and after this being weary, they cast themselves flatte vpon the grounde, not covering their secrets, and there sleepe their fill. These things are chiefly vsed in an Iland of the South called Cesuaco, wherunto our men went by the way vnder the conduct of Spinosa. But one other thing omitted, although but a homely tale yet it is not to be concealed. The young men earnestly busied in these mad pastimes, exercising their Arceites with songs, these are their sports, they perce the middle of their priue members with the sharpe boke of a fish, which the Spanyardes and Latines call Raia, in Greeke Bijis, and mooouing, and exercise themselves with skipping & dancing they beid the pavement of the court with streames of flowing bloude. At length casting a certayne powder thereon, found out by the Banti for remedie therof, who execute the office of Surgeons, phisitians, & priests, within 4. daies they cure the woundes giuen vnto themselves. In those countries also there are subtill and craftie Magicians, and Soothsayers, so that they neuer attempt any thing, without consulting with their Augures: for whether they purpose hunting, or fishing, or to gather golde out of the mines, or determine to seeke for shell-fishe where the pearles growe; they dare not stirre one foot, vnles the maister of that art Teque-nigna (which is a name of dignitie) first signifye by his appointment, that the time is now fit. No degree of affinitye or other kind of kindred is forbidde with the, though elsewhere they abstaine, the parents vse the act of generatio with their daughters, and brothers with their sisters (the wifes of the parentes, although they bee mothers by hereditary right procure heires with other faculties) yet they say, they are filthy, and publicly inclined to preposterous vnerie. There is also another custome else-where, which is much vsed in our Ilandes Hispaniola, Cuba, and Iamaica. That womanne is accounted more liberall, and honourable, who being able to receive a manne admitteth most to abuse her, and most excessively prostituteth her selfe beyonde measure. Heereof they yeelde manie examples, but one of them is gracious and well to bee lyked. Certayne Spanyardes intermixed with the barbarous Iamaicanes crossed ouer the Sea from Iamaica to Hispaniola, amonge the womanne one was verie beautifull, who hadde kept her selfe vntouched tyll that day, and was a louer of chastitie. The Spanyardes of purpose turning vnto her, began to call her nig-gardlic, and desirous to preserue her honour after an euill manner. The lasciuious disposition and scurrillitie of those wanton young men was such, that they made the young maiden almost madde, thereupon she determined by prostituting herselfe, to expect as many as would abuse her. This mayden who nicely resisted that conflict at first, shewed her selfe most liberall to such as desired to embrace her. The name of marice in both sexes, is odious, and infamous in these Ilandes. But in the Continent in many places it is contrarie. They are louers of the chastity of their wifes: and hereupon they are so ielous, that the wifes offending therein, are punished by cutting their throates.

Wee conclude your portion (most noble Prince) with a prodigious monster. What remaineth, or if any newe matter arise in the writing hereof, the Pope by his parchment pa-

The British be-  
lieue our of their  
women.

A foolish and  
filthy stroke of  
young men.

A people as in-  
feriour as  
beastes.

A woman the  
more common  
the more con-  
mendable.

Let the papist  
number the  
amonge their  
Griues conser-  
uacion.

tent lately brought vnto mee, commaundeth to be dedicated vnto himselfe. The next countrey to the fountayne or head of the river Dabaiba is called Camara producing the last syllable. In the memorie of meene yet liuing it is reported, that in that countrey a violent tempest of blustering whirlewinds arose from the East, which plucked vp by the rootes whatsoever trees stood in the way, and violently carried away many houses and tossed them in the ayre, especially such as were made of timber. Through that violent tempest, they say two foules were brought into the country, almost like the Harpize of the Ilands Strophades so much spoken of, for that they had the countenance of a virgin, with a chinsie, mouth, nose, teeth, smooth brow, and venerable eyes, and faire. They say one of these was of such huge bignesse, that no bough of any tree was able to beare her lighting thereon, but that it would breake: and further they also say, that through her exceeding waight, the verie print of her talons remayned in the stones of the rockes where shee went to perch all night. But why doe I repeat this? she seised on a trauailer with her talons, and carryed him to the high toppes of the mountains to eat him, with no more difficultie, then kites vse to carry away a little chicken. The other, for that it was lesse, they suppose to bee the young one of the greater. The Spanyardes, who trauailed through those countries about foure hundred leagues, carryed by shippe from the mouth of this riuer, say plainly that they spake with many, who sawe the greater killed, especially those approued men whom I often mentioned, the Lawyer Corrales, and the Musitian Osorius, and Spiroza. But howe the Debaibensian Camerani freed themselves from such a and so great a plague and mischiefe, it will not be vnfit to bee hearde. Seeing necessitie quickeneth and procureth wittie intentions, the Camerani deuised a way (worthy the reporting) howe to kill this rauening foule. They cutte a great beame or peece of ymber, and at one of the endes thereof they carue the Image and resemblance of a manne (for they are skillfull in all Imaginary art) then digging a trench in a cleere moonelight night they fasten the peece of ymber in the next way to the passage, where the prodigious foule came flying downe from the top of the Mountaynes to seeke her pray, leauing onely the shape and proportion of a manne appearing aboue grounde. Next vnto the way stood a thicke woode, wherein they lay hidde with their bowes and dartes to smite her vnawares. Beholde a little before the rising of the Sunne the fearefull monster rouseth her selfe, and cometh violently flying downe from the loftie skie, to her vayne and idle pray: shee seiseth vpon the carued Image, taketh and gripeth it, and so fastened her talons, that she could not free her selfe, vntill the Barbarians issuing from the secret places where they lay hid, shot her through with their arrowes, so that she escaped pierced more the a siue. At length getting loose she fel downe dead neere vnto the: then binding & haging her on long speares they who killed her carryed her vpon their shoulders through all the neighbouring townes, to the ende they might ease their mindes of the feare they conceived, and that they might knowe the wayes were safe whiche this outrageous rauening foule made vnpassable. They who killed her, were accounted as Gods, and were honourably intertained by those people, and that, not without giftes and rewardes presented vnto them, as it happeneth with many nations, when presentes are giuen by the neighbours to him that carryeth the signes or tokens of any Lyon, Beare, or Wolfe slayne, who expected losses by those wilde beastes. They say her legs were thicker and greater then the great thigh of a manne, but shorte, as in Eagles, and other rauening foules. The younger, the damme beeing killed, was neuer seene againe. Nowe, I bidde your Excellencie farewell, to whom I wish a quiet and peaceable lyfe in the kingdome left you by your Auncesters.

A strange tale  
of a prodigious  
monster.

The taking of  
the monster.

#### FINIS.

The eight Decade of Peter Martyr a Millanois of Angleria, chiefe Secretary, and one of the Emperours Counsell, dedicated to Pope Clement the Seuenth.

#### The first Chapter.

MOST blessed father, I recieued vnder S. Peters signet (after the manner of Popes) a parchment Bull from your Holinesse, which contained two principall points: the one laudative,

tiue, concerning the matters of  $\text{y}$  newe world by me directed to your predecessors, the other imparatiue, that I suffer not the rest  $\text{y}$  succeeded to be swallowed in the huge gulfe of oblivion. I will not deny but that I deserue prayse for the desire I haue to obey: as for my rude and homly manner of deliuey, if I merit no commendation, yet shall I deserue pardon at the least. These discourses being of so great importance, and such quality, would require Ciceronian spirites, as I haue often protested in the relation of my former Decades, but because I could not get-silke, or cloth of golde, I haue attyred the most beautifull Nereides (I meane the flandes of the Ocean ingendring precious stones vnknoone from the beginning of the world) with vulgar and homly apparell, before that commandement of your Holinesse came to my hands, I hadde directed many aduertisements (succeeding those of Pope Adrian which your Holinesse hath read) to the Vicecount Franciscus Sfortia Duke of my natiue country (when his fortune freedde him, from an vtired minde of a most Christian King) and that at the earnest requests of his Agents with the Emperor. But now purposing to sende my painefull labours to your Holinesse, I thought it needefull to fortifie and strengthen these present discourses with the examples of thinges past, though dedicated to another: and as a troupe of Prelates and Princely Cardinales of the Church vseth to goe beefore the Pope walking abroad; so shall that Decade presented to the Duke open the way. What hath been declared next after them, from diuers partakers of thinges, concerning the adventures of menne, of fourefooted beastes, birdes, fyes, trees, hearbes, the rites & customes of people, of the art of Magicke, of the present state and condition of newe Spayne, and diuers fleetes, your Holinesse shall vnderstande, from whose commandement none liuing may safely departe. And let vs first rehearse what beeffell Franciscus Garaius, the Governour of Iamaica, by a newe name called Saint Iames (whose Abby-like Priory Cæsars bountie lately gaue mee) who contrary to the will and pleasure of Fernandus Cortes, went about to erect a Colonie at the ryuer Panucus, which at length brought him to his ende: next, where Agidius Gonsalus arryued seeking the straght so much desired on the North, and Christopherus Ollitus, of whom wee touched a few things in the former Decade to the Duke. Then will wee speake somewhat of Petrus Arias Governour of the supposed Continent, seeking the same. And presently after, wee will recite Licentiatu Marcellus Villalobos, Iudge of the Indian Senate in Hispaniola, & his familiar Iacobus Gasias Barrameda, who coming lately from Fernandus Cortes governour of Noua Hispania, reported certaine great and strange matters vnto me. Many others also shalbe called into this void plot, among whō Fryar Thomas Hortizius (one of the 2. coloured Dominican Fryars, a manne of approued honesty) shall be brought forth, who was long conuersant with the Chiribichenses the inhabitantes of the supposed Continent. Nor shall Iacobus Alvarez Osorius be omitted, being nobly descended, a priest of the Priory of Darien, and for his worthinesse a Chaunter, who also himselfe vnder the conducte of Spinoza through that vastity of the South Sea spent many yeeres with great extremities and dangers, and that in searching the countreys of Dabaiba. From the large volumes of these, and such like menne of authoritie being absent, and by woorde of mouth of those that come about their sayres, I gather those thinges, which three Popes, and other Princes commanded me to signifie vnto you. Let vs therefore place the life, and the vnhappie death of Garaius in the first front of our narration. In the former booke directed to Adrian the Predecessour of your Holinesse; I thinke, in manie places it is sayde, that there was secret hatred betweene Fernandus Cortes the Conquerour of newe Spayne, and the great Princes thereof, and this Garaius, by reason that Garaius seemed desirous to possess the Panucan countreys bordering vpon the Dominions of Cortes. Wee haue also said that Garaius himselfe with great losses was twice ouerthrowne by the almost naked inhabitantes, who dwell vpon the greete Ryuer Panucus, and wandring like a fugitiue arryued as often within the power of Fernandus Cortes, and was by him relieved, and often refreshed with necessaries, when he wanted, as appeareth at large by Cortes his writings, and myne, wandring through the Christian worlde. Foure shippes are arryued from the Indies, and wee haue receiued letters from those who were partakers of the paynefull labours, and miseries, and also haue the discourse of Garaius, by woorde of mouth from them who returned. Being

He releueth more at large the story of Garaius mentioned in the former Decade.

ing about to possess (by Cæsars permission) the banks of the great ryuer Panucus nowe discovered, to the intent hee might plant a Colonie there, whereof hee hadde long considered, the eighteenth of the Calendes of Iune, he departed from Iamaica (by a newe name called the Ilande of S. Iames, whiche hee governed a long time) with a flecte of 11. shippes, whereof sixe were of the burden of a hundred and twentie and a hundred and fiftie tonnes, two were of that kinde which the Spanyard calleth Carauelles, and as many Brigantines with two ranges of oares: the number of his souldiers were, 144. horse, 300. archers footemen, 200. shotte, 200. bearing swordes and targettes, and with this armie he sayled towards Cuba called Ferdinandina. The Tropick of Cancer diuideth Cuba, Iamaica lyeth more to the South from it, within the Zone falsely called Torrida by auncient writers. Cuba is almost twice as long as Italie, the furthest West angle whereof full of hauens; called the Heade of the Cutrentes, Garaius tooke, and purposing to take in freshe water, woode, and grasse to feede the horses, hee abode there some fewe dayes. That angle is not very farre distaunt from the first limites of Noua Hispania, which Cortes in Cæsars beehalfe, commaundeth, whereby hee vnderstoode that Cortes hadde erected a Colonie vpon the banke of Panucus. Garaius sendeth for the Centurions, they consult, and deliberate what was needfull to bee doone. Some thought it fitte to seeke newe countries, seeing manie lay open vnto them, and that the fortune and greatnesse of Cortes was to bee feared, others aduise and counsell'd, that the waightly charge they hadde vnderaken was not to be forsaken, especially being confirmed by Cæsars letters patents, whereby hee consenteth the Prouince shoulde be called Garaiana. Their suffrages and consent preyauled, who tooke the woorter parte: so that the pernicious opinion of his consortes pleased Garaius well. Hauing sounded the mindes of the Centurions, and Commanders, hee exercised a vaine shaddowe and counterfeit shewe of erecting a Common-wealth, and diuideth the places of Magistracy, and authoritie, among them, to the intent that hauing offered honour and prefermentes vnto them, hee might cause the chiefe menne to bee more readie and prompt. And of this shaddowlike & Imaginary Colonie he createth gouernours, Alphonsus Mendoza, the nephewe of Alphonsus Pachecus sometimes Maister of the Spatensians, and ioyned as fellowe in office with him Fernandus Figueroa a citizen of Cæsars Castle of no meane and huse parentage, and two others brought away from the Iland of Cuba. But the chiefe Gouernour of the cittie hee created Gonsalus Ouaglius, a noble mann of Salamantinum, neere kiusmanne of the Duke of Alba, and Villagranns his olde familiar of the kings house, and Iacobus Cifontes, one of the common people, but industrious and wise. Out of the vulgar sorte also hee created Executory souldiers, whiche the Spanyard calleth Alguazillos, and Ediles or clerkes of the Markettes to looke to the waights, and meayures. All these, Garaius bindeth to him by oath, agaynst Cortes if peraduenture it shoulde come to armes, or other violent courses. So, deueiled with wayne hope, beeing not experienced in the casualties of fortune, nor well acquainted with the craft and subtiltie of Cortes, they sette sayle: if they hadde knowne the good happe proffered, fortune offered them her blessed browe. Suddenly from the South a tempest arose, whiche deueiled the Pylottes. The shippes comming neere the lande fell into a ryuer somewhat lesse then Panucus, whiche they suppose to bee Panucus. This ryuer lay to the Northwardes from Panucus, whether the violence of the winds transported them, peraduenture about some 70. leagues towards the Iude of Florida lately knowne and discovered. The twenty-fine of Iune vpon whiche day, Spayne celebrateth the solemnitie of Saint Iames their protector with GOD, they entred the mouth of that ryuer, and cast anker, in the shoare whereof they finde Palme, or Datetrees, whereupon they call it the ryuer of Palme trees. The buynesse or charge of searching the bordering country, is committed to Gonsalus Docampus the sisters sonne of Garaius, for whiche seruitie they send from the Flecte a small Brigantine whiche drewe little water. Docampus sayled fifteene leagues vppc the ryuer, spent three dayes, and ascending vppc the ryuer by little and little, he found other ryuers were receiued into that greater ryuer, and hauing his eyes fixed on Panucus, hee falsely reported that the country was vnanured; vnprofitable, and desert. For they learned afterwarde that this Prouince was pleasant, and well blest, and stored with

Zona Torrida  
falsely so called.

Garrana.

Alphonsus Men-  
doza.

Fernandus Fi-  
gueroa.

Gonsalus Ouag-  
lius.  
Iacobus Cifon-  
tes.

The ryuer of  
Panucus.  
Gonsalus Do-  
campus.

with people. But credite was giuen to a liar, wherefore they determined to proceede on their voyage towards Panucus. The horses were nowe faint with famine, therefore they tooke them out of the ships together with manie footmen. The Marriners are charged to sayle alwayes within viewe of the shore, as if they hadde power to commaunde the sources, and wates of the water. Garaius himselfe taketh his iourney by lande toward Panucus, in battayle array, least if any violence of the inhabitantes suddenly assailed them, they should be founde vnprepared. The first three dayes they founde no manured lande where they marched, but all barren and rude, because moorish; and myric. They meete with another nauigable ryuer in the way, compassed with high Mountaynes, thereupon they called the ryuer Montaltus. They passed ouer that ryuer partly by swimming, and partly vpon raftes or great peeces of timber ioyned and fastened together, so that at length with great danger and labour, beyonde that riuer a far of they saw an exceeding great towne: then they orderly range the army, and march softly forwaide, placing the Arquebuste shotte, and other soldiers (to hit them farre of) in the front of the Battayle. Our menne coming towards them, the townsmen left the towne, and fledde away, where, finding their houses full of the countrys prouision, Garaius recreateth and refresheth the souldiers, and horses nowe faint with hunger, and weariyed with traunyle of the iourney. And with that which remained, he carrieth prouision of victuall with him.

Mountanus  
riuer.

## The second Chapter.

The Barbarians fill their barnes or store-houses with two kinds of food with their country graine called Maizium (as we haue often sayde) much like the graine Panicke of Insurbia, & with apples, of an vnknowne sort vs, and of an eager sweete tast, apt & profitable for the stopping and restraining of fluxes, as wee reade and finde by experience of the berries of the Seruice, and Corneille trees, which are no lesse then an Oringe or a Quince, and that kinde of fruite the inhabitantes call Guaians. Beyonde the ryuer inclosed with Mountaynes marching through rude and barren countries, they light on a great lake, whiche by a deepe streame no where shallowe, emptyeth the waters thereof in the neere bordering sea. They ascende vppon the banks of this lake thirtiē leagues from the mouth of the riuer, they trye and search the shallowe places, because they knewe that manie ryuers fell into the lake below, and with great labour and perill halfe swimming they passe it. A broad playne offereth it selfe to their viewe. They see a great towne a farr of. And leas as the former moued through feare fled away, Garaius commaundeth the armie to make a stande, and pitch their ancients in the open ayre, then sendeth he interpreters before, neere neighbours to these countries whom he had gotten the former yeere, who were now skillful in the Spanish tong. Offering peace by them, hee draweth the inhabitantes of the towne to entertayne amitie and friend-shyppe. Hereupon, the inhabitantes lode our men with breede of the graine Maizium, soules of that Pronince, and fruites. By the way they light on another yillage, where hauing hearde by reporte that our menne abstained from wrong and iniurie, they securely expect them, and giue them prouision of victuall, but not plentifully to their satisfaction. Thereupon a tumulte almoste arose agaynst the Generall Garaius, for that hee woulde not suffer them to spoyle the yillage. Marching further, they meet with the thirde ryuer, in passing whereof they lost eight horses violently carried away with the force of the current. Trauailing thence they founde huge myric marshes with noysome gnats, full of diuers sortes of Bexucum, heeing certayne hearbes or long grasse whiche holde fast, infoulding, and intangling the legges of traunylers. Concerning this prouidence of nature touching the Bexuca, I haue at large discoursed in my proceedinges to the Duke. The footemenne covered with water vppon to the wast, the horsemenne to the belly, passed ouer halfe fainte and tyred. Nowe they came into countries inryched with a fruitfull soyle, and therefore inhabited, and beautified with many yillages. Garaius suffered no damage or iniurie to bee doonie to him. A certayne seruant of Garaius neere about him, escaping from so great a slaughter, as hereafter wee will describe, writeth a large Epistle to Petrus Spinosa Maister or Stewarde of the house of Garaius, and his tombes after his death, nowe Agent

A strange kinde  
of rye.

A great lake.

A streame.

Marishes full of  
Bexucum.

The loads of  
gold.

with Caesar, wherein full of greife, yet after a wittie and conceited manner, hee deliuereth these merrie leuiting wordes in Latine, concerning the difficulties of that journey, Wee came (sayeth hee) to the lande of miserie, where no order, but euerlasting labour, and all calamities inhabite, where famine, heate, noysome Gnatters, stinking Woomies or Flies, cruell Bites, arrows, jantangling Bexuca, deuouring deepe ditches, and muddie lakes most cruelly afflicted vs. At length they attained to the bordering countrey of the riuer Panucus the vnhappy point or period of their iourney, where Garaius stayeth expecting the ships, but founde nothing fitte for foode. They suspect Cortes had caried away all prouision of victuall, that finding nothing for themselves, or their horses, they should bee constrained either to depart backe againe, or perish with hunger. The fleet which caried their necessaries of prouision deferred their coming. Where fore Garaius and his companions dispersed themselves through the townes and villages of the Barbarians to gette food, & nowe Garaius beganne to suspect that Cortes was not well inclined vnto him: hee therefore sendeth Gonzalus Docampo his sisters sonne to prouohe howe, the Colonies of Cortes stood affected towards him, Gonzalus returneth seduced or deceived, and saied, that all was safe, and that they were ready to yeeld obedience to Garaius: Vpon the report of his sisters sonne, and his associats sent with him, by euill destinie, hee approacheth neere to Panucus. Heere let vs digresse a little, to the ende these things, and that which followeth may the better be vnderstoode. Vpon the banke of this great riuer Panucus, not far from y<sup>e</sup> mouth, which conseyeth the waters thereof into the sea, stood a great towne of the same name, consisting of 14000. houses of stone for the most parte, with princely Courtes, and sumptuous Temples, as the common reporte goeth. That towne Cortes vttlerly ouerthrowe, and wholly burnt it, because it refused his commande, not suffering any thing to be built vpon that grounde any more. He dect after the same maner with another towne seated vpon the ryuer, about some 25. miles distant fro this, greater the Panucus, they say it consisted of 2000. houses, which also (vpon the same occasion) he laide flate with the grounde, and burnt it. This towne was called Chiglia. About Chiglia ouerthrowne, Cortes erected his Colonie about some three miles, in an excellent plaine, but vpon a little rising hill, and this hee called the towne of Saint Stephen. Shippes of burden may come vpp the channell of this ryuer for many sayles together. The people of this Prouince ouerthrowe Garaius twice, as in the former Decades hath bene sufficiently and at large declared, but they could not resist Cortes, who ouerthrowe all hee mette with.

A great towne  
destroyed by  
Cortes.

Chiglia a great  
towne destroyed  
by Cortes.  
Saint Stephen a  
towne.

They reporte that those countries are very wealthy and fruitefull, not onely apt for the nourishing of any thing sowed, and the increase and fruite of trees, but they say it mayntaineth hattes, hares, conies, and bores, and many other wilde beastes, and that they also yeelde and ingender water foule, and other wilde foule; they haue verie hygh mountaines within view, some where covered with snow. Beyond those Mountaines, reporte goeth that goodly cities; and excellent townes, lye in an huge playne, which those mountaynes diuide from these, bordering on the Sea, and they also shall be subdued, vnlesse the buyling and vaine glorious disposition of the Spanyards withstand it, who seldom agree in mind, for the desire, they haue to aduance their owne honors. Howe much eury one indureth to attribute to himselfe in this blinding meale of ambition, wherein none indureth the soueraigntie and commaund of another with quiet spirit, I haue sufficiently and at large declared in those relations which went before, where I spake of the priue hatred and dissensions arising betwene Iacobus Velasquez the gouernour of Fernandina, which is Cuba, and Fernandus Cortes, then, betwene Cortes himselfe, and Pamphilus Nabaezus, and Grisalu, from whom a riuer in the Province of Iucatan received the name, next of the reual of Christopherus Otilus from Cortes, after that betwene Petrus Arias gouernour of the supposed Coniunt, and Egidius Gonzalus, and in the last place of the generall desire of seeking the Strayght or narrow passage from the North Sea to the South: for Commanders and Captaynes who inhabite those countries in the kinges name came flocking from all partes. These things partly related in their places, what arose on these contentions shall bee declared. Nowe lette vs returne to Garaius from whom wee digressed.

The fruitfulness  
of the  
country of  
Panucus.

The ambitious  
nature of the  
Spaniards  
in this and  
his owne vnder

He returne to  
Cortez.

Approach

Approaching to the borders of Panucus, hee found all the country impouerished, and knewe manifestly that his sisters sonne hadde made a false reporte concerning the inhabitants of the village of Saint Stephen, because hee saue no friendly dealing. The followers of Garaius say, that the seruantes of Cortes hadde carryed away all prouision of victuall out of the towne of the Barbarians, to the ende that being compelled through famine they might cyther departe, or bee constraigned to disperse their forces through the neighbouring towne to seeke necessary foode, as it fell out, nor came the shippes, detained in the vnfortunate and aduerse sea. In that country there is a great towne named Naciapola consisting of about 15000. houses, in that towne the Cortesiens tooke Aluaradus <sup>Naciapola a great towne.</sup> Commaunder of fortie horse of Garaius, together with his companions feeding his horses there, as an vsurper of anothers soyle, and brought them bounde to the Colony of Saint Stephen, by them erected in the name and behaffe of Cortes. Miserable and wretched Garaius therefore remayned there still betweene Sylla and Charybdis expecting the flecte. Now at length the companie of the flecte arriue at the mouth of Panucus, of cleuen 3. some say foure, the rest perished by ship wracke. Two of Cortes his Commanders of that Province, Iacobus Docampo gouernour of the citie, and Valegius leader of the souldiers, caryed by boat, enter the Admirall of that flecte, they easily seduce the souldiers and quickly drawe the rest into the power of Cortes, so that the shippes are caryed vnder the ryuer to the Colony of S. Stephen. While Garaius was in these extremities, he vnderstoode the bordering country of the riuer of Palmis was a rich and fruitfull soyle, contrary to the deceitfull speech of Gonzalus Docampo his sisters son, yea, and in some places a more blessed and fertile country then the boundes of Panucus. There had Garaius planted his Colonie, fearing the fortune of Cortes, if the obstinacy of his sisters sonne had not deceiued him. Garaius being thus distressed, knewe not what counsell they should take, the more he repeateth that that Province was designed and allotted him by Caesar, shewing his letters patentes, his matter succeeded the worse. Through perasyration of the Gouernour Iacobus Docampo, Garaius sendeth messengers vnto Cortes, one named Petrus Canus, the other Iohannes Ochoa, this, one of Garaius his olde familiaris, the other newly admitted, sometimes a familiar friende of Cortes who was well experienced in those countries, both of them are seduced by Cortes, as the Garaians reporte complying. Petrus Canus returneth, and Ochoa remayneth still, for it was agreede that Garaius should goe to Cortes. I haue elsewhere sayde, when, by vncertayne reporte, the Senate of Hispaniola wrote those thinges to Caesar, and our Colledge of Iudian affayres. Nowe although miserable Garaius almost behelde his owne destruction, yet hee dissembled that hee would willingly goe, and seeing hee must goe though hee were vnwilling, through so great violence and compulsion, hee pacified his minde, and yielded to the requestes of Cortes whiche brought power and authoritie with them to commande. Accompanied with Iacobus Docampo hee goeth to Cortes, who chose his seate in that great citie of the lake Tenustitan, otherwise called Mexico, the heade and Metropolis of manie kingdomes. Garaius <sup>his Mexico.</sup> receiued with a ioyfull countenance, but whether with the like mind, let him iudge whose properie it is to search the harts. Hearing of the calamitie of Garaius, and the departure of the Gouernour, the Barbarians sette vppon the souldiers dispersed through their houses, and finding them straggling, they kill about two hundred and thirtie, some say more. With their slaughtered bodies, they make themselves sumptuous, and daintie banquets, for they also are meane eaters. Cortes vnderstanding of this discomfure, sent Sandoualus (a worthy man of his Commaunders) with fortie horse, and a conuenient and necessarie number of souldiers for the purpose to take reuenge for so foule and haimeous a fact. Sandoualus is saide to haue cutte a huge number of the slaughterers in peeces, for they durst not now lift vp a finger against the power of Cortes or his Captaine, whose names they feared. He is reported to haue sent 60. kinges to Cortes (for euery village hath his king) wherevpon Cortes commaundeth that euery one send for his heire, they obey his commande. Then making an exceeding great fire, hee burned all the kinges, the heires looking thereon. And presently calling the heires; he demaundeth whether they saw the effect

The ynicke of reports.

of the sentence pronounced against the slaughterers their parents. After that, with a severe countenance he chargeth them, that being taught by this example, they beware of all suspicion of disobedience. Being thus discouraged and terrified, he sent them every one away to their ancient patrimonyes, yet subject to tributes. This they report, others, somewhat after another manner. For report is varied euen from the next neighbour; how much more from another worlde. Nowe Cortes commendeth Garaius to be guest to Alphonsus surnamed Villanou, sometimes footeman to Garaius, (and thrust out of seruice for defouling his Maisters mayde) then chamberlaine to Cortes, and commanded he should be honorably intreated, and that the bond of amitie might be the firmer, Cortes taketh the legitimaie sonne of Garaius to bee his son in law to match with his bastard daughter. Behold vpon Christmas day at night, Cortes and Garaius goe together to heare morninge mattens after our manner. Seruice beeing ended at the risinge of the sunne, they returne, and found a dainty breakfast prepared, Garaius comminge forth of the church, complained first that hee was oppressed with a certaine kinde of windy colde, yet hee tooke some smale sustenance with his companions, but returninge to his appointed lodginge hee lay downe, the disease increased till the third day, some say, the fourth, at what time hee yielded his borrowed spirit to his Creator. There are some, as I haue elsewhere said, who suspect whether there were not a worke of charity in it, to thint he might free him from the foule prison of vexation and cares, being subject to so great calamities, least wee should iudge that olde proverbe to be vainly spoken, that a kingdome receiveth not two, or, that there is no assured fidelitye or trust in the Competitors and companions of a kingdome. Others say, hee died of the griefe and paine of the ribbes, which the Physitians call a Plurisie: howsoeuer it bee Garaius dyed, the beat of the Governours of those countries: which way soeuer the matter happened, it little skilleth, his sonnes, kindred, and freinds of rich mean beinge now fallen into pouerty. The miserable wretched man dyed, who peraduenture might haue liued a long, and quiet life if hee had bin contented with the olde Government of Elisian Iamaica, by a new name called the Ilande of S. Iames, where his authority, and love of the people were great (but with an obstinate spirit he went the contrary waye, who knewe very well that his neighbourhoode would bee most offensiu and troublesome to Cortes) or if hee being like towne or course flax, woulde haue sett footing elsewhere on the river of Palmes, farre from the flaminge fire, whether the violence of the winds happily droue him, if hee had taken hold of the hairy forelocke of that occasion, or elsewhere in a river found out further towards Florida, called the river of the Holy Ghost, which riuers containe exceeding great countries, fruitfull, and replenished with people. So had the destinies decreed, so must it be done. But seeinge I haue presumed to call Iamaica an Elisian country, which Garaius commended many yeeres, it is meete that I being the husbande of this comly Nymph, should render a reason of the beauty, and goodnes thereof. Behold therefore the example of preferringe the same.

Iamaica is Elisian Iland.

### The third Chapter.

The comparison becometh with Adams Paradise.

That remoued and hidden part of the worlde, wherein wee beleeue, that God the Creator of all things formed the first man of the slime of the earth, the sage and prudent, worthies or fathers of the old Mosseicall lawe, and of the new Testament call carthly Paradise, because in that place there is none, or almost no difference betweene the day and night all the whole yeere. No terrible scorchinge heate, nor rough colde winter are there to be founde, but an wholesome temperate ayre, bright fountaines, and cleere riuers. Nature like a becnigne and gracious mother, hath beautified this my spouse with all these ornaments. Differs fruitfull trees (besides those which are brought thither from our countrye) are very familiar and common there, which inioy a perpetual Springe, and Autumne, for the trees carry leaues, and flowers together all the yeare longe, and beare fruit, and shewe them ripe, and sower, or greene at one time. There, the earth is alwayes full of greene grasse, and the meadowes allwayes flourishinge, and (to conclude) their is no

no part of the earth which enjoyeth a more gracious and mild temper of the heaueis: Therefore my spouse Iamaica is more blessed and fruitfull then the rest. It extendeth it selfe in length from East to West 60. leagues: some others add ten more, and it inlargeth it selfe in bredth 30. leagues, where it is broadest. But concerninge seedes sett, and sowed by the industry of man, wonderfull things are reported: and although it be at large declared in my former Decades, when I used the like speech concerninge Hispaniola; & the same also concerninge garden herbes or plants, yet to repeat many of these will not prouoke loathing, or contempt cheefely to Popes, vnder whose throneas all these things dayly more & more increase & growe: the tast of precious things is sauiory at all times, because especially those places of my former Decades paradisiacall shall not bee brought to your Holinesse his handes. Of breade (without which other dainty delicates are nothing worth) they haue two sortes, the one of corne, the other of rootes, their corne is gathered twice, and for the most part thrice every year, they want breade of wheate. Of three quarters of a pint of that graine which they call Maizium, sometimes more then 200. times so many pints are gathered. That of rootes is the better, and more excellent breade made of the roote luca bruised smale, and dried, which being brought into Cakes which they call Cazzabi, may safely bee kept two yeeie vncorrupted. A certaine maruelous industry of Nature lieth hid in the vse of this roote luca. Being put into a sacke, it is pressed with great wrights layd thereon after the manner of a wine presse, to wringe out the iuice thereof. If that iuice bee druncke rawe, it is more poisonous the Aconitum, & presely killeth, but being boyled it is harmles, & more sauiory the whey of milke. They haue also many kindes of other roote, they call them by one name Batatas, I haue elsewhere described eight sortes thereof which are knowne by the flower, leafe, and shrubb. They are good boyled & no lesse rosted, nor are they of an euill tast though they be rawe: and they are also like to our Turneps in shewe, or like our rape Roots, Raddish, parsnepps, and Carrets, but of a differing tast, and substance. At what time I wrote these things some plenty of Batatas were giuen me for a present, whereof I had made your Holinesse partaker, but that the distance of places with stode my desires, and your Holinesse his Embasadour with Cesar deuoured that portion. This man amonge the worthy & noble men, in my opinion of all good Spaiards, a rare Cautient Archbisshop to whom these things are very well known through his 14. yeares conuersation, if so it please your Holinesse, may sometimes rehearse and shew them vnto you by word of mouth. For these conferences & discourses are wont oftentimes to grace the latter endes of feasts with great Princes. I haue sufficiently spoken concerninge the temper of the ayre, trees, fruites, corne, bread, and roots: & haue also likewise oft spokke of garden fruits fit for foode, at what time of yeere you may gett melons, gourd, Cucumbers, & others like these lyinge on the grounde: I haue extended the skirts of the ornaments of my Spouse with too amorous, and louinge affection, yet true: therefore I now bid her farewell, and let others left behinde, come in her place. Another worthy man also lately came vnto mee, whose name is Christopherus Perez Herenensis, executioner of Iustice a long time in Iamaica, a soldier vnder Garaius, the Spaniard calleth those kindes of Magistrates Alguazilli. This man was alwayes a companion with Garaius, and was present when hee dyed: who confesseth, that what other reported concerninge Garaius, and the success of the whole armye, was true. And returninge from that ouerthrowe, into Iamaica, hee brought letters from Petrus Canus Secretary to Garaius, directed to Petrus Spinosa, Agent with Cesar for Garaius and his voyages, in the ende whereof he exhorteth, admonisheth, and instantly requireth him to leaue all these European countries, and forsake all buisines what soeuer and returne into that happy country as if hee should perswade him to flye from vnhappy and barren isles, to most fruitfull & wealthy possessions: repeating, that he should shortly become rich: if he would obey his wordes. This Alguazill addeth many things, not to be omitted. That Panucus, and the riuier of Palmes breake forth into the Ocean almost with the like fall; and that the mariners get fresh & potable waters of both, nine myles within the sea. The third riuier, which our men call the riuier of the Holy Ghost, neuer to be

bread of corne  
and breade of  
rootes.

The excellent  
bread made of  
the roote luca.

A secret to the  
nature of  
luca.

Of the roote  
Batatas.

Christopherus  
Perez Herenensis.

Note that the  
Spaniard.

The riuier of  
the Holy Ghost.

country

country of Florida, hath a more straight & narrow channell, yet very rich & fruitfull countryes lying round about it, & well replenished with people. Being demanded whether by chance, violence of tempestuous stormes, or of self purpose, the flecte of Garaius arrived at the river of Palmes, he answered, they were driven thither by the mild and gentle southerne windes, and the fall of the Ocean, which as I have elsewhere sayd runneth alwayes to the West, imitatinge the turninge or wheeling motions of the Heavens. This Alguazill therefore (that I may use the Spanish word) saith, that the pilotts themselves and masters who governed and directed the flecte, beinge deceived for the causes heefore alledged, tooke the river of Palmes for Panucus, while entringe the mouth there of, they understoode the difference of the bankes and hee affirmeth that Garaius hadd a purpose to stay and erect a Colony there, if his companions and consorts hadd not understood him: for they intended, and advised that the bankes of the river Panucus discovered, and the fruitfull countryes thereof already knowne were to bee embraced. Garaius touched with an vnhappy presage assented to his consorts, yet sore against his will, especially when they added, that those Panucan countryes were assigned him by Casar, & that by the kings letters patents it was graunted, they should bee called the Countreys of Garaius by an eternall name. While they laye at anchor in the mouth of the river of Palmes, and expected Garaius his sisters sonne against the streame, many in the meane time goinge out of the shippes, wandred vpon the bankes of the river, searching what the nature of countryes might bee, and light vp on many new and strange things but of small moment. Yet will I add one thinge: This Alguazill in the feldes a little distant thence, found a four-footed beast feedinge, a little greater then a catt, with a foxes snout of a silver colour, and halfe scalye, trapped after the same manner that a compleate armed man beinge ready to fight, armeth his horse, it is a foolish stothfull beast, for seeing a man a farr of it lidd it selfe like an hedgehogge on a tortoyse, and suffred it selfe to bee taken, beinge brought to the shippes it was domestically fedd amonge men, but greater cares succeedinge, and grasse fyllinge, the desert and desolate heate dyed. This Alguazill (but with a sad and mournfull countenance because he also was partaker of so great calamities) freeth Cortes from the suspection of poysoninge Garaius, who saith that he died of the greife and payne of his side, which the phisitions call a pleurisie. While Garaius & his miserable companions traileth through those countryes, which lye in the middle betweene those great rivers of Panucus, & the river of Palmes the borderinge inhabitants beinge demanded, what was beyond those high mountaines which were within their viewe, and compassed their countryes together with the Sea, they reported that very large plaines lay there & warlike kings of great cities had dominion there. But when we were in Mantua Carpentana, commonly called Madrid, this Alguazill also comparatiuely, as these neighbouring mountaines divide these provinces, the countryes Carpentana, & Oretana from the Valledolegane and Burgensian, countries, in which, as you knowe there are goodly cities, and famous townes: as Segovia, Methimna of the feld, Abula, Salamanca, and many, besides: so, mighty & huge kingdomes are bounded and separated from these straight and narrow countryes, lying on the shoure. This Alguazill also confesseth that he knoweth the boundes of Italye, and therefore sayd, that Insabria was separated after the same manner from Hetruria by the Apennine mountaines. And beinge demanded with what habit Cortes attireth himselfe, or with what ceremonies he will be intainted by them that are present, and with what title he will be stiled, and weth to exact tributes, or what treasures he thinketh hee hath heaped vp, and whether he sawe that golden warlike Engine called a Culuerin, whereof the report is now diuulged: he answered in these wordes. That he was clothed with a usuall blacke habit, but of silke, & that he made no sumptuous shewe of maiesty at all, save in beholdinge the great number of his family: consistinge (I say) of many stewards, and officers of his house, morris dancers, chamberlaines, dore keepers, cheefe bankers or exchaungers of mony, and: the rest, sily agreeing with a great king. Whethenoeuer Cortes goeth hee bringeth foure kinges with him, to whom hee hath giuen horses, the magistrats, of the city, and soldiers for execution of Justice goinge before

A strange beast.

Cortes his state  
what it is in  
more particulars.

with maces, and as hee passeth by all that meeete him cast themselves flat vpon the ground after the auncient manner. He sayth also that he courteously receiueth all that salute him, & is more delighted with the title of Adelantado; the Governour seeing Caesar hath giuen him both. And this Alguazill saith that the suspicion which our courtiers conceine touching his disobedience against Caesar, is a vayne and idle report. That neither he, nor any other euer sawe any signe or token of treason, yea, & that he hath left three Caruelles with treasures to bee conueyed to Caesar, together with that peece of ordinance called a Culterin, which hee confesseth hee diligently beheld, able to receiue an Oringe, but thinketh it is not so full of gold; as fame reporteth.

The golden Culterin before mentioned.

#### The fourth Chapter.

That which I will now report, is a very merry test to be heard: the inhabitants these Barbarians after a ridiculous, & simple maner come forth of their townes as our men passe by on their journey; & bring with them so many domestick fatt soule (no lesse then our peacocks) as there are trauellers and if they bee on horsebacke, supposing y horses eate flesh, bring as many fatt soule for y horse. But your Holiness shall heare how ingenious, & sharpe witted workemen these barbarians are, whom Cortes hath subdued to the dominion of Caesar. Whatsoeuer they see with their eyes, they so paynte, forge, and fashion & forme it, that they may seeme to giue no place to the auncient Corinthians, who were skillfull to drawe likely countenances out of marble, or luory, or any other matter. And concerning the treasures of Cortes he saith, they are not smale, and meane, yet he supposeth they are lesse then is reported, because hee maintaineth many Centurions, or soldiers, whereof, y ordinary number of horse is about a thousand; & 4000. footmen, whose helpe he useth both to bridle those he lately conquered, as also to search out & discover new countries. He said also that in the South sea of that huge vauity he built ships y fro thence he might tye the Equinoctial line 12. degrees only distant fro the shores, to the end he might thoroughly search the lands next vnder y line, where he hopeth to finde plenty of gold; and precious stones, and also newe, and stragg spices. He had attempted the same before, but being disturbed by his Competitors; Iacobus Velazquez y Governour of Cuba, then by Pamphilus Narbaczus & lastly by Garçanus, he is sayd to haue forsaken his intended purpose. Touching the manner of exacting tributes, it is this: by one example the rest may bee gathered. In the discourse of my Texuillian narrations to Pope Leo: the tenth your Holiness his cousin german, and to his Successor Adrian, we sayde that, that paynted and mighty Kinge Mutezcuma, hadde many princes subject to his dominion, and those, Lordes of great cities, these (for the most parte) Cortes conquered, because they refused to obey, yet in their kingdomes he placed in their steede, some of their children, brethren or other meane kindred; that the people seeing the Images and representations of their auncient Lordes might the more quietly beare the yoke. The nearest of these cities to the salt Lake, is called Tescucus, whiche containeth about the number of 20000. houses, and it is whiter then a swan, because all the houses are playstered with a kinde of limy Bitumen like mortar, so bright & cleere without, that such as behold them a farre off: not knowing the matter, woulde thinke they were little rising hills covered with snowe. They say, this citie is almost square, three miles in length, and consisteth of the like breadth with little difference. Over this citie he made a yong man, governour, descended from the proper stocke or bloud of the auncient nobilitie. Otumba is somewhat lesse then Tescucus. He gaue this citie also her ruler, one of a milde nature, and obedient to his command; whom (being baptized) hee called Fernandus Cortes after his owne name. The iurisdiccions of these cities are great of a fruitful soyle and famous for the golden sades of the riuers. Every one of the kinges, that the Spaniards may not enter into their boundes, which may hardly be done without iniurie, yearly by composition giue vnto Cortes one thousand, and sixtie Pence of gold. We haue often said that Pensus exceedeth the Ducate a fourth part. They likewise giue him of the profits; and increase of the lande, the graine Maizzen, domestick soule, and delicate meates of wilde beastes, wherewith the neighbouring Mountains abound: all Princes are handled after this order, and euery

He compared these barbarians to Imagery to the auncient Corinthians. The treasure of Cortes. Cortes his purpose for further discovery.

A good policy of Cortes.

Tescucus a great city.

Otumba a great city.

A treasure of 2000. pence of golde payde yearly to Cortes beside great provision for his household.

every one sendeth his tribute for the profittes of his kingdome. He also permitteth many Prouinces truly to enioy their libertie without kinges, and to liue after their auncient lawes, except the customes of humane sacrifices, from whom hee hadde no meane supplies and ayde agaynst Motezuma. Notwithstanding, these countries, euen these pay their tribute to Cortes. The country Guaxaca is free, abounding with golde: seuentie leagues distant from the Princely pallace of the lake. There is also another of the same condition, called Loepoteca, and manie others, which pay golden-tributes. Cortes also himselfe hath golde mines assigned to his treasury or exchequer, which he emptieth with the armes of slaues, and setteth their children at libertie, to fill the ground, or apply themselves to mechanicall artes. But one particular thing is well worthe the reporting. There is a Prouince called Guacinalgo, whose King hath the same name: he came, onely accompanied with his mother to salute Cortes, and that, not emptic handed. For he brought him thirtie thousande Penis of golde, caryed vpon the shoulders of slaues, whiche hee gaue Cortes for a present. But what he did in token of obedience, will not be vsnt to heare. Hee came vnto him almost naked, though otherwise hee abounded with precious and costly garments after their manner; we vnderstode that it was the manner with them, that for an argument and signe of his militia, the impotent and weake should goe vnto the mightie in meane and homely attyre, and bowing his head downe, to the ground, and kneeling, should speake vnto him almost trembling. But it is very needfull to heare what happie money they vse, for they haue money, which I call happy, because for the greedie desire and gaping to attaine the same, the bowelles of the earth are not rent a sunder, nor through the rauening greedinesse of covetous men, nor terrour of warres assaying, it returneth to the dennes and caues of the mother earth, as golden, or siluer money doth. For this groweth vpon trees; whercof I haue elswhere spoken at large, both how it is sette, transplanted, and carefully looked vnto vnder the shadowe of another great tree to cherish it, while being growne vp it may beare the Summers scorching heate, and sustaine the violence of blustering whitewindes. This tree bringeth forth fruit like to smale Almondes, they are wholly of a bitter tast, & therefore not to be eaten, but drinke is made of them for rich, and noble meane: being dryed, they are bruised and beaten as small as meale, and at dinner, or supper time the seruants take pitchers, or vessels of tenne or a leuen gallons, or great pottes, and as much water, as is needefull, and cast therein the measure and proportion of powder, according to the quantitie of the drinke they prepare, then presently they powre out the myxture from vessel to vessel as high as they are able to lift their armes and cast it out like rayne falling from showers, and it is so often shaken together, till it cast a foame, and the more foamy it is; they say the drinke becomes the more delicate. So for the space almost of one houre that drinke being rowled, they lette it rest a little, that the dregges, or grosser matter may settle in the bottome of the great holl, or vessel of tenne or a leuen gallons: it is a pleasant drinke, not much distemping, although they that drinke thereof vntemperately, shall perceiue it troubleth the senses, as our fuming wines. They call the tree and the fruite Cacahu, as wee call y Chamuff, & Almond, for both: that foame, as it wege, the foode of fat milke, the Spaniard calleth the daughter; which they say hath the force of meate and drinke. Particular countries are nourishers of these trees, and money, for they growe not euery where, or prosper being plantid, or transported, as wee may see of the frutes of our countrie: For Carons or Oringes, which wee call Toronias, and Limones, and suche like others, can hardly prosper, or bring forth fruite in fewe places. From the Kinges therefore, and their fruitefull countries, Cacahu is their tribute to Cortes, wherewith he payeth the souldiers wages, and maketh dringes, and procureth other necessaries. But the grounde apt for this gift, is not profitable for corne. Marchants trade together, & performe the businesse and affaires of marchandise by exchange and bartering of commodities. They bring the graine Maizium, and Bombasin cotton to make garments, and also garments themselves, into those countries, & returne hauing changed them for Cacahu. I haue now spoken sufficiently of money. I repute many of these things (moste blessed father) least he who beholdeth them intitled with your name, should be not be satisfied in these things, not hauing read the

bookes

Quante.

Loepoteca.  
Cortez his golden  
mines.The King Guacinalgo his great  
present to  
Cortez.The ceremony  
howe hee  
the Guacinalgo  
established to  
Cortez.Their happie  
money a tre-  
asured thereof.How drinke is  
made of the  
money tree.

Carahu.

Tribe of their  
money Carahu  
pay to Cortez.  
Marchants.

bookes dedicated to Pope Leo, and Adrian. There are kings also who are mightie, and rich in siluer mines: their tributes are siluer, out of the which Cortes hath full capboordes, and embossed plate both of siluer, and golde very fairely wrought. By these examples your Holinesse may vnderstande, what estimation and opinion they haue of our Cortes. They say, that Cortes liueth discontented, for the infinite treasures violently taken away three yeeres since, by the French Pyrats, which hee sent vnto Caesar, among whiche, the ornaments of their Temples were admirable, whiche they (together with humane sacrifices) consecrated to their goddess. But what shall wee speake of the Iewelles, and precious stones? Omitting the rest, there was an Emrode like a Pyramis, the lowest parte or bottoome whereof was almost as broad as the palme of a mans hande, such a one (as was reported to Caesar, and to vs in the kings Senate) as neuer any humane Eye behelde. The French Admirall is sayd to haue gotten it from the Pyrates at an incredible price. But they executed their sauge outrage most cruelly agaynst miserable Alphonsus Abulensis Com-maunders of the shyppe that was taken: he is a younge manne descended of a noble house, but not rich, hauing taken him, they keepe him close prysoner, resting vpon one onely argument, because they committed such a Iewel, and the rest of the treasures to his trust. Hereupon they thinke, they may exact twentie thousande Ducates of him, if he will bee redeemed. They who knewe the precious stowe suppose that it cannot possibly be procured for any weight of golde, and they say it is transparent, bright and very cleere. In these countreyes of Tenusitan, for that the colde is vehemēt there, by reason of the distance from the sea, and the meereuse of the high mountaines, although it lie eightene degrees within the torride Zone, our corne or wheate groweth if it be sowed, and beareth thicker eares, and also greater /raines. But seeing they haue three kinds of the graine Maizium, white, yellow, and red, of those many sortes they like the flower better, and it is more wholesome then the flower of wheate. They haue also wilde Vines in the woods very common, which bring forth great and smory clusters of grapes, but they haue not yet made wine thereof. It is reported that Cortes hath planted vines, but what will succeed, time shall discover.

Vines payd to Cortes out of rich silver mines.

An Emrode of a wonderful red diction.

Maizium better and more wholesome then wheat.

#### The fifth Chapter.

Besides this foresaide Alguazill, who obtained a sufficient large portion in this trutinie or examination: another also came lately from the same parts of new Spain subdued by Cortes one Iacobus Garsias a towns-man of Saint Lucar Barrameda. Hee sayeth hee departed from the Hauē of Vera Cruz about the Calendes of April in the yeere 1524. at what time Garmus now died. He also freeth Cortes from the suspicion of peyson, and saith, he died of the griefe of his side, or of the pleurisie. And this man also affirmeth that Cortes sheweth no signe or token of disobedience, against Caesar, as many (through Enuy) mutter. But by his report and others wee heare, that none carry themselves more humbly towards their King then Cortes, and that hee bendeth his minde to repair the ruines made in the great city of the lake in the time of the warres, and that hee hath mended the conducts of water which then were broken, that the stubberne and rebellious Citizens might bee pressed and vexed with thirst, and that the broken bridges are now made vp, and many of the houses ouerthrowne new built, that the ancient face and shewe of the city is resumed, that the faires and markettes cease not, and that their is the same frequent resort of boates comming, and returninge, which was at the first. The multitude of marchants, is now great, so that it may seeme almost like those times when Mutezuma raigned. Hee permitteth one of the kings bloude to receive the suits, and causes of the people, and to vse a Prætorian scepter, but vnarmed. When this man conuerseth with our meann or with Cortes, hee is attired in Spanish apparell which Cortes gaue him: and while hee remaineth at home amonge his owne people, he weareth garments after the accustomed māner of his native country. He saith, that the Prætorian bande appointed to guard the body of Cortes, & appease tumults if any arise, consisteth of 500. horse & 400. foote, & that many Centurians or Captaines enery one with their forces are absent, dispersed both by sea, and lande, for diuers seruices, amonge whom is Christopherus Olitus, of whom I made mention beefore: and a little after,

Iacobus Garsias freeth Cortes of suspicion of peysonage Garsias, Cortes a fullall in letters to Caesar, Cortes requirith the great city Tenusitan.

Cortes permitteth a Prætorian scepter.

The Prætorian bande.

Reporteth from  
Aluaradus.

wee shall speake of the rest of his valiant acts. But, what another Centurian named Aluaradus, sent from another part, reporteth, it is a goodly and excellent matter to bee heard. We haue sometime sayd, that betweene Iucatan (which is the beginninge of New Spaine so called by Cortes, & confirmed by Cæsar) & § huge cōtry of § supposed Cōriment, there lieth an exceeding great Bay which we somtimes thought had a way out to § South coasts of § cōtry: in which Bay also Ægidius Gonsalus Abulensis euen to this day thinketh, that some broad riuier may be found, which seeketh or supbeth vp the waters of that great lake of potable waters, whereof I spoake at large in that booke deliuered to your Holines by the Casentine Archbishop, and in my precedent narration vnto the Duke. The angle of that Bay they cal Figueras lately knowne. On the West side heereof it was reported by diuers inhabitants, that there is a citty no lesse then the city Tenusitan, yet by relation of all, more then 400. leagues thence, and that the kinge thereof was the Tyrant of a large Empire. Cortes commendeth the buisines of searchinge what it might bee, to Aluaradus, and assigneth him 500. horse and foote. Aluaradus taketh his journey to the East, hee goeth directly forth, and sendeth onely two before, who vnderstoode the neere bordering speeches of the Barbarians. He founde diuers countries: some mountainous, others plaine, sometimes plashy and marshy cōtries, but for the most part dry: diuers cōtries vsed diuers languages, out of euery cōtry, such as were skilful in languages, he sent before with his menn. Omittinge what befel them by the way, least I weary your Holines, and my selfe in repeatinge smale & triflinge matters, let vs at one leape embrace §, which we sayd was excellent to be heard. The messengers goinge before from kingdome to kingdome with their guides of the same cōtry, returned to Aluaradus alwayes staying many leagues behinde, and brought him worde againe what they had searched: as soone as they heard of the fame of the Spaniards the messengers left all inquietnes and peace, so that none of the kings durst euer drawe a sword against them, or our armyes.

Aluaradus assigned by Cortes to make search for a great city on the West side of the bay Figueras.

Which way soeuer they went the barnes & storehouses were opened to thē & their faces fixed on thē with admiration, but chiefly beholdinge the horses, & ornaments of our men, for these also are almost naked, so they holpe our men with victuals, & porter slaues to carry their fanells in steede of labouring beasts. For they make slaues of such as they take in § warres, as it happeneth euery where amonge all nations (I will not say kinges) raging madd through couetousnes, or ambition. Aluaradus stayeth on § borders of that Tyrant, and alwayes standeth in the wings of the troops in battayle arraye, he setteth no footing vpō § boules of that great kinge, least he might seeme to intend to offer wronge for it is accounted the greatest contumelye, and contempt amonge all the kinges of those countries, if any touch or enter the limites of another, without the knowledge of the Lord thereof, and there is nothinge more vsuall amonge them, then in that case to take reuenge: hence proceede braules, priuy grudges, and occasions of warres. Hee was yet almost an hundred leagues distant from the princely seate of that Tyrant when hee sendeth Messengers beefore with interpreters of the next nations to that kingdome: they goe vnto the kinge, and salute him, and are peaceably received: For the fame of our men hadd come to his cares. Hee demaundeth whether the menn came from that great Malinges whome they reporte to bee sent from Heauen to those countries (for they call a valiant and mighty Noble man Malinges) they confesse they were sent from him: Whereupon, he further demaundeth whether they came by Sea or land, if by Sea, in what Piraguas, that is to say huge great shippes, as bigge as the princely courtes in which they were (they themselves haue shippes, but for fishing, and those made of the body of one tree, as in all those cōtries) heere, that kinge plainly confessed that hee hadd knowledge of our cōtry shippes the former yeere. For the inhabitants of that Kinge from the townes standinge one the Sea side sawe them passe by with their sayles spread. Which Ægidius Gonsalus conducted through those Seas, which lye one the backe side of Iucatan, and they thought them to bee monsters of the Sea and strange, and ominous things lately arisinge, who beeinge astonished thereat reported them vnto their Kinge. And demaunding, whether any of them two, knewe how to paint such a shippes, one of them called Triuignus, whoe was a caruer in wood, and no ordinary pilot,

Aluaradus bids  
messengers to  
the Tyrant.

The Spanish  
shippes thought to  
be monsters of  
the Sea.

promised

promised to doe it, hee taketh the matter vpon him to paint a shippe in a great hall, for the great courtes of the Kinge and the Nobility are built with lime and stone as wee haue sayde of Teusatan standinge in the Lake. Hee painted a monstrous shippe of great burthen, of <sup>Triniques painted</sup> that kinde, which the Gentenses call Carrackes with six masts, and as many deckes. The <sup>with a shippe.</sup> Kinge stode longe amazed, wonderinge at the huge greatenes thereof, and then after what manner they fight, so that it might be sayd that each of the is so stronge, that it may bee an easie matter for euery one to bee able to ouerthrowe thousands of men, which hee declared hee neither could, nor would beleuee by any meanes, seeinge hee saw they nothinge exceeded the common stature of men, or had more grimme countenance, or stronger limmes. They sayd, our men had fierce fourfooted beasts, and swifter then the winde, wherewith they fight: then, he desired that some of them would paint an horse as well as he could. One of the company painted an horse with a terrible, and sterne countenance, much greater then they are (such as Phidias and Praxiteles left, made of brasse, in the Exquiniian hill of your Holinesse) & sett a cōpēt armed man vpon his barbed backe. The king hearing this asked the whether they would take vpon the to conquer the neighbouring enemy that invaded his borders, if he sent the 50000. armed men to helpe them: they sayd y all y Spaniards were of litle greater moment or powerfull strength, then other men are, but in a well ordered army with horse, and warlike engines they feared noe forces of men. They promised they would returne to that consider who sent them, & expecteth them not far from his bounds the king demaied what wond they would bring fro him, who say they thinke he would come to helpe him, & that they should easily destroy the enemy, his citty, and whatsoever else is subject to his dominion. Wherewith he affirmed, y he would yeeld himselfe & all his subiectes into y power & subiection of y great & valiant noble man, if they would performe their promise. These things beinge done & concluded, in token of his future obedience, he remained so ready to pleasure our men y he gaue the 5000. slaves last with y moy Cacahus (which extendeth as far as those coasts) & y prouisiō of victuals to be brought to Aluaradus, and gaue them also 2000. Pensa of gold wrought into diuers Jewels. Returninge back to Aluaradus, they made him ioyfull. Aluaradus returned to Cortes, & told him what they had done. He offereth y presents of that great king, they diuide them, as it behooued. But of y two messengers sent fro Aluaradus y one not trusting to y Cōmāders liberality towards him, stole certaine Pensa after y iourney. His cōpāū admonished him not to pollute his hands by violating his fidelity & faith, & exhortheth him rather to proue y liberality of Cortes & Aluaradus: expecting y obstacy of his cōpāū he held his peace dissemblinge the matter, and accused his companion to Cortes of theft: who for <sup>Thert punished by Cortes.</sup> example of others (the gold beinge found out) was publicly whipped with rods, & punished with perpetuall banishment from Noua Hispania. These things were done about the ende of the yeare of our Lorde 1523. Then presently after a few dayes ended, the sicke and faint beinge refreshed and new men placed in steede of the dead, this messenger sayth, that by the commandement of Cortes, Aluaradus departed while he was present, with greater forces, with striking vp of drums & sounde of the trumpets. This messenger Iacobus Garcia sometimes household seruant of Marcellus Villalobos the Lawier, one of the Senators of Hispaniōls, is sent fro his olde Maister to our Senat: what he solicited for his Maister he hath obtained. To wit, that it might be lawfull for him to erect a castle, and plant a Colony in the Hamle Margarita, at his owne proper cost, and charges. This Margarita is an Hamle oueragainst the entrance of the Dragons mouth in the supposed Continēt, a fruitfull ingender of pearls from whence the name of Margarita is giuen vnto it. If he doe it, he shalbe perpetuall Governour thereof, and the command thereof shall come to his heires, as the manner is, the supream authority and power notwithstandinge reserued to the Crowne of Castile. Their remaineth one thing yet, that wee may ende the matters of this new Spaine.

## The sixt Chapter.

Cortes, since that French pyrate named Florinus violently tooke his fleete with many <sup>Cortes his de-</sup> precious things, which he, & the rest of the Magistrates of new Spaine, partakers of <sup>possession</sup>

the victories, sent vnto Caesar, through griefe, and sorrow for so great an ouerthrowe, hath sent no more letters vnto Caesar, or our Senate, although from those Kingdomes, many returned, & that often: whereupon that suspicion of revoltinge frō Caesar arose. Now he yeeldeth apparant tokens contrary to opinions, he indureth to enlarge Kingdomes to his Maiesty and not for himselfe: and if peradventure your Holiness sometimes considered with yourselfe, whether the ambiguous and doubtfull case of Garsius be to bee exacted from him, and a strict account to be required, concerning his death, and he to bee corrected, if it happened by his consent, let your Holiness receive this from my iudgement and experience. Such an inquisition will be dissembled as I suppose, for none will attempt to bridle so mightily an Elephont by this meanes: we shall thinke it better, and that it shall rather bee needefull to vse courteous speeches, and comfortable lenities for the curing of such a wounde, then to prouoke him to anger. Time the eternall Iudge of all things will discover it. Yet we beleue it will come to passe, that hereafter he shall fall into the same snares,

Time the best  
Iudges.

Christoph. Otilius reported to be routed from Cortes.

That Gonsalus sends messengers of peace to Otilius.

Of the worth of Otilius.

A report that Petrus Arias leuies a great armie to go against Cortes. Causes sheweth to apprise these contentions of the Spaniards.

Frar Thomas Hortisius.

into the which hee cast Iacobus Velasquez Governour of Cuba, vnder whose command being sent young vnto those countries, he aduanced the crest against him, and then Pamphilus Narbaicius, now Garsius, if the opinion of many bee true, as in their places I haue discoursed at large. And the beginning of the payment of this debt is not farre off. It is reported from Cuba, and Iamaica, but more plainly from Hispaniola, whether all resorte as to a generall Mart towne, that Christopherus Otilius sent by him for the searching of the desired Streight, is routed from him, and performeth the matter by himselfe, neglecting the authority of Cortes: so things haue their beginnings.

We read letters also, whereby I vnderstand, that Ægidius Gonsalus Abulensis (of whom in my former Decades I spooke at large) is now arrived on those coastes of the foresaide Baye called Figueras lately knowne, that from thence searching by little and little, he might seeke out the ende or issue of these freshe waters. They say, that Otilius came to the very selfe same shiores, and that hee went further downe 30. leagues onely, from Ægidius Gonsalus. They say also that Ægidius Gonsalus hearing of the coming of Otilius, sent letters and Messengers vnto him, offering peace, and concord. It is also reported, that Cortes (vnderstanding of the rout of Otilius) sent armed forces against him, whom he commanded to take Otilius, and bring him to him bounde, or kill him.

They who knewe Otilius, say, hee was a stout and valiant souldier, and no foolish Commandier, and that from the beginning of the warres, he had not bene the meane part of the victories, but as it often vsually falleth out, hee nowe became fearefull vnto Cortes, wherefore vnder the pretence of honour, hee sent him away from him, that hee might not repose any credit in a man to whom he had spoken ignominious wordes.

On the other part, wee heare that Petrus Arias Governour of the supposed Continent, hath leuied a great armie to goe thither, whereupon, wee feare, least the discordes of these men will bring all to ruine, and destruction. Neyther doth Caesar, nor our Senate vnderstand, what other counsell to take, then by frequent commandements to the Senate of Hispaniola, to increase their authority, that thence, as from the supreme power they endeavour both by courteous speeches, and also by admonitions, and threatenings, that no hurt arise, that they be not contentious, but agree together in minde, except they will bee taxed, or charged with the accusation of treason: they will all fall, and come to nought, vnlesse they obey.

For neyther will the rest of the Nobilitie of Spaine, who haue the mindes of the souldiers affected vnto them, assent vnto their opinions, against the obedience of their King. Nor doe wee thinke these commotions, and troubles are to bee appeased by armes, but if wee shal perceiue any arguments or tokens of breach of fidelity, or treachery to breake out, and appeare in any, whatsoever thwart or opposite matter ariseth, shall be ouerthrowne onely with inke, and paper. For the force of honour or praye especially, is great, & naturally bred in the breast of the Spaniards, that they may be esteemed faithful to their King. We expect ships from that forraine, & new world eury houre. Then if any thing secretly swell, it will breake forth, and we will send for the Chirurgians to cure the same. I learmed also many other things (not unworthy the relation) by Frar Thomas Hortisius, and his fellows the two coloured Dominican Friars, approued honest men.

These

These men for 7. yeeres space inhabited that parte of the supposed Continent, called Chiribichi, <sup>Chiribichi</sup> which is the next neighbouring Countrey to the Mouth of the Dragon, and the province Paria, often named by vs in our former Decades: where in my precedent treatise to the Duke, I sayde that the Barbarians overthrowe the Monastery, and killed those that lived therein. This is the opinion of this Friar Thomas Hertisius who remayneth with vs, that twelue Friars of the Dominican order, be assigned to be sent vnto new Spaine vnder his conduct that they may sowe the seede of our faith among those barbarous natiūs: I vnderstood many things of these friars before, which (as I remember) being set downe in writing, I sent them expressly mentioned to diuers Princes. They affirme, that the inhabitants of those countries are Canibales, or Caribes, eaters of manns fleshe. The countrey of the Caribes is an huge quantity of <sup>The Countrey of the Canibales, of Caribe and the manners of them.</sup> ground, exceeding all Europe: they are found to sayle in flectes of Canōwes, to hunt men, among the heape of Ilandes which are innumerable, as others goe to the Forrests, and woodes, to seeke Harts, and wild Bores to kill them. Carib, in the vniuersal languages of those countries, signifieth, stronger then the rest, and from thence they are called Caribes: nor doe any of the Ilanders vtter and pronounce this name without feare. They are also called Caribes of the countrey Caribana, situate on the East part of the Bay of Vrabia, from whence, that wilde kinde of men dispersed through the large distance of those coasts, hath sometimes slayne, and vtterly ouerthrowne whole armies of the Spanyards. They liue almost naked, sometimes they inclose their priuities within a golden little gorde, in another place they binde vpp the foreskinne with a little corde, and vntie it not, but to make water, or when they vse the act of generation, and lying idle at home, they couer no other part: but in the time of warres, they weare many ornaments. They are very nimble, and cast their poisoned darts with most assured ayme, and goe, and returne swifter then the winde, with their arrowes: in their bowes, they are bearielles, and if an haire come forth, they plucke it out one from another with certaine little pinsers, and cut their hayre to the halfe of the eare. They boare holes in their eares, and nostrils for elegancy, and the richer sort decke them with Iewels of gold, the common people with diuers shelles of cockles, or sea-nayles, and they also, who can gett gold, are delighted in golden crownes. From the tenth, or twelueh yeere of their age, when now they begin to bee troubled with the tickeling prouocations of Venery, they carry leaues of trees to the quantity of nuts, all the day in cyther cheek, and take them not out, but when they receiue meate, or drinke. The teeth growe blacke with that medicine, euen to the foulness of a quenched or dead <sup>It says they make blacke their teeth.</sup> cole: they call our men women, or children in reproach, because they delight in white teeth, and wilde beastes, for that they endeouour to preserue their beards, and hayre: Their teeth continue to the ende of their liues, and they are neuer payned with the toothach, nor do they euer rott. These leaues are somewhat greater then those of the Mirtle, and as soft as those which the tree Terebinthus beareth, in feeling, as soft as wooll, or cotton. The Chiribichenses doe not more apply themselves to any culture, or husbandry, then to the care of those trees (which they call Hay) by reason that for the leaues thereof, they get whatsoeuer wares, or commodities they like. Throughout the fields of those trees, they cut very well ordered trenches, and conuey small brookes vnto them, wherewith they water the plants in good order. Euery one incloseth his portion onely with a little easton line drawn out in length, to the height of a mans girdle, and they account it a matter of sacriledge, if any passe ouer the corde, and treade on the possessions of his neighbour, and hold it for certaine that whoo violateth this sacred thing, shall shortly perish. But, howe they preserue the powder of those leaues, that it corrupt not, is worth the hearing. Before the dried leaues be beaten into powder: they goe to the woods of the Mountaynes, where exceeding plenty of shels and snayles are ingendred, by reason of the moisture of the earth, of those shelles heaped vpp, and put into a furnace made for that purpose, with a certaine particular kinde of woold, and a grate and vehement fire vnder it, they make lime, and mingle it with the powder. The force of that lime is so great, that his lipps that first taketh it, are so baked, and hardened, like diggers and deluers who haue harde and brawny handes with often handling of spades and mattocks, or, as if they rubbed our lippes with vnslaked lime, but with

Their industry in the planting of the trees called Hay.

with such as are accustomed thereto, it is not so. The powder thus mixed, & tempered, they put it vp close in mannds, and baskets of marsh canes curiously wrought, and platted in, and keepe it till the marchants come, who goe, and come, to haue that powder, as they come flocking to fayres and markets. They bring the graine Maizium, slanes, and gold, or Jewels of gold, (which they call Guanines) that they may get this powder, which all the

The use of the  
tree.

Gacama.

The leaves of a  
tree where whith  
they poison  
their arrows.

Gacama a tree  
with 2. espec:  
kne properties.

Citrea trees  
and the pro-  
perties thereof.

A tree bearing  
Gosampine Cot-  
ton.

Cassa Fistula.

Feety of Cin-  
nabam.

Waters of a  
river good to  
purge the stom-  
ack. See the  
Ignis Alchitran,  
Ignis Graecus.

Yppous hurt-  
full for the  
head.

bordering countries use for cure of the teeth, yet the Chiribicheans spitt out the olde leaues every houre, & take new. There are other trees in this valley famous for their profits and commodities, from one of the, the boughes being a litle cut, a milky moysture issueth, or droppeth out. This sapp or moysture beeing left thus, coageleth into a kinde of pitchy rosin, and that gumme is transparent and cleere, profitable for the pleasing perfume thereof. The myce gathered from another tree after the same manner, killeth, if any bee hit with an arrow annoynted therewith. From other trees bird lime issueth, therewith they take fawle, & put it to other uses. There is another tree like a Mulberry tree, called Gacirma, and beareth fruite harder then our Mulberries of Europe, fitt to bee presently eaten. From them (being first moystened) they wring out a certaine sapp, excellent to purge the throat, and good to take away hoarsenes. From the dried boughes of this tree fire may be strickea, as out of a flint. The sides also of this valley haue Citrean trees very familiar, and common, and very high, they say that garments layd vp in Citrean chestes smell very sweet, and are preserved from mothes. But if bread be shat vp there, so bee kept, it becommeth more bitter then gall, and cannot bee tasted, thereupon (as wee haue sayd) shippes made of those plankes escape the danger of those gnawing woormes.

Another tree beareth Gosampine cotton, bigger then a Mulberry tree, in ten yeeres it dyeth and perisheth, the like also happeneth in Hispaniola, and in many other places in this new worlde, as wee haue sayd in the precedent booke to the Duke. These two coloured fathers make their vaunts, that this cotton is more precious then ours of Europe which is yeerely sowed, and exceedeth not the height of a stalke of hempe or flaxe, this slender kinde groweth and prospereth in many parts of Spaine, but chiefly in the Astigitan field. The great tree of Cassia Fistula is very common in this valley, and groweth of it owne nature.

Another commodity also of this valley is not to be omitted: among the Chiribicheans in some hidden and secrete solitary places, they thought trees grew which yielded Cinnamom, vnknowne to the inhabitants, or at the least not regarded, because there is no kinde of spice in use among these inhabitants, beside that sort of pepper, whereof I haue often, and at large elsewhere discoursed, which they call Axi, so peculiar and proper that there is no lesse plenty of those shrubbs with them, then of mallowes, or nettles with vs. For example, there was a tree carryed away by the violence of an overflowing riuer, & cast vpon the sea shoore next vnto their Monastery, having drawne the tree vnto the dry land, they went about to cut it for the use of the kitchen, sweete smelling satours coming from all the chippes, they tasted the barke, and perceived the tast thereof not to be much vnlke Cinnamom, although through long space of time, and violent shaking of the streame, the trunkce and body thereof were halfe corrupted. Time, the Iudge of all thinges, will discouer these, & many other things besides, which are yet hid. We reade that the Creator of all things tooke vnto him the number of sixe dayes to forme, and orderly compose the frame of the vniuersall worlde. Wee cannot with one breath search out all the secrets of great matters. They say the waters of that riuer are apt to purge, and breake the stone of the kidneis, and bladder, but make the sight dimme. They say, that out of a fontaine also springeth y matter of that vquenchable fire vually called Ignis Alchitran, I thinke the Italian commonly calleth it Ignis Graecus.

#### The seventh Chapter.

ANother thing is worth the noting for the argument and matter thereof, because that valley ingendreth lasciuious, and delightfull Spices. At the rising of the sunne, and in cleare weather, wonderfull vapours are dispersed by the gentle morning winde, throughout the whole valley. But if they bee to greedily drawne in at the nostrils, they are hurtfull to

the

the head, and ingender the pose, or stuffing of the head, as it falleth out with vs in many herbes, chiefly Basil, nor is it good to put Muske to the Nose, although the sent thereof be sweete a farre off: but in raynie, or cloudy weather, those odours cease. Another tree on the bankes of the riuers beareth apples, which being eaten prouoke vrine, and cause it to come forth of the colour of blode. Another, beareth excellent plummcs, like those which the Spaniards call Monke plummcs. Vpon the same bankes, another beareth apples which kill, if they be eaten, although they be pleasant, those apples falling into the channells are eaten of the fishes, and they who at that time eate those fishes, fall into diuers vnknowne diseases: this Fryar Thomas Hortiusius sayth, that hee tasted a little of the apple but eate it not, who affirmeth that it hadd a sower sweete taste intermixed, it hurt him a little, but a draught of oyle was a remedy for the poyson. The shadow also of this Apple-tree hurteth the head, and sight of the eyes the eating of these apples also killeth dogges, and cattes, and any other foure-footed beast what-ouener. That Countrey also ingendreth other trees of many sortes: a iuyce issueth from one, which being pressed is like the creame of newe milke, and good to be eaten. Another tree yeeldeth gumme no worse then redd sugar. That Earth also of her owne nature shooteth fourth many sweete smelling herbes, and Basil may euery where hee gathered. Beetes growe there, to the height of a mans stature. Three leaued grasse there, is greater then Parsley and Smalage, and Porselane, brings fourth branched thicker then a mans tumber. All pot herbes, and garden herbes, brought thither by them of the Monastery growe vp there, as Melons, Goordes, Cucumbers, Radishes, Carrettes, and Parsnepps. Deadly and poysonous herbes also grow there, and chiefly one three ribbed marsh herbe, armed with sharpe pointed teeth in manner of a saw: and if it prick one vnwares, it sendeth him away complayning. Certaine herbes also grow in that Sea, which being plucked vp by the rootes through the violence of the windes spread themselves abroad, and for the most part, hinder the way of the ships. In this countrey of the Chiribichenses, the variety of the foure-footed beastes, and their countrey fowle is worth the mentioning. And let vs begin, with the most profitable, and the more hurtfull, which are opposite. In my former book, and those that follow, often mention is made of certaine foure-footed Serpens, terrible to behold, they call them Iuganas, others call them Iuanas. This monstrous beast is good to be eaten, and a beast not to be reiected, among the dainty meates. And the egges also, which shee layeth, and bringeth forth like the Crocodile, or Tortoise, are of an excellent nutriment, and taste. The two coloured Dominican Fryars receyued no small damage by them, while they inhabited those Countreys for seuen yeeres space. The Monastery being erected (as we sayd) they report, for the most parte by night, they were besett with a dangerous multitude of Iuganas, as with the enemy, whereupon they rose out of their beds, not to prouoke them to defende themselves, but to feare, and driue them away from the fruites, and chiefly the garden Melons, sowed, and manured in their season, whereon they willingly fedd. The Inhabitantes of that valley hunt the Iuganas to eate them, who, finding them, kill them with their arrowes, and many take them aliuie, with their right hand, seising on the neck of this monstrous beast, which is very slowe, and dull, though fearefull to behold, and seemeth with open mouth, and terrible shewe of teeth, to threaten biting, but like an hissing Goose it becommeth astonied, and dare not assayle them: the increase of them is so great, that they cannot vtterly destroye the whole hearde and company thereof. Out of the dennes, and holes vpon the sea coast, where any greene thing buddeth or groweth, they come fourth by night in great troopes, and multitudes, to seeke foode, and eate also the excrementes of the sea, which the Ebb leaueth on the shores. That countrey also nourisheth another subtill & cruell beast, (no lesse then a French dogge) seldome scene In the first twilight of the night, it commeth fourth of the lurking places, and couert of the wooddes, goeth to the villages, and compasseth the houses with loude weeping, and lamentation, so that they who are ignorant of that crafty deuise, would suppose some young childe were heaten. Before the experience of things instructed the neighbours, many were deceyued, and vnwares, went out to the crying of the infant, then presently, came the monster, and violently caught the poore miserable man, and in the twinkling of an eye, tare him in peeces. Long space

Basil & Muske  
not good to be  
put to the nose.

Apples pro-  
uoking vrine.

Plummcs.

Of a pleasant  
poyson: & Apple  
the true Poison  
Paradise.

Of the iuyce of  
a tree,  
Gumme no  
worse then redd  
sugar.  
Herbes.

A foure-footed  
serpent good to  
eate.

Of a subtill &  
cruell beast.

of time, and necessity, which stirre vp the drowsie mindes of men, found out a remedie against the nature of this cruell and monstrous beast. If any be to trauaile by night, hee carryeth out a kindled fier brande with him, and swingeth it about as hee goeth, which the monster beholding, flyeth, as a fearefull man from the sworde of a madde man, by day this monster hath nener bene seene. They are also much molested, and troubled with Crocodiles, especially in solitary and mirie Bayes, for the most part they take the young, and eate them, but abstaine from the olde ones, being affrayd of them. The Fryars eate of a Crocodile, who say that the vsuauory taste thereof, is like to the soft fleshe of an Asse, as I haue else where sayde of the Crocodiles of Nilus, in my Babilonian Legation for the Catholike Princes Ferdinando, & Elizabeth. From the femall a sent proceedeth much like the smell of ranke muske. That Country engendreth wild Cats, the damme carrieth the young in her bosome, creeping or climbing among the trees, then they hit the damme, who falling downe dead, they take the little ones, and keepe them for delight, as we doe Munkies or Apes, from which they differ exceeding much, they take them also by setting snares for them on the brinckes of Fountaines. Beyond the mountaines poynted at with the finger, the inhabitants say, that Montanous wilde beastes inhabite, which counterfeit the shape of a man, in countenance, feete, and handes, and sometimes stand vpright on their hinder feete, with their face vpwarde, and walke, they who hearde this, suppose them to be Beares, but sawe them not. Another scarce Beaste remaineth in their woodes greater then an Asse, a deadly enemy to Dogges, for whatsoever Dogge hee meeteth, hee catcheth him, and carryeth him away with him, euen as a Woolfe, or Lion dooth a sheepe, they violently caught three Dogges (from the Fryars) whiche kept the Monastery, euen out of the entry or porch. The forme of the feete of this Beaste greatly differeth from other liuing creatures, the hoofe thereof is like vnto a French shoö, broad before, and rounde, not diuided, or clouen, sharpe from the heele, it is blacke, and shagg hayred, and seareth the sight of a man, the inhabitantes call this fourfooted Beaste, Cappa. It nourisheth also Leopordes, and Lyons, but milde, and gentle, and not hurtfull, there are great multitudes of Deere, whiche the inhabitantes (who are Hunters) pursue with their arrowes. There is another Beaste no greater then a French Dogge named Aranats, the shape whereof is like to a manne, with a thicke bearde, goodly, & recurent to beholde, they haue handes, feete, and mouth lyke to a mannes, they eate the fruite of trees, and climbing among the trees, as a Catte, or an Ape, they goe in flockes, or companies, and sometimes making a great crying or iabbering together, insomuche as the Fryars of the Monastery when they first arryued, thought them to bee armyes of Diuelles, crying out against them to terrifie them, for rage and madnesse, of their coming thither. It is a very apt, and quicke Beaste, for it knoweth howe to auoide arrowes shot at it, and to take them with the hand, and sende them backe to the shooter: I thinke them to be a kinde of Apes, or Munkies, but the Fryars, deny it. There is another carrion leame beast, wonderfull for the gesture and behauiour, for in steede of dooug, it voydeth snakes of a cubite long: these Fryars say, they nourished one at home, and that they sawe the thing, by manifest prooffe. Being demanded, whether the snakes went being set at libertie, they sayd, to the next woodds, where they liue a short time. This beast lying stinking vpon eury filthy carrion cast on the daughlilles, and therefore impatient of the rotten sauour thereof, they commaunded it should bee killed: it hath the snout, and haire like a foxe. Considering we see woornes bred in the bellies of young children, and old men are not free from that pestilent discease, and that I haue learned, that they are voyded alise together with the excrementes, which chaunging the name the common people call may woornes, why should I not beleene that to be so; especially such men affirming the same? There is another four-footed beast which seeketh his liuing by a marueilous instinct of nature: for it is an hunter of Antes, as wee know the Pye doth, this beast hath a sharpe snout of a spanne long, and in steade of a mouth hath onely a hoale in the ende of his snout, whereby putting forth his long tongue, he stretcheth it out into beddes of the Antes which lyc hidd in the hollowe hoales of trees, and playing, with the motion of his tongue hee allureth them, and perceiuing it to bee fall of Antes, hee draweth it back, and so swallowing the Antes, is fed. That Country is also

The Crocodiles  
haue one Cro-  
codile.

Wilde cats.

Cappa a ferre  
kind of beast.

Leopards and  
Lyons of a wild  
& gentle kinde.  
A beast resembling  
the shape  
of a man.

A beast whose  
excrementes are  
snakes.

A beast that  
feedeth vpon  
Antes.

ingendreth

ingendred that barbed on armed beast, whereof I haue often spoken. It aboundeth also with wilde Boares, thorny Hedhogges, and Porkepenies, and diuers kinde of Weccells: it is also adorned with diuers fowles, and is much troubled with the birdes called Onocrotali, wherof I haue spoken at large in my former booke to the Duke. Battes, like Gnattes, assaile men sleeping by night. Whatsoeuer the Batt sudeth vncouered in a manne, it holdly assaileth it without feare, and suddenly biteth it, sucking the blood. But your Holinesse shall heare a pleasant accident worth the hearing, which fell out about the biting of a Batt. An housholde seruant of the Monastery, was sicke of a grievous pleurisie, in great daunger of life, and hauing neede presently to bee lette blood, the Phlebotomist assayed to strike the veine twice or thrise, but got not any drop of blood with his rasor, whereupon hee being left for a dead man, within fewe howers, the Fryars taking their last farewell, departed, to goe about to prepare for his buriall. A Batt seised on him being thus forsaken, and opened a veine of one of the sicke mans feete which was vncouered, the Batt filled with sucking of the blood, flew away, and left the veine open. At the rising of the Sunne the Fryars come to this forsaken man supposing him to be dead, and found him aliue, and cheerefull, and almost well, and after a while hee recovered health, diligently applying himselfe to his olde office, thanked bee the Batt, which was his Phisition. They also kill cats, doggs, and hemes with their biting. The Inhabitant calleth a Batt, Rete: I giue the names of things which they giue, but they giue but fewe. There are also Crowes, (not Crowes which are blackish birdes) with a crooked Eagles bill, rauenous, but slow in flight, as we see, and may obserue in the flying of that slowe birde familiar in Spayne, bigger then a Goose: about the setting of the Sunne, a fragrant breath or vapour cometh from them, but at noone, or in foggy weather, none at all. Partridges, Turtles, and Stockdoves are bredd there in an infinite number, and they haue little Sparrowes less then our Wrennes. They report marueilous things concerning their industrious architecture in the building of their nests, to defend their young from rauening fowles and other monstrous beasts. Next vnto the Chiribichenses lyeth the Country of Atai, along by the shoores wherof, the Spaniards sayled: they who cast their eyes farre into the Sea, the rest either playing, or else idle, sawe an vnkowne and strang thing, swimming about water and considering with fixed eye what it shoulde bee, confidently affirmed they sawe the hairy head of a man with a thicke bearde, and that it had armes. While they quietly behelde a farre off, the monster securely wanded heere, and there, wondering at the sight of the shippe, but raising their Companions with exceeding loude outcries, and exclamation, the Monster hearing the sounde of the voyce was terrified, and dined vnder Water, and shewed that parte of the body which was hidden vnder the water, and beholding the tayle, they obserued it to bee like the tayle of a fische, with the shaking, and flapping wherof, it made that place of the calme sea full of waues, or sources. Wee thinke them to bee the Tritones, which fabulous antiquitie calleth Neptunes trumpeters. At the Ilande Cubogus; famous for the fishing of pearle, neere to the Ilande of Margarita, many reported, that another monster of that kinde was seene there. In our Cantabrick Ocean, virgins voyces melodiously singing are sayde to bee heard at certayne tymes of the yeere: they thinke there are Consortes and companies of them, when they are provoked to venerie, through the appetite of ingendering, or begetting young of the same kinde. They haue many kinde of fishes vnkowne to vs, but specially they delight in 2. sortes euery where, one, they roast or broyle, and keepe it as we doe salted gammons, or Riches of Bacon, or, as we powder or pickle other flesh, or fish, for our future necessities. Another kind, being boyled they knead in maner of a lump of wheaten dough, which being brought into rounde balles, they bestowe vpon the neighbours wanting that merchandise, for exchange of other forraine commodities. They take fishes by two slightes, or cunning deuises. When they purpose to goe about a generall fishing, a great multitude of young men gather together, where they know plenty of those fishes are, who without making any noyse compass about the scoole beehinde in a Broode ring, like them that hunte hares, dining all together, and in the waters after the manner of dancers, with vandes which they carrie in their right hands moued with great dexteritie,

Will Boares,  
Hedhoggs,  
Porkepenies,  
Weccells,  
Gnattes,  
Battes.

Of a massick  
of a pleurisie  
caused by a  
Batt.

Of a kinde of  
Crowes.

Fowles.

Atai.

Of a Monster of  
the Sea like a  
man.

Tritones or  
Neptunes trumpeters.

Fishes melodiously  
singing in  
the Cantabrick  
Ocean.

Of their manner  
of fishing.

and the left hande open, by little, and little, and by degrees they drie them to the sandie shores lyke sheepe into the folde, and there cast the pray by whole baskets full vpon the drie lande. I wonder not that this may be done; because the like happened to my selfe in the channell of Nilus, when I went against the streame to the Soldan, foure and twentie yeers since. The shuypes that carryed mee, and my trayne, and the Palatines sente vnto mee from the Soldan, staying on the shore to take in newe prouision of victualles, for recreations sake, because it was not safe to lande by reason of the wandring Arabians, by the persuasion and counsell of one of the borderers, I cast little peeces of breade into the ryuer, whereuppon presently a multitude of fishes were gathered together, so secure, that they suffered mannes or baskettes to bee putte vnder them, for they come striuing, and flockinge, to the floating peeces of bread, as greedie fyes to any sweete or pleasant thing, then presently wee lifted vpp the baskets full, and that wee might doe at our pleasure againe, and againe. But the borderers being demanded why the great multitude of those fishes continued so long a time, wee vnderstoode that they ate not those fishes because they were hurtfull. I was aduised to take none of them in my hand, for they shewed me a redd pricke in their back, and that the fish endeuourth to smite the taker with the poynt of the prickle, as Bees doe with their stinge: but the Chiribichemes haue not that care, for theirs, are good, and profitable fishes. The other kinde of fishing is more safe, and generous, they carry burning torches by night within their Canoues, and where they know by prooffe, the scooles of great fishes are, whether they goe, and swinge about the flaming torches without the sides of the boates, the scooles of fish hasten to the light, which, by casting their harping Irons, and daries, they kill at their pleasure, and being salted, or dried in the scorching sunne they orderly lay them in chestes, and expect the Marchants that will come to their markets, and let this suffice for the Sea parts. Many kinde also of fyes, and serpents are ingendred

A kind of fish in the channell of Nilus.

Salamanders.

Aspes which the poore of those parts they poyson their arrows.

Enter of Bees and Frogs.

Gnattes.

A kinde of Bee.

A kinde of Wasp.

The serpent Serpent.

Caterpillars.

Glowworms.

The red shores of the Sea, and the red shore of the Sea.

there. The Salamanders of the Chiribichemes are broader then the painne of a mans hande, and their biting is deadly: they croake or rattle like young hoarse hen-chickens when they begin to desire the Cocke. Aspes which strike with the stinge of their tayle, are euery where to be founde there, with the poynt of their tayle they poyson their arrows. There are also diuers coloured Spiders, beautifull to beholde, twice bigger then ours: their webb is strong, and worth the beholding, whatsoever bird, lesse, or as bigge as a Sparrow lighteth into it, is intangled, and they of the Monastery say that no little strength is required to breake the threedes thereof. They eat Spiders, Frogs, and whatsoever wormes, and lice also without loathing, although in other things they are so queasie stomaked, that if they see any thing that doth not like them, they presently cast vpp whatsoever is in their stomacke: Many defend themselves from foure dangerous sortes of Gnattes after this manner, covering themselves in sande, they hide their faces with greene leaves among the boughes, yet so, that they may breath, the small otes of these Gnattes are the most hurtfull. There are 3. kinde of bees, whereof two gather-hony in hives after the manner of ours, the third is small, and blacke, which gathereth hony in the wooddes, without wax. The Inhabitauntes willingly eat the young bees, rawe, roasted, and sometimes sodden. There are two sortes of Waspes, one harmelesse, the other very troublesome, the one inhabite the houses, the other remaine in the wooddes. In certayne Bayes of the Sea coast, Serpents of great and huge bignes are ingendred, if the Marinners chauce to sleepe, taking holde of the side of the boate, they clime into it, and kill, teare, and ate those that are asleepe together, like Vultures seising vpon dead carriuon which they finde. At certayne times of the yeere, they are much-molested with grassie-wormes, palmer-wormes, and Locustes, in the blossomes of the trees: and in the graine Maizims, vnlesse great care be taken in drying it, and laying it vp in store-houses, the Weasel groweth, and gnaweth the substance, and pith, leauing the huske, as it happeth in beanes, and somewhere in corne. Glowwormes are also very familiar there, of the which I haue spoake in my former Decade to the Duke, that they vse them for remedies against the gnattes, and to giue them light by night. They say that the shores of that Sea at certayne times of the yeere are redd: of the colour of blood. The elder sort being demanded what might be the cause, they say, that they thinke, but affirme it not, that a huge

huge multitude of fishes cast their spanne at that time, which beeing violently carryed away by the waues, giues that bloody colour to the brim of the water: I leaue it to them that seeke marrowe in the superficies of bones, to beleuee it, or else to infect these, and many things besides, with the naturall corruption of their enuie, and spite. Wee haue nowe spoken sufficiently of fourefooted-beasts, fowles, and fflies, as also of trees, herbes, and iuyces, and other such like things. Let vs therefore bend our bowe to ayme at the noble actes, and the order, and course of the life of men.

## The eight Chapter.

The Chiribickenses are very muche addicted to Sooth-saying, or diuination, they are louers of playes or sports, songes, and soundes, euery twilight they salute each other by course with diuers instruments and songes, sometimes they spend eight dayes together in singing, chaunting, dauncing, drinking and eating, and sometimes shake themselves vntill they be extreame weary. Their songes tend to sorrow, and mourning, there, euery one furnishe and adorne themselves with Iewels, some set golden crownes vpon their heads, and beautifie their neckes, and legges with wilkes of the Sea, or shelles of snayles, in stead of belles, others take plumes of feathers of diuers colours, others haue golden tablets or brooches at their breastes, which they call Guaninnes, but they all die themselves with diuers iuyces of herbes; and he that seemeth most filthy, and ougly in our eyes, they iudge him, to be the most acate, and trimme: being thus gathered together somewhat like a bowe, then in manner of a strait wedge, and after that, in a round ring, with their handes knit together, then presently loosed, they goe rounde with a thousande diuers kindes of skipplings, and dauncing, alwayes singing, going forth, and returning with diuers gestures of the countenance: sometimes with their lippes close, and silent, and sometimes open with loude outcries. These fryars say, that they sawe them sometimes consume six houers, and more, without any intermission in these vaine, and laborious motions: When, warned by the Cryars, the bordering neighbours are to assemble together at the Court of any chiefe King, the Kinges seruantes sweepe, and cleanse the wayes, plucking vpp the herbes, and casting away the Stones, thornes, and Strawe, and all other filth, and if neede require, they make them wider. The neighbours that come from the Townes, make a stande a stinges cast from the Kinges Court, and prepare themselves in the open feldes, and hauing set themselves in an orderly array, they shake their Dartes, and Arrowes which they vse in the warres, singing, and dauncing, and first singings with a trembling low voyce, they goe a softe pace, then presently the nearer they come, they lift vp their voyces, and reiterated songes, euer almost vitering the same thing, as for example: It is a cleere day, the day is cleere, it is a cleere day. One Commander of euery towne giueth a rule vnto the rest, of their dances, and songes, who answer to so great a Commander with a musically accord, so that it may seeme to bee but one voyce in many, and one motion, in many motions. One of the kinsmen or familiar freindes of that Commander, goeth before the troope or cōpany, directing his steppes to the folding gates of the Court, then they enter the house without siaging, one counterfeiting the arte of fishing, another hunting, modestly dauncing, after that, another (like an Orator) talketh aloude praying the King, and his progenitors, and one among the rest counterfeiteth the gesture and behaviour of a foole or bester, one while distorting his eyes, another while looking directly. This being done, they sitt all silent vppon the ground with their feete vnder them, and cate till they surfeite, and drinke till they be dranke, and the more vnacemperly any one drinketh, the more valiant is he accounted. Then, women vse drinke more modestly, to the intent they may haue the greater care of their husbandes ouercome with drunkennes, for euery husband is licenced to haue his wife to looke vnto him, while these sportes of Bacchus last: they also vse the helpe of women at these times to beare their carriages of meates and drinkes to the place of meeting: these reach the cupps from man to man after this manner, the women drinke to him that sitteth first, who ariseth, and reacheth the hole or goblet to him that is nexte, vntill the whole number haue drunke in their order. The Fryars say, that they haue seene some of them swolue through

The Expansion of the Church.

Ornaments.

Their Exercises.

too much drinke, that they seemed like to a woman great with chilke. After this, they returne to brawling and complayning, and recounting injuries past, hence arise combats hand to hand, provocations, and other controuersies, hence many enmities and hostilities begin, hence many olde grudges breake forth. Nowe when they are able to rise, to returne home, they reuise their mournfull songs againe, especially the women who are more inclined to sorrowe. They affirme that he that is temperate differeth much from a man, because hee that fallth not through drunkennesse must needs remaine without the knowledge of future things. They apply themselves to the art of Magicke vnder maisters, and teachers, as here-after wee shall speake in his proper place, and then, they say, they had conference, and familiar conuersation with the deuil, when they are most oppressed with drunkennesse, the spirits being sounde asleepe, wherefore besides the drinking of wyne, they vse the fume of another iuebrating hearbe, that they may more fully and perfectly lie without sense, others also take the iuyce of hearbes prouoking vomite, that their stomacks being emptied, they may returne againe to their surfeiting, and drunkennesse. Their virgins also are present at their drunken meetings, who wrappe the partes of the calves of their legges, and thyghes next the knee with bottons of yarne, and binde them hande, to the end that their calves, and thyghes may swell bigger, and through this foolish deuise they thinke they appeare finer to their leuers, the other partes are naked. But the married women weare breeches only to cover their priuities. These people frame warlike instrumentes diuersly compacted, wherewith they sometimes prouoke mirth, and sometimes sorrowe, and furie, they make some of great sea-shells with little strings ouerthwart, they also make pipes, or flutes of sundry pieces, of the bones of Deere, and canes of the iuccr. They make also little Drummes or Tabers beaurified with diuers pictures, they forme and frame them also of gourdies, and of an hollowe picco of timber greater then a monnes arme. By night almost alwayes many cry aloud like Common cryers, from the highest house of euery towne, & they carefully answere them from the next towne. Being demanded why they put themselves to that trouble, they answer, that their enemies might not finde them vnprouided, if they suddenly came vpon them, for they destroy one another with perpetuall warres. They say, their language is harde to be vnderstoode, for they pronounce all their wordes halfe cutte of, as Poets may say, deum for deorum. If it be verie holte before the rising of the sunne, or if it be cold at the rising thereof, they wash themselves euery day, and for elegance, and neatnesse, for the most parte they annoynt themselves with a certayne slyny oymnt, and putting the feathers of birdes thereon, they couer all their body: the Spanish chiefe Iustices bring baudes or magicians forth of the prison after this manner to the publique viewe of men, in reproach, for punishment of their hainous crime committed; Neither heate nor cold much oppresseth the Chiribichenos of the sea thire, though they be next the Equinoctiall, yet are they scarce vnder the tenth degree of our Pole; that country lyeth towards the Antarticke (as I haue elsewhere sayde) foure and fifty degrees beyond the Equinoctiall line, where the dayes are shortest, when they are the longest with vs, and so contrary. Among them he is accounted most mightie, and noble, who is most rich in gold, and Canoues, or hath most kindred, or allies, and he that is most renowned for the famous and wortlie acts of his Ancesters, or his owne. If any doe iniurie to another, lette him take heede to himselfe, for they neuer forgive, but treacherously seeke reuenge. They are exceeding vaine glorious, and full of boasting, they are much delighted with their bowes, & poisoned arrows: with the stings of the tayles of Aspes, and the hearbes of certain Ants, and with poysonous hearbes, and apples bruised, and also with the iuyce distilling from trees they annoynt them, neither are all permitted to temper those medicines, or compositions. They haue old women skillfull in that art, which at certaine times they shug vpon against their willes, giuing them matter or stuffe for that seruice, they keepe them in 2. dayes, wherein they boile the oymnt, and having finished the same at length they let them out, if they finde the olde women in health, so that they lie not halfe deade through the force of the poyson, they grieuously punish them & cast away the oymnt as vnprouitable (for they affirme, that the force of the same is so great, that through the smel thereof while it is made,

A true heauly  
backward opinion.  
The Chiribichenos Magicians.

Their virgins.

Married women.  
Wife-like instruments.

A picco of the  
Antarticke.

Their language  
hard to be vnder-  
stood.  
The barbarous  
wayes themselves  
every day.

These barbarous  
men must be  
gone.  
Poysoned ar-  
rows.

it almost killeth any that make it) That poyson killeth him that is wounded, but not suddely, so that none of our men euer find any remedy, although they knew how to cure it. Whoso is wounded, liues a miserable and strict life after that, for he must abstaine from many things, which are pleasing, first from Venerie for 2. yeeres at the least, & at his life time from wine, & food, more then the necessitie of nature onely, & from labour: vales they forbore these things, they die without further delay: the fryars say, they haue seene many wounded, because they destroy one another with blouddie wars, but none deade except one woman (for the women fight together with the men) who being wounded, refuse to vndergo the strict rules of medicine: our men could neuer bring out of them, what remedie they might vse for that cure. They exercise their bowes from their childehood among themselves with little rounde bullets of waxe, or wood, in steede of arrowes. While they trauiell by sea, one singer sitteth in the prow, or head of the Canow, whom the rovers following from point to point, after a pleasing and delightfull manner, answer him with the vniforme motion or stroake of their oares. The women for the most parte passe the time of their adolescence, & youth honestly enough, but being elder they become vnconstant. After the generall manner of women, whom strange things please more then their owne, they loue Christiās better: they run, swim, sing, & exercise all motions as aptly as mē: they are easily deliuered, without any signe, or token of paine, & neither lie down vpon the bed, nor expect any pleasing delights: they bolster the neckes of their infants with 2. pillowes, the one before, and the other behinde, and hind them hard euen till their eyes start, for a smooth plaine face pleaseth them. The yong marriageable maydens the parents shut vp two yeeres in secret chambers, so that for that time, they goe not forth into the ayre, for otherwise by reason of the sun, and often vse of the water, they are somewhat brown: & during the time of their shutting vp, they neuer cut their hayre. Manie desire to haue wiues kept with that severity, these if they be first wiues of an husband, are honored of ʒ rest, which the noblemen haue at their pleasure, but the commō people liue conuicted with one, yet ʒ baster sort for the most parte yeeld obedience to ʒ more mighty. After marriage they beware of adultery, if it happen, the woman is not charged with ʒ crime, but reuenge sought against ʒ adulterer, the wife may be diuorced. All ʒ next neighbours are inuited to the marriage of this maide thus severely first shut vp, & the womē guests bring euery one with the on their shoulders a burden of drink, & dainty meats, more then they are wel able to beare. The mē carry euery one their būsle of straw, & reeds, to build an house for ʒ new married wife, which is erected with beāes set vpright in manner of a warlike pauiū, ʒ house being built, ʒ bridgroom & bride are adorned according to their abilitie, with their accustomed Iewels, & precious stons of diuers colours, and they that want them, borrowe of their neighbours, then the newe married wife sitteth aparte with the virgins, and the bridegroom with the men. After that they compass them both about, singing, the young men going rounde about him, and the maydens about her: and a Barbar commeth, who cucteth the bride-groomes haire from the care, but a womanne polleth the bride, onely before, vnto the eye-browes, but on the hinder part of the heade, shee remaineth bushy, or ouergrowne with long haire: these things being done, and night approaching, they offer and deliuer the bride to her husband by the hande, and he is permitted to vse her at his pleasure. The women also haue their eares boared through, wherat they hange Iewels, the men dine together, but the women neuer eate with the men. The women loue to haue charge of the house, and exercise themselves in the affayres of the family, but the men apply themselves to follow the warres, hunting, fishing, and sporting pastimes. Here I passe ouer many things concerning their behaviour, and manner of life, because in my former treatise to the Duke I mentioned, that they were sufficiently, and at large recited, in our Senate, somewhat whereof I feare is here repeated not necessary, for the 70. yeere of mine age, which beginneth the fourth of the Nones of February, next comming in the yeere 1526. hath so crazed my memory, and wiped it out as it were rubbing it with a sponge, that the period scarce falleth from my penne, when, if any demand what I haue done, I plainly confesse I cannot tell, especially because these things come to my handes at diuers times, obserued and noted by diuers men. Three things

No cure for the wounds made by the poysoned arrows.

The Barbarian women sit like women in court.

Locking up of maidens as a good custome.

The manner of suitors of their marriages.

The women eate not with the men.

The Indian Indians come to see the families of age.

things now remayne, which being declared, wee may peradventure conclude this worke; vntlesse new matters bee brought vnto vs. Wee will therefore first shewe these barbarous, and almost naked men learne, and practise the art of Magicke, then, with what pompe and solemnitie they celebrate their funeralls, and lastly, what they beleeeue, shall become of the deade. They haue skillfull and expert ministers of Magicke, which they call Pices, to these they rise vp in token of reuerence, and honour them as gods: out of the multitude of children they chuse some of 10. or 12. yeeres old, whom they know by coniecture, to be naturally inclined to that seruice, & as we direct our children to the schooles of grammarians, and Rhetoritians, so do they send them to the secret, and solitary places of the woods. For two yeeres space they leade an harde and strict life in cottages, & receive seuerall institutions, vnder the Pythagorean rule or instruction of their old masters. They abstaine from all kinde of things nourishing bloud, & from the act of generation, of the thought thereof, drinking onely water, and liue without any conuersation with their parents, kindred, or companions. During the light of the sunne, they see not their maisters at all, who goe vnto their schollers by night but sende not for them. They rehearse to the children songs or charmes that rayse deuils, and together with them, they shew them how to cure the sicke: and at the end of two yeeres they returne backe to their fathers houses. And they bring a testimoniall with them of the knowledg they haue gotten from their masters the Pices, as they that haue attained the title of Doctorship doe, from the cities Bononia, Papias, and Perusium, otherwise, none learned in the art of Phisicke dare practise the same. Their neighbouring allies, or friends, if they be sicke, admit them not to cure them, but send for strangers, and those especially of another king: According to the diuers nature, or qualitye of the disease, they cure them by diuers superstitions, and they are diuersly rewarded. If a light grieue oppress him } lyeth sicke, taking certaine herbes in their mouth, they put their lips to the place of the grieue, & lulling the sleepe, they sucke it out with great violence, and seeme to draw the offensive humor vnto them, then going forth of the house with either cheeke swelling, they spit, & vomit it out againe, & say, the sick patient shall shortly be well, because through that sucking, & lulling asleepe, the disease is forcibly drawne out of his veines: but if the weake partie be oppressed with a more yehement feuer, & cruell paine, or any other kind of sicknes, they cure them after another maner. The Pices go vnto the sicke, & cary in their hands a little stick of a tree known vnto them, no comon prouocatiō, to vomit, & cast it into a platter, or dishfull of water, that it may be moistened, or wet, he sitteth with him that lyeth sick, & saith, } the diseased partie is vexed with a deuill, they yare present beleeeue his report, & his kindred, & familiar friends instreat the Pices to bestow his traualle & paines for remedy therof. Wherupon he goeth to the weake patient, & continually licketh and sucketh al his body after the manner we haue said, and mumbling vttereth certaine charmes, saying, that by that meanes he bringeth the deuill out of } marrow of the sicke, & draweth him into himselfe, then presently taking } little moystened stick, he rubbeth his own polate euen to the Vuula, & after that he thrusteth the little stick downe into his throte, and prouoketh vomit, and strainteth vntill hee cast vpper whatsoeuer meate is in the bottome of the stomacke, or almost whatsoeuer is in it, and with panting spirit, now trembling, another while submissive, and lowe, hee shaketh his whole bodie, and belloweth forth loud cries, and lamentable grones more strongly then a Bull wounded with darts in a race, and thumpeth and beatech his breast, so that the sweate runnes trickling downe for the space of two houres, like a shower of rayne from the roofes of the houses. The two coloured Fryars of the Monasterie say they sawe it, and also wondered therat, how that Pices should not burst in the middle through so violent a motion and agitation. The Pices being demanded why hee suffered these tormentes, sayth he must indure the, that through charmes, enforcing the deuilles from the marrow of the sicke, and by sucking, and lulling him a sleepe, he might cast out the diuel drawn vnto himselfe. Now when the Pices hath long disquieted himselfe with diuers yehement actions, slythly belching, he casteth vp a certaine thicke lumps of fleame, in the middle whereof an harde cole-blacke ball lies wrapped, they gather that lothsome excrement together with the hand, and separate the

A discourse of  
these practices  
of Magicke.

Adversaries of  
Life.

Their cure of  
the sicke.

Another kind of  
cure.

little blacke ball from the rest of the rume, the Piaces lying halfe dead with the sicke partie, then they go forth of the house, and with a loud voyce they cast away the little ball as farre as they can, repeating these words againe and againe, Maitonoro quian, Maitonoro quian which signifieth: goe diuell from our friends, goe diuel from our friends. This being done; hee requireth of the sicke manne the price or recompence of the cure, inasmuch that the sicke partie supposeth he shall shortly be well; and so thinke his kinsmen, & familiars. Then plenty of the graine Maizium, and other food is giue him, according to the qualitie of the disease; they likewise giue him tablets of golde to hange at the brest, if the sicke party bee able, and the infirmities dangerous, or harde to be cured. But this is to bee remembered, the two coloured Fryars of the Monastery, menne of authoritie, and preachers affirmed, that fewe perished who were thus cured, by the Piaces: what secrete lyeth hidden here, lette such as are prone to sift out other mens matters, iudge as they please, wee present suche things as are giuen vs from men of authoritie, and worth. If the disease growe againe, it is cured by drugges; and inyees of diuers hearbes. They consult with diuels also concerning things to come, whom they binde with their knowne charmes which they vsed in that solitary place, from their childhoode, questioning him concerning showers, and drought, the temper of the ayre, and touching diseases, and contagions, peace, warre, and the successe thereof, & also concerning the euent of iourneys, the beginnines of things, negotiations, gaires, and losses, and of the coming of the Christians vnto them, whom they abhorre, because they possess their countries, giue them lawes, and compell them to vse newe and strange rites, and customes, and cause them to reiect their accustomed desires. The Piaces being demanded concerning future things, the Fryars affirme they answer perfectly, and directly: whereof besides many other things, they shewed vs two examples beeing assembled in our Senate. <sup>Consulting with diuels.</sup> The Fryars with greedie and longing expectation desired the coming of the Christians vnto them who were nowe desolate, and forsaken, in the countrey of the Chiribechenes: the Piaces beeing asked whether the shippes would come shortly, they foretolde that they would come at an appointed day, and likewise told vs the number of the mariners, their habitte, and particularly what they brought with them, they say they sayled in nothing. But another thing seemeth more harde to be credited, they foretell the Eclipse of the Moone three monethes beefore, and more, although they haue neyther letters, nor knowledge of anie Science. At that tyme they faste, and lyue sorrowfully, perswaded thereunto, because they thinke some euill is foretolde thereby, they receiue the Eclipse of the Moone with sorrowfull sounds, and songs, especially the women, beat & smite one another, & <sup>They foretell the Eclipse of the Moone without ordinary learning.</sup> <sup>The Eclipse of the moone they holde ominous.</sup> marriageable maidens draw blood out of their armes, cutting their veines with the sharpe prickle of a fish, in steede of swordgrasse: Whatsoeuer meate or drinke is founde stored, and prepared in their houses in the time of the Eclipse, they cast it into the Sea, or channells of riuers, abstayning from all delights vntill they see the Moone hath escaped that danger, which hauinge receiued light againe, they giue themselves to sports, & pastimes, and ioyfull songs, & dancing. It is ridiculous to be hearde, what the Piaces contrary to their knowledge perswade the innocent people to be the cause of the Eclipse of the Moone: for they childishly affirme; that the Moone at that time is cruelly wounded by an angry sunne, & that the fury of the same being appeased, she recuierth, and recuierth her former state, as though the deuill knewe not the cause of the Eclipse, who beinge cast downe from the seate of the starres, brought with him the knowledge of the starres. But when the Piaces, at the request of any prince or other friend, are to raise spirits, they enter into a secret solitary place at ten of the clocke at night, and carry with them a fewe stout and vndaunted younge men, the Magitian sitteth vpon a lowe settle, while the younge men stande immoueable, and cryeth out with outragious wordes makinge plaine things obscure, as antiquitie reporteth Sibilla Cumca did, then presently hee shaketh the bellies which hee carryeth in his hande, and after that, with a heauy sounding voyce almost mourninge, hee speaketh to the spirit which hee calleth sp in these wordes, Prororure, Prororure, producinge the last sillable, and that he often repeateth, if the deuill beinge called

called deferre his cominge, he vexeth & tormenteth himselfe more-cruelly; for they bre the wordes of one that intreateth him to come, but if hee yet deferre his cominge, he chaungeth his songes and vttereth threateninge charmes, and seemeth with a sterne countenance as it were to commaund him. They execute and put in practise those things which we say they had learned in the solitary woods vnder the discipline of their old Masters, now when they perceiue hee is come at length beeing called, preparinge themselves to intertaine the deuill, they oftener rattle, and shake the belles: then, the deuill rased, assaileth the Piacés, as if a stronge man sett vpon a weake child, and this deuillish great ouerthroweth the Piacés one the grounde, who wresteth and writeth himselfe, and sheweth signes, and tokens of horrible torment. While hee laboureth and struggeleth thus, one of the boldest and hardiest of the yonge menn admitted goeth vnto him, and propoundeth the commaundements of that kinge, for whose sake the Piacés vnder tooke this wayghty busines, then the spirit included within the lippes of the prostrate Magician maketh answer: what questions they vse to demaunde, we haue mentioned before. The aunnaires beeing received the yonge man demaundeth what reward must bee giuen to the Piacés, and whether the deuill iudge hee should be satisfied with other fooode or Miazium, the demaundes are surely giuen to the Piacés. When they behold a Comet, euen as a shepheard when the wolfe commeth, vseth to drive him away with horrible noy, cryes, so; they thinke a Comet wilbe dissolved with their noyse, & sounde of the drummes. The Monasterians reportinge these, and the like things vnto vs, perceiued some of our associates to doubt; whether credit were to bee giuen to their wordes, and therefore; that friar Thomas Hortizius who, thoroughly knewe the affaires & maner of behaiour of the Chiribichenses brake forth into this Example saying.

A Comet  
was  
seen  
1578

#### The ninth Chapter.

The  
critique  
of  
friar  
Thomas  
Hortizius.

The happy & blessed friar Peter of Corduba, an holy man by the iudgement of all, and Viceprovinciall of the preaching: friars of our order, of the country of Andaluza, whom only the exceeding great desire of increasinge our faith, drew to those desolate, and solitary places, depending onely on the ayde and helpe of God alone, determined to search out the secrets of those Piacés, and desired by his presence to knowe whether such as were vexed with the deuill prophesied, & could giue answers after the manner of the Delphick Apollo. That reuerent father worthy admiration, giudeth his priestly robe about him, bringeth holy water in his right hande to sprinkle the sicke party therewith, & in his left hande-carried the Crosse of Christ: and standinge nere the sicke spake these wordes: if thou be the deuill, that thus vexest this man, I aduise thee by the vertue of this instrument well known vnto thee (and stretcheth out the crosse) that thou presume not to come forth, thence without our leaue, before thou first answer to my demaundes. After that, this holy father affirmeth, that he spake many things in Latine, and asked some questions in the Spanish tongue whereunto he sayth the sicke party made particular answers, yet neither in Latine, nor Spanish, but in the language wherein the Piacés are instructed, differinge nothinge in sense. This good friar, besides the rest, added one thinge: behold saith hee whether doe the soules of the Chiribichenses goe, after they depart out of this bodily prison? We drawe them (saith he) and violently carry them away to the burninge, and eternall flames, that together with vs, they may suffer punishment of their filthy misdoedes: and these things were done in the presence of many Chiribichenses by the commaundement of the fryar. Notwithstanding this report divulged throughout the whole country, nothing discouraged the Chiribichenses as all from their old euill behaiour and manners, but that they followed and executed their appetitie, and desires after the same maner they were wont, as friar Thomas couplaineth. This being done the good friar of Corduba turninge to the Piacés lying sicke, saith, thou vnclene spirit depart from this man. That word being spoken, the Piacés suddenly arose, but so amazed; that he stooode longe estranged from himselfe, scarce standinge on his feete, who, as soone as he had liberty of speach, began to curse, and greuously to complaine of his departed

The  
friar  
con-  
fesseth  
the  
deuill.

The  
moment  
of  
the  
deuill.

A  
deuill  
was  
seen

gust,

quest, which so longe time afflicted his body. Garsias Loaisa also one of the two coloured preaching friars, as he affirmeth, whom your Holines hath advanced to the height of his order vnder a Cardinall, now Coassessor vnto Caesar, and Oximensian Prolate, cheefe of our Indian Senate, saith, that Cordubensian friar, is worthy of all commendation, & that he speaketh truth. And this thinge seemeth not strange in my iudgement, seeinge our lawe permittech vs to confesse, that many haue bin vexed with deuills, and Christ himselfe is often sayd to haue cast vncleane spirits out of men. These Priests also inioy the society of banquetings with others, dancings, & other light pastimes, yet are they separated from the people for their gravity. Nor doe these Magicians theselues vnderstand the sense of their charmes, as it falleth out with our cōtry men: although the vulgar tongue be next vnto y. Latine, yet few y are present at y sacred Ceromonyes of religio perceiue what y priests singe, yea and amonge y priests theselues through y careles negligence of the Prælates there are not a fewe, that conuatted only with the pronouncinge of the woordes, not perceiuing the matter, dare presume to say diuine seruice. Now after what manner, they celebrate their funerals, they stretch out beaige layd vpon hurdels, or grates, partly of reede, and kindlinge a soft fire of certaine herbes, they drye them; and all the moysture beeing distilled by droppes, they afterwards prescribe them and haunge them vp in secret roomes for household gods. Other countreyes also of this supposed Continent haue that custome whereof I thinke I spoake in my former Decades, to Pope Leo your Holines his cousen german. But such bodies as are put forth vndred, are buried in a trench digged at home with lamentation and teares. The yeare of their first funeralls beeing past, the next neighboringe friendes are assembled, and such a multitude (as agreed with the state of the dead) come together, and euery one of them that are inuited cometh accompanied with meates, and drinckes; or bringeth slaues laden therewith, and at the first twilight of the night, the seruantes finde the graue, take vp the bones, and with loule voyces, and loose haire, lament and weepe together, and takinge their feete in their hands, and puttinge their head betweene their legges, they contract themselues into a round compasse, and then they vtter horrible howlings, stretchinge out their loose feete in a rage, with their faces, and armes, erected to the heauens. And whatsoever teares fall from their eyes, or sainele distilleth from their nostrills they leane it vnapied, filthy to behold: and the more beastly they become, the more perfectly they thinke they haue performed their duty: they burne the bones, keepinge the hinder part of the heade, and this, the noblest and best of the womenn bringeth home with her to bee kept for a sacred relique, then, such as were inuited, returne home. Now let vs speake what they thinke concerninge the soule. They confesse the soule, to be immortall, which hauinge part of the bodily cloathing they beleue, it goeth to the woodes of the mountaines, & that it liueth perpetually there in caues, nor doe they exempt it fro eating, & drinking, but y it should be fed there. The answering voyces heard, fro caues & hollow holes, which y Latines call Echo, they suppose to bee the soules wandring through those places. They knewe them honour the Crosse although lying somewhat oblique, and in another place compassed about with lynes, they putt it vpon suche as are newe borne, supposing the Diuels flie from that instrument, if any fearefull apparition bee seene at any time by night, they set vp the crosse, & say that the place is cōsented by that remedy. And being demanded whence they learned this, & the speeches which they vnderstande not, they answer that these rites and customes came by tradition from the elders, to the younger. Let the Chiribichensian affaires excuse mee, though I denie them the last place promised vnto them in this heape of thinges, for I sayde, they should conclude this worke, except some newe thinges arose, it is therefore more meete that those worthy fleetes which often cutte the Ocean, should driue away the last troope of so great and infinite varietie of matter, and nowe drawe backe my wearie hand from writing. For while I was employed in my former treatise to the Duke, and in the thinges mentioned to your Holinesse in this booke, many occurrents came which partly I reported, & partly occasions offered, compelled to bee reserued vsfill this tyme, because also I haue, no libertie, for other businesse, euerie day to apply my selfe to set downe in writing the success of the affayres

So Made is  
your popish pre-  
sentation.

The manner of  
if their foolish  
funerals.

Reliques.

Their obsequy  
of Leba.

He that taught  
the papists to  
adore the Image  
of the crosse  
might teach  
these miscreants  
this ceremony.

of India: sometimes a whole month passeth my handes without anye intelligence, and therefore when I haue leasure all things are written in hast, and almost confusedly, nor can order be observed in them, because they fall out disordered: but let vs come to the fleetes.

Of 4. ships sent from Hispaniola the former yeere, one came hither, from whose mariners, and the Senate remaining there, those things were related, and written vnto vs, which are declared concerning Garaius, Egidius Gonsalus, Christopherus Olitus, Petrus Arias, and Fernandus Cortes. The fifth of the Nones of May, in this yeere 1525, another fleet of twentie foure shippes departed from Barrameda the mouth of Betis; to goe first to Hispaniola, where the Senate is, whiche gouerneth, and directeth all matters of the Ocean, and from thence presently to disperse themselves to diuerse Prouinces of that newe worlde. In one of those shippes my householde seruant Iohannes Mendegurensis (a maime well knowne to the Cusentine, & Vnanesian Archbishops sometimes legats here) was caried, to looke vnto the affaires of my Paradiisian Iamaica. From him, I haue receiued letters, from Gomera, one of the fortunate Ilandes, where all that are to passe the Ocean, arriue to take in fresh water. Hee writeth, that he performed his voyage with prosperous successe in tenne dayes space, and manie swifter ships might haue done it in shorter time, but he was faine to slacke his sayles to expect his slowe consorts, least lagging behinde they shoulde light into the mouth of the French Pirates, who staid long hounding for them vnder sayle: the fourth day after, he sayth, they woulde set sayle to Sea, then being secure from the feare of Pirates, they will hoize all their sayles, and spreade them at their pleasure: and we pray God they may successfully performe the voyage they haue happily begonne. I doe not well remember whether I haue said that two shippes from Fernandus Cortes, and Noua Hispania (the furthest of countries knowne to vs) arriued at the Cassiterides, Ilandes of the Portugales dominion called Azores, but whether I so saide, or not, it little skilleth. I must now declare, how it came to passe, that they fell not into the handes of those greedie Pyrates, who hounding vnder sayle waited long for them, and how they escaped, or what they bring. One of them being vnladen, determined to try her fortune, and by Goddes helpe, light not among the pyrates, but escaped safe. The Captaines of the ships deliuered certaine messages to Caesar, and to vs by Lupus Samanecus brought vs by me from a little one, who went three yeeres since from hence with my good leane, with Albornazius the kings Secretary, vnder the name of the Kinges Auditor. Understanding these things, a fleet of sixe shippes was presently provided, wherof foure were of the burden of two hundred tonnes, and two Carauelles to accompanie them: very well prepared for Sea fight, if they meeete with the Pirates: the King of Portugall also lent vs foure other verie readie shippes, well furnished with munition, and all kinde of ordinance, so they departed the seuenth of the Ides of Iune, tooke in their lading which they had left there, and returned about the ende of Iulie to the citie of Siuith, where they gaue thanks to God, from whom we daily expect the chiefe Commanders. What we shal draw from them, we will sometime hereafter giue your Holinesse a tast thereof, if wee vnderstand these things please you, by offeringe vs a dish of dainty meates, wherewith your Holinesse doth yeerely fatte more then twenty thousand Idle persons, that they may more liberally ioye the prerogatiues of securitie, and ease. I presumed to speake the like to Cosar, when he gaue me the Abbey of Iamaica: for I deliuered my minde vnto him in these wordes. Most mighty Caesar, what I haue bin to your mothers ancesters and both your parents for these 37. yeeres wherein I haue remained in Spaine, and how profitable I haue bin to your imperiall maiesty, so often as occasion is offered, your maiesty confesseth, in word & honor giuen me: but for testimony of the same that I may perswade my countrymen thereof, the Embassadors of Millaine, Venice, Florence, Genua, Ferrara, & Manra, I want some outward argument of this loue, in regard of honor, whose bayte no man shall cuer bee found who hath reiected it: euery one (as the olde prouerbe saith) commendeth sayres according to the qualitie of y gaine. Surely after I receiued that gracious & fauorable parchment Bull from your Holinesse may particular poyntes, & clauses of the letters of the most reuerent Datarius written to the Legate Baltazar, were acceptable vnto me, wherein he testifieth your Holinesse his loue is not meane towardes me, and courteously promieth he will be my

Aduocate

14. Ships departed from Barrameda to goe to Hispaniola.

Reports from Iohannes Mendegurensis.

The arrival of two ships from Cortes and Noua Hispania at the Cassiterides in their returne.

A fleet of sixe ships sent out from Cosar to meeete with the pirates.

The manner how to buye the Popes writings.

Advocate with your Holinesse. But we thinke *ſ* a tree well furnished with leaves is not so much to bee esteemed, which when it may bee beneficiall, desireth rather to bee like an Elm, or a Plane tree. I have digressed to farr from the purpose, they vs therefore returne to the ships that are brought hether. The shippes sent from Cortes were onely two, and those surely very litle, they ascribe the small store of treasure to the scarcity and want of shippes of those countries, for they bring onely 70. thousand Pennas of gold to Cæsar, I have often sayde that Pensus exceedeth the Spanish Ducat of gold a fourth part, yet I thinke this will nothing exceede it, because the gold is not pure. They bringe also a Culveringe a warlike peece of ordinance, (whereof I have often spoken) made almost all of gold, but Lupus Samaneus who is now with me, being conveyed in the first shipp which tryed her fortune, saith, it was not of gold, and that it weighed three and twenty Quintales after the Spanish worde (euer Quintall containeth 4. Rubi of poundes of 6. Ounces to the pounde): They also bringe precious stones and diuers, and sundry sortes of rich ornaments, & in the first shippe Lupus Samaneus brought a Tyger of wonderfull beauty, but it was not brought vnto vs. Concerninge Cortes, and his crafty & subtill deuises in seducing, and deceiuing, farr differing from *ſ* relation of many, and the apparant arguments, that he hath heapes of gold, precious stones, and siluer, piled vp in store, such as haue neuer bin heard of, sent in by burdens, by the slaues of the Kinges, through the posterie gate of his huge court, and that by stealth in the night, without the prauitic of the Magistrates, and of the cities, and their priuiledged towne, and innumerable rich villages, their gold and siluer mines, and the number and largenes of the province, and many things besides, wee reserve them till another time. Certaine remedies are secretly thought vpon, but it were an laynous matter for me to mutter any other thing for the present, vntill this warre, which we now begin, be thoroughly wouen to an ende: let these things be reserved, for their place & let vs now speake a litle concerning the other fleets. In that booke which Antonius Tamaronus a batcheler of art, and my Soliciter deliuered to your Holines (beginninge, Before that) mention is made at large concerninge a fleet which was to bee sent to the Ilandes of Maluchas ingendringe spices, lying vnder the Equinoctiall line, or next vnto it, where, in a controversie with the King of Portugall in the city of Pax Julia, commonly called Badaoz, wee sayd, the Portugals were convicted, but woulde not confesse it, the reasons of which matter are there afledged, and set downe: that fleet commanded to be stayed (the Paecnsian assembly being dissolved) was finished in the Cantabrian roade of Bilbo, and about *ſ* Calendes of Iuno of this present yeere 1525. was then brought to the hauen of Clunia in Gallacia, the safest harbor of all, and capable of all sorts of ships which the Seas containe. And being furnished with all things necessary both for a long voyage, & for war, if necessity of fight gaue occasion, they stayd at an anchor certaine dayes expectinge a fauorable winde. This fleet consisteth of 7. shippes, whereof 4. are of the burden of 180. tunnes, and 200. two Caruells also accompanied them. I vse the familiar wordes that I may be vnderstood, & the seuenth is a litle one, which the Spaniard calleth a Patac, they carry also another of the same sort in seuerall peeeces, that as soone as they come to the desired haue., they may ioyne her together, that is to say to the Iland of Tidore one of the Maluchas (where in compassing the worlde we sayde in our Decade to Adrian, that one of the two shippes that were left remained, with fiftie menne) and with those two drawing litle water, they might sound, and search the Ilandes, vnder, on this side, and beyonde the Equinoctiall lyne. This fleet stayeing, the King of Portugall cousin germane vnto Cæsar, and his sisters sonne, neuer ceased vehemently to vrge, and earnestly intreate, that Cæsar woulde not consente to indammage him so much. But Cæsar woulde neuer yeeld to the request of his cousin germane the King, least hee shoulde make the Castellanes (being the strength of his Empire, & all his kingdomes) to bee displeas'd with him. And therefore at length contrarie to the opinion, and desire of the Portugalles, at the first dawning of the day, before the feast of S. Iames the patron of the Spaniardes, the prosperous Easterne windes blowing from the lande, the fleet settle sayle. At the weighing of their anchors they sounded the trumpettes, and drummes, and discharged the great ordinance, as if heauen

20. Thousand  
pennas of gold  
sent from Cortes  
to Cæsar.

The golden  
cullerings  
mentioned  
at last.

A Tyger of a  
wonderfull beauty  
brought into  
Spain.  
Cortes did not  
bringe ones to  
light.

A fleet of 7.  
ships & 2.  
Caruells prepared  
to go to  
Malucoas.

The King of  
Portugall in  
vain intreats  
to go to  
the fleet.

The fleet set  
saile.

hadde seemed to haue false, & the mountaynes trembled: for ioy: yet the euening before, the Commander of the fleete Fryer Gasias Louisa the crosse-bearer of S. Iohn, foure yeeres since sent Ambassador from Cæsar to the great Emperor of the Turks, did homage in the hands of Count Fernandus De Andrada a Prince of Galicia. (who sometimes ouerthrew Aubregius Captayne of the French in Calabria) and in the hands of the Vicerey himselfe of the kingdom of Galicia, the rest of the Captaynes did homage to the chiefe Commander, and the soldiers, and officers to the Captaynes: homage being doome: on both sides with solempne pompe, hee first receiued the Kings sacred ensigne with great applause: so these stayed; and they departed, the prosperous East winds blowing in the pup, or sterne. They promise from the fortunat handes, called the Canaries, where their way lieth to the South, to write backe to our Senatè whereon they depende, for Cæsar so commaunded. The Admirall of the fleet, the Admirall himselfe commaundeth: the Vice-Admirall, Iohannes Sebastianus de Cano, who brought the ship called the Victory laden with Cloues, and left her companion that remained, behinde, because she was very much braised, and shaken; Petrus Vera goeth Captaine of the third ship, of the 4. Don Rodericus de Alciana nobly descended, both these, haue bin Admiralls of many warlike fleetes, and famous for their worthy attempts; both nobly borne, of the last Don Georgius Mauricus, brother of the Duke of Najara, who being younger, and of lesse experience, although more nobly borne; yet with a contented minde inured any inferior place, for he thought it good reason to yeelde to them that hadde better experience. A certayne Cardubensian noblemanne surnamed, Hozes commaundeth the sixth shipp, and another noble gentlemanne commaundeth the last small Patac. One other thing of no small moment remaineth (worth the hearing) before we leaue this fleet: Wee are therefore to declare what cause moued Cæsar, and his Senate, that this stomacall negotiatiõ or marchandise should be exercised in the Glanin hauen of Galicia, to the great discontentment and grieue of that famous Gistie of Suill, where all the affaires of India haue hitherto bene doone. That hauen of Gistie (besides the security of the shippes which are to be harbored there) is situate on that side of Spaine, which by a storic and direct course lieth toward the greater Britaine; and is next to the boundes of France, and is more fitte for the Northerne marchants that seeke Spices: Nor are two fearful dangers to Sea-faring meane, to be omitted heere, which by this inuention are aboyded. That Ocean sea, which lieth in the middle betweene this haue, and the mouth of Betis, through which they goe to Suill, is so tempestuous, that small stormes or gustes of the Western wind, either swallowe, or tossing the shippes taken in, that coast of the Promontory of Cape Saer, or neere vnto it, dash them agaynst the fretted, and craggie cliffes: more cruelly, then is reported of the rocks of deuouring Sylla, and the gulfe of Charibidi: The other danger is, in the sailles, and assaults of Pyrates: on those coastes betweene the rough Mountaynes lye manie detert valleyes, which suffer no resort of people by reason of their barrennesse, here are the lurking places of Pyrates, who receiuing notice by their owne men from the high watch towers on the top of the Mountaynes, assaile the shippes as they passe by: and for these causes it was decreed, that that negotiatiõ or traffick should be exercised there. This fleet is to goe the same way that Fernandus Magallianus the Portugall did, passing along all that coast, which the Philosophers called Torrida Zona: who went to the Antarticke beyond the lynce of Capricorne, which way another fleet is to go vnter the conduct of Sebastian Cabot an Italian, of both which, I haue spoken in the compassing of the world to Pope Adrian, and in the precedent Decade to the Duke. Two other fleetes also are prepared in the channell of the riuer Betis to goe to Hispaniola, and the rest of the handes, of S. Iohn, to Coba; called Bernandina, & my Priory of Iamaica by a new name called the Island of S. James, & from thence they shalbe diuided to the supposed Continent, & now Spaine conquered by Fernando Cortes, of the Iargens, and riches whereof, we promised a litle before, that we would sometimes speake. So now the concourse of fleetes sloting vpon the waues of the Ocean, going and returning to the new worlds are no lesse, then the resorte of marchants from the borders of Italy to the Lngdunensian faiers, or from France, and Germany, to the Belgicke Antuerpians. I could wish (most holy faier,

from

Fryer Gasias Louisa the Commander of the fleet does homage.

Admirall Sebastianus de Cano Vice-Admirall.

Petrus Vera captaine of the third.

Don Rodericus of the fourth.

Don Georgius Mauricus captaine of the fifth.

Hoze a Cardubensian noblemanne captaine of the sixth.

Why the traffick of Spices is exercised in the Glanin haue and not in Suill.

A dangerous sea betweene the haue of Galicia and the mouth of Betis.

The lurking places of pyrates.

The course of the fleet.

Two other fleetes in the riuer Betis prepared for Hispaniola.

The frequet traffick to the Indies in this Age does tyne it notable.

from some secret thinke of your priuy chamber to behold, what-woy will then breake forth from your sacred breast into your countenance the first proclaimer of secrets, when your Holinesse shall reade such, and so-great things of new worlds hitherto vnknowne, spirituallly giuen vnto the Church of Christ his Spouse, as it were nuptiall Jewels, & that nature through the diuine goodness is not satisfied in giuing liberally: but if any other countreyes are yet vnknown, they prepare themselves to be subjected to your Holines, & Cæsars command. Now, let your Holines bee contented with this first tast of a feast, to whom I wish many happie yeeres. From the city of Toledo the Carpentane, and Cæsars Court, the 13. of the Calendes of Nouember in the yeere 1525.

## The tenth Chapter.

This our pregnant Ocean, honrely sendeth forth new broods, and this noble, & renowned messenger from your Holines, Baltasar Castillion, a man famous for all vertues, & graces; when he saw these 2. Decades to the Duke, & Pope bound vp together, earnestly intreated, that I would send them by him vnto your Holines, I said, I was well contented; but behold, he fell grievously sicke, so that he could not as he desired, follow his affaires; although many things dayly came to light, and therefore at that time he sent no messenger away, to whom hee could commit the great and weightie actions of your Holines, together with our books, least they might haue perished. Through this delay it cometh to passe, that we may adde a few things, by way of aduantage, or ouerplus. We haue had 3. ships from the countreyes of the new worlde, one called a Carauell from new Spaine subject to the Government of Fernandus Cortes oft named: what she brought, are miserable things to be spoken, and those not a few, but we must begin with 5 letters in those 2 ships, mentioned before, to the intent these things, & the rest may more plainly be vnderstood. There are 2. sorte, of letters, one common, the other particular: in the great common volume, subscribed with the hands of Cortes, and the magistrates, the Auditor, Treasurer, & Factor, there is a large discourse concerning the nature of the countreyes, of those things which are sent to Cæsars, of the scarcitie of shippes in those coasts (in excuse that they bring but small sums of gold, & Jewels) and of their great costs, & charges, in which narration Cortes saith he is poore, and greatly indebted: of the ships made by him on the South shore, wherewith he said he would attempt the neerer part to the Equinoctiall line scarce 12. degrees of the pole, because he vnderstood by the people of those shores, 5 the Hind's ingreding Spices, gold, & precious stones were bordering nere vnto the: 5 discourse is long, & the complaint grieuous, for 5 he heard 5 ships were burnt with all their furniture, & promissio, because he could not prosecute the attempt he had vndertaken by reason of the fury of the aduersaries, yet promiseth, 5 he will recouer, and recompense this losse, so the disturbers cease: of diuers, and many mines of gold, & siluer lately discovered, & concerning those things which want new remedies, & of 63. thousand Pensa of gold taken out of 5 Treasury, contrary to 5 assent of the magistrates, vnder the shew & colour of a lone, for the leauing of a new army, and of Captaines appointed to goe seuerall wayes, to subdue diuers countreyes, & of many things besides. But particular, and secret letters are sent only from the Auditor Albornozius 5 kings Secretary vader vnknown characters, called usually ciphers, assigned to Albornozius at his departure because at that time we were suspicious of 5 mind of Cortes. These were framed against 5 subtle, craft, greedy countenances, & almost apparant tyranny of Cortes, but whether truly, or (as it oft falleth out) to procure fauour, time will hereafter discover, for certaine grane men are chosen to be sent to inquire, of these things, now when these hidden things shall be manifest, they shall be signified to your Holinesse, but let them passe, & let vs returne to the discourse of Cortes. Vpon the disobedience of Christopherus Otilus of whom large mention is made before, Cortes was in such a rage, that he seemed not to desire life, if Otilus were not punished, for he often shewed apparant tokens of the perturbation of his minde, by the vehement swelling of 5 veins of his throat & nostrils through extreme anger, nor did hee abstaine from wordes signifying the same. Otilus was now distant from him 500. leagues and more vnto the East, from the salt lake of Temustitan, and he was to goe vnto him by wayes which

Values speer-  
from assist.

Three shippes  
suyppd where  
of one leau  
Cortes.

The purport of  
5 letters.

Secret letters  
from Albornoz-  
ius the Audi-  
tor.

He returned to  
Cortes highly in-  
censed with the  
disobedience of  
Christopher  
Otilus.

Oltus seated in  
the Bay Figuera.

Cortes inrich  
forces against  
Oltus.

Cortes contrary  
to his oath  
goeth against  
Oltus.  
The power &  
error of Cortes  
in his march.

Petrus Aluarus  
doe not to the  
South, reason.  
O shows the  
North to work  
Oltus.

Franciscus de  
las Casas sent  
by us to take  
Oltus.

Arrive of the  
golden Calice  
and other  
treasures sent  
therewith from  
Cortes and  
others.

The 3. ship.

which had no passage in many places. This Oltus had seated him selfe in the Bay called Figueras, long since found, vpon hope of discovering the straight so much desired, where three other Captaines also arriving consumed one another with mutuall conflicts, of whose vnhappy actions wee shall hereafter speake, but let vs not leaue Cortes. Cortes leueth forces, the kings magistrats seeing that assayle him first with mild and quiet speeches, exhorting & admonishing him, not to vndertake such a matter wherein many dangers offer themselves, seeing he was to fight with our owne men, & that he would not be the cause of so great a slaughter of Christians, nor put the principall points of the whole matter in so great a danger: for (they sayd) they sawe the present destruction of all that remained, if he left the country of Tenustitan (the head of the kingdomes) destitute of soldiers, being but lately subdued, and yet mourning & lamenting for the slaughter of their ancient kings, and destruction of their household gods, kindred, and friends. And if he himselfe, which is more, should depart, whose name they confessed was fearefull to all those nations beheld what followes, if any misfortune happen (which God forbid) would not all come to ruine? They saye, Caesar would prouide for the chastisement of Oltus, & that Oltus should suffer punishment for his Error. These, and many things besides, they alledged, but all in vaine: and after that, in Caesars name and their owne they manifestly denounce againe, that he forsake his purpose. The he promised with an oath that he would not goe vnto Oltus, but to subdue certaine rebellious kings & not farr off: yet he performeth not promise, but goeth a long journey to the East, where (incensed with fury against Oltus) in some places he light vpon huge lakes on the sea coast, marshes of the valleyes in another place, and rough mountaynes elsewhere, whether soeuer he went, he commandeth bridges to be built by the hands of the inhabitants, marshes to be made drie, and mountaynes ouerthrown: none durst refuse to execute his commande, for he destroyed all with fire, & sword, that went about to doe the contrary, so whatsoever impediments hee met with, were made passable, so great a terror was he to all the inhabitants; after the conquering of so great a king as Mutezcuma was, and the taking of that Empire, that they thought this man could ouerthrow heauen, if he had so determined. Hee caried with him store of munition, and horses, an vnknowne kind of fight to those nations: and the bordering neighbours (sometimes enemies) gaue him ayde, through whose dominions and kingdomes hee marched. On the other part, he sent Petrus Aluarus before, towards the South coast, and towards the North, one Godois, captaine by lande, from whom Cortes receiued letters, and we also, concerning great, and large new countries, and warlike people, and citties in some places standing vpon lakes, and mountainous, and champion countries in another: of which things, the father of Cortes who is with vs, hath deliuered the volume sent from him, to the Printers to be published in his country language, and it wandereth from stall to stall in the streetes. But by sea, with three great shippes and many noble men, hee sent another Captaine named Franciscus de las Casas, whom I mentioned a litle before, & of whom I shal speake more hereafter, although in a praeposterous order, the successe of thinges so requiring. To this sea Captaine hee gaue in charge, that if it were possible, he should take Oltus, as he had him whereof we spake in his place. These two shippes left the affaires of Tenustitan in this state, nowe being long since arriued with seuentie thousande Pensa of gold, and two Tygers, wherof one, through the shaking, and working of the ship, died at Siuill, the other we haue here made tame, and gentle, but a young whelp. The Culuering also much blown abroad through the mouths of men may here commonly be seen, which in truth hath not so much gold in it, as fame reported, yet it is worth the beholding. And all such as accompanied that most reuerent Legate of your Holines, haue scene the ornaments, & warlike instruments framed and fashioned with much gold, and precious stones, and Iewelles composed with wonderfull art, presents partly directed from Cortes, and partly from other Governours of those countries: all which they wil hereafter by word of mouth recount vnto your Holines. Concerning the relation of the 2. shippes I haue sufficiently spoken. Now let vs come to the Corauell, which onely of her 7. consorts escaped by flight out of the bayen of Medallinum, the Scale of New Spaine. But let vs declare why Cortes determined to call that place of harbour

harbour by this name. Medellinum is a famous towne in Casteele, where Cortes was borne, having therefore chosen it to be the Mart towne of all those countries, hereupon hee will haue that place called Medellinum by the name of the towne where he was borne, nor is it gainsayd. He also gaue the name to New Spaine, and desired to haue it confirmed by Caesar. In that haue there were 7. marchants ships, shortly ready to returne into Spaine, having vnladen their marchādises. In the mean tyme, there arose a sedition between the kings officers, who thought it better that those sums of gold and precious stones gathered together should be sent with those ships vnto Caesar (whose necessitie by reason of imminent wars was great) such an occasion of ships offering it selfe, as seldome happeneth. For two hundred thousand Pensa of gold; had bin long since promised vnto Caesar by Iohannes Ribera, Cortes his Secretary, so that ships might be so set fit to carry them. The rest of their fellow officers, & associates withstoode this opinion, -yrging, they were to expect Cortes their Governour, & woulde suffer no inuouation in his absence, so that in the ende they came to armes. By chauce Francisco de las Casas Cortes his sea Captaine, sodainly came vnloked for, who being proud that Ollitus was slaine, took part with the Cortesian against the Kings officers, & they say the Auditor Albornozus hauing his horse slaine, was himselfe wounded, and cast in prison. The Conquerors runne to the shore, apprehende the factors of the 7. ships, and taking all their sailes, flagges, and yards a shore, that they could not depart, they vnlade the ships. The maister of this Carauell arrived, much moued & vexed through so great an ouerthrow, hauing gotten some fit occasion retrieth to his ship: who also being bereft & spoyled of his sayles, & of rest of the furniture. of his ship, attempted an enterprize worthy commendation. He had cast certaine olde, and halfe torne sayles in a secret place, as past seruise, and vnprofitable, and of the tottered rags of them together with a fewe canes or eils of new cloth, he made a patched sayle of diuers peeces. Then weighing anchor (without saluting them who exercised this tyranny) hee spread his sayles, & by the helpe of the prosperous westerne windes, was brought hither with a more speedy course, then euer happened to any ship, coming from those furthest partes of the Ocean. The masters of this ship brought neither letters, nor message from any man liuing, yet the speeches of the mariners thereof were so composed and well ordered, that credite was given to their report. Concerning Cortes, these pilots say it is gathered by coniecture that he was slaine with all his company by the inhabitants, (through whose dominions hee determined obstinately to trauaile) after this manner. He left many captains behind, with commendement to follow when they were ready, who following his steps, founde the bridges broken, and all the wayes cut of behind; & a certain wandering rumor went, that the bones of men, and horses were seene among certaine marish weedes of the sea coast, ingendred in the moysened earth through the violent motion of tēpestes, & ouerflowings, & among the braks, & bushes therabouts. These things this Carauell which fled, reported concerning Cortes, & the kings intruged magistrates. Now concerning those 4. Captaines greedily gapiug after the searching of the desired straight with breathlesse spirit, these mariners say they heard this. But this matter is a little further to bee repeated. If your Holinesse remember (most blessed father) after the death of Pope Adrian, that reuerēt monne, Antonius Tamaromus the Lawyer, deliuered your Holinesse a booke in my name, which beginneth (Before that) who wrote vnto me that it pleased you wel: in that discourse, there is speech of a noble man, one Egidius Gonsalus Abulensis (commonly called Gilgonzalez de Auila) after what manner he founde a channell of fresh water so great, that he called it lake the sea of fresh waters, & of it banks thereof renowned for the frequent habitatiō of people. of the great abundance of raine: that comes pouring down, of the ceremonies, customes, and sacred rites of those nations, of the plenty of golde, and first of the beginning of peace, and quiet trafficke, then of warre, and grievous conflicts with the kings Nicoragua, and Diriangen, and of his returne to Hispaniola, from whence hauinge procured an army of men and horses we sayd, hee would goe to this Bay called Figueras, which seemeth to deuide the coasts of the supposed Continent, as the Adriatick Gulfe diuideth Italy frō Illyricum, & the rest of Gracia, into which Bay he thought

The houses of Medellinum vnto Cortes.

A sedition amongst the King's officers at Medellinum.

Albornozus wounded and cast in prison.

The maister of the Carauell escapeth with his patched sayles.

News of Cortes his expedition reported to the King.

One of these Discourses.

The Adriatick Gulfe.

Ticinus, Verbanus, Mincius, Benacus.

The Bay of Figueras why so called.

Agidius Gonzales discovered into the Bay.

Franciscus Fernandes his colony in the Kingdom of Nicotragua.

Agidius Gonzales fights with Franciscus Fernandes.

A parcel of gold taken by Gonzales from Fernandes.

Olitius goeth to Olitius & is taken.

A Colony erected by Olitius called the Triumph of the Holy Crosse.

Franciscus de las Casas cometh suddenly upon Olitius.

A Shippe of Olitius made.

Franciscus taken by Olitius.

some nauigable riuer fell, that druncke vp that huge vastity of waters, as  $\bar{y}$  riuer Ticinus sucketh in the lake Verbanus, & Mincius the lake Benacus of which thinges, & examples we haue there sufficiently spokē. But why  $\bar{y}$  Bay so much spoken of in the mouthes of men, should be so called, it is not to be omitted. They say, that the name of Figueras was giuen it by the first finders, because vpon that coast they found whole woodes of certaine trees very common with leaues much like vnto figg trees, although vnlike in body, these are solid but figg trees consist of a pithy kinde of wood, or substance, and seeing in the Spanish tongue they call the figg trees Figueras, they call them Figueras by a name somewhat corrupted: of the bodyes, and longer boughes whereof the inhabitants make turned vessells, fit for the ornament of cubbardes and the seruice of tables,  $\bar{y}$  is to say, dishes, basons, platters, cuppes, & pottingers & other of the same sort fit for  $\bar{y}$  vse of man, very fairly wrought. Agidius Gonzales or Gilgözales hauing trauielled by lād through the angle of the Bay to the lake discovered by him, and not findinge where the waters issued forth, in the kingdome of the king Nicotragua, left friend, by him, as hee saith, he founde a Captaine of Petrus Arias Governour of Golden Castele, called Franciscus Fernandez, to haue possessed that kingdome, & to haue erected a Colony there but what happened thereon, I wil cōclude in a short Epitome. Behold they first grewe to words, then came to conference, and lastly to handy strokes: Gilgonzalez obiecteth that violence was offered him, complayninge that his discouery was disturbed, and these mariners say they fought thrice, in which sedition eight men were slaine, many wounded and thirty horses perished. So impatient are the Spaniards of society, that whether soeuer they goe, they kill, & destroy one another. These mariners say  $\bar{y}$  Agidius Gonzales tooke two hūdred thousand Pensa of gold (though not very pure) from Franciscus Fernandez. And Petrus Arias  $\bar{y}$  Governour (frō whom we haue received a great packet of letters from the supposed Continent) greiuously cōplayninge of Agidius Gonzalus, writeth that he had taken an hundred and thirty thousand Pensa from his Captaine. These Pensa they had gathered amonge the bordering kinges, whether against their will, or willingly by way of barteringe or exchange of our cōuntry cōmodities, it is not our purpose now to dispute: this being but a smale matter, & a greater peece of worke remaineth yet behind. These things thus falling out by the way, through the vnquiet & restless disposition of  $\bar{y}$  Spaniards, Agidius Gonzalus cometh to Christopherus Olitius sēt by Cortes, who also had erected a Colony a little further on the same shoare, which he called by the name of the Triumph of the Holy Crosse, (whom Olitius tooke) & he called the place so because after diuers shippwracks, which himselfe reporteth in a long discourse, hauing escaped thether frō the fury of mighty, & boysterous windes, he landed there, on  $\bar{y}$  day which the church of Rome solemnisseth for the victory of Herodius the Romane Emperour against  $\bar{y}$  Persians. But your Holines shal heare a ridiculous game, or pastime in  $\bar{y}$  table of fortune:  $\bar{y}$  fourth Captaine Franciscus de las Casas sent from Cortes against Olitius, came suddely vpō him, Olitius goeth fourth vnto his associate & fellow officer (a little before) vnder the cōmand of Cortes: they fight at Sea, & through  $\bar{y}$  violence of  $\bar{y}$  great ordinance, Frācisus hauing shott one of  $\bar{y}$  ships of Olitius through, sunke her, together with the men, & after betooke him to the mayne Ocean, & Olitius went to the shoare, & landed. That Bay is subject to māy tempestuous stormes, by reason it is exposed to the furious blastes of  $\bar{y}$  North and is straightened, or inclosed for a long space betwene  $\bar{y}$  sides of high mountaines, therefore a few dayes after being violently carryed away through  $\bar{y}$  fury of the windes, & for the most part hauing lost his men, horses, & shippes, Franciscus was forcibly driuen into the dominio, & power of Olitius, being a most cruell enemy of Olitius, so Olitius tooke him. Behold two Captaines of greater worth, then he himselfe who tooke them. Olitius shutt vp his guests at home not well contented, but as a pray for his owne destruction. They both agree to kill their hoste, and seduce the seruants of Olitius least (attempeting the matter) they should runne to helpe  $\bar{y}$  traitor Olitius, who innocētly drew thē into suspitio of treason. Vpon a night sittinge downe of purpose with their noble host, in steed of a shot, or reckōing for the supper he gaue thē taking the knives which were there for seruice of  $\bar{y}$  table, they set vpō their vnpleasing host (for the seruants after their

their master had supped, were absent earnestly busied at their owne supper) and wounded Oñitus with many strokes, yet kill him not: so that Oñitus fled, & conueighed himselfe to certaine cottages of the inhabitants, which he knewe. Whereupon proclamation was made by the common cryers that hee should be slaine, whosoeuer should support, or defend the traytor Oñitus, or knowing where he lay hid, woulde not declare it, a reward is proposed to the party that should discouer and make it known: by this meanes hee is betrayed by his owne men, and a libell of treason beinge framed against him; by publike proclamation of the cryer, hee was slaine. This was the ende of Oñitus, vnto the which; if I be not deceiued, the rest of his fellow officers, shalbee brought yer it bee long. But your Holinesse shall heare another horrible and shamefull act, ridiculous in the playing table of fortune; Francisus de las Casas another Sea Captaine Oñitus beinge slaine, is sayd forcibly to haue brought his bold companyen Gonzalus, though not comparable in armes, vnto the city of Tenusitan, supposinge it would be an acceptable present vnto Cortes. Behold the madnes of these four Captaines in the Bay of Figueras, desirous to tast hister delicates, who through ambition, and auarice castrthrow themselves, and many kingdomes, which peaceably would haue obeyed Caesar. There are some who say they saw Egidius Gonzalus in the power of Francisus de las Casas, in the city of Tenusitan, others deny it: so that these muttering speeches concerning Gonzalus are vncertainly reported. After my booke of two Decades concluded, & sowed together, we twice receiued shipp from the Senators of Hispaniola, lower at one time, and seuen at another, but none from Noua Hispania save only this which escaped by flight: that great packet of letters sent from Petrus Arias Governour of Golden Casteele, we read in the Senate: the sense & substance of the principall points whereof are concerning his owne actiõs, wherein many things are spoken of the hard & difficult labours, & traualies of his fellow soldiers, & his owne, of the next future departure of the kinges Treasurer of those parts, with a summe of gold whereof he setteth downe no number, of a voyage begunn which beinge performed, both Seas shalbe traded by an easie passage, and wee may haue the lands vnder the Equinoctiall familiar, because y distance from y haueu called Nomen Dei, is 16. leagues only, or litle more, from the Colony of Panama, and that well harboured, six degrees only, and an halfe distaant from the Equinoctiall, where the difference of day, and night, is scarce discerned the whole yeere. Concerning the prerogatiues of these coasts I haue sufficiently spokẽ in my former Decades. In another cluse hee accuseth Egidius Gonzalus for violence offered to his Captaine Francisus Fernandez, and commendeth him for his modesty, & temperance, but others thinke otherwise. Wee shall sometimes hereafter heare the complaints of the other party, & then shall we iudge what is to be done: the manner of the discourse is long and the circumstances tedious, which I neither will, nor yet am able to comprehend, nor are they necessary for your Holinesse to know, yet Petrus Arias humbly intreateth one thinge, that now at length through Cæsars fauour hee may be licensed to returne to his wife, and children, because hee now perceiueth himselfe to be wasted, and consumed with old age and a thousande diseases besides: and so it is decreed, for he is called home and a certaine Noble man a knight of Corduba named Petrus Rios is placed in his roome, he is now with vs, and prepareth himselfe for his departure. In our former Decades, where we discoursed concerning the vnfortunate success of Francisus Garaius, of y cominge of Oñitus to Cuba; seð whence he prepared to passe ower to Figueras, of Egidius Gonzalus, & his preparation to the same place, and of the imaginations, and desires of Petrus Arias, so that matter wee haue also sayd; that no other thinge could be provided by our Senate, saue to giue absolute power to the Senate of Hispaniola, and to commaund that they beinge meete would endeuour, y their meetings might not procure any damage, or hurt, which wee greatly feared. And for that busines they haue speedily appointed an approoued man called Escalarius Morenus procurator or solicitor of the Exchequer amongst them, who hath receiued Cæsars letters and ours. He came to late for it was already done, the foule all things confused: & the relatiõ of this good man differeth litle from that which we haue declared: So by reason of their disagreeing mindes, many notable things worth y knowing are

Oñitus wounded and led.

Oñitus betrayed by his own men, taken and slaine.

Figueras reported to beinge Gonzalus reported to Tenusitan.

A great packet sent to Petrus Arias Governour of Golden Casteele.

Petrus Arias licensed to returne home.

Petrus Rios placed in his roome.

Escalarius Morenus procurator of the Exchequer of Hispaniola.

interrupted & cut of. Franciscus Fernádez being long conversant with this Morenus of the Exchequer saith in the bordering country of the great lake he lieth upon a Forrest full of fresh waters falling into the Baye, as we know Nilus falleth downe from the high mountaines of Æthiopia into Ægypt, that thereby Ægypt being watered, it might be poured out into our sea: if that be true, which as yet is uncertaine, it shall be in vaine to seeke that which Ægidius Gonzalus hath long considered in his mind, concerning a great navigable river which drincketh vnto those waters, compassed about with people. But concerning the misfortune, and vniuersall slaughter of Cortes, and his companions commonly disuulged, this Morenus of the Exchequer returning, reported hee heard nothing thereof in those countries, because those coasts are more then 500. leagues distant from the Province of Tenustitan, but sayeth, that while he lay at anchor in the haue of Fabana, the Mart towne of Cuba) Diacus Ordassus one of Cortes his Captaynes (a discret man) arryued there, who sayd, hee came thither to inquire whither they heard any thing of Cortes, of whose life they greatly doubted in Tenustitan the heade citie of the kingdome, and more then this, they know nothing. For cure of this so great a blemish, a manne nobly descended, one Ludouicus Pontius a Lawyer of Lyons, of this countrey of Carpentana, whereof this citie Toletum is the heade (where wee nowe remaine with Cæsar) beinge chiefe Iustice of the citie a long time, is chosen to bee sent, because he exercised his magistracy most vprightly, and wisely: hee is a modest manne, and of a noble disposition, through whose prouidence we hope it will come to passe, that that shippe of Cæsars soting for the happie and good fortune of Cæsar, shall be brought vnto the calme, and quiet haue. Hee bringeth this charge with him, to intreate Cortes with a thousand fayre inticing speeches (if hee finde him aliue) to drawe him to true obedience, from the which, hee neuer yet openly departed, for the name of Cæsar the king is alwayes reuerent in his mouth, and letters: but secretly, as hath bene largely spoken, wee suspect I knowe not what, both by coniectures, and the accusations of manie, hee alwayes desired with a proude and haughtie mynde to bee graced with new prerogatives, and dignities, and hath long since obtained the titles of Gouverneur, and Atlantado of those large countries, included vnder the name of Newe Spayne. Hee lately also desired the badge or cognisance of Saint Iacobus Spatensis which this Pontius bringeth with him, to bee giuen vnto him, who shortly is to departe, beinge already dismissed by Cæsar, and shall goe hence with a flecte of two and twenty shippes. But if he finde that Cortes is gone vnto his ancesters, hee is to do otherwise. None of the other will presume to aduance their plumes, so hee finde the state of the inhabitants to stand cleere from defection and rebell, all things will prosperously succeed, and be subjected to the happy feete of your Holinesse. In that great city of the lake, which now resumeth the face & resemblance of a city, repayed by the building of fifty thousand houses, there are seuen and thirty churches erected, wherein the inhabitants intermixed with the Spaniards most deuoutly apply themselves to the Christian religion, reiectinge the olde ceremonies, and sacrificing of mans blood, which they now abhor. And that fruitfull graine will infinitely increase through those 8. shippes, Franciscan Friars, instructing the inhabitants with apostolicall feruency, if the seditions of our men doe not withstand it. I haue sufficiently insisted in these things: now I come to Stephanus Gomez, who as I haue already sayd in the ende of that booke presented to your Holinesse beginninge (Before that) was sent with one Carauell to seeke another Straight betwene the Iud of Florida, and the Bachelas sufficiently known, and frequented. He neither findinge the Straight, nor Gatais which he promised, returned backe within ten monethes after his departure. I alwayes thought, and presupposed this good mans Imaginations were vayne, and frivolous. Yet wanted he no suffrages, & voyces in his fauour, & defence. Notwithstanding, hee found pleasant, & profitable countries, agreeable with our Parallels, and degrees of the Pole. Licentius Aighton also a Senator in Hispaniola by his freindes, & familiars trauielled & passed the same strange shores to the North of Hispaniola, Cuba, & the Iucanian Ilands neere the Bachelas, and the countreys of Chicora, and Duraba, whereof I speake at large before. Where, after the declaration of the rites, and customes of the nations, and the descriptions of notable hauens and great riuers, groues of Holme, Oake, and Oliues, and wild vines

A Secretary of fresh waters  
about the great lake.

The doubtfull report of Cortes his death.

Ludouicus Pontius sent by Cæsar to Tenustitan. His commission.

The order of S. Iacobus Spatensis sent to Cortes.

37. churches erected in Tenustitan.

Stephanus Gomez returned.

A description of Licentius Aightons voyage.

every where spreadinge in the woods, they say, they founde also other trees of our countrey and that surely not in a short Epitome, but consuming and spending great bundles of paper therein. But what need haue we of these things which are common with all the people of Europe? to the South, to the South, for the great & exceeding riches of the Æquinoctiall, that seeke riches must not goe vnto the cold, and frozen North. In this aduenture your Holinesse shall heare a pleasant conceited pisse of winde arisinge, able to procure laughter. This Stephanus Gomez having attained none of those things which hee thought he should haue found, least hee should returne empty, contrary to the lawes sett downe by vs, that no man should offer violence to any nation, fraught his shipp with people of both sexes; taken from certaine innocent halfe naked nations, who contented themselues with cottages in steede of houses. And when hee came into the haueu of Clunia, from whence he set sayle, a certaine man hearing of the arriuall of his shippe, and that hee hadd brought Esclaus that is to say slaues, seekinge no further, came postinge vnto vs, with panting and breathles spirit sayinge, that Stephanus Gomez bringeth his shippe laden with cloues and precious stones: and thought thereby to haue receiued some rich present, or reward. They who fauoured the matter, attentiuely to this mans foolish and idle report, wearied the whole Court with exceedinge great applause, cuttinge of the worde by Aphæresis, proclayming, that for Esclaus, hee hadd brought Clauos (for the Spanish tongue calleth slaues, Esclaus, and cloues Clauos) but after the Court vnderstoode that the tale was transformeil from Cloues to slaues, they brake forth into a great laughter, to the shame and blushing of the fauorers who shouted for ioy. If they hadd learned that the influence of the heauens could bee noe where infused into terrestriall matters prepared to receiue that aromaticall spirit, saue from the Æquinoctiall sunne, or next vnto it, they woulde haue knowne, that in the space of ten months (wherein hee performed his voyage) aromaticall Cloues could not bee founde. While I was busily employed in this corollary, or addition, beheld the accustomed artes and subtiltie of whirling fortune, which neuer gaue ounce of hony vnto any, but shee cast as much, or oftentimes more gall in his dish. The streetes of this famous city range with the sounde of Trumpettes, and Drummes for ioy of the espousalls, and reiterated affinity with the kinge of Portugall Caesars sisters sonne and his cousin germanne, by takinge his sister now marriageable and forsakinge the English womann yet young, and tender, which thinge the kingdomes of Casteele cheefly desired, at what time a sorrowfull and grievous message to bee indured presently issued: which filled the minde of Caesar, and all the Casteeilians with disdain, and contempt. In that treatise of the world composed, directed to Pope Adrian, I sayd, that the companion of the ship called the Victory, remained broken in the land of Tidore, one of the landes of the Maluchas ingenderinge spices, which shipp called the Trinitie, was left there with 57. men, whose proper names besides the head officers, I haue extracted out of the accountants bookes of these negotiations. The shipp being repaired, returned laden with cloues, & certaine precious stones: shee light on the Portugall flecte, and coming vpon them vnawares, they tooke her violently, and brought her being vanquished to Malacha, supposed to bee the golden Chersonesus, and the Portugall Commander named Georgius de Brito a sea faring man violently tooke whatsoever was in her. But it is a lamentable thinge to bee spoken, what happened to the mariners of this shippe: the fury of the Sea against them was so great, that being tosed to and froe with perpetuall stormes, they all perished almost with famine, and oerwachtinge. The shipp called the Trinitie being taken, that Portugallian Commander is said to haue gone to our landes of the Maluchas, and in one of them (whereof there are seuen) hee built a Castle, and whatsoever wares were left in the landes for negotiation, or trade of marchandise, hee violently tooke them all. The pilots, and kinges seruants who are safely returned, say that both robberies, and pillages exceede the valew of two hundred thousande Ducates, but Christopherus de Haro especially the generall director of this aromaticall negotiation, vnder the name of Factor, confirmeth the same. Our Senate yeeldeth great credit to this man. Hee gaue mee the names of all the 5. shippes that accompanied the Victory, and of all the mariners, and meane officers whatsoever. And in our Senate assembled he shewed

To the South,  
to the South.A pleasant col-  
lope.Whirling for-  
tune.The returne of  
the Victory, & of  
her mischance.Christopherus  
de Haro.

why he assigned that value of the booty, or pray, because he particularly declared, how much spices y<sup>e</sup> Trinitie brought, how much spice was left in the hands of Zabazulla King of the land of Machiana, one of our 7. lands ingendring spices, and of another next bordering kinge of the lande of Tidore, and his sonne, and of the stewards of both the kinges, and their domestick noble menne by name, all whiche was bought for a price, assigned to Iohannes de Campo remaining there with y<sup>e</sup> rest. And concerning the wares, or marchandise, how much steele, & copper plate, how much hempen, and flaxen cloath, how much pitch, quick-silver, Peter lightes, tapers of Turkie, Arsenicke Orpini for pictures, corals, and reddish sannes, or hats, caps, looking glasses, glassy and cleere stones, bells, poynts, seats fit for kings, and what engins with their munition was therein, for the exchange of which things by the kinges chiefe officers remaining there, to wit, the Auditor, and Treasurer, spices might be gathered, to be brought backe by our shippes which were to bee sent. It may be doubted what Cæsar will doe in such a case, I thinke he will dissemble the matter for a while, by reason of the renowned affinity, yet though they were twinnes of one birth, it were harde to suffer this inurious losse to passe vnpunished, I suppose the matter will first peaceably bee treated by Embassadors. But I heare another thing which will be distastfull to the king of Portugall, Cæsar cannot although he desired to dissemble the matter, for the owners of those marchandises will earnestly require iustice to be done, which were dishonest to deny vnto the enemy, how much more to his owne tributaries. The auncient Portugalles prophesie the insuing destruction of his kingdome, through these rash and vnadvised attempts: for they too proudly despise the people of Casteele, without whose reuenues and commodities they should perish, through famine, seeing that is but a mean, and poore kingdome, sometimes a County of Casteele. The Castecelians through rage and fury, fret, and foame, and desire that Cæsar woulde endeavour to reduce that kingdome to the crowne of Casteele: king: Philip, Cæsars father sometime thought, & saide, that he woulde doe it, and time will publish the sentence. In the meane space, I bidde your Holinesse farewell, prostrate beefore whose sight I present my kisses to your feete.

The fatall prophesie of the Portugales.

FINIS:

Soli Deo, Trino, & Vni, Laus & gloria.

# VIRGINIA

Richly Valued,

BY THE DESCRIPTION OF THE MAINE LAND OF

## FLORIDA,

HER NEXT NEIGHBOUR:

OUT OF THE FOUR YEERES CONTINUALL TRAUELL AND DISCOVERIE, FOR ABOVE  
ONE THOUSAND MILES EAST AND WEST.

OF

DON FERDINANDO DE SOTO,  
AND SIXE HUNDRED ABLE MEN IN HIS COMPANIE.

WHEREIN ARE TRULY OBSERVED

THE RICHES AND FERTILITIE OF THOSE PARTS,  
ABOUNDING WITH THINGS NECESSARIE, PLEASANT AND PROFITABLE  
FOR THE LIFE OF MAN: WITH THE NATURES AND DISPOSITIONS  
OF THE INHABITANTS:

WRITTEN BY A PORTUGALL GENTLEMAN OF ELIAS, EMPLOYED IN ALL THE ACTION,

AND TRANSLATED OUT OF THE PORTUGESE

BY RICHARD HAKLVYT.

At London:

PRINTED BY FELIX KYNIGSTON FOR MATTHEW LOWNES, AND ARE TO BE SOLD AT THE  
SIGNE OF THE BISHOPS HEAD IN PAULS CHURCHYARD.

1609.



TO THE  
RIGHT HONOURABLE,  
THE  
RIGHT WORSHIPFULL COUNSELLORS,

AND OTHERS THE CHEERFULL ADVENTURORS FOR THE ADVANCEMENT OF THAT  
CHRISTIAN AND NOBLE PLANTATION IN VIRGINIA.

---

This worke, right Honourable, right Worshipfull; and the rest, though small in shew, yet great in substance, doth yeeld much light to our enterprize now on foot: whether you desire to know the present and future commodities of our countrie; or the qualities and conditions of the Inhabitants, or what course is best to be taken with them.

Touching the commodities, besides the generall report of Cabeça de Vaca to Charles the Emperour (who first trauelled through a great part of the Inland of Florida, next adioyning vpon our Virginia) That Florida was the richest countrie of the world; and, that after hee had found clothes made of cotton wooll, he saw gold and silver, and stones of great value: Chap. 11. I referre you first to the rich mines of gold reported to be in the province of Yupaha, and described in the twelfth Chapter of this Treatise to come within our limits: And againe, to the copper hatchets found in Cuttichiqui, standing vpon the River of Santa Helena, which were said to haue a mixture of gold. It seemeth also that the last Chronicler of the West Indies, Antonio de Herrera, speaking of the foresaid River of Santa Helena, which standeth in 32. degrees and an halfe, alludeth to the province of Yupaha, in these words: Y el oro, y plata que hallaron, no era de aquella tierra, sino de 60. leguas, adentro al norte, de los pueblos dichos Otapales y Obagatanos, adonde se intiendo, que ay minas de oro, plata, y cobre. That is to say, That the gold and silver which they found, was not of that countrie (of Santa Helena) but 60. leagues distant toward the North, of the townes called Otapales and Obagatanos, where we vnderstand that there are mines of gold, silver, and copper. By which reckoning these rich mines are in the latitude of 35. degrees and an halfe. I desire you likewise to take knowledge of the famous golden province of Chisca, stretching further to the North, whereof the Cacique of Coste gaue notice to Ferdinando de Soto in the towne of Chiaba, affirming, that there were mines of copper, and of another metall of the same colour, saue that it was finer, and of a farre more perfect lustre, and farre better in sight, and that they vsed it not so much, because it was softer. And the selfesame thing was before told the Governour in Cuttichiqui: who sent two Christians from Chiaba with certaine Indians which knew the countrie of Chisca, and the language thereof, to view it, and to make report of that which they should finde. We likewise reade not long after, that the Governour set forward to seeke a province called Pacaha, which hee was informed to be neere vnto Chisca, where the Indians told him, that there was gold. And in another place hee saith; Chap. 15.  
Chap. 23.  
That

Chap. 24.

That from Pacaha hee sent thirtie horsemen and fiftie footmen to the province of Caluca, to see if from thence he might trauell to Chisca, where the Indians said, there was a worke of gold and copper. So that here is foure times mention, and that in sundrie places, of the rich and famous goldē mines of Chisca, and that they lie beyond the mountains toward the North, ouer which they were not able to trauell for the roughnes thereof. But what neede I to stand vpon forren testimonies, since Master Thomas Heriot, a man of much iudgement in these cases, signified vnto you all, at your late solemne meeting at the house of the right honourable the Earle of Exeter, how to the Southwest of our old fort in Virginia, the Indians often informed him, that there was a great melting of red metall, reporting the manner in working of the same. Besides, our owne Indians haue lately revealed either this or another rich mine of copper or gold in a towne called Ritanoc, neere certaine mountains lying West of Roanoc.

Chap. 24.

Another very gainfull commoditie is, the huge quantitie of excellent perles, and little babies and birds made of them; that were found in Cutisachiqui. The abundance whereof is reported to be such, that if they would haue searched diuers graues in townes thereabout, they might haue laded many of their horses. Neither are the Turke stones and cotton wooll found at Guasco to be forgotten, nor passed ouer in silence.

But that, which I make no small account of, is, the multitude of Oxen, which, from the beginning of the 16. to the end of the 26. Chapter, are nine severall times made mention of, and that along from Chiaha, Coste, Pacaha, Coligoa, and Tutla, still toward the North, to wit, toward vs, there was such store of them, that they could keepe no corne for them: and that the Indians liued vpon their flesh. The haire of these Oxen is likewise said to be like a soft wooll, betweene the course, and fine wooll of sheepe: and that they vse them for courletts, because they are very soft and woolled like sheep: and not so onely, but they make bootes, shoes, targets, and other things necessarie of the same. Besides the former benefits, their young ones may be framed to the yoke, for carting and tillage of our ground. And I am in good hope, that ere it be long we shall haue notice of their being neerer vs, by that which I reade in the Italian relation of Cabeça de Vaca, the first finder of them; which writeth, That they spread themselves within the countrie about foure hundred leagues. Moreover, Vasques de Coronado, and long after him, Antonio de Espejo (whose voizges are at large in my third volume) travelled many leagues among these herds of Oxen, and found them from 33. degrees ranging very farre to the North and North-east.

A fourth chiefe commoditie we may account to be the great number of Malberrie trees, apt to feede Silke-wormes to make silke: whereof there was such plentie in many places, that, though they found some hempe in the countrie, the Spaniards made ropes of the barks of them for their brigandines, when they were to put to sea for Nona Hispania.

A fifth is the excellent and perfect colours, as black, white, Greene, yellow, and red, and the materials to dye withall, so often spoken of in this discourse: among which I haue some hope to bring you to the knowledge of the rich graine of Cochemilio, so much esteemed, and of so great price. I speake nothing of the severall sorts of passing good grapes for Wine and Raisons.

Chap. 31. & 31.

Neither is it the least benefit, that they found selt made by the Indians at Cayza, and in two places of the province of Agnacy: the manner also how the inhabitants make it, is very well worth the obseruation.

Chap. 31. & 31.

One of the chiefeest of all the rest may be the notice of the South Sea, leading vs to Iapan and China, which I finde here twice to be spoken of. Whereof long since I haue written a discourse, which I thinke not fit to be made ouer again.

For closing vp this point, The distances of places, the qualities of the soiles, the situations of the regions, the diuersities and goodnesse of the fruits, the severall sorts of beasts, the varietie of fowles, the difference betweene the inhabitants of the mountains and the plaines, and the riches of the Inland in comparison of the Sea coast, are iudicially set downe in the conclusion of this booke, whereunto for mine owne ease I referre you.

To come to the second generall head, which in the beginning I proposed, concerning the  
manners

manners and dispositions of the Inhabitants: among other things, I finde them here noted to be very eloquent and well spoken, as the short Orations, interpreted by Iohn Ortiz, which liued twelue yeeres among them, make sufficient prooffe. And the author, which was a gentleman of Eluas in Portugall, employed in all the action, whose name is not set downe, speaking of the Cacique of Tulia, saith, that aswell this Cacique, as the others, and all those which came to the Gouverneur on their behalfe, deliuered their message or speech in so good order, that no Oratour could vtter the same more eloquently. But for all their faire and cunning speeches, they are not ouermuch to be trusted: for they be the greatest traitors of the world, as their manifold most craftie contriued and bloody treasons, here set downe at large, doe euidently proue. They be also as vaconstant as the wethercock, and most readie to take all occasions of aduantages to doe mischiefe. They are great liars and dissemblers; for which faults often times they had their deserved paiments. And many times they gaue good testimonie of their great valour and resolution. To handle them gently, while gentle courses may be found to serue, it will be without comparison the best: but if gentle polishing will not serue, then we shall not want hammerours and rough masons enow, I meane our old soldiours trained vp in the Netherlands, to square and prepare them to our Preachers hands. To conclude, I trust by your Honours and Worships wise instructions to the noble Governour, the worthy experimented Lieutenant and Admirall, and other chiefe managers of the businesse, all things shall be so prudently carried, that the painfull Preachers shall be reuerenced and cherished, the valiant and forward soldiour respected, the diligent rewarded, the coward emboldened, the weake and sick relieved, the mutinous suppressed, the reputation of the Christians among the Salvages preserved, our most holy faith exalted, all Paganisme and Idolatrie by little and little vtterly extinguished. And here reposing and resting my selfe vpon this sweete hope, I cease, beseeching the Almighty to blesse this good work in your hands to the honour and glorie of his most holy name, to the enlargement of the dominions of his sacred Maiestie, and to the generall good of all the worthie Adventurers and vndertakers. From my lodging in the Colledge of Westminster this 15. of April, 1609.

By one publicly and anciently deuoted to Gods seruice,  
and all yours in this so good action,

RICHARD HAKLUYT.



A  
RELATION OF SVCH THINGS

AS  
DON FERDINANDO DE SOTO,

THE  
ADELANTADO OF FLORIDA PASSED IN SEEKING TO CONQUER  
THE SAID COUNTRY :

WHEREIN IS DECLARED WHO HE WAS, AND WHAT SOME OF THEM WERE THAT WENT WITH HIM :  
AND SOME PARTICULARS AND DIVERSITIES OF THE COUNTRY, AND WHATSOEVER THEY  
SAW AND HAPPEND VNTO THEM IN THE SAME.

---

Chap. I.

Which declareth who Don Ferdinando de Soto was, and how he got the government  
of Florida.

Captaine Soto was the son of a Squire of Xerez of Badaioz. He went into the Spanish Indies, when Peter Arias of Auila was Governour of the West Indies : And there he was without any thing else of his owne, saue his sword and target : and for his good qualities and valour, Peter Arias made him Captaine of a troope of forsemen, and by his commandement hee went with Fernando Pizarro to the conquest of Peru : where (as many persons of credit reported, which were there present) as well as the taking of Atabalipa, Lord of Peru, as at the assault of the citie of Cusco, and in all other places where they found resistance, wheresoeuer hee was present, hee passed all other Captaines and principall persons. For which cause, besides his part of the treasure of Atabalipa, he had a good share : whereby in time he gathered an hundred and fourescore thousand Duckets together, with that which fell to his part : which he brought into Spaine : whereof the Emperour borrowed a certaine part, which he repaid againe with 60000 Rials of plate in the rent of the silkes of Granada, and all the rest was deliuered him in the Contractation house of Suiul. He tooke seruants, to wit, a Stewart, a Gentleman vs her, Pages, a Gentleman of the Horse, a Chamberlaine, Larkies, and al other officers that the house of a Noble ma requireth. From Suiul hee went to the Court, and in the Court, there accompanied him Iohn Danusco of Suiul, and Lewis Moscoso D'Aluarado, Nunno de Touar, and Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo. Except Iohn Danusco, all the rest came with him from Peru : and euery one of them brought fousteene or fiteene thousand Duckots : all of them went well and costly apparrelled. And although Soto of his owne nature was not liberall, yet because that was the first time that hee was to shew himselfe in the Court, he spent frankly, and went accompanied with those which I haue named, and with his seruants, and many other which resorted vnto him. Hee married with Donna Isabella de Boudilla, daughter of Peter Arias of Auila, Earle of Panno en Rostro. The Emperour made him the Governour of the Isle of Cuba, and Adelantado or President of Florida, with a title of Marques of certaine part of the lands, that he should conquer.

## Chap. II.

How Cabeça de Vaca came to the Court, and gave relation of the Countrey of Florida: And of the Companie that was assembled in Siuil to goe with Don Ferdinando de Soto.

When Don Ferdinando had obtained the government, there came a Gentleman from the Indies to the Court, named Cabeça de Vaca, which had been with the Gouverour Pamphilo de Naruacz which died in Florida, who reported that Naruacz was cast away at sea with all the companie y went with him. And how he with foure more escaped and arrived in Nueva Espanna: Also he brought a relation in writing of that which hee had scene in Florida: which said in some places: In such a place I haue scene this; and the rest which here I saw, I leaue to conferre of betweene his Maiestic and my selfe. Generally he reported the miserie of the Countrey, and the troubles which hee passed: and hee told some of his kin-folke, which were desirous to goe into the Indies, and vrged him very much to tell them whether he had scene any rich countrey in Florida, that he might not tell them, because hee and another, whose name was Orantes, (who remained in Nueva Espanna with purpose to returne into Florida: for which intent hee came into Spaine to beg the government thereof, of the Emperour) had sworne not to discouer some of those things which they had scene, because no man should present them in begging the same: And hee informed them, That it was the richest Countrey of the world. Don Ferdinando de Soto was very desirous to haue him with him, and made him a favourable offer: and after they were agreed, because Soto gaue him not a summe of money which he demanded to buy a ship, they brake off againe. Baltazar de Gallegos, and Christopher de Spindola, the kinsmen of Cabeça de Vaca, told him, that for that which hee had imparted to them, they were resolved to passe with Soto into Florida, and therefore they prayed him to aduise them what they were best to doe. Cabeça de Vaca told them, that the cause why he went not with Soto was, because hee hoped to beg another government; and that hee was loth to goe vnder the command of another: and that hee came to beg the conquest of Florida: but seeing Don Ferdinando de Soto had gotten it already, for his others sake hee might tell them nothing of that which they would know: but hee counselled them to sell their goods and goe with him, and that in so doing they should doe well. Assoone as he had opportunity: hee spake with the Emperour, and related vnto him whatsoever hee had passed and scene, and come to vnderstand. Of this relation made by word of mouth to the Emperour, the Marques of Astorga had notice, and forthwith determined to send with Don Ferdinando de Soto his brother Don Antonio Osorio: & with him two kinsmen of his prepared themselves, to wit, Francis Osorio, and Garcia Osorio: Don Antonio dispossessed himselfe of 60000 Rials of rent which hee held by the Church: and Francis Osorio of a town of Vassals, which he had in the Countrey de Campos. And they made their Rendezvous with the Adelantado in Siuil. The like did Nunñez de Tour, and Lewis de Moscoso, and Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo, each of whō had brought from Peru fouretee or fifteene thousand Duckets. Lewis de Moscoso carried with him two brethren: there went also Don Carlos, which had married the Governours Neece, and tooke her with him. From Badaioz there went Peter Calderan, and three kinsmen of the Adelantado, to wit, Arias Tinoco, Alfonso Romo, and Diego Tinoco. And as Lewis de Moscoso passed through \* Eluas, Andrew de Vasconcelos spake with him, and requested him to speake to Don Ferdinando de Soto concerning him, and deliuered him certaine warrants which he had received from the Marques of Villa real, wherein he gaue him the Captainship of Ceuta in Barbarie, that he might shew them vnto him. And the Adelantado saw them; and was informed who hee was, and wrote vnto him, that hee would fauour him in all things, and by al means, and would giue him a charge of men in Florida. And from Eluas went Andrew de Vasconcelos, and Fernan Pegado, Antonio Martinecz Segurado, Men Roiz Pereira, Iohn Cordero, Stephen Pegado, Benedict Fernandez, and Aluaro Fernandez. And out of Salamanca, and Iden, and Valencia, and Albuquerque, and from other partes of Spaine;

Florida is the richest Countrey of the world.

\* Eluas is a Citie in Portugal.

many

many people of Noble birth assembled at Siniil: insomuch that in Saint Lucar many men of good account which had sold their goods remained behind for want of shipping, whereas for other known and rich Countries, they are wont to want men: and this fell out by occasion of that which Cabeça de Vaca told the Emperour, and informed such persons as hee had conference withall touching the State of that Countrie. Soto made him great offers: and being agreed to goe with him (as I haue said before) because he would not giue him monie to pay for a ship, which he had brought, they brake off, & he went for Gouverour to the River of Plate. His kinsmen Christopher de Spindola, and Baltasar de Gallegos went with Soto. Baltasar de Gallegos sold houses and vineyards, and reat corne, and nicotie fokes of Oline trees in the Xarafe of Siniil: Hee had the office of Alcalde Mayor, and tooke his wife with him: And there went also many other persons of account with the President, and had the officers following by great friendship, because they were officers desired of many: to wit, Antonie de Biedma was Factor, Iohn Damasco was Auditor, and Iohn Gaytan nephew to the Cardinall of Ciguenza had the office of Treasurer.

Cabeça de Vaca  
was the Governour  
of the  
River of Plate.

### Chap. III.

How the Portugales went to Siniil, and from thence to S. Lucar: he appointed Captaines ouer the ships, and distributed the people which were to goe in them.

The Portugales departed from Elbas the 15. of Ianuarie, and came to Siniil the 19. of the same moneth, and went to the lodging of the Gouverour, and entred into a court, oder the which were certaine galleries where hee was, who came downe and receiued them at the staires, whereby they went vp into the galleries: when he was come vp, he commanded chaires to be giuen them to sit on. And Andrew de Vasconcelos told him who hee and the other Portugales were, and how they all were come to accompany him, and serue him in his voiage. He gaue him thanks, and made shew of great contentment for his coming and offer. And the table being already laid hee inuited them to dinner. And being at dinner he commanded his steward to seeke a lodging for them nere vnto his owne, where they might bee lodged: The Adelantado departed from Siniil to Saint Lucar with all the people which were to goe with him: And he commanded a muster to be made, at the which the Portugales shewed themselves armed in verie bright armour, and the Castellans very gallant with silke vpon silke, with many pinkings and cuts. The Gouverour, because these braueries in such an action did not like him, commanded that they should muster another day, and euery one should come forth with his armour: at the which the Portugales came as at the first armed with very good armour. The Gouverour placed them in order nere vnto the standard which the ensigae-bearer carried. The Castellans for the most part did wear very bad and rustie shirts of mail, and all of them had peeces and steele cappes, and very bad lances. And some of them sought to come among the Portugales: So those passed and were counted and enroled, which Soto liked, and accepted of, and did accompany him into Florida: which were in all sixe hundred men. Hee had already bought seven ships, and had all necessarie provision aboard them: He appointed Captaines, and deliuered to euery one his ship, and gaue them in a role what people euery one should carrie with them.

Sixe hundred  
men were with  
Soto into Florida.

### Chap. IV.

How the Adelantado with his people departed from Spaine, and came to the Canaries, and afterward to the Antilles.

IN the yeere of our Lord 1538. in the moneth of Aprill, the Adolantado deliuered his shippes to the Captaines which were to goe in them: and tooke for himselfe a new ship, and good suite, and gaue another to Andrew de Vasconcelos, in which the Portugales went: hee went ouer the barre of S. Lucar on Sunday being S. Lazarus day, in the morning,

morning, of the moneth and yeere aforesaid, with great joy, commanding his trumpets to be sounded, and many shots of the ordinaunce to be discharged: Hee sailed foure daies with a prosperous wind; and suddenly it calmed: the calmes continued eight daies with swelling seas, in such wise, that wee made no way. The 15. day after his departure from S. Lucar, hee came to Gomera, one of the Canaries, on Easter day in the morning. The Earle of that Island was appparelled all in white, cloke, ierkin, hose, shooes, and cappe; so that hee seemed a Lord of the Gypsies. He received the Governour with much joy: hee was well lodged, and all the rest had their lodgings gratis, and gat great store of victuals for their monie, as bread, wine and flesh: and they tooke what was needfull for their ships: and the Sunday following, eight daies after their arriuall, they departed from the Isle of Gómera. The Earle gave to Donna Isabella the Adelantados wife a bastard daughter that hee had to bee her waiting maid. They arrived at the Antilles, in the Isle of Cuba, at the port of the City of Sant Iago vpon Whitunday. Assoone as they came thither, a Gentleman of the Citie sent to the sea side a very faire roan horse and well furnished for the Governour, and a mule for Donna Isabella: and all the horsemen and footemen that were in the towne came to receiue him at the sea-side. The Governour was well lodged, visited, and serued of all the inhabitants of that Citie, and all his companie had their lodgings freely: those which desired to goe into the countrie, were diuided by foure and foure, and sixe and sixe in the farmes or granges, according to the abilitie of the owners of the farmes, and were furnished by them with all things necessary.

## Chap. V.

Of the inhabitants which are in the Citie of S. Iago, and in the other towne of the Island: and of the qualitie of the soile, and fruites that it yeeldeth.

The Citie of S. Iago hath fourescore houses which are great and well contrined. The most part haue their walles made of boards, & are covered with thatch; it hath some houses builded with lime & stone, and covered with tiles. It hath great Orchards and many trees in them, differing from those of Spaine: there be figgetrees which beare figges as big, as ones fist, yellow within, and of small taste; and other trees which beare a fruit, which they call Ananes, in making and bignes like to a small Pineapple: it is a fruit very sweete in taste: the shel being taken away, the kernel is like a peece of fresh cheese. In the granges abroad in the countrie there are other great pineapples, which grow on low trees, and are like the \* Aloetree: they are of a very good smell and exceeding good taste: Other trees doe beare a fruit, which they call Mameis of the bignes of Peaches. This the Islanders do hold for the best fruit of the country. There is another fruit which they call Guayabas like Filberds, as bigge as figges. There are other trees as high as a iaculine, hauing one onely stocke without any bough, and the leaues as long as a casting, dar: and the fruit is of the bignesse and fashion of a Cucumber, one bunch beareth 20. or 30. and as they ripen, the tree bendeth downward with them: they are called in this countrie Plantanos; and are of a good taste, & ripen after they be gathered, but those are the better which ripen vpon the tree it selfe: they beare fruit but once: and the tree being cut downe, there spring vp others out of the butt, which beare fruit the next yeere. There is another fruit; whereby many people are sustained, and chiefly the slaues, which are called Batatas. These grow now in the Isle of Terçera, belonging to the Kingdome of Portugal, and they grow within the earth, and are like a fruit called Iname, they haue almost y taste of a chestnut. The bread of this countrie is also made of rootes which are like the Batatas. And the stocke wherein those rootes doe grow is like an Elder tree: they make their ground in little hillocks, and in each of them they thrust 4. or 5. stakes; and they gather the rootes a yeere and an halfe after they set them. If any one, thinking it is a Batata or Potato roote, chance to eate of it neuer so little, hee is in great danger of death: which was seene by experience in a souldier, which assoone as hee had eaten a very little of one of those rootes, hee died quicklie: They pare these rootes and stampe them,

Great figges.

Ananes.

Great Pineapples.

\* From Ibaos.  
Mameis, or  
Chest fruit.

Guayabas.

Plantanos.

Batatas, or  
Potatoes.The Chestnut  
roote.

and squeeze them in a thing like a presse: the iuyce that commeth from them is of an euill smell. The bread is of little taste and lesse substance. Of the fruites of Spaine, there are Figges and Oranges, and they beare fruit all the yeece, because the soile is very ranke and fruitfull. In this countrie are many good horses, and there is greene grasse all the yeece. There be many wild oxen and hogges, whereby the people of the Island is well furnished with flesh: Without the townes abroad in the Countrie are many fruites. And it happeneth sometimes that a Christian goeth out of the way, and is lost 15. or 20. daies, because of the many paths in the thicke groues that crosse too and fro made by the oxen: and being thus lost, they sustaine themselves with fruites and palmittos: for there be many great groues of Palme trees through all the Island: they yeeld no other fruite, that is of any profit. The Isle of Cuba is 300. leagues long from the East to the West, and is in some places 80. in others 40. leagues from North to South. It hath 6. townes of Christians: to wit, S. Iago, Baracoa, Bayamo, Puerto de Principes, S. Espirito, and Hauana. Euery one hath betwene 30. and 40. households, except S. Iago and Hauana, which haue about 60. or 50. houses. They haue Churches in each of them, and a Chaplen which confesseth them; and with Masse. In S. Iago is a Monasterie of Franciscan Friars: it hath but few Friars, and is well provided of almes, because the countrie is rich: The Church of S. Iago hath honest reuener, and there is a Curat and Prebends, and many Priests, as the Church of that Citie, which is the chiefe of all the Island. There is in this countrie much gold, and few slaues to get it: For many haue made away themselves, because of the Christians euill usage of them in the mines. A steward of Vasques Porcallo, which was an inhabitant in that Island, understanding that his slaues would make away themselves, staied for them with a cudgill in his hand at the place where they were to meete, and told them, that they could neither doe nor thinke any thing, that hee did not know before; and that hee came thither to kill himselfe with them, to the end, that if hee had used them badly in this world, hee might use them worse in the world to come: And this was a meane, that they changed their purpose, and turned home againe to doe that which he commanded them.

Spaine of good  
soyle.

The length and  
breadth of Cuba.

A wittie steu-  
ard.

#### Chap. VI.

How the Governour sent Donna Isabella with the ships to Hauana, and he with some of his people went thither by land.

The Governour sent from S. Iago, his Nephew Don Carlos with the ships in company of Donna Isabella to tarrie for him at Hauana, which is an haven in the West part toward the head of the Island, 160. leagues from the Citie of Saint Iago. The Governour and those which staied with him, bought horses and proceeded on their iourne. The first towne they came vnto was Bayamo: they were lodged foure and foure, and sixe and sixe, as they went in company, and where they lodged, they tooke nothing for their diet, for nothing cost them ought saue the Maiz or corne for their horses, because the Governour went to visit them from towne to towne, and seased them in the tribute and seruice of the Indians. Bayamo is 25. leagues from the Citie of S. Iago. Neere vnto the towne passeth a great Riuer, which is called Tanto: it is greater then Guadiana, and in it be very great Crocodiles, which sometimes hurt the Indians, or the cattell, which passeth the Riuer. In all the countrie are neither Wolfe, Foxe, Beare, Lion, nor Tiger. There are wild dogges which goe from the houses into the woods and feed vpon swine. There be certaine Snakes as bigge as a mans thigh or bigger, they are very slow, they doe no kind of hurt. From Bayamo to Puerto dellos principes are 50. leagues. In all the Island from towne to towne, the way is made by stubbing vp the vnderwood; and if it bee left but one yeece vnder, the wood groweth so much, that the way cannot be scene, and the paths of the oxen are so many, that none can trauell without an Indian of the Countrie for a guide: for all the rest is very hie and thicke woods. From Puerto dellos principes the Governour went to the house of Vasques Porcallo by sea in a bote, (for it was neere the sea) to know there some newes of Donna Isabella, which at that instant (as afterward was knowne) was in great distresse, in so much that the ships

Bayamo.

Puerto dellos  
Principes.

ships lost one another: and two of them fell on the coast of Florida, and all of them endured great want of water and victuals. When the storme was over, they met together, without knowing where they were: in the end they descried the Cape of S. Anton, a countrie not inhabited of the Island of Cuba: there they watered; and at the end of 40. daies, which were passed since their departure from the City of S. Iago, they arrived at Hauana. The Governour was presently informed thereof, and went to Donna Isabella. And those which went by land, which were one hundred and fiftie horsemen, being divided into two parts, because they would not oppress the inhabitants, trauelled by S. Espirito, which is 60. leagues from Puerto dellos principes. The food which they carried with them was Cagabe bread, which is that whereof I made mention before: and it is of such a qualitie, that if it be wet, it breaketh presently, whereby it happened to some to eat flesh without bread for many daies. They carried dogges with them, and a man-of-the-Country, which did hunt; & by the way, or where they were to lodge that night, they killed as many hogges as they needed. In this iourne they were well provided of beefe and porke: And they were greatly troubled with Muskitos, especially in a lake, which is called the mere of Pia, which they had much adoe to passe from noone till night, the water might be some halfe league over, and to be swome about a crosse bow shot; the rest came to the waste, and they waded vp to the knees in the mire, and in the bottome were cockle shels, which cut their feete very sore; in such sort, that there was neither boote nor shooe sole that was holye at halfe way. Their clothes and saddels were passed in baskets of Palme trees. Passing this lake, stripped out of their clothes, there came many muskitos, vpon whose biting there arose a wheale that smarted very much: they strooke them with their hands, and with the blowe which they gaue they killed so many, that the blood did runne downe the armes and bodies of the men. That night they rested very little for them, and other nights also in the like places and times.

*Santo Espirito.* They came to Santo Espirito, which is a towne of thirtie houses; there passeth by it a little Riuer: it is very pleasant and fruitfull, hauing great store of Oranges and citrons, and fruities of the Countrey: One halfe of the companie were lodged here, and the rest passed forward 25. leagues to another towne called la Trinidad of 15. or 20. households. Here is an hospitall for the poore, and there is none other in all the Island. And they say, that this towne was the greatest in all the Countrey, and that before the Christians came into this land, as a ship passed along the coast, there came in it a very sicke man, which desired the Captaine to set him on shore: and the Captaine did so, and the ship went her way: The sicke man remained set on shore in that countrie, which vntill then had not been haunted by Christians; whereupon the Indians found him, carried him home, and looked vnto him till he was whole; and the Lord of that towne married him vnto a daughter of his, and had warre with all the inhabitants round about; and by the industrie and valour of the Christian, he subdued and brought vnder his command all the people of that Island. A great while after, the Governour Diego Velasques went to conquer it, and from thence discovered new Spaine: And this Christian which was with the Indians did pacifie them, and brought them to the obedience and subiection of the Governour: From this towne della Trinidad vnto Hauana are 80. leagues, without any habitation, which they trauelled. They came to Hauana in the end of March; where they found the Governour, and the rest of the people which came with him from Spaine. The Governour sent from Hauana Iohn Darnasco with a carauale & two brigantines with 50. men to discover the haue of Florida; and from thence he brought two Indians, which he tooke vpon the coast, wherewith (aswell because they might be necessarie for guides and for interpretours, as because they said by signes that there was much gold in Florida) the Governour and all the companie received much contentment; and longed for the houre of their departure, thinking in himselfe that this was the richest Countrie, that vnto that day had been discovered.

## Chap. VII.

How we departed from Hauana, and arriued in Florida, and of such things as happened vnto vs.

BEfore our departure, the Governour deprived Nunno de Tour of  $\frac{1}{2}$  office of Captaine Generall, & gaue it to Porcallo de Figueroa, an inhabitant of Cuba, which was a meane that the shippes were well furnished with victuals: for he gaue a great many loads of Casabe bread, and manie hogges. The Governour tooke away this office from Nonno de Tour, because hee had fallen in loue with the daughter of  $\frac{1}{2}$  Earle of Gomera, Donna Isabellas waighting maid, who, though his office were taken from him, (to returne againe to the Governours fauour) though she were with child by him, yet tooke her to his wife, and went with Soto into Florida. The Governour left Donna Isabells in Hauana: and with her remained the wife of Don Carlos, and the wiues of Baltasar de Gallegos, and of Nonno de Tour. And hee left for his Lieutenant a Gentleman of Hauana, called Iohn de Roias, for the government of the Island.

On Sunday the 18. of May, in the yeere of our Lord, 1539. the Adelantado or president departed from Hauana in Cuba with his flecte, which were nine vessels, siue great ships, two carackes, and two brigantines: They sailed seuen daies with a prosperous wind. The 25. day of May, the day de Pasca de Spirito Santo, (which we call Whitson Sunday,) they saw the land of Florida; and because of the shooldes, they came to an anchor a league from the shore. On Friday the 30. of May they landed in Florida, two leagues from a towne of an Indian Lord, called Veita. They set on land two hundred and thirteene horses, which they brought with them, to vnburden the shippes, that they might draw the leasse water. Hee landed all his men, and only the sea men remained in the shippes, which in eight daies, going vp with the tide euery day a little, brought them vp vnto the towne. Assoone as the people were come on shore, hee pitched his campe on the sea side, hard vpon the Bay which went vp vnto the towne. And presently the Captaine generall Vasques Porcallo with other 7. horsemen scaged the Countrie halfe a league round about, and found sixe Indians, which resisted him with their arrowes, which are the weapons which they vse to fight withall: The horsemen killed two of them, and the other foure escaped; because the countrie is cumbersome with woods and bogs, where the horses stacke fast, and fell with their riders, because they were weake with travelling vpon the sea. The same night following the Governour with an hundred men in the brigantines lighted vpon a towne, which he found without people, because, that assoone as the Christians had sight of land, they were descried, and saw along the coast many smokes, which the Indians had made to giue aduice the one to the other. The next day Luys de Moscoso, Master of the Campe set the men in order, the horsemen in three squadrons, the Vantagard, the Battallion, and the Rereward: and so they marched that day, and the day following, compasing great Creekes which came out of the Bay: They came to the towne of Veita, where the Governour was, on Sunday the first of Iune, being Trinitie Suunday. The towne was of seuen or eight houses. The Lordes house stode neere the shore vpon a very hie mount, made by hand for strength. At another end of the towne stood the Church, and on the top of it stood a fowle made of wood with gilded eies. Heere were found some pearles of small valew, spoiled with the fire, which the Indians do pierce and string them like beades, and wearre them about their neckes and hand wrists, and they esteeme them very much. The houses were made of timber, and couered with Palme leaues. The Governour lodged himselfe in the Lords houses, and with him Vasques Porcallo, and Luys de Moscoso: and in others that were in the midst of the towne, was the chiefe Alcaalde or Iustice, Baltasar de Gallegos lodged; and in the same houses was set in a place by it selfe, al the prouision that came in the ships: the other houses and the Church were broken down, and euery three or foure souldiers made a little cabin wherein they lodged. The Countrie round about was very fennie, and embombed with great and hie trees. The Governour commanded to fel the woods a crosse-

May 22. 1539.

This place was called Days de Spirito Santo, being on the West side of Florida, in 29. degrees.  $\frac{1}{2}$ .

The ships came up to the towne of Veita.

The towne of Veita.

Some pearles found.

bow shot round about the towne, that the horses might runne, and the Christians might have the advantage of the Indians, if by chance they should set vpon them by night. In the waies and places convenient; they had their Centinelles of footemen by two and two in euery stand, which did watch by turnes, and the horsemen did visit them, and were readie to assist them, if there were any alarme. The Governour made foure Capitaines of the horsemen, and two of the footemen. The Capitaines of the horsemen were, one of these Andrew de Vasconcelos, and another Pedro Caldera de Badaioz; and the other two were his kinemen, to wit, Arias Tincco, and Alfonso Romo, borne likewise in Badaioz. The Capitaines of the footemen, the one was Francisco Maldonado of Salamanca, and the other Iuan Rodriguez Lobillo. While wee were in this towne of Veia, the two Indians, which Iohn Danusco had taken on that coast, and the Governour carried along with him for guides and interprétours, through carelessness of two men, which had the charge of them, escaped away one night. For which the Governour and all the rest were very sorie, for they had already made some roades, and no Indians could bee taken, because the countie was full of marsh grounds, and in many places full of very hie and thicke woods.

Chap. VIII.

Of some inrodes that were made into the Countie: and how there was a Christian found, which had bin long time in the power of an Indian Lord.

From the towne of Veia, the Governour sent the Alcalde Mayor, Baltasar de Gallegos with 40. horsemen and 80. footemen into the Countie to see if they could take any Indians; and the Capitaine Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo another way with 50. footemen, the most of them were swordmen and targettours, and the rest were shot and crossebowmen. They passed through a countie full of bogges, where horses could not trauell. Halfe a league from the campe, they lighted vpon certaine cabins of Indians neere a Riuer: The people that were in them leaped into the Riuer; yet they tooke foure Indian women: And twentie Indians charged vs, and so distressed vs, that wee were forced to retire to our campe, being, as they are, exceeding readie with their weapons. It is a people so warlike and so nimble, that they care not await for any footemen. For if their enemies charge them, they rish away, and if they turne their backs, they are presently vpon them: And the thing that they most feare, is the shot of an arrow. They neuer stand still, but are alwaies running and trauersing from one place to another: by reason whereof neither crossebow nor arcubus can aime at them; and before one crossebowman can make one shot, an Indian will discharge three or foure arrows; and he seldometh misteth what hee shooteth at. An arrow, where it findeth no armour, pierceth as deeply as a crossebow. Their bowes are very long, and their arrows are made of certaine canes like reedes, very heauie, & so strong, that a sharpe cane passeth thorow a target: Some they arme in the point with a sharpe bone of a fish like a chisell, and in others they fasten certaine stones like points of Diamants. For the most part when they light vpon an armour, they breake in the place where they are bound together. Those of canedo split and pierce a coate of maille, and are more hurtfull then the other. Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo returned to the Campe with sixe men wounded, whereof one died; and brought the foure Indian women which Baltasar Gallegos had taken in the cabins or cottages. Two leagues from the towne, coming into the plaine field, he espied ten or eleuen Indians, among whom was a Christian, which was naked, and scorched with the Sunne, and had his armes razed after the manner of the Indians, and offered nothing at all from them. And as soon as the horsemen saw them they ran toward them. The Indians fled, and some of them hid themselves in a wood, and they overtooke two or three of them, which were wounded: and the Christian, seeing an horseman runne vpon him with his lance, began to crie out, Sirs, I am a Christian, slay me not, nor these Indians, for they haue saved my life. And straightway he called them, and put them out of feare, and they came forth of the wood into them. The horse men tooke both the Christian and the Indians vp behind them; and toward night came into the Campe with much ioy: which thing being knowne by the Governour, and them that remained in the Campe, they were receiued with the like.

Chap.

## Chap. IX.

How this Christian came to the Iapad of Florida, and who he was: and what conference he had with the Governour.

This Christians name was Iohn Ortiz, and he was borne in Simil, of worshopful parentage. He was 12 yeeres in the hands of the Indians. He came into this Countrie with Pamphilo de Narvaez; and returned in the ship to the Island of Cuba, where the wife of the Governour Pamphilo de Narvaez was: and by his commandement with 20. or 30. other in a brigantine returned backe againe to Florida: and coming to the port in the sight of the towne, on the shore they saw a cane sticking in the ground, and risen at the top, and a letter in it: and they beleued that the Governour had left it there to give advertisement of himselfe; when he resolved to goe vp into the land: and they demanded it of foure or fise Indians; which walked along the sea shore: and they bod them by signes to come on shore for it: which against the will of the rest Iohn Ortiz and another did. And assoone as they were on land, from the houses of the towne issued a great number of Indians, which compassed them about, and tooke them in a place where they could not flee: and the other which sought to defend himselfe, they presently killed vpon the place, and tooke Iohn Ortiz aliue, and carried him to Veita their Lord. And those of the brigandine sought not to land, but put themselves to sea, and returned to the Island of Cuba. Veita commanded to bind Iohn Ortiz hand and foote vpon foure stakes: also vpon a raft, and to make a fire vnder him, that there he might bee burned: But a daughter of his desired him that he would not put him to death, alleging, that one only Christian could do him neither hurt nor good, telling him, that it was more for his honour to keepe him as a captiue. And Veita granted her request, and commanded him to be cured of his wounds: and assoone as he was whole, he gave him the charge of, the keeping of the Temple: because that by night the woules did carry away the dead corpses out of the same: who commended himselfe to God and tooke vpon him the charge of his temple. One night the woules gate from him the corpse of a little child, the sonne of a principall Indian; and going after them he threw a dart at one of the woules and strooke him that carried away the corps, who feeling himselfe wounded left it, and fell downe dead nere the place: and hee not wotting what he had done, because it was night, went backe againe to the Temple the morning being come, and finding not the bodie of the child, he was very sad. Assoone as Veita knew thereof, he resolved to put him to death; and sent by the tract, which he said the woules went, and found the bodie of the child, and the wolve dead a litle beyond: wherat Veita was much contented with the Christian, and with the watch which hee kept in the Temple, and from thence forward esteemed him much. Three yeeres after hee fell into his hands, there came another Lord, called Mocoço, who dwelleth two daies iourney from the Port, and burned his towne. Veita fled to another towne that he had in another sea port. Thus Iohn Ortiz lost his office and fauour that he had with him. These people being worshippers of the diuells, are wont to offer vp vnto him the liues and blood of their Indians, or of any other people they can come by: and they report, that when he will haue them doe that sacrifice vnto him, he speaketh with them; and telleth them that he is athirst, and willet them to sacrifice vnto him. Iohn Ortiz had notice by the damsell that had deliuered him from fire, how her father was determined to sacrifice him 7 day following, who willed him to flee to Mocoço: for shee knew she would see him wel: for she heard say, that he had asked for him, and said hee would bee glad to see him: and because he knew not the way, she went with him halfe a league out of the towne by night, and set him in the way, & returned, because she would not be discouered. Iohn Ortiz traualled all that night, and by 7 morning came vnto a Riuer, which is in the territorie of Mocoço: and there he saw two Indians fishing; and because they were in war with the people of Veita, and their languages were different, and hee knew not the language of Mocoço, he was afraid, because he could not tell them who hee was, nor how hee came thither, nor was able to answer any thing for himselfe, that they would kill him, taking him for one of the

Indians of Veita, and before they espied him, he came to the place where they had laid their weapons: & assoone as they saw him, they fled toward the towne, and although he willed the to stay, because he meant to do the no hurt, yet they vnderstood him not, and ran away as fast as euer they could. And assoone as they came to the towne with great outcries, many Indians came forth against him, and began to compass him to shoote at him: Iohn Ortiz seeing himselfe in so great danger, shielded himselfe with certaine trees, and began to shriek out, and crye very loud, and to tell them that he was a Christian, and that he was fled from Veita, and was come to see and serue Mocoço his Lord. It pleased God that at that very instant there came thither an Indian that could speake the language and vnderstood him: and pacified the rest; who told them what hee said. Then ran from thence three or foure Indians to beare the newes to their Lord: who came forth a quarter of a league from the towne to receive him; and was very glad of him. He caused him presently to sweare according to the custome of the Christians, that hee would not run away from him to any other Lord: and promised him to entreate him very well; and that if at any time there came any Christians into that countrie, he would freely let him goe, and giue him leaue to goe to them: and likewise tooke his oth' to performe the same according to the Indian custome. About three yeeres after certaine Indians, which were fishing at sea two leagues from the towne, brought newes to Mocoço that they had seene ships: and hee called Iohn Ortiz, and gaue him leaue to go his way; who taking his leaue of him, with all the haste he could came to the sea, and finding no ships, he thought it to be some deceit, and that the Cacique had done the same to learne his mind. So he dwelt with Mocoço nine yeeres, with small hope of seeing any Christians. Assoone as our Governour arriued in Florida, it was knowne to Mocoço, & straightway he signified to Iohn Ortiz, that Christians were lodged in the towne of Veita: And he thought he had iested with him, as he had done before, and told him; that by this time he had forgotten the Christians, and thought of nothing else but to serue him. But he assured him that it was so, and gaue him licience to goe vnto them: saying vnto him, that if hee would not doe it, and if the Christians should goe their way, he should not blame him, for hee had fulfilled that which he had promised him. The joy of Iohn Ortiz was so great, that hee could not beleue that it was true: notwithstanding he gaue him thanks, and tooke his leaue of him: and Mocoço gaue him tenn or eleuen principall Indians to beare him companie; and as they went to the port where the Governour was, they met with Baltasar de Gállegos, as I haue declared before. Assoone as he was come to the campe, the Governour commanded to giue him a suite of apparrell, and very good armour, and a faire horse; and enquired of him, whether hee had notice of any countrie, where there was any gold or siluer: He answered, No, because he neuer went ten leagues compass from the place where he dwelt: But that 30. leagues from thence dwelt an Indian Lord, which was called Paroocessi, to whom Mocoço and Veita, with all the rest of that coast paid tribute, and that hee peraduenture might haue notice of some good countrie: and that his land was better then that of the sea coast, and more fruitfull and plentifull of maiz. Whereof the Governour received great contentment: and said that he desired no more then to finde victuals, that hee might goe into the maine land, for the land of Florida; was so barge, that in one place or other there could not chuse but be some rich Countrie. The Cacique Mocoço came to the Port to visit the Governour and made this speech following.

Right hie and mightie Lord, I being lesser in mine owne conceit for to obey you, then any of those which you haue vnder your command; and greater in desire to doe you greater seruises, doe appeare before your Lordship with so much confidence of recceiving fauour, as if in effect this my good will were manifested vnto you in workes: not for the small seruise I did vnto you touching the Christian which I had in my power, in giuing him freely his libertie, (For I was bound to doe it to preserve mine honour, and that which I had promised him:) but because it is the part of great men to vse great magnificences: And I am persuaded, that as in bodily perfections, and commanding of good people, you doe exceede all men

Mocoço his  
course within  
3. leagues of  
the sea.

Paroocessi 30.  
leagues from  
Porto de España  
Coast.

men in the world, so likewise you doe in the parts of the minde, in which you may boast of the bountie of nature. The fauour which I hope for of your Lordship is, that you would hold mee for yours, and beuinke your selfe to command me any thing, wherein I may doe you seruice.

The Gouverneur answered him, That although in freeing and sending him the Christian, he had preserued his honour and promise, yet he thanked him, and held it in such esteeme, as it had no comparison; and that hee would alwaies hold him as his brother, and would fauour him in all things to the utmost of his power. Then he commanded a shirt to be giuen him, and other things, where with the Cacique being verie well contented, tooke his leaue of him, and departed to his owne towne.

## Chap. X.

How the Gouverneur sent the ships to Cuba: and left an hundred men at the Haueu de Spirito Santo, and himself with the rest of his people went into the maine land.

From the Port de Spirito Santo where the Gouverneur lay, he sent the Alcalde Mayor Baltasar de Gallégo with 50. horsemen, and 30. or 40. footemen to the prouince of Paracossi, to view the disposition of the countrie, and enforme himselfe of the land farther inward, and to send him word of such things as he found. Likewise he sent his shippes backe to the land of Cuba, that they might returne within a certaine time with victuals. Vasques Porcallo de Figueroa, which went with the Gouverneur as Capitaine Generall, (whose principall intent was to send slates from Florida, to the land of Cuba, where he had his goods and mines;) having made some inrodes, and seeing no Indians were to be got, because of the great bogs and thicke woods y were in the Countrie, considering the disposition of the same, determined to returne to Cuba. And though there was some difference between him & the Governour, whereupon they neither dealt nor conversed together with good countenance, yet notwithstanding with louing words he asked him leaue and departed from him. Baltasar de Gallégo came to the Paracossi: There came to him 30. Indians from the Cacique, which <sup>Paracossi</sup> was absent from his towne, and one of them made this speech:

Paracossi, the Lord of this prouince, whose vassals we are, sendeth vs vnto your worship, to know what it is that you seeke in this his Countrie, and wherein he may doe you seruice.

Baltasar de Gallegos said vnto him, that hee thanked them very much for their offer, willing them to warne their Lord to come to his towne, and that there they would talke and confirme their peace and friendship, which he much desired. The Indians went their way, and returned the next day, and said, that their Lord was ill at ease, and therefore could not come, but that they came on his behalfe to see what he demanded. He asked them if they knew or had notice of any rich Countrie where there was gold or silver. They told them, they did: and that toward the West, there was a Prouince which was called Cale; and that others that inhabited other Countries had warre with the people of that Countrie, where the most part of the yeere was sommer, and that there was much gold: and that when those their enemies came to make warre with them of Cale, these inhabitants of Cale did weare hats of gold, in manner of beed peeces. Baltasar de Gallegos, seeing that the Cacique came not, thinking all that they said was fained, with intent that in the meane time they might set themselves in safetie, fearing, that if he did let them goe, they would returne no more, commanded the thirty Indians to be chained, and sent word to the Gouverneur, by eight horsemen, what had passed: whereof the Gouverneur with all that were with him, at the Port de Spirito Santo received great comfort, supposing, that that which the Indians reported, might be true. Hee left Capitaine Calderan at the Port, with thirtie horsemen, and seentie footemen, with provision for two yeeres, and himselfe with all the rest marched into the maine land, and came to the Paracossi, at whose towne Baltasar de Gallegos was: and from <sup>Paracossi</sup> thence with all his men tooke the way to Cale. He passed by a little towne called <sup>Acela</sup>

Acela.  
Tocast.  
Another towne.  
A Lake.  
A small River.

Acela, and came to another, called Tocaste: and from thence hee went before with 30. horsemen, and 50. footemen toward Cale. And passing by a towne, whence the people were fled, they saw Indians a little from thence in a lake; to whom the Interpretour spake. From thence the Governour sent two horsemen to his people that were behind, to make haste after him; because the way grew long, and their victuals short. Hee came to

Cale.

Cale, and found the towne without people. Hee took three Indians, which were spies, and carried there for his people that came after, which were sore vexed with hunger and caill waies, because the Countrey was very barren of Maiz, low, and full of water, bogs, and thicke woods; and the victuals, which they brought with them from the Port de Spirito Santo, were spent. Whersoever any towne was found, there were some bectes, and hee that came first gathered them, and sodden with water and salt, did eat them without any other thing; and such as could not get them, gathered the stalkes of Maiz and ate them, which because they were young, had no Maiz in them. When they came to the River which the Governour had passed, they found palmitos vpon low Palmtrees like those of Andalusia. There they met with the two horsemen which the Governour sent vnto them, and they brought newes that in Cale there was plentie of Maiz: at which newes they all reioyced. Assoone as they came to Cale, the Governour commanded them to gather all the Maiz that was ripe in the field, which was sufficient for three moneths. At the gathering of it the Indians killed three Christians, and one of them which were taken told the Governour that within seuen dayes iournie, there was a very great Prouince, and plentifull of Maiz, which was called Apalache. And presently hee departed from Cale with 50. horsemen, and 60. footemen. He left the master of the Campe Lays de Muscoso with all the rest of the people there, with charge that hee should not depart thence vntill he had word from him. And because hitherto none had gotten any slaves, the bread that euery one was to eate, he was faine himselfe to beate in a mortar made in a peece of timber with a pestle, and some of them did sift the flower through their shirts of maile. They baked their bread vpon certaine tileshares which they set ouer the fire, in such sort as heretofore I haue said they use to doe in Cuba. It is so troublesome to grind their Maiz, that there were many that would rather not eate it, then grind it: and did eate the Maiz parched and sodden.

#### Chap. XI.

How the Governour came to Caliquen, and carrying from thence the Cacique with him went to Napeteca, where the Indians sought to haue taken him from him, and in an assault many of them were slaine, and taken prisoners.

Ytara.  
Potano.  
Ytiamon.  
The town of  
small peace.

The 11. day of August 1539. the Governour departed from Cale: hee lodged in a little town called Ytara, and the next day in another called Potano, and the third day at Ytiamon, and came to another towne, which they named the towne of Buil peace; because an Indian came in peace, saying, That he was the Cacique, and that he with his people would serue the Governour, and that if he would set free 28. persons, men and women, which his men had taken the night before, he would command prouision to be brought him, and would giue him a guide to instruct him in his way: The Governour commanded them to be set at libertie, and to keepe him in safegard. The next day in the morning there came many Indians, and set themselves round about the towne neere to a wood. The Indian wished them to carrie him neere them; and that he would speeke vnto them, and assure them, and that they would doe whatsoever hee commanded them. And when he saw him-selfe neere vnto them he brake from them, and ran away so swiftly from the Christians, that there was none that could ouertake him, and all of them fled into the woods. The Governour commanded to loose a grayhound, which was alreadie fleshed on them, which

which passing by many other Indians, caught the counterfeit Cacique, which had escaped from the Christians, and held him till they came to take him. From thence the Governour lodged at a towne called Cholopaha: and because it had store of Maiz in it, they named it Villa Santa. Beyond the same there was a River, on which he made a bridge of timber, and travelled two daies through a desert. The 17. of August, he came to Caliquen, where he was informed of the Prouince of Apalache: They told him that Pamphilo de Naruaez had bin there, and that there hee tooke shipping, because hee could find no way to goe forward: That there was none other towne at all; but that on both sides was all water. The whole companie were very sad for these newes; and counselled the Governour to goe backe to the Port de Spirito Santo, and to abandon the Countrie of Florida, lest hee should perish as Naruaez had done: declaring, that if he went forward, he could not returne backe when he would; and that the Indians would gather vp that small quantitie of Maiz which was left. Whereunto the Governour answered, that he would not goe backe, till he had seene with his eyes that which they reported: saying, that he could not beleuee it, and that wee should be put out of doubt before it were long. And he sent to Luys de Moscoso to come presently froin Cale, and that he tarried for him here. Luys de Moscoso and many others thought, that from Apalache they should returne backe; and in Cale they buried their yron-tooles, and diuers other things. They came to Caliquen with great trouble; because the Countrie, which the Governour had passed by, was spoiled and destitute of Maiz. After all the people were come together, hee commanded a bridge to be made ouer a River, that passed nere the towne. Hee departed from Caliquen the 10. of September, and carried the Cacique with him. After hee had travelled three daies, there came Indians peaceably, to visit their Lord, and every day met vs on the way playing vpon flutes: which is a token that they vse, that men may know that they come in peace. They said, that in our way before there was a Cacique, whose name was Vzachil, a kinseman of the Cacique of Caliquen their Lord, waiting for him with many presents, and they desired the Governour that he would loose the Cacique. But he would not, fearing that they would rise, and would not give him any guides, & sent them away from day to day with good words. Hee travelled fve daies, he passed by some small townes, he came to a towne called Napetua, the 15. day of September. Thither came 14. or 15. Indians, and besought the Governour to let loose the Cacique of Caliquen their Lord. He answered them that he held him not in prison, but that hee would haue him to accompanie him to Vzachil. The Governour had notice by Iohn Ortiz, that an Indian told him how they determined to gather themselves together, and come vpon him, and give him battell, and take away the Cacique from him. The day that it was agreed vpon, the Governour commanded his men to be in a readines, and that the horsemen should bee readie armed and on horsebacke every one in his lodging, because the Indians might not see them, and so more confidently come to the towne. There came foure hundred Indians in sight of the campe with their bowes and arrowes, and placed themselves in a wood, and sent two Indians to bid the Governour to deliuer them the Cacique. The Governour with sixe footemen leading the Cacique by the hand, and talking with him, to secure the Indians, went toward the place where they were: And seeing a fit time, commanded to sound a trumpet: and presently those that were in the towne in the houses, both horse and foot, set vpon the Indians, which were so suddenly assaulted, that the greatest care they had was which way they should flee: They killed two horses; one was the Governours, and hee was presently horsed againe vpon another. There were 80. or 40. Indians slaine. The rest fled to two very great lakes, that were somewhat distant the one from the other: There they were swimming, and the Christians round about them. The calicquemen and crossebowmen shot at them from the banke: but the distance being great and shooting asfarr off, they did them no hurt. The Governour commanded that the same night they should compass one of the lakes, because they were so great, that there were not much enow to compass them both: being beset, as soone as night shut in, the Indians, with determination to runne away, came swimming very softly to the banke; and to hide themselves, they put a water lillie leaf on their heads. The

Cholopaha  
A River  
Caliquen

A River.

Some small  
townes.  
Napetua.

Two very great  
lakes.

horsemen

horsemen as soone as they perceived it to stirre, ran into the water to the horses breasts, and the Indians fled againe into the lake. So this night passed without any rest on both sides. John Ortiz perswaded them, that seeing they could not escape, they should yeeld themselves to the Gouverneur: which they did, enforced thereunto by the coldnes of the water; and one by one, hee first whom the cold did first overcome, cr<sup>ie</sup>d to John Ortiz desiring that they would not kill him, for he came to put himselfe into the hands of the Gouverneur. By the morning watch they made an end of yeelding themselves: only 12. principall men, being more honorable and valorous then the rest, resolved rather to die then to come into his hands. And the Indians of Paracosi, which were now loosed out of chaines, went swimming to them, and pulled them out by the haire of their heads, and they were all put in chaines; and the next day were diuided among the Christians for their service. Being thus in captiuitie, they determined to rebell; and gaue in charge to an Indian, which was interpretour, and held to be valiant, that as soone as the Gouverneur did come to speak with him, hee should cast his hands about his necke, and choke him: Who, wh<sup>e</sup>n he saw opportunitee, laid hands on the Gouverneur, and before he cast his hands about his necke, he gaue him such a blow on the nostrils, that hee made them gush out with blood, and presently all the rest did rise. He that could get any weapons at hand, or the handle wherewith he did grind the Maiz, sought to kill his master, or the first hee met before him: and hee that could get a lance or sword at hand, bestirred himselfe in such sort with it, as though he had vsed it all his life time. One Indian in the market place enclosed betwene 15. or 20. footemen, made a way like a bull with a sword in his hand, till certaine halbardiers of the Gouverneur came, which killed him. Another gat vp with a lance to a loft made of canes, which they build to keepe their Maiz in, which they call a Barbacoa, and there hee made such a noise, as though toone men had been there defending the doore: they slew him with a partisan. The Indians were in all about two hundred men. They were all subdued. And some of the youngest the Gouverneur gaue to them which had good chaines, and were carefull to looke to them that they gat not away. Al the rest he commanded to be put to death, being tied to a stake in the midst of the market place: and the Indians of the Paracosi did shoote them to death.

## Chap. XII.

How the Gouverneur came to Apalache, and was informed, that within the land, there was much gold.

The Gouverneur departed from Napetuca the 23. of September: he lodged by a River, where two Indians brought him a buck from the Cacique of Vzachil. The next day hee passed by a great towne called Hapaluya; and lodged at Vzachil, and found no people in it, because they durst not tarrise for the notice the Indians had of the slaughter of Napetuca. He found in that towne great store of Maiz, French beanes, and pomptions, which is their food, and that wherewith the Christians there sustained themselves. The Maiz is like coarse millet, and the pomptions are better and more suourie than those of Spaine. From thence the Gouverneur sent two Captaines each a sundry way to seeke the Indians. They tooke an hundred men and women: of which aswell there as in other places where they made any inroades, the Captaine chose one or two for the Gouverneur, and diuided the rest to himselfe, and those that went with him. They led these Indians in chaines with yron collars about their neckes: and they serued to carrie their stuffe, and to grind their Maiz, and for other seruices that such captiues could doe. Sometimes it happened that going for wood or Maiz with them, they killed the Christian that led them, and ran away with the chaines: others filed their chaines by night with a peece of stone, wherewith they cut them, and vsed it in stead of yron. Those that were perceived paid for themselves, and for the rest, because they should not dare to doe the like another time. The women and young boyes, when they were once an hundred leagues from their Countrie, and had forgotten things, they let goe loose, and so they serued; and in a very short space they understood

A new conquest.

Two hundred Indians taken.

A River.

Hapaluya a great towne. Vzachil. Apalache.

vnderstood the language of the Christians. From Vzachil the Governour departed toward  
 Apalache, and in two daies iourneie, hee came to a towne called Axille, and from thence  
 forward the Indians were carelesse, because they had as yet no notice of the Christians.  
 The next day in the morning, the first of October, he departed from thence, and com-  
 manded a bridge to be made over a Riuer which hee was to passe. The deepe of the  
 Riuer where the bridge was made, was a stones cast, and forward a crossebow shot the  
 water came to the waste; and the wood, whereby the Indians came to see if they could  
 defend the passage, and dismisse those which made the bridge, was very hie and thicke.  
 The crossebow men so bestired themselves that they made them giue back: and certain  
 planks were cast into the Riuer, whereon the men passed, which made good the passage.  
 The Governour passed vpon Wednesday, which was S. Francis his day, and lodged at a towne  
 which was called Vitachuco, subject to Apalache: he found it burning; for the Indians had set  
 it on fire. From thence forward the countrie was much inhabited, and had great store of  
 Maiz. Hee passed by many granges like hamlets. On Sunday the 25. of October, hee  
 came to a towne, which is called Vzels, and vpon Tuesday to Anaica Apalache, where the  
 Lord of all that Countrie and Prouince was resident: in which towne the Campmaster,  
 whose office it is to quarter out, and lodge men, did lodge all the companie round about  
 within a league, and halfe a league of it. There were other townes, where was great store  
 of Maiz, Pompiens, French Beanes, and Plummes of the Countrie, which are better then  
 those of Spaine, and they grow in the fields without planting: The victuals that were  
 thought necessary to passe the winter, were gathered from these townes to Anaica  
 Apalache. The Governour was informed, that the sea was ten leagues from thence. Hee  
 presently sent a Captaine thither with horsemen and footemen: And sixe leagues on the  
 way, he found a towne, which was named Ochete, and so came to the sea; and found a  
 great tree felled, and cut into peeces; with stakes set vp like-mangers, and saw the skulls  
 of horses. Hee returned with this newes: And that was held for certaine, which was  
 reported of Pamphilo de Narvaez, that there hee had builded the barkes wherewith he went  
 out of the land of Florida, and was cast away at Sea. Presently the Governour sent Iohn  
 Danusco with 30. horsemen to the port de Spiritu Santo, where Calderan was, with orders  
 that they should abandon the port, and all of them come to Apalache. Hee departed on  
 Saturday the 17. of Nouember. In Vzachil and other townes that stood in the way he  
 found great store of people already carelesse. Hee would take none of the Indians, for  
 nor hindring himselfe, because it bestowed him to giue them no leasure to gather them-  
 selues together. He passed through the townes by night, and rested without the townes three  
 or foure houres. In tenne daies he came to the Port de Spiritu Santo. He carried with him  
 20. Indian women, which heeooke in Ytara; and Potano, necre vnto Cale, and sent them  
 to Donna Isabella in the two camuels; which hee sent from the Port de Spiritu Santo to  
 Cuba: And hee carried all the footemen in the brigandines, and coasting along the shore,  
 came to Apalache. And Calderan with the horsemen, and some crosse-bowmen on foote  
 went by land; and in some places the Indians set vpon him, and wounded some of his men:  
 Assoone as he came to Apalache; presently the Governour sent sawed planks and spikes  
 to the sea-side, wherewith was made a piragna or barke, wherein were embarked 30. men  
 well armed; which went out of the Bay to the Sea, looking for the brigandines. Sometimes  
 they fought with the Indians, which passed along the harbour in their canoes. Vpon Saturday  
 the 29. of Nouember, there came an Indian through the Watch vndiscovered, and set the towne  
 on fire, and with the great wind that blew, two parts of it were consumed in a short time.  
 On Sunday the 28. of December came Iohn Danusco with the brigandines. The Governour  
 sent Francisco Maldonado a Captaine of footemen with 50. men to discover the coast West-  
 ward, and to seeke some Port, because he had determined to go by land, and discover  
 that part. That day there went out eight horsemen by commandement of the Governour into the  
 field, two leagues about the towne to seeke Indians: for they were now so emboldened,  
 that within two crossebow shot of y<sup>e</sup> camp, they came and slew men: They found two men  
 and a woman gathering French Beanes: the men, though they might haue fled, yet because  
 they

Axilla.

A Riuer.

Vitachuco.

October 25.

Vzels.  
Anaica Apalache.Apalache  
within 10  
leagues of the  
sea.  
Ochete.  
The sea.The Port de  
Spiritu Santo  
receiue being  
Ioules from  
Apalache.

Nouember 29.

December 28.

they would not leaue the woman, which was one of their wiues, they resolu'd to die fighting: and before they were slaine, they wounded three horses, whereof one died within a few daies after. Calderan going with his men by the Sea-coast, from a wood that was neere the place, the Indians set vpon him, and made him forsake his way, and many of them that went with him forsooke some necessarie victuals, which they carried with them. Three or foure daies after the limited time giuen by the Gouvernour to Maldonado for his going and coming, being already determined and resolu'd, if within eight daies he did not come to tarric no longer for him, he came, and brought an Indian from a Prouince, which was called Ochus, sixtie leagues Westward from Apalache; where he had found a good Port of good depth and defense against weather. And because the Gouvernour hoped to find a good countrie forward, he was very well contented. And he sent Maldonado for victuals to Hauana, with order, that he should tarric for him at the Port of Ochus, which hee had discovered, for hee would goe seeke it by land: and if he should chance to stay, and not come thither that summer, that then hee should returne to Hauana, and should come againe the next summer after, and tarric for him at that port: for hee said hee would doe none other thing but goe to seeke Ochus. Francisco Maldonado departed, and in his place for Capitaine of the footemen remained Iohn de Guzman. "Of those Indians which were taken in Napetuca, the treasurer Iohn Gaytan had a young man, which said, that he was not of that Countrie, but of another farre off toward the Sunrising, and that it was long since he had trauelled to see Countries; and that his Countrie was called Yupaha, and that a woman did governe it: and that the towne where she was resident was of a wonderfull bignesse, and that many Lords round about were tributaries to her: and some gaue her clothes, and others gold in abundance: and hee told, how it was taken out of the mines, and was moulten and refined, as if hee had seene it done, or the diuel had taught it him." So that all those which knew any thing concerning the same, said that it was impossible to giue so good a relation, without having seene it: And all of them, as if they had seene it, by the signes that he gaue, beleued all that he said to be true.

## Chap. XIII.

How the Gouvernour departed from Apalache to seeke Yupaha, and of that which happened vnto him,

ON Wednesday the third of March, of the yeere 1540, the Governour departed from Anica Apalache to seeke Yupaha. He commanded his men, to goe provided with Maiz for sixtie leagues of desert. The horsemen carried their Maiz on their horses, and the footemen at their sides: because the Indians that were for seruice, with their miserable life that they lead that winter, being naked and in chaines, died for the most part. Within foure daies iournie they came to a great Riuer: and they made a piragua or ferric bote, and because of the great current, they made a cable with chaines, which they fastened on both sides of the Riuer; and the ferric bote went along by it; and the horses swam ouer, being drawne with capstans. Having passed the Riuer, in a day and an halfe, they came to a towne called Capachiqui. Vpon Friday, the 11. of March, they found Indians in armes. The next day sixe Christians went to seeke morters, which the Indians haue to beate their Maiz, and they went to certaine houses on the backside of the Campe enuironed with a wood: And within the wood were many Indians which came to spie vs; of the which came other sixe and set vpon vs. One of the Christians came running away, giuing an alarme vnto the Campe, Those which were most readie answered the alarme. They found one Christian dead, and three sore wounded. The Indians fled vnto a lake adioyning neere a very thicke wood, where the horses could not enter. The Gouvernour departed from Capachiqui, and passed through a desert. On Wednesday the 21. of the moneth he came to a towne called Toalli: And from thence forward there was a difference in the houses. For those which were behind vs were thatched with straw, and those of Toalli were couered with reeds, in manner of tiles. These houses are verie cleanly. Some of them had walles daubed with clay, which shewed like a mudwall. In all the cold countrie the Indians haue every one a house for the winter

Ochus 60.  
leagues West of  
Apalache.

Chap. 11.

Abundance of  
Gold.

March the 3.  
1540.

A great Riuer.

Capachiqui.

Toalli.

daubed

daubed with clay within and without, and the doore is very litle: they shut it by night, and make fire within; so that they are in it as warme as in a stoue: and so it continueth all night that they need not clothes: and besides these, they haue others for summer; and their kitchenes neere them, where they make fire and bake their bread: and they haue barbacoas wherein they keepe their Maiz; which is an house set vp in the aire vpon foure stakes, boarded about like a chamber, and the floore of it is of cane hurdles. The difference which Lords or principall mens houses haue from the rest, besides they be greater, is, that they haue great galleries in their fronts, and vnder them seats made of canes in manner of benches: and round about them they haue many lofts, wherein they lay vp that which the Indians doe giue them for tribute, which is Maiz, Deeres skins, and mantles of the Countrie, which are like blankets: they make them of the inner rinde of the barkes of trees, and some of a kind of grasse like vnto nettles, which being beaten, is like vnto flaxe. The women couer themselves with these mantles; they put one about them from the wast downe; ward; and another oer their shoulder, with their right arme out, like vnto the Egyptians. The men weare but one mantle vpon their shoulders after the same manner: and haue their secrets hid with a Deeres skin, made like a linnen breech, which was wont to be used in Spaine. The skins are well corried; and they giue them what colour they list, so perfect, that if it be read, it seemeth a very fine cloth in graine, and the blacke is most fine: and of the same leather they make shooes: and they doe their mantles in the same colours. The Governour departed from Toalli the 24. of March: he came on Thursday at euening to a small Riuer; where a bridge was made whereon the people passed, and Benit Fernandez a Portugall fell off from it, and was drowned. Assoone as the Governour had passed the Riuer, a little distance thence he found a towne called Achese. The Indians had no notice of the Christians: they leaped into a Riuer: some men and women were taken; among which was one that vnderstood the youth which guided the Governour to Yupaha: whereby that which he had reported was more confirmed. For they had passed through Countries of diuers languages, and some which he vnderstood not: The Governour sent by one of the Indians that were taken to call the Cacique, which was on the other side of the Riuer. Hee came and made this speech following:

Right high, right mightie, and excellent Lord; those things which seldom happen doe cause admiration. What then may the sight of your Lordship; and your people doe to mee and mine, whom we neuer saw? especially being mounted on such fierce beasts as your horses are, entering with such violence and furie into my Countrie, without my knowledge of your coming. It was a thing so strange, and caused such feare and terror in our mindes, that it was not in our power to stay and receiue your Lordship with the solemnitie due to so high and renowned a Prince, as your Lordship is. And trusting in your greatnesse and singular vertues, I doe not ouerly hope to be freed from blame, but also to receiue fauours: and the first which I demand of your Lordship is, that you will vae me, my Countrie, and subiects, as your owne: and the second, that you will tell mee who you are; and whence you come, and whither you goe, and what you seeke, that I the better may serue you therein.

The Governour answered him, that hee thanked him as much for his offer and good will, as if hee had receiued it, and as if hee had offered him a great treasure: and told him that he was the sonne of the Sun, and came from those parts where he dwelt, and trauelled through that Countrie; and sought the greatest Lord, and richest Prouince that was in it. The Cacique told him; that farther forward dwelt a great Lord, and that his dominion was called Ocute. He gaue him a guide, and an interpretour for that Prouince. The Governour commanded his Indians to bee set free, and trauelled through his Countrie vp a Riuer very well inhabited. He departed from his towne the first of Aprill; and left a very high crosse of Wood set vp in the midst of the market place: and because the time gaue no more leasure, hee declared to him onely, that that crosse was a memorie of y same, whereon Christ, which was God and man, and created the heauens and the earth, suffered for our saluation: therefore he exhorted them that they should reuerence it: and they made shew as though they would doe so. The fourth of Aprill the Governour passed by a towne called Altamaca, and

*Cones,  
Partridges,  
Hens, Duggs.*

the 10. of the moneth he came to Ocute. The Cacique sent him two thousand Indians with a present, to wit, many conies, and partridges, bread of Maize, two hens, and many dogs: which among the Christians were esteemed as if they had been fat weathers, because of the great want of flesh meate and salt, and hereof in many places, and many times was great need; and they were so scarce, that if a man fell sicke, there was nothing to cherish him withall: and with a sickness, that in another place easilie might have been remedied, he consumed away till nothing but skinnie and bones were left: and they died of pure weakness, some of them saying, If I had a slice of meate, or a few conies of salt, I should not die. The Indians want no fleshmeat: for they kill with their arrowes many deere, hennes, conies, and other wild fowle: for they are very cunning at it: which skill the Christians had not: and though they had it, they had no leasure to use it: for the most of the time they spent in trancell, and durst not presume to straggle aside. And because they were thus scantied of flesh, when sixe hundred men that went with Soto, came to any towne, and found 30. or 40. dogs, he that could get one and kill it, thought himselfe no small man: and he that killed it, and gave not his Captaine one quarter, if he knew it, he frowned on him, and made him feele it, in the watches, or in any other matter of labour that was offered, wherein hee might doe him a displeasure. On Monday the 12. of Aprill, the Gouvernour departed from Ocute: The Cacique gave him two hundred Tamentes, to wit, Indians to carrie burdens: hee passed through a towne, the Lord whereof was named Cofaqui, and came to a prouince of an Indian Lord, called Patofa, who, because he was in peace with the Lord of Ocute, and with the other bordering Lords, had many daies before notice of the Gouvernour, and desired to see him: He came to visit him, and made this speech following.

*Compt.  
Prou.*

Mightie Lord, now with good reason I will craue of fortune to requite this my so great prosperitie with some small aduersitie: and I will count my selfe verie rich, seeing I haue obtained that, which in this world I most desired, which is, to see, and be able to doe your Lordship some seruice. And although the tongue be the image of that which is in the heart, and that the contentment which I feele in my heart I cannot dissemble, yet is it not sufficient wholly to manifest the same. Where did this your Countrie, which I doe gouerne, deserue to be visited of so soueraigne, and so excellent a Prince, whom all the rest of the world ought to obey and serue? And those which inhabit it being so base, what shall be the issue of such happines, if their memorie doe not represent vnto them some aduersitie that may betide them, according to the order of fortune? If from this day forward we may be capable of this benefit, that your Lordship will hold vs for your owne, we cannot faile to be fauoured and maintained in true iustice and reason, and to haue the name of men. For such as are void of reason and iustice, may be compared to brute beasts. For mine owne part, from my very heart with reuerence due to such a Prince, I offer my selfe vnto your Lordship, & beseech you; that in reward of this my true good will, you will vouchsafe to make use of mine owne person, my Countrie, and subjects.

*An excellent  
Counsell for 30  
leagues.*

The Gouvernour answered him, that his offers and good wil declared by the effect, had highly please him, whereof he would alwaies be mindfull to honour and fauour him as his brother. This Countrie, from the first peaceable Cacique, vnto the Prouince of Patofa, which were fiftie leagues, is a fat Countrie, beautifull, and very fruitfull, and very well watered, and full of good Riuers. And from thence to the Port de Spirit Santo; where we first arriued in the land of Florida, (which may be 350. leagues little more or lesse) is a barren land, and the most of it groues of wild Pine-trees, low and full of lakes, and in some places very hic and thicke groues, whither the Indians that were in armes fled, so that no man could find them, neither could any horses enter into them. Which was an inconuenience to the Christians, in regard of the victuals which they found conueied away; and of the trouble which they had in seeking of Indians to be their guides.

Chap. XIII.

How the Governour departed from the Province of Patofa, and went through a desert, where he and all his men fell into great distress, and extreme miserie.

IN the towne of Patofa the youth, which the Governour carried with him for an interpreter and a guide, began to fume at the mouth, and turable on the ground, as one possessed with the diuell: They said a Gospell over him; and the fit left him. And he said, that foure daies iournie from thence toward the Sunne rising, was the province that he spake of. The Indians of Patofa said, that toward that part they knew no habitation; but that toward the Northwest, they knew a Province which was called Coça, a verie plentifull countrie, which had very great townes in it. The Cacique told the Governour, that if he would go thither, he would giue him guides and Indians for burdens; and if he would go whither the youth spake of, that he would likewise giue him those that he needed: and so with louing words and offers of courtesie, they took their leaues the one of the other. Hee gaue him seuen hundred Indians to beare burdens. He tooke Maiz for foure daies iournie. Hee travelled sixe daies by a path which grew narrow more and more, till it was lost altogether: He went where the youth did lead him, and passed two Riuers which were waded: each of them was two crossebowshot ouer: the water came to the stirrups, and had so great a current, that it was needfull for the horsemen to stand one before another, that the footemen might passe about them leaning vnto them. He came to another Riuer of a greater current and largenes, which was passed with more trouble, because the horses did swim at the coming out about a lances length. Having passed this Riuer, the Governour came to a groue of pinetrees, and shreamed the youth, and made as though hee would haue cast him to the dogges, because he had told him a lie, saying, it was but foure daies iournie, and they had travelled nine, and euery day 7. or 8. leagues, and the men by this time were growne wearie and weake, and the horses leane through the great scanting of the Maiz. The youth said, that hee knew not where hee was. It scaud him that he was not cast to the dogges, that there was neuer another whom Iohn Ortiz did vnderstand. The Governour with them two, and with some horsemen and footemen, leauing the Campe in a groue of pinetrees, trauelled that day 5. or 6. leagues to seek a way, and returned at night very comfortlesse, and without finding any signe of way or towne. The next day there were sundrie opinions deliuered, whether they should goe backe, or what they should doe: and because backward the Countrie whereby they had passed was greatly spoiled, and destitute of Maiz, and that which they brought with them was spent, and the men were very weake, and the horses likewise, they doubted much whether they might come to any place where they might helpe themselves. And besides this, they were of opinion, that going in that sort out of order, that any Indians would presume to set vpon them, so that with hunger, or with warre, they could not escape. The Governour determined to send horsemen from thence euery way to seeke habitation: and the next day he sent foure Captaines, euery one a sundrie way with eight horsemen. At night they came againe, leading their horses, or driving them with a sticke before; for they were so wearie, that they could not lead them; neither found they any way nor signe of habitation. The next day, the Governour sent other foure with as many horsemen that could swim, to passe the Ose and Riuers which they should find, and they had choice horses the best that were in the Campe. The Captaines were Baltasar de Gallegos, which went vp the Riuer; and Iohn Danusco, downe the Riuer: Alfonso Romo, and Iohn Rodriguez Lobillo went into the inward parts of the land. The Governour brought with him into Florida thirtene sowes, and had by this time three hundred swine: He commanded euery man should haue halfe a pound of hogs flesh euery day: and this hee did three or foure daies after the Maiz was all spent. With this small quantitie of flesh, and some sodden hearts, with much trouble the people were sustained. The Governour dismissed 5 Indians of Patofa, because hee had no food to giue them; who desiring to accompanie and serue the Christians in their necessitie, making shew that it grieued them very much to returne, vntill they had left them

Two with 21.  
men.

Another greater  
Riuer.

More daies  
iournie.

The great  
course of swine.

in a peopled Countrie, returned to their owne home. John Danusco came on Sunday late in the evening, and brought newes that he had found a little towne 12. or 13. leagues from thence; he brought a woman and a boy that he took there. With his coming and with those newes, the Governour and all the rest were so glad, that they seemed at that instant to have returned from death to life. Upon Monday, the twentieth sixe of April, the Governour departed to goe to the towne, which was called Aymay; and the Christians named it the towne of Reliefe: He left where the Canihad lieth at the foote of a Pinetree a letter buried, and letters carved in the barks of the pine, the contents whereof was this: Dig here at the foot of this pine; & you shall find a letter. And this he did, because when the Captaine came, which were sent to seeke some habitation, they might see the letter, and know what was become of the Governour, and which way he was gone. There was no other way to the towne, but the markes that John Danusco left made upon the trees. The Governour with some of them that had the best horses came to it on the Monday: And all the rest enforcing themselves the best they could, some of them lodged within two leagues of the towne, some within three and four, every one as he was able to goe; and his strength scrud him. There was found in the towne a storehouse full of the floure of parched Maiz; and some Maiz, which was distributed by allowance. Here were foure Indians taken, and none of them would confesse any other thing; but that they knew of none other habitation. The Governour commanded one of them to be burned; & presently another confessed that two daies iourne from thence, there was a Province that was called Cutia-Chiqui. Upon Wednesday came the Capitaines Baltasar de Gallegos, Alfonso Romo; and John Rodriguez Lobillo; for they had found the letter, and followed the way which the Governour had taken toward the towne. Two men of John Rodriguez's companie were lost, because their horses tired: the Governour checked him very sore for leaving them behind, and sent to seeke them; and assoone as they came, he departed toward Cutia-Chiqui. In the way three Indians were taken, which said, that the Ladie of that Countrie had notice alreadye of the Christians, and staid for them in a towne of hers. The Governour sent by one of them to offer her his friendship, and to advertise her how hee was coming thither. The Governour came vnto the towne; and presently there came foure canoes to him; in one of them came a sister of the Ladie, and approaching to the Governour she said these words:

Excellent Lord, my sister sendeth vnto you by me to kisse your Lordships hands, and to signifie vnto you, that the cause why she came not in person, is, that she thinketh to do you greater service staying behind, as she doth, giving order; that with all speed, as her canoes be readie, that your Lordship may passe the River, and take your rest, which shall be presently performed.

An Indian borne  
of the kinde called  
hobob.

Cutia-Chiqui.

The Governour gaue her thanks, and she returned to the other side of the River. Within a little while the Ladie came out of the towne in a Chaire, whereon certaine of the principall Indians brought her to the River. She entered into a barge, which had the sterne tilted ouer, and on the floore her seat readie laid with two cushions vpon it one vpon another, where she sat her downe; and with her came her principall Indians in other barges, which did wait vpon her. She went to the place where the Governour was, and at her coming she made this speech following:

Excellent Lord, I wish this coming of your Lordship into these your Countries, to be most happie; although my power be not answerable to my wil, and my services be not according to my desire; nor such as so high a Prince, as your Lordship, deserueth; yet since the good-will is rather to be accepted, then all the treasures of the world, that without it are offered, with most vnfaileable and manifest affection, I offer you my person, lands, and subjects, and this small service.

And therewithal she presented vnto him great store of clothes of the Countrie, which shee brought in other canoes; to wit, mantles and skinnes; and tooke from her owne wecke a great cordon of perles, and cast it about the necke of the Governour, entertaining him with very gracious speeches of loue and courtesie; and commanded canoes to be brought together, wherein the Governour and his people passed the River. Assoone as hee was lodged

A great cordon  
of perles.  
They passe the  
River.  
Cutia-Chiqui.

in the towne, she sent him another present of many hens. This Countrie was verie pleasant, fat, and hath goodly meadows by the Rivers. Their woods are thin, and full of walnut trees and Mulberrie trees. They said the sea was two daies iourne from thence. Within a league, and halfe a league about this towne, were great townes dispeopled, and overgrowne with grasse; which shewed, that they had been long without inhabitants. The Indians said, that two yeere before there was a plague in that Countrie, and that they removed to other townes. There was in their storehouses great quantitie of clothes, mantles of yarne made of the barks of trees, and others made of feathers, white, greene, red, and yellow, very fine after their vse, and profitable for winter. There were also many Deeres skinnes, with many compartiments traced in them, and some of them made into hose, stockings, and shoes. And the Ladie perceiving, that the Christians esteemed the perles, advised the Governour to send to search certaine graves that were in that towne, and that hee should find many: and that if hee would send to the dispeopled townes, hee might lood all his horses. They sought the graves of that towne, and there found foureteene rooves of perles, and little brutes and birds made of them. The people were browne, well made, and well proportioned, and more civill then any others that were seene in all the Countrie of Florida, and all of them went shod and clothed. The youth told the Governour, that hee began now to enter into the land which he spake of: and some credit was given him that it was so, because hee understood the language of the Indians: and hee requested that he might bee Christianed, for he said hee desired to become a Christian: Hee was Christianed, and named Peter: and the Governour commanded him to bee loosed from a chaine, in which vntill that time he had gone. This Countrie, as the Indians reported, had been much inhabited, and had the fame of a good Countrie: And, as it seemeth, the youth, which was the Governours guide, had heard of it, and that which he knew by heresy, hee affirmed that hee had seene, and augmented at his pleasure. In this towne was found a dagger, and beades, that had belonged to Christians. The Indians reported, that Christians had been in the haven, which was two daies iourne from this towne, many yeeres agoe. Hee that came thither was the Governour, the Licenciate Lucas Vasquez de Ayllon, which went to conquer this Countrie, and at his coming to the Port hee died; and there was a diuision, quarrels and slaughters betweene some principall men which went with him, for the principall government: And without knowing any thing of the Countrie, they returned home to Hispaniola. All the Compañie thought it good to inhabit that Countrie, because it was in a temperat climate: And that if it were inhabited, al the shippes of New Spaine, of Peru, Santa Martha, and Tierra firme, in their returne for Spaine, might well touch there: because it was in their way; and because it was a good Countrie, and sited fit to raise commoditie. The Governour, since his intent was to seeke another treasure, like that of Atabalipa Lord of Peru, was not contented with a good Countrie, nor with pearles, though many of them were worth their weight in gold. And if the Countrie had been divided among the Christians, those which the Indians had fished for afterward, would have been of more value: for those which they had, because they burned them in the fire, did lose their colour. The Governour answered them, that vrged him to inhabit, That in all the Countrie, there were not victuals to sustaine his men one moneth; and that it was needfull to resort to the Port of Ocus, where Madamadop was to stay for them: and that if no richer Countrie were found, they might retourne againe to that whensoever they would: and in the meane time the Indians would sow their fields, and it would be better furnished with Maiz. He inquired of the Indians; whether they had notice of any great Lord farther into the land. They told him, that 13. daies iourne from thence, there was a Prouince called Chiaha, subject to the Lord of Coça. Presently the Governour determined to seeke that land. And being a sterne man, and of few words, though he was glad to sif and know the opinion of all men, yet after hee had delibered his owne, hee would not be contraried, and alwaies did what liked himselfe, and so all men did condescend vnto his will. And though it seemed an error to leaue that Countrie, (for others might haue been sought round about, where the people might haue been sustained,

Without trees.  
Mothery trees  
for the  
The sea was  
daies iourne off.

Mantles of the  
horses trees.  
Mantles of feathers.

Three hundred  
horses two  
pounds of perles  
found.

That towne was  
ten two daies  
iourne from the  
hauen of Santa  
Helenas.  
In the yeere  
1535.

It is in 31. de  
street 8.

Chiaha 13. daies  
iourne from  
Santa Helenas  
and Coça 7.  
daies iourne  
from Chiaha at  
which towne of  
Coça, they had  
in one tide:  
Chap. 16.

tained, untill the harvest had been readie there, and the Maiz gathered) yet there was none that would say any thing against him, after they knew his resolution.

## Chap. XV.

How the Governour departed from Cutifa-Chiqui to seeke the Prouince of Coça;  
and what happened vnto him in the way.

The Governour departed from Cutifa-Chiqui the third day of May. And because the Indians had revolted, and the will of the Ladie was perceiued, that if she could, she would depart without giuing any guides or men for burdens, for the wrongs which the Christians had done to the Indians: (for there neuer want some among many of a base sort, that for a little gaine doe put themselves and others in danger of vndoing.) The Governour commanded her to be kept in safeguard, and carried with him, not with so good vsage as she deserved for y good will she shewed, and good entertainment that she had made him. And he verified that old prouerb which saith, For weldoing Iuccine euill. And so he carried her on foot with his bondwomen to looke vnto her. In all the townes where the Governour passed, the Ladie commanded the Indians to come and carrie the burdens from one towne to another. We passed through her Countie an hundred leagues, in which, as we saw, she was much obeyed. For the Indians did all that she commanded them with great efficacie and diligence. Peter the youth that was our guide, said, that she was not the Ladie her selfe, but a neece of hers, which came to that towne to execute certaine principal men by commandement of the Ladie, which had withheld her tribute: which words were not beleueed because of the lies which they had found in him before: but they bore with all things, because of the need which they had of him, to declare what the Indians said. In seuen daies space the Governour came to a Prouince called Chalaque, the poorest Countie of Maiz that was seene in Florida: The Indians fed vpon rootes and herbes which they seeke in the fields, and vpon wild beasts, which they kil with their bowes and arrowes: and it is a verie gentle people. All of them goe naked, and are very leane. There was a Lord, which for a great present, brought the Governour two Deeres skins: and there were in that Countie many wild hennes. In one towne they made him a present of 700. hennes, and so in other townes they sent him those which they had or could get. From this Prouince to another, which is called Xualla, he spent five daies: here he found very little Maiz; and for this cause, though the people were wearied, and the horses very weake, he staid no more but two daies. From Ocuta to Cutifa-chiqui, may bee some hundred and thirte leagues, whereof 80. are wilderness. From Cutifa-chiqui to Xualla, two hundred and fiftie, and it is a little Countie. The Governour departed from Xualla toward Guaxule: he passed very rough and hie hills: In that iourne, the Ladie of Cutifa-chiqui (whom the Governour carried with him, as is afore said, with purpose to carrie her to Guaxule, because her territorie reached thither) going on a day with the bondwomen which lead her, went out of the way, and entred into a wood, saying, she went to ease her selfe, and so she deceiued them, and hid her selfe in the wood; and though they sought her they could not find her. She carried away with her a little chest made of canes in manner of a coffer, which they call Petaca, full of vnbored perles. Some which could iudge of them, said, that they were of great value. An Indian woman that waited on her did carrie them. The Governour not to discontent her altogether, left them with her, making account that in Guaxule he would ask them of her, when he gaue her leave to returne: which coffer she carried away, and went to Xualla with three slaues which fled from the Campe, and one horseman which remained behind, who falling sick of an ague went out of the way, and was lost. This man, whose name was Alimamos, dealt with the slaues to change their euill purpose, and returne with him to the Christians: which two of them did; and Alimamos and they overtooke the Governour 50. leagues from thence in a Prouince called Chiala; and reported how the Ladie remained in Xualla with a slaue of Andrew de Vasconchias, which would not come backe with them, and that of a certaintie

they

Chalaque was  
daies before  
from Cutifa-  
Chiqui.

300. Hens.

Xualla 5. daies  
of.

Rough and  
hie hills.

they lived as man and wife together, and meant to goe both, to Cutifa-chiqui. Within five daies the Governour came to Guaxale. The Indians there gave him a present of 300. dogges, because they saw the Christians esteeme them, and sought them to feed on them: for among them they are not eaten. In Guaxale, and all that way, was very little Maiz. The Governour sent from thence an Indian with a message to the Cacique of Chiaba, to desire him to gather some Maiz thither, that he might rest a few daies in Chiaba. The Governour departed from Guaxale, and in two daies iourne came to a towne called Canasagua. There met him on the way 20. Indians every one loaden with a basket full of Mulberries: for these, he may, and those very good; from Cutifa-chiqui thither, and so forward in other Provinces, and also nuts and plumes. And the trees grow in the fields without planting or dressing them, and are as big and as rancke, as though they grew in gardens digged and watered. From the time that the Governour departed from Canasagua, hee iourned fife daies through a desert; and two leagues before hee came to Chiaba, there met him 15. Indians loaden with Maiz, which the Cacique had sent; and they told him on his behalfe, that he waited his comming with 20. barnes full of it; and farther, that himselfe, his Countie, and subjects, & all things else were at his service. On the 5. day of June, the Governour entered into Chiaba: the Cacique voided his owne houses, in which he lodged, & received him with much ioy, saying these words following:

Mightie and excellent Lord, I hold my selfe for so happie a man, in that it hath pleased your Lordship to use me, that nothing could have happened unto me of more contentment, nor that I would have esteemed so much. From Guaxale your Lordship sent unto me, that I should prepare Maiz for you in this towne for two moneths: Here I have for you 20. barnes full of the choicest that in all the Countie could be found. If your Lordship bee not entertained by me in such sort, as it fit for so his a Prince, respect my tender age, which excuseth me from blame; and receive my good will, which with much loyaltie, truth, and sinceritie, I will alwaies shew in any thing, which shall concerne your Lordships service.

The Governour answered him, that he thanked him very much for his service, and offer, and that he would alwaies account him as his brother. There was in this towne much butter in gourds melted like oile: they said it was the fat of beares. There was found also great store of oile of walnuts, which was cleare as butter, and of a good taste; and a pot full of honie of bees, which neither before nor afterward was seen in all the Countie. The towne was in an Island betwene two armes of a River, and was seated high one of them. The River divideth it selfe into those two branches (so crossebow shot about the towne, and meeteth againe a league beneath the same. The plaine betwene both the branches is sometimes one crosse-bow shot, sometimes two crossebow shot over. The branches are very broad, and both of them may be waded over. There were all along them verie good meadows, and manie fields sowne with Maiz. And because the Indians staid in their towne, the Governour only lodged in the houses of the Cacique, and his people in the fields; where there was enter a tree, every one tooke one for himselfe. Thus the Camp lay separated one from another, and out of order. The Governour winked at it, because the Indians were in peace, and because it was very hot, and the people should have suffered great extremities, if it had not bin so. The horses came thither so weake, that for feeblennesse, they were not able to carrie their masters: because that from Cutifa-chiqui, they alwaies trauelled with very little provender, and were hunger-starved and tired ever since they came from the desert of Ocutte. And because the most of them were not in case to use in battell, though need should require, they sent them to feed in the night a quarter of a league from the Camp. The Christians were there in great danger, because that if at this time the Indians had set upon them, they had been in eivil case to have defended themselves. The Governour rested there thirtie daies, in which time, because the Countie was very fruitfull, the horses grew fat. At the time of his departure, by the importunitie of some, which would have more then was reason, hee demanded of the Cacique 30. women to make slaves of. Hee answered that he would conferre with his chiefe men. And before hee returned an answer, one night all of them with their wiues and children forsooke the towne, and fled away. The

Guaxale five daies off.

Canasagua two daies iourne off. Great store of Mulberry trees to make silk.

June 5. Chiaba five daies iourne off, and 30. leagues from Guaxale.

The fat of beares. Oile of Walnuts. Honie of Bees. Chiaba seated in an Island.

The desert of Ocutte, chap. 4.

30. Daies iourne.

next day the Governour purposing to goe to seeke them, the Cacique came vnto him, and at his coming vsed these words vnto the Governour :

Mightie Lord, with shame and feare of your Lordship, because my subiects against my will haue done amisse in absenting themselves, I went my way without your license; and knowing the error which I haue committed, like a loyall subject, I come to yeeld my selfe into your power, to dispose of mee at your owne pleasure. For my subiects do not obey mee, nor doe any thing but what an Vuile of mine commandeth, which governeth this Countrie for me, vntill I be of a perfect age. If your Lordship will pursue them, and execute on them that, which for their disobedience they deserue, I will be your guide, since at this present my fortune will not suffer me to performe any more.

Presently the Governour with 30. horsemen, and as many footmen, went to seeke the Indians, and passing by some townes of the principall Indians which had absented themselves, hee cut and destroyed great fields of Maiz; and went vp the River, where the Indians were in an Island, where the horsemen could not come at them. There he sent them word by an Indian to returne to their towne and feare nothing, and that they should giue him men to carrie burdens, as at those behind had done; for he would haue no Indian women, seeing they were so loth to part with them. The Indians accepted his request, and came to the Governour to excuse themselves; and so all of them returned to their towne. A Cacique of a Prouince called Coste, came to this towne to visit the Governour. After hee had offered himselfe, and passed with him some words of tending his seruiue and curtesie; the Governour asking him whether he had notice of any rich Countrie? he said, yea: to wit, "that toward the North, there was a Prouince named Chisca: and that there was a melting of copper, and of another metall of the same colour, saue that it was finer, and of a farre more perfect colour, and farre better to the sight; and that they vsed it not so much, because it was softer. And the selfe same thing was told the Governour in Cutifa-chiqui; where we saw some little hatchets of copper, which were said to haue a mixture of gold." But in that part the Countrie was not well peopled, and they said there were mountaines, which the horses could not passe; and for that cause, the Governour would not goe from Cutifa-chiqui directly thither: And hee made account, that traueiling through a peopled Countrie, when his men and horses should bee in better plight, and hee were better certified of the truth of the thing, he would returne toward it, by mountaines, and a better inhabited Countrie, whereby hee might haue better passage. He sent two Christians from Chiaha with certain Indians which knew the Countrie of Chisca, and the language thereof to view it, and to make report of that which they should find; where he told them that he would tarrie for them.

Notes of copper  
and gold in  
Chisca toward  
the North

Hatchets of  
copper holding  
gold.  
Chisca is di-  
rectly North  
from Cutifa-  
chiqui, which is  
within two leagues  
of Santa Helena.

Two Christians  
sent from Chi-  
aha to seeke  
Chisca.

#### Chap., XVI.

How the Governour departeth from Chiaha, and at Coste was in danger to haue been slaine by the hands of the Indians, and by a stratagemme escaped the same: And what more happened vnto him in this iourne, and how he came to Coçz.

When the Governour was determined to depart from Chiaha to Coste, he sent for the Cacique to come before him, and with gentle words tooke his leaue of him, and gaue him certaine things, wherewith he rested much contented: In seuen daies hee came to Coste. The second of Iulie he commanded his Campe to be pitched two crossebow shot from the town: and with eight men of his guard he went where he found the Cacique, which to his thinking receiued him with great ioye. As hee was talking with him, there went from the Campe certaine footmen to the towne to seeke some Maiz, and not contented with it, they ranacked and searched the houses, and tooke what they found. With this despite the Indians began to rise and to take their armes; and some of them with cudgils in their hands, ran vpon five or sixe Christians, which had done them wrong, and beat them at their pleasure. The Governour seeing them al in an vprore, and himselfe among them with so few Christians, to escape their hands vsed a stratagem, farre against his owne disposition, being, as hee was, very francke and open: and though it grieved him very much that any Indian should

Coste is  
four leagues  
from  
Chiaha, chap. 16.

A view of the  
River.

should be so bold, as with reason, or without reason to despise the Christians, he took vp a cudgel, and tooke their parts against his owne men; which was a meane to quiet them: And presently he sent word by a man very secretly to the Campe, that some armed men should come toward the place where he was; and hee tooke the Cacique by the hand, vsing very mild words vnto him, and with some principall Indians that did accompanie him, he drew them out of the towne into a plaine way, and vnto the sight of the Campe, whither by little and little with good discretion the Christians began to come and to gather about them. Thus the Governour led the Cacique, and his chiefe men vntill he entred with them into the Campe; and nere vnto his rest, hee commanded them to be put in safe custodie: and told them, that they should not depart without giuing him a guide and Indians for burthens, and till certaine sicke Christians were come, which he had commanded to come downe the Riuier in canors from Chialu; and those also which he had sent to the Prouince of Chisca: (for they were not returned; and he feared) that the Indians had slaine the one, and the other.) Within three daies after, those which were sent to Chisca returned, and made report, that the Indians had carried them through a Countrie so poore of Maiz, and so rough, and ouer so high mountaines, that it was impossible for the armie to trauell that way; and that seeing the way grew very long, and that they lingred much, they consulted to returne from a little poore towne, where they saw nothing that was of any profit, and brought an oxe hide, which the Indians gaue them, as thimne as a calves skinne, and the haire like a soft wool, betwene the course and fine wool of sheepe. The Cacique gaue a guide, and men for burthens, and departed with the Governours leaue. The Governour departed from Coate the ninth of Iulie, and lodged at a towne called Tali: The Cacique came forth to receiue him on the way, and made this speech:

Excellent Lord, and Prince, worshiè to be serued and obeyed of all the Princes in the world; howsoeuer for the most part by the outward physiognomic, the inward vertue may bee iudged, and that who you are, and of what strength was knowne vnto mee before now; I will not inferre hereupon how meane I am in your presence, to hope that my poore seruices will bee gratefull and acceptable: since whereas strength falleth, the will doth not cease to be praised and accepted. And for this cause I presume to request your Lordship, that you will be pleased onely to respect the same, and consider wherein you will command my seruice in this your Countrie.

The Governour answered him, that his good will and offer was as acceptable, vnto him, as if he had offered him all the treasures of the world, and that hee would alwaies intreate, fauour, and esteeme him as if he were his owne brother. The Cacique commanded provision necessary for two daies, while the Governour was there, to be brought thither: and at the time of his departure, he gaue him foure women and two men, which hee had need of to beare burthens. The Governour travelled sixe daies through many townes subject to the Cacique of Coça: & as he entred into his Countrie many Indians came vnto him euery day from the Cacique, and met him on the way with messages, one going, and another coming. Hee came to Coça vpon Friday, the 26. of Iulie. The Cacique came forth to receiue him two crossebow shot from the towne in a chaire, which his principall men carried on their shoulders, sitting vpon a cushion, and covered with a garment, of Martens, of the fashion and bignes of a womans huke: hee had on his head a diadem of feathers, and round about him many Indians playing vpon flutes, and singing. Assoone as he came vnto the Governour, hee did his obeysance, and vntered these words following:

Excellent and mightie Lord, aboue all them of the earth; although I come but now to receiue you, yet I haue receiued you many daies agoe in my heart, to wit, from the day wherein I had first notice of your Lordship; with so great desire to serue you, with so great pleasure and contentment, that this which I make shew of, is nothing in regard of that which is in my heart, neither can it haue any kind of comparison. This you may hold for certaine, that to obtaine the dominion of the whole world, would not haue reioyced me so much, as your sight, neither would I haue held it for so great a felicitie. Doe not looke for me to offer you that which is your owne: to wit, my person, my lands and subjects:

These which were sent to work Chisca returned. High mountaines. A little poore towne. An oxe hide with haire like wool. cap. 26. and Coçara. Mar. Green. ind. cap. 113. tick. vñ. Tab. 1. day from Coate.

Many townes of Coça. Coça. Tab. 26. Martens.

onely I will busie my selfe in commanding my men with all diligence and due reuerence to welcome you from hence to the towne with playing and singing, where your Lordship shall be lodged and attended vpon by my selfe and them: and all that I possesse, your Lordship shall vse as it were your owne. For your Lordship shall doe me a verie great fauour in so doing.

The Gouvernour gaue him thanks, and with great ioy they both went conferring together, till they came to the towne: and he commanded his Indians to void their houses, wherein the Governour and his men were lodged. There was in the barnes, and in the fields, great store of Maize and French Beanes: The Country was greatly inhabited with many great townes, and many sowne fields, which reached from the one to the other. It was pleasant, fat, full of good meadows vpon Riuers. There were in the fields, many Plum trees, aswell of such as grow in Spaine, as of the Countrie: and wild tall vines, that runne vp the trees: and besides these, there were other low vines with big and sweet grapes: but for want of digging and dressing, they had great kirkels in them. The Gouvernour vsed to set a guard ouer the Caciques, because they should not absent themselves, and carried them with him, till he came out of their Countries: because that carrying them along with him, he looked to find people in the townes, and they gaue him guides, and men to carrie burdens: and before hee went out of their Countries, he gaue them licence to returne to their houses: and to their porters likewise, assoone as he came to any other Lordship, where they gaue him others. The men of Coça seeing their Lord detained,ooke it in euill part, and retold, and hid themselves in the woods, aswell those of the towne of the Cacique, as those of the other townes of his principall subjects. The Gouvernour sent out foure Captaines, euery one his way to seeke them. They tooke many men and women, which were put into chaines: They seeing the hurt which they receiued, and how little they gained by absenting themselves, came againe, promising to do whatsoeuer they were commanded. Of those which were taken prisoners, some principall men were set at libertie, whom the Cacique demanded: and euery one that had any, carried the rest in chaines like stauens, without letting them goe to their Countrie: neither did any returne, but some few, whose fortune helped them with the good diligence which they vsed to file off their chaines by night, or such as in their travelling could slippe aside out of the way, seeing any negligence in them that kept them: some escaped away with the chaines, and with the burdens, and clothes, which they carried.

## Chap. XVII.

## How the Gouvernour went from Coça to Tascalua.

20. of August.

Tallimachar,  
a great towne,  
Ytaua.A great Riuer,  
Vilibahali.Vilibahali  
walled about  
the fashion of  
their walles.

The Gouvernour rested in Coça 25. daies. He departed from thence the 20. of August to seeke a Prouince called Tascalua: hee carried with him the Cacique of Coça. He passed that day by a great towne called Tallimachare, the people were fled: he lodged halfe a league farther neere a brooke. The next day he came to a towne called Ytaua, subject to Coça. Hee staid there sixe daies because of a Riuer that passed by it, which at that time was very hie: and assoone as the Riuer suffered him to passe, he set forward, and lodged at a towne named Vilibahali. There came to him on the way, on the Caciques behalfe of that Prouince, ten or twelue principall Indians to offer him his seruice: all of them had their plumps of feathers, and bowes and arrowes. The Gouvernour comming to the towne with twelue horsemen, and some footemen of his guard, leaving his people a crossebow shot from the towne, entred into it, hee found all the Indians with their weapons: and as farre as he could ghesse, they seemed to haue some euill meaning. It was knowne afterward, that they were determined to take the Cacique of Coça from the Gouvernour, if hee had requested it. The Gouvernour commanded all his people to enter the towne, which was walled about, and neere vnto it passed a small Riuer. The wall, aswell of that, as of others, which afterward wee saw, was of great posts thrust drepe into the ground and very rough, and many long railes as big as ones arme laid across between them,

them, and the wall was about the height of a lance, and it was daubed within and without with clay, and had loope holes. On the otherside of the Riuer was a towne, where at that present the Cacique was. The Governour sent to call him, and hee came presently. After he had passed with the Governour some words of offering his seruices, he gaue him such men for his cariages as he needed, and thirtie women for slaves. In that place was a Christian lost, called Mançano, borne in Salamanca, of noble parentage, which went astray to seeke for grapes, whereof there is great store, and those very good. The day that the Governour departed from thence, he lodged at a towne subject to the Lord of Villibahali: A towne. and the next day hee came to another towne called Toasi. The Indians gaue the Governour thirtie women, and such men for his cariages as he needed. Hee travelled ordinarily 5. or 6. leagues a day when he travelled through peopled Countries: and going through deserts, he marched as fast as he could, to eschew the want of Maiz. From Toasi, passing through some townes subject to a Cacique, which was Lord of a prouince called Tallise, hee travelled siue daies: He came to Tallise the 18. of September: The towne was great, and situated neere vnto a maine Riuer. On the other side of the Riuer were other townes, and many fields sowne with Maiz. On both sides it was a very plentifull Countrie, and had store of Maiz: they had voided the towne. The Governour commanded to call the Cacique; who came, and betwene them passed some words of loue and offer of his seruices, and hee presented vnto him 40. Indians. There came to the Governour in this towne a principall Indian in the behalfe of the Cacique of Tascaluca; and made this speeche following:

Mightie, vertuous, and esteemed Lord, the great Cacique of Tascaluca my Lord, sendeth by me, to kisse your Lordships hands, and to let you understand, that he hath notice, how you iustly raish with your perfections and power, all men on the earth; and that euerie one by whom your Lordship passeth doth serue and obey you; which he acknowledgeth to be due vnto you, and desireth, as his life, to see, and to serue your Lordship. For which cause by me he offereth himselfe, his lands and subiects, that when your Lordship pleaseth to go through his Countrie, you may be receiued with all peace and loue, serued and obeyed; and, that in recompense of the desire he hath to see you, you will doe him the fauour to let him know when you will come: for how much the sooner, so much the greater fauour he shall receiue.

The Governour receiued and dispatched him graciously, giuing him beades, which among them were not much esteemed, and some other things to carrie to his Lord. And he gaue licence to the Cacique of Coça to returne home to his owne Countries. The Cacique of Tallise gaue him such men for barthers as he needed. And after he had rested there 20. daies, hee departed thence toward Tascaluca. That day when hee went from Tallise, hee lodged at a great towne called Casiste. And the next day passed by another, and came to a small towne of Tascaluca; and the next day hee camped in a wood two leagues from the towne where the Cacique resided, and was at that time. And he sent the Master of the Campe, Luys de Moscoso, with 15. horsemen, to let him know how hee was comming. The Cacique was in his lodgings vnder a Canopie: and without doores, right against his lodgings, in an high place, they spread a mat for him, & two cushions one vpon another, where he sat him downe, and his Indians placed themselves round about him, somewhat distant from him, so that they made a place, and a void roome where he sat: and his chiefest men were neerest to him, and one with a shadow of Deeres skinne, which kept the Sunne from him, being round, and of the bignes of a target, quartered with black and white, hauing a rundell in the midst: a farre off it seemed to be of taffets, because y colours were very perfect. It was set on a small staffe stretched wide out. This was the deuice which hee carried in his warres. Hee was a man of a very tall stature, of great limmes, and spare, and well proportioned, and was much feared of his neighbours and subiects. He was Lord of many territories and much people: In his countenance hee was very graue. After the Master of the Campe had spoken with him, he and those that went with him coursed their horses, praising them to and fro, and now and then toward the place

place where the Cacique was, who with much gravitie and dissimulation now and then lifted vp his eyes, and beheld them as if were with disdain. At the Governours coming, hee made no offer at all to rise. The Governour tooke him by the hand, and both of them sat downe together on a seate which was vnder the cloth of estate. The Cacique said these words vnto him:

Mighty Lord, I bid your Lordship right hartily welcome. I receiue as much pleasure and contentment with your sight, as if you were my brother whom I dearly loved: vpon this point it is not needfull to vse many reasons; since it is no discretion to speake that in many wordes, which in few may be vttered. How much the greater the will is, so much more giueth it name to the workes, and the workes giue testimonie of the truth. Now touching my will, by it you shall know, how certaine & manifest it is, and how pure inclination I haue to serue you. Concerning the fauour which you did me, in the things which you sent me, I make as much account of them as is reason to esteeme them: and chiefly because they were yours. Now see what seruice you will command me.

Piache.  
A great Riuer.

The Governour satisfied him with sweet words, and with great breuitie. When hee departed from thence hee determined to carrie him along with him for some causes, and at two daies iournie hee came to a towne called Piache, by which there passed a great Riuer. The Governour demanded canoes of the Indians: they said, they had them not, but that they would make rafts of canes and drie timber, on which he might passe well enough: And they made them with all diligence and speed, and they gouerned them; and because the water went very slow, the Governour and his people passed very well.

From the Port de Spirito Santo to Apalache, which is about an hundred leagues, the Governour went from East to West: And from Apalache to Cutifa-chiqui, which are 430 leagues, from the Southwest to the Northeast: and from Cutifa-chiqui to Xualla, which are about two hundred and fiftie leagues, from the South to the North: And from Xualla to Tascaluca, which are two hundred and fiftie leagues more, an hundred and ninety of them he travelled from East to West, to wit, to the Prouince of Coça: and the other 60. from Coça to Tascaluca from the North to the South.

Mauilla.  
12. Of October.

Having passed the Riuer of Piache, a Christian went from his companie from thence to seeke a woman slane that was runne away from him, and the Indians either tooke him captiue, or slue him. The Governour vrged the Cacique that he should giue account of him, and threatened him, that if he were not found, he would neuer let him loose. The Cacique sent an Indian from thence to Mauilla, whither they were traueilling, which was a towne of a principall Indian and his subject, saying, that he sent him to aduise them to make readie victuals, and men for carriages. But (as afterward appeared) hee sent him to assemble all the men of warre thither, that hee had in his Countrie. The Governour traueilled threeddaies: and the third day he passed all day through a peopled Countrie: and he came to Mauilla vpon Monday the 18. of October. He went before the Camp with 15. horsemen and 30. footemen. And from the towne came a Christian, whom he had sent to the principall man, three or foure daies before, because he should not absent himselfe, and also to learne in what sort the Indians were: who told him that hee thought they were in an euill purpose: for while hee was there, there came manie people into the towne, and many weapons, and that they made great haste to fortifie the wall. Euya de Moscoso told the Governour, that it would be good to lodge in the field, seeing the Indians were of such disposition: and hee answered, that he would lodge in the towne, for hee was weary of lodging in the field.

Mauilla called.

When hee came neere vnto the towne, the Cacique came forth to receiue him with many Indians playing vpon flutes and singing: And after hee had offered himselfe, hee presented him with three mantles of martlets. The Governour, with both the Caciques, and seven or eight men of his guard, and three or foure horsemen which lighted to accompanie him, entered into the towne, and sat him downe vnder a cloth of estate. The Cacique of Tascaluca requested him, that hee would let him remaine in that towne; and trouble him no more with traueilling: And seeing he would not giue him leave, in his talke he changed his purpose; and dissemblingly faigned that he would speake with some prin-

2. Muske of  
Marsena.

cipall

cipall Indians, and rose vp from the place where hee sate with the Gouverneur, and entred into a house, where many Indians were with their bowes and arrowes. The Gouverneur when he saw he returned not, called him, and he answered, that he would not come out from thence, neither would he goe any farther then that towne, and that if he would goe his way in peace, hee should presently depart, and should not seeke to carrie him perforce out of his Countrie and territorie.

## Chap. XVIII.

How the Indians rose against the Gouverneur, and what ensued thereupon.

THE Gouverneur seeing the determination, and furious answer of the Cacique, went about to pacifie him with faire words: to which he gaue no answer, but rather with much pride and disdain, withdrew himselfe where the Gouverneur might not see him, nor speake with him. As a principall Indian passed that way, the Gouverneur called him, to send him word, that hee might remaine at his pleasure in his Countrie, and that it would please him to giue him a guide, and men for carriages, to see if he could pacifie him with mild words. The Indians answered with great pride, that hee would not hearken vnto him. Baltasar de Gallegos, which stood by, tooke hold of a gowne of martens which hee had on; and hee cast it ouer his head, and left it in his hands: and because all of them immediately began to stirre, Baltasar de Gallegos gaue him such a wound with his coatils, that hee opened him downe the backe, and presently all the Indians with a great crye came out of the houses shooting their arrowes. The Gouverneur considering, that if hee tarried there, hee could not escape, and if hee commanded his men to come in, which were without the towne, the Indians within the houses might kill their horses, and doe much hurt, ranne out of the towne, and before hee came out, hee fell twice or thrice, and those that were with him did helpe him vp againe; and he and those that were with him were sore wounded: and in a moment there were siue Christians slaine in the towne. The Gouverneur came running out of the towne, crying out, that every man should stand farther off, because from the wall they did them much hurt. The Indians seeing that the Christians retired, and some of them, or the most part, more then an ordinary pace, shot with great boldnesse at them, and strooke downe such as they could ouertake. The Indians which the Christians did lead with them in chaines, had laid downe their burthens neere vnto the wall: and assoone as the Gouverneur and his men were retired, the men of Maquilla laid them on the Indians backs againe, and tooke them into the towne, and loosed them presently from their chaines, and gaue them bowes and arrowes to fight withall. Thus they possessed themselves of all the clothes and perles, and all that the Christians had, which their slaues carried: And because the Indians had been alwaies peaceable vntill wee came to this place, some of our men had their weapons in their fardels and remained vnarmed. And from others that had entred the towne with the Gouverneur they had taken swords and halberds, and fought with them. When the Gouverneur was gotten into the field, hee called for an horse, and with some that accompanied him, hee returned and slew two or three Indians: All the rest retired themselves to the towne, and shot with their bowes from the wall. And those which presumed of their simblenes, sallied forth to fight a stonet cast from the wall: And when the Christians charged them, they retired themselves at their leasure into the towne. At the time that the broile began, there were in the towne a Frier, and a Priest, and a seruant of the Gouverneur, with a woman slaue: and they had no time to come out of the towne: and they tooke an house, and so remained in the towne. The Indians beeing become Masters of the place, they shut the doore with a field gate: and among them was one sword which the Gouvernors seruaunt had, and with it he set himselfe behind the doore, thrusting at the Indians which sought to come into them: and the Frier and the Priest stood on the other side, each of them with a barre in their hands to beate him downe that first came in. The Indians seeing they could not get in by the doore, began to vncouer the house top. By this time, all the horsemen and footemen which were behind, were come to Maquilla. Here there were sundrie-opinions, whether they should charge the Indians to enter the towne, or whether they should leaue it, because it was hard to enter: and in the end it was resolved to set vpon them.

A gowne of  
martens.

All the clothes  
and perles of the  
Christians were  
lost.

## Chap. XIX.

How the Governour set his men in order, and entred the towne of Mauilla.

Assoone as the battell and the rereward were come to Mauilla, the Governour commanded all those that were best armed to alight, and made foure squadrons of footmen. The Indians, seeing how he was setting his men in order, concluded with the Cacique, that hee should goe his way, saying vnto him, as after it was knowne by certaine women that were taken there, that he was but one man, and could fight but for one man, and that they had there among them many principall Indians verie valiant and expert in scates of armes, that any one of them was able to order the people there; and forasmuch as matters of warre were subject to casualtie, and it was vncertaine which part should overcome, they wished him to saue himselfe, to the end, that if it fel out that they should end their daies there, as they determined; rather then to be overcome, there might remaine one to gouerne the Countrie. For all this hee would not haue gon away: but they vrged him so much, that with fiftene or twentie Indians of his owne, hee went out of the towne, and carried away a skarlat cloke, and other things of the Christians goods; as much as hee was able to carrie, and seemed best vnto him. The Governour was informed how there went men out of the towne, and hee commanded the horsemen to beset it, and sent in euery squadron of footemen one souldier with a firebrand to set fire on the houses, that the Indians might haue no defense: all his men being set in order, hee commanded an harubuz to bee shot off. (The signe being giuen, the foure squadrons, euery one by it selfe with great furie, gaue the onset, and with great hurt on both sides they entred the towne. The Frier and the Priest, and those that were with them in the house were saued, which cost the liues of two men of account, and valiant, which came thither to succour them. The Indians fought with such courage, that many times they drave our men out of the towne. The fight lasted so long, that for wearinesse and great thirst many of the Christians went to a poole that was neere the wal, to drink, which was all stained with the blood of the dead, and then came againe to fight. The Governour seeing this, entred among the footemen into the towne on horseback, with certaine that accompanied him, and was a meane that the Christians came to set fire on the houses, and brake and ouercame the Indians, who running out of the towne from the footemen, the horsemen without drave in at the gates again, where being without all hope of life, they fought valiantly, & after the Christians came among the handy blowes, seeing themselves in great distresse without any succour, many of them fled into the burning houses, where one vpon another they were smothered: and burnt in the fire. The whole number of the Indians that died in this towne, were two thousand and six hundred, little more or lesse. Of the Christians there died eighteene; of which one was Don Carlos, brother in law to the Governour, and a nephew of his, and one Iohn de Gantez, and Men Rodriguez Portugals, and Iohn Vasquez de Villagona de Barea Rota, all men of honour, and of much valour: the rest were footemen. Besides those that were slaine, there were an hundred and fiftie wounded with 700. wounnds of their arrowes: and it pleased God that of very dangerous wounnds they were quickly healed. Moreouer, there were twelue horses slaine, and seuentie hurt. All the clothes which the Christians carried with them to clothe themselves withall, and the ornaments to say Masse, and the perles, were all burnt there: and the Christians did set them on fire themselves; because they held for a greater inconuenience, the hurt which the Indians might doe them from those houses, where they had gathered all those goods together, then the losse of them. Here the Governour vnderstood, that Francisco Maldonado waited for him at the Port of Ocluse, and that it was sixe daies iourne from thence: and he dealt with Iohn Ortiz to keepe it secret, because he had not accomplished that which he determined to doe; and because the perles were burnt there, which he meant to haue sent to Cuba for a shew, that the people hearing the newes, might be desirous to come to that Countrie. He feared also, that if they should haue newes of him without seeing from Florida neither gold nor silver, nor any thing of value, it would get such a name, that no man would seeke to goe thither

A consultation  
of the Indians to  
send away their  
Cacique.

The death of  
1700. Indians.

The Port of  
Ocluse sixe  
daies iourne  
from Mauilla.

thither, when he should have neede of people. And so he determined to send no newes of himselfe, vntill hee had found some rich Countrie.

## Chap. XX.

How the Governour departed from Manilla toward Chicaça, and what happend vnto him.

From the time that the Governour entred into Florida, vntill his departure from Manilla, there died an hundred and two Christians, some of sicknesse, and others which the Indians slew. He staid in Manilla, because of the wounded men, eight and twentie daies: all which time he lay in the field. It was a well inhabited and a fat Countrie, there were some great & walled townes: and many houses scattered all about the fields, to wit, a crossbow shot, or two, the one from the other. Vpon Sunday, the eighteenth of Nouember, when the hurt men were knowne to bee healed, the Governour departed from Manilla. Eury one furnished himselfe with Maiz for two daies, and they trauelled fise daies through a desert: they came to a Prouince called Pafallaya, vnto a towne, named Taliepatava: and from thence they went to another, called Cabusto: neere vnto it ran a great Riuer. The Indians on the other side cried out, threatening the Christians to kill them, if they sought to passe it. The Governour commanded his men to make a barge within the towne, because the Indians should not perceiue it: it was finished in foure daies, and being ended, he commanded it to be carried one night vpon sleds halfe a league vp the Riuer. In the morning there entred into it thirtie men well armed. The Indians perceiued what was attempted, and those which were neerest, came to defend the passage. They resisted what they could, till the Christians came neere them; and seeing that the barge came to the shore, they fled away into the groues of canes. The Christians mounted on horsebacke, and went vp the Riuer to make good the passage, whereby the Governour and his companie passed the Riuer. There were along the Riuer some townes well stored with Maiz and French Beanes. From thence to Chicaça the Governour trauelled fise daies through a desert. Hee came to a Riuer, where on the other side were Indians to defend the passage. He made another barge in two daies; and when it was finished, the Governour sent an Indian to request the Cacique to accept of his friendship, and peaceably to expect his coming: whom the Indians that were on the other side the Riuer slew before his face, and presently making a great shout went their way. Having passed the Riuer, the next day, being the 17. of December, the Governour came to Chicaça, a small towne of twentie houses. And after they were come to Chicaça, they were much troubled with cold, because it was now winter and it snowed, while most of them were lodged in the field, before they had time to make themselves houses. This Countrie was very well peopled, and the houses scattered like those of Manilla, fat and plentifull of Maiz, and the most part of it was fielding: they gathered as much as sufficed to passe the winter. Some Indians were taken, among which was one whom the Cacique esteemed greatly. The Governour sent an Indian to signifie to the Cacique, that he desired to see him and to haue his friendship. The Cacique came vnto him, to offer him his person, Countrie and subiects, and told him, that he would cause two other Caciques to come to him in peace; who within few daies after came with him, and with their Indians: The one was called Alimama, the other Nicalsa. They gaue a present vnto the Governour of an hundred and fiftie conies, and of the Countrie garments, to wit, of mantles and skinnes. The Cacique of Chicaça came to visit him many times; and sometimes the Governour sent to call him, and sent him a horse to goe and come. He complained vnto him, that a subiect of his was risen against him, and deprived him of his tribute, requesting his aide against him, for hee meant to seeke him in his Countrie, and to punish him according to his desert. Which was nothing els but a feigned plot. For they determined, assoone as the Governour was gone with him, and the Campe was diuided into two parts, the one part of them to set vpon the Governour, and the other vpon them that remained in Chicaça. Hee went to the towne where he used to keepe his residence, and brought with him two hundred Indians with their bowes and

Great and wiled towne.  
25. Of Nouem-  
ber.

Taliquana.  
Cabaço.  
A great Riuer.

Canasade.

Some townes.  
A Riuer.

December 17.  
Chicaça.

Some and much  
cold.

Countie.

An Indian strag-  
gleme.

Sagochuma.

A walled towne.

rowes. The Governour tooke thirtie horsemen, and eightie footemen, and they went to Saguchuma (for so was the Province called of that chiefe man, which he said had rebelled.) They found a walled towne, without any men: and those which went with the Cacique set fire on the houses, to dissemble their treason. But by reason of the great care and heedfulness, that was as well in the Governours people which hee carried with him, as of those which remained in Chicaça, they durst not assault them at that time. The Governour invited the Cacique, and certaine principall Indians, and gaue them hogges flesh to eat. And though they did not commonly vse it, yet they were so greedy of it, that euerynight there came Indians to certaine houses a crossbow shot from the Camp, where the hogges lay, and killed, and carried away as many as they could. And three Indians were taken in the manner. Two of them the Governour commanded to be shot to death with arrowes; and to cut off the hands of the other; & he sent him so handled to the Cacique. Who made as though it grieved him; & they had offended the Governour, and that he was glad that he had executed that punishment on them. He lay in a plaine Countrie half a league from the place, where the Christians lodged. Foure horsemen went a straggling thither, to wit, Francisco Osorio, and a seruant of the Marques of Astorga called Reynoso, and two seruants of the Governour, the one his page called Ribera, and the other Fuentes his Chamberlaine: and these had taken from the Indians some skinner, and some mantles, wherewith they were offended, and forsooke their houses: The Governour knew of it, and commanded them to be apprehended; and condemned to death Francisco Osorio, and the Chamberlaine as principals, and al of them to loose of goods. The Friars and Priests and other principall persons were earnest with him to pardon Francisco Osorio his life, & to moderate his sentence, which hee would not grant for any of them. While he was ready to command them to be deawne to the market place to cut off their heads, there came certaine Indians from the Cacique to complaine of them. John Ortiz, at the request of Baltasar de Gallegos and other persons, changed their words, and told the Governour, that the Cacique said he had notice how his Lordship held those Christians in prison for his sake, and that they were in no fault, neither had they done him any wrong, and that if he would do him any fauour he would set them free. And he told the Indians: That the Governour said, he had them in prison, & that he would punish them in such sort, that they should bee an example to others. Hereupon the Governour commanded the prisoners to be loosed. Assoone as March was come, hee determined to depart from Chicaça, and demanded of the Cacique two hundred men for cariages. He sent him answer, that hee would speake with his principall men. Vpon Tuesday the eight of March, the Governour went to the towne where he was, to aske him for the men: Hee told him, he would send them the next day. Assoone as the Governour was come to Chicaça, he told Luys de Moxoso the Camp-master, that hee mislied the Indians, and that he should keepe a strong watch that night, which hee remembered but a little. The Indians came at the second watch in foure squadrons, euery one by it selfe, and assoone as they were descried; they sounded a drum, and gaue the assault with a great cry, and with so great celeritie, that presently they entred with the scoutes, that were somewhat distant from the Campe. And when they were perceiued of them which were in the towne, halfe the houses were on fire, which they had kindled. That night three horsemen chanced to bee skouts, two of them were of base calling, and the worst men in all the Camp, and the other, which was a nephew of the Governour, which vntill then was held for a tall man, shewed himselfe there as great a coward, as any of them: for all of them ran away. And the Indians without any resistance came and set the towne on fire; and taried without behind the doores for the Christians, which ran out of the houses, not hauing any leasure to arme themselves; and as they ran thither and thither amazed with the noise, and blinded with the smoke & flame of the fire, they knew not which way they went, neither could they light vpon their weapons, nor saddle their horses, neither saw they the Indians that shot them. Many of the horses were burned in the stables, and those which could breake their halters gat loose. The disorder and flight was such, that euery man fled which way he could, without leauing any to resist the Indians. But God, (which chastiseth his according to his pleasure, and in the greatest necessities and

March, 1565.

Chicaça set on fire by the Indians.

dangers

dangers sustineth them with his hand,) so blinded the Indians, that they saw not what they had done, and thought that the horses which ran loose, were men on horsebacke, that gathered themselves together to set vpon them. The Governour only rood on horsebacke, and with him a souldier called Tapia, and set vpon the Indians, and striking the first he met with his lance, the saddle fell with him, which with haste was euill gin-ed, and so hee fell from his horse. And all the people that were on foote were fled to a wood out of the towne, and there assembled themselves together. And because it was night, and that the Indians thought the horses were men on horsebacke which came to set vpon them, as I said before, they fled; and one onely remained dead, and that was he whom the Governour slew with his lance. The towne lay all burnt to ashes. There was a woman burned, who, after shee and her husband were both gone out of their house, went in againe for certaine perles, which they had forgotten, and when she would haue come out, the fire was so great at the doore that shee could not, neither could her husband succour her. Other three Christians came out of their lodgings so cruelly burned, that one of them died within three daies, and the other two were carried many daies eash of them vpon a couch betweene staues, which the Indians carried on their shoulders, for otherwise they could not trauell. There died in this hurliburlic cleuen Christians, and fiftie horses; and there remained an hundred hogges, and foure hundred were burned. If any perchance had saued any clothes from the fire: of Mauilla, here they were burned, and many were clad in skinnes, for they had no leasuro to take their coates. They endured much cold in this place, and the chiefest remedie were great fires. They spent all night in turnings without sleepe: for if they warmed one side, they fceesed on the other. Some inuented the weating of certaine mats of drie iuic, & did weare one beneath, and another aboue: many laughed at this deuice, whom afterward necessitie inforced to doe the like. The Christians were so spoiled, and in such want of saddles & weapons which were burned, that if the Indians had come the second night, they had ouercome them with little labour. They remooued thence to the towne where the Cacique was wont to lie, because it was in a champion countrie. Within eight daies after, there were many lances and saddles made. There were ash trees in those parts, whereof they made as good lances as in Biscay.

The increase of  
loggia.

The towne  
where the Ca-  
cique lay.  
Ash trees.

## Chap. XXI.

How the Indians set againe vpon the Christians, and how the Governour went to Alimamu, beyond which towne in warlike sort they tarried for him in the way.

Vpon Wednesday the 15. of March 1541. after the Governour had lodged 8. daies in a plaine, halfe a league from the place which he had wintered in, after he had set vp a forge, and tempered the swords which in Chicaga were burned, and made many targets, saddles, and lances, on Tuesday night, at the morning watch, many Indians came to assault the Campe in three squadrons, euery one by themselves: Those which watched gaue the alarme, The Governour with great speed set his men in order in other three squadrons, and leauing some to defend the Campe, went out to incounter them. The Indians were ouercome and put to flight. The ground was champion and fit for 5 Christians to take the aduantage of them; and it was now breake of day. But there happened a disorder, whereby there were not past thirtie or fortie Indians slaine: and this it was: that a Friar cried out in the Campe without any iust occasion, To the Campe, To the Campe: Whereupon the Governour and all the rest repaired thither, and the Indians had time to saue themselves. There were some taken, by whom the Governour informed himselfe of the Countrie, through which hee was to passe. The 26. of April, he departed from Chicaga, and lodged at a small towne called Alimamu. They had very little Maiz, and they were to passe a desert of seuen daies iourne. The next day, the Governour sent three Captaines euerie one his way with horsemen and footemen to seeke prouision to passe the desert. And Iohn Dannusco the Auditor went with fiftene horsemen, and 40. footemen that way that the Governour was to goe, and found a strong fort made, where the Indians staid for him, and many of them walked on the top of it with their weapons, hauing their bodies, thighs and armes okered and dield with blacke, white, yellow

ss. of Aprill.  
Alimamu.

Blacke, white,  
yellow and red  
colours.

yellow and red, striped like unto paines, so that they shewed as though they went in hose and doublets: and some of them had plumes, and others had hornes on their heads, and their faces blacke, and their eyes done round about with strakes of red, to seeme more fierce. As-soone as they saw that the Christians approched, with a great crie sounding two drummes with great furie they sallied forth to receiue them. John Darnusco and those that were with him, thought good to auoid them, and to acquaint the Gouverneur therewith. They retired to a plaine place, a crossebowshot from the fort in sight of it, the footemen, the crossebowmen, and targetters placed themselves before the horsemen, that they might not hurt the horses. The Indians called out by seuen and seuen, and eight and eight to shoote their arrowes, and retired againe: and in sight of the Christians they made a fire, and tooke an Indian, some by the feete, and some by the head, and made as though they went to cast him into the fire, and gaue him first many knocks on the head: signifying, that they meant so to handle the Christians. John Darnusco sent three horsemen to aduertise the Gouverneur hereof. He came presently: for his intent was to driue them from thence, saying, that if he did it not, they would be emboldned to charge him another time, when they might doe him more harme. He made the horsemen to alight, and set his men in foure squadrons: The signe being giuen, they set vpon the Indians, which made resistance till the Christians came neere the fort, and assoone as they saw they could not defend themselves, by a place where a brooke passed neere the fort, they ran away, and from the otherside they shot some arrowes: and because at that instant we knew no ford for the horses to passe, they had time enough to get out of our danger. Three Indians were slaine there, and many Christians were hurt, whereof within few daies, three died fiftene by the way. All men thought the Gouverneur to bee in fault, because he sent not to see the disposition of the place on the other side of the Riuer, and to know the passage before hee set vpon them. For with the hope they had to saue themselves by flight that way, when they saw none other meanes, they fought til they were broken, and it was an incouragement to defend themselves vntill then, and to offend the Christians without any danger to themselves.

## Chap. XXII.

How the Gouverneur went from Alimamu to Quizquiz, and from thence to Rio Grande, or the great Riuer.

Three daies after they had sought some Maiz, whereof they found but little store, in regard of that which was needfull; and that for this cause, as well for their sakes that were wounded, it was needfull for them to rest, as for the great iournie they were to march to come: where store of Maiz was: yet the Gouverneur was enforced to depart presently toward Quizquiz. He travelled seuen-daies through a desert of many marshes and thicke woods: but it might all be travelled on horseback, except some lakes which they swamme ouer. Hee came to a towne of the Prouince of Quizquiz without being descried, and tooke all the people in it before they came out of their houses. The mother of the Cacique was taken there: and he sent vnto him by an Indian, that he should come to see him, and that he would giue him his mother, and al the people which he had taken there. The Cacique sent him answer againe, that his Lordship should loose and send them to him, and that he would come to visit and serue him. The Gouverneur, because his people for want of Maiz were somewhat weake and wearie, and the horses also were leane, determined to accomplish his request, to see if hee could haue peace with him, and so commanded to set free his mother and all the rest, and with louing words dismissed them and sent them to him. The next day, when the Gouverneur expected the Cacique, there came many Indians with their bowes and arrowes with a purpose to set vpon the Christians. The Gouverneur had commanded all the horsemen to be armed, and on horsebacke, and in a readines. When the Indians saw that they were readie, they staid a crossebowe shot from the place where the Gouverneur was neere a brooke. And after halfe an houre that they had stood there stil, there came to the Camp sixe principall Indians, and said, they came to see what people they were, and that long agoe, they had

A desert of  
seuen daies.

A towne of  
Quizquiz.

been

been informed by their forefathers, "That a white people should subdue them: and that  
 "therefore they would returne to their Cacique, and bid him come presently to obey and  
 "serue the Governour:" and after they had presented him with sixe or seven skinnes and  
 maniles which they brought, they tooke their leaue of him, and returned with the other,  
 which waited for them by the brookeside. The Cacique neuer came againe nor sent other  
 message. And because in the towne where the Governour lodged, there was small store  
 of Maiz, he remooued to another halfe a league from Rio Grande, where they found plenty  
 of Maiz: And he went to see the River, and found, that nere vnto it was great store of  
 timber to make barges, and good situation of ground to incampe in. Presently he remooued  
 himselfe thither. They made houses, and pitched their Campe in a plaine field a crossebow  
 shot from the River. And thither was gathered all the Maiz of the townes, which they had  
 lately passed. They began presently to cut and hew down timber, and to saw planks for  
 barges. The Indians came presently down the River: they leaped on shore, and declared  
 to the Governour, That they were subjects of a great Lord, whose name was Aquivo, who was  
 Lord of many townes; and governed many people on the other side of the River, and came  
 to tell him on his behalfe, that the next day he with all his men would come to see, what it  
 would please him to command him. The next day with speed, the Cacique came with two  
 hundred canoes full of Indians with their bowes and arrowes, painted, and with great plumes  
 of white feathers, and many other colours, with shields in their hands, wherewith they de-  
 fended the rowers on both sides, and the men of warre stood from the head to the sterne,  
 with their bowes and arrowes in their hands. The canoe wherein the Cacique was, had a  
 tilt ouer the sterne, and hee sat vnder the tilt; and so were other canoes of the principall  
 Indians. And from vnder the tilt where the chiefe man sat, hee governed and commanded  
 the other people. All ioyned together, and came within a stoues cast of the shore. From  
 thence the Cacique said to the Governour, which walked along the Rivers side with others  
 that waited on him, that he was come thither to visit, to honour, and to obey him; because  
 he knew he was the greatest and mightiest Lord on the earth: therefore he would see what  
 he would command him to doe. The Governour yeelded him thanks, and requested him  
 to come on shore, that they might the better communicate together. And without any answer  
 to that point, hee sent him three canoes, wherein was great store of fish and loanes, made of  
 the substance of prunes like vnto bricke. After he had receiued al, he thanked him, and  
 prayed him againe to come on shore. And because the Caciques purpose was, to see if with  
 dissimulation he might doe some hurt, when they saw that the Governour and his men were  
 in readinesse, they began to goe from the shore: and with a great crie, the crossebowmen  
 which were ready, shot at them, and slue sixe or sixe of them. They retired with great order:  
 none did leaue his oare, though the next to him were slaine; and shielding themselves, they  
 went farther off. Afterward they came many times and landed: and when any of vs came  
 toward them, they fled vnto their canoes, which were verie pleasant to behold: for they were  
 very great and well made, and had their tilts, plumes, pauses, and flagges, and with the  
 multitude of people that were in them, they seemed to be a faire armie of gallies. In thir-  
 tie dayes space, while the Governour remained there, they made foure barges: In three of  
 which hee commanded twelue horsemen to enter, in each of them foure; in a morning, three  
 houres before day, men which hee trusted would land in despite of the Indians, and make  
 sure the passage, or die, and some footemen being crossebowmen went with them, and  
 rowers to set them on the other side. And in the other barge he commanded Iohn de Guz-  
 man to passe with the footemen, which was made Capitaine in stead of Francisco Maldonado.  
 And because the streame was swift, they went a quarter of a league vp the River along the  
 bancke, and crossing ouer, fell downe with the streame, and landed right ouer against  
 the Camp. Two stoues cast before they came to land, the horsemen went out of the barges  
 on horsebacke to a sandie plot very hard and cleere ground, where all of them landed with-  
 out any resistance. Assoone as those that passed first, were on land on the other side, the  
 barges returned to the place where the Governour was: and within two houres after Sunne-  
 rising, all the people were ouer. The River was almost halfe a league broad. If a man

As all pro-  
 peritic.

Another towne.  
 Rio Grande, or  
 Rio de Espirito  
 Santo.

Aquivo, a great  
 Lord on the  
 West side of Rio  
 Grande.

Two hundred  
 canoes.

Loanes made of  
 prunes.

Goodly great  
 canoes.

Three barges  
 made.

They passe ouer  
 Rio Grande.

The River here  
 almost halfe a  
 league broad.

stood still on the other side, it could not be discerned, whether he were a man or no. The River was of great depth, and of a strong current: the water was alwaies muddie: there came downe the River continually many trees and timber, which the force of the water and streame brought downe. There was great store of fish in it of sundrie sorts, and the most of it differing from the freshwater fish of Spaine, as hereafter shall be shewed.

## Chap. XXIII.

How the Governour departed from Aquixo to Casqui, and from thence to Pacaha: and how this Countrie differeth from that which we had passed.

HAving passed Rio grande, the Governour travelled a league and an halfe, and came to a great towne of Aquixo, which was dispeopled before hee came thither. They espied thirtie Indians comming ouer a plaine, which the Cacique sent, to discover the Christians determination: and assoone as they had sight of them, they tooke themselves to flight. The horsemen pursued them, and slue tenn, and tooke fiftene. And because the towne, whither the Governour went, was neere unto the River, he sent a Captaine, with as many men as he thought sufficient to carrie the barges vp the River. And because in his travelling by land many times he went farre from the River to compass the creekes that came from it, the Indians tooke occasion to set vpon them of the barges, and put them in great danger, because that by reason of the great current, they durst not leaue the shore, and from the bancke they shot at them. Astoone as the Governour was come to the towne, hee presently sent crossebow men downe the River, which came to rescue them: and vpon the comming of the barges to the towne, hee commanded them to bee broken, and to save the iron for others, when it should bee needfull: Hee lay there one night, and the day following, hee set forward to seeke a Prouince, called Pacaha: which hee was informed to bee neere unto Chieca, where the Indians told him there was gold. He passed through great townes of Aquixo, which were all abandoned for feare of the Christians. Hee vnderstood by certaine Indians, that were taken, that three daies iournie from thence dwelt a great Cacique, whose name was Casqui. Hee came to a small River, where a bridge was made, by which they passed: that day till Sunset, they went all in water, which in some places came to the waste, and in some to the knees. When they saw themselves on dry land, they were very glad, because they feared they should wander vp and downe as forlorne men all night in the water. At none they came to the first towne of Casqui: they found the Indians carelesse, because they had no knowledge of them. There were many men and women taken, and store of goods, as manites and skinces, as well in the first towne, as in another, which stood in a field halfe a league from thence in sight of it; whither the horsemen ran. This Countrie is higher, drier, and more champaign, than any part bordering neere the River, that vntill then they had seene. There were in the fields many Walnut trees, bearing soft shelled Walnuts in fashion like bullets, and in the houses they found many of them, which the Indians had laid vp in store. The trees differed in nothing else from those of Spaine, nor from those which we had seene before, but onely that they haue a smaller leafe. There were many Mulberrie trees and Plum trees, which bare red plums like those of Spaine, and other gray, somewhat differing, but farre better. And all the trees are all the yeere so fruitfull, as if they were planted in orchards: and the woods were verie thinne. The Governour travelled two daies through the Countrie of Casqui, before hee came to the towne where the Cacique was: and the most of the way was alway by champaign ground, which was full of great townes, so that from one towne, you might see two or three. He sent an Indian to certifie the Cacique, that hee was comming to the place where hee was, with intent to procure his friendship, and so hold him as his brother. Whereunto he answered, That he should be welcome, and that he would receive him with speciall good wil, and accomplish all that his Lordship would command him. Hee sent him a present vpon the way: to wit, skinces, mantles, and fish: And after these complements, the Governour found all the townes; as he passed, inhabited with people, which peaceable attended his comming, and offered him skinces, mantles, and fish. The Cacique accom-

A towne.

Pacaha neere  
vnto Chieca.  
Great townes.The first towne  
of Casqui.

Another towne.

Woods trees  
with soft shells.Many Mulberrie  
trees and  
plum trees.Many great  
townes.

ganied with many Indians came out of the towne, and staied halfe a league on the way to receiue the Governour; and when hee came to him, he spake these words following:

Right high, right mighty, and renowned Lord, your Lordship is most hartlike welcome. Assooue as I had notice of your Lordship, of your power, and your perfections, although you came into my Countrie, killing and taking captiues the inhabitants thereof and my subiects: yet I determined to conforme my will vnto yours, and as your owne to interpret in good part all that your Lordship did: beleeuing, that it was conuenient it should be so for some iust respect, to prevent some future matter reuealed vnto your Lordship, and concealed from me. For well may a mischiefe be permitted to aoid a greater, and that good may come thereof: which I beleue will so fall out: For it is no reason to presume of so excellent a Prince, that the noblenesse of his heart, and the effect of his will would permit him to suffer any vnjust thing. My abilitie is so small to serue you as your Lordship deserueth, that if you respect not mine abundant good will, which humble offereth all kind of seruice, I deserue but little in your presence. But if it bee reason that this be esteemed, receiue the same, my selfe, my Countrie, and subiects for yours, and dispose of me and them at your pleasure. For if I were Lord of all the world, with the same good will should your Lordship by me be receiued, serued and obeyed.

The Governour answered him to the purpose, and satisfied him in few words. Within a while after both of them vsed words of great offers & courtesie the one to the other, and the Cacique requested him to lodge in his houses. The Governour, to preserue the peace the better, excused himselfe, saying, that hee would lodge in the fields. And because it was very hot, they camped neere certaine trees a quarter of a league from the towne. The Cacique went to his towne, and came againe with many Indians singing. Assooue as they came to the Governour, all of them prostrated themselves vpon the ground. Among these came two Indians that were blind. The Cacique made a speech: to aoid tediousnesse, I will onely tell in few words the substance of the matter. Hee said, that seeing the Governour was the sonne of the Sunne, and a great Lord, he besought him to doe him the fauour to giue sight to those two blind men. The blind men rose vp presently, and very earnestly requested the same of the Governour. He answered, That in the high heauens was he that had power to giue them health, and whatsoever they could aske: of him, whose seruant he was: And that this Lord made the heauens and the earth, and man after his owne likeness, and that he suffered vpon the crosse to save mankind, and rose againe the third day, and that he died as he was man, and as touching his diuinitie, he was, and is immortall; and that he ascended into heauen, where he standeth with his armes open to receiue all such as turne vnto him: and straightway he commanded him to make a yerie high crosse of wood, which was set vp in the highest place of the towne; declaring vnto him, that the Christians worshipped the same in resemblance and memorie of that whereon Christ suffered. The Governour and his men knelt downe before it, and the Indians did the like. The Governour willed him, that from thenceforth he should worship the same, and should aske whatsoever they stood in need of, of that Lord that hee told him was in heauen. Then he asked him how far it was from thence to Pacaha: he said, one daies iourne, and that at the end of his Countrie, there was a lake like a brooke which falleth into Rio Grande, and that hee would send men before to make a bridge whereby he might passe. The same day that the Governour departed thence, he lodged at a towne belonging to Casqui: and the next day hee passed in sight of other townes, and came to the lake, which was halfe a crossebow shot ouer, of a great depth and current. At the time of his coming, the Indians had made an end of the bridge, which was made of timber, laid one tree after another: and on one side it had a course of stakes higher then the bridge, for them that passed to take hold on. The Cacique of Casqui came to the Governour, and brought his people with him. The Governour sent word by an Indian to the Cacique of Pacaha; that though hee were enemie to the Cacique of Casqui, and though hee were there, yet he would doe him no disgrace nor hurt, if he would attend him peaceable, and embrace his friendship; but rather would intreate him as a brother. The Indian, which the Governour sent, came againe, and said, that the Cacique made moue account of that which hee told him, but fled with all his men out at the other side of the towne.

The chief  
tongue of the  
Cacique of  
Casqui.

A stone belong-  
ing to Casqui.  
Other townes.

(knowe. Presentlie the Governour entred, and ran before with the horsemen, that way, by which the Indians fled; and at another towne distant a quarter of a league from thence, they tooke many Indians: and assoone as the horsemen had taken them, they deliuered them to the Indians of Casqui, whom, because they were their enemies, with much circumspection and reioycing, they brought to the towne where the Christians were: and the greatest grieft they had, was this, that they could not get leaue to kill them. There were found in the towne many mantles, and Deere skines, Lions skins, and Beares skines, and many Cats skins. Many came so farre poorly appparelled, and there they clothed themselves: of the mantles; they made them cotes and cassocts, and some made gownes, and lined them with Cats skins; and likewise their cassocts. Of the Deeres skines, some made them also ierkins, shirts, hose and shoes: and of the Beare skines, they made them verie good clokes: for no water could pierce them. There were targets of raw oxe hides found there; with which hides they armed their horses.

Another towne.

Mantles,  
Deere skins,  
Lions skins,  
Beares skins,  
and Cats skins.Targets of raw  
oxe hides.

## Chap. XXVIII.

How the Cacique of Pacaha came peaceable to the Governour, and the Cacique of Casqui absented himselfe, and came againe to make his excuse, and how the Governour made them both friends.

Vpon Wednesday, the 19. of June, the Governour entred into Pacaha: He lodged in the towne, where the Cacique vsed to reside, which was very great, walled, and beset with towers, and many loopholes were in the towers and wall. And in the towne was great store of old Maize, and great quantitie of new in the fields. Within a league and halfe a league were great townes all walled. Where the Governour was lodged, was a great lake, that came neere vnto the wall: and it entred into a ditch that went round about the towne, wanting but a little to enuiron it round. From the lake to the great Riuer was made a weare by the which the fish came into it; which the Cacique kept for his recreation and sport: with nets, that were founde in the towne, they tooke as much as they would: and tooke they neuer so much, there was no want perceived. There was also great store of fish in many other lakes that were thereabout, but it was soft, and not so good as that which came from the Riuer, and the most of it was different from the fresh water fish of Spaine. There was a fish which they called Bagre: the third part of it was head, and it had on both sides the gilles, and along the sides great prickes like very sharpe aules: those of this kind that were in the lakes were as big as pikes: and in the Riuer, there were some of an hundred, and of an hundred and fiftie pounds weight, and many of them were taken with the hookes. There was another fish like barbilles; and another like breames, headed like a delicate fish, called in Spaine besuge, betweene red and gray. This was there of most esteeme. There was another fish called a pele fish: it had a snout of a cubit long, and at the end of the vpper lip it was made like a peece. There was another fish like a Westerne shad: And all of them had scales, except the bagres, and the pele fish. There was another fish, which sometimes the Indians brought vs, of the bignes of an hog, they called it the Perco fish: it had rows of teeth beneath and above. The Cacique of Casqui sent many times great presents of fish, maniles, and skines. Hee told the Governour that he would deliuer the Cacique of Pacaha into his hands. He went to Casqui, and sent many canoes vp the Riuer, and came himselfe by land with many of his people. The Governour with 40. horsemen and 60. footemen tooke him along with him vp the Riuer. And his Indians which were in the canoes, discovered where the Cacique of Pacaha was in a little Island, situated betweene two armes of the Riuer. And fife Christians entred into a canoe, wherein Don Antonio Osorio went before; to see what people the Cacique had with him. There were in the Isle fise or sixe thousand soules. And assoone as they saw them, supposing that the Indians which were in the other canoes were also Christians, the Cacique, and certaine which were in three canoes, which they had there with the, fled in great haste to the other side of the Riuer: The rest with great feare and danger, lept into the Riuer, where much people was drowned, especially women and little children. Presently the Governour which was on land, not knowing what

Pacaha, a very  
great towne beset  
with towers.Great walled  
townes.

Nets of fish.

The Eggs were  
of excellent fish  
in Rio Grande.Five or sixe  
thousand  
soules.

what had happened to Don Antonio, and those that went with him, commanded  $\frac{1}{2}$  Christians with all speed to enter with the Indians of Casqui in the canoes, which were quickly with Don Antonio in the little Island, where they tooke many men and women, and much goods. Great store of goods, which the Indians had laid vpon hurdles of canes, and rafts of timber to carrie ouer to the other side, draue down the riuer, wherewith the Indians of Casqui filled their canoes: and for feare lest the Christians would take it from them, the Cacique went home with them downe the Riuer, without taking his leaue of the Governour: wherupon the Governour was highly offended with him: and presently returning to Pacaha, he ouerran the Countrie of Casqui the space of two leagues, where hee tooke twentie or thirtie of his men. And because his horses were wearie, and he wanted time that day to goe any farther, hee returned to Pacaha, with determination within three or foure daies after to inuade Casqui. And presently he let loose one of the Indians of Pacaha, and sent word by him to the Cacique, that if hee would haue his friendship, he should repaire vnto him, and that both of them would make warre vpon Casqui. And presently came many Indians that belonged to Pacaha, and brought an Indian, in stead of the Cacique, which was discouered by the Caciques brother which was taken prisoner. The Governour wished the Indians that their Master himselfe should come: for hee knew very well that that was not hee, and told them, that they could doe nothing, which he knew not before they thought it. The next day the Cacique came, accompanied with many Indians, and with a present of much fish, skinnes and mantles. He made a speech that all were glad to heare, and concluded, saying, That though his Lordship, without his giuing occasion of offence had done him hurt in his Countrie and subjects, yet he would not therefore refuse to see him, and that he would alwaies be at his commandement. The Governour commanded his brother to be loosed, and other principall Indians that were taken prisoners. That day came an Indian from the Cacique of Casqui, and said, that his Lordship would come the next day to excuse himselfe of the error which he had committed, in going away without licence of the Governour. The Governour willed the messenger to signifie vnto him, that if he came not in his owne person, he would seeke him himselfe, and giue him such punishment as he deserved. The next day with all speede came the Cacique of Casqui, and brought a present to the Governour of many mantles, skinnes, and fish, and gaue him a daughter of his, saying, that he greatly desired to match his blood with the blood of so great a Lord as he was, and therefore he brought him his daughter, and desired him to take her to his wife. Hee made a long and discreet oration, giuing him great commendations, and concluded, saying, that hee should pardon his going away without licence, for that Crosses sake, which he had left with him: protesting that hee went away for shame of that which his meo had done without his consent. The Governour answered him, that hee had chosen a good patronne; and that if he had not come to excuse himselfe, hee had determined to seeke him, to burne his townes, to kill him and his people, and to destroy his Countrie. To which he replied saying:

The Cacique of  
Pacaha cometh  
to the Governour.

My Lord, I and mine are yours, and my Countrie likewise is yours: therefore if you had done so, you should haue destroyed your owne Countrie, and haue killed your owne people: whatsoever shall come vnto me from your hand, I will receive as from my Lord, as well punishment as reward: And know you, that the fauour which you did me in leauiing me the Crosse, I do acknowledge the same to be a very great one, and greater then I haue euer deserved. For you shall vnderstand, that with great droughts, the fields of Maiz of my Countrie were withered; and assoone as I and my people kneeled before the Crosse, and prayed for raine, presently our necessitie was relieved.

The Governour made him, and the Cacique of Pacaha friends; and set them with him at his table to dine with him: and the Caciques fell at variance about the seates, which of them should sit on his right hand. The Governour pacified them; telling them, that among the Christians, all was one to sit on the one side, or on the other, willing them so to beuaie themselves, seeing they were, with him, that no bodie might heare them, and that eury one should sit in the place that first hee lighted on. From thence he sent thirtie horsemen, and fiftie footemen to the Prouince of Caluca, to see if from thence hee might travel to

Gold and copper  
in Chisco.

A poore towne.

Great store of  
Oxen toward  
the North of  
Pacaha.  
This is like  
Quigau.

Chisco, where the Indians said, there was a worke of gold and copper. They travelled seuen daies iourne through a desert, and returned verie wearie, eating greene plums and stalkes of Maiz, which they found in a poore towne of sixe or seuen houses. From thence forward toward the North; the Indians said, That the Country was very ill inhabited, because it was very cold: And that there were such store of Oxen, that they could keepe no corne for them: that the Indians lived vpon their flesh. The Gouvernor seeing that toward that part the Countrie was so poore of Maiz, that in it, they could not bee sustained, demanded of the Indians, which way it was most inhabited: and they said, they had notice of a great Prouince, and a very plentifull Countrie, which was called Quigauite, and that it was toward the South..

#### Chap. XXV.

How the Gouvernor departed from Pacaha to Quigauite, and to Coligoa, and came to Cayas.

The Gouvernor rested in Pacaha fortie daies. In all which time the two Caciques serued him with great store of fish, mantles, and skinnes, and stroue who should doe him greatest seruice. At the time of his departure, the Cacique of Pacaha gaue him two of his sisters, saying, that in signe of loue that he might remember him, he should take them for his wiues: the ones name was Macanoche, and the others Mochila: they were well proportioned, tall of bodie, and well fleshed. Macanoche was of a good countenance, and in her shape and physiognomie looked like a Ladie: the other was strongly made. The Cacique of Casqui commanded the bridge to be repaired, and the Gouvernor returned through his Countrey, and lodged in the field neere his towne, whither hee came with great store of fish, and two women, which hee exchanged with two Christians for two shirts. He gaue vs a guide and men for carriages. The Gouvernor lodged at a towne of his, and the next day at another neere a Riuer, whither hee caused canoes to be brought for him to passe ouer, and with his leaue returned. The Gouvernor tooke his iourne toward Quigauite. The fourth day of August, he came to the towne, where the Cacique vsed to keep his residence: on the way he sent him a present of many mantles and skinnes, and not daring to stay for him in the towne, hee absented himselfe. The towne was the greatest that was seene, in Florida. The Gouvernor and his people lodged in the one halfe of it: and within few daies, seeing the Indians became liars, hee commanded the other halfe to be burned, because it should not bee a shelter for them, if they came to assault him by night, nor an hindrance to his horsemen for the resisting of them. There came an Indian very well accompanied with many Indians, saying, that hee was the Cacique. Hee deliuered him ouer to the men of his guard to look vnto him.

The Caciques  
towne.

A towne of  
Casqui.  
Another towne  
Quigauite.  
The fourth of  
August.

The greatest  
towne seene in  
Florida.

There went and came many Indians, and brought mantles and skinnes. The counterfeit Cacique, seeing so little opportunitie to execute his euill thought, as hee went one day abroad talking with the Gouvernor, he shewed him such a paire of heeles, that there was no Christian that could ouertake him, and he leaped into the Riuer, which was a crossebow shot from the towne: and assoone as hee was on the other side, many Indians that were thereabout making a great crie began to shoote. The Gouvernor passed presently ouer to them with horsemen and footemen, but they durst not tarric for him. Going forward on his way, hee came to a towne where the people were fled, and a little farther to a lake, where the horses could not passe, and on the otherside were many women. The footemen passed, and tooke many of them, and much spoile. The Gouvernor came to the Camp: And that night was a spie of the Indians taken by them of the watch. The Gouvernor asked him, whether he would bring him where the Cacique was? he said, he would. And he went presently to seeke him with twentie horsemen, and fiftie footemen: and after he had sought him a day, and an halfe, hee found him in a strong wood: And a souldiour not knowing him, gaue him a wound on the head; and he cried out, that he should not kill him, saying, that he was the Cacique: so he was taken, & an hundred and fortie of his men with him. The Gouvernor came againe to Quigauite, and willed him to cause his men to come to serue the Christians: and staying some daies for their coming, and seeing they came not, he sent two Captaines, eury

A towne.

every one his way on both sides of the Riuer with horsemen and footemen. They tooke many men and women. Now seeing the hurt which they sustained for their rebellion, they came to see what the Governour would command them, and passed to and fro many times, and brought presents of cloth and fish. The Cacique and his two wiues were in the lodging of the Governour loose, and the halbardiers of his guard did keep them. The Governour asked them which way the Countrey was most inhabited? They said, that toward the South downe the Riuer, were great townes and Caciques, which commanded great Countreies, and much people: And that toward the Northwest, there was a Prouince neere to certaine mountaines, that was called Coligoa. The Governour and all the rest thought good to goe first to Coligoa saying, that peradventure the mountains would make some difference of soile, and that beyond them there might be some gold or siluer: As for Quigaute, Casqui, and Pacaha, they were plaine Countreies, fat grounds, and full of good meadowes on the Riuers, where the Indians sowed large fields of Maiz. From Tascaluca to Rio grande, or the great Riuer, is about 300. leagues: it is a very low Countrey, and hath many lakes. From Pacaha to Quigaute may bee an hundred leagues. The Governour left the Cacique of Quigaute in his owne towne: And an Indian, which was his guide, led him through great woods without any way leuen daies iourne through a desert, where, at euery lodging, they lodged in lakes and pooles in verie shold water: there were such store of fish, that they killed them with cudgils; and the Indians which they carried in chaines, with the mud troubled the waters, and the fish being therewith, as it were, astonied, came to the top of the water, and they tooke as much as they listed. The Indians of Coligoa had no knowledge of the Christians, & when they came so neere the towne, that the Indians saw them, they fled vp a Riuer, which passed neere the towne, and some leaped into it; but the Christians went on both sides of the Riuer, and tooke them. There were many men and women taken, and the Cacique with them. And by his commandment within three daies came many Indians with a present of mantles and Deeres skinnes, and two oxe hides: And they reported, that 5. or 6. leagues from thence toward the North, there were many of these oxen, and that because the Countrey was cold, it was euill inhabited: That the best Countrey which they knew, the most plentifull, and most inhabited, was a Prouince called Cayas, lying toward the South. From Quigaute to Coligoa may be 40. leagues. This towne of Coligoa stood at the foote of an hill, on the bank of a meane Riuer, of the bignesse of Cayas, the Riuer that passeth by Estremadura. It was a fat soile and so plentifull of Maiz, that they cast out the old, to bring in the new. There was also great plentie of French beanes and pompions. The French beanes were greater, and better than those of Spaine, and likewise the pompions, and being roasted, they haue almost the taste of chestnuts. The Cacique of Coligoa gaue a guide to Cayas, and staid behind in his owne towne. Wee trauelled siue daies, and came to the Prouince of Patiscema. The house of the Cacique was found couered with Deeres skinnes of diuers colours and works drawne in them, and with the same in manner of carpets was the ground of the house couered. The Cacique left it so, that the Governour might lodge in it, in token that he sought peace and his friendship. But hee durst not tarrise his coming. The Governour, seeing he had absernted himselfe, sent a Capitaine with horsemen and footemen to seeke him. Hee found much people, but by reason of the roughnesse of the Countrey, hee tooke none saue a few women and children. The towne was little and scattering, and had very little Maiz. For which cause the Governour speedilie departed from thence. Hee came to another towne called Tatalicoya, hee carried with him the Cacique thereof, which guided him to Cayas. From Tatalicoya are foure daies iourne to Cayas. When hee came to Cayas, and saw the towne scattered; hee thought they had told him a lie, and that it was not the Prouince of Cayas, because they had informed him that it was well inhabited: Hee threatened the Cacique, charging him to tell him where hee was: and he and other Indians which were taken neere about that place, affirmed that this was the towne of Cayas, and the best that was in that Countrey, and that though the houses were distant the one from the other, yet the ground that was inhabited was great, and that there was great store of people, and many fields of Maiz. This towne was called Tanico: he pitched his Campe in the best part of it neere

vnto a River. The same day that the Gouvernour came thither, he went a league farther with certaine horsemen, and without finding any people, hee found many skinnes in a path-way, which the Cacique had left there, that they might bee found, in token of peace. For so is the custome in that Countrie.

## Chap. XXVI.

How the Gouvernour discovered the Prouince of Tulla, and what happened vnto him.

The Gouvernour rested a moneth in the Prouince of Cayas. In which time the horses fattened and thrived more, then in other places in a longer time, with the great plentie of Maiz and the leaues thereof, which I thinke was the best that hath been seene, and they dranke of a lake of very hot water, and somewhat brackish, and they dranke so much, that it swelled in their bellies when they brought them from the watering. Vntill that time the Christians wanted salt, and there they made good store, which they carried along with them. The Indians doe carrie it to other places to exchange it for skinnes and mangles. "They make it along the River, which when it ebbeth, leaue it vpon the vpper part of the sand. And because they cannot make it, without much sand mingled with it, they throw it into certaine baskets which they haue for that purpose, broad at the mouth, and narrow at the bottom, and set it in the aire vpon a barre, and throw water into it, and set a small vessell vnder it, wherein it falleth: Being strained and set to boile vpon the fire, when the water is sodden away, the salt remaineth in the bottoime of the pan." On both sides of the River the Countrie was full of sowne fields, and there was store of Maiz. The Indians durst not come ouer where wee were: & when some of them shewed themselves, the souldiers that saw them called vnto them; then the Indians passed the River, and came with them where the Gouvernour was. He asked the for the Cacique. They said, that he remained quiet, but that he durst not shew himselfe. The Gouvernour presently sent him word, that he should come vnto him, and bring him a guide and an interpreter for his iourne, if he made account of his friendship: and if he did not so, he would come himselfe to seeke him, and that it would bee the worse for him. Hee waited three daies, and seeing he came not, he went to seeke him, and brought him prisoner with 150. of his men. He asked him, whether hee had notice of any great Cacique, & which way the Countrie was best inhabited. Hee answered, that the best Countrie thereabout was a Prouince toward the South, a day and an halfe iourne, which was called Tulla; and that he could giue him a guide, but no interpreter, because the speech of that Countrie was different from his, and because he and his ancestors had alwaies warres with the Lords of that Prouince; therefore they had no commerce, nor vnderstood one anothers language. Immediately the Gouvernour with certaine horsemen, and 50. footemen, departed toward Tulla, to see if the Countrie were such, as hee might passe through it with all his companie: and assoone as he arriued there, and was espied of the Indians, the Countrie gathered together, and assoone as 15. and 20. Indians could assemble themselves, they set vpon the Christians: and seeing that they did handle them shrewdly, and that the horsemen overtook them when they fled, they gat vp into the tops of their houses, and sought to defend themselves with their arrowes: and being beaten downe from one, they gat vp vpon another. And while our men pursued some, others set vpon them another way. Thus the skirmish lasted so long, that the horses were tired, and they could not make them runne. The Indians killed there one horse, and some were hurt. There were 15. Indians slaine there, and 40. women and boies were taken prisoners. For whatsoever Indian did shoot at them, if they could come by him, they put him to the sword. The Gouvernour determined to returne toward Cayas, before the Indians had time to gather a head: and presently that evening, going part of y night to leaue Tulla, he lodged by the way, and the next day came to Cayas: and within three daies after he departed thence toward Tulla with all his companie: He carried the Cacique along with him, and among all his men, there was not one found that could vnderstand the speech of Tulla. He staid three daies by the way, and the day that he came thither, he found the towne abandoned:

A lake of hot  
and somewhat  
brackish water.  
Store of salt  
made in Cayas.

Tulla.

The Gouvernour  
cometh againe  
to Tulla with  
his companie.

for

for the Indians durst not tarrie his coming. But assoone as they knew that the Governour was in Tulla, the first night about 5 morning watch, they came in two squadrons two severall waies, with their bowes and arrowes, and long staves like pikes. Assoone as they were descried, both horse and foot sallied out vpon them, where many of the Indians were slaine: And some Christians and horses were hurt: Some of the Indians were taken prisoners, whereof the Governour sent sixe to the Cacique, with their right hands and noses cut off: <sup>Indians have their right hands and noses cut off.</sup> and sent him word, that if he came not to him to excuse and submit himselfe, that hee would come to seeke him, and that hee would doe the like to him, and as many of his as hee could find, as hee had done to those which hee had sent him: and gave him three daies respite for to come. And this he gaue them to vnderstand by signes, as well as hee could, for there was no interpretour. At the three daies end, there came an Indian laden with Oxe hides. He came weeping with great sobs, and comming to the Governour cast himselfe downe at his feete: He tooke him vp, and he made a speech, but there was nowie that vnderstood him. The Governour by signes commanded him, to retorne to the Cacique, and to will him, to send him an interpretour, which could vnderstand the men of Cayas. The next day came three Indians laden with oxe hides: and within three daies after came 200. <sup>Oxe hides.</sup> Indians, and among them one that vnderstood them of Cayas: Who, after a long oration of excuses of the Cacique, and praises of the Governour, concluded with this, that he and the other were come thither on the Caciques behalfe, to see what his Lordship would command him to doe, for he was readie at his commandement. The Governour and all his companie were verie glad. For in no wise could they trauell without an interpretour. The Governour commanded him to be kept safe, and bad him tell the men that came with him, that they should retorne to the Cacique, and signifie vnto him, that he pardoned him for that which was past, and thanked him much for his presents and interpretour, which he had sent him, and that he would be glad to see him, and that he should come the next day to talke with him. After three daies, the Cacique came, and 80. Indians with him: <sup>The Cacique of Tulla.</sup> and himselfe and his men came weeping into the Camp, in token of obedience and repentance for the error passed, after the manner of that Countrie: He brought a present of many <sup>Many Oxe hides which would be there, as well as sheepes wool.</sup> oxe hides: which, because the Countrie was cold, were verie profitable, and serued for couerlets, because they were very soft, and wolled like sheepe. Not farre from thence <sup>Crosses Harour.</sup> toward the North were many oxen. The Christians saw them not, nor came into the Countrie where they were, because those parts were euil inhabited, and had small store of <sup>Many Oxe hides which would be there, as well as sheepes wool.</sup> Maiz where they were bred. The Cacique of Tulla made an oration to the Governour, wherein he excused himselfe, and offered him his Countrie, subiects, and person. <sup>Aswell The great eloquence of the Indians.</sup> Anwell this Cacique as the others, and all those which came to the Governour on their behalfe, deliuered their message or speech in so good order, that no oratour could vtter the same more eloquentlie.

## Chap. XXVII.

How the Governour went from Tulla to Autiamque, where he passed the winter.

The Governour enformed himselfe of all the Countrie round about; and vnderstood, that toward the West was a scattered dwelling, and that toward the Southeast were great townes, especially in a Prouince called Autiamque, tenne daies iournie from Tulla; which might be about 80. leagues; and that it was a plentifull Countrie of Maiz. And because winter came on, and that they could not trauell two or three moneths in the yeere for cold, waters, and snow: and fearing, that if they should stay so long in the scattered dwelling, they could not be sustained; and also because the Indians said, that neere to Autiamque was a great water, and according to their relation, the Governour thought it was some arme of the Sea: And because he now desired to send newes of himselfe to Cuba, that some supplie of men & horses might be sent vnto him: for it was about three yeeres, since Donna Isabella, which was in Hamana, or any other person in Christendome had heard of him, and by this time, he had lost 250. men, and 130. horses) he determined to winter in Autiamque, and <sup>A winter of two or three months.</sup> the

the next spring, to goe to the sea coast, and make two brigantines, and send one of them to Cuba, and the other to Nueva Espanna, that that which went in safetie, might give newes of him: Hoping with the goods which he had in Cuba, to furnish himselfe againe, and to attempt the discouray and conquest toward the West: for he had not yet come where Cabeça de Vaca had been. Thus having sent away the two Caciques of Cayas and Tulla, he tooke his iourne toward Autiamque: Hee travelled five daies ower very rough mountains, and came to a towne called Quipana, where no Indians could be taken for the roughness of the Countrie: and the towne being betwene hilles, there was an ambush laid, wherewith they tooke two Indians; which told them, that Autiamque was sixe daies iourne from thence, and that there was another Province toward the South eight daies iourne off, plentiful of Maiz, and very well peopled, which was called Guahate. But because Autiamque was neerer, and the most of the Indians agreed of it, the Governour made his iourne that way. In three daies he came to a towne called Anoixi. He sent a Capitaine before with 30. horsemen, and 50. footemen, and tooke the Indians carelesse, hee tooke many men and women prisoners. Within two daies after the Governour came to another towne called Catamaya, and lodged in the fields of the towne. Two Indians came with a false message from the Cacique to know his determination. Hee had them tell their Lord, that hee should come and speake with him. The Indians returned and came no more, nor any other message from the Cacique. The next day the Christians went to the towne, which was without people: they tooke as much Maiz as they needed. That day they lodged in a wood, and the next day they came to Autiamque. They found much Maiz laid vp in store, and French beanes, and walnuts, and prunes, great store of all sorts. They tooke some Indians which were gathering together the stuffe which their wives had hidden. This was a champion Countrie, and well inhabited. The Governour lodged in the best part of the towne, and commanded presently to make a fence of timber round about the Campe distant from the houses, that the Indians might not hurt them without by fire. And measuring the ground by paces, hee appointed every one his part to doe according to the number of Indians which he had: presently the timber was brought by them; and in three daies there was an inclosure made of very hie and thicke posts thrust into the ground, and many faines laid across. Hard by this towne passed a River, that came out of the Province of Cayas: and above and beneath it was very well peopled. Thither came Indians on the Caciques behalfe with a present of mantles and skinnies; and an halving Cacique, subject to the Lord of Autiamque, Lord of a towne called Tietiquaque, came many times to visit the Governour, and to bring him presents of such as hee had. The Cacique of Autiamque sent to know of the Governour, how long time hee meant to stay in his Countrie? And understanding that he meant to stay about three daies, he neuer sent any more Indians, nor any other message, but conspired with the same Cacique to rebell. Divers introdes were made, wherein there were many men and women taken, and the same Cacique among the rest. The Governour respecting the services which he had receiued of him, reprehended and admonished him, and set him at libertie, and gave him two Indians to carrie him in a chaire vpon their shoulders. The Cacique of Autiamque desiring to thrust the Governour out of his Countrie, set spies ower him. And an Indian comming one night to the gate of the inclosure, a soldier that watched espied him, and stepping behind the gate, as he came in, hee gave him such a thrust, that he fell downe; and so he carried him to the Governour: and as hee asked him wherefore he came, not being able to speake, hee fell downe dead. The night following the Governour commanded a souldiour to give the alarme, and to say that he had scene Indians, to see how ready they would be to answere the alarme. And hee did so sometimes as well there, as in other places, when he thought that his men were carelesse, & reprehended such as were slacke: And as well for this cause, as in regard of doing their dutie, when the alarme was giuen, every one sought to be the first that should answere. They staid in Autiamque three moneths with great plenty of Maiz, French beanes, Walnuts, Prunes, and Comes: which untill that time they knew not how to catch. And in Autiamque the Indians taught them how to take them: which was, with great sprindges, which lifted vp their feete from the ground: And the

Quipana, first  
daies iourne  
from Tulla.

Guahate.

Anoixi.

Catamaya.

Autiamque sixe  
daies iourne  
from Quipana.

A River.

Tietiquaque.

Great sprind-  
ge.

Three moneths  
staid in Au-  
tiamque.

PRINTED BY  
J. STURTEVANT  
AT THE  
PRINTING OFFICE  
OF  
J. STURTEVANT  
IN  
NEW YORK

the snare was made with a strong string, whereunto was fastened a knot of a cane, which ran close about the neck of the conic, because they should not gnaw the string. They took many in the fields of Maiz, especially when it frozed or snowed. The Christians staid there one whole moneth so inclosed with snow, that they went not out of the towne: and when they wanted firewood, the Governour with his horsemen going and coming many times to the wood, which was two crossebow shot from the towne, made a pathway, whereby the footemen went for wood. In this meane space, some Indians which went loose, killed many conies with their gins, and with arrows. These conies were of two sorts, some were like those of Spaine, and the other of the same colour and fashion, and as big as great Hares, longer, and having greater loines.

Foot and shooes  
A month of  
snow.

Conies of two  
sorts.

Chap. XXVIII.

How the Governour went from Autiamque to Nilco, and from thence to Guacoza.

Vpon Monday the sixt of March 1542, the Governour departed from Autiamque to seeke Nilco, which the Indians said was weere the Great river, with determination to come to the Sea, and procure some succour of men and horses: for hee had now but three hundred men of warre, and fortie horses, and some of them lame, which did nothing but helpe to make vp the number: and for want of iron they had gone about a yeere vnshod: and because they were used to it in the plaine countrie, it did them no great harme. John Ortiz died in Autiamque; which grieved the Governour very much: because that without an Interpreter hee feared to enter farre into the land, where he might be lost. From thence forward a youth that was taken in Cutifachiqui did serue for Interpreter, which had by that time learned somewhat of the Christians language. The death of John Ortiz was so great a mischief for the discouraging inward, or going out of the land, that to learne of the Indians, that which in foure words hee declared, they needed a whole day with the youth: and most commonly hee vnderstood quite contrarie that which was asked him: whereby it often happened that the way that they went one day, and sometimes two or three daies, they turned backe, and went astray through the wood here and there. The Governour spent ten daies in traueiling from Autiamque to a prouince called Ayays; and came to a towne that stood neere the River that passeth by Cayas and Autiamque. There hee commanded a barge to be made, A River, wherewith he passed the River. When he had passed the River there fell out such weather, that foure daies he could not trauell for snow. Assoone as it gaue ouer snowing, he went three daies iourney through a Wilderness, and a countrie so low, and so full of lakes and quill waies, that hee travelled one time a whole day in water, sometimes knee deepe, sometimes to the stirrup, and sometimes they swamme. He came to a towne called Tutelpinco, abandoned, and without Maiz: there passed by it a lake, that entered into the river, which carried a great streame and force of water. Five Christians passing ouer it in a periagua, which the Governour had sent with a Captaine, the periagua ouerset: some took hold on it, some on the trees that were in the lake. One Francis Sebastian, an honest man of Villa noua de Barca Rots, was drowned there. The Governour went a whole day along the lake seeking passage, and could finde none, nor any way that did passe to the other side. Comming againe at night to the towne hee found two peaceable Indians, which shewed him the passage, and which way hee was to goe. There they made of canes and of the timber of houses thatched with canes, rafts wherewith they passed the lake. They traueiled three daies, and came to a towne of the territorie of Nilco, called Tianto. There they took thirtie Indians, and among them two principall men of this towne. The Governour sent a Captaine with horsemen and footmen before to Nilco, because the Indians might haue no time to carrie away the provision. They passed through three or foure great townes; and in the towne where the Cacique was resident, which was two leagues from the place, where the Governour remained, they found many Indians with their bowes and arrowes, in manner as though they would haue staid to fight, which did compass the towne; and assoone as they saw the Christians come neere them without misdoubling them, they set the Caciques

The death of  
John Ortiz, and  
the great paine  
of him being  
their interpreter  
gone.

Ayays.

Great snow about  
the mouth of  
March.

Tutelpinco.  
A great lake.

Rafts wherewith  
they passed the  
lake.  
Tianto.

Three or foure  
great townes.

Caciques house on fire, and fled ouer a lake that passed neere the towne, through which the horses could not passe. The next day being Wednesday the 29. of March the Governour came to Nilco: he lodged with all his men in the Caciques towne, which stood in a plaine field, which was inhabited for the space of a league: and within a league and halfe a league were other very great townes, wherein was great store of Maiz, of French beanes, of Walnuts, and Prunes. This was the best inhabited countrie, that was seene in Florida, and had most store of Maiz, except Coça, and Apalache. There came to the campe an Indian accompanied with others, and in the Caciques name gaue the Governour a mantle of Marterns skinnes, and a cordon of perles. The Governour gaue him a few small Margarites, which are certaine beades much esteemed in Peru, and other things, wherewith he was very well contented. He promised to returne within two daies, but neuer came againe: but on the contrarie the Indians came by night in canoes, and carried away all the Maiz they could, and made them cabins on the other side of the Riuer in the thickest of the wood, because they might flee if wee should goe to seeke them. The Governour seeing hee came not at the time appointed, commanded an ambush to be laid about certaine store-houses neere the lake, whither the Indians came for Maiz: where they tooke two Indians, who told the Governour, that hee which came to visite him, was not the Cacique, but was sent by him vnder pretence to spie whether the Christians were carelesse, and whether they determined to settle in that country or to goe forward. Presently the Governour sent a Capitaine with footmen and horsemen ouer the riuer; and in their passage they were descried of the Indians, and therefore he could take but tenne or twelue men and women, with whom hee returned to the campe. This Riuer which passed by Nilco, was that which passed by Cayas and Autiamque, and fell into Rio grande, or the Great Riuer, which passed by Pachaba and Aquixo neere vnto the prouince of Guachoya: and the Lord thereof came vp the Riuer in canoes to make warre with him of Nilco. On his behalf there came an Indian to the Governour and said vnto him, That he was his seruant, and prayed him so to hold him, and that within two daies hee would come to kisse his Lordships hands: an at the time appointed he came with some of his principal Indians, which accompanied him, and with words of great offers and courtesie hee gaue the Governour a present of many mantles and Deeres skinnes. The Governour gaue him some other things in recompense, and honoured him much. Hee asked him what townes there were downe the Riuer? Hee answered that he knew none other but his owne: and on the other side of the Riuer a prouince of a Cacique called Quigalta. So hee tooke his leaue of the Governour and went to his owne towne. Within few daies the Governour determined to goe to Guachoya, to learne there whether the Sea were neere, or whether there were any habitation neere, where hee might relieue his companie, while the brigantines were making, which he meant to send to the land of the Christians. As he passed the Riuer of Nilco, there came in canoes Indians of Guachoya vp the streame, and when they saw him, supposing that he came to seeke them to doe them some hurt, they returned-downe the Riuer, and informed the Cacique thereof: who with all his people, spoiling the towne of all that they could carrie away, passed that night ouer to the other side of Rio grande, or the Great Riuer. The Governour sent a Capitaine with fiftie men in sixe canoes downe the Riuer, and went himselfe by land with the rest: hee came to Guachoya vpon Sunday the 17. of April: he lodged in the towne of the Cacique, which was inclosed about, and seated a crossebow shot distant from the Riuer. Here the Riuer is called Tamaliseu, and in Nilco Tapatu, and in Coça Mico, and in the port or mouth Ri.

## Chap. XXIX.

Of the message which the Governour sent to Quigalta, and of the answere which he returned: and of the things which happened in this time.

AS soone as the Governour came to Guachoya, hee sent Iohn Danusco with as many men as could goe in the canoes vp the Riuer. For when they came downe from Nilco, they saw on the other side the Riuer new cabins made. Iohn Danusco went and brought the canoes loden

laden with Maiz, French-beanes, Prunes, and many Issues made of the substance of prunes. That day came an Indian to the Governour from the Cacique of Guachoya, and said, that his Lord would come the next day. The next day they saw many canoes come vp the River, and on the other side of the great River, they assembled together in the space of an hour: they consulted whether they should come or not; & at length concluded to come, and crossed the River. In the come the Cacique of Guachoya, and brought with him many Indians with great store of Fish, Dogges, Deeres skinned, and Mantles: And as soone as they landed, they went to the lodging of the Governour, and presented him their gifts, and the Cacique uttered these words:

Many Issues made of prunes.

Mightie and excellent Lord, I beseech your Lordship, to pardon mee the error which I committed in absenting my selfe, and not trying in this towne to haue received and serued your Lordship: since, to obtaine this opportunitie of time, was, and is as much as a great victorie to me: But I feared that, which I needed not to haue feared, and so did that which was not reason to do: But as haste maketh waste, and I removed without deliberation; so, as soone as I thought on it, I determined not to follow the opinion of the foolish, which is, to continue in their error: but to imitate the wise and discreet, in changing any counsell, and so I came to see what your Lordship will command me to doe, that I may serue you in all things that are in my power.

The Governour received him with much ioy, and gave him thanks for his present, and offer: He asked him, whether hee had any notice of the Sea: Hee answered, no, nor of any towne downe the River on that side; saue that two leagues from thence was one towne of a principall Indian a subject of his; and on the other side of the River, three daies iourne from thence downe the River, was the Prouince of Quigala, which was the greatest Lord that was in that Countrie. The Governour thought that the Cacique lied vnto him, totrid him out of his owne towne; and sent Iohn Danisco with eight horsemen downe the River, to see what habitation there was, and to informe himselfe, if there were any notice of the Sea: Hee travelled eight daies, and at his returne hee said, that in all that time he was not able to go above 14. or 15. leagues, because of the great creekes that came out of the River; and groves of canes, and thicke woods that were along the banks of the River, and that hee had found no habitation. The Governour fell into great damps to see how hard it was to get to the Sea: and worse, because his men and horses euery day diminished, being without succour to sustaine themselves in the country: and with that thought he fell sick. But before hee tooke his bed hee sent an Indian to the Cacique of Quigala to tell him, that hee was the Child of the Sunne, and that all the way that hee came all men obeyed and serued him, that he requested him to accept of his friendship, and come vnto him: for he would be very glad to see him; and in signe of loue and obedience to bring something with him of that which in his countrie was most esteemed. The Cacique answered by the same Indian:

The Governour fell sick of thought.

That whereas he said he was the Child of the Sunne, if he would drie vp the River he would beleue him: and touching the rest, that hee was went in visit none; but rather that all those of whom he had notice did visit him, serued, obeyed and paid him tributes willingly or perforce: therefore if hee desired to see him, it were best he should come thither: that if hee came in peace, he would receive him with speciall good will; and if in warre, in like manner hee would attend him in the towne where he was, and that for him or any other hee would not shrinke one foote backe.

A most wittie and sweet answer of the Cacique of Quigala.

By that time the Indian returned with this answer, the Governour had betaken himselfe to bed, being euill handled with feuers, and was much aggrieved, that he was not in case to passe presently the River and to seeke him, to see if he could abate that pride of his, considering the River went now very strongly in those parts; for it was nere halfe a league broad, and 16. fathomes deep, and very furious, and ranne with a great current; and on both sides there were many Indians, and his power was not now so great, but that hee had need to helpe himselfe rather by slight then by force. The Indians of Guachoya came euery day with fish in such numbers, that the towne was full of them. The Cacique said, that on

a certain night hee of Quigalta would come to give battell to the Governour. Which the Governour imagined that he had devised, to drive him out of his countrey; and commanded him to bee put in hold; and that night and all the rest, there was good watch kept. Hee asked him wherefore Quigalta came not? He said that hee came, but that he saw him prepared, and therefore durst not give the attempt; and hee was earnest with him to send his Captaines over the River, and that he would aide him with many men to set vpon Quigalta. The Governour told him that assoone as he was recovered, himselfe would seeke him out. And seeing how many Indians came daily to the towne, and what store of people were in that countrey, fearing they should all conspire together and plot some treason against him; and because the towne had some open gaps which were not made an end of inclosing, besides the gates which they went in and out by: because the Indians should not thinke he feared them, he let them all alone vnpaired; and commanded the horsemen to be appointed to them, and to the gates: and all night the horsemen went the round; and two and two of every squadron rode about, and visited the skouts that were without the towne in their standings by the passages, and the crossebowmen that kept the canoes in the River. And because the Indians should stand in feare of them, hee determined to send a Captaine to Nilco, for those of Guachoya had told him that it was inhabited; that by using them cruelly, neither the one nor the other should presume to asaille him; and hee sent Nunez de Tour with fiftene horsemen, and Iohn de Guzman Captaine of the footmen with his companie in canoes vpon the River. The Cacique of Guachoya sent for many canoes and many warlike Indians to goe with the Christians; and the Captaine of the Christians, called Nunez de Tour, went by land with his horsemen, and two leagues before hee came to Nilco hee staid for Iohn de Guzman, and in that place they passed the River by night: the horsemen came first, and in the morning by breake of day in sight of the towne they lighted vpon a place; which assoone as hee perceived the Christians, crying out amaine fled to the towne to give warning. Nunez de Tour and his companie made such speed, that before the Indians of the towne could fully come out, they were vpon them: it was champion ground that was inhabited, which was about a quarter of a league. There were about fife or sixe thousand people in the towne: and, as many people came out of the houses; & fled from one house to another, and many Indians came flocking together from all parts, there was neuer a horseman that was not alone among many. The Captaine had commanded that they should not spare the life of any male. Their disorder was so great, that there was no Indian that shot an arrow at any Christian: The shriekes of women and children were so great, that they made the eares deafe of those that followed them. There were slaine an hundred Indians, little more or lesse: and many were wounded with great wounds, whom they suffered to escape to strike a terror in the rest that were not there: There were some so cruell and butcherlike, that they killed old and young, and all that they met, though they made no resistance: and those which presumed of themselves for their valour, and were taken for such, brake through the Indians, bearing downe many with their stirrups and breasts of their horses; and some they wounded with their lauces, and so let them goe: and when they saw any youth or woman they tooke them, and deliuered them to the footmen. "These mens sinnes by Gods permission lighted on their own heads: who, because they would seeme valiant, became cruell; sheiring themselves extreme costards in the sight of all men, when as most neede of valour was required, and afterward they came to a shameful death." Of the Indians of Nilco were taken prisoners, fourescore women and children, and much spoile. The Indians of Guachoya kept back before they came at the towne, and staid without, beholding the success of the Christians with the men of Nilco. And when they saw them put to flight, and the horsemen busie in killing of them, they hastened to the houses to rob, and filled their canoes with the spoile of the goods; and returned to Guachoya before the Christians; and wondering much at the sharpe dealing which they had seenne them to toward the Indians of Nilco, they told their Cacique all that had passed with great astonishment.

Five or sixe thousand people in Nilco.

\* Chap. 31.

## Chap. XXX.

Of the death of the Adelantado Fernando de Soto: And how Lays Moscoso de Alvarado was elected Governour in his stead.

The Governour felt in himselfe that the houre approached, wherein hee was to leave this present life, and called for the Kings officers, Captaines and principall persons, to whom he made a speech, saying:

That now, he was to goe to give an account before the presence of God of all his life past: and since it pleased him to take him in such a time, and that the time was come that he knew his death, that he his most unworthie servant did yeeld him many thanks therefore; and desired all that were present and absent (whom he confessed himselfe to be much beholding vnto for their singular vertues, loue and loyaltie, which himselfe had well tried in the trauels, which they had suffered, which alwaies in his mind he did hope to satisfie and reward, when it should please God to give him rest, with more prosperitie of his estate,) that they would pray, to God for him, that for his mercie he would forgiaue him his sinnes, and receiue his soule into eternall glorie: and that they would quit and free him of the charge which hee had ouer them, and ought vnto them all, and that they would pardon him for some wrongs which they might haue receiued of him: And to auoid some diuision, which vpon his death might fall out vpon the choice of his successour, he requested them to elect a principall person, and able to gouerne, of whom all should like well; and when he was elected, they should sweare before him to obey him; and that he would thank them very much in so doing; because the griefe that he had, would somewhat be asswaged, and the paine that he felt, because he left them in so great confusion, to wit, in leauing them in a strange Countrie, where they knew not where they were.

Balthazar de Gallegos answered in the name of all the rest: And first of all comforting him, he set before his eies how short the life of this world was, and with how many troubles and miseries it is accompanied, and how God shewed him a singular fauor which soonest left it: telling him many other things fit for such a time. And for the last point, that since it pleased God to take him to himselfe, although his death did iustly grieue them much, yet as wel he, as al the rest, ought of necessitie to conforme themselves to the will of God. And touching the Governour which he commanded they should elect, he besought him, that it would please his Lordship to name him which he thought fit, and him they would obey. And presently he named Lays de Moscoso de Alvarado his Captaine generall. And presently he was sworne by all that were present and elected for Governour. The next day, being the 21. of May,

1542. departed out of this life, the valorous, virtuous, and valiant Captaine, Don Fernando de Soto, Governour of Cuba, and Adelantado of Florida: whom fortune advanced, as it vseth to doe others, that hee might haue the higher fall. He departed in such a place, and at such a time, as in his sickness he had but little comfort; and the danger wherein all his people were of perishing in that Countrie, which appeared before their eies, was cause sufficient, why every one of them had need of comfort, and why they did not visit nor accompany him as they ought to haue done. Lays de Moscoso, determined to conceale his death from the Indians, because Ferdinando de Soto had made them beleue, That the Christians were immortal; and also because they tooke him to be hardie, wise, and valiant; and if they should know that he was dead, they would bee bold to set vpon the Christians, though they liued peaceable by them, in regard of their disposition, and because they were nothing constant, and beleued all that was tolde them, the Adelantado made them beleue, that he knew some things that passed in secret among themselves, without their knowledge, how, or in what manner he came by them: and that the figure which appeared in a glasse, which he shewed them, did tell him whatsoever they practised and went about; and therefore neither in word nor deed durst they attempt any thing that might bee preiudiciall vnto him.

As soone as he was dead, Lays de Moscoso commanded to put him secretly in an house, where hee remained three daies; and remoouing him from thence, commanded him to be

The death of  
Don Ferdinando  
de Soto the 21.  
of May. 1542.  
Conceit.

A vnicle narra-  
tion.

buried in the night at one of the gates of the towne within the wall. And as the Indians had seene him sick, and missed him, so did they suspect what might bee. And passing by the place where hee was buried, seeing the earth mowed, they looked and spake; one to another. Lays de Moscoso vnderstanding of it, commanded him to be taken vp by night, and to cut a great deale of sand into the mantles, wherein he was wanded vp, wherein hee was carried in a canoe, and throwne into the middes of the River. The Cacique of Guachoya inquired for him, demanding what was become of his brother and Lord, the Governour: our Lays de Moscoso told him, that hee was gon to heauen, as many other times hee did: and because hee was to stay there certaine daies, hee had left him in his place; The Cacique thought with himselfe that he was dead, and commanded two young and well proportioned Indians to be brought thither; and said, that y<sup>e</sup> use of that Countrey was when any Lord died, to kill Indians to wait vpon him, and serue him by the way: and for that purpose by his commandement were thuse come thither: and prayed Lays de Moscoso to command them to be beheaded, that they might attend and serue his Lord and brother; Lays de Moscoso told him; that the Governour was not dead, but gone to heauen; and that of his owne Christian souldiers, he had taken such as he needed to serue him; & prayed him to command those Indians to be loosed, and not to use any such bad custome from thenceforth: straight way hee commanded them to be loosed, and to get them home to their houses: And one of them would not goe; saying; that hee would not serue him, that without desert had iudged him to death; but that hee would serue him as long as hee lived; which had ended his life.

This is also the  
cause of the  
old Tawney.

Some hundred  
hundred.

Lays de Moscoso caused all the goods of the Governour to be sold at an outcrye: to wit, two men slaves, & two women slaves, and three horses, and 700 hogges: For every slave or horse, they gaue two or thre thousand ducats: which were to be paid at the first melting of gold or silver, or at the diuision of their portion of inheritance: And they entered into bonds, though in the Countrey there was not wherewith, to pay it within a yere after, and put in sureties for the same: Such as in Spaine had no goods to bind, gaue two hundred ducats for an hog, giuing assurance after the same maner: Those which had any goods in Spaine, bought with more feare, and bought the lesse: From that time forward most of the companie had swine, and brought them vp, and fed vpon them; and obserued Fridays and Saturdaies, and the eueninges of fasts, which before they did not: For sometimes in two or three moneths they did eate no flesh, and whensoever they could come by it, they did eate it.

#### Chap. XXXI.

How the Governour Lays de Moscoso departed from Guachoya, and went to Chaguata; and from thence to Aguacay.

Some were glad of the death of Don Ferrnando de Soto, holding for certaine, that Lays de Moscoso (which was giuen to his estate) would rather desire to be among the Christians at rest, then to continue the labours of the warr in subduing and discouering of Countries; wherof they were already wearie; seeing the small profit that issued thereof. The Governour commanded the Capitaines and principall persons to meet to consult, and determine what they should doe. And being informed what peopled habitation was round about, he vnderstood that to the West, the Countrey was most inhabited, and that downe the River beyond Quigata was vninhabited, and had little store of food. He desired them all that euerie one would giue his opinion in writing: & set his hand to it: that they might resolve by generall consent, whether they should goe downe the River, or enter into the maine land: All were of opinion, that it was best to go by land toward the West, because Nueva Espanna was that way; holding the voyage by sea more dangerous, and of greater hazard; because they could make no ship of any strength to abide a storme, neither had they Master, nor Pilot, Compass, nor Chart, neither knew they how farre the sea was off; nor had any notice of it; nor whether the River did make any great turning into

This giueth  
resolution to  
troua by land  
Westward.

the land, or had any great fall from the rocks, where all of them might be cast away. And somewhat had seen the sea-chart, did find, that from the place where they were by the sea coast to Noua Espanna, might bee 400. leagues, little more or lesse; and said; that though they went somewhat about by land in seeking a peopled Countrie, if some great wilderness which they could not passe did not hinder the, by spending that summer in trauell, finding provision to passe the winter in some peopled Countrie, that the next summer after they might come to some Christian land, and that it might fortune in their travel by land to find some rich Countrie, where they might doe themselves good. The Governour, although he desired to get out of Florida in shorter time, seeing the inconveniencies they laid before him, in travelling by sea, determined to follow that which seemed good to them all. On Monday the fifth of June, he departed from Guachoya. The Cacique gave him a guide to Chaguata, and staid at home in his owne towne. They passed through a Prouince called Catalte: and having passed a wilderness of sixe daies iourne, the twentieth day of the month he came to Chaguata. The Cacique of this Prouince had visited the Governour Don Ferdinando de Soto at Autiamque, whither he brought him presents of skinned, and mantles and salt. And a day before Lays de Moscoso came to his towne, we lost a Christian that was sicke; which hee suspected that the Indians had slaine. Hee sent the Cacique word, that he should command his people to seeke him vp, and send him vnto him, and that he would hold him, as he did; for his friend: and if he did not, that neither he, nor his, should escape his hands, and that hee would set his Countrie on fire. Presently the Cacique came vnto him, and brought a great present of mannes and skinned, and the Christian that was lost, and made this speech following:

The fifth of June.  
Cacique.  
Chaguata

Right excellent Lord, I would not deserve that conceit which you had of me, for all the treasure of the world. What inforced me to goe to visit and serue the excellent Lord Governour your father in Autiamque, which you should haue remembered, where I offered my selfe with all loyaltie, faith, and loue; during my life to serue and obey him? What then could be the cause, I hauing receiued fauours of him, and neither you nor he hauing done me any wrong, that should moue me to doe the thing, which I ought not? Beleue this of mee, that neither wrong, nor any worldly interest, was able to make me to haue done it; nor shall be able to blind me. But as in this life it is a naturall course, that after one pleasure, many sorowes doe follow: so by your indignation, fortune would moderate the ioy, which my heart conceiuet with your presence; and that I should erre, where I thought surest to haue hit the marke: in harboring this Christian which was lost; and vsing him in such manner, as he may tell himselfe; thinking that herein I did you seruice, with purpose to deliuer him vnto you in Chaguata, and to serue you to the uttermost of my power. If I deserve punishment for this, I will receiue it at your hands, as from my Lord, as if it were a fauour: For the loue which I did beare to the excellent Governour, and which I beare to you hath no limit. And like as you giue me chastisement, so will you also shew me fauour. And that which now I craue of you is this, to declare your will vnto me, and those things, wherein I may bee able to doe you the most and best seruice.

The Governour answered him, that because he did not find him in that towne, hee was incensed against him, thinking he had absented himselfe; as others had done: But seeing he now knew his loyaltie and loue; he would alwaies hold him as a brother, and fauour him in all his affaires. The Cacique went with him to the towne where he resided, which was sixe daies iourne from thence. They passed through a small town, where there was a lake, where the Indians made salt; and the Christians made some one day while they rested there, of a brackish water, which springe were the towne in ponds like fountaines. The Governour staid in Chaguata sixe daies. There he was informed of the habitation that was toward the West. They told him, that three daies iourne from thence was a Prouince called Aguary: The day that he departed from Chaguata, a Christian, called Francisco de Guzman, the base sonne of a Gentleman of Seuill, staid behind, and went to the Indians, with an Indian woman which he kept as his concubine, for feare he should be punished for gaming

A small towne.  
Salt made of  
salt springs  
of water.

gaming debts, that he did owe: The Governour had travelled two daies before he missed him: hee sent the Cacique word to seeke him vp, and to send him to Aguacay, whither he travelled: which hee did not performe. From the Cacique of Aguacay, before they came into the Countrey; there met him on the way 15 Indians with a present of skinned fish and roasted venison. The Governour came to his towne on Wednesday, the fourth of Iulie: He found the towne without people, and lodged in it: he staid there about a day; during which, he made some roads, and tooke many men and women. There they had knowledge of the South Sea. Here there was great store of salt made of sand, which they gather in a vaine of ground like pebble stones. And it was made as they make salt in Cayas.

Knowledge of the South Sea.  
Store of Salt made.

## Chap. XXXII.

How the Governour went from Aguacay to Naguatex, and what happened vnto him.

A small towne. This same day that the Governour departed from Aguacay he lodged in a small towne subject to the Lord of that prouince. The Campe pitched hard by a lake of salt water; and that evening they made some salt there. The day following hee lodged betwene two mountains in a thicke groue of wood. The next day hee came to a small towne called Patoc. The fourth day after his departure from Aguacay he came to the first habitation of a prouince called Amaye. There an Indian was taken, which said that from thence to Naguatex was a day and a halfe journey; which they travelled, finding all the way inhabited places. Having passed the peopled countrie of Amaye, on Saturday the 20. of Iulie they pitched their Campe at noone betwene Amaye and Naguatex along the corner of a groue of very faire trees. In the same place certaine Indians were discovered, which came to view them. The horsemen went out to them, and killed six, and tooke two; whom the Governour asked, wherefore they came? They said, to know what people hee had, and what order they kept; and that the Cacique of Naguatex their Lord had sent them, and that he, with other Caciques which came to aide him, determined that day, to bid him battell. While they were occupied in these questions and answers, there came many Indians by two waies in two squadrons; and when they saw they were desired, giuing a great cry they assaulted the Christians each squadron by it selfe: but seeing what resistance the Christians made them, they turned their backs and betooke themselves to flight, in which many of them lost their liues; and most of the horsemen following them in chase, careless of the Campe, other two squadrons of Indians, which lay in ambush, set vpon the Christians that were in the Campe, which also they resisted, who also had their reward as the first. After the flight of the Indians, and that the Christians were retired, they heard a great noise a crossbow shot from the place where they were. The Governour sent twelue horsemen to see what it was. They found sixe Christians, foure footmen and two horsemen, among many Indians: the horsemen defending the footmen with great labour. These being off, them that chased the first two squadrons, had lost themselves, and comming to recouer the Campe fell among those with whom they were fighting: and so they, and those that came to succour the, slew many of the Indians, and brought one, alone to the Campe: whom the Governour examined, who they were, that came to bid him battell. He told him, that they were the Cacique of Naguatex, and of Amaye, and another of a prouince called Hacanae, a Lord of great countries and many subjects; and that the Cacique of Naguatex came for Captaine and chiefest of them all. The Governour compe manded his right arme and nose to be cut off, and sent him to the Cacique of Naguatex, charging him to tell him, that the next day hee would bee in his countrey to destroy him; and if hee would withstand his entrance, hee should stay for him. That night he lodged there; and the next day hee came to the habitation of Naguatex, which was very scatterd: he inquired where the Caciques chiefe towne was? They told him that it was on the other side of a Riuer, that passed thereby: hee travelled thitherward, and came vnto it; and on the other side hee saw many Indians, that taried for him, making shew, as though they

A small towne.

Salt made here.

Patoc.

Amaye.

Iulie 20.

Hacanae.

Naguatex.

A Riuer.

they would defend the passage. And because hee knew not whether it could bee waded, nor where the passage was; and that some Christians and horses were hurt; that they might haue time to recouer, he determined to rest certaine daies in the towne where he was. So hee pitched his campe a quarter of a league from the River, because the weather was very hot, nere vnto the towne, in a thinne groue of very faire and hie trees nere a brookes side: and in that place were certaine Indians taken; whom hee examined, whether the Riuer were wadeable or no? They said, yea, at some times, and in some places. Within ten daies after he sent two Captaines with fiftie or sixtymen a peece vpward and downe the Riuer with Indians to shew them where they should goe ouer, to see what habitation was on the other side: And the Indians withstood them both, defending the passage of the Riuer as farre as they were able, but they passed in despite of them: and on the other side of the Riuer they saw great habitation, and great store of victuals; and with these newes returned to the Camp.

*They passe the Riuer.*

Chap. XXXIII.

How the Cacique of Naguatex came to visite the Governour: and how the Governour departed from Naguatex and came to Nondaco.

The Governour sent an Indian from Naguatex where hee lay, to command the Cacique to come to serue and obey him, and that hee would forgie him all that was past; and if he came not, that he would seeke him, and giue him such punishment as he had deserued for that which he had done against him. Within two daies the Indian returned, & said that the Cacique would come the next day: which, the same day when he came, sent many Indians before him, among whom there were some principall men: hee sent them to see what countenance they found in the Governour, to resolue with himselfe whether hee should goe or not. The Indians let him vnderstand, that he was coming, and went away presently: and the Cacique came within two houres accompanied with many of his men: they came all in a ranke one before another on both sides, leauing a lawe in the midst where hee came. They came where the Governour was, all of them weeping after the manner of Tulla, which was not farre from thence toward the East. The Cacique made his due obedience, and this speech following:

*Tulla not far from Naguatex, Eastward.*

Right high and mightie Lord, whom all the world ought to serue and obey, I was bold to appeare before your Lordship, hauing committed so heinous and abominable an act, as only for me to haue imagined, deserued to be punished; trusting in your greatnes, that although I deserue to obtaine no pardon, yet for your owne sake only you will vse clemencie toward me, considering how small I am in comparison of your Lordship: and not to think vpon my weaknesses, which, to my grieue and for my greater good, I haue knowne. And I beleue that you and yours are immortall; and that your Lordship is Lord of the land of nature, seeing that you subdue all things, and they obey you, euen the very hearts of men. For when I beheld the slaughter and destruction of my men in the battell, which, through mine ignorance, and the counsell of a brother of mine, which died in the same, I gaue your Lordship, presently I repented me in my heart of the error, which I had committed: and desired to serue and obey you: and to this end I come, that your Lordship may chastise and command mee as your owne.

The Governour answered him, that he forgave him all which was past, that from thenceforth hee should do his dutie, & that he would hold him for his friend, and that he would fauour him in all things. Within foure daies hee departed thence, and coming to the Riuer he could not passe, because it was growne very bigge; which seemed to him a thing of admiration, being at that time that it was, and since it had not rained a moneth before. The Indians said, that it increased many times after that manner without raining in all the countrey. It was supposed, that it might bee the tide that came into it. It was learned that the flood came alway from above, and that the Indians of all that countrey had no knowledge of the Sea. The Governour returned vnto the place where he had lodged before:

*The River growne vnto passe in August, at Naguatex. Continuance of Sea to the Northward.*

before: and understanding within eight daies after that the River was passable; he departed. He passed over and found the towne without people: he lodged in the field, and sent the Cacique word to come vnto him, and to bring him a guide to goe forward. And some daies being past, seeing the Cacique came not nor sent any bodie; hee sent two Captaines and sixe valets to burne the townes, and to take such Indians as they could finde: They burnt great store of victuals, and took many Indians. The Cacique seeing the hurt that hee received in his countrie, sent sixe principall Indians with three men for guides which knew the language of the countrie, through which the Governour was to passe. Hee departed presently from Nagatex: and within three daies journey came to a towne of foure or fift houses, which belonged to the Cacique of that province, which is called Nissoone: it was enill inhabited and had little Maiz. Two daies journey forward the guides which guided the Governour, if they were to goe Westward, guided him to the East; and sometimes went vp and downe through very great woods out of the way. The Governour commanded them to bee hanged vpon a tree: and a woman that they tooke in Nissoone guided him, and went backe againe to seeke the way. In two daies he came to another miserable towne, called Lacane: an Indian was taken in that place; that said, that the countrie of Nondaco was a countrie of great habitation, and the houses scattering the one from the other, as they vse to be in mountains, and had great store of Maiz. The Cacique came with his men weeping, like them of Nagatex: for this is their vse in token of obedience: hee made him a present of much fish, and offered to doe what he would command him. Hee tooke his leave, and gaue him a guide to the province of Soacatino.

Chap. XXXIII.

How the Governour went from Nondaco to Soacatino and Guasco, and passed through a desert, from whence, for want of a guide, and an interpreter, he returned to Nilco.

The Governour departed from Nondaco toward Soacatino; and in five daies journey came to a Province called Ays. The Indians which inhabited it, had no notice of the Christians: but as soon as they saw that they entered into their country, they assembled themselves: and as they came together 50. or 100. they came forth to fight: while some fought, others came and charged our men another way, and while they followed some, others followed them: The fight lasted the greatest part of the day; till they came to their towne. Some horses and men were wounded, but not to any hurt of their travelling: for there was no wound that was dangerous. There was a great spoile made of the Indians. That day that the Governour departed from thence, the Indian that guided him said, that in Nondaco he had heard say, that the Indians of Soacatino had scene other Christians, whereof they all were very glad: thinking it might be true, and that they might haue entered into those parts by Nueva Espanna; and that if it were so; it was in their owne hand to goe out of Florida; if they found nothing of profit: for they feared they should lose themselves in some wilderness. This Indian led him two daies out of the way. The Governour commanded to torture him. He said, that the Cacique of Nondaco, his Lord, had commanded him to guide them so, because they were his enemies, and that hee was to doe as his Lord commanded him. The Governour commanded him to be cast to the dogs: and another guided him to Soacatino, whither hee came the day following. It was a verie poore Countrie: there was great want of Maiz in that place. Hee asked the Indians, whether they knew of any other Christians. They said, that a little from thence toward the South they heard they were. He travelled 20. daies through a Countrie enill inhabited; where they suffered great scarcitie and trouble: For that little Maiz which the Indians had, they had hidden and buried in the woods, where the Christians, after they were well wearied with their trauell; at the end of their iourne went to seeke by digging what they should eat. At last, comming to a Province that was called Guasco, they found Maiz, wherewith they loaded their horses, and the Indians that they had.

From

20 daies journey toward the South.

Guasco: here they found some Turkie stones, and morsels of cotton wood. Chap. 33.

From thence they went to another towne called Naquiscoga. The Indians said, they had <sup>Naquiscoga</sup> no notice of any other Christians. The Governour commanded to torment them. They said, that they came first to another Lordship, which was called Naçacahoz, and from <sup>Naçacahoz</sup> thence returned again to the West, from whence they came. The Governour came in two daies to Naçacahoz: Some women were taken there: among whom there was one, which said, that she had seene Christians, and had been taken by them, and had run away. The Governour sent a Captaine with 15. horsemen to the place where the woman said she had seene them, to see if there were any signe of houses, or any token of their being there. After they had gone three or foure leagues, the woman that guided them said, that all that she had told them was vntue. And so they held all the rest that the Indians had said, of seeing Christians in the land of Florida. And, because the Countrie that way was poore of Maiz, and toward the West, there was no notice of any habitation, they returned to Guasco. The Indians told them there, that 10. daies iourne from thence toward the West, was a River called Daycao; whither they went sometimes a hunting and killing of Deere: and that they had seene people on the other side, but knew not what habitation was there. There the Christians looke such Maiz as they found and could carrie, and, going 10. daies iourne through a wilderness, they came to the Riuer which the Indians had told them of. Ten horsemen, which the Governour had sent before, passed ouer the same, and went in a way that led to the Riuer, and lighted vpon a companie of Indians that dwelt in verie little cabins: who, assoone as they saw them, tooke themselves to flight, leauing that which they had; all which was nothing but miserie and pouertie. The Countrie was so poore, that among them all there was not found halfe a peck of Maiz. The horsemen tooke two Indians, and returned with them to the Riuer, where the Governour staid for them. He sought to learne of them what habitation was toward the West. There was none in the Camp that could vnderstand their language. The Governour assembled the Captaines and principall persons, to determine with their aduice what they should doe. And the most part said, that they thought it best to returne backe to Rio grande, or the Great Riuer of Guachoya: because that in Nilco and thereabout was store of Maiz: saying, that they would make pinnaces that winter, and the next sommer passe down the Riuer to the seaward in them, and coming to the Sea they would goe along the coast to Nueua Espanna. For though it seemed a doubtfull thing and difficult, by that which they had already alleaged, yet it was the last remedie they had. For by land they could not goe for want of an Interpretour. And they held, that the countrie beyond the Riuer of Daycao, where they were, was that which Cabeça de Vaca mentioned in his relation that he passed of the Indians, which lived like the Afaibes, hauing no settled place, and fed vpon Tunas and rootes of the fields, and wilde beasts that they killed. Which if it were so, if they should enter into it and finde no victuals to passe the winter, they could not chuse but perish. For they were entred alreadie into the beginning of October: and if they staid any longer, they were not able to returne for raine and snowes, nor to sustaine themselves in so poore a countrie. The Governour (that desired long to see himselfe in a place where hee might sleepe his full sleep, rather then to conquer and gouerne a countrie where so many troubles presented themselves) presently returned back that same way that he came.

They returned to Guasco.

The Riuer of Daycao: which is supposed to be Rio del oro.

No travelling by land without an Interpretour.

#### Chap. XXXV.

How they returned to Nilco, and came to Minoys, where they agreed to make ships to depart out of the land of Florida.

When that which was determined was published in the Campe, there were many that were greatly grieved at it: for they held the Sea voyage as doubtfull, for the euill meanes they had, and of as great danger, as the travelling by land: and they hoped to finde some rich countrie before they came to the land of the Christians, by that which Cabeça de Vaca had told the Emperour: and that was this: That after hee had found clothes made of cotton wooll, hee saw gold and silver, and stones of great value. And they had not yet come where hee had been. For vntill that place hee alwaies travelled by the Sea coast: and they travelled

Gold, silver and precious stones in Florida.

farre within the land; and that going toward the West, of necessitie they should come where hee had been: For he said, That in a certain place he trauelled many daies, and cutted into the land toward the North: And in Guasco they had alreadie found some Turkie stones, and mantles of cotton wooll: which the Indians signified by signes that they had from the West: and that holding that course they should draw neere to the land of the Christians. But though they were much discontented with it, and it grieved many to goe backward, which would rather have aduentured their liues and haue died in the land of Florida, then to haue gone poore out of it: yet were they not a sufficient part to hinder that which was determined; because the principall men agreed with the Gouvernour. And afterward there was one that said, hee would put out one of his owne eyes, to put out another of Luis de Moscoso; because it would grieue him much to see him prosper: because aswell himself as others of his friends had crossed that which hee durst not haue done, seeing that within two daies hee should leaue the gouernment. From Daycao, where now they were, to Rio grande, or the Great River, was 150. leagues: which vnto that place they had gone Westward. And by the way as they returned backe they had much adoe to find Maiz to eate: for where they had passed, the countrey was destroyed: and some little Maiz that was left the Indians had hidden. The townes which in Naguatex they had burned (whereof it repented them) were repaired againe, and the houses full of Maiz. This countrey is well inhabited and plentifull. In that place are vessels made of clay, which differ very little from those of Estremoz, or Montemor. In Chaguete the Indians by commandement of the Cacique came peaceably, and said, that the Christian which remained there would not come. The Gouvernour wrote vnto him, and sent him inke and paper that he might answer. The substance of the words of the letter was to declare vnto him his determination, which was, to goe out of the land of Florida, and to put him in remembrance that he was a Christian, that hee would not remaine in the subiection of Infidels, that hee pardoned him the fault which he had done in going away to the Indians, that hee should come vnto him: and if they did stay him, that hee would aduertise him thereof by writing. The Indian went with the letter, and came again without any more answer, then, on the back side, his name and his scale, that they might know he was alive. The Gouvernour sent twelue horsemen to seeke him: but he, which had his spies, so hid himselfe, that they could not find him. For want of Maiz the Gouvernour could not stay any longer to seeke him. Hee departed from Chaguete, and passed the Riuer by Aays; going downe by it hee found a towne called Chilano, which as yet they had not seen. They came to Nileo, & found so little Maiz, as could not suffice till they made their ships; because the Christians, being in Guachoya in the seede time, the Indians for feare of them durst not come to sow the grounds of Nileo: and they knew not thereabout any other countrey where any Maiz was: and that was the most fruitfull soyle that was thereaway, and where they had most hope to finde it. Every one was confounded, and the most part thought it had counsell to come backe from the Riuer of Daycao, and not to haue followed their fortune, going that way that went ouer land. For by Sea it seemed impossible to save themselves, vnlesse God would worke a miracle for them: for there was neither Pilot, nor Sea-chari, neither did they know where the Riuer entred into the Sea; neither had they notice of it, neither had they any thing wherewith to make sailes, nor any store of Buequem, which is a grasse whereof they make Okam, which grew there: and that which they found they saued to calke the Pinaces withall, neither had they any thing to pitch them withall: neither could they make ships of such substance, but that any storme would put them in great danger: and they feared much it would fall out with them, as it did with Pamphilo de Naruaez, which was cast away vpon that coast: And aboue all other it troubled them most, that they could finde no Maiz: for without it they could not bee sustained, nor could doe any thing that they had neede of. All of them were put to great confusion. Their chiefe remedy was to commit themselves to God, and to beseech him that he would direct them the way that they might saue their liues. And it pleased him of his goodness, that the Indians of Nileo came peaceably, and told them; that two daies journey from thence, neere vnto the Great Riuer, were two townes, whereof the Christians had no notice, and that the prouince was called Minoya, and was a

Turkie stones  
and mantles of  
cotton wooll  
found in Guasco.

150. leagues be-  
tweene the  
Riuer of Day-  
cao, and Rio  
grande.

Naguatox.

Five earthen  
vessels  
Chaguete.

Aays.  
Chilano.  
Nileo.

fruitfull

fruitfull soile: that, whether at this present there was any Maiz or no, they knew not, because they had warre with them: but that they would be very glad with the fauour of the Christians to goe and spoyle them. The Governour sent a Capitaine thither with horsemen and footmen, and the Indians of Nileo with him. Hee came to Minoya, and found two great townes seated in a plaine and open soile, halfe a league distant, one in sight of another, and in them he took many Indians, and found great store of Maiz. Presently he lodged in one of them, and sent word to the Governour what hee had found: wherewith they were all exceedingly glad. They departed from Nileo in the beginning of December; and all that way, and before from Chilano, they endured much trouble: for they passed through many waters, and many times it rained with a Northren winde, and was exceeding cold, so that they were in the open field with water ouer and vnderneath them: and when at the end of their daies iourney they found drie ground to rest vpon, they gave great thanks to God. With this trouble almost all the Indians that serued them died. And after they were in Minoya, many Christians also died: and the most part were sicke of great and dangerous diseases, which had a spice of the lethargie. At this place died Andrew de Vasconcelos, and two Portugals of Elias, which were very nere him: which were brethren, and by their surname called Sotis. The Christians lodged in one of the townes, which they liked best: which was fenced about, and distant a quarter of a league from the Great River. The Maiz that was in the other towne was brought thither; and in all it was esteemed to bee 6000. hanega or bushels. And there was the best timber to make ships, that they had seene in all the land of Florida: wherfore all of them gave God great thanks for so singular a fauour, and hoped that that which they desired would take effect, which was, that they might safely bee conducted into the land of the Christians.

Minoya.  
Two great townes.

The beginning  
of December.

Rises with  
Northren wind  
causing cold.

The death of  
Andrew Vasconcelos.

## Chap. XXXVI.

How there were seuen Brigandines builded, and how they departed from Minoya.

ASOONe as they came to Minoya, the Governour commanded them to gather all the chaines together, which euery one had to lead Indians in; and to gather al the yron which they had for their prouision, and al the rest that was in the Camp: and to set vp a forge to make nailes, and commanded them to cut downe timber for the brigandines. And a Portugall of Ceuto, who hauing bin a prisoner in Fez, had learned to saw timber with a long saw, which for such purposes they had carried with them, did teach others, which helped him to saw timber. And a Genouis, whom it pleased God to preserue (for without him they had neuer come out of the countrie: for there was neuer another that could make ships but hee) with foure or fise other Biscaine carpenters, which hewed his planks and other timbers, made the brigandines: And two calkers, the one of Genua, the other of Sardinia did calke them with the tow of an heare like hemp, wherof before I haue made mention, which there is named Enequen. And because there was not enough of it, they calked them with the flaxe of the Countrie, and with the mantles, which they rauelled for that purpose. A cooper which they had among them fell sicke, and was at the point of death: and there was none other that had any skill in that trade: it pleased God to send him his health: And albeit he was verie weake, and could not labour; yet 15. daies before they departed, he made for euery brigandine two halfe hogs heads, which the mariners call quarterets, because foure of them hold a pipe of water. The Indians which dwell two daies iourney about the River in a Province called Taganate, and likewise those of Nileo and Guacoza, and others their neighbours seeing the brigandines in making, thinking, because their places of refuge are in the water, that they were to goe to seeke them: and because the Governour demanded mantles of them, as necessarie for sailes, came many times, and brought many mantles; and great store of fish. And for certaine it seemed: that God was willing to fauour them in so great necessitie, mouing the minds of the Indians to bring them: for to goe to take them, they were neuer able. For in the towne where they were, as soone as winter came in; they were so inclosed, and compassed with water, that they could

Escapes in as  
short like  
Hemp.

That of the  
countrie.

Taganate two  
daies iourney  
about Minoya.

go no farther by land, then a league, & a league & an half. And if they would go farther, they could carrie no horses, & without that they were not able to fight with the Indians, because they were many: and so many for so many on-foote they had the advantage of them by water and by land, because they were more apt and lighter, and by reason of the disposition of the Countrey, which was according to their desire for the vse of their warre. They brought also some cords, and those which wanted for cables were made of the barks of Mulberrie trees. They made stirrups of wood, & made ankers of their stirrups. In the month of March, when it had not rained a month before; the River grew so big, that it came to Nilco, which was nine leagues off: and on the other side, the Indians said, that it reached other nine leagues into the land. In the towne where the Christians were, which was somewhat high ground; where they could best goe, the water reached so the stirrups. They made certaine rafts of timber, and laid manie boughes vpon them, wherein they set their horses, and in the houses they did the like: But seeing that nothing prevailed, they went vp to the lofty: and if they went out of the houses; it was in canoes, or on horseback in those places where the ground was hiest. So they were two months, and could doe nothing, during which time the River decreased not. The Indians ceased not to come vnto the brigantines as they were wont, and came in canoes. At that time the Governour feared they would set vpon him. Hee commanded his men to take an Indian secretly of those that came to the towne, and to stay him till the rest were gone: and they tooke one. The Governour commanded him to bee put to torture, to make him confesse, whether the Indians did practise any treason or no. Hee confessed that the Caciques of Nilco, Guachoya, & Taguanate, and others, which in all were about 20. Caciques, with a great number of people, determined to come vpon him; and that three daies before, they would send a great present of fish to colour their great treason and malice, and on the verie day they would send some Indians before with another present: And these with those which were our slaves, which were of their conspiracie also, should set the houses on fire, and first of all possess themselves of the lances which stood at the doores of the houses; and the Caciques with all their men should bee neere the towne in ambush in the wood; and when they saw the fire kindled, should come, and make an end of the conquest. The Governour commanded the Indian to bee kept in a chaine, and the selfsame day that he spake of, there came 30. Indians with fish. Hee commanded their right hands to be cut off, and sent them so backe to the Cacique of Guachoya, whose men they were. He sent him word, that he and the rest should come when they would, for he desired nothing more; and that hee should know, that they thought not any thing which he knew not before they thought of it. Hereupon they all were put in a very great feare: And the Caciques of Nilco and Taguanate came to exerce themselves: and a few daies after came he of Guachoya, and a principall Indian and his subject, said he knew by certaine information, that the Caciques of Nilco and Taguanate were agreed to come and make warre vpon the Christians: Assoone as 3. Indians came from Nilco, the Governour examined them, and they confessed it was true. Hee deliuered them presently to the principall man of Guachoya, which drew them out of the towne and killed them. Another day came some from Taguanate, and confessed it likewise. The Governour commanded their right hands and noses to be cut off, and sent them to the Cacique, where with they of Guachoya remained very well contented: and they came oftentimes with presents of mantles and fish, and hogs, which bred in the Countrey of some swine that were heat by the way the last yeere. Assoone as the waters were staked; they perswaded the Governour to send men to Taguanate: They came and brought canoes, wherein the footemen were conuied downe the River, and a Captaine with horsemen went by land; and the Indians of Guachoya, which guided him, till they came to Taguanate, assaulted the towne, and took many men and women, and mantles, which with those that they had already were sufficient to supplie their want. The brigandines being finished in the month of Iune, the Indians hauing told vs, that the River increased but once a yeere, when the snows did melt, in the time wherein I mentioned it had already increased, being now in sommer; and hauing not rained a long time, it pleased God, that the flood came vp to the towne to seeke the brigandines,

The great use of horses.

MaCortie writes the weight increasing of the River for ten months space, to wit, all March and April.

The great opinion of the Indians against the Christians.

Note well.

Theris sentence of the Cacique of Guachoya how their right hands are cut off.

The right hands and noses of traitors cut off. Hogs in Florida.

Taguanate taken.

Note. The River increases but once a yeere when the snows melt.

brigandines, from whence they carried them by water to the River. Which, if they had gone by land, had been in danger of breaking and splitting their keeles, and to bee all yndone; because that for want of iron, the spikes were short, and the planks and timber were very weake. The Indians of Minoya, during the time that they were there, came to serue them (being driven thereunto by necessity) that of the Maiz which they had taken from them, they would bestow some crummes vpon them. And because the Countrie was fertill, and the people vsed to feed of Maiz, and the Christians had gotten all from them that they had, and the people were many, they were not able to sustaine themselves. Those which came to the towne were so weake and feeble, that they had no flesh left on their bones: and many came and died neree the towne for pure hunger and weakness. The Governour commanded vpon grieuous punishments to giue them no Maiz. Yet, when they saw that the hogges wanted it not, and that they had yeilded themselves to serue them, & considering their miserie and wretchednes, hauing pity of the, they gaue them part of the Maiz which they had. And when the time of their embarkment came, there was not sufficient to serue their owne turnes. That which there was, they put into the brigandines, and into great canoes tied two and two together. They shipped 22. of the best horses, that were in the Camp, the rest they made dried flesh of; and dressed the hogges which they had in like manner. They departed from Minoya the second day of Iulie; 1543.

See next in March and April. A misadventure aduise.

## Chap. XXXVII.

As the Christians went downe the great Riuer on their voyage, the Indians of Quigalta did set vpon them, and what was the success thereof.

The day before they departed from Minoya, they determined to dismiss all the men & women of the Countrie, which they had detained as slaues to serue them, save some hundred, little more or lesse, which the Governour embarked, and others whom it pleased him to permit. And because there were many men of qualitic, whom he could not deny that which he granted to others, he vsed a policy, saying, that they might serue them as long as they were in the Riuer, but when they came to the sea, they must send them away for want of water, because they had but few vessels. He told his friends in secret, that they should carrie theirs to Naeva Espanna: And all those whom hee had no good will vnto (which were the greater number) ignorant of that which was bidden from them, which afterward time discovered, thinking it inhumane for so little time of seruice, in reuward of the great seruice that they had done them, to carrie them with them, to leaue them slaues to other men out of their owne Countries; left fute hundred men and women; among whom were many boies and girtles, which spoke, & vnderstood the Spanish tongue. The most of them did nothing but weepe: which moued great compassion; seeing that all of them with good will would haue become Christians, and were left in state of perdition. There went from Minoya 322. Spaniards in seuen brigandines, well made, saue that the planks were thin, because the nailes were short, and were not pitched, nor had any decks to keep the water from coming in. In stead of decks they laid planks, whereon the mariners might runne to trim their sailes, and the people might refresh themselves aboue and below. The Governour made his Captaines, and gaue to euery one his brigandine, and took their oth and their word, that they would obey him, vntill they came to the land of the Christians. The Governour tooke one of the brigandines for himself, which he best liked. The same day that they departed from Minoya, they passed by Guachoya, where the Indians tarried for them in canoes by the Riuer. And on the shore, they had made a great arbour with boughes: They desired him to come on shore; but he excused himselfe, and so went along: The Indians in their canoes accompanied him; and coming where an arme of the Riuer declined on the right hand, they said, that the Prouince of Quigalta was neree vnto that place, and importuned the Governour to set vpon him, and that they would aide him. And because they had said, that he dwelt three daies iourne downe the Riuer, the Governour supposed that they had plotted some treason, against him, and there left them; and

300. Slaues left in the Countrey.

They saie from the Minoya 17. Saies before they came to the mouth thereof.

and went downe with the greatest force of the water. The current was very strong, and with the helpe of oares, they went very swiftly. The first day they landed in a wood on the left hand of the River, and at night they withdrew themselves to the brigandines. The next day they came to a towne, where they went on shore, and the people that was in it durst not tarric. A woman that they tooke there being examined, said, that that towne belonged to a Cacique named Hussene, subiect to Quigalta, and that Quigalta tarried for them below in the River with many men. Certaine horsemen went thither, and found some houses, wherein was much Maiz. Immediately more of them went thither and tarried there one day, in which they did beate out, and tooke as much Mpiz as they needed: While they were there, many Indians came from the nether part of the River, and on the other side right against them somewhat carelessly set themselves in order to fight. The Governour sent in two canoes the crossebowmen that he had, and as many more as could goe in them. They ran away, and seeing the Spaniards could not crossebow them, they returned backe, and tooke courage; and coming neerer, making an outerie, they threatned them: and assoone as they departed thence, they went after them, some in canoes, and some by land along the River; and getting before, coming to a towne that stood by the liners side, they ioyned all together, making a shew that they would tarric there. Emeric brigandine towed a canoe fastened to their sternes for their particular service. Presently there entered men into euerie one of them, which made the Indians to flie, and burned the towne.

*A towne burned.*

*The third day.*

*A fleet of an hundred faire and great canoes.*

The same day they presently landed in a great field, where the Indians durst not tarric. The next day there were gathered together an hundred canoes, among which were some that carried 60, and 70, men, and the principall mens canoes had their tills, and plumes of white and red feathers for their ensignes: and they came within two crossebow shot of the brigandines, and sent three Indians in a small canoe with a fained message to view the manner of the brigandines, and what weapons they had. And coming to the side of the Governours brigandine, one of the Indians entered, and said:

That the Cacique of Quigalta his Lord, sent him his commendations, and did let him vnderstand, that all that the Indians of Guachoya had told him concerning himselfe, was false, and that they had incensed him, because they were his enemies; that he was his seruant, and should find him so.

The Governour answered him, that he beleued all that he said was true, and willed him to tell him, that he esteemed his friendship very much. With this answer they returned to the place where the rest in their canoes were waiting for them, and from thence all of them fell downe, and came neere the Spaniards, shooting aloud, and threatning of them. The Governour sent Iohn de Guzman, which had been a Capitaine of footemen in Florida, with 15. armed men in canoes to make them giue way. Assoone as the Indians saw them come towards them, they diuided themselves into two parts, and stood still till the Spaniards came nie them, and when they were come neere them, they ioyned together on both sides, taking Iohn de Guzman in the middist, and them that came first with him, and with great furie borded them: And as their canoes were bigger, and many of them leaped into the water to stay them, and to lay hold on the canoes of the Spaniards, and ouerwhelme them; so presently they ouerwhelmed them. The Christians fell into the water, and with the weight of their armour sunke downe to the bottome: and some few, that by swimming or holding by the canoe could haue saued themselves, with oares and staves, which they had, they strooke them on the head and made them sinke. When they of the brigandines saw the ouerthrow, though they went about to succour them, yet through the current of the River they could not goe backe. Foure Spaniards fled to the brigandine that was neerest to the canoes; and only these escaped of those that came among the Indians. They were eleven that died there: among whom Iohn de Guzman was one, and a sonne of Don Carlos, called Iohn de Vargas: the rest also were persons of accout and men of great courage. Those that escaped by swimming, said, that they saw the Indians enter the canoe of Iohn de Guzman at the sternes of one of their canoes, and whether they carried him away dead or alive they could not certainly tell.

*Eleven Spaniards drowned.*  
*The death of Iohn de Vargas.*

## Chap. XXXVIII.

Which declareth how they were pursued by the Indians.

The Indians, seeing that they had gotten the victorie, tooke such courage; that they assaulted them in the brigandines, which they durst not doe before. They came first to that brigandine wherein Calderon went for Captaine, and was in the reeward: and at the first volie of arrowes they wounded 25. men. There were only foure armed men in this brigandine: these did stand at the brigandines side to defend it. Those that were vnarmed, seeing how they hurt them, left their oares and went vnder the deck: whereupon the brigandine began to crosse, and to goe where the current of the streame carried it. One of the armed men seeing this, without the commandement of the Captaine, made a footman to take an oare and stirre the brigandine, hee standing before him and defending him with his target. The Indians came no neerer then a bowshot, from whence they offended and were not offended, receiving no hurt: for in euery brigandine was but one crossebow, and those which wee had were very much out of order. So that the Christians did nothing else but stand for a butte to receive their arrowes. Having left this brigandine they went to another, and fought with it halfe an houre; and so from one to another they fought with them all. The Christians had mattes to lay vnder them, which were double, and so close and strong, that no arrow went thorow them. And asoone as the Indians gaue them leiuere, they fenced the brigandines with them. And the Indians seeing that they could not shoote leuell, shot their arrowes at random vp into the aire, which fell into the brigandines, and hurt some of the men: and notwithstanding contented, they sought to get to them which were in the canoes with the horses. Those of the brigandines emioured them to defend them, and tooke them among them. Thus seeing themselves much vexed by them, and so wearied that they could no longer endure it, they determined to trauell all the night following, thinking to get beyond the countrie of Quigalta, and that they would leaue them: but when they thought least of it, supposing they had now left them, they heard very neere them so great outcries, that they made them deaf, and so they followed vs all that night, and the next day till noone, by which time we were come into the countrie of others, whom they desired to vse vs after the same manner; and so they did. The men of Quigalta returned home; and the other in fiftie canoes fought with vs a whole day and a night: and they entred one of the brigandines, that came in the reeward by the canoc which she had at her sterne, and tooke away a woman which they found in it, and afterward hurt some of the men of the brigandines. Those which came with the horses in the canoes, being wearie with rowing night and day, lingered behind; and presently the Indians came vpon them, and they of the brigandines tarried for them. The Gouverneur resolved to goe on shore and to kill the horses, because of the slow way which they made because of them. Asoone as they saw a place conuenient for it, they went thither and killed the horses, and brought the flesh of them to drie it aboard. Foure or fise of them remained on shore aliuie: the Indians went vnto them, after the Spaniards were embarked. The horses were not acquainted with them, and began to neigh, and ranne vp and downe, in such sort, that the Indians, for feare of them, leaped into the water; and getting into their canoes went after the brigandines, shooting cruelly at them. They followed vs that evening and the night following till the next day at teine of the clocke, and then returned vp the River. Presently from a small towne that stood vpon the River came seven canoes, and followed vs a little way downe the River, shooting at vs: but seeing they were so few that they could doe vs but little harme, they returned to their towne. From thence forward, vntill they came to the Sea, they had no encounter. They sailed downe the River seuentene daies: which may be two hundred and fifty leagues iourney, little more or lesse: and neere vnto the Sea the River is diuided into two armes; each of them is a league and an halfe broad.

Spaniards wounded.

The great use of large targets.

Strong mattes a good defence against arrows.

Another Provision.

Dried hercules for food.

A small towne.

They sailed 17. daies downe the River, which is about 150. leagues.

## Chap. XXXIX.

How they came vnto the sea: and what happened vnto them in all their voiage.

HALfe a league before they came to the sea, they came to anker to rest themselves there about a day: for they were very weary with rowing and out of heart. For by the space of many daies they had eaten nothing but parched and soddin Maiz; which they had by allowance every day an headpeece full by strike for every three mē. While they rode there at anker seven canoes of Indians came to set vpon those, which they brought with them. The Governour commanded armed men to go aboard them, and to druce them farther off. They came also against them by land through a thicke wood, and a moorish ground, and had stoues with very sharp forked heads made of the bones of fishes, and fought verie valiantly with vs, which went out to encounter them. And the other that came in canoes with their arrows staid for them that came against them, and at their coming both those that were on land, and those in the canoes wounded some of vs: And seeing vs come neere them, they turned their backs, and like swift horses among footemen gat away from vs; making some returns, and reuniting themselves together, going not past a bow shot off: for in so retiring they shot, without receiving any hurt of the Christians. For though they had some bowes, yet they could not use them; and brake their armes with rowing to ouertake them. And the Indians easily in their compasse went with their canoes, staying and wheeling about as it had been in a skirmish, perceiuing that those that came against them could not offend them. And the more they stroue to come neere them, the more hurt they received. Assoone as they had druen them farther off, they returned to the brigandines. They staid two daies there: And departed from thence vnto the place, where the arme of the Riuer caireth into the sea. They sounded in the Riuer neere vnto the Sea, and found 40. fathoms water. They staid there. And the Governour commanded al and singular persons to speake their minds touching their voiage, whether it were best to crosse ouer to Nueva Espanna, committing theselues to the hie sea, or whether they should keepe along the coast. There were sundry opinions touching this matter: wherein John Danusco, which presumed much, and tooke much vpon him in the knowledge of nauigation, and matters of the sea, although hee had but little experience, moued the Governour with his talke: and his opinion was seconded by some others. And they affirmed, that it was much better to passe by the hie sea, and crosse the gulfe, which was three of foure parts the lesser trauell, because in going along the coast, they went a great way about, by reason of the compasse, which the land did make. John Danusco said, that he had seene the seacard, and that from the place where they were, the coast ran East and West vnto Rio de las Palmas; and from Rio de las Palmas to Nueva Espanna from North to South: and therefore in sailing alwaies in sight of land would be a great compassing about and spending of much time; & that they would be in great danger to be ouertaken with winter before they should get to the land of the Christians: and that in 10. or 12. daies space, hauing good weather, they might see there in crossing ouer. The most part were against this opinion, and said, that it was more safe to go along the coast, though they staid the longer: because their ships were very weake and without decks, so that a very little storme was enough to cast them away: and if they should be hindred with calmes, or contrarie weather, through the small store of vessels which they had to carrie water in, they should likewise fall into great danger: and that although the ships were such as they might venture in them, yet hauing neither Pilot nor Seacard to guide themselves, it was no good counsell to crosse the gulfe. This opinion was confirmed by the greatest part: and they agreed to go along the coast. At the time wherein they sought to depart from thence, the cable of the anker of the Governours brigandine brake, and the anker remained in the Riuer. And albeit, they were neere the shore, yet it was so deepe, that the Divers diuing many times could neuer find it: which caused great sadnes in the Governour, and in all those that went with him in his brigandine: But with a grindstone which they had, and certaine bridles which remained to some

some of the Gentlemen, and men of worship which had horses, they made a weight which served in stead of an anker. The 18. of Iuly, they went soorth to sea with faire and prosperous weather for their voyage. And seeing that they were gone two or three leagues from the shore, the Captaines of the other brigandines ouertooke them, and asked the Governour, wherefore he did put off from the shore: and that if he would leave the coast, he should say so; and he should not do it without the consent of all: and that if hee did otherwise, they would not follow him, but that every one would doe what seemed best vnto himselfe. The Governour answered, that hee would doe nothing without their counsell, but that hee did heare off from the land to saile the better and safer by night; and that the next day when time serued, he would returne to the sight of land againe. They sailed with a reasonable good wind that day and the night following, and the next day till evening song, straites in fresh water: whereat they wondred much: for they were very farre from land. But the force of the current of the River is so great; and the coast there is so shallow and gentle, that the fresh water entreteth farre into the Sea. That evening on their right hand they saw certaine creekes, whither they went, and rested there that night: where Iohn Dausco with his reasons wonne them at last, that all consented and agreed to commit themselves to the maine Sea, alleging, as he had done before, that it was a great aduantage, and that their voyage would be much shorter. They sailed two daies, and when they would haue come to sight of land they could not, for the winde blew from the shore. On the fourth day, seeing their fresh water began to faile, fearing necessitie and danger, they all complained of Iohn Dausco, and of the Governour that followed his counsell: and every one of the Captaines said, that they would no more goe from the shore, though the Governour went whither he would. It pleased God that the winde changed though but a little: and at the end of foure daies after they had put to sea, being alreadie destitute of water, by force of rowing they got within sight of land, and with great trouble recouered it, in an open roade. That evening the winde came to the South, which on that coast is a crosse winde, and draue the brigandines against the shore, because it blew very hard, and the anchors were so weake, that they yielded and began to bend. The Governour commanded all men to leape into the water, and going between them and the shore, and thrusting the brigandines into the Sea assoone as the waue was past, they saued them till the winde ceased.

They landed the 20. of Iuly, 1585. Chap. 7. They were 12. leagues from the shore the 18. of Iuly.

Fresh water about two daies sailing in the Sea. The coast shallow. Certaine creekes where they rested a night.

An open Roade.

#### Chap. XL.

How they lost one another by a storme, and afterward came together in a creeke.

IN the bay where they rode, after the tempest was past, they went on shore, and with mattocks, which they had, they digged certaine pits, which grew full of fresh water, where they filled all the cask which they had. The next day they departed thence, and sailed two daies, and entred into a creeke like vnto a poole, fenced from the South winde, which then did blow, and was against them: and there they staid foure daies, not being able to get out: and when the Sea was calme they rowed out: they sailed that day, and toward evening the winde grew so strong that it draue them on the shore, and they were sorie that they had put soorth from the former harbour: for assoone as night approached a storme began to rise in the Sea, and the winde still waxed more and more violent with a tempest. The brigandines lost one another: two of them, which bare more into the Sea, entred into an arme of the Sea, which peared into the land two leagues beyond the place where the other were that night. The five which staid behinde, being alwaies a league, and halfe a league the one from the other, met together, without any knowledge the one of the other, in a wilde roade, where the winde and the waues droue them on shore: for their anchors did streighten and came home; and they could not ryle their oares, putting seuen or eight men to every oare, which rowed to seaward: and all the rest leaped into the water, and when the waue was past that draue the brigandine on shore, they thrust it againe into Sea with all the diligence and might that they had. Others, while another waue was in coming,

Fresh water in abundance found by digging in the sande on the sea side.

As a arme of the sea.

A wilde roade.

comming, with bowles laued out the water that came in ouerboard. While they were in this tempest in great feare of being cast away in that place, from midnight forward they endured an intolerable tormēt of an infinite swarme of Moskitoes which fell vpon them, which sooone as they had stung the flesh, it so infected it, as though they had bin venomous. In the morning the Sea was asswaged and the wind staked, but not the Muskitoes: for ʒ sailes which were white seemed blacke with them in the morning. Those which rowed, vnlesse others kept them away, were not able to row. Having passed the feare & danger of the storme, beholding the deformities of their faces, and the blowes which they gaue themselves to drie them away, one of them laughed at another. They met all together in the creek where the two brigandines were, which outwent their fellows. There was found a skumme, which they call Copee, which the Sea casteth vp, and it is like pitch, where-with in some places, where pitch is wanting, they pitch their ships: there they pitched their brigandines. They rested two daies, and then esooones proceeded on their voyage. They sailed two daies more, and landed in a Bay or arme of the Sea, where they staid two daies. The same day that they went from thence sixe men went vp in a canoe toward the head of it, and could not see the end of it. They put out from thence with a South winde, which was against them: but because it was little, and for the great desire they had to shorten their voyage, they put out to sea by force of oares, and for all that made very little way with great labour in two daies, and went vnder the lee of a small Island into an arme of the Sea, which compassed it about. While they were there, there fell out such weather, that they gaue God many thanks, that they had found out such an harbour. There was great store of fish in that place, which they tooke with nets, which they had, and hookes. Heere a man cast an hooke and a line into the Sea, and tied the end of it to his arme, and a fish caught it, and drew him into the water vnto the necke: and it pleased God that hee remembered himselfe of a knife that he had, and cut the line with it. There they abode fourteen daies: and at the end of them it pleased God to send them faire weather, for which with great deuotion they appointed a procession, and went in procession along the strand, beseeching God to bring them to a land, where they might serue him in better sort.

## Chap. XII.

## How they came to the Riuer of Panuco in Nueua Espanna.

IN all the coast wheresoever they digged they found fresh water: there they filled their vessels; and the procession being ended, embarked themselves, and going alwayes in sight of the shore they sailed sixe daies. Iohn Dausco said that it would doe well to beere out to seaward: for he had scene the Seacard, and remembered that from Rio de las Palmas forward the coast did runne from North to South, and thitherto they had runne from East to West, and in his opinion, by his reckoning, Rio de las Palmas could not be farre off, from where they were. That same night they put to sea, and in the morning they saw Palme leaves floting, and the coast, which ranne North and South: from midday forward they saw great Mountaines, which vntill then they had not scene: for from this place to Puerto de Spiritu Santo, where they first landed in Florida, was a very plaine and low countrey: and therefore it cannot be descrid, vnlesse a man come very neere it. By that which they saw, they thought that they had ouershot Rio de Palmas that night, which is 60. leagues from the Riuer of Panuco, which is in Nueua Espanna. They assembled all together, and some said it was not good to saile by night, lest they should ouershoot the Riuer of Panuco: and others said, it was not well to lose time while it was favourable, and that it could not be so neere that they should passe it that night: and they agreed to take away halfe the sailes, and so saile all night. Two of the brigandines, which sailed that night with all their sailes, by breake of day had ouershot the Riuer of Panuco without seeing it. Of the sixe that came behind, the first that came vnto it was that wherein Calderan was Capitaine. A quarter of a league before they came at it, and before they did see it, they saw the water muddie,

A swarme of  
griuous Mos-  
kitoes.A skumme of  
the sea like  
pitch, called  
Copee.Another Bay  
by.

A small Island.

Great store of  
fish.Fourteen daies  
abode in this  
place.Sixe daies  
sailly.Floting of  
Palme leaves.  
Great moun-  
taines.  
At the North-  
side of the Gulfe  
of Mexico in  
this Bay land,  
was in this  
one place.

and

and knew it to be fresh water: and coming right against the River, they saw, where it entered into the Sea, that the water brake vpon a shoald. And because there was no man there that knew it, they were in doubt whether they should goe in, or goe along, and they resolved to goe in: and before they came vnto, the current, they went close to the shore, and entered into the port: and assoone as they were come in, they saw Indian men and women apparelled like Spaniards: whom they asked in what country they were? They answered in Spanish, that it was the River of Panuco, and that the towne of the Christians was 15. leagues vp within the land. The ioy that all of them receiued vpon these newes cannot sufficiently be expressed: for it seemed vnto them, that at that instant they were borne again. And many wept on shore and kissed the ground, and kneeling on their knees, with lifting vp their hands and eyes to heauen, they all ceased not to giue God thanks. Those which came after, assoone as they saw Calderan come to an anchor with his brigandine in the River, presently went thither, and came into the hauea. The other two brigandines which had overshot the place, put to sea to returne backe to seeke the rest, and could not doe it, because the winde was contrarie and the Sea growne: they were afraid of being cast away, and recouering the shore they cast anchor. While they rode there a storme arose: and seeing that they could not abide there, much lesse endure at Sea, they resolved to runne on shore; and as the brigandines were but small, so did they draw but little water; and where they were it was a sandie coast. By which occasion the force of their sailes drave them on shore, without any hurt of them that were in them. As those that were in the port of Panuco at this time were in great ioy: so these felt a double griefe in their hearts: for they knew not what was become of their fellows, nor in what country they were, and feared it was a country of Indian enemies. They landed two leagues below the port: and when they saw themselves out of the danger of the Sea, eury one tooke of that which he had, as much as he could carrie on his backe: and they trauelled vp into the country, and found Indians, which told them where their fellows were; and gaue them good entertainment: wherewith their sadnes was turned into ioy, and they thanked God most humbly for their deliuerance out of so many dangers.

The River of Panuco: the towne is 15. leagues from the mouth of the River.

## Chap. XLII.

How they came to Panuco, and how they were received of the inhabitants.

FROM the time that they put out of Rio Grande to the sea, at their departure from Florida, vntil they arrived in the River of Panuco, were 52. daies. They came into the River of Panuco the 10. of September, 1543. They went vp the River with their brigandines. They trauelled foure daies; and because the wind was but little, and many times it serued them not, because of the many turnings which the River maketh, and the great currents, drawing them vp by towing, and that in many places; for this cause they made very little way, and with great labour: and seeing the execution of their desire to be deferred, which was to come among Christians, and to see the celebration of diuine seruice, which so long time they had not seene; they left the brigandines with the mariners, and went by land to Panuco. All of them were apparelled in Decrees skins tanned and died blacke, to wit, cotes, hose, and shoes. When they came to Panuco, presently they went to the Church to pray and giue God thanks, that so miraculously had saved them. The townesmen which before were aduertised by the Indians, and knew of their arrival, caried some of them to their houses, and entertained them, whom they knew, and had acquaintance of, or because they were their Countrymen. The Alcade Mayor tooke the Governour home to his house: and commanded all the rest, assoone as they came, to be lodged 6. & 6. and 10. & 10. according to the habitie of eury townesman. And all of them were provided for by their hostes of many hennes and bread of Maiz, and fruites of the Countrey, which are such as be in the Isle of Cuba, wherof before I haue spoken. The towne of Panuco may containe about 70 families; the most of their houses are of lime and stone, and some made of timber, and all of them are thatched. It is a poore Countrey, and there is neither gold nor siluer in it: The inhabitants

They arrived in the River of Panuco, 1543. Septemb. 10.

The description of Panuco.

But there is great abundance of victuals and servants. The richest have not above 500. crownes rent a yeere, and that is in cotten clothes, hennies, and Maiz, which the Indians their servants doe give them for tribute. There arrived there of those that came out of Florida, three hundred and eleven Christians. Presently the Alcalde Mayor sent one of the townsmen in post to advertise the Viceroy, Don Antonio de Mendoza, which was resident in Mexico, that of 3 people that went with Don Ferdinando de Soto to discover and conquer Florida, three hundred and eleven men were arrived there, that seeing they were employed in his Majesties service, he would take some order to provide for them. Whereat the Viceroy, and all the inhabitants of Mexico wondered. For they thought they were miscarried, because they had travelled so farre within the maine land of Florida, and had no newes of them for so long a time: and it seemed a wonderfull thing unto them, how they could save themselves so long among Infidels, without any sort, wherein they might fortifie themselves, and without any other succour at all: Presently the Viceroy sent a warrant, wherein hee commanded, that whithersoever they sent, they should give them victuals, and as many Indians for their varriages as they needed: and where they would not furnish them, they might take those things that were necessarie perforce without incurring any danger of law. This warrant was so readily obeyed, that by the way before they came to the townes, they came to receive them with hennies, and victuals.

361. Christian  
arrived at  
Florida.

#### Chap. XLIII.

Of the favour which they found at the hands of the Viceroy, and of the inhabitants of the Citie of Mexico.

From Panuco to the great Citie Temistitan Mexico is 60. leagues; and other 60. from Panuco to the Port de Vera Cruz, where they take shipping for Spaine, and those that come from Spaine do land to go for Nueva Espanna. These three townes stand in a triangle: to wit, Vera Cruz, to the South, Panuco to the North, and Mexico to the West, 60. leagues asunder. The Countrie is so inhabited with Indians, that from towne to towne, those which are farthest, are but a league, and halfe a league asunder. Some of them that came from Florida, staid a month in Panuco to rest themselves, others fifteen daies, and every one as long as he listed: for there was none that showed a sower countenance to his guests, but rather gave them any thing that they had, and seemed to be grieved when they took their leave. Which was to be beleevied. For the victuals, which the Indians doe pay them for tribute, are more than they can spend: and in that towne is no commerce; and there dwell but few Spaniards there, and they were glad of their companie. The Alcalde Mayor divided all the Emperours clothes which he had (which there they pay him for his tribute) among those that would come to receive them. Those which had shirts of maile left, were glad when: for they had a horse for one shirt of maile: Some horsed themselves: and such as could not (which were the greatest part) tooke their iournee on foote: in which they were well received of the Indians that were in the townes, and better served, then they could have been in their owne houses, though they had been well to live. For if they asked one hen of an Indian, they brought them foure: and if they asked any of the Countrie fruit, though it were a league off, they ran presently for it. And if any Christian found himselfe cold at ease, they carried him in a chaire from one towne to another. In whatsoever towne they came, the Cacique, by an Indian which carried a rod of justice in his hand, whom they call Tapite, that is to say, a sergeant, commanded them to provide victuals for them, and Indians to beare burdens of such things as they had, and such as were needfull to carrie them that were sicke. The Viceroy sent a Portugall 20. leagues from Mexico, with great store of sugar, raisons of the Sunne, and conserves, and other things fit for sicke folks, for such was had neede of them: and had given order to cloath them all at the Emperours charges. And their approach being knowne by the citizens of Mexico, they went out of the towne to receive them: and with great comtesie, requesting them in favour to come to their houses, every one carried such as hee met home with him, and clothed them every one the best they could:

This is the man-  
ner of China, to  
carrie men in  
chaires.

could: so that he which had the meanest apparrell, it cost aboute 30. ducats. As many as were willing to come to the Viceroyes house he commanded to be apparelled, and such as were persons of qualitie sate at his table: and there was a table in his house for as many of the meaner sort as would come to it: and he was presently informed who euery one was, to shew him the courtesie that he deserved. Some of the Cōquerors did set both gentlemen and clownes at their owne table, and many times made the seruant sit cheeke by cheeke by his master: and chiefly the officers and men of base condition did so: for those which had better education did enquire who euery one was, and made difference of persons: but all did what they could with a good will: and euery one told them whom they had in their houses, that they should not trouble themselves, nor thinke themselves the worse, to take that which they gave them: for they had bin in the like case, and had bin relieved of others, and that this was the custome of that country. God reward them all: and God grant, that those which it pleased him to deliuer out of Florida, and to bring againe into Christendome, may serue him: and vnto those that died in that country, and vnto all that beleue in him: and confesse his holy faith, God for his mercie sake grant the kingdome of heauen. Amen.

## Chap. XLIV.

Which declareth some diuersities and particularities of the land of Florida: and the fruites, and beastes, and fowles that are in that Countrie.

FROM the Port de Spiritu Santo, where they landed when they entred into Florida, to the Province of Ocute, which may bee 400. leagues, little more or lesse, is a verie plaine Countrie, and hath many lakes and thicke woods, and in some places they are of wild pinetrees; and is a weake soile: There is in it neither Mountaine nor hill. The Countrie of Ocute is more fat and fruitfull; it hath thinner woods, and very goodly medows vpon the Riuer. Frō Ocute ouer to Cutifachiqui may be 180. leagues: 80. leagues thereof are desert, and haue many groues of wild Pine trees. Through the wilderness great Riuer doe passe. From Cutifachiqui to Xuala, may be 250. leagues: it is all a hilly Countrie. Cutifachiqui and Xuala stand both in Xuala plaine ground, hie, and haue goodly medows on the Riuer. From thence forward to Chiaha, Coça, and Tolise, is plaine ground, dry and fat, and very plentifull of Maiz. From Xuala to Tascaluga may be 250. leagues. From Tascaluga to Rio Grande, or the Great Riuer, may be 300. leagues: the Countrie is low, and full of lakes. From Rio Grande forward, the Countrie is hie and more champion, and best peopled of all the land of Florida. And along this Riuer from Aquixo to Pacaha, and Coligos, are 150. leagues: the Countrie is plaine, and the woods thinne, and in some places champion, very fruitfull and pleasant. From Coligo to Autiamque are 250. leagues of hillie Countrie. From Autiamque to Aguacay, may be 230. leagues of plaine ground. From Aguacay to the Riuer of Dayco 120. leagues, all hillie Countrie.

From the Port de Spiritu Santo vnto Apalache, they travelled from East to West, and North west. From Cutifachiqui to Xuala from South to North. From Xuala to Coça from East to West. From Coça to Tascaluga, and to Rio Grande, as far as the Provinces of Quizquiz and Aquixo from East to West. From Aquixo to Pacaha to the North. From Pacaha to Tulla from East to West: and from Tulla to Autiamque from North to South, to the Province of Guachoya and Dayco.

The bread which they eate in all the land of Florida is of Maiz, which is like course millet. And this Maiz is common in all the Isles and West Indies from the Antiles forward. There are also in Florida great store of Walnuts and Plammes, Mulberries, and Grapes. They sow and gather their Maiz euery one their seuerall crop. The fruits are common to all: for they grow abroad in the open fields in great abundance, without any neede of planting or dressing. Where there be Mountaines, there be chestnuts: they are somewhat smaller then the chestnuts of Spaine. Frō Rio Grande Westward, the Walnuts differ from those that grow more Eastward: for they are soft, and like vnto Acornes: And those which grow from Rio Grande to Puerto del Spiritu Santo for the most part are hard; and the

Port de Spiritu Santo is 10 deg. degrees  $\frac{1}{2}$  on the West side of Florida.

ouer.

Cutifachiqui

Xuala

Chiaha, Coça, and Tolise.

Tascaluga

Rio Grande.

Aquixo.

Coligo.

Autiamque.

Aguacay.

Page 23.

Maiz.

Walnuts, Plammes, Mulberries, Grapes.

Chestnuts.

Soft Walnuts Eastward from Rio Grande, Hard Walnuts Westward from Rio Grande.

A Pearre tree.  
 Strawberries.  
 Plummes of two  
 kinds.

and Walnuts in shew like those of Spaine. There is a fruit through all the Countrie which groweth on a plant like Ligoacan, which the Indians doe plant. The fruit is like unto Peares Riall: it hath a verie good smell, and an excellent taste. There groweth another plant in the open field, which beareth a fruit like unto strawberries, close to the ground, which hath a verie good taste. The Plummes are of two kinds, red and gray, of the making and bignesse of nuts, and haue three or foure stones in them. These are better then all the plummes of Spaine; & they make farre better Prunes of them. In the Grapes there is onely want of dressing: for though they bee big, they haue a great Kirnell. All other fruits are very perfect, and lesse hurtfull then those of Spaine.

Beasts.  
 Fowles.

There are in Florida many Beares, and Lyons, Wolves, Deere, Dogges, Cattes, Marters and Conies.

There be many wild Hennes as big as Turkeys, Partridges small like those of Africa, Cranes, Duckes, Pigeons, Thrushes and Sparrowes. There are certaine Blacke birds bigger then Sparrowes, and lesser then Starres. There are Gosse Hawkes, Falcons, Ierfalcons, and all Fowles of prey that are in Spaine.

The Indians are well proportioned. Those of the plaine Countries are taller of bodie, & better shapen, then those of the Mountaines. Those of the Inland haue greater store of Maiz, and commodities of the Countrie, then those that dwell upon the sea coast. The Countrie along the sea coast is barren and poore: and the people more warlike. The coast runneth from Puerto del Spiritu Santo to Apalache, East and West; and from Apalache to Rio de las Palmas from East to West: from Rio de las Palmas unto Nueva Espanna from North to South. It is a gentle coast, but it hath many sholdes, and great shelves of sand.

Deo gratias.

This relation of the discoverie of Florida was printed in the house of Andrew de Burgos, Printer and Gentleman of the house of my Lord Cardinall the Infante.

It was finished the tenth of Februarie in the yeere one thousand, five hundred, fiftie and seuen, in the noble and most loyall citie of Euora.

A  
DISCOVERY  
OF  
THE B A R M V D A S,  
OTHERWISE CALLED THE  
ILE OF DIVELS:

BY  
*SIR THOMAS GATES, SIR GEORGE SOMMERS,*

AND  
CAPTAYNE NEWPORT,

WITH DIVERS OTHERS.

SET FORTH FOR THE LOUE OF MY COUNTRY,

AND ALSO

*FOR THE GOOD OF THE PLANTATION IN VIRGINIA.*

SIL. IOURDAN.

London :

PRINTED BY IOHN WINDET, AND ARE TO BE SOLD BY ROGER BARNES IN S. DUNSTONES  
CHURCH-YARD IN FLEETE-STREETE, VNDER THE DIALL.

1610.



TO THE  
RIGHT WORSHIPFULL  
*MASTER IOHN FITZ-JAMES, ESQUIRE,*  
ONE OF HIS MAIESTIES CHIEFE IUSTICES OF PEACE  
WITHIN THE  
COUNTIE OF DORSET.

---

Sir, amongst all the sinnes, that humane nature doth stand possess with, ingratitude doth challenge a properie in man, although it bee a thing repugnant to reason, and disagreeing with all mutuall societie. To free my selfe from this vitium naturæ, I am bold in these fewe lines to dedicate my loue to you: for it were too tedious to vse many wordes, where good wil is the bond of loue. This smal gift I would intreate you to accept, if not for the quantitie, yet for the qualitie. From London the thirteenth of October, 1610.

Your Worships to commaund

SIL. IOURDAN.



## DISCOVERY.

OF THE

## B A R M V D A S,

OTHERWISE CALLED

## THE ILE OF DIVELS.

I Being in ship called the seaventure, with Sir Thomas Gates, our Gouvernour, Sir George Sommers, and Captaine Newport, three most worthy honoured Gentlemen, (whose valour and fortitude the world must needs take notice off, and that in most honourable designes) bound for Virginia, in the height of thirty degrees of northerly latitude, or thereabouts: we were taken with a most sharpe and cruell storme vpon the five and twentieth day of July, Anno 1609. which did not only separate vs from the residue of our secte, (which were eight in number) but with the violent working of the Seas, our ship became so shaken, torne, and leaked, that shee received so much water, as couered two tire of hogsheds about the ballast; that our men stoode vp to the middles, with buckets, baricos, and Kettles, to baile out the water, and continually pumped for three dayes and three nights together, without any intermission; and yet the water seemed rather to increase, then to diminish: in so much that all our men; being viterly spent; tyred, and disabled for longer labour, were euen resolu'd, without any hope of their liues, to shut vp the hatches, and to haue committed themselves to the mercy of the sea, (which is said to be mercilesse) or rather to the mercy their mighty God: and redeemer, (whose mercies exceed all his works) seeing no helpe, nor hope, in the apprehension of mans reason, that any mothers child could escape that ineuitable danger, which euery man had propos'd and digested to himselfe, of present sinking. So that some of them hauing some good and comfortable waters in the ship, fetcht them, and dranke one to the other, taking their last leaue one of the other, untill their more joyfull and happy meeting, in a more blessed world; when it pleased God out of his most gracious and mercifull providence, so to direct and guide our ship, (being left to the mercy of the sea) for her most aduantage; that Sir George Sommers (sitting vpon the poope of the ship,) where he sate three dayes and three nights together, without meales meate, and little or no sleepe, coursing the shippe to keepe her as vpright as he could, (for otherwise shee must needs instantly haue foundred) most wishedly happily discryed land; whereupon he most comfortably encouraged the company to follow their pumping, and by no means to cease bayling out of the water with their buckets, baricos, and kettles; whereby they were so ouer wearied, and their spirits so spent with long fasting, and continuance of their labour, that for the most part they were fallen asleepe in corners, and wheresoeter they chanced first to sit or lie: but hearing news of land, wherewith they grew to bee somewhat reuired, being carried with will and desire beyond their strength, euery man busied vp, and gathered his strength and feeble spirits together, to performe as much as their weake force would permit him: through which weake means, it pleased God to worke so strongly as the water was stride for that little time, (which as we all much feared, was the last period of our breathing) and the ship kept from present sinking, when it pleased God to send her within halfe an English mile of that land that Sir George Sommers had not long before discryed: which were the llandes of the

Bermuda. And there neither did our ship sincke, but more fortunately in so great a misfortune, fell in betwene two rockes, where shee was fast lodged and locked, for further budging: whereby we gayed, not only sufficient time, with the present helpe of our boate, and skiffe, safely to set, and conuey our men ashore (which were one hundred and fifty in number) but afterwards had time and leasure to saue some good part of our goodes and provision, which the water had not spoyled, with all the tackling of the ship, and much of the yron about her, which were necessities not a little available, for the building and furnishing of a new ship and pinnis, which we made there, for the transporting and carrying of vs to Virginia. But our deliuey was not more strange in falling so opportunely, and happily vpon the land, as our feeding and preseruation, was beyond our hopes, and all mens expectations most admirable. For the Islands of the Bermudas, as euery man knoweth that hath heard or read of them, were neuer inhabited by any Christian or heathen people, but euer esteemed, and reputed, a most prodigious and enchanted place, affording nothing but gusts, stormes, and foule weather; which made euery Navigator and Mariner to auoid the, as Scylla and Charibdis; or as they would shunne the Deuill himselfe; and no man was euer heard, to make for the place, but as against their wils, they haue by stormes and dangerousnesse of the rockes, lying seauen leagues into the sea, suffered shipwracke; yet did we finde there the ayre so temperate and the Country so abundantly fruitful of all fit necessities, for the sustentation and preseruation of mans life, that most in a manner of all our provisions of bread, beere, and victuall, being quite spoyled, in lying long drowned in salt water, notwithstanding we were there for the space of nine monethes (few dayes ouer or vnder) not only well refreshed, comforted, and with good satyety contented, but of the abundance thereof, prouided vs some reasonable quantity and proportion of provision, to carry vs for Virginia, and to maintaine ourselues, and that company we found there, to the great releefe of them, as it fell out in their so great extremities, and in respect of the shortnesse of time, vntill it pleased God, that by my Lords coming thither, their store was better supplied, and greater, and better provisions were might haue made, if we had had better meanes for the storing and transportation thereof. Wherefore my opinion sincerely of this Island is, that whereas it hath bene, and is still accounted, the most dangerous, infortunate, and most forlorne place of the world, it is in truth the richest, healthfullst, and pleasing land, (the quantity and bignesse thereof considered) and meerey naturall, as euer set foote vpon: the particular profits and benefits whereof, shal be more especially inserted, and herewith annexed, which euery man to his owne private knowledge, that was there, can auouch and iustifie for a truth. Vpon the eight and twentieth day of Iuly 1609. (after the extremity of the storme was something qualified) we fell vpon the shore at the Bermudas; where after our generall Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Sommers, and Captaine Newport, had by their prudent carefulnesse landed all their men, and so much of the goodes, and provisions out of the ship, as was not vterly spoyled, euery man disposed and applyed himselfe, to search for, and to seeke out such releefe and sustentation, as the Country afforded: and Sir George Sommers, a man inured to extremities, (and knowing what thereunto belonged) was in this seruise, neither idle nor backward, but presently by his careful industry, went and found out sufficient, of many kind of fishes, and so plentifull thereof, that in halfe an houre, he took so many great fishes with hookes, as did suffice the whole company one day. And fish is there so abundant, that if a man steppe into the water, they will come round about him; so that men were faine to get out for feare of byting. These fishes are very fat and sweete, and of that proportion and bignesse, that three of them will conueniently lade two men: those we called rock fish. Besides there are such abundance of mullets that with a scaue might be taken at one draught one thousand at the least, and infinite store of pilchards, with diuers kindes of great fishes, the names of them vnknowne to me: of crayfishes very great ones, and so great store as that there hath bene taken in one night with making lights, euen sufficient to feede the whole company a day. The Country affordeth great abundance of Hogs, as that there hath bene taken by Sir George Sommers, who was the first that hunted for them, to the

the number of two and thirty at one time, which he brought to the company in a boat built by his owne hands. There is fowle in great number vpon the Ilands, where they breed; that there hath bene taken in two or three houres, a thousand at the least; the bird being of the bignesse of a good Pidgeon, and layeth egges as bigge as Hen egges vpon the sand; where they come and lay them dayly, although men sit downe amongst them; that they hath bene taken vp in one morning, by Sir Thomas Gates men, one thousand of egges: and Sir George Sommers men, comming a little distance of time after them, haue stayed there whilst they came and layed their egges amongst them, that they brought away as many more with them; with many young birds very fat and sweet. Another Sea fowle there is that lyeth in little holes in the ground, like vnto a cony-hole, and are in great numbers, exceeding good meate, very fat and sweet (those we had in the winter) and their egges are white, and of that bignesse, that they are not to be knowne from Hen egges. The other birds egges are speckled, and of a different colour: there are also great store and plenty of Herons, and those so familiar and tame, that wee beate them downe from the trees with stones and staves, but such were young Herons: besides many White Herons, without so much as a blacke or gray feather on them; with other small birds so tame and gentle, that a man walking in the woods with a stick, and whistling to them, they will come and gaze on you; so neare that you may strike and kill many of them with your stick; and with singing and hallowing you may doe the like. There are also great store of Tortoses, (which some call Turtles) and those so great, that I haue seene a bushel of egges in one of their bellies, which are sweeter then any Henne egge: and the Tortose it selfe, is all very good meate, and yeeldeth great store of oyle, which is as sweete as any butter; and one of them will suffice fifty men a meale, at the least: and of these hath bene taken great store, with two boates, at the least fotty in one day. The Country yeeldeth diuers fruits, as prickled peores, great abundance, which continue greene vpon the trees all the yeare; also great plenty of Malberries, white and red: and on the same are great store of silke-wormes, which yeeldeth of silke, both white and yellow, being some coarse, and some fine. And there is a tree called a Palmito tree, which hath a very sweet berry, vpon which the hogs doe most feede; but our men finding the sweetnesse of them, did willingly share with the hogs for them, they being very pleasant and wholesome, which made them carelesse almost of any bread with their meate; which occasioned vs to carry in a manner all that store of flower and meale, we did or could saue for Virginia. The head of the Palmito tree is very good meate, either raw or sodden, it yeeldeth a head which weigheth about twenty pound, and is farre better meate, then any cabbage. There are an infinite number of Cedar trees, (the fairest I thinke in the world) and those bring forth a very sweet berry and wholesome to eate. The Country (for as much as I could find my self, or heare by others) affords no venomous creature or so much as a Rat or Mouse, or any other thing vnhwolsome. There is great store of Pearle, and some of them very faire, round and Orientall; and you shall finde at least one hundred seeds of Pearle in one Oyster; there hath bene likewise found, some good quantity of Amber Greece, and that of the best sort. There are also great plenty of Whales, which conceale are very easie to be killed, for they come so usually, and ordinarily to the shore, that we heard them oftentimes in the night a bed; and haue seene many of them neare the shore, in the day time. There was borne vpon the Bermudas, at the time of our being there two children, the one a man child, there baptised by the name of Bermudas: and a woman child, baptised by the name of Bermuda: as also there was a marriage betwene two English people vpon that Iland. This Iland, I meane the mayne Iland, with all the broken Ilandes adiacent; are made in the forme of a half Moore, but a little more rounder and diuided into many broken Ilands, and there are many good harbours in it; but wee could finde one especiall place to goe in, or rather to goe out from it, which was not altogether free from some danger, and that lyeth on the South-east side, where there is three fathoms water, at the entrance therof, but within sixe, seauen, or eight fathoms at the least, where you may safely lie land-locked, from the danger of all winds and weathers, and more to the trees. The coming into it, is so narrow and straight betwene the rocks, as that it will with small store of munition be fortified, and easily defended, with all aduantage the place affords, against the forces of the Potentest King

King of Europe. There are also plenty of Hawkes, and very good Tobacco, as I thinke, which through forgetfulness, I had almost omitted: now having finished and rigged our ship, and pinnis, the one called the Deliverance, the pinnis the Patience, wee prepared and made our selues ready, to ship for Virginia; having powdered some store of hogs flesh, for provision thither, and the company thereof, for some reasonable time: but were compelled to make salt there for the same purpose, for all our salt was spent and spoyled, before wee recovered the shore. Wee carried with vs also a good portion of Tortose oyle, which either for frying or baking did vs very great pleasure, it being very sweete, nourishing, and wholesome: the greatest defects we found there, was tarre and pitch for our ship, and pinnis, in steede whereof wee were forced to make lime there of a hard kinde of stone, and use it: which for the present occasion and necessity, with some wax we found cast vp by the Sea; from some shipwracke, serued the turne to pay the seames of the pinnis Sir George Sommers built, for which hee had neither pitch nor tarre: so that God in the supplying of all our wants, beyond all measure, shewed himselfe still mercifull vnto vs, that we might accomplish our intended voyage to Virginia, for which I confidently hope, hee doth yet reserve a blessing in store; and to the which I presume, every honest and religious heart will readily giue their amen. When all things were made ready, and commodiously fitted, the wind comming faire, wee set saile and put off from the Barnudas, the tenth day of May, in the year 1610. and arrived at James towne in Virginia, the foure and twentieth day of the same Moneth: where wee found some threescore persons living. And being then some three weeks or thereabouts passed, & not hearing of anye supply, it was thought fitting by a generall consent, to use the best meanes for the preservation of all those people that were living, being all in number two hundred persons. And so vpon the eight of Iune one thousand six hundred and ten, wee vnbarked at James Towne: not having aboue fourteene dayes victaile, and so were determined to direct our course for New-found-land, there to refresh vs, and supply our selues with victaile, to bring vs home; but it pleased God to dispose otherwise of vs, and to giue vs better meanes. For being all of vs shipped in foure pinnices, and departed from the towne, almost downe half the Riuier, wee met my Lord De La Warre comming vp with three ships, well furnished with victaile, which reuiued all the company, and gaue them great content. And after some few dayes, my Lord vnderstanding of the great plenty of hogges and fish, was at the Barnudas, and the necessity of them in Virginia, was desirous to send thither, to supply himselfe with those things; for the better comforting of his men, and the plantation of the Country. Whereupon Sir George Sommers being a man best acquainted with the place, and being willing to doe seruice vnto his Prince and Country: without any respect of his owne priuate gaine. And being of threescore yeares of age at the least, out of his worthy and valiant minde, offered himselfe to vndertake to performe with Gods help that dangerous voyage for the Barnudas, for the better releefe and comfort of the people in Virginia, and for the better plantation of it, which offer my Lord De La Warre, very willingly and thankfully accepted; and so vpon the nineteenth of Iune, Sir George Sommers imbarked himself at James towne in a small barge of thirty tonne, or thereabout, that hee built at the Barnudas: wherein hee laboured from morning vntill night, as duelic as any workeman doth labour for wages, and built her all with Cedar, with little or no yron worke at all: having in her but one boulte, which was in the Kilson: notwithstanding thanks be to God, shee brought vs in safety to Virginia, and so I trust he will protect him, and send him well backe againe, to his hearts desire, and the great comfort of all the company there.

The Barnudas lyeth in the height of two and thirty degrees and a halfe, of Northerly latitude, Virginia bearing directly from it, West, North West, two hundred and thirty leagues.

A

TRUE COPPIE

OF A

*DISCOURSE WRITTEN BY A GENTLEMAN,*

EMPLOYED IN THE LATE VOYAGE

OF

SPAINE AND PORTINGALE:

SENT TO HIS PARTICULAR FRIEND,

AND BY HIM PUBLISHED,

FOR THE BETTER SATISFACTION OF ALL SUCH,  
AS HAVING BEEN SEDUCED BY PARTICULAR REPORT,  
HAVE ENTRED INTO CONCEIPTS TENDING TO THE DISCREDIT OF THE ENTERPRISE,  
AND ACTORS OF THE SAME.

At London

PRINTED FOR THOMAS WOODCOCK DWELLING IN PAULES CHURCHYARD, AT THE  
SIGNE OF THE BLACKE BEARE.

1589.



## TO THE READER.

---

Some holding opinion, that it is onely proper to men of learning (whose Arte may grace their doings) to write of matter worthie to be committed to the view of future Ages, may judge the publication of such Discourses as are contained in this Pamphlet, to be an adventure too great for a professed Souldier to vndertake: but I, more respecting the absolute truth of the matter, than the faire shew that might be set thereon; and preferring the high reputation of the Actors in this Iourney before the request of my particular friend, haue presumed to present vnto you a report of the late Voyage into Spaine and Portingall, sent vnto me almost 4. moneths sithence frō a Gentleman my verie nere friend employed in the same; who, as it appeareth in his obseruations, hath aduisedlic scene into euerie action thereof: and because I haue often conferred with manie that were in the same Iourney, verie nere vpon euerie particular of his relation, and finde as much confirmed as I haue receiued, I presume to deliuer it vnto you for true & exact. Howbeit, forasmuch as it came vnto my hands with his earnest request to reserue it to my selfe, I had almost consented thereunto; had not the desire I haue to reconcile the contrarie of opinions that be held of that action, & to make it known what honour the cause hath laid vpon our whole Nation, moued me to publish the same: whereof sith there may growe a greater benefit in publike, (for that manie shall partake thereof) than the pleasure can be to him in smothering the labors he hath bestowed in setting downe the Discourse, I doubt not but he esteeming a cōmon good before his priuate fancie, will pardon me herein. In the behalfe of whom, I beseech you to whose viewe and reading the same is offered, not so curioslie to looke vpon the forme, as vpon the matter; which I present vnto you as he sent it, naked and vnpolished. And you that were companions with him of the Iourney, if anie of you may thinke your selues not fully satisfied, in the report of your deseruings, let me intreate you to excuse him, in that he indeuouring to write thereof briefly for my particular vnderstanding, did onely take notice of them who cōmaunded the seruices in chiefe, as being of greatest marke, and lay the blame vpon me, who can by no meanes auoyd it: sauing that from the fault I haue committed, (if it be a fault) I hope there may some good proceed. It hath satisfied me in many things, whereof I being ignorant, was led into an erroneous concept of the matter and of the persons: and I hope it shall both confirme others who maie remaine doubtfull of either; and reforme them that hauing been seduced, are become sectaries agaynst the same. I will therefore commend the man and matter to your friendly censure, forbearing to notifie his name, least I might increase mine offence against him; & be namelesse my selfe for other good considerations: which I leaue friendly Reader to thy best construction.



THE  
TRUE COPIE  
OF  
A LETTER SENT FROM A GENTLEMAN,  
WHO WAS IN ALL THE SERVICES, THAT WERE IN THE LATE JOURNEY  
OF  
SPAINE AND PORTINGALL,  
TO A FRIEND OF HIS.

---

Although the desire of advancing my reputation, caused me to withstand the manie persuasions you vsed, to hold me at home, and the pursuite of honorable actions drew me (contrarie to your expectation) to neglect that advise, which in loue I know you gaue me: yet in respect of the manie assurances you haue yeilded me of your kindest friendship, I cannot suspect that you wil either loue or esteeme me the lesse, at this my returne: and therefore will not omit anie occasion which may make me appeare thankfull, or discharge anie part of that dutie I owe you; which now is none other, than to offer you a true discourse how these warres of Spaine and Portingall haue passed since our going out of England the xviii. of Aprill, till our returne which was the first of Iuly. Wherein I wil (vnder your fauourable pardon) for your further satisfaction, as well make relation of those reasons which confirmed me in my purpose of going abroad, as of these accidents which haue happened during our abode there; thereby hoping to perswade you, that no light fancie did draw me from the fruition of your dearest friendship, but an earnest desire by following the warres, to make my selfe more worthie of the same.

Having therefore determinately purposed to put on this habit of a Souldiour, I grewe doubtfull whether to imploy my time in the warres of the Lowe Countreyes, which are in auxilliary manner maintained by her Maiestie; or to follow the fortune of this voyage, which was an aduventure of her and manie honorable personages, in reuenge of vsupportable wrongs offered vnto the estate of our Countrey by the Castilian King: in arguing whereof, I finde that by how much the Challenger is reputed before the defendant, by so much is this iorney to be preferred before those defensiuve warres, for had the Duke of Parma his turne to defend, as it was his good fortune to invade, from whence could haue proceeded that glorious honor which these late warres haue laid vpon him, or what could haue been

said more of him, than of a Respondent (though neuer so valiant) is a priuate Duell: Euen, that he hath done no more than by his honour he was tied vnto. For the gaine of one Towne or anie small defeate giueth more renowne to the Assailant, than the defence of a Countrey, or the withstanding of twentie encounters can yeeld any man who is bound by his place to gard the same: whereof as well the particulars of our age, especially in the Spaniard, as the reports of former histories may assure vs, which haue still laid the fame of all warres vpon the Inuador. And do not ours in these daies liue obscured in Flanders, either not hauing wherewithall to manage anie warre, or not putting on armes, but to defend themselves when the Enemy shall procure them? Whereas in this short time of our Adventure, wee haue wonne a Towne by escalade, battred and assaulted another, ouerthrowen a mightie Princes power in the field, landed our Armie in three severall places of his Kingdome, marched seauen daies in the hart of his Countrey, lyeen three nights in the Suburbes of his principall Citie, beaten his forces into the gates thereof, and possessed two of his frontier forts, as shall in discourse thereof more particularly appeare: whereby I conclude, that going with an Inuadour, and in such an action as euerie daie giueth new experience, I haue much to vaunt of, that my fortune did rather carry me thither, than into the warres of Flanders. Notwithstanding the vehement persuasions you vsed with me to the contrarie, the ground whereof sithence you receiued them from others, you must giue me leaue to acquaint you with the error you were lead into by them; who labouring to bring the world into an opinion, that it stood more with the safetie of our Estate to bend all our forces against the Prince of Parma, than to followe this action, by looking into the true effects of this Iourney, will iudicially conuince themselves of mistaking the matter. For, may the Conquest of these Countreies against the Prince of Parma, bee thought more easie for vs alone now, than the defence of them was xi. yeares agoe, with the men and money of the Queene of England? the power of the Monsieur of France? the assistance of the principall States of Germanie? and the Nobilitie of their owne Countrey: Could not an armie of more than 20000. horse and almost 30000. foote, beate Iohn de Austria out of the Countrey, who was possessed of a verie few frontier Townes: and shall it now be vpon her Maiesties shoulders to remove so mightie an Enemy, who hath left vs but 3. whole parts of 17. vncougered? It is not a Iourney of a few months, nor an auxiliarie warre of few yeres that can damnifie the King of Spaine in those places, where we shall meete at euerie 8. or 10. milles end with a Towne, which will cost more the winning, than will yearly pay 4. or 5000. mens wages, where all the Countrey is quatered by Riuers, which haue no passage vnfortested: and where most of the best Souldiers of Christendome that be on our aduersie partie be in pension. But our Armie which hath not cost her Maiestic much aboue the third part of one yeres expences in the Lowe Countries, hath already spoyled a great part of the prouision he had made at the Groyne of all sorts, for a newe voyage into England; burnt 3. of his ships, whereof one was the second in the last yeares expedition, taken from him aboue 150. peecea of good artilerie, cut off more than 60. bulkes, and 20. French ships well manned, fit & readie to serue him for men of warre against vs, laden for his store with corne, victuals, masts, cables, and other merchandizes; slaine and taken the principall men of warre hee had in Galicia; made Don Pedro Enriquez de Gusman, Conde de Fuentes, Generall of his forces in Portingall, shamefullie runne at Penicha; laide along of his best Commanders in Lisbon; and by these fewe adventures discovered how easilie her Maiestic may without any great adventure in short time pull the Tyrant of the World vpon his knees, as well by the disquieting his vnsurpation of Portingall as without difficultie in keeping the commoditie of his Indies from him, by sending an armie so accomplished, as may not bee subiect to those extremities which we haue endured: except he draw for those defences, his forces out of the Lowe Countries and disfurish his garisons of Naples and Milan, which with safetie of those places he may not doe. And yet by this meane shall rather be enforced thereunto, than by any force that can be vsed there against him: Wherefore I directly conclude, that this proceeding is the most safe and necessarie way to be held against him; and therefore more importing, than the warre in the Lowe Countries.

Yet hath the journey (I know) been much disliked by some, who either thinking too unworthely of the Spaniards valour, too indifferently of his purposes against vs, or too unworthely of them that vnderooke this journey against him, did thinke it a thing dangerous to encounter the Spaniard at his owne home, a thing needlesse to proceede by inuasion against him, a thing of too great moment for two subjects of their qualitie to vndertake. And therefore did not so aduance the beginnings as though they hoped for any good successe thereof.

The chaunces of warres bee things most vncertaine: for what people soeuer vndertake them, they are indeede but as chazlizeiments appointed by God for the one side or the other, for which purpose it hath pleased him to giue some victories to the Spaniards of late yeares against some whome he had in purpose to ruine. But if we consider what warres they be that haue made their name so terrible, we shall finde them to haue been none other, than against the barbarous Moores, the naked Indians; and the vnarmed Netherlanders: whose yeelding rather to the name than act of the Spaniards, hath put them into such a conceipt of their mightines, as they haue considerably vnderaken the conquest of our Monarchie, consisting of a people vnited and alwaies held sufficiently warlike: against whom what successe their intvincible Armie had the last yeare, as our verie children can witnes, so I doubt not but this voyage hath sufficiently made knowne, what they are euen vpon their owne dounge-hill: which had it been set out in such sort as it was agreed vpon by their first demand, it might haue made our Nation the most glorious people of the world. For hath not the want of 8. of the 12. peeces of Artillerie which was promised vnto the Aduenture, lost her Maiestie the possession of the Groyne and many other places, as hercafter shal appeare; whose defensible Rampiers were greater than our batterie (such as it was) cold force: and therefore were left vnattempted.

It was also resolved to haue sent 600. English horse of the Lowe Countries, whereof we had not one, notwithstanding the great charges expended in their transportation hither: and that may the Armie assembled at Puente de Burgos thanke God of, as well as the forces of Portingall: who foreranne vs sixe daies together: Did wee not want seauen of y thirtene old Companies, we should haue had from thence: foure of the ten Dutch Companies: & sixe of their men of warre for the Sea, from the Hollanders: which I may iustly say we wanted, in that we might haue had so many good souldiers, so many good shippes, and so many able bodies more than we had:

Did there not, vpon the first thinking of the Journey diuers gallant Courtiers put in their names for aduenturers to the summe of 1000l. who seeing it went forward in good earnest, aduised themselues better, and laid the want of so much money vpon the Journey?

Was there not moreouer a round summe of the aduenture spent in leuening, furnishing, and mainteyning three moneths 1500. men for the seruice of Berghen: with which Companies the Mutinies of Ostend, was suppressed: a seruice of no small moment?

What miserie the detracting of the time of our setting out, which should haue been the first of Februarie, did lay vpon vs, too many can witnesse: and what extremitie the want of that monethes victuals which we did eate, during the moneth wee lay at Plimoth for a winde, might haue driuen vs vnto, no man can doubt of, that knoweth what men doo liue by, had not God giuen vs in the end a more prosperous winde and shorter passage into Galitia, then hath been: often seen; where our owne force and fortune reuictualled vs largely: of which grosse windes that held vs two daies after our going out, the Generalls being wearie, thrust to Sea in the same, wisely choosing rather to attend the change thereof there; than by being in harborough to loose any part of the better when it should come by hauing their men on shoare: in which two daies 25. of our companies shipped in parte of the flecte, were scattered from vs, either not being able or willing to double Vshant.

These burthens laid vpon our Generalls before their going out, they haue patientlie endured, and I thinke they haue thereby much enlarged their honor: for hauing done thus much with the want of our Artillerie, 600. horse, 3000. foote, 20000l. of their aduenture, and

and one moneths victualls of their proportion, what may bee coniectured they would haue done with their full complement :

For the losse of our men at Sea, since wee can lay it on none but the will of GOD, what can be saide more, than that it is his pleasure, to turne all those impediments to the honour of them, against whom they were intended: and he will still shew himselfe the God of hosts in doing great things by them, whome many haue sought to obscure: who if they had let the action fall at the height thereof in respect of those defects, which were such especially for the seruice at land, as would haue made a mightie subject stoop vnder them; I doo not see, how any man could iustly haue laide any reproach vpon him who commanded the same: but rather haue lamented the iniquitie of this time, wherein men whom furrein Countries haue for their conduct in seruice worthily esteemed of, should not only in their own Countrey not be seconded in their honourable endeours, but mightily hindred, euen to the impairing of their owne estates, which most willingly they haue aduentured for the good of their Countries: whose worth I will not vauel by my report, least I should seeme guiltie of flatterie, (which my soule abhorreth) and yet come short in the true measure of their praise. Onely for your instruction, against them who had almost seduced you from the true opinion you ought to holde of such men; you shall vnderstand that Generall Norris from his booke was trained vp in the varres of the Admirall of France: and in verie young yeares had charge of men vnder the Earle of Essex in Ireland: which with what commendations he then discharged, I leaue to the reporte of them who obserued those seruices. Vpon the breach betwixt Don Iohn. and the States, he was made Colonell Generall of all the English forces there present, or to come, which he continued two yeares: hee was then made Marshall of the field, vnder Conte Hohenlo: and after that, Generall of the armie in Frisland: at his coming home in the time of Monsieurs gouernement in Flanders, hee was made Lord President of Monster in Ireland: which he yet holdeth, from whence within one yeare he was sent for, and sent Generall of the English forces her Maiestie then lent to the Lowe Countries: which hee held till the Earle of Leicesters going ouer. And hee was made Marshall of the field in England, the enemie being vpon our Coast, and when it was expected the Crowne of England should haue been tried by battaile. All which places of commandement which neuer any English-man successiuey attained vnto in forraine Warres, and the high places her Maiestie hath thought him worthie of, may suffice to perswade you, that he was not altogether vnlikely to discharge that which he vnderooke.

What fame Generall Drake hath gotten by his journey about the world, by his aduentures to the West Indies: and the scourges he hath laid vpon the Spanish Nation, I leaue to the Southerne parts to speak of, and referre you to the booke extant in our own language treating of the same; and beseech you, considering the waighie matters they haue in all the course of their liues with wonderful reputation managed, that you will esteeme them not well informed of their proceedings, that thinke them insufficient to passe through that which they vnderooke, especiallie hauing gone thus farre in the viewe of the world, through so many incombrances, and disappointed of those agreements which led them rather to vndertake the seruice. But it may be you will thinke me herein either too much opinionated of the Voiage, or conceited of the Comanders, that labouring thus earnestly to aduance the opinion of them both, haue not so much as touched any part of the misorders, weakenes and wants that haue been amongst vs, whereof they that returned did plentifully report: True it is, I haue conceiued a great opinion of the Iurney, and doo thinke honourably of the Comanders: for we finde in greatest antiquities, that many Comanders haue bene receiued home with triumph for lesse merite, and that our owne Countrey hath honoured men heretofore with admiration, for aduentures vnequall to this: it might therefore in those daies haue seemed superfluous to extend any mans commendations by particular remembrances, for that then all men were readie to giue euerie man his due. But I holde it most necessarie in these daies, sihenoe euerie vertue findeth her direct opposit, and actions, worthy of all memory, are in dangerte to be enuiously obscured, to denounce

denounce the praises of the action, and actors to the fall, but yet no further than with sincerity of truth, and not without grieving at the injurie of this time, wherein is enforced a necessitie of Apologies for those mē, & masters, which all former times were accustomed to entertaine with the greatest applause that might be. But to answer the reports which have been giuen out in reproch of the actors & action by such as were in the same. Let no man think otherwise, but, that they who fearing the casuall accidents of warre had any purpose of returning, did first aduise of some occasion that should moue them thereunto: and having found any what so euer did thinke it sufficiently iust, in respect of the earnest desire they had to seek out matter that might colour their coming home.

Of these there were some, who hauing noted the late Flemish warres, did finde that many young men haue gone over and safely returned Soldiers within fewe Moneths, in hauing learned some words of Art, vsed in the warres, and thought after that good example to spend like time amongst vs: which being expired they began to quarrell at the great Mortallitie that was amongst vs:

The neglect of discipline in the Armie, for that men were suffered to be drunck with the plentie of Wines.

The scarcitie of Surgions.

The want of Carriages for the hurt and sicke: and the penurie of victuals in the Campe.

Thereupon diuining that there would be no good done. And that therefore they could be content to lose their time, and aduenture to returne home againe.

These men haue either conceiued well of their owne wits (who by observing the passages of the warre: were become sufficient Soldiers in these fewe weekes) and did long to be at home; where their discourses might be wondred at, or missing of their Portugues and Milraces they dreamed on in Portugall, would rather returne to their former manner of life, than attend the end of the journey. For seeing that one hazard brought on another: and that though one escaped the bullet this day it might light vpon him to morrow, the next day, or any day; & that the warre was not confined to any one place, but that euery place brought forth new enemies; were glad to see some of the poore Soldiers fall sicke, that they fearing to be infected by them might iustly desire to goe home.

The sickness I confesse was great, because any is too much. But hath it been greater than is ordinarie amongst Englishmen at their first entrance into the warres, whether soeuer they goe to want the fulnes of their flesh pots? Haue not ours decayed at 31 times in France, with eating young fruites and drinking new wines? haue they not abundantly perished in the Lowe Countreies with cold, and rawnes of the Ayre, euen in their Garrisons? haue there not more died in London in sixe Moneths of the Plague, than double our Armie being at the strongest? And could the Spanish Armie the last yeare (who had all provisions that could bee thought on for an Armie, and tooke the fittest season in the yeare for our Climate) auoide sickness amongst their Soldiers? May it then be thought that ours could escape there, where they found inordinate heat of weather, and hot wines to distemper them withal? But can it bee, that wee haue lost so many as the common sort perauade themselves we haue? It hath been proued by strict examinations of our masters, that wee were neuer in our fulnes before our going from Plymouth 11000. Soldiers, nor about 2500. Marriners. It is also euident that there returned about 6000. of all sorts, as appeareth by the severall payments made to them since our coming home. And I haue truly shewed you that of these number verie neare 3000. forsooke the Armie at the Sea, whereof some passed into France and the rest returned home. So as wee neuer being 13000. in all, and hauing brought home about 6000. with vs, you may see how the world hath been seduced, in beleeuing that wee haue lost 16000. men by sickness.

To them that haue made question of the gouernement of the warres (little knowing what appertaineth therunto in that there were so many drūkarnds amongst vs) I answer, that in their gouernement of shires & parishes, yea in their verie householdes, themselves can hardlye bridle their vassalls from that vice. For we see it a thing almost impossible, at any your faires or publique assemblies to finde any quarter thereof sober, or in your Townes any Alepotes vnfrequented:

Answers to the first.

Answers to the second.

frequented: And we observe that though any man having any disordered persons in their houses, doo locke vp their drinke and set butlers upon it; that they will yet either by indirect means steale themselves drunke from their Masters tables, or runne abroad to seeke it. If then at home in the eyes of your Iustices, Mayors, Preachers, and Masters, and where they pay for euerie pot they take, they cannot be kept from their liquor: doo they thinke that those base disordered persons whome themselves sent vnto vs, as liuing at home without rule, who hearing of wine do long for it as a dainetic that their purses could neuer reach to in England, & having it there without money cut in their houses where they lie & hold their garde they can be kept from being drunke; and once drunke held in any order or tune, except we had for euerie drunkeard an officer to attend him. But who be they that haue runne into these disorders: Euen our newest men, our youngest men, and our idlest men; and for the most parte, our slovenly prest men, whome the Iustices (who haue alwaies thought vnworthy of any warre) haue sent out as the scumme and dregges of their Countrey. And those were they, who distemping themselves with these hot wines, haue brought in that sickness, which hath infected honest men than themselves: But I hope (as in other places) the recouerie of their diseases dooth acquaint their bodies with the ayre of the Countrey where they be; so the remainder of these which haue either recouered, or past without sickness will prooue most fit for Martiall seruises.

Answers to the  
third

If we haue wanted Surgions, may not this rather be laide vpon the Captaines: who are to prouide for their seuerall Companies, than vpon the Generalls, whose care hath beene more generall. And how may it be thought that euerie Captaine, vpon whome most of the charges of raising their Companies was laid as an aduenture could prouide themselves of all things expedient for a warre; (which was alwaies wont to be maintained by the purse of the Prince:) But admit euerie Captaine had his Surgion: yet were the want of curing neuer the lesse, for our English Surgions (for the most part) bee vnexperienced in hurts that come by shot; because England hath not knowne warres, but of late, from whose ignorance proceeded this discomfort, which I hope will warne those that hereafter goe to the warres to make preparation of such as may better preserue mens liues by their skill.

Answers to the  
fourth

From whence the want of carriages did proceede, you may coniecture in that we marched through a Countrey, neither plentifull of such provisions, nor willing to parte from any thing: yet this I can assure you that no man of worth was left either hurt or sicke in any place vnprovided for. And that the General commanded all the Mules & Ases, that were laden with any baggage, to be vnburdened and taken to that vse: and the Earle of Essex, and hee, for money bired men to carrie men vpon Pikes. And the Earle (whose true vertue and Nobilitie, as it dooth in all other his actions appeare, so did it very much in this) threw his owne stuffe: I meane apparell and necessaries which he had there from his owne carriages; and let them be left by the way, to put hurt and sicke men vpon them. Of whose most honorable deservings: I shall not mede here to make any particular discourse, for that many of his actions doo hereafter giue mee occasion to obserue the same.

Answers to the  
fifth

And the great complaint that these men make for the want of victuals: may well proceed from their not knowing the wants of the warre; for if to seeke vpon good beeces, mutton and goats, be to want, they haue indured great scarcitie at land; whereunto they neuer wanted two daies together, wine to mixe with their water, nor bread to eate with their meate, (in some quantitie,) except it were such as had vowed rather to starue, than to stirre out of their places for food: of whom we had too manie; who if their time had serued for it, might haue scene in manie Campes in the most plentifull Countries of the world for victuals, men-daylie die with want of bread and drinke, in not hauing money to buy, nor the Countrey yielding any good or healthfull water in any place; whereas both Spaine and Portingall, do in euerie place afford the best water that may be, and much more healthfull than any wine for our drinking.

And although some haue most iniuriouslie exclaimed against the small provisions of victuals for the Sea, rather grounding the same vpon an euill that might haue fallen, than vpon anie that did light, vpon vs: yet knowe you this, that there is no man so forgetfull, that will

will say they wanted before they came to the Groyne; that whosoever made not verie large provisions for himselfe and his company at the Groyne, was verie improuident, where was plentifull store of wine, beefe, and fish, and no man of place prohibited to laye in the same into their shippes; wherewith some did so furnish themselves, as they did not onely in the Iourney supplie the wants of such as were lesse prouident than they, but in their returne home made a round commoditie of the remainder thereof. And that at Cascais there came in such store of provisions into the flecte out of England, as no man that would haue used his diligence could haue wanted his due proportion thereof: as might appere by the Remainder that was returned to Plymouth, and the plentifull sale thereof made out of the Merchants shipt after their comming into the Thames.

But least I should seeme vnto you too studious in confuting idle opinions, or answering frivolis questions, I will addresse me to the true report of those actions that haue passed there: wherein I protest, I will neither hide anie thing that hath happened against vs, nor attribute more to anie man or matter, than the iust occasions thereof leadeth vnto: wherein it shall appere, that there hath been nothing left vndone by the Generalls which was before our going out vnderaken by them; but that there hath been much more done than was at the first required by Don Antonio, who should haue reaped the fruite of our Adventure.

After 6. daies sailing from the Coast of England, and the fift after we had the winde good, beeing the 20. of Aprill in the evening, we landed in a Bay more than an English mile from the Groyne, in our long Boates and Pinnyses without anie impeachment: from whence we presently marched toward the Towne, within one halfe mile whereof we were encountered by the Enemie, who being charged by ours, retired into their gates. For that night our Armie lay in the villages, houses and milles next adioyning, and verie neare round about the Towne, into the which the Galeon named Saint Iohn (which was the second of the last yeres flecte against England), one hulk, two smaller shipp, and two Gallies which were found in the Rode, did beate vpon vs and vpon our Companies, as they passed too and fro that night and the next morning.

Generall Norris hauing that morning before day viewed the Towne, found the same defended on the land side. (for it standeth vpon the neck of an Iland) with a wal vpon a drie ditch: wherupon he resolved to trie in two places what might be done against it by escalade, and in the meane time aduised for the lading of some Artillarie to beate vpon the ships & Gallies, that they might not annoy vs: which being put in execution, vpon the planting of the first peece the Gallies abandoned the Rode, and betooke them to Farroll, not farre from thence: and the Armado being beate with the artillary & musketers that was placed vpon the next shoare, left her playing vpon vs. The rest of the day was spent in preparing the Companies, & other prouisions readie for the surprize of the Base towne, which was effected in this sort.

There were appointed to be landed 1200. men vnder the conduct of Colonell Huntley, and Capitaine Fenner the Vizedmirall, on that side next fronting vs by water in long boates and pynnises, wherein were placed manie peeces of artillarie to beate vpon the Towne in their approach: at the corner of the wall which defended the other water side, were appointed Capitain Richard Wingfeild Lieutenant Colonell to Generall Norris, and Capitaine Sampson Lieutenant Colonell to Generall Drake to enter at lowe water with 500. men; if they found it passable, but if not, to betake them to the escalade, for they had also ladders with them: at the other corner of the wall which ioyned to that side, that was attempted by water, were appointed Colonell Vmpton, and Colonell Brett with 300. men to enter by escalade. All the Companies which should enter by boate being imbarked before the lowe water: and hauing giuen the Alarme Capitaine Wingfeild and Capitaine Sampson betooke the escalade, for they had in commandement to charge all at one instant. The boates landed without anie great difficultie: yet had they some men hurt in the landing. Colonell Brett & Col. Vmpton entred their quarter without encounter, not liuing anie defence made against them: for Captain Hinder being one of them that entred by water, at his first entrie (with some of

his owne Companie whom he trusted well, betooke himselfe to that part of the wall, which he cleered before that they offered to enter, & so still scoured the wall (till he came on the backe of them who maintained the fight against Capitaine Wingfeild & Capitaine Sampson: who were twice beaten from their ladders, and found verie good resistance, till the enemies perceiuing ours entred in two places at their backs, were driuen to abandon the same: The reason why that place was longer defended than the other, is (as Don Iuan de Luna who commanded the same assault) that the Encmio that day had resolved in counsel how to make their defences, if they were approached: and therein concluded, that if we attempted it by water, that it was not to be helde, and therefore vpon the discoverie of our Boates, they of the high Towne should make a signall by fier (frō thence, that al the low Towne might make their Retreat thither): but they, (whither troubled with the sodaine terror we brought vpon them, or forgetting their decree), omitted the fier, which made them gard that place till wee were cutted on euerie side.

Then the Towne being entred in three severall places with an huge crie, the inhabitants betooke them to the high Towne: which they might with lesse perill doe: for, that ours being strangers ther, knew not the way to cut the of. The rest that were not put to the sword in furie, fled to the Rocks in the land, and hid themselues in chambers and sellers; which were euerie day found out in great numbers.

Amongst those Don Iuan de Luna, a man of verie good commandement, hauing hidden himselfe in a house, did the next morning yeeld himselfe.

There was also taken that night a Commissarie of vittells called Iuan de Vera, who confessed that there were in the Groyne at our entrie 500. Soldiers being in seauen companies which returned verie weak (as appeareth by the small numbers of them) from the Iourney of England, namely,

Vnder Don Iuan de Luna.

Don Diego Barran, a bastard sonne of the Marques of Santa Cruz; his companie was that night in the Galeon.

Don Antonio de Herera then at Madrid.

Don Pedro de Mauriques Brôtier to the Earle of Paxides.

Don Ieronimo de Mourray of the order of Saint Iuan, with some of the Towne were in the fort.

Don Gomer de Caramasal then at Madrid.

Capt. Monço, Cauaso de Socas.

Also there came in that day of our landing from Retanax the companies of Don Iuan de Mosalle, and Don Pedro Pourre de Leon.

Also hee saith that there was order giuen for baking of 300000. of Bisquet, some in Batacas, some in Riuedes, and the rest there.

There was then in the Towne 2000. pipes of wine, and an 150. in the ships.

That there was lately comē vnto the Marquis Scallia 300000. ducats.

That there was 1000. larres of oyle.

A great quantitie of beanes, pease, wheate, and fish.

That there was 3000. quintells of beefe.

And that not 20. dayes before there came in three Barques laden with match and harquebuses.

Some others also found fauour to bee taken prisoners, but the rest falling into the hands of the common Soldiers, had their throates cut: to the number of 500: as I coniecture first and last after wee had entred the Towne: and in the enterie thereof, there was found euerie collar full of Wine, whereon our men by inordinate drinking, both growe themselves for the present senceles of the danger of the shot of the Towne, which hurt many of them being drunke, and took the first ground of their sickness, for of such was our first and chiefest mortalitie. There was also abundant store of victuals, salt and all kinde of prouision for shipping and the warre: which was confessed by the sayd Commissarie of vittells taken there to be the beginning of a Magasin of all sorts of prouision for a new Voiage into

England:

England: whereby you may coniecture what the spoile thereof hath advantaged vs, and prouided the King of Spaine.

The next morning about eight of the clocke, the Enemie abandoned their Shippes. And hauing overcharged the Artillarie of the Gallion, left her on fire, which burnt in terrible sort two daies together, the fire and overcharging of the peeces being so great, as of 50. that were in her, ther wer not about 16. taken out whole. the rest with ouer charge of the powder being broken and molten, with heat of the fire, was taken out in broken peeces into diuerse Shippes. The same day was the Cloister on the South side of the Towne entered by vs, which ioyntly very neare to the wall of the Towne, out of the Chambers and other places whereof wee beate into the same with our Musquetiers.

The next day in the afternoone there came downe some 2000. men gathered together out of the countrie, euen to the gates of the towne, as resolute (led by what spirit I know not) as though they haue euer entered the same: but at the first defence made by ours that had the gard there, wherein were slaine about eightene of theirs, they tooke them to their heeles in the same disorder they made their approach, and with greater speede than ours were able to followe; Notwithstanding, we followed after them more than a mile.

The second day Col. Huntley was sent into the countrie with three or foure hundred men, who brought home verie great store of Cowes and Sheepe for our reliefe.

The third day in the night the Generall had in purpose to take a long Munition house builded vpon their wall, opening towards vs, which would haue giuen vs great aduantage against them; but they knowing the commoditie thereof for vs, burnt it in the beginning of the euening: which put him to a newe counsell, for hee had likewise brought some Artillarie to that side of the towne. During this time, there happened a verie great fire in the lower end of the towne; which had it not been by the care of the Generals heedlesse seen vnto, and the furie thereof prevented, by pulling downe many houses which were most in danger, as next vnto them, had burnt all the provisions we found there, to our wonderfull hinderance.

The 4. day were planted vnder the garde of the Cloyster two demie Canons, and two Culuerings against the towne, defended or gabioned with a crosse wall, through the which our batterie lay: the first & second tyre whereof shooke at the wall downe, so as the ordnance lay all open to the enemie, by reason whereof some of 3. Canoniers were shot & some slaine. The Lieutenant also of the ordnance Master Spencer was slaine last by sir Edward Norris, Master thereof: whose valor being accompanied with an honorable care of defending that trust committed vnto him, he neuer left that place, till he receiued direction from the Generall his brother to cease the Batterie which hee presently did, leauing a guard vpon the same for that day: and in the night following made so good defence for the place of the Batterie, as after there were verie few or none annoyed therein.

That day Captain Goodwin had in commandement from the Generall, that when the assault should be giuen to the Towne, he should make a profer of an escalade on the other side; where hee held his guard: but he (mistaking the signall that should haue been giuen) attempted the same long before the assault, & was shot in the mouth. The same day the Generall hauing planted his Ordinance readie to batter, caused the towne to be summoned, in which summons, they of the Towne shot at our Drum: immediately after that there was one hanged ouer the wall, and a parley desired, wherein they gaue vs to vnderstand, that the man hanged, was he that shot at the Drum before; wherein also they intreated to haue faire warre, with promise of the same on their parts: the rest of the parley was spent in talking of Don Iuan de Luna, and some other prisoners, and somewhat of the rendering of the Towne, but not much, for they listened not greatly therunto.

Generall Norris hauing by his skillfull viewe of the Towne (which is almost all seated vpon a Roocke) found one place therof myneable, & did presently set workmen in hand withal: who after 3. daies labor, (& the seventh after wee were entered the base Towne) had bedded their powder, but indeed not farre enough into the wall. Against which time 3 breach made by 3 cannon being thought assaultable, and Companies appoynted as well to enter

enter the same; as that which was expected should be blown vp by the Myne: namely, to that of the Cannon, Capitaine Richard Wingfeild, and Capitaine Philpot, who lead the Generalls foote Companie; with whom also Capitaine Yorke went, whose principall Commandment was ouer the horse-men. And to that of the Myne, Capitaine Iohn Sampson, and Capitain Anthonie Wingfeild Lieutenant Colonell to the Master of the Ordnance, with certain selected out of diuers Regiments. All these Companies being in Armes, and the assault intended to be giuen in all places at an instant, fier was put to the train of the Myne: but by reason the powder brake out backwards in a place where the caue was made too high, there could be nothing done in either place for that day. During this time, Capitaine Hinder was sent with some chosen out of euerie Companie into the countrie for provisions, wherof hee brought in good store, and returned without losse.

The next day Capitaine Anthonie Sampson was sent out with some 500. to fetch in provisions for the armie, who was encountered by them of the Countrie: but he put the to flight, & returned with good spoyle. The same night the Myners were set to worke againe, who by the second day after had wrought verie wel into the foundation of the wall. Against which time the Companies aforesaid being in readines for both places (Generall Drake on the other side with 2. or 300. men in Pinnaces, making proffer to attempt a strong fort vpon an Hand before the Towne, where he left more than 30. men) fier was giuen to the trayne of the Myne, which blew vp halfe the Tower vnder which the powder was planted. The Assaultants hauing in charge vpon the effecting of the Myne presently to giue the assault, which they did accordingly: but too soone, for hauing entered the top of the breach, the other halfe of the Tower, which with the first force of the powder was onely shaken and made loose, fell vpon our men: vnder which were buried about 20. or 30. then being vnder that part of the Tower. This so amazed our men that stood in the breach, not knowing from whence that terror came, as they forsooke their Commanders, and left them among the ruines of the Myne. The two Ensignes of Generall Drake and Capitaine Anthonie Wingfeild, were shot in the Breach, but their colours were rescued: the Generals by Capitaine Sampsons Lieutenant; and Capitaine Wingfeilds by himselfe. Amongst them that the wall fell vpon, was Capitaine Sydenham pitifully lost: who hauing three or foure great stones vpon his lower parts, was helde so fast, as neither himselfe could stirre, nor anie reasonable Companie rescue him. Notwithstanding the next day being found to be aliuie, ther was 10. or 12. lost in attempting to relieue him.

The breach made by the Cannon, was wonderful wel assaulted by them that had the charge thereof, who brought their men to the push of the pike at the top of the Breach. And being readie to enter, the loose earth (which was indeede but the rubbish of the outside of the wall) with the weight of them that were thereon slipped outwards from vnder their feete. Whereby did appeare halfe the wal vn battered. For let no man thinke that Culierine or Demie Cannon can sufficiently batter a defensible Rampier: and of those peeces we had, the better of the Demi Canons at the second shot brake in her carriages, so as the battrie was of lesse force, being but of three peeces.

In our Retreat (which was from both breaches thorowe a narrow lane) were many of our men hurt: and Capitaine Dolphin, who serued verie well that day, was hurt in the verie Breach. The failing of this attempt, in the opinion of all the beholders, & of such as were of best iudgement, was the fall of the Myne: which had doubtlesse succeeded, the rather, because the approach was vnlooked for by the Enemie in that place, and therefore not so much defence made there as in the other. Which made the Generall grow to a new resolution: for finding that two dayes batterie had so little beaten their wall, and that he had no better preparation to batter withall: he knewe in his experience, there was no good to be done that way: which I thinke he first put in prooff, to trie if by that terror he could get the vpper Towne, hauing no other way to put it in hazard so speedilie, and which in my conscience had obtained the Towne, had not the Defendants been in as great perill of their liues by the displeasure of their King in giuing it vp, as by the bullet or sword in defending the same. For that day before the assault, in the view of our Armie, they burnt a Cloyster within the

Towne,

Towne, and manie other houses adioyning to the Castle, to make it the more-defensible: whereby it appeared how little opinion themselves had of holding it against vs, had not God (who would not have vs sodainly made proud) laid that misfortune vpon vs.

Hereby it may appeare, that the foure Cannons, and other pieces of baterie promised to the Iourney, and not performed, might haue made her Maiestie Mistres of the Groyne; for though the Myne were infortunat, yet if the other breach had been such as the earth would haue helde our men thereon, I doo not thinke but they had entred it thoroughly at the first assault giuen: which had been more than I haue heard of in our age. And being as it was, is no more than the Prince of Parma hath in winning of all his Townes captured, who neuer entred into place at the first assault, nor above three by assault.

The next day, the Generall hearing by a prisoner that was brought in, that the Conde de Andrada had assembled an Armie of 8000. at Puente de Burgos, sixe miles from thence in the way to Petance, which was but the beginning of an Armie: in that there was a greater leaue readie to come thether vnder the Conde de Altemira, either in purpose to relieue the Groyne, or to encamp themselves neere the place of our embarking, there to hinder the same: for to that purpose had the Marques of Seralba written to them both the first night of our landing, as the Commissarie taken then confessed, or at the least to stop our further entrance into the Countrey, (for during this time, there were many incursions made of three or foure hundred at a time, who burnt, spoiled, and brought in victuals plentifullic.) The Generall, I say, hearing of this Armie, had in purpose the next day following to visite them, against whom he carried but nine Regiments: in the Vanguard were the Regiment of Sir Roger Williams, Sir Edward Norris, and Colonell Sidney: in the Battaille, that of the Generall, of Colonell Lane, and Colonell Medkerk: and in the Rereward, Sir Henric Norris, Colonell Hapsley, and Colonell Brets Regiments; leauing the other sixe Regiments with Generall Drake, for the garde of the Cloyster and Artillaric. About tenne of the clocke the next day, being the sixt of May, halfe a mile from the Campe, wee discouering the Enemie, Sir Edward Norris, who commanded the Vanguard in chiefe, appointed his Lieutenant Colonell, Capitaine Anthonie Wingfield to command the shot of the same, who diuided the into three troopes; the one he appointed to Capitaine Middleton to be conducted in a way on the left hand: another to Capitaine Errington to take the way on the right hand, and the bodie of them (which were Muskotters) Capitaine Wingfield tooke himselfe, keeping the direct way of the march. But the way taken by Capitaine Middleton met a little before with the way helde by Capitaine Wingfield, so as he giuing the first charge vpon the Enemie, was in the instant seconded by Capitaine Wingfield, who beate them from place to place (they hauing verie good places of defence, and crosse walles which they might haue held long) till they beooke them to their bridge, which is ouer a creeke comming out of the Sea, builded of stone vpon Arches. On the foote of the further side whereof, lay the Campe of the Enemie verie strongly entrenched, who with our shot beate to the further end of the bridge, Sir Edward Norris marching in the poynt of the pikes, without stay passed to the bridge, accompanied with Colonell Sidney, Capitaine Hinder, Capitaine Fulford, and diuers others, who found the way cleere ouer the same, but through an incredible volie of shot: for that the shot of their Armie flanked vpon both sides of the bridge, the further end whereof was barricaded with barrells: but they who should haue garded the same, seeing the proude approach wee made, forsooke the defence of the Barricade, where Sir Edward catered, and charging the first defendaut with his pike, with verie earnestnes in ouerthrusting, fell, and was grievously hurt at the sword in the head, but was most honorable reskued by the Generall his brother, accompanied with Colonell Sidney, and some other gentlemen: Capitaine Hinder also hauing his Coxke shot off, had sixe wounds in the head and face at the sword; and Capitaine Fulford was shot into the left arme at the same counter; yet were they so thoroughly seconded by the Generall, who thrust himselfe so neere to giue encouragement to the attempt, (which was of wonderful difficultie) as their bravest men that defended that place being ouerthrowne, their whole Armie fell presentlie into route, of whom

whom our men had the chase three miles in foure sondrie waies, which they betooke themselves vnto. There was taken the standard with the Kings Armes, and borne before the Generall. How many, two thousand men (for of so many consisted our Vanguard) might kill in pursuit of 4. sundrie parties, so many you may imagine fell before vs that day. And to make the number more great, our men hauing giuen ouer the execution, and returning to their stands, found many hidden in the Vineyards and hedges which they dispatched. Also Colonnell Medkerk was sent with his Regiment three miles further to a Cloyster, which he burnt and spoyled, wherein he found two hundred more and put them to the sword. There were slaine in this fight on our side onlie Capitaine Cooper, and one private soldier: Capitaine Barton was also hurt vpon the bridge in the eye. But had you seene the strong Baracades they had made on either side of the bridge, and how strongly they lay encamped thereabouts, you would haue thought it a rare resolution of ours to giue so braue a charge vpon an Armie so strongly lodged. After the furie of the execution, the Generall sent the Vanguard one way, and the Battell another, to burne and spoyle: so as you might haue seen the Countrie more than three miles compass on fire. There was found very good store of Munition and Victuals in the Campe, some plate and rich apparell, which the better sort left behind, they were so hotlie pursued. Our Sailors also landed in an Island next adioyning our shippes, where they burnt and spoyled all they found. Thus we returned to the Groyne, bringing small comfort to the enemy within the same, who shot many times at vs as we marched out, but not once in our coming backe againe.

The next day was spent in shipping our Artillarie landed for the Batterie, and of the rest taken at the Groyne, which had it been such as might haue giuen vs any assurance of a better batterie, or had there been no other purpose of our Iourney but that, I thinke the Generall would haue spent some more time in the siege of the place.

The two last nights, there were that vnderooke to fire the higher towne in one place, where the houses were builded vpon the wall by the water side: but they within suspecting as much, made so good defence against vs, as they prevented the same. In our departure there was fire put into euerie house of the lowe towne, in somuch as I may iustlie say, there was not one house left standing in the Base towne, or the Cloyster.

The next day, being the eight of May, wee embarked our Armie without loss of a man, which had we not beaten the Enemy, at Puente de Burgos had been impossible to haue done, for that without doubt they would haue attempted something against vs in our imbarcking: as appeared by the report of the Commissarie aforesayd, who confessed, that the first night of our landing, the Marques of Seralba writ to the Conde de Altemira, the Conde de Andraza, & to Terneis de Santisso, to bring al the forces against vs that they could possibly raise, thinking no way so good to assure that place, as to bring an Armie thither, wherewithall they might either besiege vs in their Base Towne, if we should get it, or to lie betweene vs and our place of imbarcking, to fight with vs vpon the aduantage, for they had about 15000. souldiers vnder their commandments.

After wee had put from thence, wee had the winde so contrarie, as wee could not vnder nine daies reconer the Burlings: in which passage on the 13. day, the Earle of Essex, and with him Master Walter Deuereux his brother (a Gentleman of wonderful great hope), Sir Roger Williams, Colonnell generall of the foot men, Sir Philip Butler, who hath alwaies been most inward with him, and Sir Edward Wingfield, came into the flecte. The Earle hauing put himselfe into the Iourney against the opinion of the world, and as it seemed to the hazard of his great fortune, though to the great aduancement of his reputation, (for as the honorable carriage of himselfe towards all men, doth make him highlie esteemed at home; so did his exceeding forwardnes in all seruices, make him to be wondered at amongst vs) who, I say, put off in the same winde from Famouth, that wee left Plymouth in, where he lay, because he would auoid the importunitie of messengers that were daylie sent for his returne, and some other causes more secret to himselfe, not knowing (as it seemed) what place the Generals purposed to land in, had been as farre as Cales in Andalusia, and lay vpon and downe about the South Cape, where he tooke some shippes laden with Corne, and brought

brought them vnto the fleet. Also in his returne from thence to meete with our fleet, he fell with the Islands of Bayon; and on that side of the riuer which Canas standeth vpon: he, with Sir Roger Williams, & those Gentlemen that were with him went on shore, with some men out of the ship he was in, whom the enemie that held gard vpon the Coast, would not abide, but fled vp into the Countrey. After his coming into the fleet (to the great reioycing of vs all) he demanded of the Generals, that after our Armie should come on shore, he might haue the leading of the Vanguard, which they easilie yielded vnto: as being desirous to satisfie him in all things, but especially in matters so much tending to his honor as this did; so as from the time of our first landing in Portingall, hee alwaies marched in the poynt of the vanguard, accompanied with Sir Roger Williams (except when the necessitie of the place hee held) called him to other seruices.

The 16. day we landed at Penicha in Portingall, vnder the shot of the Castle, and about the wast in water, more than a mile from y<sup>e</sup> towne, wherein many were in perill of drowning; by reason the wind was great, & the Sea went high, which ouerthrew one boat wherein 25. of Captaine Dolphins men perished. The Enemie, being sine copanies of Spaniards vnder the commaundment of y<sup>e</sup> Conde de Fuentes, sallied out of the towne against vs, & in our landing made their approach close by the water side. But the Earle of Essex, w<sup>th</sup> Sir Roger Williams & his brother, hauing landed sufficient number to make 2. troupes, left one to hold the way by the water side, and led y<sup>e</sup> other ouer the Sandhills: which the Enemy seeing, drew theirs likewise farther into the land: not, as we coniectured, to encounter vs, but in dedde to make their speedie passage away: notwithstanding they did it in such sort, as being charged by ours which were sent out by y<sup>e</sup> Colonell generall vnder Captaine Iacson, they stood the same euen to the push of the pike: in which charge & at the push, Captaine Robert Piew was slaine. The Enemie being fled further thn we had reason to followe them, al our companies were drawn to the towne: which being vnfortified in any place, we found vndefended by anie man against vs. And therefore the Generall caused the Castle to be somoned y<sup>e</sup> night: which being abandoned by him that commaunded it, a Portingall, named Antonio de Aurid, being possessed thereof, desired but to be assured that Don Antonio was landed, wherupon he would deliuer y<sup>e</sup> same, which he honestly performed. There was taken out of the Castle 100. shot & pikes, which Don Emanuel furnished his Portingals withall, & 20. barrels of powder: so as possessing both y<sup>e</sup> towne & the Castle, we rested there one day; wherin some friers & other poore men came vnto their new King, promising in the name of their Countrie next adioyning, that within two daies he should haue a good supplie of horse & foote for his assistance. That day we remained there, the Generals company of horses were vnshipped.

The Generals hauing there resolved y<sup>e</sup> the Armie should march ouer land to Lisbon vnder y<sup>e</sup> conduct of generall Norris: & that general Drake should meet him in the riuer thereof with the fleet: that there should be one company of foote left in gard of the Castle, & 6. of the ships: also y<sup>e</sup> the sicke and hurt should remaine there with provisions for their cures.

The General, to trie y<sup>e</sup> euent of the matter by expedition, the next day began to march on this sort: his owne regiment, & the regiments of Sir Roger Williams, Sir Henric Norris, Colonel Lane, & Colonel Medkerk, in the Vanguard: General Drake, Colonel Deuereux, S. Edward Norris, & Colonel Sidneis in y<sup>e</sup> Battaille: S. Iames Hales, Sir Edward Wingfield, Colonell Vmptons, Colonell Huntleis, & Colonell Brets in the arrearward. By that time our armie was thus marshalled, general Drake, who though he were to passe by Sea, yet to make known the honorable desire he had of taking equal part of al fortunes w<sup>th</sup> vs, stood vpo the ascent of an hill, by y<sup>e</sup> which our Battalions must of necessitie march, & with a pleasing kindnes tooke his leaue severally of the commanders of euerie regiment, wishing vs al happy success in our journey ouer the land, with a constant promise y<sup>e</sup> he would, if the intury of y<sup>e</sup> wether did not hinder him, meet vs in the riuer of Lisbon with our fleet. The wast of carriages the first day was such, as they were enforced to carrie their Manition vpon mens backes, which was the next day remedied.

In this march Captaine Crispe, the Prouost Marshall, caused one who (contrarie to the proclamation published at our arriual in Portingall) had broken vp a house for pillage; to be hanged, with the cause of his death vpon his breast, in the place where the act was committed: which good example prouidentlie giuen in the beginning of our march, caused the commandement to be more respectiuelie regarded all the journey after; by them whom feare of punishment doth onlie hold within compass. The Camp lodged that night at Lorina: The next day we had intelligence al the way that the enemie had made head of horse and foote against vs at Toras Vedras, which wee thought they would haue held: But comming thither the seconde day of our march, not two houres before our Vangarde came in, they left the Towne and Castle to the possession of Don Antonio.

There began the greatest want we had of victualls, especiallie of bread, vpon a Commandement giuen from the Generall, that no man should spoyle the Countrey, or take anie thing from anie Portingall: which was more respectiuelie obserued, than I thinke would haue been in our owne Countrey, amongst our owne friends and kindred: but the Countrey (contrarie to promise) hauing neglected the prouision of victualls for vs, whereby we were driuen for that time into a great scarcitie. Which moued the Colonell Generall to call all the Colonels together, and with them to aduise for some better course for our people: who thought it best, first to aduertise  $\frac{1}{2}$  King what necessitie we were in, before we shuld of our selues alter the first institution of abstinence: the Colonell generall hauing acquainted the General herewith, with his very good allowance thereof, went to the King: who after some expostulations vsed, tooke the more carefull order for our men, and after that our Armie was more plentifully relieved.

The third daye we lodged our Armie in three sundrie villages, the one Battalion lying in Enchara de los Caualleros, another in Enchara de los Obispos, and the third in San Sebastian.

Captaine Yorke who commanded the Generals horse companie, in this march made triall of the valour of the horsemen of the Enemie; who by one of his Corporalls charged with 8. horse through 40. of them, and himselfe through more than 200. with some 40. horse: who would abide him no longer than they could make way from him.

The next day we marched to Loris, and had diuers intelligences that the enemie would tarrie vs there: for the Cardinall had made publique promise to them of Lisbonne, that hee would fight with vs in that place, which hee might haue done aduantageouslie; for we had a bridge to passe ouer in the same place: but before our comming hee dislodged, notwithstanding it appeared vnto vs that hee had in purpose to encampe there: for wee found the ground staked out where their trenches should haue been made: and their horsemen with some few shot shewed themselves vpon a hill at our comming into that village. Whom Sir Henrie Norris (whose Regiment had the poynt of the Vangard) thought to draw vnto some fight; and therefore marched without sound of Drum, and somewhat faster than ordinarie, thereby to get neere them before hee were discovered, for he was shadowed from them by an hill that was betweene him and them: but before he could draw his companies anie thing neere, they retired.

Generall Drakes regiment that night for the commoditie of good lodging, drewe themselves into a Village, more than one English mile from thence, and steere the Enemie: who not daring to doo anie thing against vs in foure dayes before, tooke that occasion, and in the next morning fell downe vpon that Regiment, crying, *Viva el Rey Don Antonio*, which was a generall salutation thorough all the Countrey as they came: whom our young Souldiers (though it were vpon their guard, and before the watch were discharged) began to entertaine kindly, but hauing got within their guard, they fell so cut their throates: but the Alarme being taken inwards, the Officers of the two next Companies, whose Captaines, (Captaine Sydnam and Captaine Young) were lately dead at the Groyne, brought down their colours and pikes vpon them in so resolute manner, as they presently draue them to retire with losse: they killed of ours at their first entrance 14. and hurt sixe or seauen.

The next day we lodged at Aluelana within three miles of Lisbonne, where many of our Souldiers drinking in two places of standing waters by the waie, were poysoned, & thereon presently



presently died: some doo thinke it came rather by eating of honnie, which they found in the houses plentifully. But whether it were by water or by honnie, the poore men were poisoned.

That night the Earle of Essex, and Sir Roger Williams went out about eleven of the clock with 1000. men to lye in Ambuscade neere the Towne, and hauing layd the same verie neere, sent some to giue the Alarme vnto the Enemye: which was well performed by them that had the charge thereof, but the Enemye refused to issue after them, so as the Earle returned as soone as it was light without doinge anye thing, though he had in purpose, and was ready to haue giuen an honourable charge on them.

The 26. of May in the euening we came to the Suburbes of Lisbon: at the verie entrance whereof, Sir Roger Williams calling Captain Anthony Wingfield with him, tooke thirtie shot or thereabouts, and first scowred al the streets till they came verie neere the Towne; where they found none but olde folkes and beggers, crying *Viva el Rey Don Antonio*, and the houses shut vp: for they had carried much of their wealth into the Towne, and had fired some houses by the water side, full of corne and other provisions of victuals, least we should be benefited thereby, but yet left behinde them great riches in manie houses.

The foure Regiments that had the Vanguard that day which were Colonell Deuereux, Sir Edward Norris, Colonell Sydneys, and Generall Drakes whome I name as they marched, the Colonell Generall caused to hold guard in the nearest streets of the Suburbes: The Bataille and the arrieward stood in Armes at the night in the field neare to Alcantara. Before morning Captaine Wingfield by direction from y Colonell Generall Sir Roger Williams helde guard with Sir Edward Norris his Regiment in three places verie neere the Towne wal, and so helde the same till the other Regiments came in the morning. About midnight they within the Towne burnt all their houses that stood vpon their wall either within or without, least we possessing them, might thereby greatly haue annoyed the Towne.

The next morning Sir Roger Williams attempted, (but not without perill) to take a Church called S. Antonio, which layned to the wall of the towne, and would haue been a verie cuill neighbour to the towne: but the Enemye hauing more easie entrie into it than wee, gained it before vs. The rest of that morning was spent in quartering the Bataille and arrieward in the Suburbes called *Bona Vista*, & in placing Musquetiers in houses, to frunt their shot vpon the wall, who from the same scowred the great streets verie dangerouslie.

By this time our men being thoroughly wearie with our sixe dayes March: and the last night watch, were desirous of rest: whereof the Enemye being advertised, about one or two of the clocke sallied out of the Town, and made their approach in three severall streets vpon vs, but chiefly in Colonell Bretts quarter: who (as most of the Arme was) being at rest, with as much speed as he could drew his men into Armes, and made leue against them so thoroughly, as himselfe was slaine in the place, Captaine Carsey shot through the thigh, of which hurt he died within four dayes after. Captaine Carre slaine presently, and Captaine Caine hurt (but not mortally) who were all of his Regiment.

This resistance made as well here, as in other quarters where Colonell Lane and Colonel Medkerke commanded, put them to a sodaine sowlie retreat: in so much, as the Earle of Essex had the chase of them euen to the gates of the high Towne, wherein they left behinde them many of their best Commanders: their Troope of horsemen also came out, but being charged by Captaine Yorke, withdrew themselves againe. Manie of them also left the streets, and betooke them to houses which they found open: for the Sericant Maior Captaine Wilson slawe in one house with his owne hands three or foure, and caused them that were with him to kill manie others. Their losse I can assure you did triple ours, as well in qualitie as in quantitie.

During our march to this place Generall Drake with the whole flecte was come into Cascais, and possessed the Towne without anye resistance: manie of the inhabitants at their discourie of our Naue, fled with their baggage into the Mountaines, and left the Towne for anye man that would possess it, till Generall Drake sent vnto them by a Portingall Pilot which he had on board, to offer them all peaceable kindnes, so farre forth as they would accept of their King, and minister necessaries to the Armie he had brought: which offer they

joyfully embraced, & presently sent two chieftemen of their Towne, to signifie their loyaltie to Don Antonio, and their honest affections to our people. Whereupon the Generall landed his Companies not farre from the Cloyster called San Domingo, but not without perill of the shot of the Castle; which being guarded with sixtie fine Spaniards held still agaynst him.

As our flecte were casting anchor when they came first into that Road; there was a small ship of Brasil that came from thence, which bare too with them, and seemed by striking her sayles, as though she would also haue ankered: but taking her fittes occasion, hoysed againe, and would haue passed vp the Riuer, but the Generall presently discerning her purpose, sent out a Pinnace or two after her, which forced her in such sort, as she ranne her selfe vpon the Rocks: all the men escaped out of her, and the lading (being manie chests of sugar) was made nothing woorth by the salt water. In his going thither also, he tooke ships of the Port of Portingall, which wer sent from thence, with fiftene other from Pedro Vermeendes Xantes Sericant Maior of the same place, laden with men and victualls to Lisbon: the rest that escaped, put into Sant Vués. The next day it pleased General Norris to cal al y Colonells together, and to aduise with them, whether it were more expedient to tarrie there to attend the forces of the Portingall horse and foote whereof the King had made promise, and to march some conuenient number to Cascais to fetch our Artillerie and munition, which was all at our ships, seeing that which for the necessitie of the Seruice, was brought along with vs: Wherunto, some carried away with the vaine hope of Don Antonio, that most part of the Towne stood for vs, held it best to make our abode there, and to send some 3000. for our Artillerie: promising to themselves; that the Enemie being wel beaten the day before, would make no more sallies: Some others, (whose vñbeleeffe was verie strong; of anie hope from the Portingall) perswaded rather to march whollie away, than to be anie longer carried away with an opinion of things, whereof there was so little apparance. The Generall, not willing to leaue anie occasion of blott to be layd vpon him for his speedie going from thence; nor to loose anie more time by attending the hopes of Don Antonio; tolde them, that though the Expedition of Portingall were not the onely purpose of their Iourney, but an aduerture therein: which if it succeeded prosperously, might make them sufficiently rich, & wonderfull honorable; and that they had done so much already in triall thereof, as what ende soeuer happened, could nothing impair their credits: Yet in regard of the Kings last promise, that hee should haue that night 3000. men armed of his owne Countrey, he would not for that night disodge. And if they came; thereby to make him so strong, that hee might send the like number for his munition, he would resolve to trie his fortune for the Towne. But if they came not, he found it not conuenient to diuide his forces, by sending anie to Cascais; and keeping a Remainder behinde, sithence he saw them the day before so boldly rally vpon his whole Armie, and knew that they were stronger of Soldiery armed within the Towne, than hee was without: And that before our returne could be from Cascais, that they expected more supplies from all places of Soldiery, for the Duke of Bragançia, and Don Francisco de Toledo were looked for with great reliefe. Whereupon his conclusion was, that if the 3000. promised, came not that night, to march whollie away the next morning.

It may bee here demanded, why a matter of so great moment should be so stenderly regarded, as that the Generall should march with such an Armie against such an Enemie, before hee knewe either the fulnes of his owne strength, or certain meanes how he should abide the place when he should come to it. Wherein I pray you remember the Decree made in the Councell at Penicha, and confirmed by publike protestation the first day of our march, that our Nauie should meete vs in the Riuer of Lisbon; in the which was the store of all our provisions, & so the meane of our tariance in that place, which came not; though we continued till we had no Munition left to entertaine a verie small fight. We are also to consider that the King of Portingall (whether carried away with imagination by the aduertisements hee received from the Portingalls, or willing by any promise to bring such an Armie into his Countrey, thereby to put his fortune once more in triall) assured the Generall, that vpon his first landing, there would be a revolt of his subjects: whereof there was some hope giuen at our first entrie to Penicha, by the manner of the yeelding of that Towne and fort, which

made the Generall thinke it most conuenient speedilie to march to the principall place, thereby to giue courage to the rest of the Countrie. The friers also and the poore people that came vnto him, promised that within two daies of Gentlemen and others of the Countrie would come plentifully in: within which two daies came manie more Priests, and some verie fewe Gentlemen on horsebacke; but not till we came to Toras Vedras, where they that noted y<sup>e</sup> course of things how they passed, might somewhat discouer the weakenes of that people. There they tooke two daies more; and at the ende thereof, referred him till our coming to Lisbon, with assurance that so soone as our Armie should be scene there, all the inhabitants would be for the King and fall vpon the Spaniards.

After two nights tarryance at Lisbon, the King, as you haue heard, promised a supplie of 3000. foote, and some horse: but all his appoyntments being expired, euen to the last of a night, all his horse could not make a Cornet of 40. nor his foote furnish two Ensignes fullie, although they carried three or foure Colours: and these were altogether such as thought to enrich themselves by the ruine of their neighbors: for they committed more disorders in euery place wher we came by spoyle, than any of our own.

The Generall, as you see hauing done more than before his coming out of England was required by the King, and giuen credite to his many promises euen to the breach of the last, he desired not to perswade him to stay yet nine daies longer: in which time he might haue engaged himselfe further, than with any honor he could come out of againe, by attempting a Towne fortified, wherina were more men armed against vs, than wee had to appugne them with all our Artillarie and Munition, being fiftene miles from vs, and our men then declining; for there was the first shewe of any great sicknes amongst them. Wherby it seemeth, that either his Prolacie did much abuse him in perswading him to hopes, wherof after two or three daies he sawe no semblance; or he like a sillie louer, who promiseth himselfe fauour by importuning a coy mistris, thought by our long being before his Towne, that in the ende taking pitie on him, they would let him in.

What end the friers had by following him with such deuotion, I knowe not, but sure I am, the Laitie did respite their homage till they might see which way the victorie would sway; fearing to shewe themselves apparantlie vnto him, lest the Spaniard should after our departure (if we prevailed not) call them to accompt: yet sent they vnder hand messages to him of obedience, thereby to save their owne if he became King; but indeede verie well contented to see the Spaniards and vs trie by blowes, who should carrie away the Crowne. For they bee of so base a mould; as they can verie well subiect themselves to any government, wher they may liue free fro blowes, and haue libertie to become rich, being loath to endure hazard either of life or goods. For durst they haue put on anie minds throughly to reuolt, they had three wonderfull good occasions offered them during our being there.

Themselves did in generall confesse, that there were not about 5000. Spaniards in that part of the Countrie, of which number the halfe were out of the Towne till the last day of our march: during which time, how easilie they might haue prevailed against the rest, any man may conceiue. But vpon our approach they tooke them all in, and combined themselves in generall to the Cardinall.

The next day after our coming thether when the sallie was made vpon vs by their most resolute Spaniards how easilie might they haue kept them out, or haue giuen vs the Gate which was held for their retreat, if they had had any thought thereof.

And two daies after our coming to Cascaes, when 6000. Spaniards and Portingalls came against vs as farre as S. Iulians by land, as you shall presentlie heare, (all which time I thinke there were not many Spaniards left in the Towne) they had a more fit occasion to shewe their deuotion to the King, than any could be offered by our tarrying there. And they could not doubt, that if they had shut them out, but that we would haue fought with them vpon that advantage, hauing sought them in Galitia vpon disadvantage to beate them: and hauing taken so much paines to seeke them at their owne houses, wherof wee gaue sufficient testimonie in the same accident. But I thinke the feare of the Spaniard had

taken so deepe impression within them, as they durst not attempt any thing against them vpon anie hazard.

For, what ciuill Country hath ouer suffered themselves to be conquered by so few men as they were; to be deprived of their naturall King, and to be tyrannized ouer thus long but they? And what Countrey liuing in slauerie vnder a stranger whom they naturally hate: hauing an Armie in the field to fight for them & their libertie, would lie still with the yoke vpon their neckes, attending if anie strangers would vnburthe them, without so much as rousing themselves vnder it but they? They will promise much in speeches, for they be great talkers, whom, the Generall had no reason to distrust without triall, & therefore marched on into their Countrey: But they performed little in action, whereof wee could haue had no prooffe without this thorough triall. Wherein hee hath discouered their weaknesse, and honorably performed more than could be in reason expected of him: which had he not done, would not these maligners who seeke occasions of slander, haue reported him to be suspicious of a people, of whose infidelitie he had no testimonie: and to be fearfull without cause, if he had refused to giue credite to their promises without anie aduerture? Let no frivolous Questionist therefore further enquire, why he marched so many dayes to Lisbon, and tarried there so small a while.

The next morning, seeing no performance of promise kept, he gaue order for our marching away: himselfe, the Earle of Essex, and Sir Roger Williams remaining with the Stande that was made in the high streete, till the whole Armie was drawne into the field, and so marched out of the Towne, appoynting Captain Richard Wingfield, and Captaine Anthonie Wingfield in the Arreerward of them with the shot; thinking that the Enemy (as it was most likelic) would haue issued out vpon our rising; but they were otherwise aduised.

When we were come into the field, euerie Battalion fell into that order which by course appertained vnto them, and so marched that night vnto Cascais. Had wee marched through his Countrey at enemies, our Souldiers had been well supplied in all their wants: but had wee made enemies of the Suburbs of Lisbon, wee had been the richest Armie that euer went out of England: for besides the particuler wealth of euerie house, there were many warehouses by the water side full of all sorts of rich Marchandizes.

In our march that day, the Gallies which had somewhat, but not much, annoyed vs at Lisbon, (for that our way lay along the riuer) attended vs till we were past S. Iulians, bestowing many shot amongst vs, but did no harme at all, sauing they strooke off a priuate Gentlemans legge, and killed the Sergeant Maiors moyle vnder him. The horsemen also followed vs a farr off, and cut off as many sicke men as were not able to hold in march, nor we had carriage for.

After we had been two daies at Cascais, wee had intelligence by a frier, that the Enemy was marching strongly towards vs, and then come as farr as S. Iulians: which newes was so welcome to the Earle of Essex and the Generalls, as they offered euerie, one of them to giue the messenger a hundred Crownes if they found them in the place: for the Generall desiring nothing more than to fight with them in field rounge, dispatched that night a messenger with a Trompet, by whom he writ a Cartell to the Generall of their Armie, wherein he gaue them the lie, in that it was by them reported that we dislgedged from Lisbon in disorder and feare of them (which indeede was most false) for that it was five of the clock in the morning before wee fell into Armes, and then went in such sort, as they had no courage to followe out vpon vs. Also he challenged him therein, to meeete him the nexte morning with his whole Armie, if he durst attend his comming, and there to trie out the iustices of their quarrell by battaile: by whom also the Earle of Essex (who preferring the honor of the cause, which was his Countries, before his owne safetic) sent a particuler Cartell, offering himselfe against any of theirs, if they had any of his qualitie: or if they would not admit of that, sixe, eight, or tenne, or as many as they would appoynt, should meeete so many of theirs in the head of our Battaile to trie their fortunes with them, and that they should haue assurance of their returne and honorable intreatie.

The Generall accordingly made all his Armie ready by three of the clocke in the morning and marched euen to the place where they had encamped, but they were dislodged in the night in great disorder, being taken with a sodaine feare that we had been come vpon them, as the Generall was the next daye certainly informed: so as the Trumpet followed them to Lisbon, but could not get other answere to either of his letters, but threatening to bee hanged, for daring to bring such a message: howbeit the Generall had caused to bee written vpon the backside of their passport, if they did offer any violence vnto the messengers, he would hang the best prisoners he had of theirs: which made them to aduise better of the matter and to returne them home, but without answere.

After our Armie came to Cascais, and the Castle somonned, the Castillan thereof granted, that vpon fittie or sixe shot of the Cannon hee would deliuer the same, but not without sight thereof. The Generall thinking that his distresse within had been such for want of men or victuals as he could not hold it many daies, because he sawe it otherwise defensible enough, determined rather to make him yeeld to that necessitie, than to bring the Cannon, and therefore onlie set a gard vpon the same, least anye supplie of those things which hee wanted should bee brought vnto them. But he still standing vpon those conditions; the Generall about two daies before he determined to goe to Sea, brought three or foure peeces of batterie against it: vpon the first tye whereof he rendered, and compounded to goe away with his baggage and Armes: he had one Cannon, two Coluerings, one Basilike, and three or foure other field peeces, threescore and fite Souldiers, verie good store of munition, and victuals enough in the Castle; inasmuch as hee might haue held the same longer than the Generall had in purpose to tarie there. One Compagnie of foot men was put into the garde thereof, til the Artillarie was taken out, & our Armie embarked; which without hauing that lost, we could not without great perill haue done. When we were ready to set saile (one halfe of the fort being by order from the General bowne vp by mine) the Compaignie was drawne away.

During the time we lay in the Road, our fleet began the second of Iune, and so continued sixe daies after to fetch in some hulks to the number of 60. of Dansk, Staten, Rastock, Lubec, and Hamburg, laden with Spanish goods, and as it seemed for the Kings provision, and going for Lisbon: their principall lading was Corne, Mantes, Cables, Copper and Waxe: amongst which were some of great burthen wonderfull well builded for sailing, which had no great lading in them, and therefore it was thought that they were brought for the Kings provision, to reinforce his decayed Naue: whereof there was the greater likelihood, in that the owner of the greatest of them, which carried two Misines, was knowne to be verie inward with the Cardinall, who rather hee would be taken with his ships, committed himselfe vnto his small beate, wherein he recovered S. Sebastians. Into the which our men, that before were in fleebotes, were shipped, and the fleebotes sent homeward with an offer of Corne to the value of their hire. But the wind being good for them for Rochel, they chose rather to lose their Corne than the winde, and so departed. The Generall also sent his horses with them, and from thence shipped them into England.

The third of Iune, Colonell Deereux and Colonell Sydhey, being both verie sicke, departed for England, who in the whole iourney had shewed themselves verie forward to all seruises, and in their departure verie vnwilling to leaue vs; that day we embarked all our Armie, but lay in the Road vntil the eight thereof.

The sixt day the Earle of Essex, vpon receipt of letters from her Maiestie, by them that brought in the victuals, presentlie departed towards England, with whom Sir Roger Williams was verie desirous to goe, but found the Generals verie vnwilling he should do so, in y he bare the next place vnto them, and if they should miscarrie, was to commaund the Armie: And the same day there came vnto vs two small Barks that brought tidings of some other shippes come out of England with victuals, which were passed vwards to the Cape: for meeting with whom, the second day after we set saile for that place, in purpose after our meeting with them: to goe to the Iles of Apores, the second day, which was the ninth, we met

met with them coming backe againe towards vs, whose prouision little answered our expectation. Notwithstanding, we resolved to continue our course for the Islands.

About this time was the Marchant Royal, with three or foure other shippes sent to Penicha, to fetch away the Companies that were left there; but Captaine Barton hauing receiued letters from the Generalls that were sent ouerland, was departed before; not being able by reason of the enemies speedie marching thither, either to bring away the Artillarie, or all his men, according to the direction those letters gaue him; for hee was no sooner gone, than the Enemy possessed the Towne and Castle, and shot at our ships as they came into the Road.

At this time also was the Ambassador from the Emperour of Moroco, called Rays Hamet Bencamp, returned, and with him Master Ciprian, a Gentleman of good place and desert, was sent from Don Anthonio, and Captaine Ousley from the Generalls, to the Emperour.

The next morning, the nine Gallies which were sent not fure daies before out of Andalusia for the strengthening of the riuer of Lisbon (which being ioyned with the other twelue that were there before, though wee lay hard by them at S. Iulians, durst neuer make any attempt against vs vpon our departure from thence) were returning home, and in the morning being a verie dead calme, in the dawning thereof fell in the winde of our flecte, in the yttermost part whereof they assailed one stragling Barke of Plymouth, of the which Captaine Caucly being Captaine of the land Companie, with his Lieutenant, the Master, and some of the Marriners abandoned the shippe, and betooke them to the ship boates, whereof one, in which the Master & the Captaine wer, was ouerrun with the Gallies, and they drowned. There was also two hulks stragled farre from the strength of the other ships, which were so calmed, as neither they could get to vs, nor we to them, though all the great ships towed with their boates to haue relieved them, but could not be recovered; in one of which was Captaine Minshaw with his Companie, who fought with them to the last, yea after his ship was on fire, which whether it was fired by himselfe or by them we could not well discern, but might easilie iudge by his long and good fight, that the Enemy could not but susteine much losse, who setting also vpon one other hulk wherein was but a Lieutenant, and he verie sicke, were by the valour of the Lieutenant put off, although they had first beaten her with their Artillarie, and attempted to board her. And seeing also one other hulke a league of, a sterne of vs, they made towards her; but finding that she made readie to fight with them, they durst not further attempt her: whereby it seemed their losse being great in the other fights, they were loath to proceed any further.

From that day till the 19. of Iune, our direction from the Generall was, that if the winde were Northerlie wee should plie for the Açores; but if Southerlie, for the Isles of Bayon.

Wee lay with contrarie windes about that place and the Rocke, till the Southerlie wind preuailing carried vs to Bayon, part of our ships to the number of 25. in a great winde which was two dayes before, hauing lost the Admiralls and flecte, according to their direction, fell in the morning of that day with Bayon, among whome, was Sir Henric Norris in the Ayde: who had in purpose (if the Admiralls had not come in) with some 500. men out of them all to haue landed, and attempted the taking of Vigo. The rest of the flecte helde with Generall Drake, who though he were two dayes before put vpon those Isles, cast off againe to sea for the Açores: but remembering how vnprovided he was for that Lourney, & seeing that he had lost manie of his great ships, returned for Bayon, and came in there that night in the Evening, where he passed vp the riuer more than a mile about Vigo.

The next morning we landed as manie as were able to fight, which were not in the whole about 2000. men, (for in the 17. dayes wee continued on board wee had cast manie of our men ouer board) with which number the Colonell Generall marched to the Towne of Vigo, neare the which when hee approached, hee sent Captaine Anthonio Wingfield with a Troope of shot to enter one side of the same, who found vpon euerie streete: end a strong Barricade, but altogether abandoned: for hauing entered the Towne, hee found but one man therein, but might see them making way before him to Bayon. On the othr side of the Towne entered Generall Drake with Captaine Richard Wingfield, whose approach on that

that side (I thinke) made them leave the places they had so artificially made for defence: there were also certaine ships sent with the Viceadmirall to lye close before the Towne, to beate vpon the same with their artillrie.

In the afternoone were sent 300. vnder the conduct of Captaine Petuin and Captaine Henric Pourc, to burne another village betwixt that & Bayon, called Borsis, & as much of the Countrey as the day would giue them leaue to doo; which was a verie pleasant rich Valley, but they burnt it all, houses and corne, as did others on the other side of the Towne, both that and the next day, so as the Countrey was spoyled seuen or eight miles in length. There was found great store of wine in the Towne, but not anie thing els: for the other daies warning of the ships that came first in, gaue them a respite to carrie all away.

The next morning by breake of the day, the Coloneil Generall, (who in absence of the Generalls that were on board their ships, commanded that night on shore) caused all our Companies to be drawen out of the Towne, and sent in two Troops to put fier in euerie house of the same, which done we embarked againe.

This day, there were certaine Marriners (without anie direction) put themselves on shoare, on the contrarie side of the Riuer from vs, for pillage; who were beaten by the Encemic from their bootes, and punished by the Generalls for their offer, in going without allowance.

The reasons why we attempted nothing against Bayon, were before shewed to bee want of artillrie, and may now be alledged to be the small number of our men: who should haue gone against so strong a place, manned with verie good souldiers, as was shewed by Iuan de Vera taken at the Groyne, who confessed that there were 600. olde Souldiers in Garrison there of Flanders, and the Tercios of Naples; lately also returned out of the Iourney of England: vnder the leading of Capitan Puebla.

Christofero Vaxques de Viralta, a Souldier of Flanders.

Don Petro Camascho, de tercio de Napoles.

Don Francisco de Cespedes.

Capt. Iuan de Solo, de tercio de Napoles.

Don Diego de Cassua.

Capt. Sauban.

Also he saith, there be 18. peeces of brasse, and foure of yron lately layd vpon the walls of the Towne, besides them that were there before.

The same day the Generalls seeing what weake estate our Armie was drawen into by sickness, determined to man and victuall 20. of the best ships for the Islands of Açores with Generall Drake, to see if he could meeete with the Indian fleet, and Generall Norris to returne home with the rest. And for the shifting of men and victualls accordingly, purposed the next morning to fall downe to the Islands of Bayon againe, and to remaine there that daye. But Generall Drake according to their appoyntment being vnder sayle, neuer strooke at the Islands, but put straight to sea; whom all the fleet followed sauing 33. which being in the Riuer further than he, and at the entrance out of the same, finding the winde and tide too hard against them, were enforced to cast Anker there for that night: amongst whom, by good fortune was the Foresight, and in her Sir Edward Norris. And the night following, Generall Norris being driven from the rest of the fleet by a great storme, (for all that daye was the greatest storme we had all the time we were out) came agayne into the Islands, but not without great perill, hee being forced to trust to a Spanish fisher-man (who was taken two dayes before at sea) to bring him in.

The next morning he called a Councell of as manie as he found there, holding the purpose he had before conoluded with Sir Francis Drake the day before, and directed all their courses for England, tarying there all that day to water and helpe such with victuall, as were lesse in wonderfull distresse, by hauing the victualls that came last, caried away the day before to sea.

The next day he set sayle, & the tenth day after; which was the second of Iuly came into Plymouth, where he found Sir Francis Drake, & all the Queenes ships, with manie of the others, but not all: for the fleet was dispersed into other harbors; some led by a desire of returning

returning from whence they came, and some being possessed of the milkes, sought other Ports from their Generals eye, when they might make their private comoditie of them, as they haue done to their great advantage.

Presently vpon their arriual there, the Generals dissolved all the Armie, saving 8. Companies, which are yet held together, giuing euerie Souldier five shillings in money, and the Armie he bare to make money of, which was more than could by anie means be disc vnto the; for they were in seruice three months, in which time they had their victuals, which no man will value at lesse than halfe their pay; for such is the allowance in her Maesties ships to her Mariners, so as there remained but ten shillings a month more to be paid, for which there was not any private man but had apparell and furniture to his own vse, so as euerie common Souldior discharged, receaued more in money, victuals, apparell, and furniture, than his pay did amount vnto.

Notwithstanding, there be euen in the same place where those things haue passed, that either doo not or will not conceaue the Souldiers estate, by comparing their pouertie and the shortnesse of the time together, but lay some iniuries vpon the Generalls and the action. Where, and by the way, but especiallie here in London, I finde there haue been some false prophets gone before vs, telling strange tales: for as our Countrey doth bring forth manie gallant men, who desirous of honour, doo put themselues into the actions thereof, so dooth it manie mere dull spirited, who though their thoughtes reach not so high as others, yet doo they listen how other mens acts doo passe; and othier beleeuing what anie man will report vnto them, are willingly caried away into errors, or tied to some greater mans faith, becoming secretaries against a noted truth. The one sort of these do take their opinions from the high way side, or at the fardest goe no farther than Pauls to enquire what hath been done in this Voyage: where, if they meete with anie, whose capacitie before their going out could not make them hue, nor their valour maintain their reputation, and who went onely for spoyle, complaining on the hardnesse and miserie thereof, they thinke they are bound to giue credite to these honest men who were parties therein, and in verie charitie become of their opinions. The others to make good the faction they are entred into, if they see anie of these malecontentes (as euerie journey yeeldeth some) doo runne vnto them like tempting spirits to confute them in their humour, with assurance that they foresawe before our going out what would become thereof.

Be ye not therefore too credulous in beleeuing euerie report, for you see there haue been many more beholders of these things, y haue passed, than actors in the same; who by their experience, not hauing the knowledge of the ordinarie wants of the warre, haue thought that to lie hard, not to haue their meate well dressed, to drinke sometimes water, to watch much, or to see men die, and be slaine, was a miserable thing; and not hauing so giuen their minds, to the seruice as they are any thing instructed thereby, doo for want of better matter discourse ordinarily of these things: whereas the journey (if they had with that iudgement seen into it, and as their places required) hath giuen them farre more honorable purpose and argument of discourse.

These mens discontentments, and mistlikings before our coming home, haue made me labour thus much to instruct you in the certeinie of euerie thing, because I would not willingly haue you miscarried in the iudgements of them, wherein you shall giue me lesse somewhat to debate vpon a question, which I onlie touched in the beginning of my letter, namely, whether it bee more expedient for our estate to maintaine an offensive warre against the King of Spaine in the Lowe Countries, or as in this iourney, to offend him in his nearer Territories, seeing the grounds of arguing thereof are taken from the experience which the actions of this iourney, haue giuen vs.

There is no good subject that will make question whether it bee behoofull for vs to hold friendship with these neighbours of ours or no, as well in respect of the infinite proportion of their shipping, which must stand either with vs or against vs; as of the comoditie of their harbors, especiallie that of Vlissing, by the fauour whereof our Nautic may continually keepe the Narrow Seas, and which would harbour a greater fleet against vs than the Spaignard

niard shall neede to annoy vs withall; who being now distressed by our common Enemie, I thinke it most expedient for our safetie to defend them, and if it may bee to giue them a recourte into that they haue of late yeares lost vnto him. The one without doubt her Maies-  
tie may doo without difficultie, and in so honorablesort as he shall neuer be able to dispo-  
sesse her or them of any the townes they now hold. But if any man thinke that the Spani-  
ard may bee expelled from thence more speedilie, or conuenientlie by keeping an Armie  
there, than by sending one agaynst him into his owne Countrie: let him foresee of how many  
men and continuall supplies that Armie must consist, and what intollerable expences it re-  
quireth. And let him thinke by the example of the Duke of Alua, when the Prince of  
Orreange had his great Armie against him: and of Don Iohn, when the States had their mightie  
assemblie against him, how this wise Enemie, with whom wee are to deale, may but by pro-  
longing to fight with vs, leaue vs occasions enough for our Armie within fewe moneths to  
mutine and breake; or by keeping him in his Townes leaue vs a spoyled field: where though  
our prouision may be such of our owne as we starue not, yet is our weaknes in any strange  
Countrie such, as with sickness and miserie we shall be dissolved. And let him not forget  
what a continuall burthen wee hereby lay vpon vs, in that to repossesse those Countries  
which haue been lately lost, will be a warre of longer continuance than wee shall be able  
to endure.

In the verie action whereof, what should hinder the King of Spaine to bring his forces  
home vnto vs? for it is certaine he hath long since set downe in Councill, that there is no  
way for him whollie to recouer those Lowe Countries, but by bringing the warre vpon Eng-  
land it selfe, which hath alwaies assisted them against him: and that being determined, and  
wherunto he hath been vehementlie vrged by the last yeeres losse he sustained vpon our  
Coasts, and the great dishonor this journey hath laid vpon him; no doubt if we shall giue  
him respite to doo it, but he will mightie aduance his purpose, for he is richlie able thereunto,  
and wonderfull desirous of reuenge.

To encounter wherewith, I wish euen in true and honest zeale to my Countrie, that wee  
were all persuaded that there is no such assured meane for the safetie of our estate, as to  
busie him with a well furnished Armie in Spaine, which hath so many goodlie Bayes open,  
as wee may lind without impeachment as many men as shall be needfull for such an inua-  
sion. And hauing an Armie of twentie thousand royallie furnished there, wee shall not neede  
to take much care for their paiement: for shall not Lisbon be thought able to make so fewe  
men rich, when the Suburbs thereof were found so abounding in riches, as had we made  
enemie of them, they had largely enriched vs all? which with what small losse it may be  
wonne, is not here to shewe; but why it was not wonne by vs, I haue herein shewed you.  
Or is not the spoyle of Ciuill sufficient to pay more than shall be needfull to be sent agaynst  
it, whose defence (as that of Lisbon) is onlie force of men, of whom how many may for  
the present bee raised, is not to be esteemed, because wee haue discovered what kinde of  
men they bee; euen such as will neuer abide ours in field, nor dare withstand any resolute  
attempt of ours against them: for during the time wee were in many places of their Coun-  
trie, they cannot say that euer they made twentie of our men turne their faces from them.  
And be there not many other places of lesse difficultie to spoyke, able to satisfie our forces?

But admit that if vpon this Alarme that wee haue giuen him, he tending his naturall and  
nearest soyle before his further remoued off governments, do drawe his forces of old Sould-  
diers out of the Low Countries for his own defence, is not the victorie then wonne by draw-  
ing and holding them from thence, for the which we should haue kept an Armie there at a  
charge by many parts greater than this, and not stirred them?

Admit further our Armie bee impeached from landing there, yet by keeping the Sea, and  
possessing his principall Roades, are wee not in possibilitie to meeete with his Indian Mer-  
chants, and verie like to prevent him of his provisions comming out of the East Countries?  
without the which, neither the subiect of Lisbon is long able to liue, nor the King able to  
maintain his Name: for though the countrey of Portingall doo some yeres finde themselves  
corne, yet are they neuer able to victual the best part of that Citie. And albeit the King

of Spaine be the richest Prince in Christendome, yet can he neyther draw cables, how masts, nor make powder out of his mettalls, but is to bee supplied of them all from thence. Of whom (some will holde opinion) it is no reason to make prize, because they be not our enemies: and that our disagreement with them, will impeach the trade of our Merchants, and so impoverish our Countrey. Of whose minde I can hardly be drawen to be: for, if my enemy fighting with me doo breake his sword, so as I thereby haue the advantage against him; what shall I thinke of him that putteth a new sword into his hand to kill me withal? And may it not be thought more fitting for vs in these times to loose our trades of Cloath, than by suffering these mischiefs, to put in hazard, whether we shall haue a Countrey left to make cloth in, or no? And yet though neither Hamburg, Embden, nor Stode doo receiue our cloth, the necessarie vse thereof in all places is such, as they will finde means to take it from vs, with our sufficient commoditie.

And admit (which were impossible) that wee damnish him neither at sea nor land (for whestee it bee with a much more mightie Armie than ours, he shall neuer be able to withstand vs) yet shal we by holding him at his home, free our selves from the warre at our owne walles: the benefite whereof let them consider, y<sup>e</sup> best can iudge, & haue obserued the difference of inuading, & being inuaded; the one giuing courage to the Souldier, in that it dooth set before him commoditie and reputation; the other a fearfull terror to the Countrey man, who, if by chance hee play the man; yet is he neuer the richer: and who knowing manie holes to hide himselfe in; will trie them all before hee put his life in perill by fighting: whereas the Inuador casteth vp his account before he goeth out, and being abroad must fight to make himselfe way, as not knowing what place or strength to trust vnto. I will not say what I obserued in our Countrey men when the enemy offered to assaile vs here: but I wish that all England knewe what terror we gaue to the same people that frighted vs, by visiting them at their owne houses.

Were not Alexanders fortunes great against the mightie Darins, onely in that his Macedonians thirsted after the wealth of Persia, and were bound to fight it out to the last man, because the last man knewe no safer waye to saue himselfe; than by fighting? Whereas the Persians either trusting to continue still masters of their wealth by yielding to the Inuador, began to practise against their owne King: or hauing more inward hopes, did hide themselves euen to the last; to see what course the Conquerour would take in his Conquest. And did not the aduice of Scipio, though mightily impugned at the first, proue verie sound and honorable to his Countrey? Who, seeing the Romanes wondrously amazed at the nearnesse of their enemies forces, and the losses they dayly sustained by them, gaue counsaile, rather by way of diuersion to carrie an Armie into Affricke, & there to assaile, than by a defensic warre at home to remaine subject to the commo spoyles of an assailing Enemy. Which being put in execution, drew the Enemy from the Gates of Rome, and Scipio returned home with triumph: albeit his beginnings at the first, were not so fortunate against the, as ours haue been in this small time against the Spaniard. The good success whereof, may encourage vs to take Armes resolutely against him: And I beseech God it may stirre vp all men that are particularly interested therein, to bethinke themselves how small a matter will assure them of their safetie, by holding the Spaniard at stay; so farre of: whereas if wee giue him leaue quietly to hatch and bring forth his preparations, it will bee with danger to vs all.

He taketh not Armes against vs by any pretence of title to the Crowne of this Realme, nor led altogether with an ambitious desire to command our Countrey, but with hatred towards our whole Nation and Religion: Her Maiesties Scepter is already giuen by Bull to another, the honours of our Nobilitie are bestowed for rewardes vpon his attendants, our Clergie, our Gentlemen, our Lawyers, yea all men of what condition soeuer, are offered for spoyle vnto the common Souldier. Let euerie man therefore in defence of the libertie and plentie hee hath of long enjoyed, offer a voluntarie contribution of the smallest part of their store for the assurance of the rest. It were not much for euerie Iustice of peace, who by his blew coat protecteth the properest and most seruiceable man at

cherie

curie muster from the warres, to contribute the charge that one of these idle men doo put him to for one yere: nor for the Lawyer; who riseth by the dissentions of his neighbors, to take but one yeres giftes (which they call fees) out of his coffers. What would it hinder curie Officer of the Exchequer, and other of her Maiesties Courtes, who without checke doo sodainly grow to great wealth, honestlie to bring forth, the mysticall commoditie of one yeres profites? or the Clergie, who looke precisely for the Tenens of curie mans increase, simply to bring forth the Tenth of one yeres gathering, and in thankfulness to her Maiestie, (who hath continued for all our safeties, a most chargeable warre both at land and sea) bestowe the same for her honour and their owne assurance vppon an Armie which may make this bloodie Enemy, so to knowe himselfe and her Maiesties power, as hee shall bethinke him what it is to moue a stirring people? Who, though they haue receaued some small checke by the sickness of this last Iourney, yet doubt I not, but if it were made knowne, that the like Voyage were to be supported by a generallie, (that might and would beare the charge of a more ample prouision) but there would of all sortes most willingly put themselves into the same: some carried with an honorable desire to be in action, & some in loue of such, would affectionately follow their fortunes, some in thirsting to reuenge the death and hearts of their brethren, kindred, and friends: and some in hope of the plentiful spoyles to be found in those Countreyes, hauing been there already and returned poore, would desire to goe againe, with an expectation to make amends for the last: and all, in hatred of that cowardly proud Nation, and in contemplation of the true honor of our own, would with courage take Armes, to hazard their liues against them, whom curie good English man is in nature bound to hate as an implacable Enemy to England, thirsting after our blood, and labouring to ruine our land, with hope to bring vs vnder the yoke of perpetuall slaerie.

Against them is true honour to bee gotten, for that wee shall no sooner set foote in their land, but that euery steppe we tread will yeeld vs newe occasion of action, which I wish the gallantie of our Countrie rather to regard, than to followe those soft vaprofitable pleasures, wherein they now consume their time and patrimonie. And in two or three Townes of Spaine is the wealth of all Europe gathered together, which are the Magasins of the fruits and profites of the East and West Indies: wherunto I wish our young able men, who against the libertie they are borne vnto, (terme themselves Seruing men) rather to bend their desires and affections, than to attend their double lucrio and fortie shillings by the yeres wages, and the reuercion of the old Coppie-ho's; for carrying a dish to his masters table. But let me here reprehend my selfe and craue pardon; for entering into a matter of such state and consequence, the care whereof is already laid vpon a most graue and honorable Councell, who will in their wisdomes foresee the dangers that may bee threatned against vs. And why do I labour to disquiet the securitie of these happie Gentlemen, & the trade of those honest Seruing men, by perswading them to the warres, when I see the profession thereof so slenderlie esteemed? for though al our hope of peace bee frustrate, and our quarrells determinable by the sword: though our Enemy hath by his own forces and his pencionaries industrie, confined the vnitied Prouinces into a narrowe rounte, and almost dismissed the same: if he be now in a good way to harbour himselfe in the principall Hauens of France, from whence he may fruit vs at pleasure: yea though wee are to hope for nothing but a bloodie warre, nor can trust to any helpe but Armes; yet how farre the common sort are from reuerencing or regarding any persons of Conduction, was too apparent in the returne of this our Iourney, wherein the base and common souldier hath been tolerated to speake against the Capitaine, and the souldier and Capitaine against the Generalls, and wherein mechanicall and men of base condition doo dare to censure the doings of them, of whose acts they be not wortilie to talke.

The auncient graue degree of the Prelacie is vphelde, though Martin rayle neuer so much, and the Lawyer is after the olde manner worshipped, whosoever inuicth against him: But

the ancient English honour is taken from our Men of Warre, and their Profession in disgrace, though neuer so necessary. Either we commit Idolatrie to Neptune, and will put him alone still to fight for vs as he did the last yere, or we be enchanted with some diuinish opinions, that traiaile nothing more than to diminish the reputation of them, vpon whose shoulders the burthen of our defence against the Enemie must lie when occasion shall be offered. For whensoever he shall set foote vpon our land, it is neither the preaching of the Clergie that can take him out againe, nor the pleading of any Lawyers that can remove him out of possession: no, then they will honour them whom now they thinke not on, and then must those men stand betwene them and their perills, who are now thought vworthis of any estimation.

May the burning of one Towne, (which cost the King then being, sixe times as much as this hath done her Maiestie, wherein were lost seauen times as many men as in any one seruice of this Iourney, and farried not the tenth part of our time in the Enemies Countrey) bee by our elders so highly reputed, and sounded out by the historie, of the Realme; and can our voyage be so meanie esteemed, wherein wee burned both Townes and Countries without the losse of fortie men in any such attempt?

Did our Kings in former times reward some with the greatest titles of honour for ouerthrowing a number of poore Scots, who after one battaile lost, were neuer able to reinforce themselves against him; and shall they in this time who haue ouerthrowe our mightie Enemie in battaile, and taken his royall Standard in the field, besieged the Marques of Saralba fiftene daies together, that should haue been the Generall of the Armeie against vs, brought away so much of his Artillarie (as I haue before declared) be vworthis of any esteem?

Is it possible that some in some times should receiue their reward for looking vpon an Enemie, and ours in this time not receiue so much as thanks, for hauing beaten an Enemie at handie strokes?

But it is true, that no man shall be a Prophet in his Countrey; and for my owne part, I will lay aside my Armes till that profession shall haue more reputation, and live with my friends in the Countrey, attending either some more fortunate time to vse them, or some other good occasion to make me forget them.

But what? shall the blind opinion of this Monster, a beast of many heads, (for so hath the generalitie of old been termed) cause me to neglect the profession from whence I challenge some reputation; or diminish my loue to my Countrey, which hetherto hath nourished mee? No, it was for her sake I first tooke Armes; and for her sake I will handle them so long as I shall be able to vse them: not regarding how some men in private conuenticles doe measure mens estimations by their owne humours; nor how euerie populer person doth giue sentence on euerie mans actions by the worst accidents. But attending the gracious aspect of our dread Soueraigne, who neuer yet left vertue unrewarded; and depending vpon the iustice of her most rare and graue aduisors, who by their heedie looking into euerie mans worth, doo giue encouragement to the vertuous to exceede others in vertue; and assuring you that there shall neuer any thing happen more plexing vnto me, than that I may once againe be a partie in some honorable Iourney against the Spaniard in his owne Countrey, I will cease my complaint; and with them that deserue beyond me, patiently endure the vnadvised censure of our malicious reprouers.

If I haue seemed in the beginning hereof troublesome vnto you in the discouering of those impediments; and answering the slanders which by the vulgar malicious and mutinous sort are laid as blemishes vpon the Iourney, and reproaches vpon the Generalls (hauing indeede proceeded from other heads); let the necessitie of conseruing the reputation of the action in generall, and the honors of our Generalls in particular, be my sufficient excuse: the one hauing by the vertue of the other made our Countrey more dreaded and renowned, than any act that euer England vnderooke before? Or if you haue thought my perswasible discourse long in the latter end; let the affectionate desire of my Countries good bee therein answerable for me. And such as it is I pray you accept it, as onely recommended to your selfe, and not to bee deliuered to the publike view of the world, least any man take offence therat;

thereat; which some particuler men may seeme iustlie to doo, in that hauing deserued verie well, I should not herein giue them their due commendations; whereas my purpose in this priuate discourse, hath been onelie to gratifie you with a touch of those principall matters that haue passed, wherein I haue onelie taken notes of those men who either commanded every seruice, or were of chiefest marke: if therefore you shall impart the same to one, and hee to another, and so it passe through many hands, I knowe not what constructions would be made thereof to my preiudice; for that the Hares cares may happelic bee taken for hornes. Howbeit, I hold it very necessarie, (I must confesse) that there should bee some true manifestation made of these things: but hee it farre from me to bee the author thereof, as verie vnfit to deliuer my censure of any matter in publique, and most vnwilling to haue my weaknes discouered in private. And so doo leaue you to the happie successe of your accustomed good exercises, earnestlie wishing that there may bee some better acceptance made of the fruites of your studies, than there hath been of our hazards in the warres. From London the 30. of August. 1589.

FINIS.



THE  
OMISSIONS  
OF  
CALES VOYAGE,

STATED AND DISCUSSED

BY  
*THE EARL OF ESSÈX.*

NOW

FIRST PUBLISHED FROM A MANUSCRIPT IN THE POSSESSION

OF THE MOST NOBLE

THE MARQUIS OF STAFFORD.



THE  
**OMISSIONS**  
 OF  
**CALES VOYAGE.**

---

The \* first & greatest occasion let ship in our Voyage was, that we did not possess our selves of the fleete that was bound for the Indies, the lading whereof would not onelie haue paid all charges of the iorneie, but haue enabled vs a great while to wage warre with Spaine, with the meanes of Spaine. To which I aunswere, that if either I had ben followed the first morning of our comminge before the harbor when I bare with it; or if we had entred the same Sundaie in the afternoone when we were vnder soile, & within cannon shot of the enemies fleete, or after the men of warre were taken & burnt, the nexte daie if anie shipping had gone vp as I vrged by mine owne speech sent by Sir Anthonie Ashlie, who being secretarie at wars was to record euerie mans service or omission; if anie of these had ben don, then I saie had that fleet ben easilie possessed. For the first morning they had neither their men aboard, as it was since confessed by our prisoners, nor were provided of any counsel what to doe. In the afternoone the same daie we had found the men of warre & the Marchaunts fleet altogether in one bodie, & engaged them both at oncce, so as at the same time we had defeated the one, we had possessed the other. And the next daie presentlie vpon the fight & victorie against the Kings shippes, we had found them all so amazed & confounded as they would have thought of nothing but of sauing themselves, & we had taken the ships, the riches in them, & the fleet of gallies, without striking a blow; as both our prisoners & captaines out of the gallies haue assured vs. But the first morninge when I boarge with the harbor, almost all the fleet came to an anchor by the point Saint Sebastian a league wide of me, & gaue the enemy leasure to send men & all necessaries aboard. When I was gon in, I could neither get my companion to waigh his anchor, nor most of those that were waied to goe in with me. And the next daie I had much a do to make our ships fight at all. And when God had giuen vs victorie, my perswasions nor protestations could make them that were sea-commanders go or send vp to possess the fleet of the Indies, whiles we assailed the towne, so as the enemy had almost 48. howers to burne his owne shippes.

\* The Editor takes this opportunity of making his grateful acknowledgements to the Marquis of Stafford, for his permission to print this Tract from his curious Manuscript; and to the Reverend H. J. Todd, for furnishing him with the accurate transcript from which it is printed.

The second imputation that maie be laid to vs, was, that we did abandon Cales, when we were possess of it, whereas the holding of it would haue ben a naile not in the foote of this great monarch but in his side, & haue serued for a diuersion of all the wars in these parts. To which I aunswere, that some of our sea-commanders, & especiallie my colleague, did not onelie oppose themselves to that designe, (whose oppositions mine instructions made an absolute barre,) but when we came to see how the forces that should be left there might be victualled till succours came, the victuals were for the most part hidden & embeazled, & euery ship began at that instant to feare their wants, & to talke of going home; soe as I should neither haue had one ship to staie at Cales, nor victuals for the garrison for 2. moneths. And therefore I was forced to leaue Cales, & did not choose to abandon it.

The third obiection we haue to aunswere is, whie we did not lie for the carricks & Indian ships, seing we were on the coast the verie time that is thought fittest for their intercepting & vsual of their retourne. In which I must first cite the testimonie of all our commanders by land & sea, that when we had in our retourne from Cales doubled the Cape St. Vincent comonlie called the South Cape, I vrged our going to th' Islands of Ozores, founding my selfe vpon these reasons: first, that, it was more certaine to attend them at the land-fall where theie must needs touch, then to seeke them in the wide sea; & next, that the aduises sent out of Spaine & Portugall since our being of myght meeete them at the Islands, & make them diuert from coming thither. Besides, the Spaniards after their saw vs engaged at Cales would neuer suspect or dreame of our going to the Islands. And when this counsell was reiected, & we come in the sight of Lisbon, I there againe pressed the lying for them with a selected fleet, & offered vpon that condition to send home the land-forces, & all such ships as want of victuals, leaks, sickness, or anie thing els had made vnfit to staie out at sea. But first the L. Admirall & Sr. Wa[ ]ter Rawligh did directlie by attestation vnder their hands contradict the first proposition that I made, that some ships should attend that seruice. And when we came to the hypothesis, which were fit & their captaines content to staie out in all the fleet, except the Low Countrie Squadron, there could be found but two, my L. Thom. Howard & my selfe; so as by the whole counsell at wars, it was resolved that as well my offer & opinion, as euerie mans els amongst vs, should be kept vnder his hand, for our particuler discharges, & I be barred of staieing, except my L. Admirall would assent to leaue some 8. or 10. of the Marchaunts ships besides 2. of the Queenes: which he refused to doe: & soe our designe brake of.

The last omission maie seeme to be in this, that since all our seruice consisted in taking or distringeing the Spanish shipping & sea prouisions, that we did not looke into all his cheife ports, & do him in that kind as much hurt as we might haue done. To which I aunswere, that first my end in going to Cales was not onelie because it was a principall port & the likeliest to be held by vs, by cause of the seat & naturall strength of it; but also for that it was the farthest good porte south-ward; so as beginning with it we might, if some greater seruice did not diuert vs, goe to all the good ports betwixt that & the northmost ports of Biskaie: which was a better waie then to haue begonne or giuen the enemye an alarm in the midst of his Countrie, or the neerest ports to vs; for so our attempts would haue ben more difficile, & our retreats at last from those farthest ports less safe; considering the wants, infections, & other inconveniences that for the most parte doe accompanye the retraicts of our fleet & armies in long iornies. But after we had ended at Cales, it was by all our seamen thought a capitall offence to name the going ouer the Barre at St. Lucars. Betwixt St. Lucars & Lisbon there is no good porte. From Lisbon I was barred by name, if it had bene free for vs to haue gone. Yet our seamen are made of the same stuffe, Sr. Francis D: & his companie was, when theie lost the occasion of his taking Lisbon, for feare of passing by the castle of St. Iulian's. From Lisbon to the Groine there is no port to hold the Kings or anie other great shipping. To the Groin with cart-ropes I drew them: for both I vowed & protested  
against

at their refusall, & parted companie with them when they offered to hold another course. But when we came to the mouth of the harbor, & sent in some of our small vessels, we saw there was nothing there, nor yet at Furroll; for into that port also we made our discoveries to looke.

After which discoverie we held our last counsell. And then I vrged our going to St. Adica, the passage St. Sebastian, & all other good ports all along the coast. But mine associat did altogether refuse to goe farther alonge the coaste, complaininge of wants, & victuals our being embayed, & I know not what. In which opinion Sir Walter Rawlidge strengthened him; & these were both desirous to take upon them the honour of breaking that assigne. And of landing at the Groyne, or attempting the towne, these would not heare of any meane. And presentlie every man cried to set saile homewards. Since which time these have made such haste, as I, tarding behind to bring along with me the St. Andrew taken at Cales & the little boate that carries our artillarie, have lost them all, saving Monsieur Ouerworme & his squadron, & some few small shippes.

THE END.









00042641

Digitized with financial assistance from the  
Government of Maharashtra  
on 21 October, 2015

